Almost half a century has elapsed since the publication of the third, and final, edition of Shipman’s standard text on Common Law Pleading. The late Dean Alison Reppy, with whom I was associated in teaching the subject of Common Law Pleading, and who devoted much of his life to study in the field, commenced this work in an effort to meet the need for a new comprehensive work on the subject, but an untimely death cut his efforts short. I was at the time in a position to assume this undertaking, and have worked over the many succeeding years upon the preparation of this work. The responsibility for that appears in these pages is therefore mine.

It is my hope that this work will be of assistance to members of the bench, bar, and students of the law, in their professional and scholarly pursuits, I will briefly describe some of the principal features of this work, which are directed towards this end.

First: Substantial new materials have been introduced into this work, in addition to the retention of the basic materials included in the Shipman text. This results in the presentation of a wider area of coverage in terms of topics dealt with than is generally found in previous works on Common Law Pleading. A reference to the detailed table of contents will indicate the topics covered with some particularity.

Second: In discussions of many of the topics, more has been included in the way of historical background and development than generally appears in previous comprehensive works on Common Law Pleading.

Third: Many of the topics have been more extensively treated than is generally the case in comprehensive works on Common Law Pleading. It has always been my view that significant emphasis should be placed upon materials dealing with the forms of action. Certainly most members of the bench, bar, and students of the law, carry with them the memory of Professor F. W. Maitland’s incisive and perceptive observation that, “The forms of action we have buried, but they still rule us from their graves.” This fact has remained too clearly in focus to be blurred from vision by the Codes, and it is considered at some length in the pages of this work.

The apportionment of additional space and emphasis is not limited to the forms of action, but is found in the treatment of many of the other topics throughout this work. This is done with a recognition of the validity of Justice Oliver Wendell Hohnes’ statement that, “whenever we trace a leading doctrine of substantive law far enough back, we are very likely to find some forgotten circumstance of procedure at its source.” And to this we may add that whenever we deal with a modern procedural rule, we are likely to gain a better understanding of it, and a utility for its application, by virtue of a knowledge of Common Law Pleading.

Fourth: The status under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court of most of the principal procedural
devices, including all of the forms of action, is considered in the discussion of each of these topics. The vi-

**PREFACE**

... devices, including all of the forms of action, is considered in the discussion of each of these topics. The vi-

Fifth: Extensive bibliographies of treatises and articles appear at substantially all of the points where the principal topics are discussed. Citations of treatises generally include edition and place and date of publication, so as to make the sources more readily available. Such extensive bibliographies have not been included in the earlier comprehensive works on Common Law Pleading, and it is hoped that this may have the effect of making research considerably less taxing, and substantially more productive.

Sixth: For the English cases, in addition to citations in the original reports, parallel citations in the English Reports, a reprint series, are also generally included. Previous comprehensive works on Common Law Pleading do not contain these citations, as indeed the English Reports were not yet published when most of them were written. Since law libraries frequently do not contain the original reports, but do contain the English Reports, research may be pursued with these citations without the use of conversion tables and digests, which might otherwise be necessary. This, too, should make research easier and more productive for members of the bench, bar, and students of the law.

The decisions, both English and American, have been extensively cited in order to convey an understanding of Common Law Pleading in its early, middle, and later stages, its development, and its effect in Modern Pleading and Practice.

I can, of course, do no more than to record my indebtedness to the late Dean Alison Reppy, who commenced this work with such enthusiasm and dedication during his lifetime. I am also indebted to Shipman’s work, and to the works of the many other outstanding authors who have contributed so much in the field of Common Law Pleading. Any attempt to recite all of their names at this point would result in the inevitable risk of omission, and I will therefore ask the reader to take notice of their respective contributions as he makes use of this work. I also wish to express my appreciation to my colleague, Professor John It. Dugan, for generously giving of his time to discuss with me certain of the topics included in this work. And for the secretarial services so faithfully performed by Mrs. Amy Smith in working upon the manuscript, I express my appreciation.

I have attempted to set out some of the characteristics of this work in the succinct form required of prefatory remarks, and sincerely hope that this work will serve the purposes for which it is intended.

JOSEPH H. KOFFLER
New York, New York
October, 1069

**SUMMARY OF CONTENTS**

**PART ONE—DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW PLEADING AND ITS IMPORTANCE IN MODERN PRACTICE**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Common-Law Pleading and Practice—Still Survives as the Basis of Modern Remedial Law</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART TWO—OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS—GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

3. The Commencement of an Action 68
4. The Declaration—Form and General Requisites 82
5. The Declaration—General Rules as to Alleging Place, Time, Title and Other Common Matters 102
6. The Declaration—General Rules as to Manner of Pleading 130

PART THREE—OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS—THE COMMON-LAW ACTIONS

7. The Action of Trespass 151
8. The Action of Trespass on the Case 173
9. The Action of Trover 206
10. The Action of Ejectment 225
11. The Action of Detinue 244
12. The Action of Replevin 253
13. The Action of Debt 273
14. The Action of Covenant 303
15. The Action of Account 310
16. The Action of Special Assumpsit 318
17. The Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit 337

PART FOUR—DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

18. Motions of Defendant After the Declaration and Before the Plea 368
19. Considerations Preliminary to the Classification of Defenses 378
20. The Demurrer 384
21. Pleas—Dilatory 410
22. Pleas—Peremptory or in Ear 433
23. The Replication 513
24. The Production, Tender, and Joinder of Issue 532

SUMMARY OF CONTENTS

PART FIVE—LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Chapter  Page
25. Trial by Court or by Jury 536
26. Aider and Amendment 553
27. Retrospective Motions 565

PART SIX—JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

28. The Judgment 584
29. The Execution 589
30. Appellate Review 596
Table of Cases 605
Index 647
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## PART ONE. DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW PLEADING AND ITS IMPORTANCE IN MODERN PRACTICE

### CHAPTER 1. COMMON-LAW PLEADING AND PRACTICE—STILL SURVIVES AS THE BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. The Place of Common-Law Pleading in the Law</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. The Importance of Common-Law Pleading</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. The Functions of Pleading at Common Law</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. The Development of Substantive Law out of Procedure</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Relation of Common-Law Pleading to Other Systems</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. The Status of Common-Law Pleading Under the Codes</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Merely Another Step in the Evolutionary Development of the Common Law**

### CHAPTER 2. THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE COMMON-LAW FORMS OF ACTION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8. Origin of the Common-Law Forms of Action</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART TWO. OFFENSIVE PLEADING—GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

CHAPTER 3. THE COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

14. The Court 69
15. Jurisdiction of Courts 70
16. Process—The Original Writ 71
17. Service—Personal and Constructive 75
18. The Appearance 78
19. The Pleadings 80

CHAPTER 4. THE DECLARATION—FORM AND GENERAL REQUISITES

20. Formal Parts of the Declaration 82
21. The Actual Statement of the Cause of Action 86
22. Ultimate and Evidentiary Facts 90
23. Ultimate Facts and Conclusions of Law 92
24. Several Counts in the Same Declaration 94
25. Joinder of Different Causes of Action 96

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Sec.  Page
26. Different Versions of the Same Cause of Action 98
27. Conformance to Process 100

CHAPTER 5. THE DECLARATION GENERAL RULES AS TO ALLEGING PLACE, TIME, TITLE AND OTHER COMMON MATTERS

28. Laying the Venue 102
29. Local and Transitory Actions 103
30. Local Facts—Venue in Pleadings Subsequent to the Declaration 107
31. Consequences of Mistake or Omission 107
32. Time 108
33. When Time Must be Truly Stated 108
34. When Time Need Not be Truly Stated 109
35. Time of Continuing Acts 110
36. Description of Property 111
37. Names of Persons 113
38. Parties to the Action 114
39. Showing Title 115
40. Title in the Party or in One Whose Authority He Pleads 116
41. Alleging Derivation of Title—Estates in Fee Simple 118
42. Alleging Derivation of Title—Particular Estates 119
43. Title by Inheritance 120
44. Title by Alienation or Conveyance 120
45. Manner of Pleading Conveyance 120
46. The Written Conveyance and the Statute of Frauds 121
47. Where a Party Allege Title in His Adversary 122
48. What is a Sufficient Allegation of Liability 122
CHAPTER 6. THE DECLARATION—GENERAL RULES AS TO MANNER OF PLEADING

55. Statements to be Positive
56. Certainty in General
57. When a General Mode of Pleading is Proper
58. When General Pleading is Sufficient
59. What Particularity is Generally Required
60. Facts in Knowledge of Adversary
61. Inducement or Aggravation
62. Acts Regulated by Statute
63. What May Be Omitted—Matters Judicially Noticed
64. Matters in Anticipation
65. Matters Implied
66. Matters Presumed
67. Surplusage
68. Descriptive Averments
69. Repugnancy
70. Ambiguity or Doubt

XXII

TABLE OF CONTENTS

See. Page
71. Pleadings in the Alternative 14G
72. Duplicity in General 147
73. Inducement 148
74. Consequences of Duplicity 148
75. Pleadings to be True 149
76. Conformance to Customary Forms 150

PART THREE. OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS—THE COMMON-LAW ACTIONS

CHAPTER 7. THE ACTION OF TRESPASS

77. Scope of the Action 152
78. Forms of the Declaration 154
79. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General 156
80. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession 156
81. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act 164
82. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages 170
83. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court 170

CHAPTER 8. THE ACTION OF TRESPASS ON THE CASE

84. Scope of the Action 173
85. Case Distinguished From Trespass 176
86. Election Between Trespass and Case 181
87. Form of the Declaration in Trespass on the Case 182
88. Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:
(1) In General
89. Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession
90. Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Facts Showing the Existence of a Legal Duty on the Part of the Defendant
91. Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act in Breach of His Duty
92. Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:
   (5) The Damages
93. Particular Applications of Case as the Great Residuary Common-Law Remedy for Various Wrongs
94. Anticipating Defenses in Case
95. The Expansionistic Character of Case
96. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 9. THE ACTION OF TROVER

97. Scope of the Action
98. Property Which May be Converted
99. Trover—Distinguished from and Concurrent with Other Actions
100. Form of the Declaration in Trover

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sec.</th>
<th>Declaration in Trover—Essential Allegations:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>101</td>
<td>(1) In General</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102</td>
<td>(2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103</td>
<td>(3) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act of Conversion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104</td>
<td>(4) The Damages</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

105. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 10. THE ACTION OF EJECTMENT

106. Scope of the Action
107. Ejectment—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions
108. Forms of Declaration and Common Consent Rule
109. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General
110. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession
111. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Wrongful Ouster or Dispossession
112. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages
113. The Judgment in Ejectment
114. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General
115. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession
116. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Ouster or Ejectment
117. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages

Page 10 of 735
CHAPTER 11. THE ACTION OF DETINUE

119. Scope of the Action

120. Detinue—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions

121. Forms of Declaration and Judgment in Detinue

122. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General

123. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff's Right, Title, Interest or Possession

124. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Unlawful Detention

125. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages

126. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 12. THE ACTION OF REPLEVIN

127. Scope of the Action

128. Replevin—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions

129. Forms of Original Writ, Plaintiff, Declaration and Bond in Replevin

130. Declaration in Replevin—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General

131. Declaration in Replevin—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff's Right, Title, Interest or Possession

132. Declaration in Replevin—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Wrongful Act of Taking and Detention by the Defendant

133. Declaration in Replevin—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages

134. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 13. THE ACTION OF DEBT

135. Scope of the Action

136. Debt—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions

137. Forms of Declarations

138. Declaration in Debt—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General

139. Declaration in Debt—Essential Allegations:
   (2) In Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract

140. Declaration in Debt—Essential Allegations:
   (3) In Debt on a Specialty

141. Declaration in Debt—Essential Allegations:
   (4) In Debt on a Statute

142. Declaration in Debt—Essential Allegations:
   (5) In Debt on a Judgment

143. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 14. THE ACTION OF COVENANT

144. Scope of the Action

145. Covenant—Distinguished From and Concurrent With Other
    Actions

146. Form of Declaration in Covenant
CHAPTER 15. THE ACTION OF ACCOUNT

154. Scope of the Action

155. Account—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions

156. Form of Declaration in Account

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Sec. | Page
--- | ---
157. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations: | 815
   (1) In General | 
158. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations: | 
   (2) A Statement of the Facts Showing a Legal Relation Between Plaintiff and Defendant Which Gives Rise to the Right to an Accounting | 315
159. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations: | 
   (3) The Refusal to Account or the Breach | 316
160. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations: | 
   (4) The Damages | 316
161. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court | 316

CHAPTER 16. THE ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

162. Scope of the Action

163. Special Assumpsit—Distinguished From and Concurrent With Other Actions

164. Form of Declaration in Special Assumpsit

165. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 322
   (1) In General | 323
166. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 
   (2) The Statement of the Making of the Contract and the Terms of Promise on Which the Action is Founded | 323
167. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 
   (3) The Consideration | 325
168. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 
   (4) The Performance by Plaintiff of All Conditions Precedent | 328
169. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 
   (5) The Breach | 332
170. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations: | 
   (6) The Damages | 333
171. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court | 334
206. Pleas in Abatement
207. Nojoinder or Misjoinder of Parties Plaintiff in Contract
208. Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties Defendant in Contract
209. Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties in Actions Ex Delicto
210. Requisites of Pleas in Abatement
211. Pleas in Suspension
212. Judgment on Dilatory Pleas
213. Formal Commencement and Conclusion
214. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court

CHAPTER 22. PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR
215. The General Nature of Pleas in Bar
216. The Various Forms of Traverse or Denial
217. The General Requisites of Traverse

XXVII
TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sec.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>218.</td>
<td>Materiality of the Traverse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>219.</td>
<td>Selection of Issuable Proposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>220.</td>
<td>Denial of the Essentials Only</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>221.</td>
<td>Negatives and Affirmatives Pregnant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>222.</td>
<td>The Specific or Common Traverse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>223.</td>
<td>The Special Traverse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>225.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance—The Nature and Form</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>226.</td>
<td>Giving Color</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>227.</td>
<td>Pleadings in Estoppel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>228.</td>
<td>Admission by Failure to Deny</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>229.</td>
<td>Protestation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>230.</td>
<td>Argumentative Pleas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>231.</td>
<td>Pleas Amounting to the General Issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>232.</td>
<td>Partial Defenses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>233.</td>
<td>A Pleading Bad in Part is Bad Altogether</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>234.</td>
<td>Several Defenses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>235.</td>
<td>Duplicity in Pleas—In General</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>236.</td>
<td>Duplicity—Immaterial Matter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>237.</td>
<td>Duplicity—Matter Ill Pledged</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>238.</td>
<td>Duplicity—Matters Forming a Connected Proposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239.</td>
<td>Duplicity—Protestation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>240.</td>
<td>What Defenses May he Shown Under the General Issue and What May or Must be Pledged Specially</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Trespass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>242.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trespass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243.</td>
<td>The Hилary Rules—Their Effect Upon Negative and Affirmative Defenses in Trespass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>244.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Trespass on the Case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>245.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trespass on the Case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>246.</td>
<td>The Hилary Rules—Their Effect Upon Affirmative and Negative Defenses in Trespass on the Case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>247.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Trover</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>248.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trover</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>249.</td>
<td>The Hилary Rules—Their Effect Upon Negative and Affirmative Defenses in Trover</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>250.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Ejectment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>251.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Ejectment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>252.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Detinue</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sec.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>264.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Debt on Judgments</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>265.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Debt on Judgments</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>266.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Covenant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>267.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Covenant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>268.</td>
<td>The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the General Issue in Covenant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>269.</td>
<td>The General Issue in Special Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>270.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Special Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>271.</td>
<td>The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the Scope of the General Issue in Special Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>272.</td>
<td>The General Issue in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>273.</td>
<td>Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>274.</td>
<td>The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the Scope of the General Issue in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>275.</td>
<td>Comparison of Scope of Different General Issues</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>276.</td>
<td>Notice of Defenses Under the General Issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>277.</td>
<td>Plea Puis Darrein Continuance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>278.</td>
<td>Recoupment and Set-Off</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER 23. THE REPLICATION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sec.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>279.</td>
<td>The Various Kinds of Replication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>280.</td>
<td>The Replication De Injuria—Definition, Scope and Availability</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>281.</td>
<td>Forms of Plea and Replication De Injuria Thereto</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>282.</td>
<td>Formal Parts of Replication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>283.</td>
<td>Status of the Republican De Injuria Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>284.</td>
<td>Departure Defined and the Reason for the Rule Against Departure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>285.</td>
<td>The Kinds of Departures and the Stage of Pleading at Which They May Occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>286.</td>
<td>The Mode of Taking Advantage of a Departure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>287.</td>
<td>Status of Departure Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>288.</td>
<td>New Assignment—Definition, Necessity and Application</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>289.</td>
<td>Form of New Assignment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>290.</td>
<td>New Assignment as in the Nature of a New Declaration</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER 24. THE PRODUCTION, TENDER, AND 
JOINDER OF ISSUE

292. Production of Issue 582
293. Tender of Issue 532
294. Joinder of Issue 535

PART FIVE. LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY
CHAPTER 25. TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

295. Trial by Court 536
296. Trial by Jury 538

XXIX

HANDBOOK 
ON 
COMMON-LAW PLEADING

PART ONE
DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW PLEADING 
AND ITS IMPORTANCE IN MODERN 
PRACTICE

See.

1. The Place of Common-Law Pleading in the Law.
2. The Importance of Common-Law Pleading.
3. The Functions of Pleading at Common Law.
4. The Development of Substantive Law out of Procedure.
5. Relation of Common-Law Pleading to Other Systems.
7. Modern Procedure Under Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court— Merely Another Step in the 
Evolutionary Development of the Common Law.

COMMON-LAW PLEADING, the ancient Reign of Edward I (1272~1307)1 and further methodology used for bringing legal issues perfected during the Reign of Edward M before the Courts of England, is as old as the


CHAPTER 1
COMMON-LAW PLEADING AND PRACTICE—STILL 
SURVIVES AS THE BASIS OF MODERN 
REMEDIAL LAW

Anglo-Saxon Legal System and as new as yesterday’s cases before the Trial and Appellate Courts of the United States. First formed and cultivated as a science in the

1
BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Chapter 1

In general on the subject of Common-Law Pleading, see the following:

Treatises: Glanvill, Tractatus de Legibus et Consuetudinibus regni Angliae (1187—1189) [New edition edited by George B. Woodbine, 4 vols. (New Haven, 1932)]; Bracton, De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliae (1250—1258) (London, 1640); Casus Placitandi, a collection of decisions of Judges, all of whom lived before 1260, according to Holdsworth, and which in style and subject matter anticipated the Year Books; Yet Assayer (before 1267), a tract on Procedure probably by Hencham, and reported in Woodbine, Pour Thirteenth Century Law Tracts (New Haven, 1910); Cadit Assisa (1267 or after), a summary of that part of Bracton’s Tractatis by Sir Travers Twiss, London, 1878—1883; Henham, Magna (1270—1275), based on Bracton, and containing information on the rules of Pleading and Procedure in the Real Actions; Hencham, Pana (1285 or after), containing Instruction as to Pleading and Procedure in certain Real Actions; Britton, Ancient Pleas of the Crown (Trans. by F. M. Nichols, 1270); Fleta, An Epitome of Britton (1290); Articuli ad Novas Narrationes (1326—1340), consisting for most part of Precedents of Pleading; Register of Writs (1326—1377); Pynson’s Book of Entries (1510); Fitzherbert, Natura Breuim (1534), a selection of Writs together with a commentary; Rastell’s Entries (1564); Theloua, Digest of Original Writs and Things Concerning Them (1579), a most orderly treatise on Procedure grounded on the Year Books and printed at the end of the 1687 edition of the Register of Writs; Coke, Book of Entries (1614); Powell, Attorney’s Academy (1623); Buer, Doctrina Pleadandi, or The Art and Science of Pleading (1640); Coke, Declarations and Pleadings contained in his eleven Books of Reports (1650); Aston, Placita Latine Rediviva: A Book of Entries (1661—1788); Browne, Formule beie pleitandi: A Bood of Entries (1671, 1675); Liber Placitandi (1674), a book of Special Pleadings containing Precedents; Vivian, The Exact Plead: A Book of Entries (1684); Cliffl, A New Book of Declarations, Pleadings, Verdicts, Judgments, and Judicial Writs, with the Entries Thereupon (1703, 1719); Lilly, A Collection of Modern Entries (1723, an English edition appeared in 1741); Euer, A System of Pleading, including translation of the Doctrina Placitandi, or the Art and Science of Pleading (Dublin 1701); American Precedents and Declarations (Boston, 1802); Wentworth, A Complete System of Pleadings (London 1797—1949); Story, Selection of Pleadings in Civil Actions Subsequent to the Declaration (Salem 1805); Lawes, Elementary Treatise on Pleading (London 1806) 1st Am. from 1st London ed. (Portsmouth, N. N. 1808); Booth, The Nature and Practice of Real Actions (1st Am. ed. New York 1808); Lawes, Practical Treatise on Pleading (Boston 1811); Hening, The American Pleader and Lawyer’s Guide, 2 vols. (New York 1811); Chitty, Treatise on Pleading with Precedents, 3 vols. (Springfield 1833); Harris, Modern Entries, 2 vols. (Edited by Evans, Baltimore 1821); Jackson, Treatise on the Pleadings and Practice of Real Actions (Boston 1828); Saunders, The Law of Pleading and Evidence in Civil Actions (2d Am. ed., Philadelphia 1831); Could, Treatise on the Principles of pleading In Civil Actions (1832); Tyrwhitt, Pleading (London 1846); Williams, Introduction to Pleading and Practice (London 1857); Stephen, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, a View of the Whole Proceedings in a Suit at Law (3rd Am. ed. from 2d London ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1892); Evans, Pleading in Civil Actions (2d ed. by William Miller, Chicago 1879); Heard, Principles of Civil Pleading (Boston 1880); Maitland and Baildon, The Court Baron (London 1891); Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Forms (London 1808; 16th Am. ed. by J. C. Perkins, Springfield 1879); Shinn, Treatise on Pleading and Practice (Chicago 1892); McClelvey, Principles of Common-Law Pleading (1st ed. New York 1894); Stephen, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions (Am. ed. from 5th English ed., by Whiston, Cambridge, 1895); Shinn, Treatise on Pleading and Practice. 2 vols. (Chicago 1890); Poe, Pleading and Practice in Courts of Common Law (Baltimore 1897); Perry, Common-Law Pleading (Boston 1897); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law (St. Paul 1905); Maitland, Equity, The Forms of Action at Common Law (Cambridge 1909); Woodbine, Pour Thirteenth Century Law Tracts on Pleading] (New Raven 1910), containing: Judicium Essentiorum (1267—1275), a tract on Essoing probably by Hong-ham; Exceptiones ad Cassandum Brevia (7295 or after), [a tract on the Writs]; Modus Componendi Brevia or Cum Sum Necessarium (1285 or after), (a tract on the Writs]; Millar, Common-Law Pleading (Chicago 1914); Puterbaugh, Common Law Pleading and Practice in Illinois (6th ed. by L. D. Puterbaugh, Chicago 1916); Scott, Fundamentals of Procedure in Actions at Law (New York 1922); Shipman, Handbook of Common Law Pleading (3d ed. by Ballantyne, St. Paul 1923); Winfield, History of Conspiracy and Abuse of Legal Procedure (Cambridge 1925); Buhlen and Leake’s Precedents of Pleadings in Actions in the King’s Bench Division of the Nigh Court of Justice, (8th ed. by W. Wyatt-Paine, London 1924; 9th ed., London 1935); O’Donnell, Procedure and Form of Common-Law Pleading (Washington, B. C. 1934); Flucknitt, Concise History of the Common Law (3d ed. London 1940; 4th ed., London 1948); Fifoot, History and Sources of the Common Law (London 1949); Odgers, Principles of Pleading and Practice in Civil Actions In the nigh Court of Justice (1st ed., London 1891; 3d e.L., London 1897; 4th ed., London 1908; 5th ed., London 1903; 6th ed.,

COMMON-LAW PLEADING

(1327—1377) - it has served each succeeding generation as an effective instrument in the Administration of Justice, and today is still very much alive, both as an Operating System and as a guiding force in the recurring Waves of Reform designed to correct its abuses.
For more than Six Centuries, it was the only Method of Pleading in the Common-Law Courts of England—
King’s Bench, Exchequer, and Common Pleas—and for two hundred years it was the exclusive procedural device leading to the Trial of
Legal Issues in the United States. It was, however, subject to many defects,
due largely to the fact that the entire English Procedural System had grown up in a patchwork fashion, while the constantly expanding Substantive Law was outgrowing the Forms of Action which gave it birth. In the latter part of the Eighteenth and early part of the Nineteenth Centuries, under the impetus of Bentham’s searing criticism of the existing System of Law in England, with its Courts, its Special Pleading, and its general atmosphere of Delay and Administrative Inefficiency, these restrictive influences be-came clear to the people, a demand for Reform sprang up and the movement for the improvement of procedure slowly got under way,
The impact of this development, strangely enough, first bore fruit in America in the State of Louisiana, with the
framing of Livingston’s Code of Practice—and the Penal Code in 1824, which latter was never enacted. This was followed in England by the adoption of the Hilary Rules in 1834,6 and
5. In referring to the Improvement In the Science of Pleading, Sir Edward Coke declared: 'In the Reign of Edward III (1327—1377) Pleadings grew to Perfection, both without lameness and curiosity; for then the Judges and Professors of Law were excellently learned, and then Knowledge of the Law flourished; the Serleants of the Law, &c. drew their own pleadings, and therefore [it was] truly said by Justice Thirning, in the Reign of Henry IV (1399—1413) that in the time of Edward III the Law was in a higher degree than it had been any time before; for before that time the Manner of Pleading w-s but feeble, In comparison of that It was afterward In the Reign of the same King.” 2 Coke, Lit. titon, 304b, Lib. 3, Cap. 0, ~ 534 (1st Am. from the 16th European ed. by Francis Hargrave and Charles Butler, Philadelphia, 1812).


7. Livingston’s Penal Code, which was a product of Intensive preparation, and was published in 1824, was never enacted into law as such by the Legislature of Louisiana.

Edward Livingston was born in 1764 and died in 1836, or about six years after Field began his Professional Career. A
native of New York, and a brother of Chancellor Robert t. Livingston, his Penal Code of Louisiana, which was published in 1824, attracted great attention in England and on the Continent. David Dudley Field Centenary Essays, 19 (Edited by Reppy, New York, 1949).

1 The Hilary Rules, designed to restore the ancient
strict Common-Law theory as to the Scope of the
BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW
in the United States by the New York Code of Procedure in 1848. Thereafter, in relatively quick succession, the
English Parliament enacted the Common-Law Procedure Acts of 1852, 1854, and 1860, and the Supreme Court of Judicature Acts of 1873 and 1875,12 now for the most part replaced by the Supreme Court of Judicature (Consolidation) Act of 1925.13 And in 1938 the Supreme Court of the United States made effective
the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure.14 In conseGeneral Issue, were promulgated pursuant to the Law Amendment
Act, 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 42, ~ 1 (1833).

7. “After careful consideration and amendment by the New York Legislature, the draft to a proposed code] was enacted into Law on April 12, 1548, N. Y.Laws 1848, c. 379, to become effective on July 1 of the same year. Written in the form of a Code Containing 391 Sections, it became known at once as the Code of Procedure or as the Field Code. This title was far too broad in scope as the Act related only to a small portion of the Adjective Law, and expressly retained the Old Common Law or Statutory Rule where not expressly abolished by the Code.” Reppy, The Field Codification Concept, in the David Dudley Field Centenary Essays, 17, 33—34 (Edited by Reppy, New York, 1949).

8. 15 & 10 Vict. c. 76 (1852).

9—17 & 18 Vict. c. 125 (1854).

10. 23 & 24 Vict. c. 120 (1860).

11. 36 & 37 Vict. c. 06 (1873).

12. 38 & 39 Vict. c. 77 (1875).

13. 15 & 10 Geo. V. e. 49 (1925).

14. The Federal Rules were drafted by an Advisory Committee appointed by the Supreme Court under the authority of a Federal Statute enacted In 1934. Act of June 19, 1934, u 651, ~ 1, 2; 48 Stat. 1064, 28 U.S.C.A. ~ 723b, fl3c. See, on the earlier phases of the struggle for Federal Procedural Reform, article by Shelton, The Reform of Judicial Procedure, 1 Va.U.Rev. 89 (1913). For detailed Information concerning the adoption, background and drafting of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, see Clark, Handbook of the Law sequence thereof, both at home and abroad, the System of Pleading as developed at Common Law, has been Modified by Judicial Decision, Changed by Statute, or by Rule of Court, and in some Jurisdictions ostensibly swept away in its entirety—so the Reformers thought—but subsequent events have cast grave doubts on this conclusion, as the solemn and stubborn fact is that Common-Law Pleading still survives as the basis of our Modern Remedial Law.”

Select any individual and you will find that he is what he is today because of what his father and mother were yesterday; he cannot escape his ancestry, but must make his way through life with the physical, mental, moral and spiritual assets with which he was naturally endowed by the union of his parents. It is true that within certain limits he may seem to change with his environment, of code Pleading, e. 1, Eistory, Systems and Function of Pleading, 31—39 (24 Cd., St. Paul 1947). In this connection it should be recalled that progress in the Reform of Criminal Procedure has followed up and to some extent paralleled the Reform of the Civil Procedure which has been under way since 1848. In 1930 the American Law Institute issued its Code of Criminal Procedure, which has subsequently substantially influenced State Criminal Procedural Developments In the Several States, In 1941, pursuant to the rule-making authority granted to the Supreme Court by Congress, the Advisory Committee on Rules of Criminal Procedure was appointed by the Court, which published two Preliminary Drafts, with motes, and its Final Report to the Court in July, 1944. The rules suggested therein were adopted, with certain modifications, by the Court on December 26, 1944, to become effective on March 21, 1946. The Court also gave directions that the Rules be reported to Congress In accordance with the terms of the Enabling Act, 323 U.S. 821, 65 S.Ct. CLXXIV (1944).


15. “While the New Rules have abolished the distinctive Common-Law Forms, the essential and differentiating rules applicable to Pleading as established at Common Law still survive as a basis of Remedial Law.” Mi nturn, S., In Ward v. Huff, 94 N.J.L. 81, 84, 109 A. 287, 288 (1920).

4 Ch. 1

COMMON-LAW PLEADING

acquire a better training, and contribute more to the community than did his forbears, but any advance or improvement he may make must be done within the limits of his ancestral background. And so it is with institutions such as the Law which, after all, are merely the product of joint individual effort. The Law is what It is today because of what the
Law was yesterday; it cannot escape its ancestry, and it, too, must progress against the background of its history. Like the individual, so with the Common-Law System of Procedure, which we all proudly claim as a priceless part of our Anglo-Saxon heritage, we may change, we may add to or take away those Parts of the System which have outgrown their usefulness, just as the Modern Common-Law Actions superseded the Old Real Actions when they became archaic, but it is no more possible, in any realistic sense, to abolish the System in its entirety, with all its implications for both the past and the future, than it is for an individual to destroy his ancestry, or for mankind to abolish history or civilization.

- Infinite damage has been done to the cause of legitimate Legal Reform, to the cause of

16. The old Real Actions fell under one of the heads of Blackstone’s famous classification of Actions as Real, Personal and Mixed. The Real Actions were by far the most important during the early developmental period of the Common Law. Included therein were Writs of Right Proper and Writs in the Nature of Writs of Right—such Writs, among others, as the Writ of Right de rationabili parte, the Writ of Advowson, the Writ of Dower, the Writ of Dower wide nihil Rabet, and the Writ of quare impedit. These actions were feudal in character and were concerned with disputes over land. Because of the technicalities required in their Control and the length of time Involved in carrying their process through, these actions, along with those which fell under the other two heads, were gradually superseded by what are now known as the Eleven Modern Common-Law Personal Actions, as a result of evolutionary steps in the development of the Common Law. What had, in effect, long before occurred as a matter of practice, was officially recognized by the Real Property Limitation Act of 1883, 3 & 4 Wni. IV. c. 27, § 36, which swept aside the Real and Mixed Actions, with certain exceptions, effective December 31, 1834.

Legal Education, at the expense of litigants, students of law, and the public welfare generally, by proclaiming the concept that all that has gone before in our procedural ancestry should be regarded as obsolete and worthless, and is not to be considered in terms of Modern Pleading and Practice, aid in terms of Modern Legal Education. Those who take this limited view have clearly confused the real merits of the Common-Law System with those portions of the System which were needlessly technical, thus overlooking the salient fact that it had developed many sound and enduring principles of legal procedure. They have also overlooked the fact that there is greater similarity in the essential principles underlying Pleading at Common Law, in Equity, under Modern Codes and Practice Acts, and even under the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure now in effect in the Federal Courts, than is generally realized.  

17. Sir Montague Crackeuthorpe, O.C., in an address to the American Bar Association, in reference to the utility of the study of Common-Law Pleading stated: “In the hands of those who understood it, the System of Common-Law Pleading was infallible in attaining the purpose for which it existed. If all who brought Causes to Trial had possessed a proper acquaintance with this Branch of Law and a reasonable mental alertness, it would never have beer, hinted that Pleading was a means of turning the decision of a question from ‘the very Right of the Matter’ to immaterial points. But pleaders of inferior and slovenly mental disposition suffered themselves to be misled, deliberately it is to be feared, by theft more acute brethren; arid the pop—ular mind came to consider the whole system a mere series of traps and pitfalls for the unwary, an Impediment to Justice that must be abolished. In truth, even these evils might well have been remedied by allowing free liberty of amendment, and reducing to a moderate sum the costs payable on the grant of such privilege. Those concerned in reform movements, however, often lose sight of their real object In a feverish anxiety to ‘cut deep’ and at once; and this explains why the system for bringing a cause to trial In convenient and exact form was discarded.” Note, Common Law Pleading, 10 Harv.L.Rev. 238, 239 (1896).

18. "There Is no rule regulating the substance of Pleadings under the Codes which Is not either taken directly from the older system, or framed by analogy to the application of the same principles. The BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Moreover, the essential elements of causes of action which must be Plead have not been abolished by the Reformed Procedure, nor the experience of the past thirty years has demonstrated that the Codes have by no means brought about that perfect completeness and simplicity in all Forms of Legal Procedure hoped for and predicted by their supporters, and expected, perhaps, during the earlier years of their adoption." Shipman, Code Pleading: The Aid of the Earlier Systems, 7 Yale L.J. 197 (1398).

"The Problems and Functions and Principles of Pleading are essentially the same in all systems, whether at Common Law, under the Code, in Equity, or by Rule of Court." Shipman, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, Introduction, 7, 8 (3d ed. by Ballantine, St. Paul, 1925).

Thus, in Minnesota, in the case of Solomon v. Vinson, Si MInn, 205, 17 NW. 340 (1883), a Code Complaint which alleged, among other things, that the defendant was indebted to the plaintiff on an Account Past Due, for Goods Sold and Delivered, was held to contain all the Allegations necessary to constitute a good Indebtedness count in an Action of Debt at Common Law, the Court remarking that “under that System of Pleading It was just as necessary to allege the Facts as it is under the Code.” in Crump v. MImns, 04 NC. 707, 771 (1370), Rodman, 3., declared: “We take occasion here to suggest to pleaders that the Rules of the
Common Law as to **Pleading**, which are only the rules of logic, have not been abolished by The Code. Pleas should not state the Evidence, but the Facts, which are the Conclusions from the Evidence, according to their legal effect; and complaints should especially avoid wandering into matter which if traversed would not lend to a decisive Issue. It is the Object of all Pleading to arrive at some Single, Simple and Material Issue.”

Campbell, 3., In Henry mv. Co. v, Semionian, 40 Cola. 269, 90 P. 682 (1907), stated: “A Count In Indebitatus Assumpsit, framed substantially as required at Common Law, Is now held to be a sufficient compliance with the Code mandate as to Allegations of Fact”


have the Fundamental Conceptions common to all Systems of Procedure as to the manner of making Allegations which reveal the contentions of the rival Parties, been changed. As Lord Mansfield so well said:

“The Substantial Rules of Pleading are founded in strong sense, and in the soundest and closest logic; and so appear, when well understood and explained; though, by being misunderstood and misapplied, they are made use of as instruments of chicanery.” 1- fi- a result of such misapplication and chicanery by men who resorted to the technicalities of Special Pleading to serve their own selfish ends, as a result of the portrayal by its enemies of the System as a mere game of skill, in which the helpless litigant became a pawn in a wilderness of arbitrary technicality and confusion; in which it was pictured as the master and not the servant of the courts, or as an end in itself, instead of an instrument for the fair and equitable adjustments of substantive human rights, the System of Pleading and Procedure as developed at Common Law, was gradually brought into popular disrepute by the efforts of well-meaning Reformers, who emphasized its admitted Defects, but failed to point out to the people of England and the United States the matchless precision of the Old System as a vehicle for reducing human controversies into distinct Issues of Fact or of Law, which could be satisfactorily adjusted, thus achieving the principal end of all government, to wit, the preservation of Law and Order. Entirely too much time and effort have been expended in criticizing or eulogizing the Common-


20 Thus, the famous historian, Beeves, in referring to the times of Henry VI (1422—1461) and Edward XV (1461—1483), stated “Such was the humor of the age that this captiousness was not discountenanced by the Beach. . . The calamity has been that after other branches of knowledge took a more liberal turn, the minutiae of Pleading continued still to be respected with a sort of religious deference.” 3

6 II. Seenote21 onpage7.

 COMMON-LAW PLEADING

Law System of Pleading, It now seems appropriate that its function as a workable and expanding Instrument of Justice for genHistory of English Law, e. XXIII, 621 (Finlason ed. Philadelphia, 1880).

In Allen v. Scott, 13 Ill. 80, 84 (1851), Caton, 3., said:

“It must be admitted that many of these distinctions are more artificial than substantial, and do not contribute very essentially to the promotion of the Ends of Justice. So long, however, as we look to the Rules of the Common Law to govern us in Pleading, we are not at liberty to disregard them.”


“By the wooden manner in which It came to be administered, many of its artificial distinctions and rules became an obstacle to the very purposes which they were intended to serve, and diverted the attention of the Court to side issues, so that the suitor was perhaps unable to get through the vestibule of Justice to have the Merits of his Case considered.” Shipman, Handbook of Common Law Pleading, Introduction, 6, i 11 (2d ed, by Ballantine, St. Paul, 1923).

21 Among the eulogies by Judges, Lawyers and Writers, may be listed the following:
Littleton, during the Reign of Edward IV [1461—1483], in referring to the Art of Common-Law Pleading, declared: “And know, my son, that it is one of the most Honourable, Laudable, and Profitable Things in our Law, to have the science of well pleading in Actions Real and Personal; and therefore I counsel thee especially to imploy thy courage and care to learn it.” 2 Coke, Littleton (Institutes of the Laws of England) Lib. 3, Cap. 9, § 534 (1st Am. from the 10th European ed., Philadelphia, 1812).

Professor Samuel Tyler stated: “It (the Common-Law System of Pleading) must be admitted to be the greatest of all judicial inventions.” First Report of the Maryland Commissioners on Rules of Practice in the Courts 80, 91 (1855).

“This [the Common-Law] System, matured by the wisdom of ages, founded on Principles of Truth and Sound Reason, has been ruthlessly abolished in many of our States, who have rashly substituted in Its place the suggestions of sciolists, who invent new Codes and Systems of Pleading to order. But this attempt to abolish all species, and establish a single genus, is found to be beyond the power of legislative omnipotence. They cannot compel the human mind not to distinguish between things that differ. The distinction between the different Forms of Actions for different wrongs, requiring different remedies, lies In the nature of things; it IS absolutely Inseparable from the Correct Administration of Justice In Common-Law Courts.” Grier, 3., in erations, in both England and America, should be pointed up and emphasized as well as its long-term significance as the fountain-source of our Modem Substantive and Remedial Rights, if not our very liberties,” and finally, its value as an influence which continues and must inevitably continue to mould future Anglo-Saxon Conceptions of Law and


According to Professor Keigwin, Cases in Code Pleading, 16 (Rochester, N. Y. 1926), the Code has been of doubtful value in simplifying procedure: “One who will read the Reports of New York or of any other Code State will observe that before the Reform comparatively few Cases turned upon points of pleading, and that most of such cases involved questions of Substantive Law which were presented in technical guise by reasons of their Development upon the Record; it will also be observed that the adoption of the Code was at once followed by a large increase of litigation concerning procedural matters, which kind of litigation shows no present signs of abatement. Indeed, the current digests disclose an immensely greater number of cases deciding pure Matters of Pleading in the Code States than cases of that kind coming from Common Law Jurisdictions. One reason, of course, is that the Common Law system is so thoroughly settled that few novel questions can arise.”

This problem under the Codes is also discussed in Sunderland, Cases on Procedure Annotated, Code Pleading, Preface viii (Chicago, 1913).

“The love of innovation induced the State of New York some years ago, to abrogate Common-Law Pleading, and introduce a Code of Procedure for the regulation of litigation in its courts; and notwithstanding the lamentable confusion and uncertainty, and the greatly increased expense which has thereby been brought into the Administration of Justice in that State, other States have followed in her track of barbaric empiricism. Mr. Justice Grier has, from the bench of the Supreme Court of the United States, rebuked the folly of abolishing Common-Law Pleading, and substituting the Common-Sense Practice, as it may be called, in its stead.” Stephen, A. Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, Preface, vii (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1892).


S

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Justice in a free society, if we are to preserve our ideal of Government by Law as opposed to Government by Men.23

What, then, is the place of Common-Law Pleading in the Law and what is its real significance to Modern Procedure?

THE PLACE OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING IN THE LAW

1. Anglo-American Law is divided into Public Law and Private Law. Private Law is separated into Substantive Law and Adjective Law, with Common-Law Pleading constituting the first procedural topic thereunder.

ANGLO-AMERICAN law has been separated into two main divisions—Public Law— which has to do with the regulation of relations between independent states and between a state and its citizens, and—Private Law— which regulates the relations between the citizens of the state. Private law, in turn, is divided into two branches, to wit, Substantive Law, which defines rights and liabilities, and Adjective or Procedural Law, which furnishes the ways
and means of enforcing these rights and liabilities. And Adjective Law, in its broadest aspects and prior to 1848, included (1) Common-Law Pleading; (2) Equity Pleading; (3) Evidence, and (4) Trial Practice. The position of Common-Law Pleading in the Law will, therefore, appear clearly from the chart on the next page.

As a result of the impact of the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, 24 our Modern System Apparently the earliest use in America of the phrase, Government by Law as opposed to Government by Men, is found in Part I, Art. 30, of the Massachusetts Constitution of 1780.

24. KY. Laws 1848, c. 111

As a result of the impact of the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, our Modern System of Code Pleading, 25 which is a combination of the better elements of the Common Law and Equity Systems of Pleading, came into existence.

The influence of this development under the Codes finally led, in 1938, to the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure for the regulation of Practice in the Federal Courts. Following the example of the nation some of the states subsequently abandoned their Codes in favor of a System of Procedural Regulation by Rule of Court. This treatise, however, is concerned primarily with the fundamental principles of Civil Pleading and Practice as developed at Common Law. And Civil Procedure is “the mode of proceeding by which a legal right is enforced, as distinguished from the law which gives or defines the right.” 26

25. “Code Pleading is the term applied to the Reformed System of Pleading initiated by the New York Code of 1848 and now in force in American jurisdictions. It is this latter system which concerns us in this book. But since it developed from the former systems and in many respects continues various details and parts of them, it is necessary to consider the antecedents of Code pleading in the other systems.” Clark, Handbook of the Law of Code Pleading, c. 1, History, Systems, and Functions of Pleading, 4 (2d ed., St. Paul 1947).


For a definition of Procedure, compare the following:

“Procedure may be defined as a Series of Symbolic Actions, generally accompanied by words, and, in developed societies, by the Exhibition of Written Documents, by means of which Rights or Liberties guaranteed by a society are reasserted by its individual members. Reassertion is the Essence of Procedure; for in the sense in which we shall use the term—the sense of regaining before a competent court a status that has been lost or questioned—it assumes an already violated right.” Greenidge, The Legal Procedure of Cicero’s Time, Introduction, 1 (Oxford 1901).

See. 1

THE PLACE OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING

chart srownta PosInoN OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING IN THE LAW

9

Awn&toAMERICAN

PUBLIC

LAW

PnvAn LAW

ADJECTIVE
THE IMPORTANCE OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING

2. A knowledge of Common Law Pleading is important because
   (I) Through its study the student acquires a working appreciation of the Historical Development of the Law;
   (II) It is essential as an aid in understanding the early English and American decisions in which Rulings on the Law are only comprehensible to the modern student in the light of a working knowledge of Pleading at Common Law;
   (III) It is an essential ingredient of the process by which the Law Student acquires the technique of analyzing Causes of Action;
   (IV) It is essential to a full and comprehensive understanding of Modern Pleading and Practice.

To the beginning student or prospective lawyer, an understanding of the fundamental principles of Common-Law Pleading and Procedure is highly essential. While the greater portion of our Modern Law School Curriculum is devoted to a consideration of Substantive Law, the student should constantly bear in mind that a litigant’s Substantive Rights ordinarily cannot be effectively sustained ex.
third, the fact that the Older Cases are expressed in Terms of Pleading, so that they cannot be studied understandably without it. The Statutes which seek to abrogate or simplify Common-Law Pleading use its terms. In order to understand the progress of the law, the well-educated Lawyer must live through its evolution. Further, in Modern Codes the foundation ideas of pleading have not changed.” Shipman, Elendbook of Common-Law heading, 4, 5 (3d ed. by Ballantine, St. Paul 1923).


except by one adequately trained in the Art and Science of Procedure, who appreciates the technical steps and maneuvers necessary to present properly his client’s case in Court, and how to conduct it to a successful conclusion. A mere Mechanic of the Law may get in and out of the court, but often to the detriment of the client’s interest, and in a manner destructive of the standards of the legal profession. If, however, he desires to become an Artisan of the Law, to fully appreciate the significance of the Reformed Procedure and the procedural tools used for the protection of his client’s interest, he must understand the fabric of the Common Law out of which they have been constructed. In order to do this he must be conversant with the evolutionary steps which led up to our Modern System of Procedure. In short, unless a lawyer is sufficiently expert in handling the procedural devices available under the Law, any knowledge which he acquires concerning the Substantive Law goes for naught. It thus appears that a mastery of Adjective Law is a prerequisite to a mastery of the Law as a whole if a person hopes to become a successful lawyer. For as Justice Story so truly said: “No man ever mastered it, (Special Pleading) who was not by that very means made a profound lawyer.” ~ It is necessary, therefore, that every individual who desires to become a Lawyer must live and in a manner comprehensible to the Modern Student of the Law, to a working knowledge of Pleading at Common Law. The Issues in these early cases, framed at a period of

In the first place the study of Common-Law Pleading is important because through

29. This statement by Justice Story was made in “An Address Delivered Before the Members of the Suffolk Bar, at their Anniversary, on the Fourth of September, 1821, at Boston,” ante is reported in 1 Am.Jur., 1, 28 (1829).


Sec. 2

IMPORTANCE OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING

its study- the student acquires a working appreciation of the Historical Development of the Law. He comes to realize the relationship between Procedural and Substantive Law, that Right and Remedy are bound together.29 that Substantive Rights are expressed in terms of Remedial Rights and Forms of Action. In short, it is essential to realize that the Forms of Action are, in fact, the categories of legal liability, and that most of our Modern Substantive Contract, Tort and Property Law, had its origin in and developed out of Procedure. It was in this very connection that Sir Henry Maine observed that the rules of Substantive Law had the appearance of being “secreted in the interstices of Procedure.” 30 What Maine was saying was that the study of the Forms of Action is one of the richest sources of information for the student of legal development and theory, that there can be no true understanding of the Law except as against its Historical Background and that this history can only be fully and intelligently interpreted in the light of the Origin and Growth of Procedure.31

29. Maine clearly had this in mind when, in referring to the dependence of Eight upon Remedy, as illustrated by the Common Law Forms of Action, he declared: “The Forms of Action we have buried, but they still rule us from their graves.” The Forms of Action at Common Law, Lecture 1, 2 (Cambridge, 1945).


But compare the statement of Street, who declared:

“To the modern mind no line of cleavage is more marked than between Substantive and Adjective law. It was not always so. The extremely important that Adjective Law’ was first used by Bentham. In early stages of legal growth the two elements are inseparable.” 3 Foundations of Legal Liability, e. I, I (Northport, 1000).

31. Sir Montague Craikenthorp, Q.C., in an address to the American Bar Association, in reference to the utility of the study of Common-Law Pleading, stated: “And, so long as Written Pleadings remain, the best masters of the art will be they who can interpret the apparent licence of the new system with that spirit of exactness and self-restraint which

In the second place a knowledge of Common-Law Procedure is essential as an aid in understanding the early English and Amen-can decisions in which Rulings on the Law are only comprehensible to the Modern Student in the light of a working knowledge of Pleading at Common Law. The Issues in these early cases, framed at a period of
time when it was not yet certain whether the Pleadings should be English, French, or Latin, and while they were still in their Developmental Stage, were necessarily formulated on the basis of the Older System. In consequence, the opinions rendered in these cases are sometimes in language and phraseology understandable only by one versed in the Common-Law System of Procedure. Thus, the phrase “the lessor of the plaintiff” is understandable only in the light of the Fiction of Ejectment; the doctrine of *quid pro quo* has meaning only to one who has studied the early cases involving Debt; and an “executed consideration” is meaningful only against the historical development of Assumpsit out of the Tort action of Trespass on the Case *Super So Assumpsit*. Moreover, one called upon to consider a decision in the Year Books might be struck by the inclusion of much material or discussion which had no apparent bearing upon the final result. But such inclusion would be clear to one acquainted with the History of Pleading, particularly that Stage of it in which the Pleadings were settled in the heat of battle, in the presence of one’s adversary, and by a process of Oral Altercation in which the Litigants, the Ennilows from a knowledge of the old.”


rolling Clerks, the Lawyers and the Judges played leading roles.35

In the third place, a knowledge of Procedural Law is an essential ingredient of the process by which the beginning Law Student acquires the technique of analyzing Causes of Action. *Pint*, it has value as an exercise in legal logic, and it serves “to fix the attention, give a habit of reasoning closely, quicken the apprehension, and invigorate the understanding.” These qualities constitute the foundation of all legal *investigation*. Second, the shadings between the Common-Law Forms of Action afford the student excellent practice in distinguishing one decision from another. *Third, no* educational device is comparable to a course on Common-Law Pleading for the purpose of teaching the beginner how to brief a case, reduce the controversy to a single, clear-cut, well-defined Issue of Fact or of Law, determine the holding of the Court and formulate the Rule and Principle of the decision. In short, it is an excellent device for extracting, like the roots of an equation, the true points in dispute; it is a time-tested scheme of matchless precision for separating the Issues of Fact from the Issues of Law, for the purpose of referring the case to the Court or the Jury. Finally, it gives the Student a valuable insight into the problem of what constitutes a Cause of Action, which is a necessary technique under any System of Procedure.

In the fourth place, a knowledge of Common-Law Pleading is essential to a full and comprehensive understanding of Modern

35. Reppy, Introduction to Civil Procedure, c. I, 2

- (Buffalo, 1944).


Pleading and Practice. In making a study of Pleading at Common Law the student is not dealing with Rules which are obsolete and without intimate relation to the Existing Law. The fundamental principles of Common-Law Procedure still prevail; only its technical and archaic characteristics have been abolished by Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court. This is true because Code Pleading springs from a Common-Law Ancestry; because Codification at best is only partial in scope, hence the principles of Common-Law Pleading necessarily remain as the great Residuary Law from which the gaps in the Code System of Procedure have been and will continue to be filled, and against the background of which its every provision must be construed and understood. Thus, to give but one example, the Code states that “the Complaint must be stated in plain and concise language,” which calls for
explanation or interpretation. Does it actually mean what it says or does it mean something else? After full consideration the Courts have found that at Common Law the Declaration, in order to state a good Cause of Action, was required to state Ultimate Facts, and not Evidentiary Facts and not Conclusions of Law, and that the Rule under the Statutory Provision in question is the same as at Common Law. The provision therefore, has no meaning except as construed against its Common-Law Background.

With a statement in mind of the reasons why a knowledge of Common-Law Pleading is important, it may next be helpful to consider the Functions of Pleading.

38. “All those preexisting Rules [of Pleading, at Common Law or in Equity-which are not expressly abrogated, and which can properly be made applicable under the ne~v system [the Code) remain in force.” Selden, J., in Rochester City Bank & Lester v. Suydam, 5 N.Y. (How.Pr.) 216, 219 (1851).


BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW
Sec. 3

FUNCTIONS OF PLEADING

THE FUNCTIONS OF PLEADING AT COMMON LAW*

3. The Functions of Pleading at Common Law are six in number and may be listed as follows:
   (I) The first or Primary Function of Pleading is to reduce the controversy between the Parties to a single, clear-cut, well-defined Issue of Fact or of Law;
   (ii) To reduce Questions of Fact to clear-cut Issues by eliminating immaterial and incidental matter, thus narrowing the ease to one or more specific propositions on which the controversy turns, thus operating as an aid to the Court in admitting or rejecting offers of evidence;
   (III) To notify the Parties and the Court of the respective Claims, Defenses, and Counter-Demands of the adversaries;
   (IV) To serve as an index to the respective Counsel as to the Points to be Proved at the Trial and as a Guide to the Plea of Res Judicata, thus preventing a relitigation of the same controversy between the same Parties at a later date.

   THE principal reason why many ordinary controversies are utterly fruitless and inconclusive is that prior to the discussion there is no ascertainment by the contending parties of the Issues at stake. If every discussion were preceded by a clear-cut settlement of

40. “The Function of Pleadings then is to ascertain with precision the matters on which the parties differ and the points on which they agree; and thus to arrive at certain clear Issues on which both parties desire a judicial decision,” Odgers, Principles of Pleading and Practice, c. 6, 67 (14th ed., by Lewis Sturge, London 1952).

the questions in dispute, it would not prove difficult to settle the actual differences between the disputants, and in many instances it would develop that there was in reality no difference of opinion. Pleading, which is a Statement in a Logical, Legal Form of the Facts which constitute the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action or the Defendant’s Ground of Defense, is designed to prevent the presentation of such fruitless and immaterial controversies in Courts of Law. The Functions of Pleading, therefor, have been developed with this end in mind.

The first or Primary Function of Pleading is to reduce the controversy between the Parties to a single, clear-cut, well-defined Issue ~ of Fact or of Law; or, stated in another way, to Separate Issues of Law from Issues of Fact so that the Issues of Law might be
42. Boeck v. Leet, 210 Ill. App. 402 (1917). For other definitions of the term “Pleadings,” see Brumleve ‘c Cronan, 176 Ky. 818, 197 SW. 498, 503 13917), In which Hurt, J., stated: “Pleadings are the statements which set out the Causes of Action and Grounds of Defence and make Issues in the Action which is to be Tried”; and Smith v. Jacksonville Oil Mill Co., 21 Ga. App. 679, 94 SE. 900 (1918), in which Luke, J., declared: “Pleadings are the Written Allegations of what is affirmed on the one side or denied on the other, disclosing to the Court or the Jury trying the Cause the Matter in Dispute between the Parties.”

See also, the early English case of Read c. Brookman, 3 T.R. 159, 100 Eng.Rep. 509 (1789).

43. “The term, itself, of ‘Issue’ appears as early as the Commencement of the Year Books, that is, in the first year of Edward II (Year Book, 1 Edw. II, 14), and from the same period, at least, If not an earlier one, the Production of the Issue has been not only the constant effort, but the professed aim and object of pleading.” Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c. II, Of the Principles of Pleading, 151 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1593). Shipman, Handbook of Common Law Pleading, Editor’s Introduction, 8, a 11 (3d ed. by Ballantine, St Paul 1923).


14

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Ch. 1

decided as far as possible prior to the Trial of the Facts. This was made necessary by the dual character of the Common-Law Tribunal, that is, of the Court, which generally decides Questions of Law, and the Jury, which generally determines Issues of Fact. By this process the Matters on which the Parties differ and the Points on which they agree, are ascertained with precision, and thus the Issues over which the Parties are contending are presented for judicial determination. The Pleadings are not, as frequently assumed in popular estimation, an advocate’s address to the Judge or Jury. On the contrary they are the Formal Statements, drawn up by the Counsel of the Respective Parties, of the plaintiff’s Cause of Action or the Defendant’s Defenses, From the clash of assertions are disclosed the points in controversy, the propositions affirmed on one side and denied on the other, on which the decision of the case will turn. Thus, the Primary Function of Pleading, that is, of defining the Issues over which the Parties are contending, is achieved. “The points admitted by either side are thus extracted and distinguished from those in controversy; other matters, though disputed, may prove to be immaterial; and thus the litigation is narrowed down to two or three matters which are the real questions in dispute.” – on which the case may be judicially tried in the most expeditious manner.

It is a great benefit to the Parties to know exactly what are the Facts remaining in dispute, and what Facts the plaintiff must Prove to sustain his Cause of Action or the defendant to establish his Defense. The question involved may be reduced to an Issue of Law, in which case it may be decided by the Judge upon Argument, or it may involve a Question of Fact, in which case, it may involve a lengthy Trial by Jury. By separation of Questions of Law from Questions of Fact, the Parties may be saved great trouble and expense in procuring evidence of Facts which the opponent does not dispute, and the State may escape the burden and cost of supervising the litigation of Immaterial Issues.

The second Objective of Pleading is to reduce Questions of Fact to clear-cut Issues, by eliminating immaterial and incidental matters, and narrowing the case to one or more definite propositions on which the controversy really turns, thus serving as a guide to the Court in Rulings upon Offers of Evidence. As the Pleadings define and limit the Proof, so also do they have a bearing upon the Admission or Rejection of Evidence. Thus, if A brings Trespass for Assault and Battery, B Pleads Self-Defense, and A denies the striking in Self-Defense, the issue presented is: Did B strike in Self-Defense? Now, if B offers Evidence that he did not strike A, the Court is in a position to Rule out the Offer of Proof, as such offer has no logical tendency to support the defendant’s Plea that he struck in Self-Defense.

The third Objective of Pleading is to notify the Parties themselves and the Tribunal which is to decide between them of the respective Claims, Defenses, and Cross-Demands of the adversaries. Some Advocates of Reform, irritated by the miscarriages incident to the abuse of technical Rules of Pleading, have suggested that the Parties to an Action should come into court without any Notice as to the Complaint or Answer. It is evident, however, that such a
System would lead to fraud, oppression and expense in a civilized state where commercial transactions are both numerous and complicated. If, then, Notice is essential, does a mere General Notice of the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action and the Defendant’s Ground of Defense, serve every purpose? Thus, suppose the Plaintiff’s Declaration reads as follows:

“The Plaintiff Alleges that the defendant did not pay a bill of exchange for $50.00.” to which the defendant interposes the following Plea:

“The defendant states that he is not liable on the bill.”

From the Plaintiff’s Statement it could not be determined on the Pleadings whether he had a sufficient Cause of Action or not, and from the Defendant’s Plea, it could not be determined whether the defendant denied the acceptance of the bill, or the other legal requisites essential to liability; or, assuming their existence, whether the defendant intended to set up New Matter such as fraud by Way of Answer; nor whether the Issue was One of Law or of Fact. In such a situation every case would have to be considered by a Jury in order to ascertain that there was no Fact in dispute. It thus appears that the evils of giving no Notice would exist nevertheless, expense would be incurred as the Parties would have to come to Trial prepared to Offer Proof on anything relating to the case, although only one matter was in reality in dispute. It seems evident, therefore, that


See, also, en Notice Pleading, the First Report of her Majesty’s Commissioners for Inquiring Into the Process, Practice and System of Pleading In the superior Courts of Common Law (IBM), 11—14, reported In Reppy, Introduction to Civil Procedure, c. I, §3, p. 29 (Buffalo 1954).

“The defendant is entitled to know what it is that the Plaintiff Alleges against him; the plaintiff, in his turn, is entitled to know what Defense will be raised in Answer.” ~ In support of this view is the statement of Thomas, 3., in the Illinois case of Cook v. Scott, who declared: “The province of the Declaration is to exhibit, upon the Records, the grounds of the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action, as well for the purpose of Notifying the Defendant of the precise character of those Grounds, as of regulating his own Proofs.”

The fourth Function of Pleading is to serve as an index to the respective Counsel as to the points to be proved at the Trial in support of the contentions of their respective clients and in Apportioning the Burden of Proof and Rebuttal as between the plaintiff and the defendant. Thus, if A alleges that B stole his horse, and B denies the Allegation, A knows that he may support his Gen

Odgors, Principles of Pleading and Practice, c. 0,


Ballantine, The Need of Pleading Reform In Illinois, 1 U. of ILL.LJ3uII. No. 1, 15 (1917).

The Massachusetts Commissioners of 1851 state the purposes of Civil Pleading as follows: “(1) that each party may be under the most effectual influence, which the Nature of the Case admits of, so far as he admits or denies anything, to tell the truth, (2) That
eral Allegation by Proof that \( B \) took any and Subject Matter, it was held by the Court horse, whereas if \( A \) had named a black horse, that the Judgment in the First Suit was a with a white fore-front foot, he would have Bar to the Plaintiff’s Second Action. And been limited to Proof of that Particular this same rule applies under the Reformed horse, while \( B \)’s Defense would be simplified Procedure in the same manner as at Common by being limited to Defense against taking Law.5

The claim of the Law of Pleading to be a under necessity of being prepared to defend Science must, therefore, be measured by the a charge of taking any horse. And it follows logically that the Burden of Proof would st. In Secor v. Sturgis, 16 N.Y. 548, 554 (1858), defall on \( A \) as he has affirmed that \( B \) took his cided under the Code. Strong, 3., Bays: “The Prin horse. ciple is settled beyond dispute that a Judgment con cludes the Rights of the Parties in respect to the

The \textit{fifth} Purpose of Pleading is to serve Cause of Action stated in the Pleadings on which it as a Formal Basis for the Judgment. Begin- is rendered, whether the suit embraces the whole or only part of the demand constituting the cause ning with the Original Writ, let us supposeof action. It results from this Principle, and the there is a Charge therein that \( B \) is indebted Rule is fully established, that an entire claim, aristo \( A \) in the sum of five hundred dollars. The lug either upon a Contract or from a Wrong, can-Declaration must contain the same Chargenot be divided and made the subject of several suits; and If several suits be brought for different in elaborated and Consistent Form, the Proof parts of such a claim, the pendency of the first may at the Trial must correspond to the Charge be Plead in Abatement of the others, and a Judgin the Original Writ and Declaration, the ment upon the merits In either wifi be available as a a Bar In the other suits, (Farrington & Smith v. Verdict must find in accord with the same Payne, 15 Johns. 432 L481] (1818); Philips v. Eerick, Charge, and finally the Judgment on the Ver- 16 Id. 137 [136] (1819); Guernsey v. Carver, 8 Wen diet must be made subject to the same limita-dell 492 (1832); Stevens v. Lockwood, 13 Id. 64-1 (1835).) But it is entire claims only which camiot tions, in order to be free from attack as go- be divided within this rule, those which are single ing beyond the Scope of the Pleadings. By and indivisible ia their nature. The Cause of Ac’ this requirement of correspondence between tion in the different suits must he the same. The the Various Pleadings at each Stage of theRule does not prevent, nor is there any Principle which precludes, the Prosecution of Several Actions Proceedings the Common Law secured in upon Several Causes of Action. The holder of sevPleadings what we refer to in English com- eral Promissory Notes may maintain an action on position as unity, coherence and emphasis. each; a party upon whose person or property suc cessive distinct Trespasses have been committed

The \textit{sixth} and Final Function of Pleadingmay bring a separate suit for every trespass; and is to preserve a Record of the Controversy all demands, of whatever nature, arising out of separate and distinct transactions, may be sued upon Litigated, which serves as a foundation for

---

16 \textbf{BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW} Ch. I

Each party may have notice of what is to be tried, so that he may come prepared with the necessary proof, and may save the expense and trouble of what is not necessary, (3) That the Court may know what the Subject Matter of the dispute is, and what is asserted or denied concerning it, so that it may restrict the debate within just limits and discern what Rules of Law arc applicable. (4) That it may ever after appear what Subject Matter was then adjudicated, so that no further or other dispute should be permitted to arise concerning it.” 6 Mass.L.Q. 104 (1921); flail’s Massachusetts Practice (Boston 1851).

As to Functions of Criminal Pleading and the cer
a plea of Res Judicata, which, if sustained, of Action might be united in a Single Suit; the
operates to prevent the relitigation of the Right of the Party In whose favor they exist to same controversy, provided it involves the separate suits is not affected by that circumstance,

except that in proper cases, for the prevention of

Same Parties and the Same Subject Matter, vexation and oppression, the Court will enforce a Thus, in the early New York case of Farring- consolidation of the Actions."

ton v. Payne, where A sued B for the con- In general, on the Splitting of Causes of Action see:
version of three bed quilts,—a bed and three Articles: Clineburg, Splitting Cause of Action, 10 Neb. bed quilts having been taken away—and re- I..Bu1L 156 (1940); McNish, Joinder and Splitting
of Causes of Action In Nebraska, 26 Neb.L.Rev. 42
covered, after which he brought a second ac- (1946); Colvin, Injury to Persons and Property—

DEVELOPMENT OF SUBSTANTIVE LAW

extent of its adaptation of its Rules to the accomplishment of its Main Functions, that is, Fair Notice to the Parties and the accurate, practical and systematic presentation of the precise Questions of Law and Fact involved to the Tribunal which is to decide them. The various and possible Functions of Pleading may, therefore, be enumerated as follows:

(1) To reduce the controversy between the Parties to a single, clear-cut well-defined Issue of Fact or of Law, and to separate Issues of Law from Issues of Fact, so that the Issues of Law may be determined as far as possible in advance of the Trial of the Facts;

(2) To reduce Questions of Fact to clear-cut Issues by eliminating immaterial and incidental matters, and narrowing the case to one or more specific propositions on which the controversy really turns, thus operating as an aid to the Court in Admitting or Rejecting Offers of Evidence;

(3) To notify the Parties themselves and the Deciding Tribunal of the respective Claims, Defenses and Counter-Demands of the Adversaries;

(4) To serve as an index to the respective Counsel as to the Points to be Proved at the Trial and as a Guide to the Court in Apportioning the Burden of Proof and Rebuttal as between the plaintiff and defendant;

(5) To serve as a Formal Basis for the Judgment;

(6) To preserve a Record of the Controversy Litigated and to create a foundation for a Plea of Res Judicata, thus preventing a relitigation of the same controversy between the same parties at a later date.

It thus becomes clear that historically, the principal purpose of the Rules of Pleading has been to compel each person to state the essential elements of his Cairn or Defense in order to arrive at an Issue. It has not always been true that Common-Law Pleading has accomplished the objective of reducing all cases to definite Issues, this end being defeated on occasion by resort to technical procedural devices which had outgrown their days of usefulness. But in both Common-Law and Code Pleading, the Issue-Raising Function far overshadows the Notice-Giving One, and is the source of the Principal Rules of Pleading. It is so under the Modern English Pleading. The case must be analyzed and reduced to Issues at the Trial, if not before, and it is inexpedient to postpone this essential preliminary to the day of Trial.
THE DEVELOPMENT OF SUBSTANTIVE LAW OUT OF PROCEDURE

4. The Beginning Student, if authorized to create an entirely New System of Law, would normally first define Rights and Liabilities and thereafter set up a System of Courts to enforce those Rights and Liabilities, whereas, as a matter of historical knowledge, the Law grew up in exactly the opposite way; the great Body of our Modern Contract, Property and Tort Substantive Law having had its Origin in and Developed out of Procedure.

UNDER Anglo-American law, the Substantive Law Defines rights and liabilities and the Procedural Law furnishes the ways and means of enforcing those rights and liabilities. But in what order did this development take place? Were rights and liabilities first defined and thereafter Courts established to enforce those rights and liabilities, or were Courts first set up and thereafter rights and liabilities defined? This question, if asked of a Beginning Student of the Law, will invariably be answered by a statement that rights and liabilities would first be defined, with the Courts to enforce them to be established thereafter. 52


53. “A System of Laws promulgated by a Lawgiver undoubtedly commence with a definition of rights, and thence proceed to prescribe duties, thence to prohibit wrongs, and finally to provide legal remedies.” Robinson, Elements of American Jurisprudence, e. V, § 5, 155 (Boston, 1900).

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

In fact the Law grew up in exactly the opposite way, Courts being organized to handle a series of specific cases, the decisions of which gradually developed theories of rights and liabilities. In short, our rights and liabilities as defined by Substantive Law, had their origin in and developed out of Procedural Law. If this be true, how did it come about? Let us assume that A and B are shipwrecked and land on the proverbial uninhabited, deserted island. A, quickly recovering from the shock, shakes the water off, works his way up to a nearby knoll, where the ground is level and the view good, and says: “I like this place; I think I shall take possession.” Who owns that knoll? A owns it by reason of having first acquired possession, by reason of his strong right arm. As a result he may also be said to have acquired a moral but not a legal right to retain possession. Some time later, B pulls himself together, and discovers A on the knoll. An-tying there, he surveys the prospect with satisfaction equal to that of A, and then, after pondering over the situation, declares: “I like this knoll too; I think I shall take it.” “Oh, no you won’t,” exclaims A; “This knoll belongs to me.” “Oh, yes I will,” retorts B. “Of course, you won’t,” bristles A; whereupon B, abandoning further argument, strikes A over the head with a club, and takes possession. Now, who owns the knoll? B. By what right? Not by a moral right, as A preceded him in possession in point of time; not by a legal right, because in the absence of a Court in which a remedy could be sought, no such right yet existed. In reality B now owns the knoll by right of the strong arm; by right of might, that being at the moment the only Law in effect on the island.

Without going into the evolutionary developments involved, let us say that time moves on, and later we find that other members have joined the society of A and B—men, women, and children. After this development, C) hits D over the head with a club; the blow glances off D’s head and strikes E, the child of a third party. Immediately there is great excitement in the community, The people crowd together, and someone is heard to say: “As long as A and B were the only inhabitants on this island, this business of their hitting one another over the head was their own affair; but now that there are others here, we must do something to control such actions.” But “What can we do” exclaimed the others! At this point someone suggested that the group should select a leader, hail the individuals before that leader, who would then hear both sides of the controversy and render a decision. Accordingly, the group chose its fastest runner, its wisest counselor, its best medicine man, its most esteemed religious adviser, or its greatest military leader, escorted him to the edge of the forest, and set him up on a stump to decide the controversy. Thus, was the Court or Tribunal created; thus, did the group take its first step in the Development of the Law; thus, did it prepare the way for transforming moral into legal rights. Then the group took C, D, and E before the newly created tribunal. In turn D and E were required to tell their story, and C was permitted...
to present his side. Before any decision was rendered the most that could be said in favor of D and F was that in the view of the group, their moral right not to be interfered with had been violated; as yet they had no legal rights as they were still without a remedy. After hearing both sides of the controversy, let us assume that the Court, presided over by the chosen leader, who has now become a Judge, fines C twenty hides, ten hides to go to the injured Parties, ten hides to go to the Community. At the moment of decision, I) and F for the first time had acquired a legal right not to be struck, the moral right having been changed into a legal right through the acquisition of a legal remedy.

Let us now assum

sume further that after two or three similar episodes of this kind, in which the B’s and C’s were fined for having struck someone, the wiser members of the group, while wending their way home from the Court, began to reason somewhat as follows: If, when B strikes A over the head with a club, he is hailed before a Court and punished, it must be because A had a right not to be struck; if A has such a right, then B must be under a duty not to violate it; if B does violate A’s right not to be struck and his own duty not to strike, B commits a wrong for which he may be held liable. Thus, the concepts of right and duty, of wrong and liability, are merely different sides of the same shield. If the rights violated involved a breach of duty to the community or state, the accused was said to be guilty of a criminal wrong whereas if the rights violated were concerned with breaches of duties as between individuals of the group or society, the accused were said to be guilty of a civil wrong. But at this stage of the discussion, the important point to be observed in the foregoing account is that these primitive legal concepts of right, duty, wrong and liability, had their Origin in and Developed out of Procedure, that is, out of the process by which a myriad of single instances, of specific factual situations, were presented to and decided by a Court; that the Substantive Law right of A, D, and E not to be struck, came into existence only upon the pronouncement of Judgement by the Tribunal.

This process not only produced a body of Substantive Contract, Property and Tort Law, but it also exercised, as we shall see, a profound effect upon the Form of our Judicial Organization, which in turn developed the five great Systems of Administrative, Admiralty, Common, Equity and Probate Law.

RELATION OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING TO OTHER SYSTEMS

5. The Nature and Function of Pleading at Common Law may be better understood when viewed in its relationship to the Other Systems of Procedure which developed prior to, contemporaneous with, or even subsequent to it, including Equity and Code Pleading, as well as Pleading under the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure.

In order to give a better perspective of the Nature and Function of Common-Law Pleading as a factor in Anglo-Saxon Law, it may be well to consider its relation to the other Systems of Procedure which developed prior to, contemporaneous with, or even subsequent to it. These include Equity and Code Pleading, as well as Pleading under the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, the relationship of which to Common-Law Pleading will now be considered.

Relation to Equity Pleading

EQUITY Pleading was the System of Pleading which was developed by the Courts of Equity in England, through the King’s exercise of a portion of his Judicial Prerogative in cases involving matters of conscience. The King’s authority was in the beginning handled through his Chancellor who was a Churchman trained in the Canon or Ecclesiastical Law, which had its roots in the Roman Law, hence it is not surprising to find that Both Systems failed to provide a Jury for the Trial of Facts. As a result of this characteristic, certain differences between the Common Law and Equity Systems of Procedure developed.

In the first place, at Law, the Pleadings at Common Law were required to reduce the controversy to a single, clear-cut, well-defined Issue of Fact or of Law, whereas in Equity, there could be as many Issues of Law or of
Fact as the Pleaders desired. This was due to the dual character of the Common-Law Court, which consisted of the Judge, who normally decided Questions of Law, and

RELATION OF PLEADING TO OTHER SYSTEMS

54. See Langdell, A Brief Survey of Equity Jurisdiction, 1 Harv. L. Rev. 55 (1837), 20

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Ch. 1

the Jury, which decided Questions of Fact, as opposed to the Equity Court, consisting of the Chancellor only, who was a trained Lawyer, capable of handling Complicated Issues of Both Law and Fact.

Secondly, and largely as a result of the first difference between the Two Systems, at Law, a plaintiff, in order to state a cause of action was required to state Ultimate Facts, and not Evidentiary Facts or Conclusions of Law, whereas, in Equity, he might plead Ultimate Facts, Evidentiary Facts, and even Conclusions of Law, as the Chancellor could unravel the Issues in spite of the resulting confusion.

Thirdly, at Common Law only those Parties who had an interest in the right being litigated could be joined as plaintiffs and only those Parties who were subject to a joint liability could be joined as defendants, whereas, in Equity, the procedure for the joinder of parties plaintiff and defendant was much more flexible.

Fourthly, at Common Law, a Party was frequently entitled to Trial by Jury as a matter of right, and if the Jury returned a Verdict in favor of such Party, its finding on the Facts was binding on the Court, whereas, in Equity, a Party was entitled to Trial by Jury only in the discretion of the Chancellor, and if, perchance, the Jury found in favor of a Party on the Facts, such finding was not binding on the Court, was only advisory in its effect, the Chancellor being free to disregard it in his discretion.

Fifthly, at Common Law, a Judgment had to be rendered in favor of or against all the defendants; it could not be split, so as to apportion the liability among the defendants; whereas, in Equity the Decree could be split up and given against one or all of the defendants, thus allowing for a much more flexible apportionment of liability, without the necessity of further action.

Sixthly, at Common Law, a Judgment merely determined the matter of right between the Parties; it did not order the defendant to do anything, and if the defendant was not goaded into action by the mere moral suasion of the Judgment, the plaintiff was compelled to sue out an Execution on the Judgment, whereas, in Equity, the Decree not only determined the matter of right between the Parties, but it actually ordered the defendant to do something in recognition of that established right on peril of being punished for contempt for failure so to do.

Seventhly, at Common Law, only Questions of Law were ordinarily open to Appellate Review; if the Error of Law was Apparent on the Face of the Record, it was Reviewable by Writ of Error; if it was Not Apparent on the Face of the Record, but was one which occurred at the Trial, prior to the Statute of Westminster II (1285) - the only Method of Review was after Verdict and before Judgment, by a Motion for a New Trial, but, after the Statute, such Errors could be reached by a Bifi of Exceptions, whereas, in Equity, both Questions of Law and Questions of Fact were Reviewable on Equitable Appeal.

With these distinctions between Common Law and Equity Procedure in mind, it becomes readily apparent that when the Court of Equity undertook to settle matters of conscience in dispute between private Parties, influenced by the Civil Law background of the Chancellor, it naturally adopted the Civil Law Mode of Procedure, avoiding the Technical Rules of Pleading as they existed at Common Law. In theory, however, in Equity, as at Common Law, the forensic Altercations between the Parties might be carried to an unlimited extent, thus permitting the plaintiff and defendant through Alternate Allegations to frame Issues of Law or of Fact upon which the Court could base a Decree. In framing his statement of a cause of action in what was called a “Bill in Equity” as op

Sec. 5

RELATION OF PLEADING TO OTHER SYSTEMS
posed to a “Declaration at Law”, the plaintiff followed no set Form of Action, as at Common Law, but proceeded upon the board equities involved in the controversy, and stated the Facts at large, mingling both Questions of Fact and of Law, there being no need to separate them on the Record as at Law, since they were both to be decided by the Chancellor, who was trained in the art of sifting from the complicated statements the determinative Issues; whereas, at Law, Issues of Fact were to be decided by a Jury, while Issues of Law were to be passed on by the Court, and Both Types of Issues were framed

by the Parties, and not as in Equity, extract-ed from the Pleadings by the Court. In practice, however, the Pleadings in Equity did not ordinarily go beyond the Replication Stage, and frequently not beyond the Answer. What really happened was that each Party stated all the Facts in One Pleading, though properly belonging to a Subsequent Stage of Pleading, and then these were dealt with as if stated in a regular series of Affirmative Pleadings in proper order. After Answer filed, the plaintiff might Amend his Bill to anticipate Defenses, upon the new light given him by the defendant, and the defendant, in turn, was permitted to make a New Answer to the Amended Bill. Thus, the Replication was actually sometimes incorporated in the Bill, along with the Issuable Facts

•which constituted the Equity of the Eill, and which the plaintiff must prove to obtain the Relief Prayed for; and the defendant thereupon Rejoined with New Matter of Defense or Excuse along with his Answer. Thereafter, the plaintiff filed a Replication as a mere Matter of Form to place the Answer in Issue. The Bill in Equity therefore consisted of three parts, the Narrative, which contained a Statement of the Plaintiff’s Case for Relief; the Charge, which anticipated and attempted to refute the Defenses of the defendant; and the Interrogative, which was to extract from him Admissions Under Oath in his Answer. It will be observed, therefore, that the Bill and Answer were generally framed so as to include the evidence by which each Party sought to sustain his position or to defeat that of his Adversary, as well as the legal arguments and conclusions, which properly should have been presented in the Briefs of Counsel.59

On this very point of the theory of Law and Evidence, Common-Law Pleading and Procedure was vastly superior to the Civil Law and to the Procedure in Equity. However clearly substantive obligations and rights may be defined in any System of Law, there can be no security or freedom for the individual when judicially investigated, if competent evidence is rejected and incompetent evidence is admitted. Under the Common-Law System of reducing controversies to a single Issue of Fact, the Court could Rule accurately upon Offers of Evidence, admitting that which was proper, and rejecting that which was improper, whereas, in Equity, which adopted the Civil Law System of Pleadings, permitting loose, detailed Statements of Both Law and Fact, as well as Conclusions, the Issue in dispute was placed in such doubt that the Scope of the Evidence was so broadened as frequently to permit the introduction of matter wholly foreign to the real controversy. Common Law Pleading, which was designed to frame a certain Issue of Fact for Trial by twelve men, avoided this pitfall by indicating the character of and the limitations upon the evidence to be admitted.

Relation to Code Pleading

THE relationship between the Common Law and Code Systems as to the Structure of Pleadings has been largely obscured on the one hand by the Procedural Reformers who, as an incident of their objectives, have played

sc: Pomeroy, Code Remedies; Remedies and Remedial Eights by the Civil Action, c. III, Section Third, The General Principles of Pleading, 525 (4th ed. by Bogle, Boston, 1004).

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

Ch. I

down the Advantages of Adjective Common Law and played up the alleged Superior Qualities of Code Procedure; and on the other, by the members of the Teaching Profession, who have not had the ability, or who have not taken the time and patience required to understand and appreciate Pleading at Common Law. But speaking of the point of relationship, it is clear that there are few Rules Regulating the Substance of Pleading under Modern Codes and Practice Acts which have not been directly borrowed from the Common Law, or framed by analogy in the appli-
cation of the same principle. In fact, the Century following the Adoption of the Code of Procedure of New York in 1848, has been one in which the Common-Law Rules have been read back into the apparently clear and simple provisions of the Reformed Procedure, the unadulterated truth being that such provisions had no legal content except as expounded against the appropriate Common Law Procedural Background. Code Pleading is not, as many have assumed, a System having no relation to existing law. Common-Law Pleading has not been abolished; it still survives as the basis of all legal investigation; it is in fact the direct Lineal Ancestor or Parent of Code Pleading, which literally springs from its Join. At best the Codification of Pleading is only partial, leaving wide gaps in the System of Remedial Law to be filled in by Common-Law Pleading.

  See, also, Solomon v. Vinson, 31 Minn, 205, 17 NW. 340 (1883); Dunnel, Minnesota Pleading, c. I, § 9 (1st ed. Minneapolis 1899).

Rules of the Common-Law Pleading, as to Materiality, Certainty, Prolixity, and Obscurity, are rules of logic not abolished by the North Carolina Code. Crump v. Mims, 64 NC. 707, 771 (1870). The rules of pleading at Common Law have not been abrogated by the Code of Civil Procedure. The essential principles still remain. Henry mv. Co. v. Semonian, 40 Cob. 269, 90 P. 682 (1907); Hughes, Procedure, Its Theory and Practice 488 (Chicago 1908), with its actual provisions interpretable only against the Older System. It becomes clear, therefore, that one can only come to full apprehension of Code Pleading through the study of Common-Law Pleading.

To illustrate this point, let us take the Common Code provision that the Complaint must state facts in “plain and concise” language. To one not trained in the Common Law this means a statement of “facts,” as Charles O’Connor, the distinguished New York Lawyer and Pleader, observed, “just as any old woman, in trouble for the first time, would narrate her grievances, and whipped into some semblance of order by use of a Form Book; to one trained in the Common Law, it would mean that the plaintiff, in order to state a Cause of Action, or the defendant, in order to state a Defense, should state the Ultimate Facts, and not the Evidence of Facts and not Conclusions of Law, as pointed out in the leading New York case of Allen v. Patterson.

Bliss, in his famous work on Code Pleading, stated Rules covering presumptions of Fact, Matters Judicially Noticed, Anticipating Defenses, and Pleading Evidence, Conclusions of Law, or Immaterial or Irrelevant Matters. But in each instance the source of such Rule under the Code is Common-Law Pleading; each Rule is in effect merely a restatement, in slightly different phraseology, of the Rule as developed at Common Law. So, likewise, as to the Rules governing such matters as Duplicity, Certainty, Consistency, Directness, Argumentativeness, Allegations by way of Recital, and Alternative or Hypothetical Pleading. In

69 N.Y.code of Civil Procedure, 1894, § 451.

60 Shipman, Code Pleading: The Aid of the Earlier Systems, 7 Yale Li. 197, 199 (1808).
61 7 N.Y. 476 (1852); Muser v. Robertson, 17 F. 500 (1883).
63 N.Y.Laws 1848, c. 379, effective on July 1.

Sec. 5

RELATION OF PLEADING TO OTHER SYSTEMS

fact, express statutory provisions aside, it may be said that if a Lawyer, in a Complaint under the Code, frames his Allegations of Fact in a manner to meet with the requirements of Stating a Cause of Action or Defense at Common Law, he need have no fear of being thrown out of Court on Demurrer because of some Formal or Substantive Defect in his Pleadings. Indeed, the prophetic words of Professor Thomas M. Cooley seem as true today as when originajly written, when, in referring to the relation of the New to the Older System, he declared:

“The works of Common Law Pleading have not been superseded by the New Codes which have been introduced. A careful study of these works is the very best preparation for the Pleader, as well where a Code is in force as where the old Common-Law Forms are still adhered to. Any expectation which may have existed that the Code was to banish technicality, and substitute such simplicity that any man of common understanding was to be competent,
without legal training, to present his case in due Form
-of Law, has not been realized. After a trial of the Code System for many years, its friends must confess that there is
something more than Form in the Old System of pleading, and that the Lawyer who has learned to state his
case in a logical manner after the Rules laid down by Stephen and Gould, is better prepared to draw a Pleading that
will stand the test on Demurrer than the man who, without that training, undertakes to tell his story to the Court as
he might tell it to a neighbor, but who, never having accustomed himself to a strict and logical presentation of the
precise Facts which constitute the Legal Cause of Action or the Legal Defense, is in danger of stating so much or so
little, or
-of presenting the Facts so inaccurately, as to leave his rights in doubt on his own showing. Let the Common-Law
Rules be mastered, and
the work under the Codes will prove easy and simple, and it will speedily be seen that no time has been lost or
labor wasted, in coming to the New Practice by the Old Road.” 64

Relation to the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure
TOWARD the close of the Nineteenth Century, the American Bar Association concluded that Legislative Control
of Practice was highly inefficient and that the Federal Conformity Act had produced no Real Conformity between
State and Federal Practice. In this situation the Association placed its influence behind a bill in Congress which
provided for turning the Federal Rule-Making Power over to the Supreme Court of the United States. After much
agitation and much backing and filling, by the Act of June 19, 1934,– Congress gave the Supreme Court power “to
prescribe, by General Rules, for the District Courts of the United States and for the Courts of the District of
Columbia, the Forms of Process, Writs, Pleadings, and Motions, and the Practice and Procedure in Civil Actions at
Law.” 65 The Rules as formulated under this Act did not modify in any way the substantive rights of litigants. The
Act further provided that the Court might “unite the General Rules prescribed by it for Cases in Equity with those in
Actions at Law so as to secure One Form of Civil Action and Procedure for both.” 66 The right of Trial by Jury as at
Common Law and declared by the Seventh Amendment to the Constitution was preserved.

From the nature and character of the provisions of the Act of 1934, and the Rules of Civil Procedure as
promulgated thereunder by the Supreme Court in 1938, it is clear that

64. Shipman, Code Pleading: The Aid of the Earlier Systems, 7 Yale Li. 197, 200 (1898), Quoting Professor Cooley.
43. Shipman, Code Pleading: The Aid of the Earlier Systems, 7 Yale Li. 197, 205 (1898).

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW

in scope and content they were patterned after the provisions of our various State Codes and Practice Acts,
which, as previously indicated, were founded on the fundamental principles of Common-Law Procedure. There are,
however, two chief differences. First, under the New System in the Federal Courts and as adopted in Several States,
the control of Pleading and Practice by Rule of Court gives a flexibility in the application of the Procedural Law
and in its adaptation to any need for change growing out of new or unforeseen conditions, as opposed to the Older
System of Code Pleading, which more or less placed procedure in a legislative strait-jacket, leaving little room for
development to meet changing social conditions. Second, under the Codes, attempts to simplify and reduce the
number of provisions regulating Pleading did not meet with success. For example, the New York Civil Practice Act
contained some 1578 Sections, Supplemented by 301 Rules of Civil Practice. In 1938, when a comparison was made
between the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure and the New York Code, it appeared that it took only 86
Federal Rules to cover substantially the area occupied by 1100 of the 1578 sections of the Civil Practice Act and
133 of the 301 New York Rules of Civil Practice. And finally, it may be added that the spirit and tendency of the
New System of Procedure as represented by the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, and as regulated by the Judges, is
in the direction of the Common Law, as is evidenced, to give but a single example, by the provision that all Actions must be instituted through a Clerk of a Court and by Authority of a Court, as at Common Law, as opposed to the Code Method of Commencing an Action by an Individual or an Attorney serving a Summons and Complaint upon the defendant.

THE STATUS OF COMMON-LAW PLEADING UNDER THE CODES

Acts and Federal Rules of Civil Procedure. But even after a Century of Development under the Codes we still find that Common-Law Pleading survives in fact or in theory. On the basis of the degree of Common-Law Pleading which still prevails, the states fall into five groups:

The Common-Law States;
The Quasi Common-Law States;
The Code States;
The Rules of Court States;
The Civil Law States.

IN the early part of the Nineteenth Century the influence of Bentham began to be felt in America. By the New York Constitution of 1846, the Court of Chancery was abolished,~ and a New Court having General Jurisdiction over Law and Equity was created and the Legislature was directed to provide for the appointment of Three Commissioners “to revise, reform, simplify, and abridge” the Practice and Pleadings of the Courts of Record of the State.~ In response to this direction, in the following year the State Legislature instructed the Commissioners “to provide for the abolition of the present Forms of Actions and Pleadings in cases at Common Law; for a Uniform Course of Proceeding in all Cases whether of Legal or Equitable Cognizance, and for the abandonment of all Latin and other foreign tongues, so far as the same shall by them be deemed practicable, and of any Form and Proceeding not necessary to ascertain or preserve the Rights of the Parties.” ~ Under the directing genius of David Dudley Field, the Commission formulated and reported a Code which was passed on April 12, 1848, and became operative on July 1, 1848, as the Code of Procedure,~ which has served as the source of most of our Modern Procedural Reform. The greatest single achievement of the Code, according to Professor Pomeroy, was the sub-

60. Art. xiv, § 8.
6f- N.Y.Laws 1847, c. 50, § 5.
71. N.Y.Laws 1848, C. 370.

6. **In theory at least Common-Law Pleading was abolished by our Modern Codes, Practice Sec. 6**

STATUS UNDER THE CODES

25

stitution of One Form of Action in place of the Eleven Common-Law Forms of Action.~ In addition, Separate Courts of Law and Equity were established, in favor of what was hoped would turn out to be a Blended System of Procedure, operating under a Formless Action to be known as a Civil Action, which was in the nature of an Action on the Case. The Code also provided the Pleadings should state the Facts in plain and concise language,~ and that the more liberal provisions of Equity Procedure should govern Joinder of Parties, and provided for the rendition of Judgments against one or more Parties according to the particular interest of the Parties involved.

Within a quarter of a century after the adoption of the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, the Code was adopted in twenty-four States, and, according to Clark,~ some Form of Code Procedure was, in 1947, then in force in twenty-nine states, two territories, the District of Columbia, and in the Federal Courts. So, even at this late date, it still remains true that the Movement for Reform, which took definite shape in 1848, has been only
partially effective. Prior to the adoption of the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure in 1938, the States were roughly lined up in Four Groups, being classified as Common Law, Quasi Common Law, Code and Civil Law States. After 1938, there may be added another Group, the Rules of Court States. Perhaps a brief word concerning each type of Jurisdiction may be helpful.

The Common Law States

By the phrase “Common Law States,” is meant those States in which the Pleading is


primarily according to the Common Law Rules, as Unwritten Law or in the Form of Statutory Enactment of the Common Law. Characteristic of the Procedure of the States which fall into this Group is the retention of the Forms of Actions and the Rules of Common Law Pleading under a Court System that still calls for Separate Actions at Law and Suits in Equity. Even so, the Practice in these Separate Courts has from time to time been modified by Local Practice Acts.

The Quasi Common Law States

In these States the Formal Distinction between Law and Equity has been continued at least in theory, although in practice it has been weakened by Statutes abolishing the distinctions between Trespass and Trespass on the Case, or combining the Forms of Actions in the two divisions of Tort and Contract. Usually in Jurisdictions of this character Equitable Defenses are permitted in Law Actions.

The Code States

In the Code States, originally largely patterned ‘after the New York Code of Procedure, the Systems of Pleading and Practice are Statutory, but based on a combination of the better features of the Common Law and Equity Procedural Systems. The same Rules apply to both Law and Equity Cases. But it should be remembered that there is a far greater similarity in the essential principles of Pleading at Common Law, in Equity, and under the Reformed Code of Procedure than is generally realized. The Essential Elements of Causes of Action which must be Plead are not changed by the Codes. And the Rules as to the manner of making Allegations of the respective contentions of the Parties still have much in common.

Rules of Court States

These states are distinguished from the Code States, whose Pleading and Practice is generally, if not entirely, Regulated by the Legislature, in that their Procedure is Regulated by Rules of Court, usually framed by or under the authority of the Court of Highest Jurisdiction—the Supreme Court. The advantage of Regulating Procedure by Rule of Court as opposed to Legislative Enactment is that of greater flexibility in making changes as the social need therefor arises, without the necessity of each time referring the matter to a Legislative Body, which may be dilatory in taking action, and is oftentimes influenced by political considerations. Since the promulgation of the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, a number of states have adopted the substance of the New Rules in revising their procedure.

Civil Law States

In this group the Systems of Pleading were originally based upon the Civil as opposed to the Common Law. Louisiana is a remaining State which began with a Civil Law background, from which it has never fully escaped.
Conclusion

ASIDE from the fact that after the lapse of over a Century, almost a third of the Several States of the United States were yet to accept the Reform represented by the adoption of a Code of Civil Procedure, how have the codes been received? The object was to blend Law and Equity into a Uniform Mode of Procedure. This was to be accomplished by abolition of the Forms of Action and the Distinction between Law and Equity. A single Form of Action in the nature of an Action on the Case was to be substituted in place of the Common-Law Forms of Actions and Suits in Equity. In some Codes there were also provisions liberalizing the law controlling Joinder of Parties and Joinder of Causes of Action, but unfortunately many of the early Codes omitted the latter type of provision.

In some States, notably New York, the Reforms under the Code of Procedure, met with a cold reception. Thus in Reubens v. Joel, Selden, in referring to the possibility of abolishing the distinctions between Law and Equity, declared: “By what process can these two Modes of Relief be made indentical? It is possible to abolish one or the other, or both, but it certainly is not possible to abolish the distinction between them. Another leading distinction between Common-Law Actions and Suits in Equity consists in their different Modes of Trial. The former are to be tried by a Jury, the latter by the Court. Can the Legislature abolish this distinction? They might, but for the restraints of the Constitution, abolish either kind of Trial, or reclassify the classes to which they apply; but they cannot make Trial by Jury and Trial by the Court the same thing.”

What such an attitude has meant in practical terms is that a large part of the Century following the adoption of the First Codes has been spent by the Judges in reading back into the Code, provision by provision, the Rules of the Common Law.

According to Clark, the objections of the Courts which have taken an unfriendly attitude toward the Code Reforms, are five in number:

1. The necessity of forming clear and exact issues, both for the Trial and also to support the Judgment and thus make the Plea of Res Judicata thereafter available to the Parties.
2. Inherent differences as to Jurisdiction and Venue, referring to the fact that Certain Actions must be brought in Certain Courts or at Certain Places.
3. Inherent differences as to the application of Certain Statutes, such as Statutes of Limitations which were drawn along the lines of the old Procedural Divisions.
4. Inherent differences in Manner or Amount of Relief to be granted, referring to the Specific Relief of Equity as distinguished from the Money Damages ordinarily given at Law; or to a possible Variance in the Amount of Money Damages recoverable, depending on the Form of Action chosen; or to Particular Remedies granted only in Certain Forms of Actions, such as Execution on the defendant’s body.
5. Inherent differences in Manner of Trial and of Appellate Review, referring to the Constitutional

Sec. 7

MODERN PROCEDURE UNDER CODES, ETC.

(1) The necessity of forming clear and exact issues, both for the Trial and also to support the Judgment and thus make the Plea of Res Judicata thereafter available to the Parties.
(2) Inherent differences as to Jurisdiction and Venue, referring to the fact that Certain Actions must be brought in Certain Courts or at Certain Places.
(3) Inherent differences as to the application of Certain Statutes, such as Statutes of Limitations which were drawn along the lines of the old Procedural Divisions.
(4) Inherent differences in Manner or Amount of Relief to be granted, referring to the Specific Relief of Equity as distinguished from the Money Damages ordinarily given at Law; or to a possible Variance in the Amount of Money Damages recoverable, depending on the Form of Action chosen; or to Particular Remedies granted only in Certain Forms of Actions, such as Execution on the defendant’s body.
(5) Inherent differences in Manner of Trial and of Appellate Review, referring to the Constitutional

Page 40 of 735
Right of Trial by Jury in “Law Cases” and to the different Methods of Appellate Review in “Law” and “Equity” cases.

All these problems have, with a more liberal point of view on the part of the Judges, been satisfactorily solved in other Code States, according to Judge Clark, and it was his belief that in time the Courts in New York would come around to the same view. But the very existence of the objections enumerated by Judge Clark ninety-nine years after the adoption of the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, plus the fact that numerous States are still without the Circle of Reform, is some slight indication of the tenacity of the Common Law. And when you add to this the fact that the great bulk of the decisions under the Codes have necessarily been made against the background of the Common Law, it becomes clear why many distinguished Judges cling to the thesis that the inherent and fundamental difference between Actions at Law and Suits in Equity cannot be ignored—a view which has found the support, at least, of one distinguished teacher, 79 who stated, in referring to the Abolition of the Forms, that they “are not archaic, accidental, artificial or arbitrary, but in the nature of things reasonable, if not indeed in their essence necessary.” 80

MODERN PROCEDURE UNDER CODES,
PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT—MERELY ANOTHER STEP IN THE EVOLUTIONARY DEVELOPMENT OF THE COMMON LAW

7. Viewed in its proper Historical Perspective, any unbiased and well-informed Student of Legal History, Generally, and of Legal Procedure, Specifically, must observe that each new advance in our System of Procedure was and is but another Evolutionary Step in the Development of the Common Law, and must acknowledge the fact that Common-Law Pleading, after the passage of some Seven or Eight Centuries, still survives as the basis of our Modern Legal Procedural Systems as they exist in both the State and Federal Courts.

HAVE the developments which have taken place since 1848, under the various Codes of Civil Procedure, and the Practice Acts of the Several States, together with the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, been Revolutionary in Character, wiping out the Ancient Landmarks of the Common Law and the procedural experience of the Anglo-Saxon race, extending over a period of over eight hundred years, or rather, have they been merely gradual steps in the Evolutionary Development of Common-Law Pleading and Practice?

In the first, or Flexible Stage, of the Development of the Common Law, Original Writs

80. See Note, Law and Equity In New York—Still Unmerged, 55 Yale Li. 826 (1946).

BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW Ch. I

issued out of Chancery in great profusion, creating New Rights and New Law. It was during this period that the Ancient Proprietary and Possessory Real Actions developed in great number.

After the Provisions of Oxford in 1258, the power of the Clerks in Chancery was restricted, the Real and Mixed Actions became so highly technical, difficult to manage and lengthy in process, that they became inflexible and in consequence the Common Law lost some of its inherent power of expansion. During this period of inflexibility, an effort to restore the Authority of the Clerks in Chancery was made so that they might again Create New Rights by Issuing New Writs under Chapter 24 of the Statute of Westminster II (1285). But the effort was too little and came too late, so that the Residuary Power of the King’s Council, operating through Chancery, was invoked to supplement the Common Law, not necessarily because of the Defects in the Common Law, but rather for reasons of State Policy.

As a result of the Statute perhaps, but more as a result of the growing social, economic and mercantile needs of England, the Modern Personal Common-Law Actions, which to some extent ran parallel to the Ancient
Proprietary and Possessory Actions, and which were gradually emerging into greater prominence with the decline of these actions, were substituted in lieu of the old Real Actions which had predominated during the early Developmental Period of the Common Law. In the course of time, these Modern Forms of Action, latest in point of growth, in the Third State of Development, were abolished in favor of a Single, Formless, Form of Action, under which remedies could be provided for the violation of private rights of most any character.

With this in mind, let us swiftly glance back over the territory covered, and with almost a thousand years perspective in mind, view the Present Status of Common-Law Pleading and Practice as it stands in the light of Modern Reforms.

From the Reign of Edward I (1272-1307) to 1848, a Period of five hundred and seventy-six years elapsed, during which Period, in both England and the United States, Legal Procedure was governed by the Common Law. When, in England, the Modern Common-Law Actions were substituted in the place of the Old Real Actions, as is later observed, it was assumed that such an occurrence was merely a Normal Evolutionary Development of the Common Law, based upon the change in the English social structure from One of a Feudal to One of a Commercial or Industrial Character. This change became official or was Procedurally recognized by the Real Property Limitations Act of 1833, which abolished the Real and Mixed Actions.

When, therefore, in 1848, the New York Code of Procedure attempted to obliterate the distinctions between Law and Equity, to abolish the Common-Law Actions and to substitute in lieu thereof the Modern Single Formless Form of Action, the World was witnessing, not a Revolutionary Reform which swept the Common-Law System from its Ancient Moorings, but merely a Third Step in the Evolutionary Development of Common-Law Procedure, like that which took place in the Roman System.

Between 1848 and 1947, according to Clark, only twenty-eight out of the forty-eight States followed New York in establishing Code Systems of Procedure. And in those States which did follow New York’s example, the intervening one hundred years have been spent largely in reading back into the various Code provisions the Appropriate inent of the Common Law, and to acknowlRule of the Common Law, edge the stubborn fact that Common-Law

By the Supreme Court of Judicature Act Pleading and Practice, despite the passage of of 1873,81 now largely replaced by the Su- almost Seven Centuries, still survives as the preme Court of Judicature (Consolidation) basis of our Modern Legal Procedural SysAct of 1925,85 England followed New York tems, both State and Federal.87 in the abolition of the Common-Law Actions

in favor of a Single Form of Action. Yet Manufactures, 2 NJ. 136, 65 A.2d 833, 839 (1949), in no one suggested that this Development in referring to the present statute of Common-Law England was anything other than an Evolu- Pleading, Chief Justice Arthur Vanderbilt declared:

“The Pleadings in the case at Bar are lengthy, but the

tionary Change in the Common Law, albeit same principles are applicable to them as to the long overdue,

Finally, in 1938, came the long awaited

ability of Pleadings under the New Rules should not deceive one into believing that the essentials of

New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, which sound Pleading at Law or in Equity have been sought to and did place the
Regulation of abandoned. Quite the contrary; the objective of Pleading and Practice in the Federal Courts is reaching an issue of law or of fact in two or at the most three simple Pleadings has been attained, but in whole or partially have emulated the Federal Courts in Regulating Procedure by Rule—1 Ct.ti—Ancient and Modern Procedure, after a detailed survey of Reform Movements in both England and America, in an article, Theory of Common Law when the Real Actions were gradually being replaced by the Modern Common-Law Actions; whether we start. A Judgment of a Court of Record is a conclusion with the abolition of the Forms of Action by the New York Code of 1848, In favor of the Single, and Defense, Verdicts, and Findings of Fact, but Formless Form of Action, in the nature of not Evidence introduced at Trial, an Action of Trespass on the Case, or whether—“8. In rendering Judgment on a Claim or Defense we look at the situation today in the light the Court must determine the legal sufficiency of the Claim or Defense, our most recent Procedural Reform under “4. In determining the legal sufficiency of a Claim the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure,— or Defense the Court looks only to the pleadings viewed in its proper Historical Perspective, which form a part of the Record. “5. For the Court to be able to determine the legal any unbiased and well-informed Student of sufficiency of a Claim or Defense it must be legally Legal History Generally, and of Legal Proce- dure, Specifically, will be forced to admit “6— A. question of legal sufficiency may be raised be- fore Judgment by Demurrer or Motion, or after that Each New change in Our System of Procedure, by Way of Reform, has been but “T, If before Trial a Claim or Defense is found to be legally Insufficient Judgment Is for opposite party be legally Insufficient Judgment is for opposite party ‘4.36 & 37 Vle., c. 66 (1878). ‘T—8. If before Trial & Claim or Defense is found to be legally sufficient Judgment Is for pleader unless opposite party Is allowed to raise an issue of fact ‘15 & 16 Gee. V, c. 49(1923).”.

SI. See article by Hepburn, In the Hope of a New “9. If after trial a Claim or Defense is found to be Birth of One Form of Action, Pan II, The Statutory legally Insufficient judgment Is for opposite party One Form of ActIon, 13 Va.L.Rev. 09, 78—80 (1920). even though Verdict Is for the pleader.

30 BASIS OF MODERN REMEDIAL LAW Cit 1 “10 If after trial a Claim or Defense Is found to be “16. For the Record to be true, matters proved may legally sufficient Judgment is for pleader If the not ‘vary’ from matters pleaded.

facts pleaded are found to be true. “17. Having pleaded one material matter, a party “11. In determining the truth of a legally sufficient may not surprise his opponent by proving a different claim or defense the court looks only to the plead- ent matter.

ings and Verdict or Findings. “18. To prevent surprise at the trial the plaintiff “12. Material facts pleaded by one party and not de- must Plead Items of Special Damage.

nied by the other party are deemed to be true. “13. Material facts pleaded by one party and denied “19. To prevent surprise at the b-Ial the plaintiff may by the other party are deemed true or false in ac- be required to furnish a Bill of Particulars. cordance with the Verdict or Findings. “20. To prevent
surprise and future relitigation a

"14. Pleadings serve as a Record of matters admit- Claim or Defense should be identified by details ted by failure to deny, and of matters found by a such as time and place.

General Verdict. "Except to the extent that parties are permitted to "15. The Record of a Court of Record, which In- form new issues by evidence introduced at the trial, chides the pleadings, is an indisputable Itecord of the above principles are as valid today as they were matters adjudicated, at Common Law."

Sec. 2

CHAPTER 2

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE COMMON-LAW FORMS OF ACTION

10. The Ancient Real Actions First in Order of Development.
11. The Modern Real Actions.

MOST authorities 2 who have undertaken to discuss the Development of the Forms of Action, Ancient and Modern, as developed at Common Law, see:


FORMS OF ACTION

definition thereof. It has always seemed that this was to put the cart before the horse, that no understandable effort to define what is meant by the phrase “Forms of Action” could be made except as against a somewhat detailed survey of the History of the Common-Law Forms of Action, both Ancient and Modern. To present a definition to the student at a time when he has no apperceptive background or conception of how the Forms of Action developed, would appear to be an almost fruitless effort. In any event, it is respectfully submitted that the viewpoint of one who is seeking an understanding of the Forms of Action should be one of realization that the “Common-Law Scheme of Actions was not framed; it grew.”

ORIGIN OF THE COMMON-LAW FORMS OF ACTION

& The Common-Law Forms of Action had their Origin In the Action and Inter-action which took place between the Chancellor and the Three Royal Courts, King’s Bench, Exchequer and Common Pleas, whereby individual litigants applied to the Chancery for Original Writs authorizing one of the three Courts to try a Specific Action. The Multiplication of this Process first produced the Ancient Real, Mixed and Personal Common-Law Actions, which later were superseded by the Modern Common-Law Actions.

HOW, then, did the Formulary System of the Common Law develop the Ancient and Modern Common-Law Forms of Action? And why is a knowledge of what was meant by the phrase “Forms of Action” essential to one who seeks to understand the Law?

comes at a time when the beginning student is not qualified to fully comprehend its meaning. See, also, Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. 1. Introductory, ft 7, 8 (St. Paul 1905); Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c. x, or the Proceedings In an Action from Its Commencement to Its Termination, 39 (3d Am, ed. by Tyler, Washington, P. 0. 1592).

~ a Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, a. IV, Classification of Actions In the Common-Law System, 37 (Northport, 1906).

The answer to these inquiries can only be discovered and understood against the background of the Norman Conquest and the statesmanship of William the Conqueror, who operating through the King’s Council or Curia Regis, the King’s writ, the King’s Inquest and the doctrine of the King’s peace, did three things which left an indelible imprint upon English Legal History. In the first place, he organized the System of Feudal Tenure under which, in legal theory at least, land was held in some form under the King, which explained why the King’s Courts were always keenly interested in any litigation, public or private, which affected land. In the second place, he issued in 1072 what is now known as the Ordinance of William the Conqueror, which separated the Ecclesiastical and Common-Law Courts. This development not only exercised a profound influence upon the Procedural and Substantive Law of Descent and Distribution, Wills and Testaments and Probate and Administration, but by reason of the fact that it left Jurisdiction over Freehold Estates in the Common-Law Courts, it was largely responsible for the subsequent necessity of classifying the Common-Law Actions as Real, Mixed and Personal. In the third place, he established Law and Order through the creation of a Centralized System of justice, as an incident of which the Common-Law Forms of Action were developed.

The agencies by or through which these things were done were, in the beginning, the King’s private property, and they were not at first National Institutions, nor were they a part of the Regular Machinery of Administration. The Nation was governed by the

Sec. 5  

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

Customary Local Law, which was Administered in the Local Hundred, Shire and County Courts. There the best Brand of Justice was not always available. Perceiving this condition William, in the process of political reorganization of the whole country, began creating a System of Royal, Superior Courts, to which those not satisfied with the Local Courts, might repair. And it was through the operation of these New Courts under William the Conqueror [1066—1087], Henry I [1100—1135], Henry’s grandson, Henry It 1154—1189], and Edward I [1272—1307], that the Centralization of Justice was achieved.  

The Courts in Which, the Forms of Action Developed

An action could be instituted in each of the Three Superior Royal Courts, King’s Bench, Exchequer, and Common Pleas, each presided over by four Judges. Jurisdiction was distributed as follows: The Court of King’s Bench exercised control over Crimes, Torts Akin to Crimes, and Other Business Pertaining to the Crown, Matters of Revenue Exempted; the Court of Exchequer handled cases relating to taxation and Revenue; while the Court of Common Pleas dealt with Ordinary Civil Suits between subject and subject, known as communia placita. In the Three-cornered Struggle for Jurisdiction,  

6. ‘For most matters affecting the mass of the nation the Ancient System of Customary Law and of Courts was continued in effect. Modification was for the most part not sudden or revolutionary, but the result of a long process of growth. Speaking very generally, it may be said that there was a time of political reorganization under William the Conqueror (1006—1066) and his son Henry I (1100—1135), of legal innovation and creation under Henry’s able grandson Henry II (1154—1189), of rapid legal growth during the long reign of Henry III (1216—1272), and of legal consolidation and co-optation under Edward I, the “English Justinian” (1272—1307). The account which follows will be materially aided by keeping in mind the names of these kings and the dates of their reigns.” Bowning, Handbook of Elementary Law, c. 10, 80, 152 (St. Paul 1029).  

King’s Bench, by resort to a Fictitious Allegation of Trespass wider which control of the defendant could be secured by an arrest, expanded its Jurisdiction at the expense of the other Two Courts in a manner so as to include all Personal Actions. By a similar process of usurpation the Court of Exchequer also came to exercise Jurisdiction over Personal actions, but the Jurisdiction of neither Court extended to the cognizance of Real and Mixed Actions. In the meantime the Court of Common Pleas continued to exercise its Original Jurisdiction, which included the authority to entertain All Actions between the subjects of the King, Real, Mixed, or Personal, such as the Ancient Proprietary Writs of Right, the Possessoriy Assizes, Writs of Entry and Writs of Entry and Forcible Detainer, or such Modern Actions as Account, Covenant, Debt and Detinue, then in existence, and in time, over those Personal Actions of later vintage,  

In King’s Bench and Common Pleas an Action could be commenced either by an Original Writ or by Bill; in Exchequer, by Bill only. The Former Method of Commencing an Action, according to Stephen, “is the regular and ancient one, and the latter is in the nature of an exception to it. The proceeding by Original Writ consequently claims first notice.”  

The Original Writ

(I) The Historical Rack ground.—When the Conqueror first took over in England, in the process of establishing Law and Order, he followed the Norman system of having his Secretary, the Chancellor, write out and dispatch various Administrative Orders concerned with the execution of the business of the Crown. The King summoned his Army by Writ, instructed his Ambassadors by Writ, and it was under an order or orders of this  

FORMS OF ACTION

character that the facts were gathered for the Domesday Book. As the Authority of the King was more frequently exercised, it gradually and naturally fell into regular Administrative Channels, and there was a distinct tendency to develop standards or Common Forms for handling the King’s business. When, therefore, in pursuance of the Conqueror’s announced policy of non-interference with the Local Courts, an effort was made to aid the Administration of Justice by creating a System of Royal Courts to which Litigants, who Failed to Secure Justice in the Local Courts, might repair, it was only normal and natural that the existing System of Administrative Controls should be applied to the conduct of the King’s business in the Courts. It is not surprising to find, therefore, that as each of the Superior Common Law Courts split off from the Curia Regis or King’s Council, its activities were strictly limited to only those cases which were delegated to it by means of an Administrative Order, which, when applied to Judicial Affairs, became a Judicial Administrative Order, now familiarly known as an Original Writ (breve originale). Under Henry II (1154—1189), the use of such Writs, which had been occasional and extraordinary, perhaps a royal favor, became usual and regular.

(U) The Depends—we of Right upon Bernedy.—In the beginning these Judicial Orders, representing the King, were issued only occasionally, perhaps in aid of some great tenant of the King. But later, when it became necessary or desirable to expand the activities of the King’s Courts, all that needed to be done was to expand and develop New Forms of what were, in the beginning, merely thought of as new routines in the Process of Judicial Administration. In Glanvill’s

For a group of comprehensive essays, see Maitland, Domesday Book and Beyond: Three Essays In the Early History of England (Cambridge 1901)

time [1178—1189] the tendency of the Royal Courts, King’s Bench, Exchequer and Common Pleas, to enlarge their Jurisdictions was not great. In Bracton’s day [1245—1267] however, the period of growth was definitely under way, and the Procedural Mechanism by which this was to be realized was to be through the Invention of New Forms of Actions, to be, as he suggested, as numerous as there were Causes of Actions, under which the King was to Administer a System of Law as broad in its scope and variety as the Roman Law. The Common-Law theory that wherever there is a wrong there is a Remedy 9 was in effect given expression even at this early date when it was declared that there ought to be a remedy for every wrong; if some new wrong be perpetrated then a New Writ may be invented to meet it.

The Forms of Action, therefore, constitute a vivid illustration of the dependence of right upon remedy. The question of whether a man could bring this or that Action, such

8. During the latter part of the Reign of Henry II (1154—1189), the first systematic treatise of English Law appeared. The exact date of its appearance is not known, but it is generally thought to have been somewhere around 1187—1180. And it has been attributed to Lanulf de Glanvill, Henry’s great Chief Justiciar. According to 1 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. I, c. V, 143 (Cambridge 1893), the author may have been his nephew, Hubert Walter, who may have written under Glanvill’s direction. In any event, he produced the first authoritative story of the Development of Procedural and Substantive Common Law, as evolved by the Lawyers and Judges, under the reforming energy of Henry II, Maitland and Montague, A Sketch of English Legal History, c. I, 43 (New York 1915), in commenting on this book, declared: “We look back from it to a law book written in the reign of Henry I (1100—1135), [the Leges Henrici Primci, written about 1115], and we can hardly believe that only some seventy years divide the two. The one can, at this moment, be read and understood by anyone who knows a little of Medieval Latin and a little of English Law; the other will always be dark to the most Learned Scholars. The gulf between them looks like that between Logic and Caprice, between Reason and Unreason.”

0. 1 Bacon, Abridgment of the Law, “Actions in General”, B. 28, 29 (Dublin, 1786).

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

Sec. 8

as Trespass, Trover, Assumpsit, and so on, was a question of Substantive Right and of Liability. In theory, as has been suggested, there ought to be a remedy for every wrong (ubi jus, ibi renwdium), yet the Right of Action at
Common Law was dependent upon whether the litigants' facts fell within the scope of a limited and arbitrary list of Writs. There were at any given moment of development—a development which stretched over Centuries—only the same number of Rights of Action as there were Forms of Action. These Forms of Action, Ancient and Modern, persisted in actual use in English Procedure for Six Centuries, from the time of Henry TI [1154–1189] and Edward I [1272–1307], until the Judicature Acts in the Nineteenth Century. And these Forms were issued, and from time to time, found their way into and were permanently recorded in the Chancery in a book known as the Register of Writs'”

10. 36 & 37 Vict. c. 66 (ISI); as & ~a Viet. c. 77 (1875).

Regisirurn Brevium which was first printed and published in the Reign of Henry VIII [1509—1547]. This book thus became an authoritative source I or the purpose of determining, at any given moment in English Legal History, what Forms of Writs were then available to litigants. A variation, however, from the transcript of the Form as it appeared in the Register, was not conclusive against the propriety of the Form, if it appeared correct from other sufficient authority adduced.

Thus, the King’s Court was even then in the throes of developing a Formulary System through which it was ultimately destined to establish a Broad, General, National Jurisdiction and approximate the Common-Law ideal of affording a litigant a remedy for every wrong. This type of activity applied mostly to Civil Pleas or Common Pleas, whereas Pleas to the Crown, criminal for most part, depended upon a System of Procedure controlled by the Local Authorities. These Civil Pleas originally were Pleas dealing with the land, as under the Feudal System the crown was concerned with maintaining strict control over the land, as a result of which the Common Law Regulating the Land was ultimately to be converted into the Common Law of the Land. While in general these disputes might also have been handled by the Local Courts, where the Feudal Court was either weak, partial or actually corrupt, a Writ might issue from the King, through the Chancellor, ordering the Feudal Lord to do immediate Justice or appear in the King’s Court on a certain day and explain why not. In the beginning such intervention was largely administrative in character, and such threats, for the purpose of setting the Local Lord’s Judicial Machinery in motion, were not without both Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Norman precedent.

were wide differences. 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. II, c. IX, procedure, § I, 562, 568 (Cambridge 1595).


The purpose of the Register of Writs was to provide the Clerics in Chancery with an authoritative collection of Forms for all the existing Writs. It also served as a guide to Lawyers as to what Writs were available in the Chancellor’s office. Maitland, in his article on The History of the Original Writs, 3 Harv.LRev. 97, 107 (1889), reprinted in 2 Select Essays in Anglo-American Legal History, e. 36, 549 (Boston 1908), declared that the Register grew and expanded over a period of some Three Centuries, during which time its size constantly increased. Long after the period of its greatest development had passed it appeared in print for the first time in what is known as A Collection of Rastell’s Entries, first published in 1596. 4 Reel-es, History of English Law, e. XXX, Henry VIII, 566 (Am. ed. by Finlasen, Philadelphia 1880). For some Two Centuries thereafter this book and others based upon it were among the commonplace books used by the Practicing Lawyers. Such books took the Form of Commentaries by Judges and text-writers upon the character and use of the Writs available in the Register. These Writs, if the variations in each one were noted, reached into the hundreds; if, however, we omit the variations, the number may be estimated at thirty or forty between which there

FORMS OF ACTION

Clt 2

(III) The Creation of the First Origina’ Writ and Its Three Purpose&—However this may be, if for a moment we retrace our steps, there must have been a time, immediately after the First Superior Common-Law Court was differentiated from the King’s Council, when the first litigant petitioned the Chancellor for Relief, let us say, based upon a claim that his title or possession to certain property was in jeopardy. Where title or a proprietary interest was involved, the Remedy required was some Form of the Writ of Right, but where a mere possessory interest was in question the Remedy consisted of a Possessory Writ, which later was followed by the Writ of Trespass (quare ckiuauum fregit) and the Writ of Ejectment. Now, for the first time, the
Chancellor was confronted with the problem of just how he would delegate to the then single existing Court the required Authority of the King which was essential for the Court to function or to hear the Complaint contained in the Petition to the Chancellor. At this point the Chancellor, faced with the Concrete problem of framing a Judicial Order for the first time, doubtless looked over the Forms of some of his Non-Judicial Administrative Orders, observed that they usually began with greetings from the King and were directed to the individual whose action was sought. Adopting such Nonjudicial Order as a pattern, but phrasing it in Judicial Language, and directing it to the Sheriff of the County where the Cause of Action arose, or to the defendant, he thus created the First Original

Writ, the Beginning and Foundation of the

Suit, the exact date of which is buried in the mists of history.

After the first Original Writ of Trespass *quaeret clausum franciscum* (Trespass to Land), as referred to above, had been issued several times to cover that Specific Factual Situation, it gradually acquired a Fixed Form and a Fixed Theory of Liability. If, however, the *petitioner* appeared in Chancery with a Complaint that his cattle and carried away, the First Writ did not fit the Factual Situation, hence the Chancellor or his Clerks had to Frame a New Writ to cover a Trespass to personal property. Looking over the Form of the Writ of Trespass *quaeret causam* (Trespass to Land), the Chancellor doubtless discovered that by changing the description of the property involved from realty to personally, he could accomplish the desired end of authorizing the proper Court to try the case. Thus was created the Writ of Trespass to Personalty (Trespass to bonis asportatis). And so with another slight variation in the language of the Two Preceding Writs, he was able to bring forth the Writ of Trespass for Assault and Battery. Pursuing the same thought, if the Complaint was that the defendant had failed to pay the plaintiff a sum certain due and owing, a Writ of Debt was framed; if the Complaint was that the defendant had breached the terms of a Sealed Contract, a Writ of Covenant was the plaintiff’s only remedy.

And so on, until by a similar process, the whole gamut of human activity was in a manner covered, and there developed in the Common Law a great multiplicity of Types of Actions, as almost all types of injury, whether involving Breach of a Contract, Injury to Person or Injury to Property, occurred under slightly different combinations of Facts or Events, making with each variation a New Writ, the issuance of which created a New Right.

An Original Writ, according to Blackstone, was a mandatory letter on parchment, issuing out of Chancery, under the Great Seal, in the King’s name, directed to the Sheriff of the County where the injury was alleged to have occurred, containing a Summary Statement of the Cause of Action, and requiring the defendant to satisfy the claim, or upon the defendant’s failure to do so, then to Summon him to appear in the designated Superior Common-Law Court on the day named in the Writ, It was a kind of Judicial -executive Order to show cause why he had not redressed the wrong complained of. In

Sec. 5

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

some cases it omitted the former alternative, and required the Sheriff simply to enforce an Appearance. Examples of the Form of such a Writ, in one of the Ancient Real Actions and in one of the Modern Personal Actions, the relationship of which will be developed later, appear below:

FORM OF THE WRIT OF PENAECPE IN CAPITE:5

EDWARD THE FIRST, King of England, To the Sheriff of County,

GREETING:

COMMAND William Johnson that justly and without delay he render to Arthur Brown one messuage with the appurtenances in Trumpington which he claims to be his right and inheritance, and to hold of us in chief and whereof he complains that the aforesaid William Johnson unjustly deforceth him. And unless he will do this, and (if) the aforesaid Arthur Brown shall give you security to prosecute his claim, then summon by good summoners the aforesaid William Johnson that he be before our justices at Westminster, on _________ to
show wherefore he hath not done it. And have there the summoners and this writ.

WITNESS, ourself at Westminster,

FITZ-HERBERT, Natura Brevium, (English ed. 1794)-

FORM OF ORIGINAL WRIT IN DEBT EDWARD THE FIRST, King of England,
To the Sheriff of County,

GREETING:

COMMAND William Johnson, late of County, that justly and without delay he render to Arthur Brown the sum of £10

12.Pitz-Herbert, Natura Brevium (Dublin 1553)- The translation of the Writ of Praecipe In Capite as set out above was taken from the English edition.

Maitlancli, The Forms of Action at Common Law 82, n.2 (Cambridge 1945). of good and lawful money of Great Britain, which he owes to and unjustly detains from him, as it is said; and unless he shall do so, and if the said Arthur Brown shall make you secure of prosecuting his claim, then summon, by good summoners, the said William Johnson that he be before us on the ___ day of ___ wheresoever we shall be in England, (or, in Common Pleas before our Justices at Westminster, on ), to shew wherefore he hath not done it, and have there the names of the summoners, and this writ.

WITNESS, ourself at Westminster,

TIDD’S APPENDIX, 20, as set out in Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, Appendix, 365 (St. Paul 1905).

In other words, the Writs were not transformed into Actions until, in pursuance of the authority granted therein, the defendant Appeared in Court. At that time the plaintiff, elaborating upon the Charge Stated in the Original Writ, filed his Declaration stating for the first time his Cause of Action, in the course of which he not only repeated the Charge in the Original Writ, but expanded it into a full-fledged Statement of his Cause of Action. The issuance of each New Writ with each new variation in the Combination of Facts or Events presented amounted, thencefore, to the creation of a New Cause or Right of Action.

3 At this point, therefore, it should be observed, that the Original Writ as finally

1 It was this very practice, as we shall see, which led the Barons in 1258 to draw up what are now known as the Provisions of Oxford, which had a restrictive effect upon the practice of the Clerks in Chancery in issuing New Writs. It was this restriction upon the Clerks which ultimately led to the Enactment of the Statute of Westminster II (1285), 13 Edw. I, c. 24, 1 Pickering’s Statutes at Large 196, under which the Clerks were authorized to issue New Writs in all cases similar to but not identical with Trespasses, provided they fell within the scope of some existing Writ; otherwise the matter was to be referred to Parliament

FORMS OF ACTION

developed, served three distinct and material purposes:

(1) It authorized a specific Superior Common-Law Court to acquire control over the specific individuals involved in the controversy, or to put the matter in more technical phraseology, it gave the Court Jurisdiction over the Parties to the Action.

(2) it authorized the same Court to assume control over the controversy, or to put the matter in more technical language, it gave the court Jurisdiction over the Subject Matter of the Action and served as the Institution of the Action.
(3) It determined the Character of the Action to be tried, for if the plaintiff sued out of Chancery an Original Writ in Debt, he could not declare in Account, Covenant, or any other Form of Action but Debt. The Character of the Writ definitely defined and limited the Character of the Action.

In short, except in the case of the Practice of Proceeding by Bill, no Action could be begun in any Superior Court without the express sanction of an Original Writ, the general effect of which was to confer Jurisdiction on the Specific Court in which it directed the defendant to Appear. This suing out of an Original Writ, the first step in the Commencement of an Action was, as we have seen, taken by the plaintiff, to whom it was available as a matter of course, upon the payment of a fee to the King, the size of the fee being in proportion to the amount demanded by way of Damages in the action. The cost of these fees, therefore, became a continuing and ever-increasing source of the King’s revenue, and constitutes one explanation of the Crown’s unfailing interest in the Administration of Justice. The net effect of all this was to make the King “the fountain of justice,” and his Writ the Foundation of the Jurisdiction of the Court.

(iv) The Relation of the Charge in the Original Writ to the Charge in the Declaration —In considering the Early Developmental Stages of the Writ System, it is well to keep in mind three things:

The first is the significance of the Writ Process as a device for “making a pathway for the Jurisdiction of the King’s Court.”

The second is that the Earlier Writs of course (Writs “de cursu”), which existed long prior to the time when the Actions of Trespass on the Case came into being and operation, “were not,” as Bigelow observes, “created by a stroke of the pen, or imported into perfect form from Normandy,” but though of Continental origin, “they were gradually developed on English soil, out of rough and even shapeless material.” If this fact be well understood, it will clearly appear that the Common-Law Forms of Action antecedent to and therefore necessarily not founded upon the Statute of Westminster II (1285), did not arise out of the Writ; that originally it was “entirely foreign to any purpose of the Writ to set forth the Formal Language of an Action.”

This brings us to the third thing which must be kept in mind, to wit, the relation of the Charge in the Original Writ to the Charge in the Declaration, at the Various Stages in the Development of the Writ Process. In the beginning apparently there was no connection between the Original Writ and the Declaration. According to Bigelow, as pointed out above, originally it was not the Function of the Original Writ to set forth the Charge contained therein in the technical form or language of a full-fledged Cause of Action; it was required to include a definite statement of the subject matter or Cause of Action, as the defendant was entitled to be apprised of the plaintiff’s demand, in order that he might prepare himself to meet it intelligently. And when the summons was thus accomplished by virtue of the authority of the Writ, the actual service was made by the “good summoners” referred to in the Forms of the Old Writs, and their knowledge of the Cause of Action necessarily must have been obtained from the Original Writ. It has been suggested that the oldest Common Law Forms of Action are a direct lineal descendent of the (3cr-manic formulae) of Pre-Norman and Norman England; and that the Writ, which is of ancient origin, and the Count, which has a long record reaching back to the Anglo-Saxon time of

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

forth the Charge contained therein in the technical form or language of a full-fledged Cause of Action; it was required to include a definite statement of the subject matter or Cause of Action, as the defendant was entitled to be apprised of the plaintiff’s demand, in order that he might prepare himself to meet it intelligently. And when the summons was thus accomplished by virtue of the authority of the Writ, the actual service was made by the “good summoners” referred to in the Forms of the Old Writs, and their knowledge of the Cause of Action necessarily must have been obtained from the Original Writ. It has been suggested that the oldest Common Law Forms of Action are a direct lineal descendent of the (3cr-manic formulae) of Pre-Norman and Norman England; and that the Writ, which is of ancient origin, and the Count, which has a long record reaching back to the Anglo-Saxon time of
Alfred, were originally two separate forces operating independently of each other, but which, nevertheless, were gradually converging, until by the time of Glanvill (1178—1189) they were approaching a point of contact, which however, was not completed until the next, or Thirteenth Century. Once this convergence was completed, it is clear that in time the Writ came to control both the Form of the Action as well as the Statement of the Cause of Action contained therein.

(V) **Necessity of Selecting the Correct Form of Writ.**—When the plaintiff petitioned the Chancellor for an Original Writ, he was under great pressure to select the right Writ for the facts of his case. He chose at his own persona! peril. If he selected a Form of Writ which did not fit his case, however just his grievance might be, he could not succeed. Thus, if he sued out a Writ of Debt and his Complaint was that he had been evicted from Blackacre, for which he should have sought a Writ of Ejectment, the case would be dismissed, If he sued out a Writ of Replevin for a wrongful taking of Personal Property, he could not recover in Special Assumpsit for Breach of a Contract. In each instance where he selected the Wrong Form of Writ, his only recourse would be to retrace his steps and start over, selecting a Writ appropriate to the character of his Complaint. Referring to this characteristic of the Common-Law Forms of Action, Pollock and Maitland compared the System to an Armory, declaring: “It contains every species of medieval weapon from a two handed sword to the poinard. The man who has a quarrel with his neighbor comes hither to choose his weapon. The choice is large; but he must remember that he will not be able to change weapons in the middle of the combat and also that every weapon has its proper use and may be put to none other. If he selects a sword, he must observe the rules of sword-play; he must not try to use his cross-bow as a mace.”

9. 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. II, c. IX, Procedure, 1, 559 (Cambridge 1895). And Professor Hepburn, in his work, The Historical Development of Code Pleading c. li, § 46, 47—48 (Cincinnati, 1897), declared: “If a wrong Action was adopted, the Error was fatal to the whole proceeding, however clearly the Facts of the Controversy might have been brought before the proper Court. The plaintiff may have served his Adversary in due time, and may have given as full Information as to the Material Facts of the Case as could be given in any other Action; he may hare proceeded openly and fairly in all matters; there may have been no question as to the substantial Justice of his claim; but all this would not avail if his Action was not technically the proper one. Be must pay the costs and go out of Court. If he chose, he could begin again, but under like conditions. At his peril he must select the appropriate formula. It was not enough that he stood within the Temple of Justice, he must have entered through a particular door. Or, to change the figure, Chancery, the so-called offiebu, justitiac, was like an armory. To It every man who would contend with another in the Courts comes to choose his weapon. The choice is large. All the weapons of Juridical Warfare are here. But every weapon has its proper use, and can be put to no other. Moreover, only one weapon can be chosen at a time; and once chosen It cannot be exchanged for a different weapon In the progress of the combat. It the ~ght Is to go on, It must be with

40

**FORMS OF ACTION**

(VI) **The Power to Issue New Varieties of Original Writs.**—The Chancellor was the King’s Secretary of State, and as such was long the most powerful Officer of the Government, having his hand in most of the business of the Kingdom. This resulted from the fact that he was the Keeper of the Great Seal which had to be impressed upon Official Documents, and from the fact that any Administrative Orders of the King were usually prepared under his personal supervision. And, in this connection, it should be remembered that the Conquest introduced into England the Norman principle that no individual or institution could act for the King or his Council unless authority to do so had been delegated to him. When, therefore, the Superior Common Law Courts were differentiated from the King’s Council, and the problem arose of delegating to them the authority to act in each case, naturally the Chancellor and his Clerks, skilled in drafting Executive Orders for the King, became responsible for the preparation of Writs authorizing the Royal Courts to try Specific Cases which fell within their Jurisdiction. At first the Writs were probably awarded according to Abstract Conceptions of Justice and the needs of the case, but later only according to Precedent. And these Original Writs almost from the beginning differed from each other according to the nature of the Plaintiff’s Complaint and the ground of the Defendant’s Liability. Unless the plaintiff’s Complaint

such a weapon as was first chosen, and according to its special rules. A sword being selected, the rules of sword-play must be strictly
followed. A crossbow may not be used as a mace. The issue of the combat must not be determined by mere brute force—not even by the brute force of indisputable facts arrayed before the Court. It is a contest of skill; success depends upon observing the formal rules of the combat."

In this connection, Blackstone referred to the Chancery as “the oil icing fustitiae, the shop or mint of Justice, wherein all the King’s writs are framed.” Blackstone’s Commentaries on the Laws of England, Book III, c. XIV, Of the Pursuit of Remedies by Action, 756 (Chase’s Am. ed., New York, 1517).

fell within the scope of an Existing Form of Action, or unless the Chancellor saw fit to Issue a New Writ, the plaintiff could not maintain any Action at Law.

For approximately a hundred years from the institution of the Writ System to the early part of the Thirteenth Century, the King’s general power to formulate and issue New Writs through the Chancellor seems to have been unquestioned. In consequence the Law, as developed in the King’s Courts, between 1154—1250, underwent a tremendous growth. The power to make New Writs was a power to create New Rights, and hence New Law. Thus the Chancery became the principal instrument by which Justice was gradually Centralized in the Crown. It became not only the “Shop of Justice,” but also the “Mother of Actions.” To the Chancery must apply all those seeking relief, to which the language of some known Writ was applicable, or for some New Writ, framed on the analogy of those already in existence. Writs thus issued as a matter of routine were known as “writs of course.”

And as new social needs arose and as the political status of the country permitted, New Writs were hammered out on the anvil of Justice in the Shop of the Chancellor, New Rights and New Laws were created, which taken together, came to be known as the Common Law, as opposed to the Customary Law enforced in the Local Courts, and which emerged during the latter part of the Thirteenth Century as a distinct System of National Law. The System, as thus developed, was the joint product of the Common-Law Courts. But it should be remembered that these Courts were powerless to act without the authority of the King’s Writs, and that this New System was faced with a Struggle for Jurisdiction and Power stretching over several hundred years against powerful rivals, chief among which were the Chancery and Ecclesiastical Courts, before it could achieve the position of first rank in the

Sec. 8

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

field of Anglo-American law. The credit for the creation of a Centralized Judicial System belongs therefore not only to the Common-Law Courts, but to the King and the Royal Officials, who made effective the Judgments of the Royal Judges, and who, by the King’s Writs, made Remedies available which were not ordinarily available under the Customary Law of the land. The Original Writ System was the fundamental basis of the New System of Centralized Justice.

Toward the Middle of the Thirteenth Century, the second great treatise in English law, Bracton’s De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliae, described by Pollock and Maitland as “the Crown and flower of English Medieval Jurisprudence,” appeared. It served as a summary of the Writ System as it stood between 1250 and 1258 and assured that the story of the development would be passed on to subsequent generations. Bracton took as his Model the Treatise of Mo of Bologna, the Great Civilian. Maitland and Montague, in speaking of Bracton’s debt to Azo, said:

“Thence he had obtained his idea of what a Law Book should be, and of how Law should be arranged and stated; thence also he borrowed Maxims and some Concrete Rules; with these he could fill up the Gaps in our English System.” The core of this Treatise, however, was distinctly English and not Roman, and represented the Law as laid down by the Judgments of the King’s courts. If Bracton’s book be compared with that of Glanvilli, it will be seen that the Period be—

so. 1 Pollock and Maitland, History of Engish Law, e. VI, The Age of Bracton, 185 (cambridge i595).

21. “fig fBraeton’sJ flame wak not Bracton, but Bratton, or perhaps gretton. Entries of his name In various rolls make this clear, But for the Lawyer be and his works are, and always wilN be, sita— ply Bracton.” 2 Holdsworth; History of English Law, c. III, The Progress of the Common Law, 232 (3d otT. London 1923).


between 1154 and 1250, approximately a Century, had been one in which there had been a rapid development of both
Procedural and Substantive Law, largely as a direct result of New Original Writs formulated in Chancery and approved by the “virile and progressive Judges who then manned the King’s Court.”

The Golden Age of the Forms of Action occurred during the last years of the Reign of Henry III [1216—12723, when the Old Ancient Real Common-Law Forms of Action were still in the running, while at the same time certain of the Modern Personal Actions had put in an appearance. It was during this Period, therefore, that the number of living Forms of Action reached its maximum. Shortly thereafter, the Real Actions revealed a tendency toward obsolescence, while the Common-Law power to create New Forms of Action was nearing its close. Under the influence of the Provisions of Oxford in 1258 only slight power of varying the Writs, Ancient or Modern, was left in the Chanceller; beyond this, relief lay by way of Parliament and Statute, and with the death of Edward I [1307], the first great Epoch of English Legislation ended. Thereafter, the greatest development of the Forms of Action was to be found in the development of the Common Law Actions of Case, Ejectment, Trover, Special and General Assumpsit—a distinguished array—which ousted many of the Older Actions and made heavy contributions to both Contract, Property, and Tort Law. From one point of view this may be regarded as evidence of the vigor of the Forms of Action and as evidence of their capacity to forward the Development of Substantive Law; but from another viewpoint, it may be regarded as the “decline and fall of the Formulary System, for Writs are being made to do work for which they were originally intended, and that work they can only do by means of Fiction.”

FORMS OF ACTION

Ch. 2

The great expansion of the Royal Authority by use of the Writ System, as thus recorded by Bracton, did not depend entirely upon the work of the Common-Law Courts. Thus, out of the Residuary Power which remained in the King’s Council after the Common-Law Courts were differentiated therefrom, the Court of Chancery was created. The Ecclesiastical Courts, which assumed a separate existence after the Ordinance of the Conqueror in 1072, governed matters of spiritual conduct, and certain aspects of the Law of Succession while much litigation was cared for in the Local Courts and in the Private Baronial Courts. Fewer Courts, less Jurisdictions, would appear to have been the demand of the day. Nevertheless, the Development of the Court of Chancery steadily proceeded. Why?

With reference to the Development of Equity as an incidental of the reluctance of the Clerks in Chancery to grant New Writs, Blackstone, in speaking of Chapter 24 of the Statute of Westminster II, 13 Edw. I (1285), which authorized the Clerks to Issue New Writs in Cases similar to but not quite Identical with Cases in which Writs were previously Issued, stated: “Which provision (with a little accuracy in the Clerks of the Chancery, and a little liberality in the Judges, by extending rather than narrowing the remedial effects of the Writ) might have effectually answered all the purposes of a

The answer seems to be connected with the Power of the Chancellor to issue Original Writs. As long as this power was unrestricted and broad enough to encompass what we now describe as Equitable Relief, there was little reason for the development of the Equity Courts. But this condition was not destined to continue.

Among the Third Class of Writs set forth by Bigelow, there were a number which never became Writs of Course and which were of a character which in Modern Times would be regarded as Equitable. According to Bigelow, these were Writs of Protection, being the forerunners of our Modern Writs of Injunction, and of the protective process generally as exercised by Chancery in its Early Stages of Development. The fact that these Writs never became de oursu, accounts in no small measure, for the development of Exclusive Jurisdiction Over
such Forms of Remedial Relief by Chancery. If these Writs had achieved the status of Writs of Course, they would have fallen outside the purview of the Provisions of Oxford in 1258, and hence the Jurisdiction of the Royal courts would have remained unlimited and unimpaired as to this Type of Writ. The result might well have been to eliminate Equity or at least to prevent the vast expansion which thereafter took place. Or to put it in another way, the result of this development was to deprive the Common-Law courts of the power to compel obedience to their Specific Orders, that is, of coercing obedience by orders in personam—a power, which we now know, as a result of research that has been done in the early cases, was exercised by the Superior Courts of the Norman Period. When the practice of issuing New Writs thus came to an end, the development of the Common


Sec. 5

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

Law was necessarily retarded at a time when it had not yet fully flowered, at a time when it had not fully emerged from its Primitive Stage, and its great qualities appeared as such only when viewed against the background of the earlier and existing situations, and not in the light of later developments. This untimely restriction upon the Power to Issue New Writs under which the Common Law had gone far in the direction of furnishing England a Complete and Adequate System of National Law, resulted in the Common Law falling short of its full fruition. Several reasons for this unfortunate development may retrospectively be assigned; they are:

(A) Impairment of the Lards! Jurisdiction Over Their Private Courts—One of the Methods by which the Crown drew unto itself control over the Administration of Justice was by depriving the Barons of their Jurisdiction over disputes with their tenants. The theory was that the King intervened to assist a helpless tenant, or other litigant, as against a powerful landlord, but the net result was to give the King’s Court Jurisdiction over the case. It is not surprising, therefore, to find that when the Barons revolted against King John in 1215, they “exact[ed] from him the first important concessions as the beginning of a long period of resistance to the absolute and centralized power of the English Kings.” 27 And they took advantage of the situation to make official their resentment of the encroachment upon their Baronial Jurisdiction by placing a provision in Magna Carta, Section 34 of which declared: “The Writ which is called Praecipe for the future shall not be made out to anyone of any tenement whereby a freeman may lose his Court.” Such provision clearly indicates the opposition of the Barons to the constant and increasing infringement upon their Jurisdiction, although it remains doubtful whether it had any permanent effect in restricting the Chancery from issuing Writs, or the King from continuing to impair the Jurisdiction of the Local as well as the Private Courts.

(B) The Provisions of Oxford (1258).—The issue involving the impairment of the Jurisdictions of the Barons was again raised in 1258 at Oxford. At this time and place the power of devising New Writs and thereby creating New Rights of Action—a powerful and dangerous weapon in unscrupulous hands—received a severe check. The Barons, headed by Simon de Montfort, forced upon Henry III [1216—1272] the Provisions of Oxford, under which an Oath was imposed upon the Chancellor that he would issue no Writs “excepting Writs of Course without the Commandment of the King and of his Council who shall be present.” ~ This provision, more effective than Section 34 of Magna Carta in 1215, placed in Parliament and not the King, the broad authority to create New Rights by granting New Remedies, with only a fraction of his former power left to the King. But, the effect of the Provisions was practically annulled some five years later by the decision of Louis IX, who was appointed as an arbitrator between Henry and the Barons, though the former power of the Chancellor does not seem to have been renewed. And, as so often happened in English History, Parliament made but scant use of this New Power. In consequence, the Provisions of Oxford soon became inoperative under the changing political conditions, so that to all practical intents and purposes, the right to Legal Relief was

By “Writs of coume,” as opposed to Judicial Writs, were meant Writs for which Precedents might be found in the form book or Register of Writs kept in Chancery.” Milla; Common-Law Pleading, Pt. I, c. U, ~ 18 (Chicago 1935).


FORMS OF ACTION

restricted to the Actions then in existence, the Clerks in Chancery being doubtful of their Authority to continue the Policy of Issuing New Writs.

(C) The Statute of Westminster ii (1285).

—By this time, however, the Ancient Real Actions and certain of the later Common-Law Actions, such as Trespass, Debt, Detinue and Replevin, appear to have developed as a result of the action and interaction which took place over a long period of time between the Clerks in Chancery and the Common-Law Courts and Judges, without the aid of statutory enactments.

While these Actions met the needs of their day fairly well, and through them, litigants were able to secure a rough and ready sort of Justice, they, nevertheless, fell far short of the Common Law ideal of providing a Remedy for every wrong. This was due in part to Defects in the Procedural Law and in part to Defects in the Substantive Law. On the Procedural Side, the Action of Detinue had been rendered practically useless because subject to Wager of Law—a handicap from which it never fully recovered, even after Wager of Law was abolished; and the Action of Debt was subject, in addition to Wager of Law, to the requirement of extreme particularity in setting out the various items of the demand sued on. On the Substantive Law Side, there were also wide Gaps in the Remedial Law in both the Contract and Tort Field. In the Contract Field, Covenant was still the only form of Contract known, unless a situation out of which a Common-Law duty to pay a debt could be regarded as Contractual, and No Remedy had been developed for the Breach of a Parol Promise. In the Tort Field, while Trespass served as a fairly Adequate Remedy where the injury complained of was accompanied by force, it took no cognizance of those injuries which were (1) naccompanied by force, such as in the mere detention of goods where there had been no unlawful taking; (2) accompanied by force, consequential and not immediate in its nature, such as an injury resulting from falling over a log, placed in the road at a time prior to the injury; (3) accompanied by force, and resulting in injury to property not then in possession of the owner, such as an injury to a reversionary interest in realty. These Defects, which we are now able to point out retrospectively, were not definitely recognized at that time.

At this point, however, It should be reniernijered that the Writ of Trespass on the Case, which authorized the plaintiff to bring an action on the Particular Facts of his own case, in situations where none of the approved Writs in the Register fit, had already been recognized. But before it had developed into a well-recognized and fully approved Writ, the power of devising New Writs and thereby creating New Rights of Action received a severe check by the Provisions of Oxford.

Nevertheless, the presence of the Defects outlined above, coupled with the commercial growth and development of the country, were, perhaps, an unconscious factor which led to the enactment in 1285 of the Statute of Westminster 11,~ which authorized the Clerks in Chancery to issue New Writs in all cases similar to but not quite identical with cases in which Writs had been previously issued, thus giving rise to the question


30. The Statute, 13 Ethv. I, c. 24, 1 Pickering’s Statutes at Large, 196, provided: “And whuensoever from henceforth it shall fortune In the Chancery, that in one case a Writ Is found, and in like Case [in consimili casul, falling under like Law, and requiring like Remedy, is found Done, the Clerks of the Chancery shall agree in making the Writ; or the Plaintiffs may adjourn It until the next Parliament, and let the Cases be written In which they cannot agree, and let them refer themselves until the next Parliament, by Consent of Men learned in
the Law, a Writ shall be made, lest it might happen after that the Court should long time fail to minister Justice unto complainants.”


Sec. 9

as to whether the Action of Trespass on the Case originated out of the Statute, or is to be more satisfactorily explained on some other theory. The issue thus presented has long been the subject of a learned controversy which has developed a considerable literature. The participants in this controversy, among whom are some of the most distinguished Anglo-American Legal Historians, Scholars and Teachers, have developed Three Schools of Thought. These include:

(1) Those who believe that the Action of Trespass on the Case developed as a result of the impact of the Statute of Westminster II, taking its very name from the word casu as used in the famous and familiar phrase “consimili casu,” which appeared in Chapter 24 of the Statute. This group, known as the “Modernists,” is represented by Ames, Jenks, and Sutton.

(2) Those who think that the Statute of Westminster II had nothing to do with the Origin of the Action on the Case. This group, known as the “Revolutionists,” includes Plucknett and Dix.

(3) Those who adopt the Middle View that while the Action on the Case existed prior to 1285, the date on which the Statute was enacted, its development into the Modern Action of Trespass on the Case would not have occurred without the influence and action on the part of the Clerks in Chancery as authorized by Parliament in Chapter 24 of the Statute of Westminster II in 1285. This group, known as the “Traditionalists,” includes Holdsworth and Landon.

(0) The Growing intervention of Chancery.—Perhaps the real responsibility for the Arrested Development of the Common Law should be laid at the door of Chancery. Clearly the Inventive genius of the Clerks in Chancery had not come to an end as in that event there would have been no need for Section 34 of Magna Carta in 1215 or the Provisions of Oxford in 1258. As a matter of policy the King’s Council evidently felt that there were certain Areas of Jurisdiction over which it desired to retain a closer supervision, and the argument seized upon for such a course of action was that there were certain defects in the Common-Law Remedial Scheme, as a result of which Meritorious Litigants were left Without Remedy at Law, hence the intervention of Chancery became necessary. But such was not always the case, as where the captain of a ship came into an English port, and being there but a few days, demanded payment of a debt due from an Englishman. Thus, the King, desiring to advance the mercantile interests of the country, and in the face of the established fact that the plaintiff had an Adequate Remedy at Law in the Action of Debt, permitted the Chancellor to hail the defendant into Court.

21. 13 Edw. I, c. 24, 1 Pickering’s Statutes at Large
196. This Statute contained fifty chapters dealing with a great variety of problems, and is not to be regarded as a Statute in the modern sense, but rather as a series of Statutes enacted at one session of Parliament. Pifoot, History and Sources of the Common Law, Development of Actions on the Case, c-4, 60, n. 19 (London 1949).
23. For the view of Jnh-s, see History of English Law, e. X, Contract and Tort, 136 (Boston 1912).
35. 13 Edw. I, a 24 (1285), 1 Pickering’s Statutes at Large 196.
30. See Comment by Holdsworth on Plucknett’s new suggestion that the Statute of Westminster II (1285) was not the source of the Action of Trespass — in the Case, 47 L.Q.Rev. 334 (1931).

ORIGIN OF FORMS OF ACTION

40. See article by Landon, Case and Westminster II, 52 L.Q.Rev. 68 (1956).

FORMS OF ACTION
Oh. 2

examine him under Oath as to the debt, and if found to be owing, Order its payment on peril of being jailed for Contempt for failure to obey the Order. Or the King may have intervened through the Chancellor, not because there was no Common-Law Remedy, but because the State of Law and Order in the country was in such a condition that an Ordinary Litigant in a Contest with a Powerful Overlord, could not take advantage of his Common-Law Remedy. Thus, the Common Law’s development was arrested when it was beginning to get a good start, and at a time when the social and economic needs of the country demanded expansion instead of restriction of the Common Law Remedial System.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE COMMON-LAW ACTIONS

9. Actions at Common Law, are divided into
Real, Mixed and Personal. Real Actions included those brought for the Specific Recovery of Lands, Tenements, or Hereditaments. Personal Actions consisted of those brought for the Specific Recovery of Goods and Chattels, or for Damages for Breach of Contract, or for Damages for some Injury to the Person, or to one’s Relative Rights, or to Personal or Real Property. Mixed Actions partook, in some degree, of both Real and Personal Actions, wherein some Real Property was awarded, and also Personal damages for a Wrong sustained, and hence they were not properly reducible to either of them. they were brought both for the Specific Recovery of Lands, Tenements, or Hereditaments, and for Damages for injury sustained in respect of such property.

ACCORDING to the Relief sought, Actions have been Divided into:

(A) Real
(B) Mixed, and
(C) Personal


REAL ACTIONS.—Real Actions were those brought for the Specific Recovery of “Seisin,” the possession of a freehold estate in Real Property. They included:

The Writs of Right
The Possessory Assizes
Writs of Entry
Forcible Entry and Detainer

MIXED ACTIONS.—Mixed Actions are such as are brought both for the Recovery of Real Property, and for Damages for injury in respect to it. Waste was an example of this Type of Action and it lay to recover land wasted by a tenant with Treble Damages.

PERSONAL ACTIONS.—Personal Actions are those brought for the Recovery of a Debt or Possession of Specific Personal Property, or of Damages for the Breach of a Contract, or of Damages for some Injury to the Person, or to one’s Relative Rights, or to Personal or Real Property.
The remedy which a given Writ afforded a Litigant was called an Action. And as these Actions grew in number and scope, as a result of the action and interaction which took place between the Chancery and the Three Superior Common-Law Courts, they were often differentiated by very slight shadings of meanings, and it was only natural that an effort should be made to classify the various Actions. And in connection with this effort, it should always be borne in mind that the term “classification” may and almost inevitably is bound to have different implications in Different Periods of a Nation’s Development. Thus, if, in English Legal History, we go back as far as Glanvill and Bracton, we find that they regarded some Actions Personal which Blackstone,\(^43\) writing about 1765, treated as Real or Mixed. But for general purposes, we may nevertheless now use as


\(\text{Sec. 10 }\)

ANCIENT REAL ACTIONS

our starting point the Classification which Blackstone published to the world with the appearance of the first edition of his Commentaries on the Laws of England. He declared: “With us in England the several Suits or Remedial Instruments of Justice, are from the subject of them distinguished into three kinds, Real, Mixed and Personal.\(^44\)

“Real Actions (or as they are called in the Mirror, Feudal Actions), which concern Real Property only, are such whereby the plaintiff, here called the Demandant, claims title to have any lands or tenements, rents, commons, or other hereditaments, in fee-simple, fee-tail, or for term of life. By these Actions formerly all disputes concerning Real Estates were decided; but they are now pretty generally laid aside in practice, on account of the great nicety required in their management, and the inconvenient length of their process; a much more expeditious method of trying titles being since introduced, by other Actions Personal and Mixed.

“Mixed Actions are suits partaking of the nature of the other two, wherein some real property is demanded, and also personal damages for a wrong sustained. As for instance an Action of Waste.

“Personal Actions are such whereby a man claims a Debt, or Personal Duty, or Damages in lieu thereof; and, likewise, whereby a man claims a satisfaction in Damages for some injury done to his person or property. The former are said to be founded on Contracts, the latter upon Torts or Wrongs; and they are the same which the Civil Law calls ‘actiones in personam, quae adversus eum intenduntur, qui ox contractu vel delicto obligatus ost aliquid dare vol concedere’. Of the former nature are all actions upon Debt or Promises; of the latter all actions for Trespasses, Nuisances, Assaults, Defamatory Words, and the like.

\(^44\) The original arrangement of the three types of Actions reads Personal, Mixed and Real, which or~ der has been changed for purposes of presenta

“Under these three heads may every species of remedy by Suit or Action in the Courts of Common Law be comprised.”

TILE ANCIENT REAL ACTIONS FIRST IN ORDER OF DEVELOPMENT

10. There were Two Divisions of the Real Actions—those founded on Seizin or Possession, and those founded on the Property or Right.

JACKSON defines a Real Action as “one that is brought to recover the freehold in lands, tenements or hereditaments, claimed either in fee simple, fee tail, or for life, by one who is deforced, against him who is a tenant thereof.”\(^{14}\) They were known as Real Actions because the Judgments rendered therein were in rem
47 In these Actions the Party bringing the Action was known as the Demandant, while the Party against whom it was brought was the Tenant. And the First Pleading on the part of the Demandant was called a Count. Over a Period of Several Centuries running as far as the reign of Elizabeth [1558-1603], the existence of these Remedies, available only in favor of owners of freehold estates, made possible the settlement of all disputes concerning real estate on a reasonably satisfactory basis. These Writs to determine the rights of property and the rights of possession in a freehold, varied according to the title or seizin of the Demandant, and the circumstances of ouster or deforcenient; they were feudal in origin and were in number about sixty, the distinction between them being highly technical and refined, and the trial long and costly, all of which facts were factors in their ultimate

---

**FORMS OF ACTION**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>POSSESSORY REAL ACTIONS:—Cont’d</th>
<th>Cli. 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(U) Writs of Entry—Continued</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(C) The Writ of Entry sur In-trusion</td>
<td>(I) The Writ of Entry sur Abatement</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(III) Writs Ancestral Possessory</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(IV) Writ of Quare Ejecit Infra Termi nun</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(V) Writ of De Ejectione Firmae</td>
<td>(VI) Writ of Quare Impedit (Vii) Writ of Waste</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(VIII) Writ of Deceit</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(IX) Writ of Partition</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**CLASSIFICATION OF ANCIENT REAL ACTIONS**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PROPRIETARY REAL ACTIONS:</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(I) Writs of Right Proper</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(A) The Writ of Right Patent</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(B) The Writ of Right Quia Do-minus Remisit Curiam</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(U) Writs in the Nature of Writs of Right</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(A) The Writ of Right de Rationabili Parte</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(B) The Writ of Right of Ad-vows on</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(C) The writ of the Right of Dower</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(D) The Writ of Dower Unde Ni-hil Habet</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(E) The Writ of Formedon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**POSSESSORY REAL ACTIONS:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(I) Writs of Assize</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(A) The Assize of Novel Disselsin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(B) The Assize of Darrein Pre-sentment</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**The Basis of Classification**

According to the nature of the thing recovered, the Ancient Real Actions fell into Two Groups: in One Group only lands, tenements, or hereditaments were recovered, and these Actions were treated as Real. In the Other Group, Damages, as well as lands, tenements, or hereditaments were recoverable, and these Actions were called Mixed. However, as all of them were classed and treated with the Real Actions, as their leading characteristic was the recovery of a freehold, and as recovery of Damages was incidental, both the Real and Mixed are generally treated as Real Actions. Classifying the Real Actions on the basis of the
property and the right of possession might be in different persons while the actual possession was in a third person, actual possession was regarded as a right distinct from the right of property and the right of possession.

If one having the Complete Title to land was dispossessed, he lost one of the constituent elements of his Title, that is, actual possession. This left remaining in him the right of possession and the right of property. As to all other persons except the person ousted, the disseisor became the owner of the Complete Title; as to the person ousted, he was the owner of the Complete Title, subject to be defeated by enforcement of the disseisee’s superior right of property or right of possession. If such rights were not enforced within certain periods of time fixed by the Common Law or by Statute, the disseisor’s Title became indefeasible as to all failing to show a superior right of property or right of pos

50. “The treatment of Actual Possession as a Right, or as implying a right distinct from the right of possession, has been misleading. Actual possession is a Fact or Status. As a Fact it is prima Jane Evidence of the Right of possession, because It is the natural manifestation of that right As a Fact or Status it is protected by Law for reasons of public policy against displacement, except by Judicial Process at the instance of someone having a Superior Right to possess. Peaceable Possession therefore is not a Right, but it is a Fact or Status which implies the Right in the possessor to continue his possession until it is displaced by Judicial Process. This Right of Possession is provisional, and subject to determination at the suit of any one having an older and therefore Superior Right of Possession. In imputing to the peaceable possessor a Right in the Fact of his Possession, nothing more could have been Intended than to recognize in him a Peculiar Right of Possession, which springs from and is implied from the Present Fact of Possession. This Right of Possession might co-exist with a Right of Possession in some one else springing from a Previous Fact or Status of peaceful possession. Thus we have two persons invested with rights of possession. One founds his right on a present peaceable possession, the other founds it on a previous peaceable possession, or a Right of property which resolves itself ultimately Into an older possession or seizin.” Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. IV, Ancient Real Actions, 100, n. 1 (St. Paul, 1905).

These rights of property and rights of possession were remediable under the Ancient Law by the Extra-Judicial Process of Self-Help, or by the Judicial Process represented in the Scheme of Real Actions. Upon disseisin, abatement or intrusion, the person ousted—the disseisee, heir, devisee, remainderman, or reversioner—was permitted to make a peaceable entry, making his Title again complete. If peaceable entry was not possible, his only course was to resort to legal redress, as force could not be used without falling under penal restrictions. Entry by force was not only a punishable offense, but the former occupant could by a Writ of Forcible Entry immediately be restored to possession, irrespective of any right of possession or right of property of the original disseisee. Failure
on the part of the disseisee to make a peaceable entry in the lifetime of the disseisor, abator or intruder, resulted in ending the right of peaceable entry without process. Extra-Judicial Entry was ended by the fact of a descent cast. Thereafter the disseisor’s heir could not be ousted except by an Action asserting the disseisee’s superior right of possession or of

SO

FORMS OF ACTION

Ch. 2

property. But the descent of incorporeal hereditaments lying in grant did not take away the right of entry.55 The disseisee, however, by making claim at any time before the death of the disseisor, might evade the effect of the descent cast, and save his right of entry for a year and a day after such claim made. Thus, the continuance of the disseisor in possession after claim made was regarded as a new disseisin. By the Statute of 32 Henry VIII, c. 33, 5 Statutes at Large 48, ~1540], the Right of Entry was extended so that a descent from a disseisor could not have the effect of taking away the Right of Entry, except where the disseisor had peaceable possession five years next after the disseisin, The Statute was construed as not being applicable to a descent from the heir of a disseisor, or from his feoffee, so that such descents barred the Right of Extra-Judicial Entry, notwithstanding a want of five years’ possession. It may be added that in cases in which the wrongdoer had acquired possession lawfully and then unlawfully detained it, the party entitled had neither a Possessory Action, nor Remedy by Self-Help; he could only invoke a Proprietary Action to establish his rights.

For reasons of public policy, the Common Law protected a person in peaceable possession of land, irrespective of the method of acquisition.55 Actual seisin or possession, however acquired and however wrongful, created a presumptive right of possession, or a species of property based on the fact of

55. “It accomplished this In three ways: Ist, by refusing to enforce in the Courts any one’s Claim to Possession which was not Superior to the flight of the actual possessor; 2d, by summarily restoring to the ousted possessor his possession, when it was forcibly taken from him, Irrespective of any Right of Possession, in the party who had interrupted the possession; 3d, by punishing any one who attempted to enforce his Rights of Possession, without Process of the Courts Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. IV, Ancient Real Actions, 109 (St. Paul, 1905).

his possession— In case of being dispossessed, the disseisee could vindicate his right of possession by resort to some Possessory Proceeding, basing his action on his actual seisin and the wrongful act of the disseisor in ousting him. At hand were the Possessory Remedies in the Form of the various Writs of Assize or a Writ of Entry, depending upon the character of his case. Also available was Self-Help if resorted to before descent cast, and if not barred by the Common Law or Statute. If such Remedy failed or was lost, he still might regain possession by some form of Possessory Action, provided he acted within the period of time in force at the time the action was brought. In general, limitation of Possessory Actions was fixed at twenty years. If the Possessory Action was not brought within the time limit, or if, when brought, it resulted in defeat, the disseisee might still resort to a Proprietary Action, if brought within the period of time limiting such actions, which was sixty years. In such actions the plaintiff alleged seisin or possession of a fee, and added that he claimed “as of right,” thus raising the Issue of ultimate dominion, or right of ownership, which either included or implied the superior right of possession as incident to it or constituted the right itself. Generally, this dominion or ownership is referred to as something very different in its nature from the right of possession. It becomes apparent, however, when ownership in land is resolved into its essential elements, that the fundamental one is the right of possession. It would seem, therefore, that the right of property enforced in the Proprietary Actions is nothing more than an older and superior right of possession.54

In its strictest sense property is the right to possess and use a determinate thing, in—3. Ibid.
54. 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, c. IV, Ownership and Possession, 77, 78 (Cambridge 1895). Sec. 10

ANCIENT REAL ACTIONS

Page 62 of 735
definitely in point of user, unlimitedly in point of duration, and unrestricted in point of alienation or disposition.\textsuperscript{52} In England there was probably no property in land which measured up to this ideal of absolute property. But from Bracton on, the rights of proprietorship have been ascribed to the tenant in demesne, notwithstanding the rights of seigniory remaining in the lord and ultimately in the sovereign. The right of the tenant in fee has in point of fact been treated as property in the highest sense, even though it falls short of the ideal of absolute property. And the philosophy or logic of property rights has been done no violence by ascribing them without limitation to the rights of a tenant in English law, much less to a purchaser in fee under the Laws of the Several States of the United States.

As the foundation of the right of ownership is the right of possession to which the other rights are primarily incidental, it follows that one cannot use or dispose of a thing which is in the adverse possession of another. When the right to possession is once vindicated, these other rights are restored along with the possession. Williams, the distinguished authority on English Property Law, has stated that there is “\textit{no action in the Law of England by which property either in goods or land is alone decided},” \textsuperscript{57} as distinguished from the right to possession either immediate or future. The explanation of this is found in the fact that the right of property in land or goods is only another name for the right of possession, and the other rights incidental to it. Thus, in all of the Real Actions, whether Proprietary or Possessory, the Material Issue was the right of possession. As Pollock and Maitland so


\textsuperscript{57} 2 Polloek and Maitlanci, History of English Law, e. IV, Ownership and Possession, 46 (Cambridge 1895).

\textsuperscript{52} Williams, Personal Property, 26 (7th ed London 1570).

FORMS OF ACTION

fore he bath not done it; and have you there the summoners and this writ.
WITNESS, ourself at Westminster,


FORM OF THE ASSIZE OF NOVEL DISSEISIN

EDWARD THE FIRST, King of England, To the Sheriff of County,

GREETING:
A. hath complained unto us that B. unjustly and without judgment hath diisseised him of his freehold in C. within thirty years last past, and therefore we command you that if the aforesaid A. shall make you secure to prosecute his claim, then cause that tenement to be reseized, and the chattels which were taken in it, and the same tenement with the chattels to be in peace until the first assize, when our justices shall come into those parts, and in the meantime cause twelve free and lawful men of that visne to view that tenement, and their names to be put into the writ, and summon them by good summoners, that they be before the justices aforesaid, at the assize aforesaid, ready to make recognizance thereupon, and put by gages and safe pledges the aforesaid B., or, if he shall not be found, his bailiff, that he may be then there to hear that recognizance, &c. And have there the summoners, the names of the pledges, and this writ, &c.


Forcible Entry and Detainer
AT Common Law the Remedy for a Forcible Entry or a Forcible Detainer was not recognized as a Civil Action. When authorized by Statute, it originated as an incident
to a criminal prosecution of a Party who had used superior force in making entry upon land. The Remedy as thus developed took the form of a summary restitution of the land in question by the Justices of the or by Action of the Court of King’s Bench. This proceeding, under which the disseisee might be restored to his Land, was early used as a substitute for the more cumbersome and highly technical Real Actions, thus aiding in their gradual deterioration.

According to Blackstone a Forcible Entry consisted of violently taking possession of lands or tenements with force and arms and without authority of Law. And a Forcible Detainer consisted of keeping possession of lands and tenements in the same lawless manner. Both offenses were not only against the person turned out or kept out of possession, but were wrongs against the King.

As enacted and construed these English Statutes on Forcible Entry and Detainer furnished a Popular Remedy for a period of five hundred years. In 1879, the Statute of 8 Hen. VT, c. 9, 3 Statutes at Large 121 (1429) was repealed except as to its criminal provisions. And the Ancient English statutes regulating Forcible Entries and Detainers, in large measure, have been recognized or reenacted in most American States, with such modifications as might be necessary to meet local conditions, and as such have exerted an important influence on our Modern Procedure.

52. See Statute of 5 Rich. II, c. 7, 2 Statutes at Large 240 (1381).

53. See Statute of 5 Rich. II, c. 9, 2 Statutes at Large 121 (1429); 8 Hen. VI, c. 9, 3 Statutes at Large 272 (1623).
The Decline of the Real and Mixed Actions

**BY** reason of the large number of Writs in the Real Actions, by reason of the long, dilatory and highly technical character of the proceedings thereunder, together with the burdensome cost incidental to their prosecution; and finally, by reason of the almost imperceptible distinctions between many of them, with the passage of time, their Inadequacy as Remedies for the redress of alleged wrongs involving Title or Possession of Real Estate became evident. The Defects in the Proceedings involved in the various Real Actions and the abuses which grew up around them had originated in the Courts and for years had gone on uninterrupted by any attempt at Parliamentary Reform.

In the first quarter of the Nineteenth Century, as an incident of the general wave of Governmental Reform which swept over England, a Movement for Procedural Law Reform got under way. It is therefore not surprising to find that in 1833, by the Real Property Limitations Act,⁵ the Real and Mixed Actions, with few exceptions, were swept aside. The Statute provided that some sixty actions, specifically named,⁶ should not be brought after December 31, 1834.

⁵ 42 & 43 Vict. c. 59 (1879).
Sec. 11

MODERN REAL ACTIONS

53

The Modern Real Actions included Ejectment, Trespass to Try Title, Writs of Entry, Disseisin, Dower and Partition, and Forcible Entry and Detainer.

Ejectment, Trespass to Try Title, Writs of Entry, Disseisin, Dower and Partition, and Forcible Entry and Detainer.

The Action of Ejectment

WHEN it finally became clear that the so-called distinction between the Proprietary and Possessory Actions was largely illusory, that you could not Try Title without also trying possession, and that these Actions were needlessly technical and very expensive,

⁵ 03. 4 & 43 Vict. c. 59 (1879), Sec. 11

The Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 27, § 36 (1833).

The Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 27, § 36 provides that: ‘No writ of right patent, writ of right quæ dominus remisit curiam, wi-it of right in capite, writ of right In London, writ of right close, writ of right dō rationabilis parte, writ of right of advowson, writ Of right upon disclaimer, writ de rationabilibus divisis, writ of right of ward, writ de consuetudinis et serviti-is, writ of cessavit, writ of escheat, writ of quo jure, writ de seca ad molendum, writ de essendo quitium dē theolionio, writ of no injustice vexes, writ of mesne, writ of quod permittāt, writ of formedon in descender, in remainder, or In reverter, writ of o. ss.L—e of novel disseisin, nuisance, darrein presentment, Jane tūrum, or mort d'ancestor, writ of entry ait disseisim in the quibus, in the per, in the per and ciii, or in the post, writ of entry ear intrusion, writ of entry sur alienation dom fat non compons menus, dom fat infrā aera,” tam, dom fat in praisma, ad communem legent, in oaei proviso, in consimilī caris, ciii in vita, ear Ciii in Dita, ciii ante divorīum, or Siii ciii ante divorī

Exceptions were made Writ of Right of Dower, et undo nihil h-abet, and Impedit; the latter being preserved to try disputes about Advowsons, as Ejectment, which now came to be used in lieu of the abolished Real Actions, was inapplicable for such purposes. As a widow claiming dower could not institute an Action of Ejectment until after her dower had been set out,⁶⁶ the two Writs of Dower were temporarily preserved. In 1860, with the establishment of a New Statutory Form of Action to serve as a substitute, the Old Writs of Dower were abolished by the Common Law Procedure Act.⁶⁷ Also abolished by the same act was the Writ of Quære Impedit.

TUE MODERN REAL ACTIONS

11. The Modern Real Actions included

Ejectment, Trespass to Try Title, Writs of Entry, Disseisin, Dower and Partition, and Forcible Entry and Detainer.
06. For an explanation of the intricacies involved in claims for dower at Common Law, see Maitland, ‘The Forms of Action at Common Law, Lecture III, 36, 37 (Cambridge 1948).

01. 23 & 24 Vict, c. 126, § 26, 100 Statutes at Large

800 (1860).

in the case of a
a Writ of Dow-
a Writ of Quare
54

FORMS OF ACTION

Ch. 2

the slate was cleared for the entry of a far simpler, yet more Adequate Remedy for the redress of Wrongs to Title or Possession— the Action of Ejectment. This move by the Common-Law Courts was hastened by the threatened intervention of Chancery. And the change came about not by developing a New Remedy, but “by adapting the well known Process and Proceedings of Personal Actions to the Trial of Issues relating to ouster and disseisin from real estate.” – More specifically, the Action of Ejectment was developed out of the Writs of Quare Ejectit In Ira Terinimum and De Ejectione Firmae in favor of the owners of non-freehold estates. Through the use of the famous Fiction in Ejectment it ultimately became available to the holders of freehold estates as well, without violating the Common-Law theory that it could be used only to protect the possession of non-freehold estates. The details of this development will be set forth fully in the Chapter on the Action of Ejectment.°°

The Action, as thus developed by the Common Law, was excepted from the sweeping effect of the Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. TV, c.

27, § 36,73 Statutes at Large 149 (1833), and continued unchanged until 1852. Under the Common-Law Procedure Acts of 1852,~° 1854 ~ and 1860 the Procedure in the Action was simplified, the Fiction in Ejectment was abolished, so that the Action was directed to the person actually in possession of the property in dispute, or to any other person entitled to defend the Action, and it was provided that in the Default of Appearance such person would be dispossessed. If the

°°. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. V, Modern Real Actions, § 166 141 (St. Paul 1905).

69. See Chapter 10.

70. 15 & 16 Vict. c. 76, 92 Statutes at Large 285 (1852).

°°. 17 & 18 Vict. c. 125, 94 Statutes at Large 794 (1854).

defendant appeared, the Court made up an Issue, and the Case was tried according to the Principles of Ejectment as developed at Common Law. And so the Action continued until the Supreme Court of Judicature Act of 1873,~° under which the Action was “commenced by a Judicial Writ of Summons upon which the plaintiff indorses a Statement of his Claim with the Relief asked for, to which the defendant makes a Statement of his Defense. The Pleadings are governed by Rules of Court under General Orders made in 1883,”” Although the Remedy under this Act has lost its Earlier Form, it is still governed by the principles underlying the Action as Developed at Common Law. And this same Common-Law Action has been generally adopted, subject to modification in its Form and Procedure, as the generally recognized mode of Trying Title or possession in the Several States of the United States.

The Action of Trespass to Try Title

THE Action of Trespass to Try Title has been used in three states, Alabama, South Carolina and Texas.

Derived from the Action of Trespass Quai-e Clausem Fregit, it was first introduced by Statute in South Carolina in 1791,~° being substituted in the place of Ejectment. Mere possession was sufficient to support the Action as against a wrong-doer, but it was not sufficient as against one with a Superior Title. And, as in Trespass, the defendant might enter a Plea of liberuni tenementwnt, that is, that the land he entered upon was owned by
himself, or by some one under whose authority he acted, the defendant claimed that he had an immediate Right of Entry. Thus the Right of Entry came to be the Controlling Issue in the Action of Trespass, but recovery resulted only in a

73.36 & 37 Viet. c.68 (1873).

74.Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. V.
    Modern Real Actions, § 170, 143 (St. Paul 1905).


76. 23 & 24 Vict. c. 154, 100 stat, at Large 860 (1860).

Sec. 11

MODERN REAL ACTIONS

Judgment for Damages. This use of Trespass to Try Title was brought about by indorsing on the Writ of the Action for Trespass a notice that the Action was brought to Try Title, as well as for Damages. And if the entry had ousted the plaintiff, the plaintiff if successful, was entitled to a Writ of ilabere Facias Possessionem and Damages.

In modern times, Trespass to Try Title was long the accepted and exclusive Mode for Trial of disputed Titles. As developed there it was broader than Ejectment, being maintainable even on an Equitable Title, and available to Try Title irrespective of occupancy. In general, the Trial was governed by the principles of Trial by Ejectment, except where the Statute provided otherwise.

*Writs of Entry*

IN a modified Form, the Possessory Writ under this name, was adopted in Maine, Massachusetts and New Hampshire. In the two latter States at least a life estate was necessary to support the action. Generally, the Action was directed against the actual tenant of the land, but if the defendant ousted the demandant, the latter might treat the defendant as a disseisor, in order to try the right, although claiming an estate of less than a freehold.

Damages for Mesne Prof


72. Ala.code, 1852, 2209.


    Wyman v. Brown, 50 Me. 139 (1863).

its finally became recoverable in the Action in Massachusetts. Of course the Pleadings in the Action were greatly simplified over those which prevailed in England prior to the Era of Reform.

Writ of Disseisin

THE Writ of Disseisin long served in Connecticut as a substitute for the Common-Law Actions of the Writ of Right, the Writ of Entry and the Writ of Ejectment. It was commenced and prosecuted like a Personal Action, and was available only on the basis of a Legal Title. According to Martin, it resembled Ejectment closely and was frequently called by that name. But in 1888, the Action was superseded by a Statutory Form of Procedure.

Dower

UNDER the Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 27, § 36, 73 Statutes at Large 149 (1833), a Dower was one of the
Actions excepted from abolition. But resort to the Action became constantly less frequent because Chancery had long since intervened to exercise Concurrent Jurisdiction with the Law Court in protecting dower rights. And the flexibility of the Procedure in Equity gave it an increasing preference over the Remedy at Law. While in general the right to dower is governed by Statute which has superseded the Common Law, in the enforcement of such Statute, resort may still be had to Common Law and Equity for Remedial Relief, where, for any reason, the Statutes fail to cover the Point in Issue. In many States a Bill in Equity is had for Dower under which dower is admeasured, Damages are Assessed


84. Tyler, Ejeetment and Adverse Enjoyment, e. 37, 654 (Albany 1870).

85. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. V, Modern Real Actions, § 175, 147 (St. Paul 1905).


56

FORMS OF ACTION

as.
89. (1789).

(A)
(B)
(C)
(D)
(E)

Debt
Covenant
Account
Special Assumpsit
General Assumpsit

IRE MODERN PERSONAL ACTIONS

12. From the close of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth in 1603, the Ancient Real Actions suffered a decline with the consequence that the Modern Personal Actions emerged as a New System of Actions, eleven in number. FROM the middle of the Thirteenth Century to the Reign of Elizabeth (1558—1603), the Ancient Real and Mixed Actions, Proprietary and Possessory in Character, and what we now speak of as the Modern Personal Common-Law Actions, were developing along parallel lines. But from the close of Elizabeth’s Reign [1603] the Ancient Real Actions fell into a decline, with the Modern Common-Law Actions emerging as the principal System of Actions. These Personal Actions at Common Law for the Partition of

Partition

WITH the abolition of the Writ of Partition by the Statute of 3 & 4 Win. IV, c. 27 § 36, 73 Statutes at Large 149 (1833), Exclusivé Jurisdiction over Partition Proceedings fell to the Court of Chancery, a Juris-diction which it had exercised concurrently with the Law Courts since the days of Elizabeth (1558—1603) Y° In the Several States of the United States the Action of Partition at Common Law was never recognized in its Ancient Form. It was superseded by the Bill in Equity or some Form of Statutory Proceeding.” There were, of course, no Actions at Common Law for the Partition of
Actions were those brought for the Recovery of a Debt, the possession of specific personal property, Damages for the Breach of a Contract, or Damages for some injury to the person, or to one’s relative rights, or to personal or real property.

**Classification**

ACCORDING to the Nature of the Liability the Personal Actions are classified as:

(I) Actions Ex Contractu: The actions are based upon a contract or obligation:

(II) Actions Ex Delicto: These actions are brought for the redress of wrongs, and include also actions for the recovery of real and personal property:

(A) Trespass

(B) Trespass on the Case

(C) Trover

(D) Trover

(E) Detinue

(F) Replevin

MODERN PERSONAL ACTIONS

Personal Actions, as indicated in the Chart above, include Actions that are brought for the Recovery of a Debt, or for Damages for the Breach of a Contract, or for Tort, for some Injury to the Person, or to Relative Rights or to Personal or Real Property. The most common of these Actions are Debt, Covenant, Assumpsit, Detinue, Trespass, Trespass on the Case, Trover and Replevin.

Personal Actions are divided, according to their nature, into Actions *Ex Contractu* and Actions *Ex Delicto*. The former are Actions based upon a Contract, Express or Implied; while the latter are for injuries, the right to recover for which is not based upon Contract, but upon Tort. This attempt to distribute our Personal Forms under the two heads of Contract and Tort, as Maitland points out, has never been very successful or very important.  

Of the Forms of Action which have been enumerated above, the Action of Ejectment has been classified as a Real Action, as well as a Personal Action, as is indicated in the preceding section. In the classification of actions as *Ex Contractu* and *Ex Delicto*, some writers put Detinue on one side of the line and some on the other.

The above Classification of all Personal Actions as *Ex Contractu* or *Ex Delicto* cannot be supported on principle, for there are many duties imposed by Law, a Breach of which constitutes neither a Tort nor the violation of a Genuine Contract, as, for instance, the failure to pay a Debt imposed by Custom, Judgment or Statute. In some of these cases the Classification has been maintained by

---

90. *Eisphanj Principles of Equity*, Part III, c. IV.

91. See 21 Am. & Eng. Encycl. Law, 1144, 1145 (2d ed. 1902).

92. For the characteristic features of the remedy as used in the United States, see Martin, *Civil Procedure at Common Law*, c. V. *Modern Real Actions*, ~ 179. 151—iSS (St. Pau) 1905).

treatment the action as if arising on contract, although clearly not so arising. In others, the duty imposed by law so resembles the duty assumed by contract that they have for convenience been included in actions Ex Contractu.

The Decline of the Modern Personal Actions

The Personal Actions, which, in general were of later development than the real actions,—developed out of the action and interaction which, over a period of several centuries, took place between the chancery and the three royal superior courts without the aid of any legislative enactment, and included the actions of debt, covenant, account, detinue, replevin, trespass and ejectment; also trespass on the case, trover, special assumpsit and general assumpsit, the development of which, according to one view, was given considerable impetus, directly or indirectly, by the power granted to the chancery clerks by the statute of westminster ii (1285) while others have either minimized or discounted the effect of this statute on this development. as the old real and mixed actions declined these personal common-law actions naturally came into wider use. their supremacy and the procedures connected therewith long stood unchallenged. but in 1834, as an incident of a demand for improvement in legal procedure, the hilary rules were promulgated. they were designed to limit the scope of the various general issues in the actions, and to restore the ancient strict common-law theory that under a plea of the general

94. 13 edw. l. c. 24, 1 statutes at large 190 (1285).
95. promulgated pursuant to s & 4 wm. iv, c. 42, § 1,
73 statutes at large 272 (1833).
for the history and effect of the hilary rules in england, see article by holdsworth, the new rules of pleading of the hilary term, 1 cambridge l.j. 261 (1923); for the history and effect of the hilary rules in the several states of the united states, see reppy, the hilary rules and their effect on negative and affirmative pleas under modern codes and practice acts, 6 n.y.j.l.q.rev. 95 (1929).

58

Issue a defendant was restricted in his proof to offers of evidence having a logical tendency to deny the material allegations in the declaration, and he could not offer evidence of defenses going to dispute liability. but the effort did not stay the movement for reform. under the uniformity of process act, enacted in 1832, the process in the personal actions was made uniform. the old form of writ was abolished in favor of a new, statutory form, which, as a parting tribute to the old form, was characterized by the requirement that the pleadings should include by name one of the recognized forms of actions. a second assault upon the status of the personal actions came in 1852 when the common-law procedure act eliminated the requirements that the plaintiff should mention in any summons any form or cause of action. even so the personal forms of action as developed at common law remained substantially intact,

It was thus left for the final blow to be delivered by the supreme court of judicature act of 1873, and the rules promulgated under its authority, which was extended in 1875? this statute not only abolished the common-law forms of action; but, following the lead of the code reforms in the united states, undertook to wipe out the distinctions between law and equity, by establishing a single court with both law and equity jurisdiction, so that the question in england ceased to be whether a plaintiff had a cause of action at law or a suit in equity, and came to be one of whether he had a cause of action under the law of england.'

96. 2 wm. tv, c. 39, 72 statutes at large 115 (1832).
97. 15 & 16 vict., c. 76, 92 statutes at large 255 (1852).
98. 36 & 37 vict., c. 66 (1873).
99. 38 & 39 yhet., c. 77 (1875).
13. The Development of the Forms of Action, both Ancient and Modern, resulted in the Creation of a Formulary System of Procedure, under which each Form of Action came to stand for a more or less Specific Theory of Liability.

WITH a view of the Historical Development of the Common-Law Actions, Ancient and Modern in mind, it immediately becomes evident why any attempt to define what constitutes a “Form of Action,” in advance of such a survey, is practically meaningless. Thus, it now appears that the student, before attempting a definition, should realize that the Forms of Action were not created at one stroke out of pre-existing raw materials; that they grew over a period of Several Centuries; that there was more than One Set of Common-Law Actions—the Ancient Real and Mixed, and the Modern Personal Actions— the latter being almost completely substituted in lieu of the former after the Reformatory Legislation of 1833. It appears further that the student, as a condition precedent to an understanding of the Forms of Action, should first have some appreciation of the effect of the Norman Conquest in Centralizing Justice in the Crown; the organization and Development of the Superior-Common-Law Courts and their relation to the Local Courts and Franchises; the story of the Original Writ and its creation and effect; the dependence of Right upon Remedy; the connection between the Charge in the Original Writ and the Charge in the Declaration; the Power of Chancery to issue New Varieties of Original Writs; the effect of the Provisions of Oxford in 1258 in destroying Equitable Remedies based on earlier Common-Law Writs not of course, thus depriving the Common-Law Courts of the power to coerce obedience by orders in personam, and preparing the way for a vast expansion of Equity Jurisdiction; the various theories concerning the effect of the Statute of Westminster II (1283) upon the Writ System; the Classification of the Ancient Real Actions as Proprietary and Possessory; the ascendency and decline of the Ancient Real Actions; the Development of the Modern Real Actions; and finally, the emergence of the Modern Personal Common-Law Actions. Against this background only is it practicable for the student to draw any clear-cut conclusions as to what constitutes a “Form of Action.” The first step in this direction ought to be that of drawing the student’s attention to the distinctions between a “Form of Action” and a “Cause of Action”.

**A Cause of Action and a Form of Action Distinguished**

TO fully understand the Common-Law Forms of Action, the student must clearly distinguish between a Cause of Action and a Form of Action. At the very moment the first application was made to the Chancellor for the First Original Writ, it might be urged that there was no distinction, for until a sufficient number of Writs had been issued to develop a body of Substantive Law, no Cause of Action could exist except as an incident of the issuance of some Form of Writ. Once a given Writ had been used enough to find a secure place on the Register of Writs, it became one of a class known as the Writs of Course (brevja de cursu). Such Writs were issued as of course to any applicant upon the payment of the appropriate fee. Writs which were issued upon application to the Chancellor, and which required an exercise of discretion, were known as Magisterial Writs (brevia magistralia). This latter type of Writ in the beginning was often varied to meet the varying circumstances of the Cases disclosed in the plaintiff’s Petition for Relief. Bracton, in speaking of the early Common-Law Scheme of Remedial Action, observed, *Tot erunt formulae brevium quod stinn genera actionum*. There may be as many Forms of Action as there are Causes of Action. As he conceived the matter the Remedy (remedium) was in exact equilibrium with jus, or, as of then, where there was a Right of Action there was a Form of Action to vindicate an Alleged Wrong. Bracton’s view was justified, for as yet, Form was the servant and had not become the master; Form had only served as a procedural device for securing conciseness in the statement of the Grounds of Action. However this may be, the net result of the issuance of Writs of Course and Magisterial Writs was to develop a well-defined body of Substantive Law.
And once such a body of Substantive Law had been developed, the distinction between a Cause of Action and a Form of Action became vitally important if the plaintiff was to be successful in the statement of his Cause of Action. Thus, conceivably, it might be possible for a plaintiff to select the correct Form of Action to fit the particular combination of facts or events presented in his Case and yet, by failure to include in his Declaration one of the Allegations required by the Substantive Law as essential to the statement of his Cause of Action, he might utterly fail in the enforcement of his right. To illustrate, if A ousted B from Blackacre, the proper Form of Action for B to institute would be Ejectment. Since, however, under the Substantive Law of Real Property B was required to allege Title, Ouster and Damages in order to state a good Cause of Action in Ejectment, failure on B’s part to allege Title would result in a failure to state a good Cause of Action. And the fact that B has selected the Correct Form of Action—Ejectment—would not save his Cause. If, however, the plaintiff had stated all the Allegations required by the Substantive Law of Real Property as essential to the Statement of a Cause of Action in Ejectment, but had selected as his Form of Action Trespass to 2. 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, C. III, 29 (Northport 1900).

FORMS OF ACTION

Real Estate, he still would have met with defeat. The phrase “Cause of Action,” therefore, depends upon and is prescribed by the Substantive Law applicable to the Specific Facts of the Particular Case, whereas the phrase “Form of Action” goes to the Theory of Liability, that is, the plaintiff must state the Combination of Facts or Events on which he relies in such a manner as to invoke one of the categories of liability represented by what we call a “Form of Action.” In other words it is descriptive of the technical Mode of Framing the Writ and Pleadings appropriate to the injury and to the theory of liability. Failure on the part of the plaintiff to achieve this end meant that his Action was dismissed. The plaintiff may therefore have failed for either of two reasons, first, because he had omitted from the Statement of his Cause of Action an Allegation required by the Substantive Law as essential to his Cause of Action; or second, because he has not presented his Cause of Action in the category of liability as called for by a Specific Form of Action. Selecting a “Form of Action,” then had to do with a theory of liability, it merely involved a selection of those Allegations required by the Substantive Law as essential to the Statement of a Specific Cause of Action.3

The Practical Importance of Distinguishing Between the Different Forms of Action

IN Maitland’s famous book on the Forms of Action at Common-Law,4 he attempts, at the inception of his treatment, to explain or define the Forms of Action by pointing out that the choice between the various Forms of Action—Novel Disseisin, Mort d’Ancestor, Writ of Entry, Quare Impedit, Covenant, Debt, Detinue, Replevin, Trespass, Ejectment, Case and Assumpsit—“is a choice between Methods of Procedure adapted to Cases of different kinds”. With the greatest deference to such a distinguished scholar, exception must be taken to this statement. It is rather, as previously observed above, a choice between different theories of liability as represented by the various Forms of Action. Pursuing his thought, Professor Maitland suggests, quite properly, that there were incidental differences between the different Forms of Action with respect to:

(I) Jurisdiction of the Courts.—Under this heading Professor Maitland observes that in most Civil Cases each of the Three Royal Courts was equally competent as to Jurisdiction, an end made possible by the use of a Fiction previously explained.~

(II) Process.—Here it is pointed out that sometimes the defendant’s Appearance is compelled by a Summons and sometimes he may be Attached; or he may be forced to find gage and pledge for his Appearance. In at least one action, the Assize of Novel Disseisin, his bailiff might be Attached.

3. Id. at 8, 9, 10.
4. The Forms of Action at Common Law, Lecture 1, 2, 3, 4 (Cambridge 1948).
In the event the defendant proves contumacious may one have his body seized, or, if he cannot be found, may he be outlawed? This barbaric Mode of Procedure was not applicable in all Forms of Action, although the tendency was in that direction. And the seizure of the thing in dispute varied with the Form of Action chosen.

(III) Pleading.—With respect to this topic, it is suggested that each Form of Action has some Rules which are peculiar to it; that is that the General Issue in each Form is different, as for example, Nil Debet in Debt, Non Assumpsit in Special Assumpsit, Not Guilty in Trespass to Realty, and in others Nul Tort or Nul Disseisin.

(IV) Judgment by Default.—Here the question is raised as to whether a Judgment may be obtained against an Adversary who is persistent in his contumacy, to which the answer seems Yes in some Forms of Action and No in others.

(V) Mode of Trial.—By the time the Forms of Action had reached a Status of Maturity, the chief Mode of Trial was by Jury. But there might be a Trial by a Grand or Petty Assize, and, of course, in an earlier time it was still possible that the issue could be determined by Trial by Battle. And finally, observes Professor Maitland, a few Issues were treated by the Judges who heard Witnesses.

(VI) Judgment.—If the plaintiff secures a Judgment how may it be enforced? On Execution may the plaintiff be placed in possession of the property in dispute? May the defendant be imprisoned or outlawed, or may he only be distrained? In addition to satisfying the plaintiff’s demand, may he also be punished for his violation of the Law, and if so, what shall be the nature of such punishment—an Amercement, a Fine or Imprisonment? These may differ with the Form of Action.

(VIE) Dilatory Character of Some Actions.—Some actions were susceptible to greater delay than others. Thus, in the Oldest Forms personal appearance of the parties was required, Attorneys being appointable by the King’s permission. Such Actions were subject to great delay, every type of excuse being allowed for the non-appearance, a short or a long Essoin being granted, as of course, there being no discretion. Again, in the Older Forms, an Essoin might be granted under which a party might betake himself to his bed for a year and a day, during which period of time the Action was Suspended.

(VII) Measure of Damages and the Period of Limitations.—To the above we may add that the Measure of Damages differed, depending upon what choice of Action was made, and, of course, the Statutes of Limitations varied according as the Form of Action fell in the Contract, Property or Tort Field.

Having concluded his story of the incidental differences between the different Forms of Action, Professor Maitland declares that “a Form of Action” implies “a particular Original Process, a particular Mesne Process, a particular Final Process, a particular Mode of Pleading, of Trial, of Judgment. But further to a very considerable degree the Substantive Law administered in a given Form of Action has grown up independently of the Law administered in other Forms. Each procedural pigeon-hole contains its own Rules of Substantive Law, and it is with great caution that we may argue from what is found in one to what will probably be found in another; each has its own Precedents. It is quite possible that a litigant will find that his Case will fit some two or three of these pigeon-holes. If that be so, he will have a choice, which will often be a choice between the old, cumbrous, costly, on the one hand, the modern, rapid, cheap, on the other. Or again he may make a bad choice, fail in his Action, and take such comfort as he can from the hints of the Judges that another Form of Action might have been more successful. The plaintiff’s choice is irrevocable; he must play the rules of the game that he has chosen. Lastly he may find that, plausible as his Case may seem, it just will not fit any one of the receptacles provided by the Courts and he may take to himself the lesson that where there is no Remedy there is no Wrong.”

It may be admitted, as Professor Maitland says, that the Formulae of Pleading the Cause of Action and
Defense, and even the Methods of Trial, Judgment and Execution, varied with the different Forms of Action. But this was not so in the beginning; it was not and could not be so until enough Writs had been issued to create the Forms of Action and a body of Substantive Law; these Forms of Action were not the product of a classificatory process that was or could be applied to pre-existing materials. Drawing up a description of the incidental differences between the different Forms of Action or setting up a Classification of the Forms of Action after the fact may serve the purpose of assisting in the identification of the Actions as finally developed or it might have aided the Lawyer as a guide in the selection of a Form of Action, but neither of these steps seems calculated to define a Form of Action, or to aid a beginning student in understanding what constitutes a Form of Action prior to the time he has traced the step-by-step process by which these Forms of Action finally assumed Definitive Form. A list of the incidents of the Forms of Action and an effort at classification both necessarily come after the fact of Development became a reality. And all this merely emphasizes that a choice between the Various Forms of Action was a choice between different theories of liability, and not a choice between different Methods of Procedure or relief. It was the theory of liability which was the keynote in Selecting a Form of Action and not the Incidental Differences in Procedure. The proof of that is that when, under our Modern Codes, these incidental differences in Procedure were removed and, under the Single, Formless Form of Action, all the Procedure in all Actions was reduced to uniformity, the Forms of Action remained. Thus, if $B$ converted $A$'s watch, $A$ was no longer to sue in the Form of Action formerly known as Trover, but in order to State a Good Cause of Action in the Nature of an Action on the Case, he was required to allege Possession or Right to Possession, Act of Conversion, and Damages. The essential differences in the Forms of Action were therefore in the Allegations necessary to show the Right of Action, in each Form, or to invoke the correct theory of liability represented in the selection of a Specific Form of Action; the incidents of Procedural Difference probably developed in point of time long after the theory of liability had assumed its full play, in each Form of Action. The Law of the Forms of Action, therefore, is not the Law of Pleading and Practice, although the two are so intimately associated that it is easy to miss the distinction.

The Misco'itection of the Forms of Action

As an incident of the development of the Forms of Action, Two Inflexible Rules of Pleading grew up, first that the Charge in the Declaration must conform to the Charge in the Original Writ; second, that the Charge proved at the Trial must conform to the Charge in the Declaration. Such Rules originated out of the fact that the Jurisdiction of a Specific Court was limited to the identical case as authorized by the Original Writ and developed by the Declaration. The same conformity was required in respect of the legal principle invoked, and not only in respect of the Facts alleged. Thus, as to Matters of Fact, the Proof must correspond with the Facts alleged; if the plaintiff Charges in his Declaration that the defendant took a black horse, and at the Trial offers evidence that the defendant took a white horse, he cannot succeed as he is guilty of a Variance between the Charge in the Declaration and the Proof at the Trial, which could be taken advantage of by a Motion For a Nonsuit. For a Variance between the Declaration and the Original Writ, a Plea in Abatement was the proper procedural device. A Variance between the Declaration and the Proof occurs when the plaintiff has misunderstood the actual state of Facts or has over-estimated his ability to prove what he alleged.

But a plaintiff may still lose although he knows the Facts of his case and is able to sustain the Burden of Proof; he may lose because of a mistake as to the legal effect of his Facts and as to the Legal Doctrine applicable thereto. Thus, suppose A charges

\[ \text{Sec. 13} \]

\[ \text{The Missouri Practice} \]

\[ \text{EFFECT OF DEVELOPMENT} \]

$B$ with conduct which he supposes amounts to a trespass when, as a matter of Substantive Law, the wrong in
question actually creates a debt or amounts to no more than a conversion without a Trespass. If A in error sues B in Trespass, stating a case within the Law applicable to Trespass, it would constitute a glaring departure from true procedural principle to allow the plaintiff to recover for the debt or the proved conversion. In such a situation the plaintiff failed, because the Pledger, by the Form of Action in which he stated his case invoked a theory of liability or principle of Law relating to trespasses, whereas his right to recover was referable to an entirely distinct Doctrine of Law as represented by the Action of Trover. It follows therefore that the case proved is in legal implication entirely different from that Stated in the Declaration. The same principle operates where, in an Action of Trover, the plaintiff fails in his Proof of a conversion but succeeds in establishing a trespass, and hence plaintiff fails to recover, as he is relying upon a theory of liability for conversion which has no application to Trespass; likewise, where the plaintiff alleges Trover, but merely shows that the defendant permitted the goods to spoil; under the Form of the Action of Trover, the theory is one of liability for a conversion, but the true theory of liability is one for negligence which invokes another doctrine of law entirely different in origin and in theory from that invoked by the Action of Trover. So, if the plaintiff brings Debt against the defendant


The mistake made by suing in a Form of Action which expresses a theory of liability not available in the case which the plaintiff has stated and proved is known as a Misconception of the Form of Action. Such a Defect is one of Substance, and has been insisted upon as a Fatal Defect, as it has been the policy of the Courts to preserve the Distinctions Between the Actions, which in fact merely amounts to the observance of the differences between the distinct theories of liability or principles of Law.

The History of the Forms of Action is the History of Substantive Law

THE Rules of the Substantive Law of Contract, Property and Tort have been evolved by inquiring in a myriad of specific instances whether the Combination of Facts or


15. It was in this very connection that Sir Henry Maine observed that the Boles of Substantive Law had the appearance of being “secreted In the Interstices of Procedure.” Maine, Early Law and Custom, 359 (New York, 1886). (1591). Koffler & RepycomLaw Pltg., H.B.—4

Events of the plaintiff’s case were covered by any recognized theory of liability, as represented by a Particular Form of Action. The primary question before the Courts was not one of whether the plaintiff in the statement of his case had alleged a right in him, a violation of that right by the defendant, and Damages. It has been rather,
whether the Operative Facts presented constituted a Cause of Action which fit into the theory of liability as represented by some Specific Form of Action, such as Assumpsit, or Trespass. This was neither a Matter of Pleading nor of Procedure generally; it was a question of Remedial Right, the existence of the Right being dependent upon the existence of a Remedy.

From this it may be inferred that the list -of Original Writs not only determined the Jurisdiction of the Royal Superior Common-Law Courts, but it determined the existence of Remedial Rights and Liabilities. Long after the Original Writs ceased to be essential to authorize the Courts to act in a specific case, the Judges felt impelled to consider the case exactly as if it had been begun by an Original Writ and to govern the exercise of their Jurisdiction according to the recognized occasions of Remedy. Even though the Writs became in time a mere formality, and were superseded as the Method of Commencing the Action, the Principle of Jurisdiction remained as if still actually governed by the Original Writ, and the theories of liability, as if represented by the various Forms of Action, were still observed as being the sole occasion of remedial intervention.\(^\text{10}\)

The list of Original Writs as recorded in Chancery or as they appeared in the Regis

16. “The Writs were like doors to the King’s Courts; there was one for big dogs and a smaller one for little dogs; there were doors for yellow dogs and black dogs, and the door of Case for mongrel curs of no particular breed, but lust plain dogs.” Ship. man, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, 60, a 11 (St. Paul 1923).

Ch. 2

Imm Brevum\(^\text{7}\) was not a reasoned or well-rounded Scheme of Remedial Justice; it was not the product of a skilled Legislator selected by providence to calmly devise theorems of Remedial Rights for all conceivable wrongs. Nor was this list the result of a rational Classification of Theories of Liability or of Causes of Action according to the character of the Rights and claims to be presented; the Forms of Action, representing Theories of Liability, were relatively few and arbitrary, when measured by the myriads of human situations in which human beings were bound to be seeking some Form of Remedial Relief. Nor were the Theories of Liability as seen in the Forms of Action comprehensive and logical; they just grew; yet the stream of rights flowed down these channels, with the well recognized result that the history of these Theories of Liability is the History of the Development of English Substantive Law. Thus when Glanvill and Bracton wrote concerning the Law of England they were compelled to write about the Writs, as the Law could only be found in their interstices. In their thy this involved the Forms of Action known as the Ancient Proprietary and Possessorial Real Actions; in a later or more modern day a discussion of Debt, Covenant, Account or Assumpsit, is necessarily a discussion of the development of the Law of Contracts; that of Trespass and Case is a discussion of the Law of Torts; that of Detinue, Replevin, Ejectment and Trover is usually a discussion of Property; in short, a History of the Forms of Action, both Ancient and Modern, would fall little short of a Complete History of the Common Law. Had the authority of the Clerks in Chancery been less restricted in their practice of issuing New Writs and had the Judges been more liberal in extending the Remedial Scope of the various Forms of Action,


EFFECT OF DEVELOPMENT

Sec. 13

and particularly the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law—the Action of Trespass on the Case—their Remedies might have effectually answered many of the purposes of a Court of Equity and thus made its creation unnecessary.

The Law was required to express itself through the Limited System of Writs and Forms of Action sanctioned by precedent, and little discretion was left to the Judge. The Common Law, thus hampered and restricted was found insufficient to meet certain demands for Justice; a distinct Tribunal arose, so it is said, to supply the
deficiencies of the Common Law and to give Justice where the Common Law Remedies were inadequate, namely, the Court of Chancery, which in legal theory gave a Remedy where there was a right, on principles of natural justice, to meet the exigencies as they arose, so that no wrong should exist without a remedy. Aside from the soundness of these last observations concerning the Supplementary Functions of Equity, it is clear that the Classification and Definition of the Different Species of Contracts and Tarts, even at the present day, are based on the historic distinction between the different theories of liability as represented by the Forms of Action and the Remedies available thereunder. The test of the existence of liability and of the amount of Damages due may depend upon whether one Form or another is applicable. It follows, therefore, that in order to understand the intricacies of the Law, it is necessary to approach it by the study of the various theories of Remedial Right available under the Forms of Action at Common Law which have been recognized by the Courts. Or, to put the matter in a broader way, practically all of our Modern Substantive Contract, Property and Torts Law, had its origin in and developed out of the Theories of Liability represented by the Forms of Action and the Procedural Incidents thereto.

The Phrase “Form of Action” Defined

WITH the distinction between a Cause of Action and a Form of Action in mind, with some understanding of the different Doctrines of the Different Actions, with some comprehension of what constitutes a Misconception of a Form of Action, as well as the knowledge that the History of the Forms of Action is the History of Substantive Law, we are at last ready to attempt to define a “Form of Action.”

The phrase “Form of Action” has been defined as the “technical Mode of Framing the Writ, and Pleadings appropriate to the particular injury”, as the Method of Procedure adapted to a specific kind of case. Nothing could be farther from the truth. The law governing Forms of Action is not the Law of Pleading or Procedure, though it is closely associated therewith. The choice of One Form of Action over Another is primarily a choice between different Theories of Substantive Liability, and the Scope of the Various Actions measures the existence and extent of liability at Common Law. In other words the Cause of Action had to fit the Theory of Liability as represented by a Specific Form of Action. And this remained true even when the incidental differences in procedure were removed, and the Procedure in All Actions was reduced to uniformity. Thus, after England and most states abolished the necessity of choosing one of these specified theories in Commencing an Action, the Forms of Action remained in substance. “The Forms of Action we have buried.” Yet, though we have buried them, observes Professor Maitland, “they still rule us from their graves.”

The names and the boundaries of the Forms of Action as they existed at Common Law still indicate the Recognized


FORMS OF ACTION

Causes of Action, the occasions of liability, and the starting point of legal doctrine. The essential differences were in the Allegations of Fact necessary to show the Right of Action in each Form; in other words, in their respective grounds and theories of liability. And this is true even under the Code. Some cases may fall under two or three of these theories of liability, and a litigant will have a choice or Election between them.

By way of summary then, it may be asserted that a “Form of Action” is not a choice between Methods of Procedure or Relief; it is not to be confused with a Cause of Action; it is not a General Demand for Relief based on a Specific Wrong as might be made under a Non-Formulary system of procedure. Rather a “Form of Action” may be defined as a Procedural Device whereby the primitive mind gave concrete expression to a theory of liability; it is a mechanism through which the doctrine or principle of Law applicable to the Statement of a Plaintiff’s Cause of Action may be enforced; it provides a scheme whereby it may be determined whether the plaintiff’s alleged Cause of Action fits into any judicially recognized Theory of Liability; it is a device, an incidence of the existence of which determines the Formulae of Pleading the Cause of Action and Defence, the Method of Proof and Trial, and the Judgment and Execution, these varying with each Form of Action; it is the Frame within which a
plaintiff could suggest the facts constituting his Claim for Relief in accordance with the appropriate Rule of Substantive Law applicable thereto; and finally, it is the mechanism through which an unnamed short, but not unidentifiable Charge in the Original Writ—the keynote of the Form of Action—is, through the Statement of the

so. “While the New Rules have abolished the distinctive Common-Law Forms, the essential and differentiating Rules applicable to Pleading as established at Common Law are now to be a Basis of Remedial Law.” Minturn, S., In Ward v. Huff, 94 N.J.L. 81, 84, 109 A. 287, 288 (1920).

Substantive Facts in the Declaration, converted into an enforceable liability, the Declaration as finally developed being but an amplification of the Original Writ, “with the additional circumstances of time and place” set forth in a more narrative and spacious form.

The Mode of Pleading Under Modern Codes and Practice Acts

The Forms of Action as finally developed are usually associated and discussed with Common Law Pleading, but they relate to the Substantive Law of Contract, Property and Tort rather than to Procedure. Forms of Action are the recognized Theories of Liability through which the Common Law Rights of Action have been evolved, classified and formulated. As such they are much more important than any mere Rules of Pleading. The abolition of the requirement of selecting a particular one of these theories of liability has emancipated Pleading from arbitrary Variations of Procedure in different kinds of Actions. While necessarily the Rights and Liabilities and Defenses depend on Substantive Law, only the manner in which the Claim or Defense shall be set forth depends upon Rules of Pleading, which are made the same for All Actions in Modern Procedure. But there are still many Code States which insist that the Pleader shall select and adhere to some Theory of Liability in stating his Cause of Action.

The Forms of Action, and the necessity of choosing between them, have been abolished by the Codes in the Several States, following the pattern set by the New York Code of Procedure of 1848.23 Thus, in New York,


St. Shipman, ffandbook of Common Law Pleading, 56, ii. 5 (St. Paul 1923); Albertsworth, The Theory of the Pleadings in Code States, 10 Calif.LRev. 202 (1922), reprinted in 94 CentLJ. 389, 400 (1922).

22. New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, § 103 (a) (1968), contains this provision.

“there is only one Form of Civil Action. The distinctions between Actions at Law and Suits in Equity, and the Forms of those Actions and Suits, have been abolished.” In the famous New York case of Goulet v. Asseler,25 in reference to this type of Statute Abolishing the Forms of Action, Selden, J., observed: “Although the Code [of Procedure] has abolished all distinction between the mere Forms of Action, and every Action is now in Form a Special Action on the Case, yet Actions vary in their Nature, and there are intrinsic differences between them which No Law can abolish. It is impossible to make an Action for a direct aggression upon the plaintiff’s rights, by taking and disposing of his property, the same thing, in Substance.

23. N.Y.Laws 1845, c. 379.

Sec. 13

EFFECT OF DEVELOPMENT

“there is only one Form of Civil Action. The distinctions between Actions at Law and Suits in Equity, and the Forms of those Actions and Suits, have been abolished.” In the famous New York case of Goulet v. Asseler,25 in reference to this type of Statute Abolishing the Forms of Action, Selden, J., observed: “Although the Code [of Procedure] has abolished all distinction between the mere Forms of Action, and every Action is now in Form a Special Action on the Case, yet Actions vary in their Nature, and there are intrinsic differences between them which No Law can abolish. It is impossible to make an Action for a direct aggression upon the plaintiff’s rights, by taking and disposing of his property, the same thing, in Substance.

24. New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, § 103 (a) (1968), contains this provision.

or in Principle, as an Action to recover for the consequential injury resulting from an improper interference with the property of another, in which he has a contingent or prospective interest. The mere Formal Differences between such Actions are abolished; the Substantial Differences remain as before. The same Proof, therefore, is required in each of these Two Kinds of Actions, as before the Code, and the same Rule of Damages applies.”

In many of the States which retain the Forms of Action, the Common Law Forms have been combined or modified by Statute. In Massachusetts, actions were Classified as either in Contract or Tort, while in
Michigan, at one time at least, Contract Actions were all called Assumpsit, and Tort Actions for Damages were called Trespass on the Case.

27. See, also In this connection the New Jersey case of ward v. Huff, 94 N.J.L. 81 at 84, 109 A. 287 at 288 (1920).

PART TWO

OFFENSIVE PLEADING—GENERAL

CONSIDERATIONS

CHAPTER 3

THE COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

14. The Court.
15. Jurisdiction of Courts.
17. Service—Personal and Constructive.
18. The Appearance.
19. The Pleadings.

HAVING developed the view that Common-Law Pleading still survives as the basis of Modern Remedial Law, and having traced the Development of the Forms of Action, both Ancient and Modern, we may now turn our attention to the system of Offensive Pleadings as developed by Common-Law Procedure.

In its broadest scope, Procedure has to do with Pleading, Practice and Evidence; the steps by which proceedings are conducted in

1. In general, on the Commencement of an Action at Common Law, see:


Decision: West v. Ratledge, 15 ItO. 31 (1835), the several Courts. It deals with: (1) The Courts; (2) The Jurisdiction of the Courts— in which Court an Action must be brought, and the Authority of the Court over the subject-matter; (3) The Process or Summons to acquire Jurisdiction of the Cause and to compel the Defendant’s Appearance; (4) The Pleadings, the formal Statements of Claim on one side and of Defense or Replies thereto on the other; (5) The Examination of the Issues of Law after argument upon Demurrer; (6) The Trial of Issues of Fact joined in the Pleadings; (7) The Judgment or Award of the Cause with respect to the nature and amount of relief to be given, the great object of which all prior proceedings have led up to; (8) The Final Process of Execution, which enforces the Award or Relief by intervention of ministerial or executive officers; and lastly (9) The Review on Motion
for a New Trial, a Writ of Error, a Bill of Exceptions, or on a Mod
er Statutory Appeal, to correct errors which
may have arisen. First, then, a word about the Courts, which administered the Common-Law.

Sec. 14

THE COURT

THE COURT

14. A Court is a tribunal duly constituted, and present at the time and place fixed by Law for Judicial
Investigation and Determination of Controversies. And there are Courts of General and Special
Jurisdiction, Courts of Original and Appellate Jurisdiction and Courts of Record and Not of Record. The
procedure under which these Courts operate may be governed by Legislative Rules or Rules of Court, the
modern tendency being in the direction of the latter method.

_In General_

WHEN a client consults a lawyer concerning some controversy in which he is involved, what he
wishes to know is whether he has a civil action against his adversary. “A civil action at Common Law is a
proceeding in a Court of Justice for the purpose of obtaining redress for the violation of a legal right.” ~ If,
after an analysis of the Facts of the client’s case, the lawyer decides that he has a Cause of Action, then he
must determine what Court has Jurisdiction over the supposed action. Therefore, before considering the
Problem of Jurisdiction, it may be well to inquire as to what is a Court? According to .Anderson’s Law
Dictionary the word “Court”
originally could signify only a yard or palace, and according to Cowel it meant the house where the King
remained with his retinue; also the place where Justice was administered. In early Anglo-Saxon and
Anglo-Norman times it referred to the place of the King’s domicile as the King was the fountain-head and
Dispenser of Justice. During this primitive period of development


‘An Action Is nothing else but a lawful demand of right.” Borne, The Mlrour of Justices, c. II, Of ActIons, 74 (With an
Introduction by William 0. Robinson, Washington, 1). 0., 1003). See, also, Cohens ‘ce Virginia, 19 U.S. (6 Wheat.) 264 at 407, 408
(1821).


the Courts were popular assemblages held in the courtyard of the baron or of the King himself by those whose
duty it was to appear at stated times or upon Summons. With this idea in mind Blackstone defined a Court as “a
place where Justice is Judicially Administered,” and at least one American Court accepted his definition. But it
has been regarded as too narrow, it being concluded that a Court is a tribunal duly constituted and present
at the time and place fixed by law for Judicial Investigation and Determination of Controversies. And it
has sometimes been regarded as an incorporeal thing requiring for its existence the’ presence of a Judge. It
should, however, be understood that the Court does not consist of the Judge or Judges as individuals, but
only when at the proper time and place they are exercising their Judicial powers. And there are different
kinds of Courts, as, for example, when viewed from the standpoint of Jurisdiction,

_Different Kinds of Courts_

THUS, Courts may be either one or two descriptions—of General Jurisdiction or of Special Jurisdiction.
As classified in this manner, it is observed that a Court with General Jurisdiction is one which has all the
power which a Superior Court of the Common Law had, and it may hear a wide variety of cases. A Court of
Special Jurisdiction is one whose Jurisdiction is limited by Constitution or Statute and hence may only hear
and decide specific cases. When the Court is one of General Jurisdiction, its Jurisdiction is presumed and
need not be expressly asserted by the plaintiff; but when the Jurisdiction is
5. 3 Commentaries on the Laws of England, c. III, Of
Courts in General, 23 (7th S. Oxford, 1775).


7. 8 Am. & Eng. Enc. of Law, 22 (Northport, 1808).


5. In a Steele. 156 F. 853 (D.C.Ala.1907).

70

COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

limited, the plaintiff has the burden of establishing the Court’s Jurisdiction.

A Court may also be either of Original or of Appellate Jurisdiction. Original Jurisdiction consists of a
Court’s authority to decide a case in the first instance; and Appellate Jurisdiction consists of the Court’s
authority to review and correct the errors alleged to have been committed by a lower or Subordinate Court. To
put the matter another way, the Court of Original Jurisdiction is a Trial Court, readily accessible to the people
in such locality where the witnesses are heard and a Judgment is rendered, whereas a Court of Appellate
Jurisdiction acts upon the Record made in the lower Court; it is farther removed from the people and among its
purposes is not only that of reviewing the errors of inferior Courts, but also that of bringing uniformity in
the law throughout the territory over which it exercises Appellate Jurisdiction.

Courts may also be either of record or not of record. The former includes Courts in which the
proceedings therein are recorded on parchment for a perpetual memorial and testimony, the Records of
which may be offered in other Courts as conclusive evidence of the facts stated. whereas the latter refers to a
Court whose Records are not so regarded in other Courts, or at most are regarded only as prima fade evidence
of the facts stated therein. By Statute in some states the Statute of Limitations on a Judgment of Record is
twenty years; on a Judgment of a Court not of Record six years.

JURISDICTION OF COURTS

Jurisdiction depends upon authority over the subject-matter and over the parties.

IN general, Jurisdiction is the power of a Court to hear cases and decide them by pro.

9. See Rep L, Introduction to Civil Procedure, e. II, The Commencement of an Action, ~ 1, Preliminary Matters, Note 2 (Buffalo,

10. mid.

11. Ibid.

nouncing Judgment. And the power to render Judgment depends: (1) upon Jurisdiction over the subject-matter of the
action or of the class of cases; and (2) upon Jurisdiction over the parties.

Derivation of Jurisdiction

THE Judicial Powers and the Jurisdiction of the Courts of the States and of the United States are in
general derived from their respective Constitutions and are further defined and fixed by Statutes enacted
thereunder. Such Written Law prescribes the Nature of the Causes that may be brought within the
cognizance of the respective Courts. In England, however, and by way of contrast, the source of the power
and authority of the Common Law Courts to afford the relief asked was anciently the Original Writ, a
delegation from the King in each instance. Such a Writ was the warrant of authority under which a particular
Common Law Court took cognizance of the cause. In course of time the Jurisdiction of the Law Courts became
fixed and established as to those matters in which Writs were demandable of common right. In time, however,
Original Writs fell out of use as a regular means of Commencing an Action. Nonetheless they left behind
them a dearly defined Jurisdiction and the limited system of remedies under the Forms of Action, each of
which will be considered in detail.

The Problem of Jurisdiction in England and America Distinguishes

IN approaching the Problem of Jurisdiction of American Courts, the student is faced with
complications not present under the English System. In England a precedent once established on a particular subject became the Law of the land, whereas in the United States, each State had an independ


Section 16

PROCесс—THE ORIGINAL WRIT

It Original ‘Process” is any Writ or notice by which a defendant is called upon to

19. In general, on the history and development of the Original Writ, see:

Treatises: Reritus Brevium (London, 1519); Matura Brevium (London, 1584); Itegistrum Crevium (London, 1595); Jloylo, An Exact Book of Entries of the Most Select Judicial Writs Used in the common Law (London, 16.58); Hughes, Comments Upon Original Wrists (London,
1662); Brownlow, Brevia JutEclaim, or Collection of Approved Forms of All Sorts of Judicial Writs in the Common Bench (London, 1662); Townsend, Tables to Most of the Printed Precedents of Pleadings, Writs and Return of Writs, at the Common Law (London, 1667). Antrobus & Impey, Brevia Selecta, or Choice Writs (London, 1675); Offleina Brevium, Select and Approved Forms of Judicial Writs and Other Process, with their Returns and Entries in the Court of Common Pleas (London, 1679); Jus Filizrii, or The Filacer's Office in the Court of King's Bench. Setting Forth the Practice by Original Writ (London, 1684); Theobald, Los Digest des Briefs Originals et des Choises Concernernts Eur (London, 1687); Cornwall, Tables of Precedents of Pleadings, Writs, &c., at the Common Law: being a Continuation from Mr. Townsend's Tables (London, 1705); Spottiswood, An Introduction to the Knowledge of Stile of Writs, Simple and Compound, Made Use of in Scotland (Edin 18. Ibid. 72

**COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION**

 appear and answer the plaintiff's Declaration. The Commencement of an Action at Common Law was formerly by Original Writ. Judicial Process was by Summons, Attachment, Arrest or Outlawry.

**In General**

**ACCORDING to Miller,** in practically all Systems of Procedure, the Parties to an Action are entitled to be heard or to have an opportunity to be heard, before the Judicial Machinery of a State becomes operative. In the United States, under both State and Federal Constitutions, due process of law requires due notice and an opportunity to be heard.° It follows, therefore, that in order to Commence an Action, it is highly essential that the defendant shall have due notice and an opportunity to present his version of the controversy. This was the primary function of Judicial Process in its various forms.

**Original Writ**

AT Common Law, as previously observed, an action was begun by suing an Original Writ out of Chancery, in the King's name, which served the purpose of ordering the Sheriff to give the defendant notice, determined the character of the action, and authorized a specific Court to hear the cause. Substituted in lieu of the Original Writ, the Modern Summons is also issued in the name of the Sovereign, and is directed against the defendant. Although the Summons does not have all of the attributes of the Original Writ, it does serve as an effective instrument for Commencing an Action. With these comments in mind, we may now consider the varieties of Judicial Process by which Jurisdiction over the parties to an action may be acquired.

**Commencement of an Action in Modern Practice**

IN Modern Practice the Original Writ is no longer used either as authority for instituting an action, or for the purpose of compelling appearance by the defendant, though in some of our states the term is retained to designate the process that has taken its place. No Writ at all is necessary for instituting actions, and the Writ of Summons is used as a means of notifying the defendant of the suit and ordering him to appear in Court. The practice is very generally, if not entirely, regulated by Statutes, varying somewhat from State to
State.

The general practice is for the attorney, in Commencing an Action, to draw up, sign and present to the Clerk of the Court, an order requesting him to issue a Summons. This order is called a praecipe. It is not essential to the validity of the Summons, but is used merely as a convenient way of directing the Clerk as to its issuance. A verbal direction would do as well.

22. In this country since the Jurisdiction of the Courts is conferred by Constitution and Statutes, there is no need of any Original Writ to authorize the Institution of an action, President, etc., of Bank of New Brunswick v. Arrowsmith, 9 NJ.L. 284 (1527). Cf. Pressey v. Snow, 81 Me. 288, 17 A. 71 (1889).

PROCESS—THE ORIGINAL WRIT

The first Process upon the Original Writ in contract actions and for civil injuries unaccompanied by force was a Summons, or warning to appear according to the command of the Writ itself, made out by the plaintiff's attorney for the Sheriff, and delivered by one of his deputies to the defendant. But by early Statutes a Capias was allowed in all ordinary cases, and was generally issued in the first instance.

24. In general, on the Service of Process in Actions at Law, see:


Annotations: Immunity of Non-Resident Suitor or Witness from Service of Process as Affected by the Nature or Subject Matter of the Action or Proceeding in Which the Process Issues, 19 A.L.R. 828 (1922); Immunity from Service of Process of Non-Resident Requested or Required to Remain in the State Pending Investigation of Accident, 50 A.L.R. 51 (1929); Immunity of Non-Resident from Service of Process While in State for Purpose of Settling or Compromising Controversy, 93 A.L.R. 872 (1934); Process—Service—Usual Place of Abode, 127 A.L.R. 1267 (1940); Immunity of Non-Resident Litigant or Witness from Service of Process as Affected by Transactions or Activities Unrelated to Action, 162 A.L.R. 280 (1940); Immunity of Non-Resident Defendant in Criminal Case from Service of Process, 20 A.L.R. (2d) 163 (1951); Immunity from Service of Process of Non-Resident Witness Appearing in Other Than Strictly Judicial Proceedings, 35 A.L.R. (2d) 1353 (1954).

A “tachan”

THE Writ of Attachment is a Writ commanding the seizure of the property of the


Wherever the defendant could be arrested he could be held to bail and could appear only by giving special bail as contrasted with common bail or nominal bail. The defendant could not plead in bailable actions until he had appeared by giving bail. The Process by Attachment and Distraint or Distress Infinite was availed of wherever the defendant avoided arrest. Pid, Practice of Courts of King's Bench, e. V., Of the Original Writ and Process Thereon, Previous to the Capias, 107 (1st Am. ed.,
In general, on the subject of Attachment, see:

Treatises: Ashley, The Doctrine and Practice of Attachment in the Mayor’s Court, London, &c. (London, 1819); Cushing, A Practical Treatise on the Trustee Process or Foreign Attachment of Massachusetts and Maine, &c. (Cambridge, 1833) Hikley, Acts of the Assembly of Maryland, on the Subject of Attachment (Baltimore, 1830); Sergeant, A Treatise Upon the Law of Pennsylvania, Relative to the Proceedings by Foreign Attachment &c. (Philadelphia, 1840); Locke, Law and Practice of Foreign Attachment in the Lord Mayor’s Court (Philadelphia, 1854); Temple, Law and Practice of Attachment of Debts (London, 1855); Brandon, Treatise Upon the Customary Law of Foreign Attachment (London, 1861); Daniel, Law and Practice of Attachment Under the Code of Virginia (Lynchburg, 1869); Cowen, Treatise on the Law and Practice Relating to Warrants and Attachments (Albany, 1864); Cababe, Interpleader and Attachment of Debts (London, 1881); Kneeland, Treatise on the Law of Attachments in Civil Cases (New York, 1884); Drake, Treatise on the Law of Attachment and Garnishment (Chicago, 1885); Wade, Treatise on the Law of Attachment and Garnishment, 2 Vols. (San Francisco, 1886).

Articles: Maupin, Right of a Creditor to Sue and Attach (Before Expiration of the Credit, 44 Cent.L.J. Sec. 16

73

COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

defendant, to be held as security for the satisfaction of the plaintiff’s claim.

Such a Writ always issued before Judgment, and thus differs from an Execution, which is the Process issued after Judgment. In some States it can be issued only against absconding debtors or persons concealing themselves, or nonresidents; in others, it is issued, in the first instance, to obtain control over the property of the defendant with which to satisfy the Judgment.

At Common Law, the Attachment was used to compel the appearance of the defendant, and, when he has appeared, the Attachment was dissolved. There was no lien upon the goods to secure the debt. The Writ is now issued to attach personal property and real estate to respond to the Judgment. The defendant may appear or not, after having been served with the Summons; if not, he is defaulted, and the Attachment constitutes a lien on the goods for the payment of the claim sued on, which may be enforced by Execution. The defendant may, however, generally appear at any time before Judgment, and dissolve the Attachment by giving a bond, in which case the attached property is released, the bond standing in its place.2

380 (1897); Johnson, Attachment of Choses in Action in New York, 13 N.Y.U.L.Q.Rev. 37 (1930); Wolf & Michael, Property Interests Subject to Attachment for Constructive Service in Ohio, 21 U. Cinn.L.Rev. 125 (1952).


On Special Bail as a condition of Appearance by nonresident whose goods have been seized, see Ownbey v. Morgan, 256 U.S. 94, 41 S.Ct. 433, 65 L.Ed. 837, 17 A.L.R. 873 (1920); Id., 30 Del. (7 Boyce) 297, 323, 105 A. 838, 849 (1919).

if the property attached is a chose in action, it brings In a new party in the person of one Indebted, who is called the “garnlsbee,” and who Is required to hold the property in his hands until the Attachment or “Garnishment,” as It is called, Is dissolved or be is ‘otherwise discharged. As to this process, see Drake.

The giving of a bond is sometimes compelled by Arrest on Civil Process, which is another provisional remedy.28

As a general rule the Action is deemed to be Commenced when the Writ is issued, although to stop the running of the Statute of Limitations some Courts hold that the Writ must be delivered to the officer for service. But others hold that this is not necessary.29

Attachment, c. XX, You may be Garnished, Sec. 481, 428, (7th Ed. Boston, 1891).
28. In general, on the subject of Arrest on Civil process, see:

Treatises: Dawes, Commentaries on the Laws of Arrests in Civil Cases, in which they are Deduced from their Origin to the Present Form (London, 1787) Pamphlet. Macdonald, Thomas, A Treatise on Civil Imprisonment, In England, with the History of its Progress, and Objections to its Policy. (London, 1701); Pearce, A Treatise on the Abuse of the Laws, Particularly in Actions by Arrest (London, 1814); Crowther, The History of the Law of Arrest in Personal Actions, (London, 1828); Wordsworth, W., Observations on the Law of Arrest, showing its impolicy, and how it may be and is abused. (London, 1832); Theobald, The Law for Abolishing Imprisonment for Debt on Mesne Process, &c. (London, 1838); Lush, 11., An Act for the Abolition of Arrest on Mesne Process, &c., 1 & 2 Vict. c, 10, with copious notes, explanatory of the Alterations in Law and Practice, and an Index. (London, 1838); Ings, E., The Act for the Abolition of Arrest on Liensno Process in Civil Actions, and also, the Acts 2 & 3 Vict. c. 39, and 3 & 4 Vict. a. 82, relating to or amending the same, with the Rules, Orders, and Cases, as Decided in all the Courts, arranged according to their Applicability to the various Sections, together with an Appendix of Forms, &c. (London, 1840); Smythe, The New Practice of the Law in Ireland, Under the 3 & 4 Vict., c. 105, being the Act for the Abolition of Arrest on Mesne Process, &c., with a Practical Comment (Dublin, 1842).


74

Ch. 3

See. 17

SERVICE—PERSONAL & CONSTRUCTIVE

SERVICE—PERSONAL AND CONSTRUCTIVE

17. Jurisdiction to render a Personal Judgment is based on Personal Service of a Summons, or sometimes on Substituted Service. Jurisdiction in Rem, and Quasi in Rem is based on Constructive Service by Publication and Control of some res.

In General

PERSONAL Judgment must be based upon Personal Service of Summons upon the defendant, or in case of residents upon Substituted Service. Constructive Service of Process by Publication is by Statute authorized where the Court has Jurisdiction in Rem or Quasi in Rem. For the latter case seizure of some property by Attachment or otherwise is necessary.\[^3\]

PERSONAL Judgments must be based upon Defendant Personally

There is a most important distinction between the Jurisdiction which is based on personal service,\[^3\] and Jurisdiction which is based on control over some res or subject matter, which is under the power of the Court. Only by virtue of Personal Jurisdiction can the Court render a personal Judgment and create a personal obligation which will bind all the defendant’s property everywhere.

The ordinary method by which a Court gets authority to adjudicate upon the rights and liabilities of the defendant is by Service of Summons upon him personally within the state. There are statutory provisions as to the officer or agent upon whom the Summons shall be served in actions against corporations. The service, when personal, may be made at any time after the Writ comes into the hands of the officer, but not later than the time fixed by Statute, which may be the Return Day or a certain time before. The officer is bound to use due diligence in serving

\[^3\] Pennoyer v. Neff, 05 U.S. 714, 24 L.Ed. 565 (1877).

\[^3\] Supra, note 24.

it, and is liable for neglect or a false Return. Having made the service, it is his duty to Return the Writ to the Court from which it issued, with his report of service, or that the defendant cannot be found within his Jurisdiction.
indorsed thereon, which is called his “Return”.

The act of notifying him of the Commencement of the Action is generally performed by reading the Writ to him, or handing him a copy of it, or, as is now generally provided by Statute, by leaving a copy at his last usual place of abode, if he has one within the Jurisdiction of the Court.33

Substituted Service

SUBSTITUTED Service, by leaving a copy of the Summons at the defendant’s residence or usual place of abode, may by Statute be made equivalent to Personal Service as to a resident defendant, and it will support a Personal Judgment. “Substituted Service in actions in personam is a departure from the Common Law Rule requiring Personal Service, and the Statute authorizing such service must be followed strictly. But when the Statute is complied with, the general rule is that Substituted Service on a resident defendant is equivalent to Personal Service and warrants a Personal Judgment.” ~


34. See England: Heath v. White, 2 Dowl.L. 40 (1841); Illinois: Bimeler v. Dawson, 5 Ill. (4 Scam.) 536, 39 Am.Dec. 430 (1843); Law v. Grommes, 158 Ill. 492, 41 N.E. 1080 (1945); Vermont: Hopkins v. Sears, 14 Vt. 494, 39 Am.Dec. 236 (1842), in which there was a Service of a Summons by delivering a copy without reading the Writ to the defendant and in which it was held that such service was insufficient.


See, also Cassidy v. Leitch, 2 Abb.N.C. (N.Y.) 315 (1875); Missouri, K. & T. Trust Co. v. Norris, 61

76

COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION Cli. 3

Courts have no general power to Summon non-residents ~ and persons resident in one state are not subject to the exercise of Personal Jurisdiction over them by Courts in another.35 If they hold property there, however, they are subject to have their property rights adjudicated by a Judgment in Rem. Mere temporary presence in the state is sufficient to subject the non-resident individual to its power if Personal Service of Summons is secured therein, even if the defendant is merely passing through on a train. But foreign corporations cannot be served, unless doing business in the state. When once obtained, Jurisdiction continues through all subsequent proceedings in the same litigation without further notice.

Constructive Service: Jurisdiction in Rem

IN certain exceptional cases a Court may acquire a limited Jurisdiction in Rem by notice sent to a non-resident outside the state or published within it, which is regarded as sufficient to give him a reasonable opportunity to appear and defend. But a Court cannot acquire Jurisdiction to pronounce a Personal Judgment against one who has no residence within the state, except by actual service of notice upon him within the state, or by his voluntary appearance.

35. For an excellent discussion of the fundamental principles governing Jurisdiction over non-residents, see Scott, Jurisdiction Over Non-Residents, 32 Harv. L.Rev. 871 (1919).
Jurisdiction *in Rem* is Jurisdiction in a cause acquired by virtue of control over the subject-matter. All proceedings are really directed against persons and their rights, even though, as in admiralty, a *res* or ship be impleaded as defendant. Some notification of the proceedings is therefore essential, either by publication in newspapers, or by posting up notices, or by mailing notices to the last known address, or by service of Summons outside of the state. A Court order must in general be obtained to make service of the Summons by Publication or other substituted method, upon a showing by affidavit that Personal Service within the state cannot be had.37

*Constructive Service: Jurisdiction Quasi-in-Rem*

There has been a wide extension of the Doctrine of Jurisdiction *in Rem* to cases where there is no direct claim to a tangible *ret*. Thus, where a suit is brought upon an obligation against a non-resident, the

37. The Process of the Court is said to “run” only within the Limits of its own Jurisdiction, and only by service within those limits is Jurisdiction to pronounce Personal Judgment against a defendant without his voluntary appearance acquired. Pennoyer v. Neff, 90 U.S. 714, 24 LEd. 565 (1877); Coldcy v. Morning News of New Haven, 156 U.S. 518, 15 S.Ct. 559, 39 LEd. 517 (1895); International Harvester Co. v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 234 U.S. 579, 34 S.Ct. 944, 58 L.Ed. 1479 (1914).

According to some authorities, no Personal Judgments can be rendered, even against a resident, merely on the basis of an Attachment of the property and Publication of Summons. De Arman v. Massey, 151 Ala. 639, 44 So. 688 (1907).


**Sec. 17**

**SERVICE—PERSONAL & CONSTRUCTIVE**

Court may subject the property of the debtor within the state to the payment of the debt, even though no Personal Jurisdiction over him can be acquired. No claim is made to the property as such, the plaintiff is not seeking to cut off the defendant’s right, title or interest in the property as against the whole world; he does have an interest in the property, but it is purely incidental to the satisfaction of his claim for the redress of a wrong, any surplus remaining thereafter going to the defendant, and not to the plaintiff. It is held that where a claim is made to property indirectly to thus satisfy an obligation of a non-resident debtor, an Attachment or Garnishment or Receivership is necessary. Since the action is not so framed as to set up any direct claim to the *res* in the sense of seeking to cut off the defendant’s interest as against the whole world, a claim to specific property, as an incidental method of obtaining redress for a wrong, must be asserted in some manner, since Jurisdiction is based upon that. And the defendant must have notice of that claim in order to satisfy the requirements of due process of law. And the method of giving such notice is by seizure of the property by the Court prior to service by publication.38 Such seizure will give the Court Jurisdiction Quasi in Rem. A Judgment based on such Jurisdiction is not in personam, and in this regard it is to be observed that the only effect of the Judgment is to enable the plaintiff to satisfy his claim out of the attached property; any part of the property after the payment of the plaintiff’s demand remains the property of the defendant, although the

38. The leading ease on the necessity of seizure by the court in order to properly ground Service by Publication is Pennoyer v. Neff, 95 U.S. 714, 24 LEd. 565 (1877).

See, also, the following cases: Baillie v. Columbia Gold Mm. Co., 86 Or. 1, 22, 42, 168 P. 965, rehearing denied 86 Or. 1, 161 F. 1167 (1917).

See, Hohfeld, *randaaietal Legal Conceptions*, 26 Yale L.J. 710, 781 (1917); Shipley v. Shipley, 187 Iowa 1293, 175 NW. 51 (1919), character of said property may have been changed, as when real estate is sold on Execution for more than the amount of the demand, in which case the defendant receives the balance as personal property.

The Operation of the Doctrine of Quasi in Rem Jurisdiction is best illustrated by the case of *Pennoyer v. Neff* in which appeared that *A*, in the state of Oregon, was sued in Debt for service rendered by an attorney; that at the time the action began and the Judgment was rendered, *A*, the then defendant, was a non-resident of the state; that he was not personally served with Process, and did not appear therein; and that the Judgment was entered upon his default in not answering the complaint, upon a Constructive Service of Summons by Publication. Such service when an action is brought against a non-resident and absent defendant, who has property within the state, was pro-
vided for by the Code of Oregon. The Code also provided, where the action was for the recovery of money or damages, for the Attachment of the property of the non-resident. It also declared that no natural person was subject to the Jurisdiction of a Court of the State “unless he appear in the Court, or be found within the State, or be a resident thereof, or have property therein; and, in the last case, only to the extent of such property at the time the Jurisdiction attached.”

The plaintiff, B, in the original action having secured a Default Judgment for less than $300 including costs, sued out an Execution on the Judgment, and C acquired the premises in question under a Sheriff’s deed, made upon a sale of the property on Execution issued upon the Judgment. Thereafter, A, the defendant in the original action, sued O in Ejectment to recover the land, of the alleged value of $15,000, situated in the State of Oregon. The issue thus presented was whether the Judgment in the State Court

at. 95 U.S. 714, 24 LEd. 565 (1877).

a. Id. at 719, 568,

78

COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

against A, the then defendant, but in this action, the plaintiff, was void for want of Personal Service of Process upon him, or of his appearance in the action in which it was rendered, and whether the premises in controversy could be subjected to the payment of the demand of a resident creditor. The Court discussed the requirement of due process of law under the United States Constitution when applied to a judicial proceeding, and in particular as related to the question of a Court obtaining jurisdiction over a defendant. Mr. Justice Field, speaking for the United States Supreme Court, held that the Judgment in favor of the plaintiff in the Circuit Court should be affirmed, because the only question was as to the validity of the original money Judgment rendered in Oregon, in an Action of Debt on a Simple Contract, against the resident of another state, without his voluntary appearance, or personal service of process upon him, by Attachment of the property subsequent to the commencement of the Action. Prior Attachment was and is necessary in order to give notice to the defendant that his property was involved in litigation. Without such notice the defendant’s property might be taken without a hearing or an opportunity to be heard, which would be violative of the due process clause of the Fourteenth Amendment. Finally, it is interesting to observe that in the principal case, even the Supreme Court failed to distinguish clearly between Jurisdiction in Rem as opposed to Jurisdiction Quasi in Rem.41


38. Id. at 719, 568,

41. Id. at 719, 568,

78

TIlE APPEARANCE42

18. The appearance of the defendant is any act or proceeding by which he places himself before the Court in order to participate in the action.

An appearance may be either
(I) General, or
(II) Special

IN discussing the subject of Appearance, it is important to distinguish between the plaintiff and defendant. In beginning the action by either an Original or Judicial Writ returnable to a Specific Court, the plaintiff automatically submitted himself to its Jurisdiction. He was, therefore, not required to appear for any purpose prior to the appearance of the defendant.” If he failed to file his Declaration and prosecute his action upon the defendant’s appearance, he was subject to a Nonsuit upon the defendant’s Motion after a demand in writing that the plaintiff
should plead. Such a Nonsuit carried costs enforceable against him and his pledges. Under the Hilary Rules of 1834 and under the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852— the plaintiff was regarded as out of Court and P:0c7e— Special Appearance— Waiver of Objections to Service of Process, 31 Mich.L.Rev. 862 (1933); Pleading— Motion to vacate Service of Process a General Appearance, 20 Va.L.Rev. 475 (1934); Judgment— Default Judgments Rendered Without Jurisdiction— Validating Effect of a Subsequent General Appearance, 36 Mich.L.Rev. 455 (1938); Federal Courts— Rules of Civil Procedure— Motion for Bill of Particulars Filed Contemporaneously with Motion to Dismiss for Want of Service Held to Waive Objection to Jurisdiction Over the Per. son, 33 Harv.L.Rev. 493 (1940); Practice and Procedure— Appeals from Refusals of Motions to Dismiss— Special Appearance, 18 N.C.L.Rev. 354 (1940); Procedure— General and Special Appearance— Waiver of Objection to Jurisdiction Under the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, 40 Col.L.Rev. 153 (1940); Special Appearance In New York, 34 Corn.L.Q. 230 (1048); Special Appearance to Contest the Merits in Attachment Suits, 95 U.Pa.L.Rev. 403 (1049).

Annotation: Effect of Time of Execution of Written Appearance or Waiver of Service, 159 ALE. 111 (1945).

44. Promulgated pursuant to 3 & 4 Will, IV, c. 42 (1833).
45. 15 & 18 Wet. c. 76, 58 (1852).

THE APPEARANCE

upon failure to appear and plead within one year after the Return of the Writ.

The Doctrine of Appearance properly relates to the defendant, as his actual presence in person or through his attorney was a condition precedent to any Form of Pleading, to any Trial, or to any Judgment in the case. An Appearance is any unequivocal act by which a defendant submits to the Jurisdiction of the Court in a Cause of Action.” This is, in effect, a definition of a General Appearance. A Special Appearance is one made for the purpose of objecting to the Court’s Jurisdiction over the subject matter of the action or over the person of the defendant. If the Court has not previously acquired Jurisdiction of the defendant, such an appearance enables the defendant to object to the control, without submitting himself to its jurisdiction. 47

Under Modern Law a Court can acquire Jurisdiction to render a Judgment in person-ant either by a General Appearance on the part of the defendant or by the Personal Service of a Summons. If, however, the defendant or his attorney does any act with ref erence to the Defense of the action, he will be held to have submitted himself to the authority of the Court, or to have made a General Appearance, the effect of which is to cure all prior defects in the service. 48 Since Jurisdiction over subject matter is defined by Constitution or Statute in America, consent of the parties cannot confer such Jurisdiction upon the Court, and therefore an Appearance by the defendant constitutes no waiver of the objection that the Court has no Jurisdiction over the subject matter. 49 A defendant may, however, waive Jurisdiction over his person, which he in effect does when he makes a Voluntary or General Appearance.

The English Courts did not, until modern times, claim Jurisdiction over the person of the defendant merely by service of Summons upon him. If he failed to appear in response to the Summons, it was deemed necessary to resort to further Process by Attachment of his Property and Arrest of his Person to compel an “appearance”, which was not mere presence in the Court, but which consisted of some act by which a person submitted himself to the authority and Jurisdiction of the Court. If he still failed to appear, no Judgment could be rendered against him, except in Real Actions where the defendant was proceeding against the Jand within the Jurisdiction. Any steps in the action, such as giving bail upon arrest, operated as an appearance or submission.
Under later English law, by Statute, the plaintiff was authorized upon affidavit of Personal Service of a Summons or a Writ of Distringas, to enter the appearance of the defendant, and proceed to Judgment, if he failed to appear within a certain prescribed time. The effect of this practice was to

49. “Consent of the parties cannot confer jurisdiction upon a court in which the law has not vested it.” Wetzel v. Hancock County, 143 Ill.App. 178, 181 (1008).

50. In general, on the subject of Bail in an Action at Common Law, see:


80

COMMENCEMENT OF AN ACTION

Ch. 3

eliminate the Process of Attachment and Arrest as a means of compelling the defendant’s appearance, except where Personal Service was unobtainable, in which instance the Ancient Mesne Process to Outlawry remained operative. But the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852 abolished the Writ of Distringas, together with the practice of plaintiff entering the appearance of the defendant.

Under Modern Law there is no effort to compel the appearance of the defendant. But if he be properly served and then neglects to appear and plead, the Court will render Judgment against him for Default of Appearance. Inasmuch as the Default constitutes an admission of the Cause of Action set forth in the Declaration, assuming of course that the plaintiff has stated a Cause of Action, all that the plaintiff would have to prove is his damages.

THE PLEADINGS

19. On the Appearance of the Parties, the pleadings commence. The various pleadings and their order are as follows:

(I) The declaration of the plaintiff.

The dilatory pleas of the defendant.

The demurrer or plea of the defendant.

(IV) The demurrer or replication of the plaintiff.

(V) The demurrer or rejoinder of the defendant.

(VI) The demurrer or surrejoinder of the plaintiff.

(VII) The demurrer or rebutter of the defendant.

(VIII) The demurrer or surrebutter of the plaintiff.

51. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law c. 1, Introductory, Art. IV, Appearance, ~ 13, Change in the Law, 11 (St. Paul, 190-). Mode of Pleading

Stephen thus describes how the pleadings were once orally delivered: ~ “As the appearance was an actual one, so the pleadings were an Oral Altercation in Open Court, in presence of the Judges. .. These oral pleadings were delivered either by the party himself or his pleader, called ‘narrator’ and ‘advocatus’ ; and it seems that the rule was then already established that none but a regular advocate (or, according to the more modern term, ‘barrister’) could be a pleader in a cause not his own.

“It was the office of the Judges to superintend, or, according to the allusion of a learned writer, moderate the oral contention thus conducted before them. In doing this, their general aim was to compel the pleaders so to manage their alternate allegations as at length to arrive at some specific point or
matter affirmed on the one side and denied on the other. When this matter was attained, if it proved to be a Point of Law, it fell, of course, to the decision of the Judges themselves, to whom alone the adjudication of all legal questions belonged; but, if a Point of Fact, the parties then, by mutual agreement, referred it to one of the various Methods of Trial then practiced, or to such Trial as the Court should think proper. This result being attained, the parties were said to be at issue (ad exitum; that is, at the end of their pleading). The question, so set apart for decision was itself called ‘the issue’, and was designated, according to its nature, either as an ‘issue in fact’ or an ‘issue in law’. The whole proceeding then closed, in case of an Issue in Fact, by an award or order of the Court, directing the institution, at a given time, of the Mode of Trial fixed upon;


(II)

(III)


Sec. 19
THE PLEADINGS

81
or, in case of an Issue in Law, by an adjournment of the parties to a given day, when the Judges should be prepared to pronounce their decision.”

The practice of oral pleading has long since ceased. The Modern Practice is to draw up Written Pleadings in typewritten form, and file them in the office of the proper officer of the Court, usually the Clerk’s office. Here the opposite party may examine a pleading, or he may procure a copy from the officer; or it may be that under the statutes of the particular state, or a Rule of the Court, a copy may be required to be delivered to him. When the Pleadings are thus filed they become a part of the Record of the cause. They are not, as formerly, transcribed, but are themselves properly indorsed and kept on file as part of the Record.

The first of the various pleadings enumerated above is the Declaration, the general aspects of which will now be considered.

Sec.

CHAPTER 4

THE DECLARATION—FORM AND GENERAL REQUISITES’

22. Ultimate and Evidentiary Facts.
24. Several Counts in the Same Declaration.
26. Different Versions of the Same Cause of Action.
27. Conformance to Process.

The Commencement
(V) The Conclusion

In General

FORMAL PARTS OF THE DECLARATION

20. The first pleading in an Action is the plaintiff’s Declaration, which is a statement in legal and methodical form, of all the material facts constituting the plaintiff’s cause of action. It consists of the following parts:

(I) Caption or Title of Court
II) The Venue

(III)

(IV) The Body, or Statement of the Cause

of Action

THE parties having been brought into Court as a result of the service of some Form of Process, the next step is to show, by Pleadings duly recorded, the nature of their dispute, and the first step in this direction in Personal Actions is for the plaintiff to file his Declaration, which is a statement in Legal Form of the plaintiff’s Cause of Action. In the Ancient Real Actions the first Pleading was a Count The Declaration was, according to Coke, but an amplification of the General Charge contained in the Original Writ, setting forth in greater detail the circumstances involved in the plaintiff’s Cause of Action. According to the custom and practice of the Court in which it was filed, and depending upon the Form of the Action in each Case, the substantive requisites of the Declaration differed. But all Declarations were alike in that they contained five formal parts, to wit, the Title of the Court, the Venue, the Commencement, the Body, or Statement of the Cause of Action, and the Conclusion, the character and relative posi
tion of which will appear from a typical BODY:

Form of Declaration set out below:

FORM OF DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON
THE CASE IN ASSUMPSIT

CAPTION OR TITLE:

Court: IN THE CIRCUIT COURT OF
COOK COUNTY
Term: To the October Term, A.D. 1926

VENUE: STATE OF ILLINOIS, ~

BODY:

Arthur Brown, plaintiff, by William Johnson, his Attorney, complains of Clarence Dowell, defendant, who has been summoned to answer the said plaintiff in a plea of trespass on the case in assumpsit.

Inducement: For that whereas, on the 16th day of January, S.D. ~926, at Chicago, In the county aforesaid, the said plaintiff, at the request of the defendant, bargained with the said defendant to buy of him, and the said defendant then and there sold to the said plaintiff, a large quantity of corn, to wit, one thousand bushels at the price of sixty cents for each bushel thereof, to be delivered by the said defendant to the said plaintiff in the week then next following at the said plaintiff’s elevator in said city, and to be paid for by the said plaintiff to the said defendant on the delivery thereof as aforesaid.

And in consideration thereof and that the said plaintiff had promised the said defendant, at his request, to accept and receive the said corn, and to pay him for the same at the price aforesaid, be, the said defendant, on the day first aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, promised the said plaintiff to deliver the said corn to him as aforesaid.

2. 1 Shinn, Pleading and Practice in the Courts of Record of Illinois at Common Law In Civil Causes, with Forms, c. II, 442 (Chicago 1896). See, also, Legg, A. Suit at Law in Illinois, c. 28, 459, 463 (Chicago, 3916).

For a short succinct statement on the Formal Parts of a Declaration, see the case of Smith sc Fowle & Dunham, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 9 (1834).

A verment of Readiness

to Per-

And although the said time for the delivery of the said corn has long since elapsed, and the said plaintiff has always been ready and willing to accept and receive the said corn, and to pay for the same, at the price aforesaid, and has offered so to do.

Yet the said defendant did not, nor would, within the time aforesaid or afterwards, deliver the said corn, or any part thereof to the said plaintiff at his elevator, as aforesaid, or elsewhere, but refuses so to do;
Whereby the said plaintiff has been deprived of divers gains and profits which would otherwise have accrued to him from the delivery of the said corn to him as aforesaid;

To the damage of the said plaintiff of five hundred dollars, and therefore he brings his suit

WILLIAM JomqsoN

Attorney for Plaintiff

BAtr.flrmE’s, Shipman on Common Law Pleading. c. 10, 76, p. 193 (St Paul, 3d ed. 1923).

With the Form of a Specific Declaration in Assumpsit before us, the Declaration may now be examined, first, With reference to its formal parts and general compositional and physical structure, and secondly, with reference to the usual factors and rules which govern the statement of a cause of action in any form; the problem of stating a cause of action in terms of each of the eleven specific Common Law Actions will follow in later chapters.

The Caption or Title of the Court and Term

With respect to the Title of the Court, it consists, in general, of a superscription of the Name of the Court, thus, “In the Circuit Court of County.” With respect to the Entitlement of Term, it is either General, thus, “October Term, 1955,” or Special, that is where a particular day of the term is stated. Such Title refers to the time when

COMMENCEMENT:

form:

Breach:

Damage:

CONCLUSION:

Consideration or Promise:

84

DECLARATION—FORM

Ch. 4

the party is supposed to deliver his Oral Allegation in Open Court; and as it was only in Term Time that the Court anciently sat to hear the pleading, it is therefore always of a Term that the pleadings are entitled, though they are often in fact filed or delivered in Vacation Time. The Term of which any pleading is entitled is usually that in which it is actually filed or delivered, or when this takes place in vacation, the Title is of the Term last preceding.

The most frequent practice is to Entitle Generally. But it is to be observed that a pleading so entitled is by
construction of the law presumed, unless proof be given to the contrary, to have been pleaded on the first day of the Term. And the effect of this is that, if a General Title is used, it will sometime occasion an apparent objection. Thus, in the case of a Declaration so Entitled, it may appear in the Declaration or in evidence on the Trial that the Cause of Action arose after the first day of the Term of which the Declaration is Entitled; and in either case this objection would arise: that the plaintiff would appear to have declared before his cause of action accrued, whereas the Cause of Action ought of course always to exist at the time the action is commenced. The means of avoiding this difficulty is to Entitle Specially of the particular day in the Term when the pleading was actually filed or delivered.

The Venue

THE laying of Venue was inextricably connected with the various stages of the develop


4. In general, on the subject of Venue in Common Law and Modern Actions, see:

Treatises: flayer, Preliminary Treatise on Evidence at the Common Law, c. II, Trial by Jury and Its Development, 65, 90—93 (Boston 1898); Scott, Fundamental Principles of Procedure In Actions at opment of the Jury. In the first stage the Jury was not a Jury, but in reality a group of witnesses who came into Court, and on the basis of their own knowledge of the facts of the specific case, told the Judge what happened. In order, therefore, that the juror or jurors with knowledge of the facts might be selected, it was necessary for the sheriff to know where they could be located. The rule at Common Law, therefore, was that every material and traversable allegation of fact in the Body of the Declaration, if affirmative in form, should be laid with a Venue. Besides this Venue, which, by the ancient practice, included the parish, town or hamlet, as well as the county, there was another laid on the margin of the Declaration, at its Commencement, stating merely the name of the county.

In the second stage of the development the Jury went partly on its own knowledge, and partly on knowledge gained from evidence presented in the Court. In consequence, the reasons upon which the original rule was founded gradually ceased to have any meaning. And as a result of the two statutes of 16 and 17 Car. U. c. 8 (1664) and of 4 Anne, c. 16, § 6 (1705), the rule requiring the laying of Venue in the Body of the Pleading became an unmeaning form, the practice of alleging the Venue in the margin hay-


Articles: Starke, The Venue of Actions of Trespass to Land, 27 W.Va.L.Q. 301 (1921); Warner, Venue of Civil Causes in Oregon, 1 Ore.L.itev. 142 (1922);

5. 16 & 17 Car. II, c. 8(1664); 4 Anne, c. 16, § 6 (1705).

Sec. 20

FORMAL PARTS OF DECLARATION

85

ing been found sufficient for all practical purposes.6 But the practice continued to be observed nonetheless.

In the meantime the Jury had reached its third. state of development in which jurors ceased to be witnesses and became triers of facts, going on knowledge furnished by the evidence heard in open Court.
With this development, an end was brought to the former practice by the Rule of Hilary Term, 4 Wm. TV, (1834), which provided that in the future “the name of a county shall in all cases be stated in the margin of a Declaration...and no Venue shall be stated in the Body of the Declaration.” And presently, under the more recent practice, but in accordance with the spirit and intent of this Rule, the Venue is usually set out at the Commencement of the Declaration, as appears in the form above.

However, in cases which required local description, the Venue was still to be laid in the Body of the Declaration. But the enforcement of this rule did not call for the statement of a correct Venue except when the Action was Local, and in Transitory Actions the Venue could be laid in any county, subject to objection by the adverse party.

The Commencement

WHAT is termed the Commencement of the Declaration precedes the Statement of the Cause of Action or Body of the Declaration.

The Body or Statement of the Cause of Action

THE Body of the Declaration is the most important part of it, for it is here that the plaintiff states the facts showing his cause of action. But what is a cause of action? Gould defined a cause of action as a set of “facts which entitles the plaintiff to the relief claimed.” Of course the essential elements of any claim of relief or remedial right will vary from action to action. But, on analysis, the pleader will find that the facts prescribed by the substantive law as necessary to constitute a cause of action in a given case, may be classified under three heads: (1) The plaintiff’s right or title; (2) The defendant’s wrongful act violating that right or title; (3) The consequent damage, whether nominal or substantial. And, of course, the facts constituting the cause of action should be stated with certainty and precision, and in their natural order, so as to disclose the three elements essential to every cause of action, to wit, the right, the wrongful act and the damages.

The Conclusion

THE Conclusion of a Declaration is the Formal Statement at the end, following the...
Body, or Statement of the Cause of Action.

It is, “to the plaintiff’s damage of — and therefore he brings his suit,” etc. This “ad damnum” clause is properly a part of the conclusion in all Personal and Mixed Actions. By the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852, a Specific Form of Conclusion was prescribed.

The Production of Suit

THE Production of the plaintiff's suit (secta), by which the plaintiff was required to present proof of his Declaration at once, and even before it was called into question upon the pleading, is an example of one of those instances, not infrequently noticeable in Common Law Pleading, where the form of an old procedure is retained, long after the reason for its existence has been swept away. Anciely, in the primitive period of Common Law Procedure when Pleadings were still made Orally, and Trial by Battle and Ordeal was still in vogue, the plaintiff was required to produce his proof, or his sect a—that is, a suite or train of followers prepared to confirm his Allegations. Although the practice has long been discontinued, the original formula there used to announce the plaintiff’s readiness still remains with us. In consequence, in all Common Law Actions it is still customary to conclude the Declaration with the phrase “and therefore he brings his suit.”

13. Section 59, which provided: “and the plaintiff claims £ or [if the action was brought to recover specific goods] the plaintiff claims a return of the said goods or their value, and £ for their detention.”


It should be observed that the plaintiff brings, not this suit, but his suit, a following of witnesses. 2 Polloek & Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. II, 603, 604 (Cambridge, 1895); flayer, Preliminary Treatise on Evidence at the common Law, c. 1, 12 (Boston 1898).

At Common Law, according to Martin,” the signature of counsel was not required, and this rule was enacted into statutory form by the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852.”

THE ACTUAL STATEMENT OF THE CAUSE OF ACTION

21. The Declaration must state distinctly and with certainty every fact that is essential to the plaintiff’s prima facie case. No Essential Allegations can be imported into the Declaration by inference or intendment. The principal points to be shown in the statement of a cause of action are:

(I) The plaintiff’s right;

(II) The defendant’s wrongful act violating that right;

(III) The consequent damages.

In General

THE term “cause of action” is much used in pleading and procedure, but it eludes


16. Section 85.

8. In general, on what constitutes a Cause of Action at Common Law, under Modern Codes and Practice Acts, and under the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, see:

Articles: Howe, Misjoinder of Causes of Action in Illinois, 14 Ill.L.Rev. 581 (1920); Clark, The Code Cause of Action, 33 Yale U. 817 (1924); McCaskill, Actions and Causes of Action, 34 Yale L.J. 614 (1925); Clark, Ancient Writs and Modern Causes of Action, 34 Yale L.J. 879 (1925); Clark, Trial of Actions Under the Code, 11 Cornell L.Q. 482 (1928); Blume, A Rational Theory for Joiner of Causes, etc., 243 Mich.L.Rev. 1, 41 (1927); Harris, What is a Cause of Action, IC Calif .L.Rev. 459 (1028); Gavitt, The Code Cause of Action; Joinder and
STATEMENT OF CAUSE OF ACTION

exact definition.\textsuperscript{18} Probably it is unsafe to define it more specifically than to say that the cause of action consists of some combination of facts or events, or some transaction from which a right to remedial relief arises. The typical elements or operative facts underlying these rights and which entitle the plaintiff to some form of remedy differ with the various kinds of actions, whether of contract, property or tort. At Common Law, therefore, the question as to whether a plaintiff had stated a good cause of action did not turn on the facts of a particular transaction, but on whether the plaintiff or his attorney had properly diagnosed the legal effect of the facts, or, to put the matter in another way, whether the Declaration stated a cause of action which fell within the theory of liability represented by the

FORM OF ACTION selected to vindicate an alleged legal right.

\textit{The Declaration; A Legal Syllogism}

WITH this working definition in mind, we are now in a position to undertake the Framing of a Declaration in which a cause of action will be alleged. In this connection it should be remembered that a Declaration is a Syllogism with the Major Premise left out. What is meant by this? It is this: since every liability consist of two elements—a given combination of facts and events, plus a rule of substantive law attaching legal consequences—it follows that a complete statement of the entire right of action would inelude both the combination of facts and the rule of substantive law relied upon. If these two elements are established, Judgment for the plaintiff will be entered. Such Judgment naturally follows from certain premises of fact and of law, which may be stated as follows:

(1) 2nd Major Premise: The rule of law relied upon by the plaintiff—by rule of the Substantive Law of real property, damages may be recovered against one who rides over my corn, or trespasses on my property:

(2) Minor Premise: The combination of facts relied upon by the plaintiff—that the defendant has ridden over my corn;

\textit{Conclusion:} Therefore, the plaintiff right of action against defendant in he may recover damages against the
"Every action is brought in order to obtain some particular result which is termed the remedy. This final result is not the 'Cause of the Action:' it is rather the 'Object of the Action,'" Wildman v. Wildman, 70 Conn. 700, 707, 41 A. 1, 2 (1898).

And a "Cause of Action" should be distinguished from an "Action", the former consisting of the Facts which give rise to the Action, the latter being a Proceeding in Court. Ponaenoy, Code Remedies, c. III, ~ 347 (4th ed. by logic, Boston, 1904).

80. See Lamphear v. Buckingham, 33 Conn. 237 (1868).

(3) has a which defendant.

DECLARATION—FORM

If the defendant seeks to defeat the defendant or in tort. The plaintiff must allege that he ant’s alleged liability by disputing the Major had a right, as that he was in the actual or Premise or Rule of Substantive Law relied constructive possession of the land in an Aeon by the plaintiff, he may do so by demur- tion of Trespass quare clausum fregit, or ring, which, in effect, says there is no such that he had a General or Special property in-Rule of Law as that relied on by the plain- terest therein, and was entitled to the postiff~ if the defendant seeks to defeat the plaintiff by disputing the combination of 21. In the past Quarter century there have been re peated efforts on the part of legal scholars to clar facts or events relied upon by the plaintiff, ify legal thinking by promoting a better under-

he may do so by pleading some Form of standing of legal terminology used In the process of Traverse, such as the General Issue, which analyzing a legal problem. One of the earliest ef forts was Professor Wesley Neweomb Eohfeld’s
denies all the material allegations in the work on Fundamental Legal Conceptions as Applied plaintiff’s Declaration. If both ‘the Rule of in Judicial Reasoning and Other Legal Essays (New Law and the Facts relied upon by the plain- Haven, 1923). In an article by Professor Arthur L. Clorbin, Legal Analysis and Terminology, 29 tale L. the Judgment of the Court inevitably and an attempt was made to define legal relations in logically follows, unless the defendant seeks terms of Right, Duty, Privilege, No-Right, Power, Liability, Immunity, and Disability. More recently,

to avoid the alleged liability by pleading IRProfessor George Goble, in an article entitled, A Confession and Avoidance, If, however, the Redefinition or Basic Legal Terms, 35 Co.Litely. plaintiff fails to establish the Major or Minor 535 (1935), takes the view that our basic legal

Premise, his right of action fails, lationships are embraced within the term, Power-Liability, that is, that all significant legal facts

It should now be observed, however, that necessarily Involve power. The term powers covers since the Court takes Judicial Notice of the those legal relations as viewed by the controllint Rules of Substantive Law of the jurisdiction party and the term Liability Includes the same re lationship as viewed by the party controlled.

over which it presides, the Rule of Law or The Editors of the Restatement of the Law of Prop-Major Premise is not stated lxi the Declara- erity, under the auspices of the American Law Iotion; only the Facts, or Minor Premise, and statute, were confronted with this same problem of terminology. The general rule Is that an action of the Conclusion. And hence the reason whyTrespass may be maintained by any person bавirn

a Declaration is said to be a Syllogism with a general or special property interest In the proper-the Major Premise left out.
And now, with the issue in dispute. This has been construed to include actual physical possession, constructive possession, the syllogistic character of a Declaration or a right to immediate possession at the time the view, we may consider the statement of the act. But as used in Section 5 of the Restatement of Torts, the defendant’s wrongful act, statement of the Law of Property, the word “interest,” except for the Restatement of Torts, has been used generically to include varying aggregates of rights, privileges, powers and immunities and distributively to mean any one of them.” As applied it is of the essence of a cause of action to Trespass, however, the term “interest,” although, that some right of the plaintiff should have having several other meanings, usually refers to a legal relation or relations; as applied to the general field of Torts, it denotes any human desire.

For the plaintiff to show a right. Thus, in In the field of intentional Torts, Section 216 of the an action of Special Assumpsit for the breach Restatement of the Law of Torts, Second Series, of a contract, as in the Form of Declaration defines a person in possession of a chattel as one who has physical control with the intent to exercise control, if he has not abandoned it, and no other.

And the same is true of an action CX (CutCo) control. If he has not abandoned it, and no other

Sec. 21

**STATEMENT OF CAUSE OF ACTION**

The Defendant’s Wrongful Act Violating That Right

No cause of action can arise unless some right of the plaintiff has been violated or injured by the defendant. The injury as well as the right must, therefore, be alleged in the Declaration. Thus, in an Action for the Breach of a Contract, it is not only necessary to show the existence of the contract, binding the defendant to perform or forbear some act for the plaintiff, but it is also necessary to show that the defendant has violated some duty arising from the contract; that is, that the performance of the contract became due, and that he failed to perform it. This appears from the Declaration given above. And, so likewise, in an Action of Trespass quare clausum a chattel with intent to exercise control, although he is no longer in physical possession of a chattel, the trespass by the defendant must be shown; and in an Action of Trover a showing of conversion by the defendant is essential.

**The Consequent Damages**

It is not only necessary to show that the defendant has violated some right of the plaintiff, but it is also necessary to go further and show that the plaintiff has been damaged thereby, for injury without damage (“injurz sine dantno”) does not give rise to a cause of action. In most cases,

person has obtained possession; or has the right as against all persons to the immediate physical Control of a chattel, if no other person is in possession.

Section 157 defines a person in possession of land as including one who is in occupancy of land with intent to control it; or has been but no longer is in occupancy of land with intent to control it; if, after he has ceased his occupancy without abandoning the land, no other person has obtained possession; or has the right as against all persons, to immediate occupancy of land, if no other person is in possession.

The quoted matter in this note is printed by permission of the American Law Institute.
That In Case for Slander damages is the gist of the action, see Pollard v. Lyon, 91 U.S. 225, 236, 23 where a wrong is shown, nominal damages may be recovered. The fact, however, that damage will be presumed in any given case, does not dispense with the necessity of an averment of damage in the Declaration.

What is a Fact

BUT when you have found that you must allege a right, a violation of that right and damages, as an incident of stating a cause of action, you have not as yet touched the problem as to what particular kind of facts must be alleged in order to properly plead these so-called essentials of a good cause of action, a matter to which we may now address ourselves.

In order to frame a good declaration in which a good cause of action is stated, a pleader must consider first, what facts must be stated, and second, in what manner and form should such facts, whatever their character, be stated?

And these inquiries raise the question as to what, then, is a fact. A fact may be said to be anything of which a past or present existence may be asserted. And, for purposes of legal analysis, there are ordinary facts and extraordinary facts of law. Ordinary facts may be separated into two groups, ultimate and evidentiary facts,

Ultimate Fact Defined

AN ultimate fact 23 is any fact to which the substantive law attaches legal consequences. It sometimes may be inferred from the statement of a sufficiently large number of evidentiary facts. Thus, for example, if a plaintiff wants to institute an Action of Ejectment against a defendant, he must look to the Substantive Common Law governing real property to discover what allegations he must allege in his Declaration to state a good cause of action. There he discovers that he must allege Right or Title, Wrongful Act of Ejectment, and Damages. If, in drafting his Declaration, the plaintiff omits an allegation required by the Substantive Law, the defect is available on Demurrer at the Pleading Stage, on Motion in Arrest of Judgment, after Verdict and before Judgment, and on Writ of Error, after Final Judgment, under the general principle that ordinarily a Substantive Defect, or a failure to state a material, or ultimate fact is always available at any stage of the proceedings.

Evidentiary Fact Defined

AN evidentiary fact is a fact to which the Substantive Law does not attach legal consequences, but from which, if stated in sufficient detail, an ultimate fact may sometimes be inferred. Thus, to illustrate, in the Action of Ejectment referred to above, let us suppose that the plaintiff alleged, by way of title, that he had a “grant deed” of Blackacre. The Substantive Law of real property requires that in order for the plaintiff to state a good cause of action, he must allege that he owned, possessed, had an immediate right to possession, or was seized of Blackacre. As a “grant deed” of Blackacre is not title, but only evidence of title, the plaintiff’s Declaration is defective in having stated an evidentiary fact, whereas he should have alleged the ultimate fact that he was “seized”

ULTIMATE AND EVIDENTIARY FACTS

22. The Ultimate and Operative Facts should be pleaded, not Evidentiary Facts and not Conclusions of Law.

WITH these distinctions in mind, we are for the first time in a position to state the General Rule as to what facts must be stated in order to state a good cause of action. The General Common Law Rule is that the plaintiff, in order to state a good cause of action in his Declaration, must allege ultimate facts, and not evidentiary facts, and not Conclusions of Law.°


25. See Camp & Bros. v. Hall, $9 Pla. 535, 568, 22 So. 792, 796 (1897), where it was contended that the Declaration alleged Evidentiary Facts as opposed to Ultimate Facts, the CourtS in discussing the question as to whether stating Evidentiary Facts was a defect in form or in substance, declared: “This latter contention Is no doubt true, but as the Evidentiary Facts alleged are sufficient, if true, to establish conclusively the Ultimate Facts, the defect In this respect is one of form, and not one of substance. If the Evidentiary Facts alleged were Insufficient in Law to Establish the Ultimate Facts, the defect would be one of substance, proper to be reached by General Demurrer; but if the objection be simply to this manner of Pleading the Ultimate Facts, the defect is one of form, and could formerly be reached by Special Demurrer only.”


20. “The only question, then, Is whether the Complaints, all of which are in substance as above stated, contain what is technically a Sufficient Statement of a Cause of Action. The Sufficiency of the Pleadings Is to be determined by the New York Code of Procedure. This requires a ‘plain and concise Statement of the Facts constituting a Cause of Action,’ Section 43t But the Rule of Pleading at Common Law was the same, viz., that Facts, not mere Conclusions of Law, were to be stated. 1 Chit P1, 214; Allen v. Patterson, 7 N.Y. 478.” Brown, 3.. In Muser v. Robertson, 17 F. 500, 502 (1883).

Decision: New York News Pub. Co. v National Steam-

See. 22

ULTIMATE M~1) EVIDENTIARY FACTS

The process of differentiating, in the confused history of a case, the Ultimate or Operative Facts from the probative and collateral circumstances involved, is the first step in the diagnosis of the case, to discover whether the plaintiff has a right of action, and also for the intelligent statement of the cause of action in the Declaration. Only the essential facts should be alleged which form the basis of the claim for relief. This excludes the details and particulars of evidence by which these fundamental points are to be established. Some observance of this distinction is necessary if the pleadings are to make the issues clear, simple and certain. The subordinate facts, which make up the probative matter, the casual details and dramatic circumstances, may vary indefinitely, but the “Ultimate”, the “Material” or “Issuable” Facts cannot be omitted without destroying the plaintiff’s cause of action or the defendant’s Defense, as the case may be.

As observed earlier, it is a well-settled Rule of Pleading that it is never necessary to set forth mere Matters of Evidence. 27 In other


The rule under consideration is not noticed in Equity Pleading strictly. It being there often essential that the Facts which are the Subject of the Action, be stated in detail. Story, Commentaries on Equity Pleading, c. V. 265a, n. 1 (9th S. by Gould, Boston, 1879).

But in Code Pleading the Rule is fully recognized. though not expressly prescribed; and, as the Codes retain but one form of action for both legal and non-legal remedies, the application of the Rule Is words, although a particular fact may be of the essence of a party’s cause of Action or Defense, so that a statement of it is indispensable, it still is not necessary, in alleging it, to state such circumstances as merely tend to prove the tnathe of the fact.

The reason of the rule is evident, if we revert to the general object which all the rules, tending to certainty, contemplate, that is, the attainment of a certain issue. This implies, as has been shown, a development of the question in controversy in a specific shape; but so that that object be attained, there is, in general, no necessity for further minuteness in the pleading; and therefore, those subordinate facts, which go to make up the evidence by which the affirmative or negative of the issue is to be established, are not required to be alleged, and hence may be brought forward for the first time at the Trial, when the issue comes to be decided.

The Ultimate or Operative Facts are the Facts required by the Substantive Law; it is these Facts which the party needs to establish to win his case.\(^{23}\) They must be facts, definite and concrete enough to direct attention to the basis or ground of the plaintiff’s legal contentions. But at the same time, they must reduce the case to its essentials. For instance, if the pleader wishes to allege that the railroad contracted to carry the plaintiff as a passenger on its train with his baggage, he should not go into an historical narrative of how the defendant went to the window and the agent sold the plaintiff a ticket and who checked his trunk, If the pleader wishes to allege that a certain deed was not recorded he should not allege that he searched in the proper office in vain and failed to find the record, as this would create an immaterial issue. And if the plaintiff wishes to set up that he is the owner of certain land, he should not set forth the links in his chain of title, for, as we have seen, this is evidentiary matter; he should allege that he is seized of the land in question, as seisin is the Ultimate or Material Fact to which the law of real property attaches the legal consequences of ownership, which the plaintiff is seeking to establish against the defendant.

**ULTIMATE FACTS AND CONCLUSIONS OF LAW**

23. The Averments in the plaintiff’s Declaration or the defendant’s Defense should be of the Operative Facts, and not of mere Conclusions of Law from such Facts Often the distinction is one of the degree of particularity required in describing the particular matter or transaction involved.

THE Averment of the Operative Facts, essential to constitute a *prima facie* Cause of Action, must be Specific and set forth the Concrete Facts from which the Conclusions follow. A Declaration which merely states Legal Conclusions is insufficient.\(^ {29}\) General

29. It is the Duty of the Courts to declare the conclusions, and of the parties to state the premises. Little York Gold-washing & Water Co. v.
A Plea alleging mere Conclusions of Law, without alleging facts from which those conclusions are sought to be drawn, with sufficient detail and certainty to apprise plaintiff of the nature of the defense and to enable the Court upon Facts admitted or found to decide whether the matter relied on constituted a valid claim to the relief sought, was properly rejected. Cot v. Hagan, 125 Va. 656, 100 S.E. 666 (1919).

Allegations of Fraud, without setting forth the Specific Acts which constitute Fraud, are insufficient. The Allegations should be Specific, and the facts stated with particularity and certainty. The defendant is entitled to know the ground specified on which the Charge is made.

Statements as to the validity or invalidity of certain transactions, the characterization of acts or conduct as negligent — or wrong! — are insufficient. Boyce (Del.) 580, 76 A. 475 (1910); Helmick v. Carter, 171 Ill. App. 23 (1912); Heinman v. Felder, 175 Iowa 740, 100 NW. 234 (1916). The Allegations should be Specific, and the facts stated with particularity and certainty. The defendant is entitled to know the ground specified on which the Charge is made.


An Allegation that a certain act was within the scope of employment is a Conclusion of Law. Freidlander v. Rapier, 38 App.D.C. 208 (1912); Sharp v. State, for Use of Brown, 135 MU. 551, 109 A 43-1 (1020); Boston & M. H. R. v. County Com’rs of Middlesex Co., 239 Mass. 127, 131 N.E. 283 (1921).

An Allegation that a municipal corporation “became entitled” to divert water from a river is a Conclusion of Law. It depends for its soundness upon undisclosed or unstated facts, and the Court cannot read into the Pleading the Facts necessary to raise the issue intended to be raised. Legal Conclusions, 21 R.C.L. 440 (1918).

For many illustrations of Allegations held to be Conclusions of Law, see Pomeroy, Code Remedies, c. III, General Principles of Pleading, 564, 565, 566 (4th ed. by Bogle, Boston, 1904); 31 Cyc. 52—05.


DECLARATION—FORM

That the best Pleading Is that which states Facts and not Conclusions of Law, see: Campbell v. Walker, A Declaration alleging the operative facts specifically. Instead of generically charging negligence was cor

Sec. 23

ULTIMATE FACTS AND CONCLUSIONS

and the existence of a legal duty or obligation are often mere Conclusions. A statement that the defendant is indebted to the plaintiff in a certain sum gives no facts to charge the defendant. In Common-Law Pleading, it is permitted under the Common Counts to state this Conclusion of Indebtedness, but it is accompanied by some general statement of the ground of the debt. In referring to this tendency toward generality in Pleading, David Dudley Field said of the Common Counts: “They (the Courts and the Lawyers) made the rules and they defend them, as a means of eliciting the precise point of fact in dispute between the parties; and they contrive every means in their power to conceal it, under forms the most general and unmeaning that can be imagined.”
assist in analyzing and presenting the Issues of Law and Fact upon which the indebtedness depends.

The General Issues at Common Law are usually denials of Legal Conclusions instead of Denials of the Facts from which the liability is inferred; e.g. nil debet, or Not Indebted.

It is not always easy to distinguish the details of evidence, on the one hand, and Conclusions of Law, on the other, from the Operative or Issuable Facts, upon which the right to relief depends. It is often a matter

of degree.31 While the pleading must have certainty and particularity in the Averment of Facts, a General Mode of Pleading is often sufficient as to certain matters, and no greater particularity is required than the nature of the sort of thing described will conveniently admit of. The Rules of Pleading determining whether Allegations must be Generic or Specific—and, if the latter, to what degree—are, like other Rules of Law, based on considerations of policy and convenience. Thus, the facts constituting fraud, are frequently required to be alleged in comparatively detailed form,” ~

In many situations a single convenient term is employed to designate (generically) certain miscellaneous Operative Facts, such

as ownership or possession, which is a method of stating their net force and effect in law, without alleging the specific circumstances. It is sufficient to allege that the plaintiff is the owner of certain land or that he was possessed of certain chattels.36 On the other hand, it would be a Conclusion of

Law to allege that the plaintiff not entitled to the possession.37 would be a Conclusion of Law to allege that it was the defendant’s duty to erect guards about a certain excavation, the facts from which that duty might be inferred by the Court being absent.38 And an Allegation that a deed was “procured by fraud,” or that a certain sum is now “due,” would constitute a legal Conclusion.39 There is a conflict of authority as to whether it is proper to

Plead Generally that defendant “negligently” collided with the plaintiff,49 or whether the Special Circumstances from which neg

31. See article by Cook, Statements of Fact in Pleading Under the Codes, 21 Col.L.Rev. 410 (1021); Itohfeld, Fundamental Legal Conceptions, 23 Yale L.J. 16, 25 (1913).

32. In Lefkovitz V. City of Chicago, 238 Ill. 23, 87 N. B. 58 (1909), it was held that Averments by the plaintiff that obstructions were “wrongfully” placed in a street, and permitted to remain there an “unreaenable” time, were Conclusions of Law.

33. David Dudley Field: What shall be done with the Practice of the Courts? 1 Speeches, Arguments and Miscellaneous Papers 236 (New York, 1884).

34. That a general Allegation of seizure or of ownership Is an Averment of an ultimate fact, and not a Conclusion of Law, see Sheffield sat. Bank ‘v. Corinth Bank & Trust Co., 196 Ala. 275, 72 So. 127 (1916); nail v. Folinar, 199 Ala. 590, 75 So. 172 (1917); Payne v. Treadwell, 16 Cal. 220 (1892); Cheda v. Sodkio, 173 Cal. 7, 158 P. 1025 (1916); Fuller v. Fuller, ITS Cal. 637, 169 P. 869 (1917); Gartlan v. C. A. Hooper & Co., 177 Cal. 414, 170 F. 1115 (1918).

35. Rohfeld, Fundamental Legal Conceptions, 23 lafe L. 16, 27 Note (1918), where operative facts are contrasted with evidential facts.

36. An Allegation ‘that said plaintiff has no right, claim or title to the said painting or picture, and is not entitled to the ownership or possession of the same,” is a Conclusion of Law. Allen Clark Co. v. Francovich, 42 Nev. 321, 176 P. 259 (1918).

On facts which raise a duty, see Schueler v. Mueller, 193 Ill. 402, 61 N.E. 1044 (1901); 31 Cyc. 52.

The existence of a duty must be shown by Facts alleged in the Declaration, and though the Breach of the Duty may be Averred by way of Conclusion, the existence of the duty may not be so alleged. Birmingham Ry, Light & Power Co. v. Littleton, 201 Ala. 141, 77 So. 565 (1917); Alabama Fuel & Iron Co. v. Rush, 204 Ala. 658, 86 So. 541 (1920).

On facts which raise a duty, see Schueler v. Mueller, 193 111. 402, 61 N.E. 1044, (1901); 31 Cyc. 52.

The existence of a duty must be shown by Facts alleged in the Declaration, and though the Breach of the Duty may be Averred by way of Conclusion, the existence of the duty may not be so alleged. Birmingham Ry, Light & Power Co. v. Littleton, 201 Ala. 141, 77 So. 565 (1917); Alabama Fuel & Iron Co. v. Rush, 204 Ala. 658, 86 So. 541 (1920).

Doose v. Dooso, 300 Ill. 134, 133 N.E. 49 (1921);


"The only real question is Whether is it desirable to have a more specific description of the facts upon which the plaintiff relies." Cook, Statements of Fact in Pleading Under the Codes, 21 Col.L.Rev. 420 (1921).

40. It is necessary only to allege negligence by General Averment that the defendant did the Particular Act damaging the plaintiff, Grossetti v. Swayne,

Ch. 4

ligence might be inferred should be set out concretely and in detail. 41. SEVERAL COUNTS IN THE SAME DECLARATION

24. A Count is a separate and independent statement of the material facts constituting a Cause of Action. A Declaration may include several Counts, each Count, in such a case, being regarded as a Separate Declaration. Several Counts may be either of one or two descriptions:

(1) Statements of distinct causes of action,

(2) Different statements of the same cause of action.

ACCORDING to Keigwin, "Duplicity, or Double Pleading, is the stating in support of


The term "facts", "must include many Allegations which are Mixed Conclusions of Law and Statements of Fact; otherwise Pleadings would become intolerably prolix." Mitchell, 1, in C., C. & St. L. By. Co. v. Nichols, (Ind.App.) 130 N.E. 546 (1921).


499—501.

41. A plea of contributory negligence is not sufficient if it merely states a Conclusion of Law, but must Aver the Facts constituting the negligence, which must be such that the Conclusion of Negligence follows as Matter of Law, Dwight Mfg. Co. v. Holmes, 198 Ala. 590, 73 so. 933 (1917); ICigore cc Birmingham By. Light & Power Co., 200 Ala. 238, 75 So. 996 (1917); Southern Cotton Oil Co. v. Woods, 201 Ala. 553, 78 So. 907 (1918); Fusselman v. Yellowstone Valley Land & Irrigation Co., 58 Mont. 254, 163 F. 473 (1915), annotated In Am. Cas.1915B, 420; Valerli v. Breakwater Co., 3 Boyce (Del.) 196, 84 A. 222 (1912), (unsafe cars and tracks, too general).
the same Demand or the same Defence two or more grounds of which either is sufficient for the purpose.

“Thus, for a single piece of work the person liable may at one time promise to pay a certain price and on another occasion promise to pay whatever the work is worth. Since either promise is sufficient to sustain a demand of payment, to allege both would be Double Pleading. So one sued for money may have several Defenses, such a Payment, Want or Failure of Consideration, the Statute of Limitations, a Discharge in Bankruptcy; and one who is sued for nonperformance of something to be done upon request might defend by showing that he was never requested and never refused to perform. In either of these cases, to set up in Defence more than one of the facts available to defeat the suit would constitute Duplicity.”


As the Common Law scheme of remedial ruling was designed to produce a single issue, the determination of which would settle the litigation, Duplicity was regarded as a vice as it conducted to the Multiplication of Issues. Each cause of action and each Defence was required to be placed on one ground, which on Traverse or Plea in Confession and Avoidance would leave only a single point in issue at any one stage of the pleading, and then ultimately develop a single clear-cut Issue of Fact. Double Pleading was therefore prohibited to prevent a party arguing two or more matters from which a plurality of issues might develop. With this preliminary statement in mind, we may now consider the problem presented when Several Counts are placed in the same Declaration, a form of which appears below:


Koftier & Peppy ComLaw Pldg. HR—S

A FORM OF DECLARATION CONTAINING SEVERAL COUNTS:

In the KING’S BENCH Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

FOR that the said C.D. heretofore, to wit, on the day of , A.D. with force and arms, at in the county of made an assault upon the said , and beat, wounded, and ill-treated him, so that his life was despaired of,

And also for that the said C.D. heretofore, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, with force and arms, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, made another assault upon the said , and again beat, wounded, and ill-treated him, so that his life was despaired of, and other wrongs to him then and there did, against the peace of the state.

To the damage of the said A.B. of dollars, and therefore he brings his suit, etc.


Where a party had several distinct causes of action, at Common Law, he was allowed to pursue them cumulatively in the same action, subject to several rules, to be presently explained, as to joining such demands only as were of similar character or quality. Thus, he might join a claim of Debt on a Bond with a claim of Debt on a Simple Contract, and pursue his remedy for both in the same Action of Debt.43 So, if several distinct trespasses were committed, these might all form the subject of one Action in Trespass.

43. Trth„~ Cottun Manufactory v. Lobdell, 13 Johns, (N.Y.) 482 (1810), in which the Court introduced the foliowlag test: “The Rule is
invariable, that Causes of Action, which admit of the Same Plea and the Same Judgment, may be Joined; but the ecaverse of this proposition is not invariably true.”

44. That different Acts of Negligence may be charged in different Counts as the Cause of Injury, see Scott

Where the plaintiff thus makes several demands in the same action, he should set them out separately in his Declaration in what are called “Separate Counts.” Each Count is a separate, independent statement of a cause of action.

Moreover, a plaintiff is permitted to state the same cause of action in different ways in different Counts, as if he were setting out so many separate and distinct causes of action. This was for the purpose of preventing the defeat of a just cause of action through an incidental variance between the evidence produced at the Trial and the Allegations contained in the various Counts. In an effort to avoid such an occurrence, the same cause of action was stated in different Counts so as to meet any variation in the evidence which might develop at the Trial.

The use of Several Counts was subject to the requirement that each Count must be as complete and distinct in itself as if pleaded alone. The sufficiency of one of Several Counts was determined on its own Averments, without regard to the other Counts. One Count, however, might make reference to another for relevant matter without the necessity of repeating it.

The use of Several Counts when applied to distinct causes of action was entirely consistent with the Rule Against Duplicity, as the object of that rule was to prevent several issues in respect to the same demand only, there being no objection to having several issues where the demands were several.


And Several Acts of Negligence causing the Injury may be alleged in One Count of a Declaration as


Where Several Counts were thus used, the defendant might, according to the nature of his Defense, Demur to the entire Declaration, or plead a single Plea to the entire Declaration, or he might follow the course of Demurring to one Count and pleading to another, or he might plead a Separate Plea to each Count; and in the two latter cases the action may cause a corresponding severance in the subsequent pleading, and the production of several issues. But, whether one or more issues be produced, if the decision, whether on Law or Fact, was in the plaintiff’s favor, as to any one or more Counts, he was entitled to Judgment pro tanto, even though he failed as to the remainder.”

JOINER OF DIFFERENT CAUSES OF ACTION

25. Where the plaintiff has several and distinct causes of action of the same nature and character, or to which the same Plea may be pleaded, and on which the same Judgment may be rendered, he may pursue them all in the same Declaration.

THE joinder of distinct causes of action was permissible under the conditions stated

47. In general, on the subject of Joinder and Misjoinder of Causes of Action at Common Law, under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, See:

S6 DECLARATION—FORM

Articles: Sunderland, Joinder of Actions, 18 Mich.L.Rev. 571 (1920); flume, A Rational Theory for Joinder of Causes, etc., 26 Mich.L.Rev. 1 (1927);
Toelle, Joinder of Actions—With Special Reference to Montana and California Practice, 18 Calif.L.Rev. 459 (1930); Gavitt, The Joinder of Causes of Action for Injuries Sustained by Those Standing in Familial Relationship, 41 Dickinson L.Rev. 459 (1938); Wheaton, Causes of Action Blended, 22 Minn. L.Rev. 43 (1938); flume, Free Joinder of Parties, Claims and Counterclaims, 2 P.1LD. 250 (1943);
Dutcher, Joinder of Parties and Actions, 29 Iowa L.Rev. 3 (1043); Blmme, Required Joinder of Claims, 45 Mich.L.Rev. 797 (1947); Lugar, Common Law Pleading Modified Versus the Federal Rules, 52 W. Va.L.Rev. 137 at 145 (1950); Wright, Joinder of Sec. 25

JOINDER OF CAUSES OF ACTION

above, though it seems that the first, or nature of the cause of action, was the best criterion, as instances existed permitting the uniting of Debt and Detinue, or Debt on a Specialty with the same action on a Judgment or Simple Contract, where the Pleas were different, and the Judgment in Detinue was also in a different form. In actions in form ex contractu, the plaintiff might join as many Counts as he had causes of action of the

Claims and Parties Under Modern Pleading Rules, 36 Minn.L.Rev. 580 (1052).


Annotations: Joinder or Representation of Several Claimants in Action Against Carrier or Utility to Recover Overcharge, 1 £LJt.2d 160 (1948); Joinder In Defamation Action, of Denial and Plea of Truth of Statement, 21 A.L.R.2d 813 (1952); Joinder of Cause of Action for Pain and Suffering of Decedent with Cause of Action for Wrongful Death, 35 A. L.R.2d 1377 (1954).

48. Tidd, Practice of the Court of Chancery's Bench, c. I, Of Actions, and the Time Limited for their commencement, 12 (0th ed. London, 1828); 1 Chitty, Pleading and Parties to Actions with Precedents, e, II, Of Forms of Action, 229 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield, 1876). See, also, Whipple v. Fuller, 11 Coan. 582, 29 Am.Dec. 330 (1836); Chicago, W. D. By. v. Ingraham, 131 111. 659, 23 N.E. 350 (1890); Brady v. Spurek, 27 Ill. 478 (1861);
Union Cotton ?,lannfactory v. Lobdell, 13 Johns.- (N.Y.) 462 (1816).

According to Professor Edson 11. Sunderland, Misjoinder of Causes of Action was at Common Law, without good reason, regarded as a most serious error. See article, Joinder of Actions, 18 Mich.Litct. 571, 574 (1920).

But some actions of different forms, such as Debt and Detinue, Case and Trover, could be joined. Misjoinder might result from the diversity of capacities in which the parties sued or were sued.

49. The general issue In Debt on a Specialty was ex contractu. In Debt on a Judgment, nisi debet or nul itiel record. The Judgment in Detinue was in the alternatite, for the goods or their value. See article by Howe, Misjoinder of Causes of Action In Illinois, 14 Ill.L.Rev. 581 (1920), same nature in Assumpsit, and, as above observed, in the different Actions of Debt, or Debt with DetinumP0 So, several distinct trespasses, both to the person and property, might be joined in the same Declaration in Trespass, and several takings at different days and places in Replevin, and several causes of action in Case might
be joined with Trover. But when the causes of action were of a different nature, and tile same Judgment could not be rendered, they could not be joined!” Actions cx contractu could not be joined with those in form cx delicto.,

though the case of Debt and Detinue seems

30. Union Cotton Manufactory v. Lobdell, 13 Johns. (N.Y.) 402 (1816); Smith v. Proprietors of First Congregational Meetinghouse in Lowell, 6 Pick. (Mass.) 178 (1820); Farnham v. hay, 3 Blackf. (md.) 167 (1833); Gray v. Johnson, 14 N.H. 414 (1843); Tillotson v. Stipp, 1 Blackf. (laid.) 77 (1820).


57. Fitzherbert, Natura Brevinm, 68, note a (London, 1566); Buller, Nisi Prius, c. IV, 54 (Dublin, 1791).


But a Count in Trover could not be joined with one in Trespass. Crenshaw v. Moore, 10 Ga. 3.84 (1851).

And ns to Joinder of Slander and Malicious Prosecution, see Miles v. Oldueld, 4 Ycates (Pa.) 423, 2 Am. Dec. 412 (1807).


55. Alabama: Copeland v. Flowers, 21 Ala. 472(1852);


97

DECLARATION—FORM

Ch. 4
to constitute an exception, and Assumpsit cannot be joined with Account, or Covenant or Debt,” or Trespass with Case, as they Were actions of different natures; and, for the same reason, it was not possible to join Trespass or Case with Detinue or Replevin.

Neither can Causes of action due in different rights be joined. In referring to this very point, Professor Edam R. Sunderland said: “Thus a Count on behalf of two plaintiffs jointly could not be joined with a Count on behalf of one of them severally; Counts could not be joined each of which set up a several right in a different plaintiff against the same defendant; Counts setting up different causes of action in favor of the same plaintiff against different defendants could not be joined; and Counts alleging the joint liability of two or more defendants could not be joined with Counts alleging the several liability of any or all of them.”

50. See Tidd, Practice of the Court of King’s Bench, C. I, Of Actions, and the Time Limited for Their Commencement, 11 note b (9th ed., London 1828). It has been shown above that Debt and Detinue were closely related in origin, and that Detinue first lay to enforce the obligation of a bailor to deliver.

57. Pell v. Lovett, 19 Wend. (N.Y.) 546 (1838); Canton National Bldg. Ass’n v. Weber, 34 Md. 669 (1871); Crulkshank v. Brown, 5 Oilman (Ill.) 75 (1848); McOianity V. Laguerenne, 5 Oilman (Ill.) 101 (1848); Guinnip v. Carter, 58 Ill. 296 (1871). See also, Mayer v. Lawrence, 58 Ill.App. 105 (1894).
DIFFERENT VERSIONS OF THE SAME CAUSE OF ACTION

26. Facts constituting but a single cause of action may be differently stated in Separate Counts, in the same Declaration, without duplicity.

THE Rule here stated is the result of an ancient relaxation of the Rule against Duplicity, allowed where the nature of the facts upon which the plaintiff’s claim rests rendered it doubtful whether a single statement might not fail to justify a recovery, either from insufficiency in Law, or inability to properly support the claim by competent proof. The pleader is therefore permitted to include in his Declaration several statements of the same Cause of Action, each of which differently represents the same State of Facts, and upon one of which a Verdict may be obtained, though he fail as to the rest. He may thus insert as many Counts or Statements as he pleases, though there can be but one recovery of the sum claimed as due.

This Rule, says Stephen, is a relaxation of very ancient date, and has long since passed, by continual sufferance, into allowable and regular practice. It takes place when the pleader, in drawing the Declaration in Any Action, after having set forth his case in one view, feels doubtful whether, as so stated, it may not be insufficient in Point of Law, or incapable of proof in Point of Fact, and at the same time perceives another Mode of Statement by which the apprehended difficulty may probably be avoided. Not choosing to rely on either view of the case exclusively, he takes the course of adopting both, and accordingly inserts the second form of statement, in the shape of a second Count, in the same manner as if he were proceeding for a separate Cause of Action. If, upon the same principle, he wishes to vary still further the Method of Allegation, he may find it necessary to add many other succeeding Counts besides the second; and thus, in practice, a great Variety of Counts often occurs in respect of the same Cause of Action, the Law not having set any limits to the discretion of the Pleader, in This respect, if fairly and rationally exercised.

Resort may be had to Several Counts in respect of the same Cause of Action, either where the State of Facts to which each Count refers is really different, or where the same State of Facts is differently represented.

The first case may be illustrated by an Action of Debt on a Penal Bond whereby the defendant engaged to pay a certain penalty in the event of nonpayment of a sum of money on the 11th of June, and another sum on the 10th of July, and a certain sum every month after, till a certain sum was satisfied. Let it be supposed that the plaintiff complains of a failure in payment both on the 11th of June and 10th of July. Either failure entitles him to the penal sum for which he brings the action; but, if he states them both in the same Count, the Declaration will be double. The case, however, may be such as to make it convenient to rely on both defaults; for there may be a doubt whether one or other of the payments were not made.

St Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c, H, Of the Principal Rules of Pleading, § 3, 258 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1892); Ward v. Bell, 2 Dowl. 76 (1833) (The Judge in the Trial Court compared different counts to safety valves); Newby v. Mason, 1 Dowl. & Ryland 508 (1822). See, also, Keigwin, Precedents in Pleading, Case XVII, 425—428 (Washington, D. C. 1900).
though it may be certain that there was at least one default; and if, under these circumstances, the plaintiff should set forth one of the defaults, and the defendant should take issue upon it, he might defeat the action by proving payment on the day alleged, though he would have been unable to prove the other payment. To meet this difficulty, the pleader might resort to two Counts. The first of these would set forth the penal bond, alleging a default of payment on the 11th of June; the second would again set forth the same bond, describing it as “a certain other bond,” etc., and would allege a default on the 10th of July. The effect of this would be that the plaintiff, at the Trial, might rely on either default, as he might then find convenient. In this instance, the Several Counts are each founded on a different State of Facts, that is, a different default in payment, though in support of the same demand.

But it more frequently happens that it is the same State of Facts differently represented which forms the subject of different Counts. Thus, where a man has ordered goods of another, and an action is brought against him for the price, the circumstances may be conceived to be such as to raise a doubt whether the transaction ought to be described as one of goods sold and delivered, or of work and labor done, and, in this case, there would be two Counts, setting forth the claim both ways, in order to secure a Verdict, at all events, upon one of them. The best illustration of the practice of thus restating a Cause of Action in the same Declaration is found in the use of the Common Counts in General Assumpsit, which appear in the chapter on the Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit. They embrace not only what are called the “Money Counts,” or those for money transactions, but also include Counts for almost any State of Facts upon which a debt may be founded. The Money Counts are those generally for money lent to the defendant, had and received by him for the plaintiff,

DECLARATION—FORM

or paid out for him by the latter, for interest due, and for an account “stated” or agreed upon. The others may be, among other things, for work and labor, goods sold and delivered, use and occupation, etc. And first of all, preceding the Common Counts, there may be a Special Count declaring on an express contract. This is done because it often happens that, when the Special Counts are found incapable of proof at the Trial, the Cause of Action will resolve itself into one of these general pecuniary forms of demand, and thus the plaintiff may obtain a Verdict on one of these Money Counts, though he fail as to all the rest.

Again, the same State of Facts may be varied by omitting in one Count some matter stated in another. In such a case the More Special Count is used, lest the omission of this matter should render the other Insufficient in Point of Law. The More General Count is adopted, because, if good in Point of Law, it will relieve the plaintiff from the necessity of proving such omitted matter in Point of Fact. If the defendant Demurs to the latter Count as insufficient, and takes Issue in Fact on the former, the plaintiff has the chance of proving the matter alleged, and also the chance of succeeding on the Demurrer.

It is to be observed that, whether the subjects of Several Counts be really distinct or identical, they must always purport to be founded on distinct Causes of Action, and not to refer to the same matter; and this is effected by the insertion of such words as “other,” “the further sum”, etc. This is evidently rendered necessary by The Rule against Duplicity, which, though evaded, as to The Declaration, by The use of Several Counts, in the manner here described, is not to be directly violated.

Page 112 of 735
27. The Declaration must correspond with the Writ or Process. The formal statement of the Cause of Action must correspond with all the material statements in the Process by which the action is commenced, or the deviation will constitute a Variance.

It was a rule of great antiquity that the Declaration must Conform to the Original Writ, and, though the Original Writ is no longer in use, the Rule is to be regarded as still in force, in its effect, in such of the United States as follow the Methods of Pleading at Common Law, as to the Process now generally in use for commencing an Action in the place of the Original Writ. A convincing proof of its force at the present day is that even in Code Pleading, though some writers claim that the principles applicable are derived entirely from the Practice Act itself, and not from the Common Law, the agreement between the Summons and Complaint in most of the particulars hereafter mentioned is essential, and for the same reason. Under the Rule, it may be taken as still requisite that the Declaration must correspond with the Process in the following respects: (1) As to the Names of Parties to the Action, though when the Process describes the defendant by a wrong name, and he appears in his right one, he may be declared against by the latter;” (2) As to the number of parties, for it would not be allowable to Commence an Action in the name of one, and Frame the Declaration—an intermediate step—in the names of several;” (3) As to the character in which the parties sue or are sued. If the action is brought by the plaintiff in a representative capacity, as an executor, the plaintiff cannot declare in his own right, though, if he styles himself executor simply, without showing that he sues as such, he may declare in his own right, the demand being still the same,

The consequences of a Variance between the Declaration and Process were generally serious at Common Law, though the strictness formerly prevailing has been considerably relaxed. The fault may be generally taken advantage of by Plea in Abatement, except where modified rules have been adopted in different states, though a Variance as to the Cause of Action is ground for setting aside the Proceedings as irregular.

And it is only prima facie evidence of the fact and not conclusive. Burdick v. Green, 18 Johns. (N.Y.) 14 (1820).

14. Illinois: Prince v. Lamb, 1 Breese (Ill.) 878 (1830);


CHAPTER 5

Sec.

THE DECLARATION—GENERAL RULES AS TO ALLEGING PLACE, TIME, TITLE AND OTHER COMMON MATTERS

28. Laying the Venue.
29. Local and Transitory Actions.
30. Local Facts—Venue in Pleadings Subsequent to the Declaration.
31. Consequences of Mistake or Omission.
32. Time.
33. When Time Must be Truly Stated,
34. When Time Need Not be Truly Stated.
36. Description of Property.
37. Names of Persons.
38. Parties to the Action.
39. Showing Title.
40. Title in the Party or in One Whose Authority He Pleads.
41. Alleging Derivation of Title—Estates in Fee Simple.
42. Alleging Derivation of Title—Particular Estates.
43. Title by Inheritance.
44. Title by Alienation or Conveyance.
45. Manner of Pleading Conveyance.
46. The Written Conveyance and the Statute of Frauds.
47. Where a Party Alleges Title in His Adversary.
48. What is a Sufficient Allegation of Liability.
49. Proof of Title as Alleged.
50. Estoppel of Adverse Party.
51. Showing as to Authority.
52. Proof of Deeds.
53. Writings Pledged According to Legal Effect.
54. Damages—General and Special.

LAYING THE VENUE

28. In all Pleadings, some certain place must be alleged for every affirmative Traversable Fact, which place is called the ‘Venue’ of the action. The Venue in all actions is to be laid truly, or at the option of the pleader, according as the same are respectively:

(I) Local, or
(II) Transitory

WITH each stage in the development of the Jury, the manner of laying Venue underwent a change. During the first or earliest stage, the general rule was that each affirmative Traversable Allegation in the Original Writ, and also in the Declaration, which was required to Conform to the Writ in this as in other particulars, was to be laid with a Venue or place comprising, not only the county, but the specific place in the county in which the fact
occurred. The rule also applied to actions Commenced by Bill instead of by Original Writ. And in both cases
the Plea, Replication and Subsequent Pleadings were required to lay Venue to
Sec. 29
each affirmative Traversable Allegation. This laying of the Venue in connection with each Traversable
Allegation in the Body of the Declaration or other pleading is designated as the Fact Venue.

In the second stage of the Jury’s growth, and after the statute of 1705, the Jury was summoned from
the county in which the action was triable, whether or not the fact in issue occurred there. The statute of 16
& 17 Car. II, enacted in 1664, provided that
a Judgment after Verdict should not be stayed or reversed on account of the Venue, if the cause were tried by a Jury
of the county where the action was laid. According to Stephen, the practice of laying a Venue in the Body of
the Pleadings became “an unmeaning form,” the Venue in the margin having been long found sufficient
for all practical purposes.” And by the Hilary Rules of 1834, it was provided that “The name of a county
shall in all cases be stated in the margin of a Declaration; and shall be taken to be the Venue intended by the
plaintiff, and no Venue shall be stated in the Body of the Declaration, or in any Subsequent Pleading.
Provided, that in cases where local description is now required, such local description shall be given.”

A Venue should be laid in the Declaration, but failure to lay any Venue in a Transitory Action is regarded
merely as a formal defect, which can only be taken advantage of by

(1888). See, also, Platz v. Meltean Twp., 178 Pa. 601, 36 At!.. 139 (1897); Read v. Walker, 52 III. 333 (1869).
2. Statute 4 Anne, c. 16, § 6, 11 Statutes at Large 156 (1705).
3. Chapter 8.
~ Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, C. F, Of the Principal Rules of Pleading, § IV, 259 (Williston edition, Cambridge,
1895).

103

Special Demurrer. In Massachusetts it was held that a Declaration in a Transitory Action, without a Venue,
or with a wrong one, is bad in form if Specially Demurred to for this cause; but that objection cannot be
taken in any other way. In most states it is not considered necessary, as formerly, in a Transitory Action,
to lay every Traversable Fact affirmatively alleged with a Venue. It is sufficient if the name of the county
appear in the margin, though it may not be alleged at all in the Body of the Declaration.

LOCAL AND TRANSITORY ACTIONS

29. A Local Action is one where the transaction upon which it is founded could only occur in a particular
place, and may be either for:
(I) The recovery of land; or
(II) The establishment or maintenance of a right arising out of land, or the recovery of damages for its
injury.

Transitory Actions are those founded on transactions which might have taken place anywhere.

THE law distinguishes between transactions which might occur at any place and

7. Briggs v. President, etc. of Nantucket Bank, 5
Mass. 94 (1809). And, see, to the same effect, Pullen
v. Delaware, L. & W. B. Co., 51 N.J.L. 56, 16 At!. 12
(1888); Blackstoae Nat. Bank v. Lane, 80 Me. 165, 13 A.U. 683 (1888).

8. Slate ‘cc Post, 9 Johns. (N.Y.) 81 (1812). And see
   County Com’rs of Hartford County v. Wise, 71 Md. 43, 18 A.U. 31 (1889); Capp v. Oilman, 2 Blackf. (md.) 45 (1827); Puffen v. Chase, 4 Ark. 210 (1841);
   Benton v. Brown, 1 Mo. 393 (1823); Thorwarth v. Blanchard, 86 Vt. 296, 85 Atl. 6 (1912).

9. In general, on Local and Transitory Actions, see:
   Articles: Kuhn, Local and Transitory Actions in PH~Vate International Law, 66 U. of Pa.L.Rev. 301 (1918); Starke, The Venue of Actions of Trespass to Land, 27 W.Va.L.Q. 301 (1920—21); Wheaton, Nature of Actions—Local and Transitory, 18 Ill.L.Rev. 456 (1922).

   Statutes: 28 U.S.C.A. 1392 (1068); Section 082a of the New York Code of Civil Procedure, adopted as 536 of the New York Real Property Law, construed

   LOCAL AND TRANSITORY ACTIONS

104

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

Ch. 5

those which must occur at some certain place. Causes of action which do not necessarily arise in any specific place are Transitory, and may be brought in any jurisdiction in which the plaintiff succeeds in serving the defendant personally. Causes of action which necessarily involve a certain locality, such, for example, as an Action of Ejectment, are Local, and must be tried in the place where property involved is located. The distinction between Actions which are Local and hence must be brought in the jurisdiction where the property concerned is located, and Actions which are Transitory, and hence may be brought in any place where jurisdiction of the defendant may be obtained, is one which exerts an influence upon the laying of the Venue.

Local Actions, therefore, embrace all those brought for the recovery of the seisin or possession of lands and tenements, which are purely local subjects, as an Action of Ejectment. An Action for Injury to real estate as by negligence, nuisance, or trespass, are examples of Local Actions. An


10. Hill v. Nelson, 70 N.J.L. 376, 57 Atl. 411 (1904), in which the leading cases on this point are discussed.


action for obstructing a highway, is Local. In some states, however, Trespass may be maintained for injury
to land located in a foreign jurisdiction.\textsuperscript{14} Thus, in New York, an express statutory enactment \textit{authorized} Actions for Trespass to realty lying outside the State, and this Statute was subsequently construed in \textit{Jacobus v. Colgate}.\textsuperscript{6}

In the famous case of \textit{Mostyn v. Fabrigns},\textsuperscript{17} Lord Mansfield, by way of dictum, took the view that Actions in Personam, including such actions as Trespass to the land, should be declared Transitory and not Local. The same view had been expressed by the same Judge in two earlier cases at Nisi Prius, but they were subsequently repudiated in \textit{Shelling v. Farmer}\textsuperscript{5} and \textit{Doulson v. Matthews}.\textsuperscript{19}

However this may be, where the Action is admittedly Local, the place where the land is situated must be truly stated. If it be misstated, there will be a fatal Variance between the Pleading and the Proof, place being here material as a matter of properly describing the subject matter of the action. The reason of the rule as to all Local Actions is that, as no Court has Jurisdiction over

\textit{Local and Transitory Actions}

local matters arising within a foreign sovereignty, no action will lie in any one sovereign state for the recovery of lands or tenements situated in another.\textsuperscript{20}

\begin{itemize}
  \item 18. 4 T.R. 503, 100 Eng.Rep. 1143 (1792), \textit{Local and Transitory Actions}.
  \item 19. The following Actions are Local, and within this rule:
  \begin{itemize}
    \item 21. And, as to the difference between Local and Transitory Actions, see Mason v. Warner, 31 Mo, 508 (1862); Hcn-voood v. Cheeseman, S Serg. & B. (Pa.) 503 (1817).
    \item 22. In an Action of Debt on a Judgment of a Court of Record, the Venue must be laid in the county where the Record is located. I Chitty, on Pleading, c. IV, Of the Declaration, 281 (Philadelphia 1819); Barnes v. Kenyon, 2 Johns.Cas. (N.Y.) 381 (1801); Smith v. Clark, 1 Ark. 63 (1838); but this is not the general rule under the Codes.
    \item 23. At Common Law Replevin was purely a Local Action, as Non Cepit denied the taking at the place mentioned in the Declaration, to wit, on the land of the tenant, but the Action has been made Transitory by Statute In some states.
  \end{itemize}
  \item 24. Trespass to Realty is Local, not Transitory, anti cannot be brought in another state than where the land is situated, unless authorized by Statute. Taylor v. Sommers Bros. Match Co., 204 Pac. 472 (Idaho, 1922).
  \item 25. See, also, Note: Right to Sue in a Foreign Jurisdiction for an Injury to Real Estate, 5 Minn.L.Rev. 03 (1920); TresTopsy—Courts—Jurisdiction—Negligence—Right to Sue In a Foreign Jurisdiction for Injury to Real Estate, 6 Minn.L.Rev. 516 (1922); Nature of Ac-
Generally speaking, all actions which are called “personal,” whether they sound in Tort, or Contract, are Transitory in their nature, since the facts from which they arise may be supposed to have happened anywhere, and, in contemplation of Law, have no natural locality. Place is, therefore, not material, and the Venue may be laid in any county, even though the cause of action arose within a Foreign Jurisdiction.

In some cases the Venue must be laid truly; in others this is not necessary, but


22. As in Account, Assumpsit and Covenant. Between the original parties to the deed, and generally in Debt and Detinuc. In actions upon leases for nonpayment of rent, etc., whether the Action is Transitory or not depends upon whether it is founded upon privity of contract. If based upon privity of estate, as where the action is brought by the lessor or his personal representatives, or by the grantee of the reversion against the assignee of the lessee, it is Local. See White v. Sanborn, 6 N.H. 220 (1853); Clarkson v. Gifford, 1 Caines (N.Y.) 5 (1803). Cf. New York Corporation v. Dawson, 2 Johns.Cas, 335 (1801).

Trespass or injury to land is a Local Action. Hill v. Nelson, 70 N.J.L. 376, 57 Atl. 411 (1004); British South Africa Co. v. Compania de Mocambique, [1893] AC, 602, 633; 1 Chitty, on Pleading, e. IV'. Of the Declaration 279~ (Springfield, 1876); Gould, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, c. I, The Major Requisites of Pleading, 271 (6th ed. by Will, Albany, 1000); 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. VIII, Natural History of Remedial Law 90~ 94 (Northport, 1000); Note: Right to Sue in a Foreign Jurisdiction for Injury to Real Estate, 5 Minn. L.Rev. 63 (1920).


Sec. 29

105

106

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

Ch. 5

it may be laid at the option of the pleader, This depends, as we shall now see, on the question whether the action is Local or Transitory. And in this connection two situations will be considered:

(1) Where the facts are of a Transitory character, that is, not associated with any particular locality, the facts may be stated as having occurred at one place and proved as occurring at any other. In other words the Venue does not have to be stated truly, as was the case where the jurors were selected because of their own peculiar knowledge of the facts in issue. In practice, however, it was always the better part of wisdom to Jay the Venue truly. But a Variance in respect to a Transitory Fact, unless it involved a matter of description, would not prove fatal. Thus, if A alleged that B assaulted him at a certain place, he might support his Allegation by Proof that the assault took place at any other place. And the defendant, in his Plea, was ordinarily required to follow the Venue of the Declaration and could not specify another place for his Defense, even if that other place accorded with the truth. But when the Defense depended for its validity upon its locality, and the place where it arose was not in accord with the place laid in the Declaration, the defendant might state the actual place, where he could justify by way of a plea of special traverse.

(2) Where the cause of action was of a local nature, that is, where it concerned land, an action could not be supported in a jurisdiction which did not include the subject matter—the land. Thus, for example, if A brought an Action of Ejectment in county X


against B for land described as located in county F, the action would fail; in other words the defect would be available on Demurrer to the Declaration. And if the land were untruly described as being in county X, when the fact appeared in Proof at the Trial that the land was located in another county, the action would be dismissed. And the same was true where the action was brought for a trespass upon land which was in fact located in a foreign state. 27

Laying the Venue Under a Videlicet

Since place was not material in Transitory Actions, and the Venue could be laid in any county, even though the cause of action arose within a foreign jurisdiction, a remedy was thus afforded, not only in one state or county, for an injury to personal property within the limits of another, or without the limits of the United States, but also for the Breach of any Contract, wherever executed, and even where relating to land. 28 When the Cause of Action and the Action itself were thus Transitory in their character, the plaintiff, in laying the Venue, was permitted to depart as widely from the fact as he thought fit and as was necessary to give the court in which he sued jurisdiction, without causing a discrepancy between the Allegations in the Declaration and the proof at the trial. The usual way of accomplishing this was by stating truly the facts constituting the cause of action as occurring at the place where it really happened, and then laying the Venue under a videlicet, as within the jurisdiction of the court; thus it might be alleged that the deed was dated “at Fort St. George in the East Indies, to wit, at Westminster in the County of Middlesex,” 29 or that the


Sec. 31

MISTAKE OR OMISSION

trespass was committed in “Allegheny County in Maryland, to wit (scilicet) in the county of Washington in the District of Columbia.” This fictitious device was still in use in England in the early part of the Nineteenth Century, and was used in the United States as late as 189S. 30 But, according to Keigwin, 31 it “is now used only by exceptionally careful pleaders.”

LOCAL FACTS—VENUE IN PLEADINGS SUBSEQUENT TO TEE DECLARATION

30. Local Facts must always be truly laid, both in the Declaration and Subsequent Pleadings, whether the Action be Local or Transitory. And in Transitory Actions, where the defendant pleads Transitory matters, the Venue must follow the Declaration, unless his Defense requires a different statement.

IT has been seen that in all Local Actions it is necessary to Aver all material facts as happening where they actually occurred, and the same is equally true as to the Allegation of all Local Facts in both the Declaration and Subsequent Pleadings, whether the Action be Local or Transitory. But in actions of the latter kind, where the Subsequent Pleadings allege only matters Transitory in their nature, it is a rule that the Place of Trial laid in the Declaration draws to itself the Trial of all such matters. 32 The defendant, therefore, in such cases, is obliged to follow the Venue that the plaintiff has laid, unless his Defense requires the Allegation of a different place; for, if allowed to deviate from this, without the necessity arising from a Defense founded upon Local Facts, he would be able to change or oust the Venue in Transitory Actions, and thus to subvert the rule allowing the plaintiff in such actions

30. Holder v. Aultman, 169 U.s. 81, 18 S.Ct. 269, 42 LEd. 669 (1898).

32. 5 Comyn’s Digest, ‘Pleade” E, 4 (Dublin, 1793).

**to bring his suit, and consequently to lay**

his Venue, in any county he pleases. It would seem that the necessity of laying any Venue at all in proceedings subsequent to the Declaration would be obviated by this rule, and it has been so held; but in practice it is still usual to lay a Venue in these as well as in the Declaration, and, in point of form, is the proper course.

**CONSEQUENCES OF MISTAKE**

**OR OMISSION**

31. A mistake or omission in laying the **Venue may be taken advantage of**—

(I) By Demurrer, where the defect is apparent on the **Face of the Declaration**

(II) By Plea in Bar or Motion for Non-suit, where it is not.

**BY the ancient rule of the Common Law,**

a mistake in laying the Venue for Local Matters was ground for Nonsuit, by reason of misdescription of the subject matter of the suit, and its omission, when necessary, an incurable defect. But since the establishment of the distinction between Local and Transitory Actions, if the fault appears on the face of the Declaration, it will be good cause for Special Demurrer; and, if it does not so appear, it may be Plead in Bar of the Action, or taken advantage of at the Trial, by Motion for a Nonsuit on the ground of Variance. And in Transitory Actions, also, an omission of the Venue, if not Demurred to, may be aided by any Plea which admits the fact for the Trial of which a prop-


476 (1703), per Lyre, C.J.


35. 3 Comyn’s Digest, ‘Action” N, 6 (Dublin, 7793); 7 Bacon’s Abridgment, “Venue” 48 (London 1798).


37. See Haskeflv. Inhabitants of Woolwich 58 Me.

535 (1870).

108

**THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE**

**Ch. 5**

er Venue should have been laid, or by a Judgment by Default, or by verdict; but even in Transitory Actions, as it is necessary that some Venue be laid, the omission remains fatal on Demurrer.

**TIME**

32. In Personal Actions, the pleadings must allege the time—that is, the day, month and year—when each Traversable Fact occurred; and when a continuing act is mentioned, its duration should be shown.

IT is a general rule of pleading in Personal Actions that the necessity of laying a time, like that of laying a Venue, extends to every Traversable Fact and must be stated as having taken place on some particular day. The rule seems on the surface designed merely to promote Certainty in the Pleadings, and though but little practical certainty can result from it, is necessary both to show upon the Record a material fact afterwards to be sustained by Proof, as well as, in the case of the Declaration, that the cause of action, upon the plaintiff’s own showing, must always appear to have accrued before the commencement of the suit. It has been laid


40. By the express provisions of the Statute of 16 & 17 Car. II, c. 5 (1664—1665).

41. See Perry, Common-Law Pleading, e. XII, Of The Rules Which Tend to Produce Certainty or Particularity in the Issue, 334, 335 (Boston, 1897).


43. Swift v. Crocker, 21 Pick. (Mass.) 241 (1838); Maynard v. Talcott, 11 Barb. (N.Y.) 569 (1852); Cheetbam v. Lewis, 3 Johns. (N.Y.) 42 (1808); Lan-

down as a general principle, that whenever it is necessary to lay a Venue, it is also necessary to mention time. Thus, where the Declaration stated a usurious contract made on December 21, 1774, with payment due on December 23, 1776, and the proof was that the contract was executed on December 23, 1774, with payment due in two years, it was held that the Verdict must be for the defendant; the principle of this decision was that since the time given for the payment being of the substance of an usurer v. Parish, 8 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 134 (1822), and cases cited.

It is equally essential that no material fact be stated as having occurred alter the date or issuance of the writ, that being now regarded as the Commencement of the Action. Bemis v. Faxon, 4 Mass. 263 (1808); Waring v. Yates, 10 Johns. (N.Y.) 119 (1813); Bronson v. Earl, 17 Johns. (N.Y.) 63 (1819).

But, in some states, the service of the Writ is regarded as the Commencement of the Action. Jeneks v. Phelps, 4 Conn. 149 (1822); Downer v. Garland, 21 Vt. 362 (1840); Graves v. Ticknor, 6 N.H. 537 (1834).


On the rule where the instrument sued upon has no date, see Grannis v. Clark, S Cow. (N.Y.) 36 (1827); Streeter v. Streeter, 43 Ill. 155 (1867).

Sec. 34

WHEN TIME NEED NOT BE TRULY STATED

ous contract, such time had to be proved as laid. So, where the Declaration alleged an usurious agreement on the 14th of the month, to forbear and give day of payment for a certain period, but it was proved that the money was not advanced until the 16th, the plaintiff was Nonsuited, it being held by Lord Mansfield at the Trial, and afterwards by the Court en banc, that the day from whence the forbearance took place was material, though laid under a Videlicet.

In pleading any written document, therefore, such a bill of exchange, promissory note, a record or a specialty, the
day on which it is alleged to bear date, must be correctly alleged. Otherwise there will be a Variance between the writing itself when offered in evidence and the description of it in the pleading.45

The same rule applies whenever the time stated in the pleadings on either side is to be proved by Record or by a written instrument referred to in the pleadings. This rule in regard to written instruments is necessary for the further reason that the Record should thus show the true date, and thus constitute a bar to another suit on the same instrument by giving a different date, it having been one of the objects of the rule as to certainty, so far as the Declaration was concerned, that the Judgment rendered in the case should operate as a bar to any subse-uent action involving the same cause.

WHEN TIME NEED NOT BE TRULY STATED

34. Whenever the time to be alleged does not constitute a material point in the case, and is not of the substance of the issue or matter of


The pleader, however, “is subject to certain restrictions: 1. He should lay the Time under a videlicet, if he does not wish to be held to prove it strictly;
2. He should not lay a Time that is intrinsically Impossible, or inconsistent with the fact to which It relates.” Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c. XI, Of the Principal Rules of Pleading, § IV, Rule II, 279 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1893).

50. Time is not material in trespass. Co.Litt. 283a (Philadelphia, 1812). And see, also, Pierce v. Pick-ens, 16 Mass. 472 (1520); Folger v. Fields, 12 Gush. (Mass.) 93 (1853).


110

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

but may support the Allegation by Proof of a different day, except that the day as laid in the Declaration, and as proved, must both be prior to the Commencement of the Suit.52 As the plaintiff is not generally confined in
evidence to the time stated in the Declaration, so the defendant is not restricted to that laid in the Plea; and so on through the Subsequent Pleadings. Obviously, a time should not be stated that is intrinsically impossible, or inconsistent with the fact to which it relates. A time so laid would generally be ground for Demurrer. However, there is no ground for demurrer if the time is unnecessarily laid as a Fact not Traversable, for an unnecessary statement of time, though impossible or inconsistent, will do no harm.

**Time to be alleged in the Plea**

WHERE time is not material to the Defense, and the matter of Complaint and Defense, from the nature of the case, must have occurred at one and the same time, the defendant in pleading must follow the day laid in the Declaration.

This general rule has long been established, and its effect is that the Plea must state the Matter of Defense as having occurred on the day mentioned in the Declaration, even though that be not the true day, unless the nature or circumstances of the Defense render it necessary for the defendant to vary from the time thus stated. Its object seems to be the prevention of an apparent discrepancy upon the Record in respect to time, where the alleged Cause of Action and the Defense pleaded actually occurred at one and the same time, and where the defendant is under no necessity of laying

*English:* Ring v. Roxbrough, 2 Tyr. 468 (1532); Cf. International & O. N. B. Co. v. Pape, 73 Tex. 501, 11 SW. 526 (1889); Holmes v. Newlands, 3 Perry & D. 128; Maine: Wellington v. Milliken, 82 Me. 58, 19 MI. 90 (1889).

As to the statement or time under Code Pleading, see Backns v. Clark, I Kan. 303, 83 Am.Dec. 437 (1863). The rule still applies, and

*Time, when material, must be strictly laid and proved.*

Ch. S

his Defense on a different day from that mentioned in the Declaration. The rule applies, however, only when time is immaterial, and therefore, if the Defense is such as to render it necessary that the true time be stated in the Plea, the Law allows the defendant to vary from the time mentioned in the Declaration. In all such cases the formal objection arising from the apparent discrepancy in time between the Declaration and the Plea yields to the more important principle that each party must be permitted to frame his Allegations according to the exigencies of his case. The principle is the same as laying the true Venue by the defendant in Transitory Actions when the nature of his defense requires it.

Again, the defendant is never required to follow the thy named in the Declaration in pleading Matter of Discharge, whether it be material or not, since all Matter of Discharge must, from its nature, have occurred subsequently to the creation of the duty or liability upon which the action is founded. It is therefore clear that in such case the defendant must state the Defense as having occurred after the wrong was done or the contract made; more especially if such Discharge was by Matter of Record, or by a written instrument, since the time must then be laid to conform to the date of such Record or Instrument.

**TIME OF CONTINUING ACTS**

When there is occasion to allege a continuous act in pleading, the time of its duration should be shown.

This rule applies generally where there is only one Count in the Declaration, and the subject matter of the suit consists of a continuing act by the defendant, covering many days. Here the act or acts should be alleged to have been committed on a given day and “on divers other days and times” between that and another day or the time of the commencement of the suit, and the plain-

Sec. 36

**DESCRIPTION OF PROPERTY**

**tiff will be allowed to offer evidence only in proof of acts committed during the whole or some part of the period covered.**
36. When the Declaration alleges an injury to goods or chattels, or a contract relating to them, their quantity, quality and value or price should be stated; and in actions for the recovery of, or for injuries to, real property, quantity and quality should be shown.

IT is, in general, necessary, where the Declaration alleges any injury to goods and chattels, or any contract relating to them, that their quality, quantity, and value or price should be stated. And in any action brought for recovery of real property, its quality should be shown, as whether it consists of houses, lands, or other hereditaments; and in general it should be stated whether the lands be meadow, pasture, or arable, etc. And the quantity of the lands or other real estate must also be specified. So, in an action brought for injuries to real property, the quality should be shown, as whether it consists of houses, lands, or other hereditaments.

Thus, in an Action of Trespass for breaking the plaintiff’s close and taking away his fish, without showing the number or nature of the fish, it was, after Verdict, objected, in Arrest of Judgment—First, “that it did not appear by the Declaration of

what nature the fish were, pikes, tenches, breams, etc.; and, secondly, that “the certain number of them did not appear.” And the objection was allowed by the whole court. So, where, in an Action of Trespass, the Declaration charged the taking of cattle, the Declaration was held to be bad because it did not show of what species the cattle were. So, in an Action of Trespass, where the plaintiff declared for taking goods generally, without specifying the particulars, a Verdict being found for the plaintiff, the court Arrested the Judgment for the uncertainty of the Declaration.

So, in a modern case, where, in an Action of Replevin, the plaintiff declared that the defendant, “in a certain dwelling house, took divers goods and chattels of the plaintiff,” without stating what the goods were, the Court Arrested the judgment for the uncertainty of the Declaration, after judgment by Default and a Writ of Inquiry executed. So, in an Action of Dower, where blanks were left in the Count for the number of acres claimed, the Judgment was Reversed after Verdict. So, in Ejectment, the plaintiff declared for five closes of land, arable and pasture, called “Long Furlongs,” containing ten acres. Upon “Not Guilty” pleaded, the plaintiff had a Verdict, and it was moved in Arrest of Judgment that the Declaration was ill, because the quantity and quality of the lands were not distinguished and ascertained, so as to show how many acres of arable there were and how many of pasture. And for this reason the Declaration was held ill, and the Judgment Arrested.

-----


THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

Ch. 5

With respect to value, it is to be observed that it should be specified in reference to the current coin of the realm, thus: “Divers, to wit, three tables of great value, to wit, the value of twenty dollars, of lawful money of the United States.” With respect to quantity, it should be specified by the ordinary measures of extent, weight, or capacity, thus:
“Divers, to wit, fifty acres of arable land; “divers, to wit, three bushels of wheat.”

The rule in question, however, is not so strictly construed, but that it sometimes admits the specification of quality and quantity in a loose and general way. Thus, a Declaration in Trover for two packs of flax and two packs of hemp, without setting out the weight or quantity of a pack, is good after Verdict, and, as it seems, even upon Special Demurrer.61 So, a Declaration in Trover, for a library of books, has been allowed, without expressing what they were. So, where the plaintiff declared in Trespass for entering his house, and taking several keys for the opening of the doors of his said house, it was objected, after Verdict, that the kind and number ought to be ascertained. But it was answered and resolved that the keys are sufficiently ascertained by reference to the house.62 So it was held, upon Special Demurrer, that it was sufficient to declare, in Trespass for breaking and entering a house, damaging the goods and chattels, and wrenching and forcing open the doors, without specifying the goods and chattels, or the number of doors forced open; for that the essential matter of the action was the breaking and entering of the house, and the rest merely Aggravation.63 The degree of certainty requisite in stating matters of the kind mentioned seems to be such as the facts in


As quantity and value, when brought in issue, are not generally material, it is sufficient that any quantity or value be alleged without risk of Variance in the event of a different amount being proved.64 The only exceptions to this are where the above facts are alleged in the recital or Statement of a Record, written instrument, or express contract, in which cases, as in alleging time regarding the same subjects, number, quantity, etc., must be truly stated as they form part of the substance of the issue. For example, to a Declaration in Assumpsit for £10 4s., and other sums, the defendant pleaded, as to all but £4 7s. 6d., the General Issue, and, as to the £4 7s. 6d., a tender. The plaintiff replied that, after the cause of action accrued, and before the tender, the plaintiff demanded the said sum of £4 7s. 6d., which the defendant refused to pay; and on issue joined it was proved that the plaintiff had demanded not £4 7s. 6d., but the whole £10 4s. This proof was held not to support the is-


Sec. 37

NAMES OF PERSONS
 NAMES OF PERSONS

37. The pleadings must specify the names of persons. This rule includes the names of persons necessarily mentioned in the pleadings, although they are not parties to the suit, and their names must be correctly stated; it also includes parties to the action.

Persons Other than Parties

The rule calls for strict accuracy in describing persons whose names are necessarily mentioned in the statement of the Cause of Action or Defense, though they are in no sense concerned in bringing or defending the action; and the reason is that any error in describing such persons may result in a fatal Variance when the Proof is reached, since the correct identification of such persons by name becomes a matter of essential description, material to the merits of the case.

If, in pleading a contract made by James Smith, the name is incorrectly given as John Smith, the strict rule would subject the pleader in fault to the penalty of a variance, though a more liberal practice now generally allows an Amendment where it does not substantially change the cause of action.

68. Foster v. Pennington, 32 Me. 178 (1850).
not depends, of course, on the pronunciation. The worth “junior,” “senior,” etc., are no part of the name, and need not be stated, nor, if stated, proved.75

PARTIES TO THE ACTION

38. The plaintiff and defendant must be designated by their proper names, and not by words of mete description; and it must be shown whether they appear in the action in an individual or a representative capacity.

The parties to an action include all persons who are directly interested in the subject matter in issue, who have a right to control the proceedings, to make a Defense, or to Appeal from the Judgment. All others are regarded as strangers to the cause.

THE effect of this rule is plainly apparent from its terms, as certainty in the pleadings in this respect must necessarily be required for purposes of identification. Both plaintiff and defendant should be described by their Christian names and surnames, and, if either be mistaken or omitted, it is ground for Plea in Abatement.76 An error in this respect,


The following names have been held not to be idem sonans: “Tarbart” for “Tabart,” Bingham v. Diekie, 5 Taunb. 814, 128 Eng.Rep. 913 (1814); “Comyns” for “Cummins,” Cruiksbank v. Comyns, 24 Ill. 602 (1860). For further illustrations, see Clark, Criminal Procedure, c. X, Pleading and Proof—Variance.

—Conviction of Minor Offense, 341 (St. Paul, 1895).

78. Connecticut: Ide Rentland v. Somers, 2 Root (Conn.) 437 (1796); Illinois: Hendley v. Shew, 39 Ill. 354 (1866); Massachusetts: Kincaid v. I-lowe, 10 Mass. 203 (1813); Cobb v. Lucas, 15 Pick. (Mass.) 7 (1833); New York: Padgett v. Lawrence, 10 Palge (N.Y.) 170, 40 Am.Dec. 232 (1843); Vermont: Brainard v. Stilphin, 6 Vt. 9, 27 Am.Dec. 532 (1834); Jameson v. Isaacs, 12 Vt. 611 (1829); Clark, 0dm that Procedure, c. VI, Pleading—The Accusation (Continued) 235 (St. Paul, 1895).

But, see, State v. Vittum, 9 N.H. 519 (1838); Jackson cx 4cm. Pelt v. Prevost, 2 Caines (N.Y.) 164 (1804).


however, can now generally be cured by amending the defective pleading. A liberal construction of the rule allows, as we have seen, the use of the names by which such parties are generally known,” though not strictly correct, and though the designation thus habitually used includes the person’s initials only.78 Other questions applying both under this head, and also to naming persons not parties, have been noticed above. If a contract or promise sued upon has been made to or by the person by a wrong name, or by an abbreviation of his correct name, an action may be brought by or against him in his true name, setting forth the Incorrect style or description, and stating that the parties are the same.79

The effect of a mistake in the name of a person •not a party win, as above stated, amount to a fatal Variance when the Proof discloses the true name, It is otherwise where the mistake is in the name of a party. Here the objection can only be taken by a Plea in Abatement. It cannot be objected to as a Variance at the Trial.80
Descriptive Words

If a person sues or is sued in a representative capacity, as receiver, executor, trustee, etc., while the representative character in which he appears may be gathered from


78. Connecticut: Tweedy v. Jarvis, 27 Conn. 42 (1858); Minnesota: Kenyon v. Semon, 43 Miss. 180, 45 NW. 10 (1890); Montana: Kemp v. McCormick, 1 Mont 420 (1872); South Carolina: City Council of Charleston v. King, 4 McCard (3.0.) 487 (1828).

79. City of Lowell v. Morse, 1 Mete. (Mass.) 473 (1840); President, etc. of Commercial Bank v. French, 21 Pick. (Mass.) 486, 32 Am.Dec. 280 (1839).


Sec. 39

SHOWING TITLE

115

the body of the pleadings, without a description as such in the title of the action, the fact should appear in both; and it is important that the statement be made in the name recognized as effective, as otherwise the entire object of the Complaint or Defense may be defeated. It is not generally sufficient to state simply, “A.B., executor,” without the use of the word, “as,” since the omission will cause the word to be disregarded as merely descriptive, and the party will be treated as an individual only for the purpose of the particular action. To show that he is a party in the special capacity, he must be named “as” executor, etc.

Partners and Corporations

When the action is by or against a partnership, it must be in the names of the individual members, where express Statutes do not treat the firm as an entity, and allow the use of the name commonly employed in its business, since the designation of a partnership is always arbitrary, and may not contain the proper names of any of its members. But, where a corporation is concerned, the law takes notice of it only by the corporate name, treating it as a single artificial person, and only recognizing its


82. Llenshall v Roberts, 5 East 150, 102 Eng.Rep. 1020 (1804); Stillwvelf v Carpenter, 62 N.Y. 639 (1875); and cases hereafter cited.


Where one sues, describing himself as executor, the justice of the ease requires it, the Court will consider it as merely descriptio personae. George v. English, 30 Ala. 582 (1857); Higgins v. Halligan, 46 Ill. 173 (1867); Grew v. Burdett, 9 Pick. (Mass.) 265 (1880).

84. Bentley v Smith, 3 Calves (N.Y.) 170 (1805); Brubaker v. Poage, 1 T.B.Mon. (Ky.) 123 (1824).

victual members where their rights are in question inter se; and the only method of description is by the use of the corporate name or title.

Repetition of Names
FOR the same purpose of identification, when the name of either party has been once introduced in the pleadings, a repetition of it should be accompanied by such terms of reference as will clearly trace the identity as the same, unless there is no danger of confusion. In any case, it is the better plan, and the common practice is, to use the word “said” or “aforesaid,” or, if there be two or more persons or subjects, “first aforesaid” or “last aforesaid,” or terms of equivalent import.5

SHOWING TITLE

39. The Pleadings must show Title, where it is material. More specifically:

(I) A person asserting any right to or authority over real or personal property must allege a Title to such property in himself or in some person from whom he derives his authority.

(II) When a person is to be charged in a pleading with any liability in respect to either real or personal property, his Title to such property must be alleged.

Exception—No Title need be shown where the opposite party is estopped from denying it.

WHEN, in pleading, any right or authority is set up in respect of property, personal or real, some Title to that property must of course be alleged in the party, or in some other person from whom he derives his authority.88 So, if a party be charged with any liability, in respect of property, personal


88. 5 Comyn’s Digest, “Pleader,” C. 34, C. 36 (Dublin, 1793); Braeton, Roman Law, 3721-, 373b (London, 1640).

116

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

or real, his Title to that property must be alleged.

We shall first consider the case of a party’s alleging Title in himself, or in another whose authority he pleads; next that of his alleging it in his adversary.

The exception to this rule in cases where the opposite party is estopped from denying Title will be presently considered.

TITLE IN THE PARTY OR IN ONE WHOSE AUTHORITY HE PLEADS

40. ‘When Title is alleged in the party himself, or in one whose authority he pleads, a Title to the subject matter of the controversy must generally be set forth in the pleadings in its full and precise extent. To this rule there are two exceptions:

(I) When the action is founded on possession only, and not on Title or Ownership, it is sufficient to allege a Title of Possession only, a naked Allegation of Possession being sufficient. This applies to Personal Actions only.

(II) In some cases, where a Title of Possession is inapplicable, a general Freehold Title may be alleged in lieu of stating Title in its full and precise extent.

Alleging Title of Possession

It is often sufficient to allege a Title of Possession only. The form of laying a Title of Possession, in respect of goods and chattels, is either to allege that they were the “goods and chattels of the plaintiff,” or that he was “lawfully possessed of them as of his own property.” With respect to corporeal hereditaments, the form is either to allege that the close, etc., was the “close of” the plaintiff, or that he was “lawfully possessed of a certain close,” etc. With respect to incorporeal hereditaments, a Title of Possession is generally laid by alleging that the plaintiff was possessed of the corporeal thing appurtenant to which is the right claimed, and by reason thereof was entitled to the right at the time in question; for example, that he “was possessed of a certain messuage,” etc., “and by reason thereof, during all the time aforesaid, of right ought to have had common of pasture,” etc.
A Title of Possession is applicable that is, will be sufficiently sustained by the proof—in all cases where the interest is of a present and immediate kind. Thus, when a Title of Possession is alleged with respect to goods and chattels, the statement will be supported by proof of any kind of present interest in them, whether that interest be temporary and special, or absolute, in its nature; as, for example, whether it be that of a carrier or finder, only, or that of an owner and proprietor. So, where a Title in Possession is alleged in respect to corporeal or incorporeal hereditaments, it will be sufficiently maintained by proving any kind of estate in possession, whether fee simple, fee tail, for life, for term of years, or otherwise. On the other hand, with respect to any kind of property, a Title of Possession would not be sustained in evidence by proof of an interest in remainder or reversion only; and therefore, when the interest is of that description, the preceding forms are inapplicable, and Title must be laid in remainder or reversion, according to the fact, and upon the principles that will be afterwards stated, on the subject of alleging Title in its full and precise extent.

Where a Title of Possession is applicable, the Allegation of it is, in many cases, sufficient, in pleading, without showing Title of a Superior kind. The rule on this subject is as follows; That it is sufficient to allege possession as against a wrongdoer,” or in


PARTICULAR ESTATES

stance, in modern practice, of the Allegation of a Title of this character.

Under the head of “Allegation of Title,” In its full and precise extent, we shall consider the statement of the Derivation of the Title, and then certain general rules as to the Allegation of the Titles themselves.

In general it is sufficient to state a seisin In fee simple per se; that is, simply to state, according to the usual form of alleging that Title, that the party was “seized in his demesne as of fee of and in a certain messuage,” etc., without showing the derivation, or, as it is expressed in pleading, the commencement of the estate; for, if it were requisite to show from whom the present tenant derived his Title, it might be required, on the same principle, to show from whom that person derived his, and so ad infinitum. Besides, as mere seisin will be sufficient to give an estate in fee simple, the estate may, for anything that appears, have had no other commencement than the seisin itself which is alleged. Even though the fee be conditional or determinable on a certain event, yet a seisin in fee may be alleged, without showing the commencement of the estate.

To this rule, however, there is this exception: It is necessary to show the derivation of the fee, where, in the pleading, the seisin has already been alleged in another person, from whom the present party claims. In such case it must, of course, be shown bow it passed from one of these persons to the other. Thus, in Debt or Covenant brought on an indenture of lease by the heir of the lessor, the plaintiff, having alleged that his ancestor was seized in fee and made the lease, must proceed to show how the fee passed to himself, viz, by descent. So, if in trespass, the defendant plead that E.J—, being seised in fee, demised to G.M., under whose command the defendant Justifies the trespass on the land, Giving Color, and the plaintiff, in his Replication, admits E. ff. ’s seisin, but sets up a Subsequent Title in himself to the same land, in fee simple, prior to the alleged demise, he must show the derivation of the fee from FE’. to himself, by conveyance antecedent to the lease under which OH, claims.
42. In pleading a Particular Estate, its commencement must he shown, except where Title is alleged only as Inducement.

WITH respect to particular estates, the general rule is that the commencement of Particular Estates must be shown. The meaning of this rule is that, when a party sets up in his own favor an estate for life, a term of years, or a tenancy at will, he must show the Derivation of that Title from its commencement—that is, from the last seisin in fee simple; and, if derived by alienation or conveyance, the substance and effect of such conveyances should be precisely set forth. The reason for the diversity between this and the rule as to estates in fee appears to be that, as an estate in fee simple may be 


THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

and often is acquired by means consisting solely of matter of fact, a General Allegation of seisin in fee simple is Traversable; whereas particular estates, being always derived out of the fee simple, can regularly be created only by conveyance or by operation of law, and a General Allegation of such an estate is not Traversable, since it improperly blends law and fact. Hence, where title to particular estates is thus alleged, the time and manner of the derivation must be shown, in order that a Traverse may be taken upon any particular point in the Title.

To the rule that the Commencement of a Particular Estate must be shown there is this exception, namely, that it need not be shown where Title is alleged by way of Inducement only. Thus, in an Action of Debt or Covenant, brought on an indenture of lease by the executor or assignee of a lessor for a term of years, it is necessary, in the Declaration, to state the Title of the lessor in order to show the plaintiff’s right to sue as assignee or executor; but, as the Title is thus alleged only by way of Inducement, the Particular Estate for years may be alleged in the lessor, without showing its commencement.4

TITLE BY INHERITANCE

43. Where a party claims by inheritance, he must, in general, show how he is the heir; and if he claims by mediate, and not immediate, descent, he must show the pedigree.

THUS, in pleading his Title by inheritance, a party must in general show how he became the heir, that is, by showing the seisin and death of the ancestor, after whose decease the title descended to the plaintiff as son and heir; and if he claim by mediate descent


he must allege and prove the pedigree.—Thus, in Heard v. Baskervile,5 where the plaintiff brought Replevin, it was pleaded that the rent descended to a cousin and heir, etc., without showing how the cousin became heir, and the plaintiff Demurred Generally, thus raising an issue of law as to whether the failure to set down the matter of cousenage constituted a Defect of Substance, or of Form, such as by the Statute of Demurrers, 27 Eliz. c. 5, § 1

Page 131 of 735
ought to be particularly set down, or else no advantage be taken of it. It was held that the descent, being mediate, should have been set forth, but that the failure to do so constituted a Defect in Form, and hence was waived by the General Demurrer, as provided by the Statute; the defect, in other words, would have been available upon Special Demurrer.

**TITLE BY ALIENATION OR CONVEYANCE**

44. When a party claims title by conveyance or alienation, the nature of the conveyance or alienation must, in general, be stated.

WHERE a party relies upon title by conveyance or alienation, he must allege or set forth the nature of the conveyance or alienation in his pleading, as whether it be devise, feoffment, or some other form of transfer.7

**MANNER OF PLEADING CONVEYANCE**

45. The nature of the conveyance or alienation should be stated according to its Legal Effect, rather than its form of words.

THIS rule involves a specific application of the general rule that in suing upon written contracts or documents they are to be alleged or set forth according to their Legal Effect or Operation, and not *Verbatim*. As applied to—


7. 5 Comyn’s Digest, ‘Pleader,” E. 23, E. 24 (Dublin 1793).

**STATUTE OF FRAUDS**

the manner of pleading conveyances this doctrine means that in their pleading they must be alleged according to the extent of the Title which they actually pass. Thus, in pleading a conveyance for life, it must be alleged as a “demise” for life; or a conveyance in tail, with a livery of seizin, as a gift in tail; and a conveyance of the fee, with livery, is described by the term ”enfeoffed.” And the form of pleading must still be the same, whatever might be the words of donation used in the instrument of conveyance, if the effect of the latter remains unchanged.”

**THE WRITTEN CONVEYANCE AND THE STATUTE OF FRAUDS**

46. In pleading Title by Conveyance, if the nature of the conveyance is such that it would, at Common Law, be valid without a deed or other written instrument, then no deed or writing need be alleged in the pleading, even though such document may in fact exist. But where the nature of the conveyance requires, at Common Law, a deed or other written instrument, such instrument must be alleged. There are two exceptions to this rule:

(I) Where Title is pleaded under a written lease for years; and

(II) Where a Demise by husband and wife is pleaded.

*The Rule Where the Conveyance was Valid at Common Law*

AT Common Law, a conveyance in fee, in tail, or for life, when accompanied by livery of seizin, could be made by parol only, and was therefore pleaded without the Allegation of any charter or other writing, whether such instrument in fact accompanied the conveyance or not, as such a conveyance might,

10. With respect to livery and feoffment, it has been stated that “without livery it is no feoffment, gift, or demise”. Vyniar’s Case, S Co.Eep. Sib, 82b, 77 Eng.Rep. 597, 600 (1609), at Common Law, be made by parol only.” And though, by the Statute of Frauds, such a conveyance will not now be valid unless made in writing, the form of the pleading nevertheless remains the same as before the enactment of the Statute in 1676. The reason for this is that the Statute of Frauds merely introduces a new rule of evidence but does not alter or affect the rule of pleading.

The Rule Where the Conveyance was Only Authorized by Statute

Contrary to the Common-Law Rule where the conveyance was valid even though by parol, where a devise of land was involved, which, at Common Law, was not valid, and which was authorized by the first Statute of Wills, in 1540, and the second Statute of Wills in 1542, it was required to be alleged to have been made in writing, as that was the only form in which the Statute authorized it to be made. And so, if a conveyance by way of grant be pleaded, a deed must be alleged, for matters that “lie in grant” can pass by deed only.

Two Exceptions to the Common-Law Rule

The first exception to the rule that if the nature of a conveyance is such that it would,

12. The rule is the same as applied to ordinary contracts. Thus, in Whitehead v. Burgess, 61 N.J.L. 75, 38 Atl. 802 (1897), Van Syckel, J., declared: “Where an action is founded upon a contract which at Common Law is valid without writing, but which the Statute requires to be in writing, the Declaration need not Count upon or take notice of the writing. If an action is brought upon a promise to pay the debt of another, the Declaration need not aver that the promise is in writing, even if such be the fact.”

See, also, Elting v. Vanderlyn, 4 Johns. (N.Y.) 237 (1809).

14. 32 Hen. VIII, c. 1.
15. 34 Hen. VIII, e. 5.
18. VIn.Abr. tit. Grants ((I.a.).
19. WHERE A PARTY ALLEGES TITLE IN HIS ADVERSE.

47. It is not generally necessary to allege Title in the opposing party more precisely than is sufficient to show a liability in the party charged, or to defeat his present claim.

Thus far we have been discussing the case of a party alleging Title in himself or in some other under whose authority he pleads. It remains for us to consider the case of a party’s alleging Title in his adversary. The rule on this subject is that it is not necessary to allege Title more precisely than is sufficient to show a liability in the party
charged, or to defeat his present claim. Except as far as these objects require, a party cannot be compelled to show the precise estate his adversary holds, even in a case where, if the same person were pleading his own Title, a full and complete statement would be necessary. The reason for the difference is that a party must be presumed to be ignorant of the particulars

19. See the example, 2 Chitty, on Pleading, c. Xi, 540 (5th ed., London, 1831).

so. Wisoot’s Case, 2 Co. 61b, 76 Eng.Rep. 558 (1590);

of his adversary’s Title, though he is bound to know his own.2

WHAT IS A SUFFICIENT ALLEGATION OF LIABILITY

48. To show a liability in the party charged, it is generally sufficient to allege a Title of Possession.

As in the case where a party pleads his own Title or that of another through whom he claims, and that Title need not be fully and precisely stated, it is also generally sufficient, where the opposite party is to be charged with liability, to allege merely a Title of Possession in such party. The same distinctions as to the nature of the interest or right, however, are still to be observed; and therefore, if the interest is by way of reversion or remainder, and cannot be sustained by proof of some present interest in chattels or the actual possession of land, this form of pleading Title is inapplicable. There are cases in which, to charge a party with mere possession, would not be sufficient to show his liability. Thus, in declaring against a person in Debt for Rent, as assignee of a term of years, it would not be sufficient to show that he was possessed, but it must be shown that he was possessed as assignee of the term. Where a Title of Possession is thus inapplicable or insufficient, and some other or superior Title must be shown, it is still unnecessary to allege the Title of an adversary with the same precision and accuracy as where the party states his own,22 the requirement being only that the Allegation shall be sufficient to show the liability charged. Therefore, though, as we have seen, it is the rule, with respect to a man’s

 (1790); Derisley v. Custance, 4 Plt. 77, 100 Eng.
 Rep. 903 (1790); Attorney General v. Meller, 13ardr.
 459, 145 Flng.Rep. 547 (1792). And see, also, Blake v.
 Foster, S P.R. 487, 101 Eng.Rep. 1~05 (1399); Den
 (1795).

22. 5 Comyn’s Digest, “Pleader,” C. 42 (Dublin– 1793).

Sec. 49

PROOF OF TITLE AS ALLEGED 123

own Title, that the commencement of Particular Estates should be shown, unless alleged by way of Inducement, yet, in pleading the Title of an adversary, it seems that this is, in general, not necessary.23 So, in cases where it happens to be requisite to show whom the adversary derived his Title, this may be done with less precision than where a man alleges his own. And, in general, it is sufficient to plead such Title by a que estate; that is, to allege that the opposite party has the same estate, or that the same estate is vested in him, as has been previously laid in some other person, without showing in what manner the estate passed from the one to the other.24 Thus, in Debt, where the defendant is charged for rent, as assignee of the term, after several mesne assignments, it is sufficient, after stating the original demise, to allege that, “after making the said indenture, and during the term thereby granted, to wit, on the
dayof ,intheyear ,at

___ all the estate and interest of the said E.F. [the original lessee] of and in the said demised premises, by assignment, came to and vested in the said C.D.”; without further showing the nature of the mesne assignments.26 But, if the case be reversed, that is, if the plaintiff, claiming as assignee of the reversion, sue the lessee for rent, he must precisely show the conveyances, or other media of Title, by which he became entitled to the reversion; and to say, generally, that it came by assignment, will not, in this case, be sufficient, without circumstantially alleg

Page 134 of 735
PROOF OF TITLE AS ALLEGED

49. Title is ordinarily of the substance of the issue, and must be strictly proved.

THE manner of showing title, both where it is laid in the party himself, or the person whose authority he pleads, and where it is laid in his adversary, having been now considered, it may next be observed that the title so shown must, in general, when issue is taken upon it, be strictly proved. With respect to the Allegations of place, time, quantity, and value, it has been seen that, when issue is taken upon them, they, in most cases, do not require to be proved as laid; at least, if laid under a videlicet. But with respect to title, it is, ordinarily, of the Substance of the Issue, and therefore, required to be maintained accurately by the proof. Thus, in an action on the Case, the plaintiff alleged in his Declaration that he demised a house to the defendant for seven years, and that, during the term, the defendant so negligently kept his fire that the house was burned down. And the defendant having pleaded densusit modo et forma, it appeared in evidence that the plaintiff had demised to the defendant several tenements, of which the house in question was one; but that, with respect to this house, it was, by an exception in the

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

lease, demised at will only. The Court held that though the plaintiff might have declared against the defendant as tenant at will only, and the action would have lain, yet, having stated a demise for seven years, the proof of a lease at will was a Variance, and that in substance, not in form only; and, on the ground of such Variance, Judgment was given for the defendant.

ESTOPPEL OF ADVERSE PARTY

50. Where the opposite party is estopped from denying a Title, none need be shown.

THE rule which requires that Title should be shown having been now explained, it will be proper to notice an exception to which it is subject. This exception is that no Title need be shown where the opposite party is estopped from denying the title. Thus, in an action for goods sold and delivered, it is unnecessary, in addition to the allegation that the plaintiff sold and delivered them to the defendant, to state that they were the goods of the plaintiff; for a buyer who has accepted and enjoyed the goods cannot dispute the title of the seller. So, in debt or covenant brought by the lessor against the lessee on the covenants of the lease, the plaintiff need allege no Title to the premises demised, because a tenant is estopped from denying his landlord’s Title. On the other hand, however, a tenant is not bound to admit Title to any extent greater than might authorize the lease; and therefore, if the action be brought, not by the lessor himself, but by his heir, executor, or other representative or assignee, the title of the former must be alleged, in
order to show that the reversion is now legally vested in the plaintiff in the character in which he sues. Thus, if he sue as heir, he must allege that the lessor was seised in fee, for the tenant is not bound to admit that he was seised in fee;

U. Ciudlip v. Bundle, Carth. 202, 90 Eng.Rep. 721. See, also, Bristow v. Wright, 2 Doug. 665, 99 Eng. Rep. 421 (1781), and, unless he was so, the plaintiff cannot claim as heir.29

SHOWING AS TO AUTHORITY

51. In general, where a defendant justifies under a writ, warrant, precept, or other authority, it must be particularly set forth in his pleading; and in such case he should also show that such authority had been substantially pursued.

Exception—Where an authority may be verbal and general, it may be pleaded in general terms.

THIS is an instance, under the general rule requiring certainty in the pleadings, where a greater degree is required in the Plea than in the Declaration. Where in an Action of Trespass, the defendant seeks to Plead a Justification under such an authority as is mentioned above, he must set it forth particularly in his pleading, and it is not sufficient to Allege Generally that he committed the act complained of by virtue of a writ, warrant, or precept delivered to him.30 It must not only be specifically described, but the defendant, in order to render his Justification complete, should further aver that such authority was substantially pursued. The principle of the rule is that as a Plea in Bar, to be effective, must answer all that it assumes to answer, so all material Allegations which make up the answer it contains must be fully and particularly stated, or the Plea will be defective on Demurrer,31 In all cases, therefore, where the defendant justifies under judicial process, he must set forth the facts in detail, though there are important distinctions as to the degree of particularity re


PROFERT OF DEEDS

225

quired by the rules of pleading in different cases. These may be stated as follows: (1) It is unnecessary for any person justifying under judicial process to set forth the cause of action in the original suit in which such process issued.32 (2) If the Justification is by an officer executing a Writ, he is required to plead such Writ only, and not the Judgment on which it was founded: ~ but if such Justification is by any one except such officer, even a party to the action, the Judgment must be set forth as well.34 (3) Where an officer thus justifies, he must show that the Writ was duly returned, if a return is legally necessary.35 (4) When it is necessary, for the purposes of a justification, to Plead the Judgment of a Court of Record, this may be done without setting forth any of the previous proceedings in the suit in which such Judgment was rendered.36 (5) When the Justification is founded on process issuing out of an Inferior Court or a Court of Foreign Jurisdiction, the nature and extent of the Jurisdiction of such Court should be shown, as well as that the cause of action arose within ~ In general, in pleading the Judgments of Inferior Courts, the previous proceedings are stated to some extent, though they may be set forth in a concise and summary manner.


*Cognizance in Replevin*

AN exception to the general rule exists, however, where an authority may be constituted verbally and generally, and it is allowable to plead it in general terms. An instance of this is the case of the entry of a Cognizance in an Action of Replevin, where the defendant, admitting the taking of the goods, may justify simply as an officer, without alleging any warrant for the taking. 38

**PROFERT OF DEEDS**

52. In all pleadings where a deed is alleged under which the party claims or justifies, Profert of such deed must be made or the omission excused. But the rule is not applicable unless the deed is the foundation of the Action or Defense.

IF either plaintiff or defendant alleges an instrument under seal, unless in the case of letters testamentary or of administration, and finds his Claim or Defense di


Alabama: *Magee v. Fisher*, 8 Ala. 320 (1845); Illinois:

There is no right to have Oyer of a deed referred to in the plaintiff’s Declaration merely by way of Inducement Lsnghorne v. Richmond Ry. Co., 01 Va. 369, 22 SE. 150 (1895).


In actions by administrators and executors the rule requiring profert was extended to letters testamentary and of administration. 1 Chitty, on Pleading, e. IV, Of the Declaration, aSS (Phila.1828); *Gould, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading*, Pt. II, c. I, Procedure, 79 (6th ed. by Will, Albany, 1909).

The effect of profert was to enable the opposite party to demand Oyer, or hearing of the Instrument, before he was required to plead. 126

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

rectly upon it, he must generally make a Statement or Profert in his pleading that he brings it into Court to be shown to the Court and his adversary. The import of the statement is that the party has the deed ready to give the opponent Oyer, or an inspection of it, if required. 42 If the instrument was lost or otherwise beyond the power of the party to produce it, an excuse for the omission was necessary, and the party was not required to produce it. 42

Thus, in an Action of Debt on a Bond, the plaintiff must make Profert of the bond, and if the defendant in an action were to set up a release under seal he would have to make Profert of it. This in ancient times


Connecticut: *Paddock v. Higgins*, 2 Root (Conn.) 316 (1795); Kentucky: *Barbour’s Adm’s v. Arclmr*, 3 Bibb. (Ky.) 8 (1813);
Massachusetts: Powers v. Ware, 2 Pick. (Mass.) 451 (1824).
And so if pleaded by a stranger to the deed, Birney v. Haim, 2 Litt. (Ky.) 262 (1822).
This rule applies only at Common Law, being one relating to purely formal Allegations in Pleading. An inspection of written Instruments upon which an Action is founded, or which are in any way material to it, is provided for by special provisions in all the Codes. Judge of Probate v. Merrill, 6 N.H. 256 (1833).

For it is to be observed that the Forms of Pleading (45 not in general require that the whole of any instrument which there is occasion to allege should be set forth. So much only is stated as is material to the purpose, of which the example last cited will also serve for illustration. The other party, however, may reasonably desire to hear the whole, and this either for the purpose of enabling him to ascertain the genuineness of the alleged deed, or of founding on some part of its contents, not set forth by the adverse pleader, some matter of answer. He is therefore allowed this privilege of hearing the deed read verbatim.” Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c, i, Of the was done by actually producing the deed in Court at the time of the Oral Allegations, but it is now done by an Allegation in the Declaration or Plea, as the case may be, of its production in Court,—thus: “By his certain writing obligatory, sealed with his seal, and now shown to the Court,” etc. A failure to comply with this rule renders the Declaration or Plea demurrable.

WRITINGS PLEADED ACCORDING TO LEGAL EFFECT

53. Contracts and conveyances are to be pleaded according to their legal effect or operation. As an instrument or other matter alleged in pleading must principally and ultimately be considered with reference to its effect in law, it should therefore be stated according to its Legal Effect or operation and not according to its terms.

The pleader is ordinarily allowed to set up the instrument in its very words, if he prefers not to construe its Legal Effect.

CONTRACTS and conveyances are to be pleaded according to their legal effect or operation. The meaning of the rule is that,

Proceedings in an Action, From Its Commencement to Its Termination, 100 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Wash’ington, D. C. 1805).

44. That setting out an instrument in full is a sufficient Proof, see Regents of the University of Michigan v. Detroit Young Men’s Soc., 12 Mich. 138 (1863).


Ch. 5

Sec. 53

WRITINGS PLEADED

in stating an instrument or other matter in pleading, it should be set forth, not according to its terms or its form, but according to its effect in law; and the reason seems to be that it is under the latter aspect that it must principally and ultimately be considered, and therefore to plead it in terms or form only is an indirect and circuitous method of Allegation. Thus, if a joint tenant conveys to his companion by the Words “gives,” “grants,” etc, his estate in the lands holden in jointure, this, though in its terms a “grant,” is not properly such in operation of law, but amounts to that species of conveyance called a “release.” It should therefore be pleaded, not that he “granted,” etc., but that he
“released,” etc. So, if a tenant for life grant his estate to him in reversion, this is, in effect, a surrender, and must be pleaded as such, and not as a grant. So, where the Plea stated that A was entitled to an equity of redemption, and, subject thereto, that B was seised in fee, and that they, by lease and re-lease, granted, etc., the premises, excepting and reserving to A and his heirs, etc., a liberty of hunting, etc., it was held upon General Demurrer, and afterwards upon Writ of Error, that as A had no legal interest in the land, there could be no reservation to him; that the Plea, therefore, alleging the right, though in terms of the deed, by way of reservation, was bad; and that if, as was contended in argument, the deed would operate as a grant of the right, the Plea should have been so pleaded, and should have alleged a grant, and not a reservation.


While the party must state correctly the contract or instrument on which he relies and, if the evidence differ from the statement, the whole foundation of his action will fail, he is not compelled to follow the precise form of words in either, and it suffices if he alleges their true legal effect or operation. The rule is thus one of utility, since it enables a party to state his matter briefly and With precision, without setting out the terms of contracts or instruments which often, even in modern conveyancing, reach an interminable length, and to support his allegations by the offer of the contract or instrument itself at the trial. A deed may often be thus pleaded Without using a word which it contains, except the names of the parties, the dates, and the sums. In all cases, care must be taken that the legal effect of the contract or instrument is accurately stated, or the result will be the same as if the statement of either in detail is incorrect; that is, a Variance.

The rule in question is, in its terms, often confined to deeds and conveyances. It extends, however, to all instruments in writing, and contracts, written or verbal; and, indeed, it may be said, generally, to all matters or transactions whatever which a party may have occasion to allege in pleading, and in which the form is distinguishable from the legal effect. Where, however, a written instrument is set out in hance verba) it will be sufficient, and the pleader need not dedate further its Legal Effect, as the Court will construe it for him. If he does aver its


128

THE DECLARATION—PLACE, TIME, TITLE

Legal Effect erroneously, the Averment will be rejected as surplusage.

It is a technical rule that Common-Law Pleading cannot be done by exhibits. In the case of Pearson v. Lee, the Illinois Court said: “To the Declaration is annexed a copy of the agreement, and if the Court were permitted to look to that copy, which it cannot see with legal eyes, because it has been constantly decided by this Court to form no part of the Declaration, it might perceive that the agreement is signed by the defendant only.” The rule that a separate writing cannot be made a part of the pleading, by attaching it thereto and referring to it therein, is changed in Code Pleading.

DAMAGES—GENERAL AND SPECIAL

Page 139 of 735
54. When the object of an action is to recover damages, an Essential Allegation of the Declaration is that the injury is to the Damage of the plaintiff, and the amount of that Damage must be specified. The recovery cannot, in general, exceed the amount thus stated, though it may be less.

General Damages are such as may be regarded as the direct, natural, or probable result of the wrong complained of, and may be stated in a general manner.

And Special Damages are those which the law does not regard as the necessary conse


sequences of the wrongful act, and must be set forth specially and circumstantially, or evidence of them will not be received on the Trial.

IN those cases where damages are the principal object of the action, the amount laid in the Declaration should be sufficient to cover the real demand, as the plaintiff cannot generally recover a greater amount than he has declared for and laid in the conclusion of his Declaration. If a Verdict should be for a greater amount, the surplus must be remitted before Judgment entered, but no inconvenience will arise if the amount claimed is greater than that proved, as the Jury may find a less sum; and it is to be presumed, after Verdict, that the amount of damages ascertained by them was assessed according to the proof. If the Declaration, however, expressly avers that the plaintiff has sustained Damages from a cause occurring subsequent to the Commencement of the Action, or previous to the plaintiff having any right of action, and the Jury gives entire Damages, judgment will be arrested.

At Common Law, no Damages were laid in Real Actions, since the object of the suit was the recovery, not of damages, but of the land withheld. There may be other instan

58. 2 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of Kings Bench, in Personal Actions, c. XXXVII. Of Damages, 806 (Philadelphia 1807); Alabama: McWhorter v. Sayre, 2 Stew. (Ala.) 225 (1829); Connecticuit: Treat v. Barber, 7 Conn. 274 (1828); Illinois: Morton v. McClure, 22 Ill. 257 (1804); New York: Fish v. Dodge, 4 Denio (N.Y.) 311, 47 Am.Dec= 254 (1847);

Pennsylvannia: Dennison v. Leech, 9 Pa. 164 (1848).


60. Van Remsselaer’s Ex’rs v. Piatner’s Ex’rs, 2 Johns.Cas. (N.Y.) 18 (1800).

61. See, Kentucky: Wilson’s Adm’r v. Bowens, 2 TB. Mon. (Ky.) 87 (1825); Massachusetts: Warner v. Bacon, S Gray (Mass.) 406, 69 Am.Dec. 258 (1857); Pierce v. Woodward, 6 Pick. (Mass.) 206 (1878);


Sec. 54

DAMAGES—GENERAL AND SPECIAL

129

cs where the Allegation of Damages is unnecessary; as in scire facias upon a Record, which is merely an action to obtain Execution upon an ascertained right of Record; and in a penal action, at the suit of a common informer, where the plaintiff’s right to the penalty did not accrue until the bringing of the suit, and no Damage could therefore have been sustained.
The force and effect of the ancient rules of pleading in modern times is nowhere better illustrated than by this very rule as to damages and the manner of stating them, and perhaps no better commentary upon the importance of a thorough understanding of those rules can be found. We have above seen that in every Personal or Mixed Action the Declaration should allege some damage, and this rule has never been changed, though its force in cases where damages are merely nominal seems rather doubtful. The method of applying the rule is as applicable today as at any former time, and the establishment of Code Practice has made no difference; the distinction above noted being always observed, as the pleader will find to his cost if it be disregarded. This distinction is an important one, as it arbitrarily controls the manner in which the claim for Damages must be stated.

When the damage claimed is the necessary and proximate consequence of the act complained of, the law presumes it to have resulted from that act, and it is sufficient to describe it in general terms, for the reason that the opposite party will not be unduly taken by surprise. But, when the plaintiff suffers some peculiar or unusual loss it is essential that the resulting Damage, called “Special Damages,” be shown with particularity.~ Such Damages are either super-added to General Damages arising from an act injurious in itself, as when some particular loss results from the utterance of slanderous words actionable in themselves, or such as arise from an act indifferent, and not actionable in itself, but injurious only in its consequences, as when words become actionable only by reason of the Special Damage ensuing.

5. Thus, when a person is slandered in his trade, the Law infers that an injury resulted to him, without its being particularly alleged. See Hutebinson

v. Granger, 13 VI. 380 (1841); West Chicago St. B. Co. v. Levy, 182 III. 525, 55 N.E. 554 (1899) (general damages from injury to the back, spine, nrl brain include atrophy of the optic nerve).

54. See Jacksonville Electric Co. v. Batehs, 54 Fla.
192, 44 South. 933 (1907). Whitter, Cases in Common Law Pleading, 410 (London, 1876). Illinois:


Sec.

CHAPTER 6

THE DECLARATION—GENERAL RULES AS TO MANNER OF PLEADING

55. Statements to be Positive.
56. Certainty in General.
57. When a General Mode of Pleading is Proper.
58. When General Pleading is Sufficient.
59. What Particularity is Generally Required.
60. Facts in Knowledge of Adversary.
64. Matters in Anticipation.
65. Matters Implied.
67. Surplusage.
68. Descriptive Averments.
69. Repugnancy.
70. Ambiguity or Doubt.
71. Pleadings in the Alternative.
72. Duplicity in General.
73. Inducement.
74. Consequences of Duplicity.
75. Pleadings to be True.
76. Conformance to Customary Forms.

STATEMENTS TO BE POSITIVE

55. Pleadings must be positive in their Form and not by way of Recital. The matter of Claim or Defense must be stated in direct and positive terms, in order that it may be directly and distinctly traversed.

THE meaning and reason of this Rule would seem sufficiently apparent from its mere statement. Its province is to restrict

1. In general, on the requirement of Certainty in Pleadings, see:

Treatises: Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading In Civil Actions, c II, Of the Principal Rules of Pleading, ~ IV, Of Rules Which Tend to Produce Certainty or Particularity In the Issue, 267—344 (3rd ed. by Tyler, Washington, 1). C. 1893);
Perry, Common-Law Pleading: Its History and Principles, c. XII, Of Rules Which Tend to Produce Certainty or Particularity in the Issue, 323—381

the Parties to such Forms of Averment as directly assert the Facts upon which they rely, in order that the adversary may be able to raise an Issue admitting of decision upon his Denial or Traverse. An act should not therefore be stated by Way of Recital, that is, under a “whereas” or a “wherefore,” but the Pleading should alleg its commission directly and positively.2 If, for instance, a Dec-


60.

61.

62.

63.

130

CERTAINTY IN GENERAL
laration in Trespass for Assault and Battery make the Charge in the following Form of Expression, “And thereupon the said A.B., by his Attorney, complains, for that whereas the said C.D. heretofore, to wit,” etc., “made an assault,” etc., instead of “for that the said C.D. heretofore, to wit,” etc., “made an assault,” etc., it is bad, for nothing is positively affirmed. As such an Allegation violates a Rule of Pleading, it creates a Defect in Form, which is fatal only on Special Demurrer,3 and, further than this, it may now generally be remedied by Amendment. Originally, such a Defect was regarded as one in Substance.4

The Rules of Pleading may be considered under three main heads: First, the Facts

W.Va. 258, 16 SE. 575 (1892); Gould v. Coal & Coke
B. Co., 74 WNa. 8, 81 SE. 529 (1914); Brown v.
Thurlow, 16 Mees. & W 36, 153 Eng.Bep. 1035;
(1614); Bacon, Abr. ‘Plea,” B 4 (London, 1778);
Dunstall v. Dunstall, 2 Show. 27, 89 Eng.Rep. 771;
Gourney v. Fletcher, 2 Show. 295, 89 Eng.Rep. 949
(1684); Dobbs v. Edmunds, 2 Ld.Raym. 1413, 92
Eng.Bep. 419 (1725); Wilder v. Handy, 2 Strange
1151, 93 Eng.Bep. 1094 (1740); Marshall v. Riggs, 2

But Matter of Inducement may be so alleged. And in
Assumpsit, the promise Is usually stated by Way of
Recit, though the gist of the action. Burton v.
Hansford, 10 W.Va. 470, 27 Am.Rep. 571 (1877);
ff “claimed” that the
organizer of the corporation made a present of the stock to one of the subscribers is not an Allegation of Fact. Rutwoller v. Lurie, 176

In Common-Law Pleading, the Allegation must be positive, not on information and belief. State ex rd. Ballard v, Greene, 87 Vt, 94,
88 A. 515 (1913).

CERTAINTY IN GENERALS

56. In general, whatever is alleged in Plead-Mg must be alleged with Certainty, Definiteness and Precision. A clear, distinct,
and complete Statement of the Facts which constitute the plaintiff’s Cause of Action or the defendant’s Ground of Defense must
be made in all Pleadings, in order that due notice may be given to the Adverse Party, and that a Definite and Certain
Issue may be produced for decision. Where, however, the Facts lay within the knowledge of the defendant, and where
no other method was possible, General Allegations were permitted.

THE Concept of Certainty in Pleading includes both particularity and precision. It consists in alleging the Facts
necessary so distinctly and explicitly as to show the legal basis of the Right or Defense asserted, give notice to the
Adverse Party of what he is called upon to answer, and produce single, clear-cut, well-defined Issues of Fact or of
Law for decision. The varying amount of particularity required has given rise to attempts to define the different Degrees of Certainty. The classic division proclaimed by Lord Coke, however, does not convey any intelligible
idea of the distinctions recognized by the law.

Under Coke’s Classification,’ there are three Degrees of Certainty, namely: (1)

5. Supra, note 1.

0. English: Watt v. Es~ington, 2 Ldilavm. 1411, 92
Sill, 1 Day. (Conn.) 315 (1804); West Virginia:
White v. Romans, 29 W.Va. 57, 3 SE. 14 (1887).

Odgcrs, In his Principles of Pleading and Practice in Civil Actions in the High Court of Justice, c. VIII, 118 (7th Ed. by Odgers, London, 1912),
states the Rule as follows: “The amount of detail necessary to ensure precision naturally varies with the nature of each ease - - There must be
particularity sufficient to apprise the Court and the other Party of the exact nature of the question to be tried.”

Sec. 56

131

Paul, 1923).

(1790).

Page 143 of 735
Certainty to a Common Intent; (2) Certainty to a Certain Intent in General; and (3) Certainty to a Certain Intent in Every Particular.

The First Degree of Certainty in Coke's Thinflation

A PLEADING is Certain to a Common Intent when it is clear enough according to reasonable intendment or construction, though not worded with absolute precision. Common Intent cannot add to a sentence words which have been omitted, the Rule being one of construction only, and not one of addition. This is the lowest Form of Certainty which the Rules or Pleading allow, and is sufficient only in Pleas in Bar, Rejoinders, and such Other Pleadings on the part of the defendant as go to the action.

The Second Degree of Certainty

CERTAINTY to a Certain Intent in General is a higher degree than Certainty to a Common Intent, and means what, upon a fair and reasonable construction, may be called Certain, without referring to possible facts, which do not appear except by inference or argument, and is what is required in Declarations, Replications and Indictments (in the charge or accusation), and In Returns to Writs of Mandamus.

11. Fuller v. Town of Hampton, 5 Conn. 423 (1824).  

The Third Degree of Certainty—to a Certain Intent in Every Particular

CERTAINTY to a Certain Intent in Every Particular requires the utmost fullness and particularity of statement, as well as the highest attainable accuracy and precision, leaving nothing to be supplied by argument, inference or presumption, and no supposable answer wanting. The Pleader must not only state the Facts of his own case in the most precise way, but must add to them such Facts as will anticipate the case of his Adversary. This Degree of Certainty is required only in case of Dilatory Pleas and Pleas in Estoppel.

With respect to Coke’s tests or Degrees of Certainty, it may be remarked that this is a matter of relative particularity which does not admit of measurement. Modern cases take as the standard reasonable Certainty without an attempt to define the Degrees for particular Pleadings. Excessive Certainty

Whitehend, 13 East. 107, 104 Eng.Rep. 307 (1810)  


Lawes-- On Pleading, c. III, Of the General Rules Applicable to the General Divisions of Pleading, 56.  
The highest degree of certainty is required only in Pleas which do not go to the merits of the Action and are therefore not favorably regarded; namely, Dilatory Pleas, which must anticipate possible Replies, and Pleas in Estoppel. National Parlor Furniture Co. v. Strauss, 75 Ill.App. 276 (1897); Harvey v. Parkersburg Ins. Co., 37 W.Va. 272, 16 SE. 580 (1892).

Sec. 56

is not required, especially if too great prolixity would result therefrom, unless the Law is hostile to the Action or Defense.

In Modern Times, it comes down to little more than this, that in Certain Disfavored Actions, such as Actions for Defamation; and in Certain Disfavored Defenses, such as Dilatory Pleas, more Facts must be alleged to make out a *prima facie* case or to repel hostile construction than in ordinary cases.

**Illustrations**

IN Pleading the Performance of a Condition or Covenant, it is a Rule, though open to exceptions that will be presently noticed, that the Party must not Plead Generally that he performed the Covenant or Condition; but must show specially the Time, Place, and Manner of Performance; and, even though the subject to be performed should consist of several different acts, yet he must show in this special way the Performance of each.15

Yet this Rule, requiring Performance to be specially shown, admits of relaxation where the subject comprehends such multiplicity of matter as would lead to great prolixity; and a More General Mode of Allegation is in such cases allowable.

When in any of these excepted cases, however, a General Plea of Performance is Plead, the Rule under discussion still requires the plaintiff to show Particularly in his Replication, 843 (1912) Taylor v. New Jersey Title Guarantee & Trust Co., 70 N.J.L. 24, 56 A. 152 (1903) in which it was held that circumstantial details were not necessary. In what way the Covenant or Condition has been broken; for otherwise no sufficiently certain Issue would be attained. Thus, in an Action of Debt on a Bond conditioned for Performance of Affirmative and Absolute Covenants contained in a certain Indenture, if the defendant Pleads Generally (as in that case he may) that he performed the Covenants according to the Condition, the plaintiff cannot in his Replication Tender Issue with a mere Traverse of the words of the Plea, viz., that the defendant did not Perform any of the Covenants, etc.; for this Issue would be too wide and uncertain. But he must Assign a Breach, showing specifically in what particular, and in what manner, the Covenants have been broken.16

In an Action of Debt on a Bond conditioned to pay so much money yearly while certain letters patent were in force, the defendant Plead that from such a time to such a time he did pay, and that then the letters patent became void and of no force. The plaintiff having Replied, it was adjudged, on Demurrer to the Replication, that the Plea was bad, because it did not show how the letters patent became void.19

With respect to all points on which Certainty of Allegation is required, it may be remarked, in general, that the Allegation, when brought into Issue, is required to be proved, in substance, as laid; and that the relaxation from the ordinary Rule on this subject which is allowed with respect to Place, Time, Quantity, and Value, does not, generally speaking, extend to other particular.


See also, I Chitty, On Pleading, c. VIII, Of Replications, 1311 (16th Am. ed by Perklns, 1882), on Replication In Actions on bonds, which deny the Effect of Performance, State the Breach with Particular (B)’ and Concludo with a Verification.
CERTAINTY IN GENERAL


133

DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING

WHEN A GENERAL MODE OF PLEADING IS PROPER

57. A General Mode of Pleading is allowed when great prolixity is thereby avoided. And a Statement of Material Facts in a Pleading with unnecessary particularity, where a brief and Concise Allegation would be sufficient, not only tends to cause prolixity and confusion, but may subject the Party thus Pleading to the penalty of a Variance, by his inability to prove it as alleged.

WHILE the form in which the Rule above is stated has been objected to as indefinite, its extent arid application may be collected with some degree of precision from the decided cases, and by considering the limitations which it necessarily receives from the Rules as to Certainty heretofore mentioned. It substantially covers the same ground, and rests upon the same principle, as the Rule that a Pleading must State Facts, and not Evidence, and may be considered as applicable whenever an Allegation of the Facts in detail would carry the Pleading to an unreasonable length by Stating matters proper to be shown in Evidence. Besides the benefit derived from thus confining the Pleadings to reasonable limits, a General Mode of stating the existence of Facts involving in themselves matters of detail may often preserve the Pleader from exposing his Allegation to the danger of a Variance, since, if he attempts to state all such matters, he must do so correctly, or his Proof will not correspond.


In Assumpsit, on a promise by the defendant to pay for all such necessaries as his friend should be provided with by the plaintiff, the plaintiff alleged that he provided necessaries amounting to such a sum. It was moved, in Arrest of Judgment, that the Declaration was not good, because he had not shown what necessaries in particular he had provided. But Coke, C. 3., said, “This is good, as is here Pleaded, for avoiding such multiplicities of reckonings” ; and Doddridge, J., “This General Allegation, that he had provided him with all necessaries, is good, without showing in particular what they were.” And the Court gave Judgment unanimously for the plaintiff. So, in Assumpsit for labor and medicines, for curing the defendant of a distemper, the defendant Pleaded Infancy. The plaintiff Replied that the Action was brought for necessaries generally. On Demurrer to the Replication, it was objected that the plaintiff had not assigned in certain, how, or in what manner, the medicines were necessary; but it was adjudged that the Replication, in this General Form, was good, and the plaintiff had Judgment. So, in Debt on a Bond, conditioned that the defendant shall pay, from time to time, the moiety of all such money as he shall receive, and give
account of it, he Pleaded Generally that he had paid the moiety of all such money, etc. lit *per curiam*: “This Plea of Payment is good, without showing the particular sums, and that in order to avoid stuffing the Rolls with Multiplicity of Matter.” Also they agreed that, if the condition had been to pay the moiety of such money as he should receive, without saying “from time to time,” the payment should have been Pleaded Specially. 2


Sec. 59

WHAT PARTICULARITY IS REQUIRED

WHEN GENERAL PLEADING IS SUFFICIENT

A General Mode of Pleading is often sufficient when the Allegations on the other side must reduce the matter to Certainty. And when the Nature of the Defense to be interposed is such that the Opposing Party must necessarily state fully all Facts essential to the production of a complete Issue in the particular action, a Party may allege the grounds of his Action or Defense, or some of them, in General Terms.

THIS Rule comes into most frequent illustration in Pleading Performance in Actions of Debt on Bond. Bonds may be conditioned either for the Performance of certain matters set forth in the Condition, or of the Covenants or other matters contained in an indenture or other instrument collateral to the Bond, and not set forth in the Condition. In either case, if the defendant has to Plead Performance of such matters, the Law often allows him to do so, in General Terms, without setting forth the manner of Performance. For by the usual course of Pleading, the plaintiff declares upon the Bond as single, without noticing the Condition, and therefore without alleging any Breach of the Condition. It follows, therefore, of course, that if the defendant Pleads Performance, the plaintiff will have to show a Breach in his Replication; and as this will, in all events, lead to a sufficient Certainty of Issue, it becomes unnecessary for the defendant to be Specific on his Part in his Plea, or to do more than allege Performance in General Terms, according to the words of the Condition, leaving the plaintiff in his Replication to Specify the Breach that is supposed to have been committed.

WHAT PARTICULARITY IS GENERALLY REQUIRED

~9. No greater Particularity is required than the nature of the thing Pleaded will conveniently admit. And when the Circumstances Constituting a Cause of Action are so numerous and so minute that the Party pleading is not and cannot be acquainted with them, less Certainty is required, and Pleading in General terms is sufficient.

THE effect of this Rule is that the Certainty required in Pleading Facts does not require a minute and detailed Statement of Circumstances which, though material to a Party’s case, he cannot be presumed to know.25 Thus, though generally, in an Action for injury to goods, the quantity of the goods must be stated, yet if they cannot, under the circumstances of the case, be conveniently ascertained by number, weight, or measure, such Certainty will not be required. Accordingly, in Trespass for breaking the plaintiff’s close, with beasts, and eating his peas, a Declaration not showing the quantity of peas has been held sufficient, “because nobody can measure the peas that beasts can eat.” ~ So, in an Action on the Case for setting a house on fire, *per quod* the plaintiff, among *divers other goods, ornatus pro equis aSs-it*, after Verdict for the plaintiff, it was objected that this was Uncertain, but the objection was disallowed by the Court. And in this case Windham, 3., said that, if he had mentioned only *diversa bona*, yet it had been well enough, as a man cannot be supposed to know the Certainty of his goods when his house is burnt; and added that, to avoid prolixity, the Law will sometimes allow such a Declaration,27

In Actions on Contracts, if the case is one where it is held necessary to Declare Specially on the Contract, great Strictness and


The above Rule is one of necessity, applicable to all Pleadings. See Bliss, The Law of Pleading Under the Codes of Civil Procedure, § 309 (2d ed. Boston, 1887).


27. Bacon, Mr. “Pleas,” etc. 409 (London, 1708).

136

DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING

Ch. 6

Particularity are enforced, and the simplest case involves imminent danger of Variance; but if the case admits of the use of General Assumpsit or the Common Counts, which are generally applicable wherever money is due for value received, no particulars or Facts are required, and the most complicated cases may be tried on a bare Claim of Indebtedness.

FACTS IN KNOWLEDGE OF ADVERSARY

60. Less Particularity is required when the Facts lie more in the knowledge of the Adverse Party than of the Party Pleading.

THIS Rule is exemplified in the case of alleging Title in an Adversary, where a more General Statement is allowed than when it is set up in the Party himself.”

So, in an Action of Covenant, the plaintiff Declared that the defendant, by indenture, demised to him certain premises, with a Covenant that he (the defendant) had full power and lawful authority to demise the same, according to the form and effect of the said indenture; and then the plaintiff assigned a Breach, that the Defendant had not full power and lawful authority to demise the said premises, according to the form and effect of the said indenture. After Verdict for the plaintiff, it was Assigned for Error that he had not in his Declaration shown “what person had right, title, estate, or interest in the lands demised, by which it might appear to the Court that the defendant had not full power and lawful authority to demise.” But, “upon conference and debate amongst the Justices, it was resolved that the Assignment of the Breach of Covenant was good; for he had followed the words of the Covenant negatively, and it lies more properly in the knowledge of the lessor what estate he himself has in the land which he demises than the lessee, who is a stranger to it.”

30 So, where the defendant had covenanted that he would not carry on the business of a rope maker, or make cordage for any person, except under Contracts for Government, and the plaintiff, in an Action of Covenant, assigned for Breach that, after the making of the indenture, the defendant carried on the business of a rope maker, and made cordage for divers and very many persons, other than by virtue of any Contract for Government, etc., the defendant Demurred Specially, on the ground that the plaintiff “had not disclosed any and what particular person or persons for whom the defendant made cordage, nor any and what particular quantities or kinds of cordage the defendant did so make for them, nor in what manner nor by what acts he carried on the said business of a rope

Page 148 of 735
maker, as is alleged in the said Breach of Covenant.” But the Court held “that, as the Facts alleged in these Breaches lie more properly in the knowledge of the defendant, who must be presumed conusant of his own dealings, than of the plaintiff’s, there was no occasion to state them with more particularity,” and gave Judgment accordingly. 31

INDUCEMENT OR AGGRAVATION

61. Less Particularity is necessary in the Statement of Matter of Inducement or Aggravation than in the Main Allegations. As matters

Sec. 61

INDUCEMENT OR AGGRAVATION

alleged merely by way of explanation or introduction to the Claim or Defense, or set forth only to increase the Damages asked for, are not of the Gist of the Action, and therefore require no Distinct Answer, they may be alleged in General Terms.

Inducement and Gravamen

WHENEVER a bare statement of the Facts constituting the Cause of Action does not show the Right of Action with sufficient Certainty, the Facts necessary to explain them must be shown. This preliminary statement is called the “Inducement”. It does not enter into the statement of the Cause of Action proper, but is merely explanatory of such statement, and it does not require the same Certainty. 32

The term “Inducement” is sometimes applied to those Allegations showing the existence of a Right on the part of the plaintiff and a Duty on the part of defendant. The Allegations showing the wrongful acts of the defendant in violation of the Right and Duty are known as the Gist or Gravamen of the Action.

As “Matter of Inducement,” as the term is generally used, is that which is merely introductory to or explanatory of the essential ground of the Complaint or Defense, and “Matter of Aggravation” such as is alleged only to show, in Actions for forcible injuries, for instance, circumstances of enormity under which the wrong complained of was committed, neither constitutes a Material Fact essential to Recovery or Defense, and either, therefore, is sufficiently met by an Answer to that which forms the Gist of the Action;

32 “Inducement,” In Pleading, is the Statement of Matter which is Introductory to the Principal Subject of the Declaration or Plea and which is necessary to elucidate or explain it. Varnes v. Seaboard Air Line Railway Co., SO Flu, 624, 86 So. 433 (1920).

The “Inducement” of a Pleading is but an Explanatory Introduction to the Main Allegation in which the Cause of Action Is alleged. McDonald v. Hall, 203 Mich. 431, 170 N.W. 68 (1918).

and, as they require no distinct Answer, a General Mode of Stating them is sufficient. 33 This Rule is exemplified in the case of the Derivation of Title, where, though it is a General Rule that the Commencement of a Particular Estate must be shown, yet an exception is allowed if the title be alleged by Way of Inducement only. So, in Assumpsit, the plaintiff declared that in consideration that, at the defendant’s request, he had given and granted to him, by deed, the next avoidance of a certain Church, the defendant promised to pay £100, but the Declaration did not set forth any Time or Place at which such grant was made. Upon this being objected in Arrest of Judgment after Verdict the Court resolved that “it was but an Inducement to the Action, and therefore needed not to be so precisely alleged,” and gave Judgment for the plaintiff. 34 So, in Trespass, the plaintiff declared that the defendant broke and entered his dwelling house, and “wrenched and forced open, or caused to be wrenched and forced open, the closet doors, drawers, chests, cupboards, and cabinets of the said plaintiff.” Upon Special Demurrer it was objected that the number of closet doors, drawers, chests, cupboards, and cabinets was not specified. But it was answered “that the breaking and entering the plaintiff’s house was the principal ground and foundation of the present action, and all the rest are not foundations of the action, but matters only thrown in to Aggravate the Damages, and, on that ground, need not be particularly specified.” And of that opinion

DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING

was the Whole Court, and Judgment was given for the plaintiff.\(^{35}\)

\textbf{ACTS REGULATED BY STATUTE}

CL With respect to Acts Valid at Common Law, but regulated as to the Mode of Performance, by Statute, it is sufficient to use such Certainty of Allegation as was sufficient before the Statute. Thus, a Party Pleading a Contract, Valid by Parol at Common Law, but which a subsequent Statute requires to be in Writing, need not allege it to be in Writing.

\begin{itemize}
\item THE only explanation necessary to be made of this Rule is that, as matters are to be \textit{Plead according to their} Legal Effect, a Statute does not, in regulating the Mode of Performance of an Act, necessarily prescribe a corresponding method of Pleading it, unless the thing to be pleaded is one created by the Statute itself. If, therefore, an act Valid at Common Law is subsequently required by a Statute to be in writing, it may still be Plead as at Common Law without alleging writing.\(^{38}\) Thus, by the \textit{Common Law}, a lease for any number of years might be made by parol only; but, by the Statute of Frauds, all leases and terms for years made by parol, and not put into writing and signed by the lessors, or their agents authorized by writing, shall have only the effect of leases at will, except leases not exceeding the term of three years from the making. Yet, in a Declaration of Debt for rent on a demise, it was held sufficient, as it was at Common Law, to state a demise for any number of years, without showing it to have been in writing.\(^{38}\) So, in the ease of a Promise to Answer for the Debt, Default, or Miscarriage of another person, which was good by parol, at Common Law, but by the Statute of Frauds, is not valid unless the agreement, or some memorandum or note thereof, be in writing, and signed by the party, etc, the Declaration on such promise need not allege a written Contract.\(^{38}\)
\end{itemize}

On this subject the following difference is to be remarked, namely, that "where a thing is originally made by Act of Parliament, and required to be in writing, it must be Plead with all the circumstances required by the act; as in the case of a will of lands, it must be alleged to have been made in writing; but where an act makes writing necessary to a matter where it was not so at the Common Law, as where a lease for a longer term than three years is required to be in writing by the Statute of Frauds, it is not necessary to Plead the thing to be in writing, though it must be proved to be so, in Evidence." ~

As to the Rule under consideration, however, a distinction has been \textit{taken} between a Declaration and a Plea; and it is said that though, in the former, the plaintiff need \textit{not} show the thing to be in writing, in the latter the defendant must. Thus, in an Action of Indebtitatus Assumpsit, for necessaries provided for the defendant’s wife, the defendant Pleaded that before the Action was brought the plaintiff and defendant and one J. B., the defendant’s son, entered into a certain agreement, by which the plaintiff, in discharge of the Debt mentioned in the Declaration, was to accept the said 3. B. as her Debtor for £9, to be paid when he should receive his pay as a lieutenant, and that the

\begin{footnotes}
\end{footnotes}
plaintiff accepted the said 3. B. for her Debtor, etc. Upon Demurrer, Judgment was given for the plaintiff, for two reasons: First, because it did not appear that there was any consideration for the agreement; secoiully, that, admitting the agreement to be valid, yet, by the Statute of Frauds, it ought to be In writing, or else the plaintiff could have no remedy thereon; “and though, upon such an agreement, the plaintiff need not set forth the agreement to be in writing, yet, when the defendant Pleads such an Agreement in Bar, he must Plead it so as it may appear to the Court that an Action wilt tie upon it, for he shall not take away the plaintiff’s present Action, and not give her another, upon the agreement Pleadeds.”

What MAY BE OMITTED—MATTERS JUDICIALLY NOTICED

It is not necessary to state matters of which the Court takes Judicial Notice. Matters Judicially Noticed may be either of Law or Facts of a Public or General Nature.

CERTAIN matters may be omitted. Thus it is not necessary to state in the Pleading Matters of which the Court will take Judicial Notice. It is therefore unnecessary to state Matter of Law, for this the Judges are bound to know, and can apply for themselves to the Facts alleged. Thus, where it was Stated in a Pleading that an officer of a corporation was removed for misconduct, by the corporate body at large, it was held unnecessary to aver that the power of removal was vested in such corporate body, because that was a power by Law incident to them, unless given by some charter, by-law, or other authority, to a select part only.

The Rule is not limited to the principles of the Common Law. Public Statutes fall within the same reason and the same Rule. Public Domestic Statutes and the Facts which they recite or state must be Noticed by the Courts of the Particular State, as well as the Public Acts of Congress, without their being Stated in Pleadings; ~ and it is only necessary to allege Facts which will appear to the Court to be affected by the Statute, though in case of an offense created by Statute, where a penalty is inflicted, the mere Statement of the Facts constituting the offense will be insufficient without an express reference to the Statute, showing the intention to being the case within it. Private Acts, however, are not Judicially Noticed, and therefore such parts of them as may be material to the Action or Defense, must be Stated in Pleadings, and Foreign Statutes, as those of other States, must also be Pleadeds.

It may be observed, however, that, though it is in general unnecessary to allege Matter of Law, yet there is sometimes occasion to make mention of it, for the convenience or intelligibility of the Statement of Fact. Thus, in an Action of Assumpsit on a Bill of Exchange, the Form of the Declaration is to state the nature of the case, and that the defendant, as drawer or acceptor, etc., became liable to pay;


41. To this effect, see Comyn’s Digest, Plead., C, 78 (1822).


and being so liable, in consideration thereof promised to pay. So, as stated above, it is sometimes necessary to refer to a Public Statute in General Terms, to show that the case is intended to be brought within the Statute; as, for example, to allege that the defendant committed a certain act against the Form of the Statute in such case made and provided; but the reference is made in this general way only, and there is no need to set the Statute forth.

This Rule, by which Matter of Law is omitted in the Pleadings, by no means prevents the attainment of the requisite Certainty of Issue; for, even though the dispute between the Parties should turn upon Matter of Law, yet they may evidently obtain a sufficiently Specific Issue of that description without any Allegation of Law; for ex facto jus oritur, that is, every Question of Law necessarily arises out of some given state of Facts; and therefore nothing more is necessary than for each Party to state, alternately, his case in point of Fact; and upon Demurrer to the sufficiency of some one of these Pleadings, the Issue of Law, as we have heretofore shown, must at length arise.

Besides Points of Law, there are many other matters of a public kind, of which the Court takes Official Notice, and with respect to which it is, for the same reason, unnecessary to make Allegation in Pleading, such as matters antecedently alleged in the same Record, IS the Time and Place of holding Congress, or the State Legislature, the Time of its Sessions, and its usual course of proceeding, the course of the almanac, the division of the state into Counties, the meaning of English words, and terms of art; legal weights and measures, and the ordinary measurement of time, matters of public history, affecting the whole people, and many other matters. 

MATTERS IN ANTICIPATION

64. It is not necessary to State Matter which would come more properly from the other side. As it is sufficient for each Party to make out his own Case or Defense, he adequately sup–
ports his Charge or Answer, for the purpose of Pleading, if such Pleading establish a prima facie case in his favor, and is not bound to anticipate matter which his Adversary may be at liberty to Plead against him. EXCEPTION —Pleadings in Estoppel and Dilatory Pleas must meet and remove, by anticipation, every possible Answer.

TIIE ordinary Form of this Rule, namely, that it is not necessary to State Matters which would come more properly from the other side, does not fully express its meaning. The meaning is that it is not necessary to anticipate the answer of the adversary, or, as it is generally expressed, when reference is made to the Declaration only, it is not necessary to anticipate Defenses. M This, ac

40 On the classification of matters judicially noticed, see 1 Greenleaf, On Evidence, c. II, Judicial Notice —1 4—C (Boston, 1892); Wharton, On Evidence, c, V Judicial Notice, General Rules II 276—286 (Philadelp– phia, 1877); Stephen, On Evidence, c VII, On Proof, Arts. 58, 59 (Hartford, 1902).

And, as to the application of the Rule in Code Pleading, see Bliss, Code Pleading, c. XIII, Rules Goveraing the Statement, § 187-199 (3d ed. St. Paul, 18043, and cases cited.

MATTERS IMPLIED

According to Hale, C. 3., is “like leaping before one comes to the stile.” ~ It is sufficient that Each Pleading should, in itself, contain a good prima facie case, without reference to possible objections not yet urged. Thus, in Pleading a devise of land by force of the Statute of Wills, it is sufficient to allege that such a one was seised of the land in fee, and devised it by his last will, in writing, without Alleging that such devisor was of full age. For, though the Statute provides that wills made by fereus covert, or persons within age, etc., shall not be taken to be effectual, yet, if the devisor were within age, it is for the other Party to show this in his Answer, and it need not be Denied by anticipation. ~ So, in a Declaration of Debt upon a Bond, it is unnecessary to allege that the defendant was of full age when he executed it. ~ So, where an Action of Debt was brought upon a Statute against the bailiff of a town for not returning the plaintiff, a burgess of that town, for the last Parliament, the words of the Statute being that the Sheriff shall send his precept to the Mayor, and, if there be no Mayor, then to the bailiff, the plaintiff declared that the Sheriff had made his precept unto the bailiff, without Averring that there was no Mayor. And, after Verdict for the plaintiff, this was moved in Arrest of Judgment. But the Court was of opinion, clearly, that the Declaration was good, “for we shall not intend that there was a Mayor except it be showed; and, if there were one, it should come more properly on the other side.” ~ So, where there was a Covenant in a charter party ‘that no claim should be admitted, or al. Sir Ralph Bovy’s Case, 1 Vent. 217, 86 Eng.Rep.

146 (1672); Walker v, President, etc. of Michigan state Bank, 5 Doug. (Mith.) 359 (1847); 31 Cyc. 109.

A FOURTH subordinate Rule is that it is not necessary to allege Circumstances Necessarily Implied from Facts that are alleged. ~ The reason of this Rule seems to be that as the Law will always Imply Certain Facts from the Statement of Others, and the Issue tendered by the Allegation of such Primary Facts alone is therefore sufficient for a Traverse by the Adverse Party, so the Facts thus to be implied need no Express Allegation to render the statement of the case complete on either side. Thus, in an Action

But where the Matter is Such that its Affirmation or Denial is essential to the apparent or prima facie right of the Party Pleading, then it ought to be Affirmed or Denied by him in the first instance, though it may be such as would otherwise properly form the subject of objection on the other side.

MATTERS IMPLIED

65. It is not necessary to allege Circumstances Necessarily Implied. Necessary Circumstances implied by Law from Facts alleged are Traversable without being Pledged, and need not therefore be alleged.

A FOURTH subordinate Rule is that it is not necessary to allege Circumstances Necessarily Implied from Facts that are alleged. ~ The reason of this Rule seems to be that as the Law will always Imply Certain Facts from the Statement of Others, and the Issue tendered by the Allegation of such Primary Facts alone is therefore sufficient for a Traverse by the Adverse Party, so the Facts thus to be implied need no Express Allegation to render the statement of the case complete on either side. Thus, in an Action

Debt on a Bond, conditioned to stand to and perform the Award of W.R., the defendant Pleaded that Wit, made no Award. The plaintiff Replied that after the making of the Bond, and before the time for making the Award, the defendant, by his certain writing, revoked the authority of the said W.R., contrary to the form and effect of the said condition. Upon Demurrer it was held that this Replication was good, without Averring that W.R. had notice of the Revocation, because that was implied in the words “revoked the authority,” for there could be no Revocation without notice to the arbitrator; so that, if W.R. had no Notice, it would have been competent to the defendant to Tender Issue “that he did not revoke in manner and form as alleged.” So, if a feoffment be Pleaded, it is not necessary to allege livery of seisin, for it is implied in the word “enfeoffed.” So, if a man Plead that he is heir to A., he need not allege that A. is dead, for it is implied.

MATTERS PRESUMED

It is not necessary to allege what the Law will presume. As legality in the transactions or conduct of persons is always presumed, everything is regarded as legally done until the contrary is shown.

TFIUS, it is an Intendment of Law that a person is innocent of fraud, as well as free from every imputation against his character, and one insisting on the contrary must both Plead and Prove it. So the performance of an act is presumed where the omission would render one criminally liable, and the burden of alleging and proving the negative is on the party who asserts it.

Thus, in

Surplusage is to be avoided. The Perfection of Pleading is to combine the requisite Certainty and Precision with the greatest possible brevity of statement. “Surplusage,” as the term is used in the present Rule, includes matter of any description which is unnecessary to the maintenance of the Action or Defense. The Rule requires the omission of such matter in two instances:

(I) When the matter is wholly foreign and irrelevant to the Merits of the Case; and
(II) When, though not wholly foreign, such matter need not be stated.

THE term “Surplusage,” as used in this chapter, is taken in the broad sense of including all unnecessary matter, whether its


Sec. 67

SURPLUSAGE

irrelevancy arises from the Nature of the Matter itself, as where it is wholly foreign and impertinent to the case, and may therefore be Stricken Out on Motion, as where a plaintiff, suing upon one of the Covenants in a long Deed, sets out in his Declaration, not only the Covenant on which he sues, but all the other Covenants, though relating to matters wholly irrelevant to the Cause; or in the Pleading Matter that, while relevant to the case, the Pleader is under no necessity of stating, such as Matter of Evidence, things Judicially Noticed, Matters Implied, etc., which fall within the Various Rules heretofore explained as tending to limit or qualify the Degree of Certainty. In either case it is a fault to be avoided, as not only tending to cause prolixity in the Pleadings, but also frequently affording an advantage to the Opposite Party, by providing him with an objection on the ground of Variance, or by compelling the Party Pleading to adduce more Evidence than would otherwise have been necessary. It is therefore of the utmost importance to avoid both the statement of unnecessary facts and the Allegation of Facts which, though they may be relevant, are not essential to a Proper Statement of the Claim or Defense.

If the matter stated be wholly foreign and impertinent, so that no Allegation on the subject was necessary, it does not vitiate the Pleading, the maxim being that “utile, per inutile, non vitatur” nor does it require proof, but it will be entirely rejected.

64. Dundass v. Lord Weymouth, 2 Cowp. 665, 08 Eng.

however, a Party take it upon himself to state the Particular Facts of a Claim where a General Allegation only is sufficient, he is often bound to prove all items as stated, under penalty of a Variance; the Rule being well established that matter, though unnecessarily alleged, must be proved if it is descriptive of that which is essential.

Again, if Matter Material is alleged with an unnecessary detail of circumstances, the essential and non-essential parts of the statement may be so interwoven as to expose the Allegation to a Traverse, and the Pleader to an increased Burden of Proof with its consequent additional danger of failure. So it is a Material Part of the Rule respecting Superfluous Allegations that if the Party introducing them show, on the Face of his own Pleading, that he has no Cause of Action, the Pleading will necessarily be defective.

When the surplus matter is wholly irrelevant, it may be Stricken Out on Motion; but it is no Ground for Demurrer, since, as
Wife, 14 UI. 301 (1853); Enoebel r. Kircher, 33
11]. 308 (1864); Shilpher v. Field, 70 UI. 438 (1873);
Indiana: Bequette v. Lasselle, 5 Blackf. (md.) 443
(1846); Massachusetts: Buddington v. Shearer, 20
Pick. (Mass.) 477 (1833); Michigan: Murphy v. Mc-
Craw, 74 Inch. 318, 41 NW. 917 (1889); New York:
Thomas v. Roosa, 7 Johns. (N.Y.) 462 (1811);
Rus-
sell v. Rogers, 15 Wend. (N.Y.) 351 (1836). See, also,
Broom, Legal Maxims, 581 (London, 1884).

Thus, for example, where, in an action on a non-
negotiable note, expressed to be for value received, the plaintiff, If he sets out the facts
showing of what the value consisted, instead of simply pleading the note “for value received,” will he held to strict proof of what he thus

And, as to this danger and the necessity to prove mat’
ter unnecessarily alleged, Sec Turner v. Eylca, 3
Bbs. & P. 45(3, 127 Eng.flep. 247 (1803); Sir Francis
Lekes Case, Dyer 365, 73 Eng.Rep. 810 (1578);
Gridley v. City of Bloomington, 68 Ill. 47 (1873).


144

we have just seen, it does not Vitiate the Pleading. Where, however, inconsistency or discrepancy on the Face of the
Record is created by Surplus Allegations, this fault is to be taken advantage of by Special Demurrer)

DESCRIPTIVE AVERMENTS

68. Every Descriptive Averment, though made with Unnecessary Particularity, must be proved as laid, or it will be a fatal Variance.

THE harsh Rule by which the Courts punish a Party who Pleads Immaterial Facts by compelling him to prove them literally as alleged, although they need never have been set out to state the Cause of Action is shockingly illustrated in negligence cases. New Trials have frequently been granted for Want of Proof of wholly Unnecessary allegations. The Pleader has to steer his course between Scylla and Charybdis, and is driven to state his case in a confusing variety of Counts, which multiply and complicate the Issues. He has to learn just how General he may make his Allegations, avoiding all unnecessary detail, on the one hand, and the danger of stating mere Conclusions of Law or Fact, on the other. By Unnecessary Particularity in a descriptive statement, he binds himself to prove this Surplusage in addition to the essential Facts of the case. Yet it is recognized that Averments of Mere Surplusage, which are not “matter of description,” are immaterial and need not be proved.72 Thus, where a plaintiff, in Action for

71. Gilbert, chancery Practice, e. XXI, 131—132 (Lon- don, 1792).

31 (1897); Carterville Coal Co. v. Abbott, 181 Ui.
495, 55 N.E. 131 (1899).

The Pleader should ascertain what are the vital elements of his Action or Defense, and then examine the decisions of his own state to lean just how general he may make his Allegations; for he is above all to avoid unnecessary detail. As we have already seen, by unnecessarily particularizing In a descriptive Allegation he binds himself to prove these unnecessary particulars In addition to the essential Facts of the description. Thus, In an Action on the

Personal Injuries against the railroad, alleged that at the time of the injury she was standing at the intersection of a street and the main tracks of the defendant’s railroad, the Court expressed the opinion that it would be a material Variance if the Proof showed that she was then standing twenty-five or thirty feet from this point.73 But the precise place where the personal injury occurs is not ordinarily an element in the Cause of Action, and it is sufficient to state the County in which the injury took place.74 It is not necessary for a passenger, who is suing a railroad for injuries, to state the termini between which he was being carried; but, if he does state them, the Allegations will require strict
Proof. These decisions are placed on the ground that the great object of a Declaration is to notify the defendant of the nature and character of the plaintiff’s demand, so that he may be able to prepare for a Defense.

If, however, the Pledger make his Allegations of particulars under a *videlicet*, that the injury occurred on a certain day, *v4z.*, on March 1, 1916, then the Count will not limit the plaintiff to the precise day alleged, but admits Proof that the injury occurred at any time within the period of the Statute of Limitations. There is equal notice in either event, whether the “*Viz*” is used or *not*.

Cage, where the defendant might have been liable as owner of certain premises, and the Declaration Averred that he was the “owner and occupier” of certain premises, Proof tending to show liability as owner alone was held inadmissible.

- CarlIn v. City of Chicago, 262 Ill. 564, 104 N.E. 905, Ann.Cas.1915B, 213 (1915).
- Wabash Western By. Co. v. Friedman, 146 Ill. 583, 30 N.E. 353, 34 N.E. 1111 (1893).

See, also, Ohio & Iv!. fly. Co. v. People, 149 Ill. 663, 36 N.E. 989 (1894); Wabash B. Co. v. alllings, 212 ill. 37, 72 N.E. 2 (1904).

**REPUGNANCY**

In *Span gler v. Pugh*, where a note was received in Evidence, and the amount of the note was a half cent larger than the amount alleged in the Declaration, this was held a fatal error in Matter of Substance. The Illinois Supreme Court, although regretting that such a trifling slip should delay a Party in the Administration of Justice, sent the plaintiff back for a New Trial, in order that the Science of Common-Law Pleading might not be impaired. In another case, the difference between the instrument described and that offered in Evidence of a dollar mark after the amount of the *subscription* was held a fatal Variance, although the body of the contract showed what was intended.

If the plaintiff had declared on the Indebitatus Counts, he might have proved the execution of the instrument and established the indebtedness without any details at all. In an Action of Assumpsit upon a note alleged in the Declaration to have been executed by “*William*” Becker, the plaintiff offered at the Trial a note signed by “*Wilhelm*” Becker. This was admitted in Evidence over Objection and the Judgment for plaintiff was Reversed for Variance.

**REPUGNANCY**

69. A Pleading is bad for Repugnancy when it contains Contradictory or Inconsistent Allegations, which destroy or neutralize each other. There is an Exception to this Rule when the Allegation creating the fault is Superfluous.


since, where the Declaration or Other Pleading alleges matter which either contradicts or is inconsistent with matter previously alleged in the same Pleading, there can be, on the Party’s own showing, neither a legal Cause of Action nor a Defense. Thus, where, in an Action of Trespass, the plaintiff declared for taking and carrying away certain timber, lying in a certain place, for the completion of a house then lately built, this declaration was considered as bad for Repugnancy, for the timber could not be for the building of a house already built. So, where the defendant Pledged a grant of a rent, out of a term of years, and proceeded to allege that, by virtue thereof, he was seized in his demesne,
as of freehold, for the term of his life, the Plea was held bad for Repugnancy.\textsuperscript{82} Where the Repugnancy is in a material point, it Vitiates the Pleading, which is ill on Special Demurr\textsuperscript{er.}\textsuperscript{83} When, however, the Allegation creating the Repugnancy is merely Superfluous and redundant, so that it may be rejected from the Pleading without materially altering the general sense and effect, it is to be disregarded or Stricken.

\begin{itemize}
\item English: Nevil v. Soper, 1 Salk. 213, 91 Eng.Rep. 190 (1807);
\item Butt's Case, 7 Co. 25a, 77 Eng.Rep. 511;
\item Hart v. Longfield, 7 Mod. 148, 87 Eng.Rep. 1150 (1702); Alabama: Merrill v. Sheffield Cc., 160 Ala. 242, 53 So. 219 (1910); Florida: Florida Cent. & P. B. Co. v. Ashmore, 43 Fla. 272, 32 So. 832 (1902);
\item Illinois: Raymond v. People, U Ill.App. 344 (1801);
\item Kolsian v. Elgin, Aurora & S. Traction Cc., 132 Ill. App. 416 (1907); Indiana: Barber v. Summers, 5 Blackf. (Lad.) 339 (1840); Tennessee: Bynum v. Ewart, 90 Tenn. 053, 18 SW. 304 (1891);
\item Vermont: Hcrsey v. Northern Assurance Co., 75 Vt. 4—11, 50 .
\end{itemize}

95 (1903).


**DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING**

Out on Motion, and will not Vitiate the Pleading; for the maxim is “\textit{Utile, per mutile, non vitiatur.}”\textsuperscript{8}

**AMBIGUITY OR DOUBT**

70. \textbf{Pleadings must not be Ambiguous or Doubtful in Meaning; and, when two different meanings present themselves, that construction shall be adopted which is most unfavorable to the Pledger. Ambiguity in Pleading occurs where the matter alleged may have several meanings; but a Pleading is not objectionable on this ground if it be clear enough for its true meaning to be ascertained, according to reasonable intendment or construction, though not worded with absolute precision.}

THE Pledger must avoid stating the matter of his Claim or Defense in such a manner as to render it so Doubtful or Obscure that, upon its face, it will be uncertain what he means to allege.\textsuperscript{85} Thus, if, in Trespass \textit{quare clausuni fregit}, the defendant Pleads that the \textit{locus in quo} was his freehold, he must allege that it was his freehold at the time of the Trespass; otherwise, the Plea is insufficient.\textsuperscript{86} So, in Debt on a Bond, conditioned to make assurance of land, if the defendant Pleads that he executed a release, his Plea is bad if it does not express that the release concerns the same land.\textsuperscript{87}

In determining which of two meanings that present themselves shall be adopted, that construction is given that is most unfavorable to the Party Pleading, since it is presumed that every person states his case

\begin{itemize}
\item 85. Purcell v. Bradley, tel. 30, 80 Eng.Rep. 26;
\item 86. Comyn’s Digest, “Pleader” E. 5 (Dublin, 1793).
\end{itemize}
PLEADINGS IN THE ALTERNATIVE

71. Pleadings must not be in the Alternative. Where a legal Duty imposes the due performance of one thing or another, the Pleading must state that one was performed, and specify which one.

HYPOTHETICAL or Alternative Pleading is always bad. While it is competent for a


92. In general, on Pleadings in the Alternative, see:


Sec. 72

DUPPLICITY IN GENERAL

defendant, in a case where he is required to perform Several Affirmative Acts, to Plead Generally the due performance of all 92. if the acts imposed are in the Alternative or Disjunctive, such a General Plea will be Ambiguous and improper, since it would not enable the Court to determine which of the acts had been done, and No Definite Issue would be formed. The Plea must therefore show the performance of one of the acts, and also clearly point out which one was completed. Thus, in an Action of Debt against a jailer for the escape of a prisoner, where the defendant Plead that if the said prisoner did, at any time or times after the said commitment, etc., ~o at large he so escaped without the knowledge of the defendant, and against his will, and that, if any such escape was made, the prisoner voluntarily returned into custody before the defendant knew of the escape, etc., the Court held the Plea bad, for “he cannot Plead Hypothetically that, if there has been an escape, there has also been a return. He must either stand upon an Averment that there has been no escape, or that there have been one, two, or ten escapes, after which the prisoner returned.” ~ So, where it was charged that the defendant wrote and published, a certain libel, this was considered as bad for uncertainty. M


Alternative or Hypothetical pleading is a Defect in Form, objectionable on Special Demurrer only.54

DUPLICITY IN GENERAL

72. Duplicity, or Double Pleading, consists in alleging two or more distinct grounds of Complaint or Defense for a single object, when one only would be sufficient. The fault may exist in, and the Rule therefore applies to

(I) The Declaration; and

(II) The Subsequent Pleadings.

THE requirement of the Common Law that Pleadings shall not be Double has for its object the Attainment of the Singleness or Unity of the Issue between the Parties, which it is the aim of all Pleadings to produce. It precludes both plaintiff and defendant, in their respective Pleadings, from stating or relying upon more than one matter, constituting a sufficient Ground of Action in respect to the Same Demand, or an effective Defense to the same Claim, or an adequate Answer to the Preceding Pleading of the opponent.55 The Rule in its terms points to


Cases arise where the plaintiff is uncertain against which of several persons he is entitled to relief, as where several corporations operate a line of track, or where a defendant may have been acting either as an agent or as a principal. In such cases some Modern Rules of Procedure allow the plaintiff to join any or all of them as defendants in the alternative. It is also deemed convenient under Modern Rules to allow a Party to include in his Pleading two or more alternative sets of Material Facts, even though inconsistent, and to claim Belief thereunder in the alternative, upon an alternative construction or ascertainment of his Cause of Action, without the necessity of making an election.


**DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING**

148

Doubleness only, as if it prohibited only the use of Two Allegations or Answers; but its meaning, of course, extends equally to the case of more than two, the term “Doubleness” or “Duplicity” being applied, though with some inaccuracy, to either case. The effect of the Rule is thus to avoid confusion and a multiplication of Issues in the Action, and it is in all cases founded on the principle that it would be unnecessary and vexatious to cause the Adverse Party to litigate and prove two or more Facts or Propositions, when one alone would sufficiently establish the Matter in dispute,
Duplicity in a Declaration consists in joining, in one and the same Count, different Grounds of Action to enforce a single Right of Recovery. This is a Fault in Form, because it tends to prolixity and confusion and a Multiplicity of Issues.


The Rule as to Duplicity finds its analogy in Equity in the prohibition against Multifariousness, or the improper Joinder of two Causes of Action in one statement And the fault is also recognized and condemned in Code Pleading. Pierce v. Carey, 37 IVs. 232 (1875); Brown v. Nichols, Shepard & Co., 123 Ill. 492, 24 N.E. 339 (1890).


For a Count seeking to recover Damages as in an Action on the Case for Deceit, and also for a Breach of Contract, see Noctling v. Wright, 72 Ill. 390 (1874); People’s Nat. Bank v. Nickerson, 106 Me. 502, 76 A. 937 (1910).

On negligent Damages to person and property from the same act, see Chicago W. D. By. Co. v. Ingraham, 131 Ill. 509, 23 N.E. 350 (1890). See, also, Kinney v. Turner, 15 Ill. 182 (1853); Wilson v. Gilbert, 161 Ill. 49, 43 N.E. 792 (1896).


CONSEQUENCES OF DUPLICITY

74. Duplicity is a Fault in Form, and can only be objected to by Special Demurrer.

THIS Rule results necessarily from the Nature of the Fault, which is not in the Substance of the Matter Pledged, but in the Statement of Matter in excess of what is necessary to constitute a valid Claim, or Answer. Being thus a Defect only in Form, advantage must be taken of it, under the Statute of Elizabeth, only by Special Demurrer, in which the particular Duplicity must be

98. Bacon’s Abr., “Pleas” etc. K.2 (London, 1778); Comyn’s Dig., “Pleader” E.2 (Dublin, 1793).

A. Plea by an Executrix in Abatement was not subject to the charge of Duplicity In Alleging the Facts showing that the Action did not survive against defendant as Executor; where, if the Action survived, those Facts were necessary under the Illinois Abatement Act, § 25, to make the plea good. Gennill v. Smith, 274 Ill. 87, 113 N.E. 27 (1910), clearly pointed out. 99. If the Party Demur Generally, the objection cannot afterwards be raised. Where the Opposite Party, Instead of Demurring to a Pleading which contains two distinct and sufficient Matters, improperly joined, Pleads Over instead, the weight of authority seems to be that he must answer both Matters, or the one passed over will remain decisive against him. In such case, an Answer to each Matter, single in itself, does not constitute Duplicity; but it must still be remembered that each Separate Answer, as to its own Allegations, is subject to the

Page 161 of 735
full operation of the Rule.

The Rule requiring the Demurrer for Duplicity to be Special, finds no application in the case of Misjoinder of Causes of Action, since a plaintiff who joins in the same Declaration different Counts, containing separate and incongruous Causes of Action, as distinct Grounds of Recovery, commits a radical Fault, and his Declaration is bad, either on General Demurrer or in Arrest of Judgment or on Writ of Error. 2


But a Demurrer for Misjoinder must be to the Whole Declaration, and not merely to the Defective Count or Breach. Ungdoin v. Nottle, 1 Maine & S. 355, 105 Englep. 133 (1818); Fernald v. Garvin, 511 Me. 414 (1867). And the plaintiff cannot, if a Demurrer is Interposed, Aid his Mistake by entering a Nulls Prosequi, so as to prevent the operation of the Be.

PLEADINGS TO BE TRUE

75. Every Pleading should state only such Facts as are True and Capable of Proof, avoiding False and Frivolous Allegations tending to deceive the Court and the Adversary, and to delay the progress of the Trial.

AT Common Law, while it is a principle that Pleadings ought to be true, yet there are no means of enforcing the Rule. Thus the Common-Law Pleadings fail to uncover the Real Issues in dispute. The Illinois Practice Act (Section 52) made provision that the Denial of the Execution or Assignment of an Instrument in Writing, when a copy is filed with the Pleading, must be Verified by Affidavit. The Illinois Practice Act (Section 55) gave the plaintiff the option in Actions on Contract for the payment of money to file an Affidavit as to the amount due, and thereby require the defendant to file with his Plea an Affidavit of Merits which must specify the Nature of the Defense. The purpose of this is to give the plaintiff notice of the Real Defense to be presented and to limit the Issues to be tried.

It is usually provided in Reformed Systems of Pleading that the plaintiff may Verify his Complaint, and then the Denials of the Answer must be Specific, and must also be made Under Oath with the Penalties of Perjury for Falsehood. This requires the defendant to put in Issue only the Points on which he means to Rely. Thus, in a Suit on a Fire Insurance Policy, there may be no dispute as to the Execution of the Contract sued on; but the company may expect to avoid liability by showing in Defense some Excuse, such as Breach of Warranty by the insured. Accordingly, if the Complaint be Verified, the company cannot deny the signature or due execution of the policy, of


Sec. 75

PLEADINGS TO BE TRUE

149


39i; Saunders v. crawley, 1 Bolle, 112, 81 Eng. Rep. 366; Seymour v. Mitehcl, 2 Root (Conn.) 145, (1714); Onion v. Clark, 18 Vt. 363 (1546); flriggs v. Grand Trunk By. Co., 54 Me. 375 (1880); Carpenter v. McClure, 40 Vt. 108 (1868); Franey v. True, 26 III. 154 (1861); Armstrong v. Webster, 30 Ill. 333 (1803); Kipp v. Bell, 86 Ill. 577 (1877); flraber Bros., 106 fl. App. 410 (1902).


DECLARATION—MANNER OF PLEADING

which the proof might be difficult for the plaintiff to obtain and produce.3

CONFORMANCE TO CUSTOMARY FORMS

76. Pleadings should observe the known and ancient expressions as contained in approved precedents. When there has been a long-estab.
lished Form of Pleading, containing Allegations of Frequent and Ordinary Occurrence applicable to the Facts of a Particular Case, it should in general be adopted for the sake of Uniformity and Certainty.

THIS Rule is not to be taken as an imperative one, except in certain cases where precise technical expressions or terms are required to be used. At the same time it is safer to follow approved precedents, otherwise there is danger of omitting an Averment which might, on account of precedent, be considered essential to the particular Pleading.

The General Issues are examples of forms of expression, fixed by ancient usage, from which it is improper to depart. And another illustration of this Rule occurs in the following English case: To an Action on the Case, the defendants Plead the Statute of Limitations, namely, “that they were Not Guilty within six years,” etc. The Court decided, upon Special Demurrer, that this Form of Pleading was bad, upon the ground that “from the passing of the Statute to the present case the invariable Form of Pleading the Statute to an Action on the Case for a wrong has been to allege that the Cause of Action did not accrue within six years,” etc.; and that “it was important to the Administration of Justice that the usual and established Forms of Pleading should be observed.”

The Rule stated is of rather uncertain application, for it must be often doubtful whether a given form of expression has been so fixed by the course of precedent as to admit of no variation. In a New York case the Lower Court held a Declaration in Case for Deceit in the sale of property bad, even after Verdict, because it failed to allege the scintzer on the part of the defendant in making the sale, which was in accordance with precedent, and was deemed essential. “To dispense with the Rule,” said Kent, C. J., “would be a dangerous relaxation, and might lead to the loss of Certainty and Precision in Pleading. General Rules will sometimes appear harsh and rigorous in their application to particular cases; but I entertain a decided opinion that the established principles of pleading, which compose what is called its science, are rational, concise, luminous, and admirably adapted to the investigation of truth, and ought, consequently, to be very cautiously touched by the hand of innovation.” — On Writ of Error, this decision was reversed on the ground that the Defect was Aided or Cured by Verdict.6


PART THREE

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS—THE COMMON-LAW ACTIONS

CHAPTER 7

THE ACTION OF TRESPASS

Scope of the Action.
Forms of the Declaration,

79. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:

(1) In General.
80. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.

81. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (8) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act.

82. Declaration in Trespass—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages.

83. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

NOW that we have considered in general what facts must be stated in a Declaration in order to make out a good cause of action, we come to the problem of stating a cause of Action in terms of the Ordinary, Specific

Now, in the history and development of the Action of Trespass at Common Law, under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, see:


First we shall discuss the Allegations essential to establish liability in the Tort Actions, Trespass, Trespass on the Case, Trover, Ejectment, Detinue and Replein, after


Articles: Stance, The Venue of the Action of Trespass to Land, 27 W.Va.L.Q. 301 (1921); Woodbine, The Origin of the Action of Trespass, 33 Yale L.J. 798 (1924); 34 Id., 343 (1925); Winfield and Goodheart, Trespass and Negligence, 40 L.Q.Rev. 359 (1932); Williams, A Strange Offspring of Trespass Ab Initib, 52 L.Q.Rev. 106 (1936).

Comment: Injunctions—Continuing Trepass—Trial by Jury. 23 Co.L.Rev. 590 (1923).

Sec. 77.

78.

151

152

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

which we shall consider the allegations necessary to show liability in the Contract Actions, Debt, Covenant, Account, Special Assumpsit and General (Indebitatus) Assumpsit.

The typical elements or grounds constituting a cause of action differ with the different Forms of Action, whether in Tort, Contract or Property. And in Common Law Pleading the Declaration must state a cause of action in the particular form or theory of action selected. And, in order to do this, the plaintiff must state facts in his declaration that will (1) meet the test of a General Demurrer; and (2) which he can Prove at the Trial; for it will do the pleader no good to get by the Shoal of Demurrer if he is going to wreck on the Rock of Variance.

In Tort Actions

IN Tort Actions the plaintiff is, in general, to allege and prove merely the nature of the harm and defendant’s share in causing it. Matters of Justification and Excuse, as self-defense, leave and license, contributory negligence, consent or privilege, are put on the defendant to plead and prove, since it is unfair to assume that any of them are present or to require the plaintiff to disprove the existence of each. But in Malicious Prosecution the plaintiff must negative defendant’s good faith and reasonableness by showing malice and lack of probable cause as part of his prima facie case, though in the nature of excuse for the defendant, who is relieved on grounds of public policy, to protect prose-
cutors from the burden of attack, which might hamper public justice. In Slander and Libel, on the other hand, the plaintiff is relieved from the burden of showing the falsity of the defamatory words, and the defendant must prove the truth of his slanderous utterance in defense—a rule well calculated to give a man pause in making slanderous statements about his neighbors.

As the first of the Tort Actions, let us now consider the Action of Trespass, keeping in mind that one of our principal considerations is always, what facts must be alleged in order to state a good cause of action?

**SCOPE OF THE ACTION**

77. The Action of Trespass lies for the recovery of Damages for an injury to the person, property, or relative rights of another:

(I) Where the injury was committed with force, actual or implied;

(II) Where the injury was immediate, and not merely consequential;

(III) In case of injury to property, where

the property was in the actual or constructive possession of the plaintiff—tiff at the time of the injury.

The term “Trespass”, in its broadest sense, includes any offense or voluntary transgression against the law of nature, of society, or of the country in which we live, whether such act relates to a person or to his property. In a more restricted sense, it signifies an injury committed with violence, either actual or implied; and the law will imply violence though none is actually used, when the injury is of a direct and immediate character, and committed on the person or—on the corporeal and tangible property, real or personal, of the plaintiff. Of actual violence, an assault and battery is an example; of implied violence, a peaceable but wrongful entry upon another’s land.

Where, however, the injury was indirect and consequential, the remedy was Trespass on the Case, and here it should be observed that the two delictual remedies of Trespass and Trespass on the Case have divided between the entire field of tort; they supplement each other in this respect. In consequence, if Damage occurs as a result of a wrongful act or omission other than a breach


Sec. 77

**ACTION OF TRESPASS**

53

of contract, Trespass or Case become the accepted remedy, if the act was of such character as to constitute a wrong for which a civil action was available. There were other tort remedies such as Detinue, Replevin and Trover, but, broadly speaking, an act was not regarded as a tort except where it was remediable in Trespass or some Form of Trespass on the Case.

The early history on the Writ of Trespass is of great significance to the legal scholar as the fountain source of our law of torts. It was long the only Common Law remedy based on the conception of giving compensation for Damage resulting from wrongful acts. And prior to its emergence the law of torts was in a primitive and confused state. As yet there was no distinction between public and private wrongs, and the rules applicable to crime were yet to be formulated into a separate body of law. And this explains why, in its origin, Trespass was dual in character, being Part Criminal and Part Civil. Enforcement of such law of torts as existed was left to the Local Courts, of which the Written Records are few. When, however, the Writ found its way into the Royal Courts, the Common Law theory of tort liability gradually began to take definite form.

According to Pollock and Maitland, the Action of Trespass was descended from the old Writ of breve de traitis gressione: and although in its settled form it was quite uncommon in 1250, it had become common by 1272. By the reign of Edward I (1272—1307) the Action of Trespass, 223 (Northport 1906).

4 Id. at 225.

5. 2 Polkek and Maitlarni, History of English Law, c. VIII, Crime and Tort, 3, The Tresspassers, 523—529 (Cambridge...
6. ‘The recorded Instances of Trespass in the Royal Courts prior to 1252 are very few. In the ‘Abbre\textit{viatio Placitorum}’ some twenty-five cases of appeals of different kinds are mentioned, belonging to the period 1104—1252, but not a single case of Trespass. In the year 37 Henry III (1252—1253) no fewer than 1307) the Writ of Trespass had found its Way into the Register of Writs. But the authorities have not been in agreement as to the origin of the action. Ames, Holmes and Maitland tell us that Trespass originated from the Appeal of Felony, which lay far such crimes as homicide, mayhem, rape, wounthn- and battery, or for property injuries, such as arson and larceny, or for robbery.

Naturally, the earliest wrongs to call for remedy were those committed with force and violence, such as Trespass to real estate, accompanied by Damage to the defendant’s goods and chattels, assault and battery, false imprisonment, or abduction of the plaintiff’s wife. By authority of the Writ of Trespass a plaintiff was able to secure redress for Damage done to his person, his possession of goods or land, or his domestic relations, by direct physical interference.

A trespass may be committed either upon the person of another, as in the case of assault, assault and battery, or false arrest or imprisonment; or upon his real or personal property, as where a person enters upon another’s land, or takes or merely injures his

twenty-five cases of Trespass are recorded, and from this time on the action is frequent, while appeals are rarely brought.” Amos, Lectures on Legal History, Lecture IV, Trespass De Bonis Asportatis, 56 (Cambridge 1913).

7. See article by Maitland, Register of Original Writs,

3 Harv.L.Rev. 212, 217—220 (1889).


9. Many of the early cases involved a trespass to both real and personal property. In such cases the plaintiff alleged the trespass for, let us say, the breaking and entering of the dwelling house, as the principal trespass, and then added the injury to the personal property incidental thereto, as was said, by way of aggravation of damages. For a case involving this point, see Chamberlain v. Greenfield, 2 WmML 810, 06 Eng.Rep. 476 (1772).

154

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

Ch. 7

goods; or upon his relative rights, as where a person beats or debauches another’s daughter or servant. All trespasses, whether to person, property or relative rights, whether committed with actual or implied force, were and are called “trespass \textit{vi et armis}.”

As we have seen, a trespass is an injury committed with violence, and this violence may be either actual or implied; and the law will imply violence, even though none was actually used, where the injury is of a direct and immediate kind, and committed on the person or the tangible and corporeal property of the plaintiff; that is, if the injury is direct, and not consequential, the proper remedy to recover damages is by the Action of Trespass.”

U, however, a tort is committed without force, either actual or implied, or the injury was merely consequential, or if, in the case of injury to property, the plaintiff’s right or interest was only in reversion at the time of the injury, Trespass will not lie, and the remedy, as will be seen, must be by an Action on the Case or Trover."


FORMS OF THE DECLARATION

78. The **Forms of the Declaration** in Trespass included in this section are Trespass for Assault and Battery, a Form of Trespass to Personal Property, known as Trespass de honis asportatis, and Trespass to Real Property, known as Trespass quare clausum fregit.

**DECLARATION IN TRESPASS**

(For an Assault and Battery)

IN THE KING’S BENCH, Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

____ to wit, C. D. was attached to answer A. B. of a plea, wherefore he, the said C. D. with force and arms, at in the county aforesaid, made an assault upon the said A. B., and beat, wounded, and ill-treated him, so that his life was despaired of, and other wrongs to him there did, to the damage of the said A. B., and against the peace of our said lord the king, and to the damage of the said A. B., of £; and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

See, also, the case of Lawry v. Lawry, 88 Me. 482, 34 Atl. 273 (1896).

**ACTION OF TRESPASS**

there beat, wounded and ill-treated him, so that his life was despaired of, and other wrongs to the said A. B. then and there did, against the peace of our said lord the king, and to the damage of the said A. B. of £; and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

**DECLARATION IN TRESPASS**

(De Bonis Asportatis)
IN THE KING’S BENCH, Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

______ to wit, C. D. was attached to answer A. B. of a plea, wherefore he, the said defendant, on, &c., with force and arms, &c., to wit, at, &c. (Venue) seized and took a certain barge or vessel of the said plaintiff, of great value, to wit, of the value of

and in which said barge or vessel, the said plaintiff then and there intended, and was about to carry and convey certain goods, chattels, and merchandize, for certain freight and reward, to be therefore paid to the said plaintiff, and then and there carried away the said barge or vessel, and kept and detained the same from the said plaintiff for a long space of time, to wit, hitherto, and converted and disposed thereof to his own use, and thereby the said plaintiff was hindered and prevented from carrying and conveying the said goods, chattels and merchandize as aforesaid, and thereby lost and was deprived of all the profits, benefit and advantage which might and would otherwise have arisen and accrued to him therefrom, to wit, at &c. (Venue) aforesaid, and other wrongs to the said plaintiff then and there did, against the peace of our said lord the king, and to the damage of the plaintiff of £ ; and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

2 CHfl’-Y, Pleading, 861 (Springfield, 1859)

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS

(Quare Ciausum Fregit)

IN THE KING’S BENCH, Term, in the year of the reign of George the Fourth.

to wit, C. D. was attached to answer A. B. of a plea, wherefore he, the said C. D., with force and arms broke and entered the close of the said A. B., situate and being in the parish of in the county of

and with his feet, in walking, trod down, trampled upon, consumed, and spoiled the grass and herbage of the said A. B., there growing, and being of great value) and other wrongs to the said A. B. there did, to the damage of said A. B. and against the peace of our lord the now king. And thereupon, the said A. B., by his attorney, complains: For that The said C. D. heretofore, to wit, on the day of in the year of our Lord, with force and arms, broke and entered the close of the said A. B., that is to say, a certain close called situate and being In the parish aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, and with his feet, in walking, trod down, trampled upon, consumed, and spoiled the grass and herbage of the said A. B., then and there growing, and being of great value, to wit, of the value of of lawful money of Great Britain, and other wrongs to the said A. B., then and there did, against the peace of our said lord the king, and to the damage of the said A. B. of £ ; and therefore he brings his suit, &c.


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 7

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS—ESSENTIAL

ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

79. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration in Trespass are:

(1) For Injuries to the person:

(A) The application of force by direct act of defendant.

(B) The Damages.

(II) For injuries to real or personal property, or to relative rights:

(A) The Title or Right of plaintiff

(B) The Wrongful Act of defendant, causing direct injury.
(C) The Damages.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) THE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

80. In alleging plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession in the various Actions of Trespass:

(I) For injuries to the person no statement of the right is required.

(0) For injuries to real or personal property, or to relative rights:

(A) In General:

(1) The technical limits of Trespass to the party in possession, or with the immediate right of possession, are probably due to its origin as a semi-criminal action, covering a wrongful application of force which might lead to violence and a breach of the peace;

(2) Possession is to be distinguished from the custody of a servant; and a bailee at will is given the rights of a possessor, though for most purposes his possession is that of the bailor;

(3) In some states both a tenant at will and the landlord may sue in Trespass;

(II) For injuries to real or personal property, or to relative rights—Cont’d

(A) In General—Cont’d

(4) The family of the owner are licensees and do not have possession by reason of their occupancy alone;

(5) The owner of land not in the actual possession of another is said to be in constructive possession; that is, he is given the remedies of a possessor

(6) Naked possession is sufficient as against a wrongdoer.

(B) Specifically, the Declaration in Actions of Trespass to Property, Real or Personal, or to Relative Rights should:

(I) State the property or thing affected and the Title or Right of the plaintiff in relation thereto;

(2) Show such possession, actual or constructive, as is sufficient to sustain the action;

(3) Describe the property sufficiently for identification, but the plaintiff’s Title or Interest may be generally stated.

Trespass for Personal Injury

IN Trespass for injury to the person, the Declaration need only contain a statement of the wrongful act. This appears to be an exception to the rule that the Declaration in all Forms of Action should contain a Statement of the Right of the plaintiff as well as the Violation of that Right by Act of the defendant. But since the right of personal security and liberty belong to all, there is no necessity of alleging their existence in the pleading; the court takes judicial notice thereof. All that is necessary, therefore, is the statement of the wrongful act of the defendant, such as an assault and battery,

See Chapter 4, note 21, for a discussion of legal concepts of right, interest, and possession.

Sec. 80

ACTION OF TRESPASS

false imprisonment, and the damages caused thereby.

Trespass to Property—Including Real and Personal
IN order to maintain an Action of Trespass for injury to either real or personal property, the plaintiff must allege, by Way of Title, that he was in actual or constructive possession, at the time the injury occurred. He must have actual possession, or the right to immediate possession. If his right was

1. Illinois: Topping v. Evans, 58 Ill. 209 (1871);
2. Florida: Bucki v. Cone, 25 Fl. 1, 0 So. 160 (1889);

In Pinch v. Brian, supra, the plaintiff had left meat at the defendant’s house under an agreement for Its sale, and the defendant, after consuming a part of It, refused to take and pay for It. The lower Court sustained an Action of Trespass for such consumption, and, of course, on Appeal the Judgment was reversed.

merely in reversion, his remedy was in Trespass on the Case, not Trespass. 16

A General and Special Property interest

IT is frequently said that an Allegation of a General or Special Property Interest is sufficient to support an Action of Trespass. This is true if properly understood.

Thus, the general owner of personal property, who parts with custody thereof, does not necessarily part with his possession so as to prevent his maintaining Trespass against a stranger. The person who has the absolute or general property interest may maintain the action, though, when the injury occurred, he had parted with the custody to a carrier, servant, or other agent, where it appears that he gave the latter only a bare authority to carry or keep, not coupled with any special interest in the property. And generally, if the owner of personal property merely permits another gratuitously to use it, having a right to retake possession at any time, he may sue a stranger in Trespass for an injury done to it while it was so used: -- The rule applies equally to an Action of Trespass by a bailee who had an authority, coupled with an interest, and a right to irime


diate possession, although he did not have the actual possession at the time of the injury. These cases involve a constructive possession, which, as we have seen in the very beginning, was a sufficient Allegation of Title to support the action. If, however, the owner of personal property parts with possession of it, and the bailee, at the time when it is injured by a stranger, has the exclusive right to its use, the owner’s right is merely in reversion, and his remedy is by an Action on the Case, and not Trespass.

The Agent or Servant Acting in Behalf of His Principal or Employer

A MERE servant, acting in behalf of his employer, and having the bare custody of the goods at the time they are injured, cannot maintain Trespass, or any other possessory action, for, in contemplation of law, he has no possession, actual or constructive. While there appears to be no very substantial distinction between the custody of a servant and the possession of a depositary at will, nevertheless, the bailee is allowed the possessory remedies, but the servant is not. A servant or agent is denied the rights and remedies of a possessor, because his acts are the acts of his employer, and hence the rights which he represents are those of his employer. By an anomaly of the Common Law, a subservient bailee, like a depositary for storage, who holds, like a servant, entirely at the orders of the bailor, is yet regarded as having legal possession rather than mere custody and hence may sue a trespasser.

There can hardly be such a thing as possession in law, entitling one to the possessory remedies, without a claim of Title, or at least some independent claim of a limited or temporary interest. A tenant at will or a bailee at will has possession as against the public in general, though for most purposes his holding is the possession of the owner.

Trespass to Real Property—Quare Clausum Fregit

WITH a few exceptions what has been said with reference to alleging Title in Trespass to Personal Property applies equally in alleging Title to Real Property. The gist of the action of Trespass quare clausum fregit is the injury to the possession, and the general rule is that the plaintiff, in order to maintain the action, must allege that he was in actual or constructive possession of the realty at


24. In general, on the subject of possession, see:

Treatises: Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. XIII, Rules of Pleading. * 268 (St. Paul, 1905); Stephen, A Treatise on the
ACTION OF TRESPASS

the time the injury was committed. As in the case of personal property, if the plaintiff’s right was merely in reversion, his remedy is by an Action on the Case, not Trespass.

Where the land is in the exclusive possession of a lessee, other than a tenant at will, and in some states even if a tenant at will, Case, and not Trespass is the remedy by the landlord for an injury by a stranger affecting the inheritance, even where Trespass would be the proper remedy if the landlord himself were in possession. In some jurisdictions it is held that Trespass will lie in such a case by the landlord if the tenant in possession was merely a tenant at will, since the landlord has such a constructive possession as will sustain the action; but in New York the contrary was held on the ground that, in the opinion of the court, possession

Articles: Terry, Possession, 13 Ill.L.Rev. 314 (1018); Eingham, The Nature and Importance of Legal Possession, 13 Mich.L.Rev. 535, Id. at 623 (1918); Ballantine, Claim of Title in Adverse Possession, 28 Yale L.J. 219 (1919).


The mere occupancy of land by a hired servant of the owner, without paying rent, is not possession. In such case the possession is said to be constructively or actually in the owner, and he may maintain Trespass as if he had been in actual possession himself. Likewise, the family or servants, the guests or lodgers, of a householder, do not have possession, even during the absence of the owner, as there is no claim of title or interest on their part even at the time. Their occupation is regarded as entirely subordinate to and in the name of the owner. Possession implies some claim of title or independent holding. A Wisconsin case illustrates a questionable failure to apply this doctrine. It appeared that B, the defendant, had committed a trespass during the absence of C, the husband of the plaintiff, A. In an action by A, the wife, it was held that she had sufficient possession to maintain Trespass, on the theory that she was in the exclusive occupation of the premises in the absence of her husband. It is submitted that the court overlooked the point that occupancy and residence are not possession, unless under a Claim of Title of some sort. The situation of the wife would appear to be like that of

28. Campbell v. Arnold, 1 Johns. (N.Y.) 511 (1806); Tobey v. Webster, 3 Johns. (N.Y.) 468 (1808).


a servant or licensee or guest. The presumption is that the joint occupancy of husband and wife is the possession of the husband, although this may be rebutted.33

In England and in some of our states, New York in particular, it was held that the rule that the general ownership of property draws to it the possession, applicable to personal property, does not apply to real property; that in the case of real property there is no such constructive possession, and hence unless the plaintiff had the actual possession by himself or his servant at the time of the injury, he cannot maintain Trespass.34 In most of our states the rule is otherwise, and the owner of Land not in the actual possession of another is given the remedies of a possessor.35 If no one has actual possession, the owner of the Legal Title has constructive possession; but there


34. 1 Chitty, A Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Forms, c. II, Of the Forms of Action, 197 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1876); 0 Bacon, New Abridgment of the Law, 554 at 566, Trespass (C) 3, (5th ed. by Gwilliam, London, 1798).

See, also, the following cases: English: King v. Watson, 5 East 485, 102 Eng.Rep. 1156 (1504); KentuckY: Fish v. Brinnamom, 2 Mon. (Ky.) 379 (1842) Walton v. Clarke, 4 Bibb. (Ky.) 218 (1815); llfassachusetts: Spathawk v. Bagg, 16 Cray (Mass.) 583 (1860); Allen v. Thayer, 17 Mass, 299 (1821); New York: Campbell v. Arnold, 1 Johns. (N.Y.) 511 (1800).

35. Atama: Gillespie v. Dew, 1 Stew. (Ala.) 229, 18 S.c & M Dec. 42 (1827); Arkansas: Ledbetter v. Fitzgerald, 1 Ark. 448 (1839); Connecticut: Bulkley v. Dolbeare, 7 Conn. 232 (1828); Wheeler v. Botch, 10 Cona. 225 (1834); Illinois: Dean v. Comstock, 32 Ill. 173 (1863); Cairo & St. Le. B. C. v. Woosley, 85 Ill. 370 (1877); Wilcox v. Kinzie, 3 Seam. (III) 218 (1841); MissourY: Davis v. Wood, 7 Mo. 162 (1841); New York: Van Brunt v. Schenek, 11 Johns. (N.Y.) 385 (1814); Wiekbam v. Freeman, 12 Johns. (N.Y.) 183 (1815); North Carolina: Dobbs v. Gullidge, 20 N.e. 197 (1535); Cohoon v. Simmons, 29 N.C. 189 (1847); Pennsylvania: Baker v. Ing, 18 Pa. 138 (1851); South Carolina: Davis v. Clancy.

3 McOord (8.0.) 422 (1826); Skinner v. McDowell, 2 Hoft & MeC. (8.0.) 68 (1819).

CLI. 7 cannot be constructive possession of land by the holder of the Legal Title where third persons are in actual adverse possession.37

Where Land is in the Actual and Lawful Possession of the Wrongdoer—Specificalty the Tenant at Will

In some cases Trespass may be maintained for an injury to property, real or personal, while it was in the actual and lawful possession of the wrongdoer, for an abuse of his possession may ipso facto terminate his possession in the eye of the law, and render him a Trespasser Ab Initio?38 Thus, for example, it has been held that if a tenant at will commits waste, his wrongful act terminates the tenancy, possession is restored, and Trespass quare clausuni fregit may be maintained against him by the landlord or reversioner.38

This is what some of the English and American Courts have held, but is submitted that it is not a realistic explanation of what actually happened. At Common Law the Action of Waste was not available against a tenant at will.39 When, therefore, a tenant at will committed waste—let us say be chopped down the century old shade trees in front of the mansion—the landlord demanded a remedy. There was none at the time as the Action on the Case was not yet in being. What happened? They took the Action of Trespass, which in legal theory, was avail


**Sec. 80**

**ACTION OF TRESPASS**

able only for the protection of an actual possessor interest, and stretched it to fill a temporary remedial gap. By his wrongful act of destroying the trees, the authorities argued, the tenant terminated the lease at will, restored the possession to the landlord, who then proceeded with his Action of Trespass. In reality, even after the wrongful act, the tenant at will remained in actual physical possession, and to say that the act restored possession to the landlord was a pure fiction—a fiction which continued in operation until the Action of Trespass on the Case came into operation as a Remedy for injury to reversionary interests. Somewhat the same sort of development took place when Trespass was originally permitted as a remedy in the seduction cases on the theory that the wrongdoer has interfered with the master’s possessor interest in his servant, to wit, his daughter. In this instance, as in the tenancy at will, a fiction was coupled with the Action of Trespass to bridge a remedial gap, until Case came in as a remedy for the indirect consequential injury to the father resulting from the seduction of his daughter.  

**A Mere Naked Possession as Sufficient Title Against a Wrongdoer**

SINCE the days of the Ancient Real Possessor Actions, or more specifically, since the appearance of the Assize of Novel Disseisin, one forcibly ousted from his possession could be summarily restored to his possession. The law protected one in possession of real property in order to prevent breaches of the peace. It is not surprising then to find that Trespass, being an interference with the possession, the de facto exercise of dominion over property, does not require a Legal Title to support it. Under the early Common Law, if the so-called Title, which was only an older possession, was involved, the remedy was by Writ of Right.  

In consequence of this development, it became established law that a mere naked possession, without any other Title, is sufficient as against a wrongdoer. In the case of *Graham v. Peat*, 42 the Court declared: “Any possession is a legal possession against a wrongdoer.” Possession is a sufficient Title to the plaintiff in an Action of Trespass *vi et armis* against a wrongdoer; the finder of an article may maintain Trespass against any person but the real owner; and, a person having an illegal possession may support this action against any person other than the true owner.  

A bailee may maintain Trespass against a stranger, or even the general owner, for an injury to the property which is in his possession, 44 and, as we have seen, even where

40. See the following cases: English: Woodward v. Walton, 2 Bls. & Pul. (NS.) 476, 127 Eng.Rep. 715 (2807); *Ditcham v. Bond*, 2 Msule & 8. 436, 105 Eng Rep. 443 (1814); New York: Akerley v. Caines (N.Y.) 292 (1805), in which Trespass was held to be the proper remedy for seduction of a daughter; and Moran v. Dawes, 4 Cow. (N.Y.) 412 (1825), decided just twenty years later, In which the Court held that Trespass on the Case was the proper action.


**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

he had not the actual possession, if he had the right to take immediate possession, since he had the constructive possession. The quantity or certainty of the bailee’s interest is immaterial. Even a mere gratuitous bailee may maintain the action against a stranger. As we have seen, a person professedly in possession as a mere servant cannot maintain Trespass.

In general, what has been said as to mere naked possession with reference to Trespass to Personal Property applies to Real Property. In an Action of Trespass for injury to Real Property, the Title may come into question, but it is not essential that it should. Actual and exclusive possession without a Legal Title is sufficient against a wrongdoer or a person who cannot show any right or authority from the real Owner. Trespass,


**ACTION OF TRESPASS**

Sec. 50

Where the plaintiff was not in actual possession, whether the property was real or personal, but relies upon a constructive possession to maintain his action, title becomes very material, He must allege such a Title as thaws to it the constructive possession.

He must at least show a right to immediate possession and the absence of adverse possession.

Where the Property or Right injured is intangible

WHERE the property or right injured is intangible, that is, not involving possession, the injury can never be considered as Trespass, but the remedy must be by an Action on the Case. Trespass will not lie, for instance, for obstructing a private right of way, where the oVmer of the right does not own or possess the way itself. Nor will it lie for obstructing a public highway.

But, if a tenancy at will had been terminated by no. tlce, and the tenant had merely remained in possession, he cannot maintain the action against his landlord. Meader v. Stone, 7 Mete (Mass.) 147 (1843); Curl v. Lowell, 19 Pick. (Mass.) 25 (1837).

It has generally been held that a tenant at sufferance cannot maintain the ad-ion against his landlord.


Alabama: Gillespie v. Dew, 1 Stew. (Ala.) 229, 18 Am.Dec. 42 (1827); Illinois: Cairo & St. L. H. Co. v. Woosley, 85 Ill. 370 (1ST?).


New York: Lansing v. Wiswall, 5 Denio (N.Y.) 213 (1848); Lambert -cc Hoke, 14 Johns. (N.Y.) 383
Where the injury is to corporeal property, an Action of Trespass is the proper remedy, notwithstanding the fact that the property was the means by which an incorporeal right was enjoyed. Thus, destruction of a dam is a trespass, although the dam is the means by which a franchise granted by the legislature is exercised.

Stating the Right of the Plaintiff

In Trespass to Lands or Goods, it is necessary to describe the property affected, whether real or personal, and to show the plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession. Thus, the Declaration must allege the property to be the plaintiff’s, or at least in the plaintiff’s possession. It is sufficient to plead ownership, and under that pleading any evidence showing sufficient right and interest to maintain Trespass is enough. Possession alone is all that needs to be proved. It will be sufficient to prove Actual Possession without any Title, or Actual Possession Coupled with Title, or Title Coupled with


Offensive Pleadings

DEnSsential Allegations—(3) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act

81. The Wrongful Act must be a direct application of force, however slight, something that might cause a breach of the peace. The injury must be immediate and not merely consequential upon the defendant’s act. Trespass lies for an immediate and forcible injury to person or property by an intentional or negligent act.

Trespass will not lie for Malicious Prosecution, nor for acts done under Authority of Process Regularly Issued. Trespass will lie for Abuse of Authority of Law, making the wrongdoer a Trespasser Ab Initio.

The Declaration must state the wrong or injury violating the plaintiff’s right, and must on the face of it show a Trespass; that is, an injury committed with Force, Actual or Implied, and an injury that was Direct and Immediate upon the defendant’s Act, and not merely Consequential.

The Elements of Force

FORCE is either actual or implied. An Assault and Battery, tearing down a fence and entering upon land, or breaking into a house, or carrying away goods, are exam-
Rocker v. Perkins, 6 Mackey (D.C.) 379 (1888), in which it was held sufficient to allege ownership in trespass for injury to a colt.


Force is implied in every Trespass quare clausum fregit. If a man goes upon another’s land without right, however peaceably or thoughtlessly, the law will imply force, and trespass will lie. And the same is true if a man’s cattle are driven or stray upon another’s land and cause injury.

In order to maintain trespass for an injury to personal property, it is not necessary that the property shall have been carried away or converted by the wrongdoer. Any forcible and immediate injury to it is sufficient. Fouldes v. Willoughby, 8 Mees. & W. 544, 151 Eng.Rep. 1170 (1841); Connah v. Hale, 23 Vend. (N.Y.) 462 (1840).


In order to maintain trespass for an injury to personal property, it is not necessary that the property shall have been carried away or converted by the wrongdoer. Any forcible and immediate injury to it is sufficient. Fouldes v. Willoughby, 8 Mees. & W. 544, 151 Eng.Rep. 1170 (1841); Connah v. Hale, 23 Vend. (N.Y.) 462 (1840).


If a person’s cattle stray upon another’s land, and cause injury, trespass lies, and ordinarily it is the only proper form of action; though, as we shall see, if they got out because of their owner’s neglect to repair a fence which he was under a duty to repair, the injured party may treat this neglect as his cause of action, and bring an action on the case for the consequential injury. Or, he may, instead of suing in case, treat the trespass as his cause of action, and maintain trespass. See the following cases: English: Star v. Rookesby, 1 Salk. 335, 91 Eng. Rep. 295 (1711); Mason v. Keeling, 12 Mod. 335, 88 Eng.Rep. 1361 (1699); Massachusetts: Daniels v. Pond, 21 Pick. (Mass.) 369, 32 Am.Dec. 269 (1838); New York: Guille v. Swan, 19 Johns. (N.Y.) 381, 10 Am.Dec. 234 (1822).


If a person’s wife, daughter or servant is assaulted, beaten or imprisoned, there is a forcible injury to the man’s relative rights, for which he may maintain Trespass. Where a wife, daughter, or servant is enticed away, or seduced or debauched, even with her or his consent, the law implies force, and the husband, father, or master may maintain Trespass against the wrongdoer.

Generally, a mere nonfeasance cannot support an action of Trespass, for in the absence of an act there can be no force. Trespass, therefore, will not lie for the mere detention of goods, where there has been no unlawful taking; nor for neglect to repair the bank of a stream, whereby another’s land was overflowed; nor for neglect to repair...
As we shall see under Chapter 8, Trespass on the Case, he may regard the Injury (loss of comfort or services) as consequential, and sue in case, at his election.


11. 1 Chitty, A treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Forms, c. II, Of the Forms Of Action 141 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1876); Rinks v. Rinks, 46 Me. 423 (1859).

a fence, whereby another’s animal escaped onto the land of the person so negligent or elsewhere, and was injured.\[\text{\textsuperscript{5}}\]

As a rule, a master is not liable in Trespass for injuries caused by the negligence or want of skill of his servant, or by his unauthorized act; but must be sued in Case, if at all, even though the servant might be liable in Trespass.\[\text{\textsuperscript{6}}\] If the injury occurs, however, as the natural and probable consequence of an act of the servant ordered expressly or impliedly by the master, and the act was forcible, and the injury immediate, Trespass will lie against the master."

**The Injury as Immediate**

TO sustain Trespass the injury must have been immediate, and not merely consequen


Kentucky: Johnson v. Castleman, 2 Dana (Ky.) 373 (1834); Massachusetts: Barnes v. Hurd, 11 Mass. 57 (1814); New York: Broughton v. Whallon, S
Wend. (N.Y.) 474 (1832); Wright -ce Wilcox, 19

Phillips, 1 Mass. 530 (1805); Howe v. Newmarch, 12
Allen (Mass.) 49 (1866); Campbell v. Phelps, 1?
Mass. 244 (1821); Mississippi: Me-o-y v. McKowen,
28 Miss. 487, 59 Am.Dec. 264 (1853); Pennsylvanian

In Gregory v. Piper, supra, a master had ordered his servant to lay some rubbish near his neighbor’s wall, but so that it might not touch the same, and the servant used ordinary care, but some of the rubbish naturally fell against the wafl, and It was held that trespass could be maintained against the master.
Iii Stroll v. Levan, 39 Pa. 177, It was held that tres—pass lies against an owner of a Vehicle, for a collision, who is riding in it at the time, though driven by a servant, if the injury was the result of negligence.

166

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

For consequential injuries, even though there may have been force, the remedy is by Action on the Case, and not Trespass's

If a person, in the act of throwing a log into the highway hits and injures a passerby, the injury is immediate upon the wrongful act, and Trespass will lie; but, if after a log has been wrongfully thrown into the highway, a passer-by falls over it, Trespass will not — So if a steam roller were driven over a person this would be a clear Trespass, but if it were negligently left in the highway and a collision with a team or automobile resulted in the darkness, this would be a consequential injury.

To constitute an immediate injury committed with force, it is not necessary that the wrongdoer shall have intended to apply the force in the manner in which it caused the injury. If a man puts in motion a force, the natural and probable tendency of which is to cause an injury, he is regarded in law as having forcible and directly caused that injury. For instance, a person lays rubbish so near another's wall that, as a natural consequence, some of it rolls against the wall, the injury is forcible and immediate, and the remedy is in Trespass. And where the defendant had ascended a balloon, which descended a short distance from the place of ascent into the plaintiff's garden, and the defendant, being entangled and in a perilous position, called for help, and a crowd of people broke through the fences into the garden and trampled down the vegetables, it was held that, though ascending in a balloon was not an unlawful act, yet, as the defendant's descent, under the circumstances, would ordinarily and naturally draw the crowd into the garden, either from a desire to assist him, or to gratify a curiosity which he had excited, he was answerable in Trespass for all the damage done to the garden. And where a person makes an excavation so near his neighbor's land, that the land, from its own weight and of necessity, falls, Trespass will lie. And where a person negligently drives off another's animal with his own, without endeavoring to ascertain the number of animals he is driving, Trespass is a proper remedy against him.

So, where a person through negligent and careless driving, though not willfully, causes his vehicle to forcibly strike another vehicle or a person, the person injured need not bring an Action on the Case, though by the weight of authority, such an action is also maintainable, but may sue in Trespass.

OFFICIAL PLEADINGS

\[\text{Cli. 7}\]

For wilful injury so caused, trespass is the only remedy.

Sec. 81

ACTION OF TRESPASS

The same is true where a collision between vessels is caused by carelessness or unskillfulness in navigation. And, generally by the weight of authority, where there is an immediate and forcible injury to person or property, attributable to the negligence of another, the party injured may at his election treat the negligence of the wrongdoer as the cause of action and declare in case or consider the act itself as the injury and declare in trespass. Some of the Courts, however, hold that where the injury from a negligent act is both forcible and immediate, case will not lie, and that trespass is the only remedy.

So, if a wild or vicious beast, or other dangerous thing, is turned loose or put in motion, and mischief immediately ensues to the person or property of another, the injury is regarded as immediate and as committed with force, and trespass is the proper remedy.

The Squib Case

An illustration of the barren debates as to the distinction between trespass and case is found in the oft-cited Squib Case of Scott.


88. Connecticut: Gates v. Miles, 3 Conn. 64 (1819); Ohio: Case v. Mark, 2 Ohio 169 (1819), criticized in Claflin v. Wilcox, IS Vt. 605 (1846). See, also, Daniels v. Clegg, 28 web. 32 (1873).


V. Shepherd, decided in 1773.90 A lighted squib or bomb had been tossed by the defendant into a market house. A bystander, in order to avert the threatened injury from himself, took up the squib and tossed it across the market house. Another person near whom it fell likewise threw it in another direction. Thereupon the squib exploded and put out the plaintiff’s eye. An Action of Trespass was brought against the defendant who first threw the bomb, and the action was sustained. Sir William Blackstone, who happened to be a Member of the Court, dissented, being of the opinion that case only would lie, as the harm was not the immediate and direct result of the defendant’s act. In this famous case there was no question of liability, but merely of the historical distinction between Forms of Action.

Other Illustrations

In another case, in which the distinction between immediate and consequential injury is considered, the
defendant had seized the plaintiff by the arm and swung him violently around and let him go, and the plaintiff, becoming dizzy, had involuntarily passed rapidly in the direction of a third person and came violently in contact with him, whereupon the latter pushed him away, and he came in contact with a hook, and was injured. It was held that Trespass was the proper remedy.°°

Where a person beats a drum in the highway, the natural or probable consequence of which is to frighten the horse of another and cause it to run away, and such a consequence results, he is liable in Trespass for the injury. It is immaterial whether the in


168

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

jury be willful or negligent, if his act is the immediate cause of it.°°

TI a man starts a fire on his own land negligently, which spreads, and, as an immediate consequence, the property of another is destroyed by it, Trespass is a proper remedy for the injury.°° So if a dog is set on plaintiff’s horses, one of which, while being pursued, is injured or killed, this is the direct result of defendant’s act, and Trespass is the proper form.

If a person pours water directly upon another’s person or land, it is clear that the injury is immediate, and that Trespass is the remedy.°° But if a person stops a water course on his own land, whereby it is prevented from flowing as usual, or if he place a spout on his own building, and in consequence thereof the water after-wards runs therefrom upon another’s land or house or person, the injury is consequential, and Trespass will not lie.

injuries under Color of Legal Proceedings

NICE questions have arisen as to whether Trespass will lie for injuries done to the person or property under Color of Legal Process or Proceedings, as in case of wrongful prosecution of a criminal charge, wrongful arrest, or wrongful attachment of goods.

Generally no action at all will lie for an act done under the Judgment or Order of a


That trespass only lies for an act which is or tends to a breach of the peace, sec 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. XVII, The Action of Trespass 235 (Northport 1906).


94. Illinois: Painter v. Baker, 16 Ill. 103 (1854);

Tennessee: James v. Caldwell, 7 Yerg. (Tenn.) 35 (1834).

95. Reynolds v. Clerk, 8 Mod. 272, 88 Eng.Rep. 193 (1725),

Court or Magistrate having jurisdiction over the subject matter.°°

When the Court had no Jurisdiction at all over the subject matter, or exceeded its Jurisdiction, Trespass is the proper form of action against all the parties for any act which, independently of the process, would sustain such an action...°° If goods have been taken, Trover also will lie.
If the Court had Jurisdiction, but the proceeding or process was irregular and void, Trespass is the proper form of action, and generally Case will not lie. 98


Trespass is the proper remedy where a court has jurisdiction over the subject matter, but is bound to Sec. 81.

ACTION OF TRESPASS

When Process has been misapplied, as where one person has been arrested under a warrant against another, or the goods of one person have been taken under process against another's goods, Trespass, and not Case, is the remedy. 99

When the Process of a Court has been abused by the officer executing it, as where unnecessary force has been used in making a lawful arrest, or detaining a prisoner, or goods are taken or used improperly under a valid Writ, Trespass is the remedy.

Trespass will not lie for acts done under Legal Process, such as Writs and Warrants regularly issued by a Court having Jurisdiction, however malicious and groundless the institution of the proceedings may have been. Case for Malicious Prosecution is the only remedy for improperly putting in motion the regular Process of the Court. 2


Page 183 of 735
Trespass ab Initio

A PERSON may lawfully obtain possession of property under the process of a Court, or authority of a statute, or otherwise under authority of law, yet if he abuses his authority by dealing with the property in an unauthorized manner, he may become a Trespasser ab initio.~

“When an entry, authority, or license is given to any one by the law, and he doth abuse it, he shall be a Trespasser ab initio; but where an entry, authority, or license is given by the party, and he abuses it, then he must be punished for his abuse, but shall not be a Trespasser ab initio.”

An officer who enters a house by authority of law, and attaches goods therein, becomes a Trespasser ab initio by placing there an unfit person as keeper of the goods, against the remonstrance of the owner of the house. And the same is true where an officer has made a lawful levy on goods, but sells without giving the notice required by law.6


Moreover, a landlord who lawfully distrains goods, but sells without a previous appraisement and at displacelijkeurance, becomes a trespasser ab initio.7

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Trespass will also lie where a battery or imprisonment was in the first instance lawful, but the party, by an unnecessary degree of violence, became a Trespasser ab initio.”
DECLARATION IN TRESPASS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (4) THE DAMAGES

82. The Declaration must also Alleges the Damages which are the legal and natural consequences of the injury. The form of statement must be according to their nature, as General or Special.

AS the main object of the Action of Trespass is the recovery of damages, the Declaration should contain an Allegation of the Damage sustained, and the amount must be laid high enough to cover the actual demand. They will be Generally or Particularly stated, according as they are General or Special. “General Damages are such as the law presumes to have accrued from the wrong complained of. Special Damages are such as the party actually sustained, and are not implied by law. 1 Chitty on Pleadings, 385. Such Damages as may be presumed necessarily to result from the breach of contract, need not be stated in the Declaration. The law always presumes some damages to result from a breach of contract, and therefore Special Damages need not be alleged. But where the plaintiff expects to recover Special Damages, he must state them Specially and Circumstantially in order to apprise the defendant of the facts intended to be proven, or he will not be permitted to give evidence of such Damages on the Trial.

The form of statement must be according to their nature, as General or Special.


1 Chitty, 332. The general rule is, that it is sufficient to assign the Breach in the words of the contract. Id. 326. An omission to set forth any Special Damage may deprive the plaintiff of the benefit of testimony, to which he would otherwise have been entitled; but it is not a good ground in Arrest of Judgment, except in cases where the special injury is the gist of action; as in Action of Slander for words not in themselves actionable. In such cases, unless the Special Damage is set forth, there appears no cause of action on the face of the Declaration.” M’Daniel, Admr. v. Terrill, 1 Nott & McC. (S.C.) 343 (1818).

STATUS UNDER MODERN CONES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

83. Although the Codes provided for the abolition of the distinctions between the various Common Law Actions, with respect to Trespass, and Case, it has generally been held that such provision merely abolished the Formal differences between the actions, with the Substantive differences remaining.

AS previously observed, one effect of the New York Code of Procedure in 1848 was ostensibly to abolish the Common Law Forms of Action, and the distinctions between the same. But the reform was not as sweeping as the language indicated. There was to be but one form of civil action in the Courts of Common Law, which was to be called an “Action at Law.” In plain English, the various statutes of this character, in the various states adopting the New York Code, provided for a single, formless form of action, in the nature of a Special Action on the Case. But in Goulet v. Asseler, Selden J. flatly declared that the more formal differences between such actions had been abolished, but that the substantive differences remained as at Common Law. It was, he said, impossible to make an action for a direct aggression upon the plaintiff’s rights by taking and disposing of his property—for which a remedy at Common Law was Trespass de bonis asportatis—the same thing as an action to recover for the consequential injury resulting from an improper interference with the property of another, such as an injury to a reversionary interest—and for which the remedy at Common Law was Trespass on the Case.

In the period of Reform in the Non-Code States—between 1848 and 1938—several States, like Illinois and Maine, enacted statutes which merely provided for the abolition of the distinctions between the Actions of Trespass...
and Trespass on the Case. In discussing the effect of such statutes, in St. Louis, Vandolia and Terre Haute I. It. Co. v. The Town of Summit," Baker 3, stated: "The statute does away with the technical distinction between the two Forms of Action, but does not affect the substantial rights and liabilities of parties, so as to operate to give any other remedy for acts done than before existed.' We understand the statute to accomplish these objects and these only; to abolish the technical distinction between the Two Forms of Action so that you may join Counts in Trespass with Counts in

10. In accord: Lawry v. Lawry, 58 Me. 482, 483, 484-485, 48 A. 273, 274 (1896), in which the plaintiff brought Trespass quare clausum frexit for cutting standing trees on a lot of land which the plaintiff owned in remainder, the widow of his father having a life estate therein as her dower. Under a Maine Statute which abolished the distinction between the Actions of Trespass and Trespass on the Case, the issue was whether the plaintiff, whose interest was only that of a remainder-man, could maintain Trespass. In holding that the plaintiff could not maintain the Action in the Form of Trespass and could not be allowed to Amend so as to change the Form of Action, Foster J., declared: "The Amendment changing the Declaration to Case ought not to be allowed. True, the Statute has abolished the distinction between the Actions of Trespass and Trespass on the Case, but this relates to the distinction in Form only. In cases where the distinction is really of Substance, rather than of Form, the Statute is inapplicable.'

172 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

force. One defendant justified his acts under authority of Spicer, both defendants claiming that Spicer owned in fee simple the land upon which the cutting was done and was in possession thereof. The Replication denied these allegations.

At the Trial, it appeared that the dispute grew out of a disagreement as to the location of the boundary line between the properties of the contending parties. The plaintiff claimed, as evidenced by title deeds, up to a point beyond which the cutting took place, whereas the defendant Spicer contended that his ownership included the property on which the cutting took place.

The Court instructed the Jury that the plaintiff, in order to be entitled to a Verdict, must prove that he was in actual or constructive possession of the land; that it was not necessary that the plaintiff show actual possession, but that sufficient proof of possession would be produced by proof of Title and the absence of actual and exclusive possession in another.

On an Appeal, the validity of this Charge to the Jury was the principal issue. In holding for the defendants and that there was no error, Chief Justice Prentice
observed:
“Passing by Trespass with its requirement of possession as a prerequisite of recovery, there was in the Common-Law System a Form of Action providing for the redress of an injury suffered by one having an interest in property, but not having the possession.

**By an Action of Trespass on the Case one**
whose reversionary interest had been invaded by a wrongdoer might have redress. But the Action could not be resorted to by one whose interest, instead of being reversionary, was such as the right of possession attached to it. A fee owner, for example, might not avail himself of it to redress a wrong done to his property by direct force, express or implied, His interest is possessory and not reversionary, as is that of a landlord, remainderman, and the like.

Two pertinent facts of present interest and importance thus appear. The first is that a person whose interest was not reversionary was not permitted to recover for injury to property unless he could show possession, actual or constructive. The second is but its corollary, to wit, that a title owner disseised could not sue his disseisor, for the latter’s acts of wrongdoing to the property as long as the disseisin continued. The disseisee in such case must either first regain possession by legal action or otherwise, and then bring his Action of Trespass for the injury to the property, or recover for those injuries as an incident of his action to regain possession. He could not sue the disseisor for the tort independently until he had come into possession. . . . The substitution of our Practice Act for the Common-Law System of Pleading has not changed the situation save as it has abolished certain formal distinctions and employed a new nomenclature. The same facts will entitle one to the same redress as before, and to no other redress.” 12

It thus appears that although there is a change, in name, substantively the requirements for bringing an Action under Modern Codes, Practice Acts or Rules of Court, which would be the equivalent of the Action of Trespass, under the Common Law, are still the same.


**CHAPTER 8**

**TILE ACTION OF TRESPASS ON THE CASE**1

84. **Scope of the Action.**
85. **Case Distinguished From Trespass.**
86. **Election Between Trespass and Case.**
87. **Form of the Declaration in Trespass on the Case.**
88. **Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:**
   (1) In General.
89. **Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:**
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.
90. **Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:**
91. **Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:**
   (4) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act in Breach of His Duty.
92. **Declaration in Trespass on the Case—Essential Allegations:**
   (5) The Damages.
93. **Particular Applications of Case as the Great Residuary Common-Law Remedy for Various Wrongs.**
94. **Anticipating Defenses in Case.**
95. **The Expansionistic Character of Case.**
96. **Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.**

**SCOPE OF THE ACTION**

84. **An Action on the Case lies to recover damages:**

(I) For Torts not committed by force, actual or implied;

(H) For Torts committed by force, actual or implied, where:

(A) The injury was not immediate, but consequent.

1. In general, on the History and Development of Trespass on the Case, see:

Treatises: Holmes, The Common Law, Lecture I, The Early Forms of Liability (Boston, 1881); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. III,
Case is the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law covering in general non-violent wrongs. In the Field of Tort the Actions of

Trespass and Case as the Source of Our Tort Law

Articles: Wigmore, Responsibility for Tortious Acts, 7 Harv.L.Rev. 315, 383, 441 (1894); Boblen, The Moral Duty to Aid Others as a Basis of Tort Liability, 54 Ili. of Pa.L.Rev. 217, 316 (1908); Veeder, The History of the Law of Defamation, 3 Select Essays In Anglo-American Legal History, 446 (Boston, 1909); Jenlrs, On Negligence and Deceit in the Law of Torts, 26 L.Q.Rev. 159 (1010); Ames, Lectures on Legal History; Law and Morals, Lecture VII, 442 (Cambridge 1913); Terry, Negligence, 29 Barvt. Rev. 40(1915); Smith, Tort and Absolute Liability, 30 Harv.L.Rev. 241 (1917); Issacs, Fault and Liability, 31 Harv.L.Rev. 954 (1918); Goodrich, Pernia tent Structures and Continuing Injuries—The Iowa Rule, 4 Iowa L.Bul. 46 (1918); Smith, Liability for Substantial Physical Damage to Land by Blasting, 33 Harv.L.Rev. 442 (1920); Albertsworth, Recognition of New Interest in the Law of Torts, 10 Calif. L.Eer. 461 (1922); McConniclr, Damages for Anticipated Injury to Land, 37 Harv.L.Rev. 574, 593 (1924); Winfield, The Myth of Absolute Liability, 42 L.Q.Rev. 87 (1926); Winfield, History of Negligence In the Law of Torts, 42 L.Q.Rev. 184 (1920); Asterburn, The Origin and First Test of Public CallIngs, 75 Di of Pat.Rev. 411 (1927); Fluckett, Case and the Statute of Westminster II, 31 Col.L.Rev. 778 (1931); Winfield and Goodhart, Trespass and Tort are Trespass and Trespass on the Case. And it may be added that the modern theory of Tort Liability is the joint product of these two Actions.

From the nucleus of violent wrongs, originally remediable alone by the Action of Trespass, remedies were extended to cover non-violent injuries under the great residuary Action of Trespass on the Case, popularly referred to merely as “Case.” The Action was not based on any distinct theory of wrong except the supplementary and exclusory one, covering all non-violent injuries, that is, those not falling within the theory of trespass. Case proceeded either by analogy to Trespass, where there was an indirect application of force, or on the general Common-Law principle of affording a remedy for every wrong, even though without violence, direct or indirect. There was and there is still no strict limit to this action and it is the vehicle which the Judges in England and America have used...
in constantly expanding the Scope of Tort Liability\(^5\) and in giving


\(2\) For a comparatively recent example of this process, see the case of Sims v. Sims, 79 N.J.L. 577, 76 A.L.R. 4111 (1910) in which a case of novel impression was considered involving the Issue as to whether a wife could maintain an Action under New Jersey Law against the defendants for “maliciously enticing away the plaintiff’s husband, and thereby alienating from her his affections.” In sustaining the wife’s action, Minturn, 3., declared: “That the Common-Law Courts failed to find a remedy is, under the decisions, rather a recognition of the right, than the denial of its existence. Per it may be said that the history of Common-Law Procedure is largely the history of Substantive Rights, remediless first at lads of a suitable Writ or Precedent in the Registrum Brevium, until the persistence of

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

**Clij. 8**

**Sec. 84**

**TRESPASS ON THE CASE**

175

redress for such wrongs as deceit, detention of goods, libel and slander, malicious prosecution, negligent injuries and nuisance.\(^3\)

*Development of Trespass on the Case*

It should be observed that in the beginning the only remedy for Torts was the Action of Trespass, and that in order to maintain it, actual or implied violence must be shown. It was formerly thought, that up until the Enactment of the Statute of Westminster H in 1285, there was no Form of Action or Original Writ which could be invoked to recover Damages for other or nonviolent injuries; that under this Statute the Action of Trespass on the Case arose under which any aggrieved party could sue for damages for any wrong to which Trespass would not apply; that the Action originated in the power given by the Statute to the Clerks in Chancery to frame New Writs *in consimili casu*— that is, in cases similar to, but not identical with, cases in which Writs had been previously issued.

This view of the Action of Trespass on the Case, as being the product of the Statute of Westminster II (1285), has been placed in grave doubt by the latest research on the subject. Fifoot flatly declares that “The Actions on the Case derived, not from the statutory powers of Chancery Clerks, but from the Fiat of Judges.” ~ And those authorities who agree with Fifoot, point out that when Case underwent its initial development

the demand for a remedy developed the Action of Trespass on the Case as a General Specific in *consimili casu* under the provisions of the Statute of Westmin ster II.”

The learned judge simply was not conversant with the latest research in the field concerning the alleged relationship of the Statute and the Action of Trespass on the Case.

\(3\) See 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. xvIII, The Action of Trespass on the Case, 245 (Northport 1906).

\(4\) Fifoot, History and Sources of the Common Law, c. IV, The Development of the Actions on the Case, 74 (London 1949).

in the last third of the Fourteenth Century, it was founded, not upon Writs issued by the Clerks in Chancery, but upon Writs issued by the Judges under the broad authority of the Common Law, using the Action of Trespass as the stock for grafting, as illustrated in *The Miller’s Case* ~ and *The Innkeeper’s Case*.\(^6\)

However this may be, the New Writs invented by the Judges to cover the cases were supposed to bear an analogy to Trespass and hence received the appellation of Trespass on the Case (*bi-evi.a de ti-ansgressione super casuin*), as being grounded upon the particular circumstances of the case requiring a remedy, and in order to distinguish them from the older and parent Action of Trespass; and likewise, for further differentiation, the injuries themselves, which were the subject of such Writs, were not called “Trespasses,” but “Torts,” “Wrongs,” or “Grievances.”

The Writs of Trespass on the Case, though invented pro re nata, in various forms, according to the nature of the different wrongs which called them forth, began, nevertheless, to be viewed as constituting collectively a New Individual Form of Action. Accordingly, this new genus took its place, under the name of “Trespass on the Case,” alongside of the more ancient actions of Debt, *Covenant*, Trespass and the like.
In view of the Origin and Nature of this Action, it is important to note that it is comprised of several different species, two of which, however, are of more frequent use and of greater significance than any other, to wit, the Action of Trover and the Action of Assumpsit, both of which developed out of Case, and were originally known as Trespass on the Case in Assumpsit and Trespass on the Case in Trover, but now referred to respectively simply as “Assumpsit” and

6. V. B. Easter, 42 Edw. III, f. 11, p1. 13 (1369).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

“Trover.” Other Forms of the Action of Trespass on the Case are generally known and designated as “Case” or as an “Action on the Case.”

CASE DISTINGUISHED FROM TRESPASS

The distinctions between wrongs which are included under Trespass and those under Case relate:

(I) To the element of Force, Express or Implied,
(II) Whether the injury is immediate or consequent on defendant’s act,
(III) Whether the liability is for Trespasses of defendant’s agents,
(IV) Whether possession is interfered with.

ALTHOUGH Case was complementary to Trespass, the two actions were to a certain extent mutually exclusive, and in theory distinctly differentiated. Where the factual situation essential to constitute a trespass exists, as, for example, where the act was direct and willful, the Action must be in Trespass. If, however, there was something else in the factual situation, such as negligence, the plaintiff might have an option as to Case or Trespass. And, of course, where any one of the elements required to constitute a trespass is wanting, the Remedy is in Case, assuming the facts make out a Torts

Distinction Between Trespass and Case—In General

AS we have already seen, where a Tort or Civil Wrong is committed with force, actual or implied, and the matter affected is tangible, as where the person or corporeal property of another is affected, and the injury is immediate, and not merely consequential, and, in the case of injury to property, the property was in possession of the person

7. Day v. Edwards, 5 P.R. 648, 101 Eng.Rep. 361 (1794), complaining, the proper remedy to recover damages for the injury is the Action of Trespass. If, on the other hand, a Tort is committed without force, actual or implied, or if, though the Act was committed with force, the matter affected was not tangible, or the injury was not immediate, but consequential, or, in the case of injury to property, the plaintiff’s interest in the property was only in reversion, Trespass will not lie, and the proper remedy is Action on the Case.”

The Element of Force

UNLESS the case falls within one of the exceptions which we have already stated, and which will presently be explained more at length, an Action on the Case will not lie for an injury committed with force, but the party injured must sue in Trespass. Trespass is excluded, however, if the harm resulted indirectly from the act of the defendant, or the injury was not to the possession of the plaintiff.

Force is either actual or implied. Assault and Battery, tearing down a fence, or breaking into a house are examples of actual force, and there is no difficulty in determining that Trespass, and not Case, is usually the only remedy.

In many cases where there is no actual force, the Law will imply force, and the ef


Sec. 85

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

Fect will be the same as if there had been actual force, so far as regards the Form of Action. Force, as we have seen, is implied in every Trespass Quare Clausum Fregit. If a man, without right, goes upon another’s land, however quietly and peaceable, the Law will imply force, and Trespass is the remedy, not Case; and the same is true where a man’s cattle stray upon another’s land. Force is also implied in every false imprisonment, and the proper remedy is Trespass, and not Case. And where a wife, daughter, or servant is debauched, or enticed away, the Law implies force, notwithstanding their consent, and the husband, parent, or master may declare in Trespass. And where a fire is started, and, as an immediate consequence, another’s property is destroyed, there is constructive force.

Generally, as we have seen, a mere nonfeasance cannot be regarded as forcible; for where there has been no act there can be no force. There is no force, for instance, in a mere detention of goods without an unlawful taking; or in neglect to repair the bank of a stream, whereby another’s land is overflowed; or in neglect to repair a fence whereby another’s animal escapes on to the land of the person so negligent or elsewhere, and is injured; and in these instances Case, and not Trespass, must be the remedy.


For the failure of a railroad company to fence its track, see: Illinois: Kankakee & S. W. B. Co. v. Fitzgerald, 17 Ill. App. 525 (1885); Massachusetts:

The Injury as Immediate or Consequential

Even though an injury may have been committed by force, Case will lie, if it was not immediate, but consequential; for, to sustain Trespass, as we have seen, the injury must have been immediate. An injury is considered as immediate when the act complained of, itself, and not merely a consequence of that act, occasioned it. But where the damage or injury ensued, not directly from the act complained of, it is consequential or mediate, and cannot amount to a trespass.

To take an illustration already used, if a person in the act of throwing a log into the highway hits and injures a passer-by, the injury is immediate, and trespass is the proper remedy; but if, after a log has been thrown into the highway, some one in passing, falls over it, and is injured, the injury is consequential, and the Action must be in Case.

If a person forcibly takes another’s goods, the Action must generally be Trespass. An Action on the Case, however, will also lie at the suit of a seller of goods against a person who, after the sale and before delivery, fordsly and wrongfully takes the goods, and so

And for the negligent failure to close the gates on a private right of way, see: Pennsylvania: Nirdlinger v. American Dist. Tel. Co., 240 Pa. 571, 88 A. 0 (1913); Vermont: Gregoir v. Leonard, 71 Vt. 410 45 A. 748 (1899).


That Case is the remedy to recover for an injury to one’s vehicle from a stone deposited in the highway, see Green v. Belitx, 34 Mieh. 512 (1876).

In Actions where the injury is occasioned by the forcible act of the defendant, if the injury is direct and Immediate, the Action is Trespass, while if consequent or mediate, the Action is Case. Reed v. Guessford, 7 Boyce (Del.) 228, 105 A. 428 (1018).

178

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Cite.

puts it out of the seller’s power to perform his contract, so that the buyer avoids it; for the injury by the loss of the sale is consequential. Trespass would lie for the forcible and wrongful taking; Case will also lie for the consequential injury, so that here the two actions are concurrent remedies.17

If a person lays rubbish so near another’s wall that, as a necessary or natural consequence, some of it rolls against the wall, the injury is immediate, and the remedy Is in Trespass.18

If a blow be given to the person or property of another, the Action must be Trespass, and not Case.15 And if a person willfully drives his horse or carriage against another’s person or property, Trespass and not Case is the remedy. But where, through negligent and careless driving, and not willfully, one vehicle is caused forcibly to strike another, it is held that an action on the Case is sustainable for the injury, either to the vehicle or the occupant, though in such a case the injury is immediate upon the violence.25 Trespass would also lie in such a case.

11. Frankeathal v. tjamp, 55 Ill. 169 (1870), in which the only ground for reversal was the selection of the wrong Form of Action—Case Instead of Trespass. The explanation of the result probably lies in the fact that the Court was willing to stretch a point in order to avoid a reversal on this barren technicality.


19. In Bicker v. Freeman, 50 N.H. 420 (1870), it appeared that the defendant had seized the plaintiff by the arm and swung him violently around, and let him go, and, that the plaintiff, having become dizzy, involuntarily passed rapidly In the direction of a third person, and came violently in contact with him, whereupon the latter pushed him away, and he caine in contact with a hook and was injured. It was held that Trespass, not Case, was the Remedy. See, also, Lowery v. Manhattan R. Co., 99 N.Y. 158, 1 N.E. 608 (1885); Tuttle v. Atlantic City B. Co., 66 N.J.L. 327, 49 A. 450 (1901).

20. English: Williams v. Holland, 10 Blng. 112, 131 Eng.Rep. 848 (1833); Indiana: Sehuer v. Veeider, 7 Elackf. (Did.) 342 (1845); Kentucky: Payne v. Smith, 4 Dana (Icy.) 497 (1838); MichIgan: Brad-
case². And in the case of an injury arising from carelessness or unskillfulness in navigating a ship or vessel, if the injury is merely attributable to negligence or want of skill, and not to willfulness, the party injured may, at his election, sue in Case or Trespass.²² In these cases the negligence or unskillful-ness of the defendant is treated as the Cause of Action when Case is brought, while in Trespass the act itself is the Cause of Action. By the weight of authority, the rule is not confined to these particular cases, but is general, that where there is an immediate injury to person or property attributable to negligence, the party injured has an election either to treat the negligence of the wrongdoer as the Cause of Action, and to declare in Case, or to consider the act itself as the injury, and to declare in Trespass.²³


“Where an injury is attributable to negligence, although it wore the immediate effect of the defendant’s act, the party injured has an election, either to treat the negligence of the defendant as the Cause of Action and declare In Case; or to consider the Act Itself, as the cause of the injury, and declare in Trespass.” Richardson, Cl, in Dalton v. Favor, 3 N.H. 465, 466 (1826). See, also, Mullan v. Belbin, 130 Md. 313, 326, 100 A. 384 (1917).


23. New York: Ella v. Campbell, 14 Johns. (N.Y.) 432 (1817); Vermont: Howard v. Tyler, 46 Vt 083 (1874). See, also, Wells v. Knight, 32 B.J. 432, 80 A. 384 (1911), In which the Declaration was in Trespass rather than Case, and alleged that a stone thrown by the defendant’s blast struck the deceased while he was traveling on a highway, but did not aver whether the act was due to the defendant’s negligence.


25. In the latter case “the flowing of the water, which was the immediate injury, was not the wrongdoer’s immediate act, but only the consequence thereof, and which will not render the act itself a Trespass or Immediate wrong.” 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. II, Of the Forms of Action, 142 (17th ed. Springfield, Mass. 1882). See, also, following cases: English: Reynolds v. Clarke, 1 Str. 635, 93 Eng.Rep. 747 (1788); 2 Ld.Eaym. 1399, 92 Eng.Rep. 410 (1725); Howard v. Bankes, 2 Burr. 1114, 97 Eng.Rep. 740 (1760); Illinois: Winkler v. Meister, 40 Ill. 349 (1869); Nevins v. Peerla, 41 I.U. 502 (1860); Michigan: Hamilton v. Plainwell Water-Power Co., 8 Mich. 21, 45 NW. 648 (1890); New York: Arnold v. Foot, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 330 (1834), in trespass for the injury. Or he may at his election treat the loss of society or services, and not the defendant’s act, as the injury, and, as that is merely consequential, sue in Case.

26. If a wild or vicious beast, or other dangerous thing, is turned loose or put in motion, and mischief immediately ensues to the person or property of another, the injury is immediate, and Trespass, not Case, is the remedy. But if a vicious animal is kept with knowledge of its propensities, or a dangerous substance, like explosives or poison, is negligently handled, the party injured has an election, either to treat the negligence of the defendant as the Cause of Action and declare In Case; or to consider the Act Itself, as the cause of the injury, and declare in Trespass.” Richardson, Cl, in Dalton v. Favor, 3 N.H. 465, 466 (1826). See, also, Mullan v. Belbin, 130 Md. 313, 326, 100 A. 384 (1917).


35. English: Star v. Rookesby, I Salk. 335, 91 Eng.Rep. 295 (1710); New York: Wells v. Howell, 19 Johns. (N.Y.) 385 (1822). must be the remedy. An Action on the Case is the remedy for libel or slander; ~ for injury to health or comfort from a nuisance; as for obstructing a private right of way, or a public highway, or navigable river, and causing special damages to an individual; or for interference with any other easement, as by obstructing light and air through ancient windows by an erection on adjoining land. Case is also the proper remedy for diversion of, or other


180

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

And where a person negligently causes the burning of another’s property, as where a fire is set by sparks from a railroad company’s locomotive, or where a man starts a fire on his own land and it reaches and burns adjoining property, Case is the proper action.

As we have seen, if a person’s cattle stray on another’s land and cause injury, Trespass by the latter is the proper remedy. If, however, the cattle got out because of the owner’s neglect of his duty to repair fences, the person may treat this neglect as his Cause of Action, and bring Case for the consequential injury; or he may sue in Trespass as in other cases, treating the Trespass as his Cause of Action.

Intangible Property or Rights

As we have shown, in treating of Trespass, where the property or right injured is intangible, as the right to reputation, or health and comfort, or incorporeal real property, the injury can never be considered as committed with force, however malicious and however contrived, for the matter injured cannot possibly be affected immediately by any substance. Case, therefore, and not Trespass,


35. English: Star v. Rookesby, 1 Salk. 335, 91 Eng.Rep. 295 (1710); New York: Wells v. Howell, 19 Johns. (N.Y.) 385 (1822). must be the remedy. An Action on the Case is the remedy for libel or slander; ~ for injury to health or comfort from a nuisance; as for obstructing a private right of way, or a public highway, or navigable river, and causing special damages to an individual; or for interference with any other easement, as by obstructing light and air through ancient windows by an erection on adjoining land. Case is also the proper remedy for diversion of, or other

Page 194 of 735
injuries to, water courses or waters, where the plaintiff is not the owner of the soil, but is merely entitled to the use of the water.  

3. And it will lie for infringing a copyright, patent, or trade-mark, though a bill in Equity for an


37. Pollard v. Lyon, 01 13.8, 225, 23 LEd, 308 (18Th).


Sec. 86  

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

injunction and an accounting is the usual remedy.

If the injury is to corporeal property, and is immediate, and committed with force, case will not lie merely because that property was the means by which an incorporeal right was enjoyed. Thus, where, by Legislative Authority, a dam has been erected and maintained in a navigable river in connection with a mill, and the dam is wrongfully cut away by another, Case will not lie on the ground that an incorporeal right has been injured. “The ground on which the Form of Action was endeavored to be maintained,” it was said in an Action on the Case for such a wrong, “was that the right to erect the dam, for an injury to which the action was brought, was a franchise, and incorporeal hereditament, and that for an injury to property, or right of that description, Trespass tvill not lie. The principle here adverted to does not apply to the case. The right to erect the dam is a franchise; it is conferred by the legislature, the sovereign power; it is an incorporeal right, but the dam itself is not a franchise, nor is it incorporeal. The right to keep a ferry, or to erect a bridge, or to navigate a particular river or lake by steam, may be a franchise; but the bridge itself, or the boats and machinery employed in the ferry, or the navigation of the river, may, notwithstanding, be the subjects of Trespass. So far as the incorporeal right is invaded, the redress is by Action on the Case. But when Visible, tangible, corporeal property is injured, if the injury is direct, immediate and willful, Trespass is the proper Form of Action, although that property may be connected with, or be the means by which an incorporeal right is enjoyed.”

ELECTION BETWEEN TRESPASS AND CASE

86. When an injury results directly from a Negligent Act, the injured party has an Election of Remedies. The injured party may main-
Action of Tres. pass on the Case relying upon the negligence as the basis for the action.

WHILE Trespass and Case were designed to apply to different factual situations, as we have seen, there came a time in their development, when the effort to distinguish the two actions on the basis of proximity, broke down, and it was realized that a single tortious act might be at one and the same time a direct trespass and an injury resulting from negligence, actionable on the basis of a legal principle other than that effectuated by the Action of Trespass. Thus, in Dalton v. Favour, where the plaintiff was wounded by the accidental discharge of a gun held by the defendant, the wrong contained all the elements of Trespass. But looked at from another viewpoint, or with a fuller understanding of the facts, the act may be the foundation of another tort. In such a situation the injured person sues in Trespass on the basis of a direct and forcible injury, or he may elect to treat the tort as the result of negligence in maneuvering the gun, and hence declare in Case. When, therefore, in Leame v. Bray, there was a collision, which was caused by negligence which combined facts of force, direct injury, as well as infringement of possession there was clearly a Trespass. But the same factual situation might be treated as the consequences of an anterior tort, to wit, the guilty party’s negligent driving, which might be regarded as a wrong of another species for which the remedy might be Case and not Trespass. It thus appears that the injured party has a choice of remedies, as was held in Williams.

v. 3 N.H. 465 (1826).
49. 3 East. 593, 102 Eng.Hep. 724 (1803).
50. Moran v. Dawes, 4 Cow. (N.Y.) 412 (1825).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

v. Holland, according to the view he takes of the wrongdoer’s conduct; he may sue in Trespass for the forcible wrong, or make the negligence of the defendant the ground of his action and declare in Case. Other acts trespassatory in their character may be injurious because of their indirect results, as in the case of the seduction of a man’s wife, or daughter, in which instance Case would be the proper remedy, the plaintiff making the consequences of the act—the loss of services—the gist of his Complaint. But clearly, the plaintiff-husband may elect to treat the direct injury to his wife or daughter as the basis of the action, in which case Trespass is the proper remedy.

FORM OF THE DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE

87. As the action of Trespass on the Case was the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law, the forms in which it has found expression are as varied as the wrongs for which it has afforded a remedy.

A Form of a Declaration in Trespass on the Case as a remedy for a personal injury is set forth in this section.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE FOR PERSONAL INJURY

IN THE QUEEN’S BENCH the 15th day of June, in the year of our Lord 1845.

LANCASHIRE (Southern Division), to wit,—Thomas Moody (the plaintiff in this suit), by Frederick Jones, his attorney, complains of William White (the defendant in...
Si.

English: Woodward v. Walton, 2 Bos. & P. (NB.) 476, 127 Eng.Rep. 715 (1807); Diteham v. Bond, 2 M.& S. 426, 105 Eng.Rep. 443 (1814); Chamberlain v. Hazlewood, 5 M. & W. 515, 151 Eng.Bep. 218 (1839); Illinois: Yundt v. Rartrunft, 41 111.9 (1866); Massachusetts: Bigaouttc ~. Paulet, 134 Mass. 123 (1883). (1883), this suit), who has been summoned to answer the said Plaintiff in an action of Trespass on the Case. For that whereas the defendant before, and at the time of the commencement of this suit, and of the injury and damage occurring, as hereinafter mentioned, was the possessor and occupier of a certain messuage, vault, cellar, and premises, with appurtenances, situated in the town of Liverpool, in the County of Lancaster, and near to a certain common and public footway there, and in which vault and cellar there was a certain hole or aperture opening into the said public footway. Yet the defendant, well knowing the premises, whilst he was so the possessor and occupier of the said messuage, vault, cellar, and premises, with the appurtenances, and whilst there was such hole as aforesaid, heretofore, to wit, on the first day of May, in the year of our Lord 1845, wrongfully and unjustly, and contrary to his duty in that behalf, permitted the said hole to be, and continue, and the same was then so badly, insufficiently, and defectively covered, that, by means of the premises, and for want of a proper and sufficient covering to the said hole, the plaintiff, who was then lawfully passing in and along the said footway, then slipped and fell into the said hole, and thereby the left leg of the plaintiff was then fractured and broken, and greatly damaged; and the plaintiff became and was sick, sore, lame, and disorder, and so remained and continued for a long time, to wit, thence hitherto, during all which time the plaintiff thereby suffered and underwent great pain, and was prevented from attending to and transacting his lawful affairs and business, by him during that time to be performed and transacted; and was also, by means of the premises, forced and obliged to pay, lay out, and expend, and did pay, lay out and expend a large sum of money, to wit, the sum of £60 in and about the endeavoring to be healed and cured or the wounds, lameness, sickness, and disorder so occasioned as aforesaid, to

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

the plaintiff’s damage of £200, and thereupon he bring suit, &c.

MARTIN, Civil Procedure at Common Law, 372 (St. Paul, 1905).

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE

—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

88. The Essential Allegations in Actions of Trespass on the Case are:

(I) The plaintiff’s Right, Title or Possession;

(II) The Facts showing the existence of a Legal Duty on the part of the defendant;

(III) A Wrongful Act by the defendant in Breach of his Duty;

(IV) Damages proximately caused by the Wrongful Act.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2)

THE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

89. In the case of injury to chattels, plaintiff’s right or interest in them is usually suff icently described by an averment that they are his goods and chattels, or that he was lawfully possessed of them as his own property.

IN actions for injury to property, the plaintiff’s right or interest in the thing affected must be clearly stated. In the case of injury to chattels, the plaintiff’s right or interest in them will be ordinarily sufficiently described by an averment that they are his goods and chattels, or that he was lawfully possessed of them as his own property; but ‘if the plaintiff sues as a reversioner, he must either state an injury of such a permanent nature, as to be necessarily injurious to his reversion; or if the wrongful acts complained of are not of such a nature as necessarily to result in an
injury to the reversionary estate, but only of an equivocal character, the plaintiff must aver that they were done to the damage, or prejudice of his reversion; and in the latter case, the want of such an averment, will be fatal on demurrer; or good cause for arresting the judgment.”

Where the injury is to intangible personal rights such as reputation or incorporeal property rights, such as an easement and reversion, Case and not Trespass is the proper remedy.

**Reversionary Right of Bailor**

UNDER the Common-Law Forms of Action, a bailor could not ordinarily bring an Action of Trespass, Trover or Detinue, these actions being founded upon a violation of possession or upon an immediate right of possession. Where any permanent injury is done to a chattel, the bailor may maintain an Action on the Case against a third party for an injury to his reversionary interest. The bailor also has concurrent possessor remedies with the bailee, if the bailment is revocable by him at his pleasure as in the case of a gratuitous loan of a chaise.

**DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE**

---

**Facts showing the existence of a duty owing from the defendant to the plaintiff, as where**

---


**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

it arises from the relation of passenger and carrier or master and servant, or where the defendant was in control of some dangerous machinery or a vicious animal.

THE Declaration in Trespass on the Case must not only allege a right or interest in the plaintiff but it must also set forth a duty existing on the part of the defendant, and a violation of that duty. If, however, the right which is violated is that of personal security, this need not be stated. It is usually necessary to state somewhat fully the facts and circumstances showing the existence of a duty toward the plaintiff on the part of the defendant, the neglect or breach of which would be an injury to the plaintiff.

Thus, in an action for negligent injury, it must appear that the plaintiff was in a situation where the defendant owed him a duty to exercise due care for his safety, as that the defendant was in control of machinery or other agency causing danger to the plaintiff, for which the defendant was responsible. A bare allegation that the defendant owed a legal duty to the plaintiff is a mere conclusion of law and hence worthless; the facts creating the duty must be alleged, as that the relation of carrier and passenger existed.

50. In such a case, as in Trespass ni at armis for injuries to persons, the plaintiff’s Allegations commence with a statement of the injury committed, and no Inducement or statement of his right is necessary.

57. In an Action on the Case, all the facts upon which the plaintiff relies, must be stated in the Declaration. Wadleigh v. Katahdin Pulp & Paper
Co., 116 Me. 107, 100 Atl. 150 (1917).

See, also, on this point, the case of S. J. & W. M. Bayard v. Smith, 17 Wend. 88 (1837), in which Nelson, C. I., said: “All the circumstances essential to support the Action must be alleged, or in substance appear on the face of the Declaration.”

59 English: Seymour v. Maddox, 16 Q.B. 326, 117 Eng.Rep, 904 (1851); Alabama: Ensley Ry. Co. v. Chewing, 03 Ala. 24, 9 Se. 458 (1891); Illinois: City of Chicago v. Selk, Schwab & Co., 202 Ill. 545, 67 N.E. 388 (laos); Mackey v. Northern Mill Co., 210 Ill. 115, 71 N.E. 448 (1904); Maryland: Macn-

toward the plaintiff must appear from facts or circumstances from which the law infers such duty, as where the defendant’s liability is based upon his ownership or control of the premises upon which the injury occurred and his duty to furnish employees a safe place to work 59

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS 66

91. To show a Breach of Duty, the defendant’s Wrongful Act and the mental conditions

ner v. Carroll, 4G Md. 193 (1877). See, also, 14 Cyc. 331, 332; 29 Cyc. 566.

In Gillman v. Chicago Rys. Co., 268 Ill. 305, 109 N.E. 181 (1915), it was held that in an Action of Tort in a fourth class case in the Municipal Court of Chicago the statement of claim must show a Cause of Action based on a Breach of Legal Duty by the defendant, such, for example, as facts showing the relation of carrier and passenger, a duty owed by the defendant to the plaintiff, and neglect of that duty by the defendant or its servants in the scope of their employment, and damage to the plaintiff as the result of that neglect. The Court emphasizes the function of the Statement of Claim, which is the substitute for a Declaration, as the basis of a Judgment, and the insufficiency of the statement of claim may be availed of on a Writ of Error even in the absence of a Demurrer.

50. A Declaration by an employee against a corporation, his employer, for injury by a grindstone bursting should allege; (1) the relation, that plaintiff was in the employ of the defendant and was its servant, and was subject to its orders and directions in his work; (2) the duty of the defendant to furnish safe appliances and place to work; (3) the negligent acts of defendant in permitting the grindstone to be and remain in a dangerous condition, showing how it was defective and why dangerous, and that defendant knew or ought to have known of the defects; (4) the causal connection between the negligence and the injury; (5) the due care of the plaintiff (in some Jurisdictions) and the fact that plaintiff did not know of the danger and was not chargeable with knowledge of it; (6) the damages. What Allegations show a Breach of the master’s duty to furnish servant a safe place to work, see Sargent Co. v. Baublis, 215 Xli. 429, 74 N.E. 455 (1905); Raxworthy v. Heisen, 274 XII. 398, 407, 113 N.E. 699 (1918); Vogrin v. American Steel & Wire Cc., 268 Ill. 474, 105 N.E. 332 (1914); Roniani v. Shoal Creek Coal (Jo., 271 III. 366, 111 N.E. 88 (1916.).

184

Ch. 8

Sec. 91

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

185

of responsibility, such as intent or negligence or malice or fraud, must be alleged.

IN Declarations in Trespass, the injury is stated without any averment of the defendant’s motive or intent or of the circumstances under which it was committed. In general, in actions on the case, it is necessary to state, not only the wrongful act complained of, but also the wrongful intent, fraud, or negligence with which it was done and the circumstances showing that it was wrongful. In some actions the scienter (knowledge) must be alleged and proved, as of the vicious propensity of the dog in an action for keeping a dog accustomed to bite people or sheep. But in an action for debauching a wife or servant it is not necessary to allege or prove that the defendant knew that the female was the wife or servant of the plaintiff.

In actions for negligence there is some conflict whether a general charge of negligence, as that defendant so negligently and carelessly operated a car that plaintiff was thrown from the car and injured, is sufficient, or whether the facts and circumstances -showing negligence must be stated specifically. 65 When it is said that it is sufficient to
That a General Allegation of Negligence is insufficient, see the following cases:


That a General Allegation may be permitted, see:


That a general charge of negligence is sufficient After verdict, see: Chicago City fly. Co. v. Shreve, 226 Ill. 536, 80 N.E. 1049 (1907).

And in Illinois, it is sufficient to allege that the defendant negligently and carelessly propelled the engine with great force against certain cars where the plaintiff was working with tile knowledge of the defendant. Illinois Cent. Ry. Co. v. Aland, 192 Ill.

plead negligence generally, it is usually meant that the pleader, having set out the specific facts showing a duty of care and acts causing injury, may state generally that such acts were negligently done. A mere general averment of negligence is insufficient.

In the case of a passenger injured in a street car collision, it will be sufficient for the declaration to show that the plaintiff was a passenger upon defendant’s car, that defendant was a common carrier, and that defendant failed to perform its duty to carry safely, by permitting the car to collide with another of defendant’s cars. It will not be necessary to plead the facts showing the cause of the collision, as the facts alleged bring the case within the doctrine of res ipsa loquitur, and an allegation of negligence is unnecessary.


62. In general, on the various aspects of the Doctrine of lies Ipsa Loquitur, see:

Treatises: Sham, lies Ipsa Loquitur. Presumptions and Burden of Proof (Los Angeles, 1945); id. (2d ed. Los Angeles, 1947).

Articles: Bond, The Use of the Phrase lies Ipson Loquitur, 66 Cent.L.J. 386 (1908); Berry, The Application of lies Ipsa Le−uitur in Master and Servant Cases, 84 Cent.L.J. 67, 53 caa.LJ. 104 (1917); Beckel and Harper, Effect of the Doctrine of lies Tpsa Loquitur, 22 Ill.L.Rev. 724 (1928); Nibs, Pleading lies Ispo Loquitur, 7 N.Y.U.L.Q.Rev. 415 (1930); Carpenter, The Doctrine of lies Ipsa Loquitur, 1 U. ChiLier. 519 (1934); Prosser, lies Ipsa Loquitur: Collisions of Carriers with Other Vehicles, 30 JII. Rev. 980 (1936); Rosenthal, The Procedural Effect of lies Ispo Loquitur in New York, 22 Corn.L.Q. 39 (1936); Prosser, The Procedural Effect of lies Ipsa Loquitur, 20 Minn.L.Rev. 241, 271 (1036); Carpenter, The Doctrine of lies Ipsa Loquitur in California, 10 So.Cal.L.Rev. 166 (1937); Presser, lies Ipsa Loquitur: A Reply to Professor Carpenter, 10 So.Cal.L.Rev. 459 (1937); Carpenter, lies Ipsa Loquitur: A Rejoinder to Professor Presser, 10 SoCal.L.Rev. 467 (1937); Malone, lies Ispa Loqui tur and Proof by Inference, 4 La.L.Rev. 70 (1941); Sham, lies Ipsa Loquitur, 17 So.Cal.L.Rev. 187 (1944); 001dm, The Doctrine of lies Ipsa Loquitur 39, 61 N.E. 450 (1901).

See Note 63 on Page 186.

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

The causal connection between the negligent act of the defendant and the injury rein Aviation Law, 18 So.Cal.L.Rev. 15, 124 (1944);


Malpractice to do away with the Need for Expert Testimony, 9 Brook. L.Rev. 335 (1940); Evidence—Presumption—Plain. tiff’s Res Ipsa Loquitur Against Defendant’s Presumption of Due Care, 1 Mich.L.Rev. 205 (1952); Directing a Verdict for Plaintiff in lies Ipsa Lequitur Cases, 22 Wash.V.L.Q. 100 (1936); Negligence—lies Ipsa Loquitur—Justification for a Directed Verdict in Favor of the Plaintiff, 51 Mich.L.Rev. 119 (1952); Arnold, Instructions on lies Ipsa Loquitur, 13 Mo.L.Rev. 217, 221 (1948); Evidence—lies Ipsa Loquitur—Evidence of Specific Negligence as Affecting Reliance upon General Negligence, 50 Mich.L. Rev. 1108 (1952).

Annotations: lies Ipsa Loquitur as Applicable to Injury to passenger in collision where other vehicle was not within carrier’s control, 25 A.L.R. 600 (1923); 83 A.L.R. 1163 (1933); 161 A.L.R. 1113 (1946); “lies Ipsa Loquitur” as a Presumption or a mere Permissible “Inference”, 53 A.L.R. 1494 (1928), 167 A.L.R. 658 (1947); lies Ipsa Loquitur distinguished from characterization of a known condition as 1msg—ceived by the plaintiff should be made to appear. “Whereby” and “by means of the premises” are frequently used to charge that injury resulted from the defendant’s act to plaintiff’s person or property, and that the negligence was the proximate cause of the injury.64

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (5) THE DAMAGES

92. It must appear that the Wrongful Act of the defendant was the legal cause of the injury to the plaintiff’s right.

THE Declaration must state the damages resulting as the legal and natural consequences of the injury done. These may be general or special, and special damages should be alleged specifically. In many torts falling within the scope of the action on the case, damage is the gist of the action, and must be alleged in order to show a cause of action.

Whatever damages the plaintiff has suffered from the injury committed by the defendant, and the establishment of negligence by circumstantial evidence, 59 A.L.R. 468 (1929), 78 A.L.R. 731 (1932), 141 A.L.R. 1016 (1942); lies Ipsa Loquitur in its relation to the burden of proof and burden of evidence, 59 A.L.R. 485 (1029), 92 A.L.R. 653 (1934); lies Ipsa Loquitur as applicable in ease of injury by X-Ray, 152 A.L.R. 638 (1944); lies Ipsa Loquitur as applied to collision between a moving automobile and a standing automobile or other vehicle, 151 A.L.R. 876 (1944) ; lies Ipsa Loquitur as ground for direction of verdict in favor of plaintiff, 153 A.L.R. 1134 (1944); Pleading particular cause of injury as waiver of right to rely on Des Ipsa Loquitur, 79 A.L.R. 48 (1932), 160 A.L.R. 1450 (1946); Physicians and Surgeons: Presumption or Inference of Negligence in Malpractice Cases, lies Ipsa Loquitur, 162 A.L.R. 1265 (1946); lies Ipsa Loquitur Doctrine as Affected by Injured Person’s Control or Connection with Instrumentality, 169 A.L.R. 953 (1047); lies Ipsa Loquitur as applied to bursting of bottled beverages, food containers, etc., 4 A.L.R.2d 466 (1949); Res Ipsa Loquitur in Aviation Accidents, 6 A.L.R.2d 528 (1949).


186

Selected Topics on bor, (1954); Dewey, Loquitur, 19 U. of Des Ipsa Loquitur: L.Eer. 643 (1950); Ipsa Loquitur, 35 lies Ipsa Loquitur (1951); McLarty, the Law of Torts, 302 (Ann Ar- A Tate in the Field of lies Ispa Cin,L.Rev. 415 (1050); Seavey, Tabula in Naufragio, 63 Harv, Slife, The Iowa Doctrine of lies Iowa Liter. 393 (1950); Saff, Vindicated, 1 Buffalo L.Iev. 1 lies Ipsa Loquitur in Airline

Sec. 93

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

ant, which follow as the legal and natural consequences of such injury, are recoverable, nd should be laid in a sum sufficiently high t-i to cover all the plaintiff expects to prove, as his recovery will be limited by the amount stated.65 As in all other actions the damages may be either general or special and, if special or peculiar to the case, they must be alleged specifically.60 Recovery will be confined to the injuries alleged by the declaration to have resulted from the particular negligence charged. In Case, unlike Trespass, damage is usually an essential element of liability.67

PARTICULAR APPLICATIONS OF CASE AS THE GREAT RESIDUARY COMMON-LAW REMEDY FOR VARIOUS WRONGS

93. Case lies for certain wrongs of negligence and misfeasance, which may be committed in the course of performance of a contract, and also for the nonperformance of certain obligations prescribed by law, such as those incident to haiments and public callings; also neglect of official duty, and for certain statutory liabilities.
THE history of the Common Law Procedure is the history of moral rights, without

65. See Foreman v. Sawyer, 73 III. 484 (1874), holding that a Judgment cannot exceed the ad damnum laid in the Declaration.


remedy because of the lack of an appropriate Writ or precedent in the Register of Writs, until the persistence of a demand for remedy developed the Action of Trespass on the Case to cover all cases similar to, but not quite identical with Trespass. In the beginning the new action was merely supplementary to the old. But through the continual and constantly expanding application of Case, the first instance of which appeared in 1369, as a remedy for a wide variety of human wrongs, not otherwise remediable, most of our modern law, contract, quasi-contract, property, and tort, has been evolved, and by reason thereof, the Common Law has been able to largely make good its proud boast, first uttered as early as and by Bracton, that where there is a remedy, it is for this reason that the Action on the Case is frequently referred to as the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law.

Torts in Connection with Contract

MERE breach of Contract, without more, will not sustain an Action on the Case, but the remedy is Assumpsit, Covenant, or Debt.” But often one of the parties to a contract may commit a tort in the execution of it, or in its nonperformance, and case may lie for the injury. Thus, it lies against attorneys or other agents for neglect or other breach of duty, or misfeasance in the conduct of a cause, or other business, though it is


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. S

more usual to declare in Assumpsit. Assumpsit is the usual remedy for neglect or breach of duty against bailees, as against carriers, wharfingers, warehousemen, and others having the use or care of personal property, whose liability is founded on the Common Law as well as upon Contract; but they are also liable in case for an injury resulting from their neglect or breach of duty in the course of their employment. For any nonfeasance by a party in a public employment which he professes, an Action on the Case will lie by the party injured, as where a common carrier fails to perform its common law obligation to serve all who apply.

Even though there may be an express contract, still, if a Common Law duty results from the facts, the party may be sued ex’ delicto in Case for any neglect of misfeasance

(1814); Pennsylvania: Lynch v. Corn., to Use of Barton, 16 Serg. & L. (Pa.) 868, 16 Am.Dec. 582 (1827); Shreeve v. Adams, 6 Phila. (Pa.) 260 (1867);
And Case also lies for negligence by a surgeon in performing an operation. Cadwell v. Farrell, 28 Ill. 438 (1862).


And Case Is a proper remedy against one who has hired a horse and has ill-used it. Botch v. Hawes, 12 Pick. (Mass.) 136, 22 Am.Dec. 414 (1831).


And where the manufacturer of an article negligently furnishes to a purchaser something different from what he purports to furnish, such as a defective rope, whereby the purchaser is injured, Case will lie. Brown v. Edgington, 1 Man. & 0. 279, 133 Trig. Rep. 751 (1841).

Where a person engaged in lending money on real estate security solicits money to loan, and obtains it on his promise to take security by first mortgage on property in value double the sum loaned, and then takes a second mortgage unknown to his principal, whereby the money is lost, his principal is not limited to an Action of Assumpsit, for Breach of the Contract, but may sue in Case. Shipherd v. Field, 70 Ill. 438 (1873).

For the diversion of a stream of water, the use of which is directly granted by contract under seal, Case is the proper Remedy. The party need not bring Covenant on the agreement. Lindeman v. Lindsey, 69 Pa. 93, 8 Am.Rep. 210 (ISfl). And see, also, Strieker v. Todd, 10 Serg. & It. (Pa.) 63, 13 Am. Dec. 649 (1823).

Where a person engaged in lending money on real estate security solicits money to loan, and obtains it on his promise to take security by first mortgage on property in value double the sum loaned, and then takes a second mortgage unknown to his principal, whereby the money is lost, his principal is not limited to an Action of Assumpsit, for Breach of the Contract, but may sue in Case. Shipherd v. Field, 70 Ill. 438 (1873).

Where there is a positive duty created by implication of Law independent of Contract, though arising out of a relation or state of facts created by Contract, an Action on the Case as for a Tort will lie for dis-regard or violation of that duty. Flessher v. Carstens racking Co., 93 Wash. 48, 160 P. 14 (1916). See, also, Indiana; Flint & Wagner Mfg. Co. v. Beckett, 167 Ind. 491, 79 N.E. 503, 12 L.R.A. 924 (1900); Massachusetts: Tuttle v. Gilbert, 145 Mass. 169, 13 N.E. 465 (1887); and Comment. Landlord & Tenant; Breach of Agreement to Repair, 1 Co.L. Itov. 666 (1908),


Where a person engaged in lending money on real estate security solicits money to loan, and obtains it on his promise to take security by first mortgage on property in value double the sum loaned, and then takes a second mortgage unknown to his principal, whereby the money is lost, his principal is not limited to an Action of Assumpsit, for Breach of the Contract, but may sue in Case. Shipherd v. Field, 70 Ill. 438 (1873).

For the diversion of a stream of water, the use of which is directly granted by contract under seal, Case is the proper Remedy. The party need not bring Covenant on the agreement. Lindeman v. Lindsey, 69 Pa. 93, 8 Am.Rep. 210 (ISfl). And see, also, Strieker v. Todd, 10 Serg. & It. (Pa.) 63, 13 Am. Dec. 649 (1823).

Where there is a positive duty created by implication of Law independent of Contract, though arising out of a relation or state of facts created by Contract, an Action on the Case as for a Tort will lie for dis-regard or violation of that duty. Flessher v. Carstens racking Co., 93 Wash. 48, 160 P. 14 (1916). See, also, Indiana; Flint & Wagner Mfg. Co. v. Beckett, 167 Ind. 491, 79 N.E. 503, 12 L.R.A. 924 (1900); Massachusetts: Tuttle v. Gilbert, 145 Mass. 169, 13 N.E. 465 (1887); and Comment. Landlord & Tenant; Breach of Agreement to Repair, 1 Co.L. Itov. 666 (1908),


See, generally, as to Actions on the Case as deliefo, where there has been a Contract: Connecticut: Stoyel v. Westcott, 2 Day (Joan.) 2, 2 Am.Dec. 100 (1807); Bulckley v. Storer, 2 Day (Conn.) 531 (1807); Eumiston v. Smith, 22 Oonn. 19 (1822); Maryland: Philadelphia W. & B. N. Co. v. Constable, 39 Md. 155 (1873); Federal: Vasse v. Smith, 6 Crancl. 227, 12 L.Ed. 207 (1810); Emgh v. Pittsburg, Ft. ‘a’, & C. B. Co., 4 (Bias.) 114, Fed.Cas.No.4,4-I0 (1867).

188 TRESPASS ON THE CASE
to his own use, bills delivered to a person to be discounted, or the proceeds of such bills.~ And a Count in Case stating that the plaintiff, being possessed of some old materials, retained the defendant to perform the carpenter work on a building, and to use those materials, but that the defendant, instead of using them, made use of new materials, thereby increasing the expense, was sustained.77

Though Covenant or Assumpsit is a concurrent remedy, Case will lie for a false warranty on the sale of land or goods.75 And Case is the remedy for false representations (required by the Statute of Frauds to be in writing) as to
the credit of a person.\textsuperscript{76} It is also the proper remedy for any other fraud or deceit independently of and without relation to any contract between the parties,\textsuperscript{80} and for fraudulent representations, not introduced into a written contract between the parties respecting the subject-matter of the representations.\textsuperscript{81}


77- Else v. Gatward, 5 TB, 143, 101 Eng.Itep. 82 (1793).


Si. Illinois: Applebee v. Rumery, 28 Ill. 280 (1862); Peck v. Brewer, 48 Ill. 54 (1868); Brumbauch.

If goods are obtained on credit through a fraudulent contract, the proper remedy is Case (or Trover), at least before the expiration of the credit; for if, before that time, Assumpsit is brought to recover the price, it is a recognition and affirmation of the contract, and it may be successfully met by the defense that the term of credit has not expired.\textsuperscript{82}

Case will lie against a surgeon or agent to recover damages for improper treatment, or for want of skill or care though there is a concurrent remedy by Assumpsit on the contract.\textsuperscript{83}

A reversioner may maintain an Action on the Case against his tenant or against a stranger for commissive or voluntary waste, to the injury of the reversion; and it makes no difference that the tenant has covenanted not to commit waste, for the remedy on the covenant is merely concurrent, and not exclusive.\textsuperscript{84} As to whether the action will lie

Flower, 20 Ill.App. 219 (1889); Massachusetts:
Burns v. Dockray, 156 Mass. 135, 30 N.E. 551 (1802);


In some Jurisdictions, however, immediate recovery of the price Is allowed. Heilbronn v. Herzog, 165 N. Y. 98, 58 N.E. 759 (1900).


84. 1 Saund. 323b, 85 Eng.Rep. 459 (1609); Greene v. Cole, 2 Saund. 252b, 85 Eng.Rep. 1037 (1670); 1 Chitty, A Treatise on Pleading, c. II, Of the Form of Action, 142 (3rd Am. from the second London edition by Dunlap) (Philadelphia, 1819); English:
against a tenant for permissive waste (that is, a neglect to repair), there is a conflict of opinion. It seems that it does not lie, and that the only remedy is on the covenants in the lease.\textsuperscript{85}

\textit{Injury to a Lien}

IN the New York case of \textit{Yates v. Joyce},\textsuperscript{86} the plaintiff, \textit{A}, alleged that he, as assignee of a Judgment from one \textit{K} against \textit{J}, which was a lien on the property of \textit{J}, was about to take out Execution and seize a certain lot of land; that the defendant, \textit{B}, well knowing the premises and intending to injure the plaintiff, and prevent him having satisfaction, tore down a barn on the premises worth $300, leaving the ground of less value than the plaintiff’s judgment; and that \textit{J}, being insolvent, had no other property with which to satisfy the Judgment. The defendant Demurred, and on the argument contended that the plaintiff, having a mere lien only, and not being in possession could not maintain any action against the defendant, who is answerable only to the person in possession, and that there was no precedent for such an action.

The Court, in overruling the defendant’s Demurrer, declared: “This appears to be an action of the first impression. The books do not furnish a precedent in its favor. It is obvious, however, from the statement of the plaintiff’s case, in the Declaration the truth of which is admitted by the Demurrer, that he has sustained damage by the act of the defendant, which he alleges was done fraudulently, and with intent to injure him. It is the pride of the Common Law, that wherever it recognizes or creates a private

\textit{Injury to Reversionary interest}

TRESPASS \textit{quae clausum fregit} may be maintained by the owner of land for an injury to his freehold where it is in the occupation of a tenant at will.\textsuperscript{88} This doctrine was not extended so as to apply to a remainder-man who was not entitled to possession. And it has been held that such an action will not lie by the reversioner for waste committed by a person acting under the authority of the tenant for life.\textsuperscript{88} But the reversioner or re


\textsuperscript{88} Munster v. Asseler, 22 N.Y. 225 (1860), which was decided under the Reformed Procedure.
As to the true explanation of this result, see the discussion under Injury to Freehold by Tenant at Will, following immediately hereinafter.

89. 11 Johns. (N.Y.) 136 (1814).

Sec. 93

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

Mainder is not without remedy when the injury is of a permanent character affecting the inheritance, for in such case an Action of Trespass on the Case would lie. The Rule of Pleading, as clearly laid down in the leading case of Jackson v. Pesked, is that where the plaintiff sues as a reversioner, he must either state an injury of such a permanent nature as to be necessarily injurious to his reversion; or if the wrongful acts complained of are not of such a character as necessarily to result in an injury to the reversionary estate, but only of an equivocal nature, the plaintiff must allege that they were done to the damage or prejudice of his reversion; and in the latter case, the lack of such an allegation, will be fatal on demurrer; or good cause for arresting the judgment.

Injury to Freehold by Tenant at Will

At Common Law, a landlord, in order to maintain Trespass, must have been in actual possession of the premises at the time the trespass occurred. And he had no Remedy in Waste against a tenant at will. In this situation it has usually been said that the wrongful act of the tenant at will terminated the tenancy, restored the possession to the landlord, who could then maintain an Action of Trespass. Actually there was no direct forcible invasion of the landlord’s possession; in fact the tenant had possession by legal means. But in the face of an urgent demand for a remedy, by resort to a fiction, Trespass

90. Lawry v. La wry, 88 Me. 482, 34 A. 273 (1806).
90. 1 Maule & 8. 234, 105 Eng.Rep. 88 (1813). See also,
95. was commandeered to serve, and to fill in a temporary gap in the remedial law, although its fundamental theory that it lay only for wrongful interference with possession, was clearly violated; the tenant at will in fact remained in possession after his misconduct. Thus Trespass, Case not being in existence when the problem first arose, was stretched beyond all semblance of its original theory, to cover what was in fact an indirect, consequential injury to the landlord’s interest. And the proof of this is that when Case came in, it was said in West v. Treude - that the landlord might have either an Action on the Case or Trespass against a tenant at will. In time however Trespass ceased to be used and the accepted remedy became an Action on the Case in the Nature of Waste.

Seduction of Another Man’s Daughter, Wife or Servant

When the demand for a remedy arose for the seduction or debauching of another’s daughter, wife or servant, the first remedy given by the Common Law was Trespass vi et armis, the law implying force, thus enabling the father, husband or servant to sue in that action. Here again the injury was an indirect consequential one, and here, again, as in the tenant at will case, Trespass was commandeered to supply a remedy, Case not yet being available. By resort to a fiction, the courts treated the daughter as the servant of the master, who thus acquired a possessory interest. Seduction was an interference with such possessory interest, resulting in damage, for which Trespass thus became a remedy. When Case came in, it was utilized as a remedy for what was clearly an indirect consequential injury, not an injury to the possession of the husband, par-
The order of development is illustrated by two New York cases; in the first, Alcerley v. Haines, decided in the year 1805, Trespass was held to be the proper remedy for the seduction of a daughter, whereas, in the second, Moran v. Dawes, decided just twenty years later, in 1825, the Supreme Court of the State sustained Case, declaring: "It is clear, we think, both upon principle and authority, that Case, is, without exception, a proper remedy. (See N. P. 1083, note (17) cites 2 T.R. 167, 8, per Euler, 3, and per Holt, C. J., Ld. Raym. 1032.) Neither the injury to the person of the child nor the property of the plaintiff are, in truth, ever taken into the account. They are little more than a mere fiction, adopted in order to sustain the Remedy by Trespass. The direct injury may be waived in all cases; and the declaration framed to meet the consequential injury, disregarding entirely every consideration except the loss of service, and the more important one of seduction and disgrace. A very usual case may be supposed, in which, if we are to be governed by the technical rules relating to an Action of Trespass, the father would be remediless for the most aggravated form of the injury, unless he has an election. The seducer is received at the dwelling of the father on the footing of a suitor; he thus having a license to enter the house, of which he avails himself to accomplish the seduction, with the consent of the daughter. It could hardly be said that Trespass and Assault would lie for such an act, The father is then put to his remedy by Trespass quare domum fregit, laying the seduction, &c., by way of aggravation. The defendant does not become a trespasser ab initio, for license was given by the party. A person who is guilty of abusing an authority in fact, does not thereby become a trespasser ab initio; but it is otherwise where a license is given by the law."

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

193

the case of Joel v. Morrison,4 Baron Parke, ruled that a master was not liable for the tortious acts of his servant where the servant was not in pursuit of his master’s business, but was “on a frolic of his own.”

In general, the master is subject to liability for injuries caused by the tortious conduct of the servant where such conduct is within the scope of his employment; and the remedy against the master for injuries resulting from the wrong of his servant is in Case, even though, against the servant, it might for the same act be Trespass;5 but under some circumstances, the master may also be liable in Trespass.6 Where an injury arises from the want of care or negligence of the servant, the remedy against the master is in Case; but if it occurs as the necessary or natural and probable consequence of an act of the servant, ordered expressly or impliedly by the master, then the act is the master’s, and, if the act was forcible and the


8 Under the early decisions such as M’Manus v. Crickett—the courts refused to hold the master liable for intentional misconduct on the part of the servant, on the theory that the fiction of an implied command of the master was inapplicable. But under modern law, in allocating the risk of the servant’s conduct, it has been held that wilful torts may be so connected with the employment as to fall within its scope.9

Alienation of Husband’s Affection

IT has long been the law that a husband could maintain an action for the alienation of his wife’s affections. Comparatively recently a case of novel impression was considered involving the issue as to whether a wife could maintain an action under New Jersey law against the defendant for “maliciously enticing away the plaintiff’s husband, and thereby alienating from her his affections.” It appeared that the Common-Law impediment as to remedy had been removed by a statute permitting a married woman to maintain an action in her own name, without joining her husband therein, for all torts committed against her or her separate property, in the same manner as if she were a feme sole.10 In sustaining the wife’s action, Minturn, J., after alluding to the earlier, but incorrect view as to the origin of Case out of the Statute of Westminster II (1285),” concluded that the wife was entitled to vindicate her right in personam for a tort committed against her, and thus remedy the inequality to which she was subjected by the common law.

s. Illinois Cent. B. Co. v Reedy, 17 Ill. 580 (1822).
12. N.J.L.’s 525 (1906).

13. 13 Edw. I.

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Deceit

THE Declaration, in an action in an Action of Trespass on the Case for Deceit, must show the essential elements in the wrong, to wit: 1. The specific false representations of material facts; 2. The scienter that the defendant knew his statements to be untrue; 3. That they were believed to be true by the plaintiff and were relied upon by him; 4. That the plaintiff acted thereon; and 5. That the plaintiff suffered damages by such action.

It should appear that the damage is the result of the deceit. It is not sufficient to charge fraud generally, but the specific facts constituting the fraud must be set forth in some detail, including the actual misrepresentations. While it is not necessary to charge an intent to defraud, it should appear that the representations were intended or calculated to influence the plaintiff to act upon them.


16. “As the plaintiff can recover nothing in this action without proof of material fraud—that is, such as has resulted in actual damage—and can recover for such loss only as he can show to be a direct consequence of that fraud (Seclgwick on Meas. of Dam. 659; 2 Parsons on Contracts, 769; 771), it follows that the plaintiff must show, with reasonable certainty, in his Declaration, not only what the fraud was by which he has been injured, but also its connection with the alleged damage, so that it may appear judicially to the Court that the fraud and the damage sustain to each other the relation of cause and effect, or, at least, that the one might have resulted directly from the other.” Byard v. Holmes, 34 N.J.L. 296, 297 (1870).

17. “The result of the authorities, so far as I have examined them, whether casco or precedents, is, that a mere General Allegation that the matter

Malicious Prosecution

AT Common Law, when an injury is done to another maliciously, by the Process of a Court, as for example, in the case of a malicious arrest, a malicious prosecution of a criminal charge, or a malicious attachment of goods, the Action of Trespass on the Case is the proper remedy, if the Process was regular and the Court had jurisdiction; for there has been no trespass. It is said, however, that either Case or Trespass will lie if the Process was both malicious and unfounded, even though the Court had jurisdiction. Of course, the remedy is in Trespass, and not Case, where the Process or proceeding was irregular and void.

In case for malicious prosecution, the Declaration must show that the original proceeding was a pretense, and that the plaintiff was falsely and fraudulently deceived by it, is not sufficient, either in Criminal or Civil Cases, to fasten upon such matter the character of a false pretence, and that this can be done in no other way than by a distinct and specific averment of the falsehood of each separate matter of fact stated by the defendant, and intended to be denied by the plaintiff.

What has been said with reference to the first Count will be found to apply in all respects, to the second and third, and, I think, substantially to the fourth Count also.” Byard v. Holmes, 34 N.J.L. 296, 299 (1870).

18. In general, on the subject of Malicious Prosecutors, see:

Articles: Ormsby, Malice in the Law of Torts, S L. Q.Rev, 140 (1502); Elliott, Malice in Tort, 4 St. Louis L.Bev. 50 (1919); Harper, Malicious prosecution, False Imprisonment and Defamation, 15 Tex. 1Hey, 157 (1937).

Comments: Malicious Prosecution—Civil Action—Ab. sence of Arrest or Seizure, 16 Mich.L.Lrev, 653 (1917—18); The Bight to Recover for Malicious Alienation of a Child’s Affections, 40 Harv.L.Rev. 711 (1927); Torts—Action for Malicious Prosecution—Failure
Sec. 93

194

Ch. 8

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

cution of the plaintiff by the defendant was brought in a court at the instance of the defendant; the crime charged
must be stated, although it is not necessary that it appear that it was sufficiently charged, and it must appear that the
charge was made falsely, maliciously, and without any reasonable and probable cause; it must also appear that the
accused was innocent, and that the proceedings are at an end, having been terminated in his favor; and the damages
must also be alleged, as damage is the gist of the actiort

The form of a Declaration for Malicious Prosecution is set out below:

FORM OF DECLARATION IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE FOR MALICIOUS PROSECUTION

Court of the County of to
wit, Term.
complains of who has been summoned to answer the said plaintiff of a plea of trespass
on the case, for this, to wit, that on the day of 19__,
at the defendant went before one
a United States commissioner for
the __ district of __ and then and
there before said falsely and mali
ciously and without any reasonable or probable cause whatsoever, charged plaintiff with having feloniously stolen
or taken from out of a mail of the United States a certain registered letter received by plaintiff as post
master at __ on or about the __
day of on or about the __
19__, and upon such charge
the defendant falsely and maliciously and without any reasonable or probable cause whatever, caused and procured
said __ United States commissioner as aforesaid, to make and grant his certain warrant under his hand for the
apprehending of plaintiff and for having plaintiff before him, the said
or some other United States commissioner, to be dealt with according to the

19. On the Declaration In Malicious Prosecution, see
19 Standard Proc.—97; Pipet v. Hearn, 5 Barn.

law of said supposed offense, and said defendant, under and by virtue of said warrant, afterwards, to wit, 19__, at __
county, aforesaid, wrongfully and unjustly and without any reasonable cause whatsoever, caused plaintiff to be
arrested by his body and taken into custody and to be imprisoned and brought by public convey
ance from __ county, to
__ in the custody of a deputy marshal of the United States, and before a great many people in the public highway
and the streets of and to be detained in custody a long space of time, to wit, ___, and upon such charge
caused the plaintiff to be carried in custody before said ___, so being United States com
missioner as aforesaid, to be examined before said commissioner of and concerning said supposed crime, which said
commissioner, having heard and considered all that said defendant could say or allege against the plaintiff touching
said supposed offense, then and there, to wit, on the day last aforesaid,
at __ adjudged and determined that
the said plaintiff was not guilty of the said supposed offense, and then and there caused the plaintiff to be
discharged out of custody, fully acquitted and discharged of the said supposed offense, and the defendant hath not
further prosecuted his said complaint, but hath deserted and abandoned the same, and the said complaint and
prosecution is wholly ended and determined, to wit, at ____ aforesaid; to the plaintiff’s damage dollars. And therefore he brings his suit.

ENCyclopedia of forms No. 13415 and No. 6951.

Slander and Libel

(I) Strictness of Common-Law Pleading in Defamation Cases Explained.—The requirements of Common-Law Pleading are

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

strict and technical in regard to Declarations for Slander and Libel. This was true because the idea of defamation originated in the Civil Law, coming into English law through the Ecclesiastical or Church Courts, and hence the allowance of a remedy at Common Law for such actions invoked the rule of strict construction in pleading such causes. It was for this reason, that in declaring on contracts or other written instruments, the General Common Law Rule that the pleader might set out the instrument or writing verbatim, or according to its legal effect, was inapplicable as to libel and slander cases; the libel or slander had to be set forth

verbatim. This rule, first adopted in England by the Criminal Court of Appeal was in time assimilated by the Civil Courts, and hence passed on down to modern time. The reason for this rule was that the Appellate Court could not tell whether the Lower Court had ruled correctly that the words spoken or written constituted libel or slander, as a matter of law, without having the very words as used in the Criminal Indictment before it. It was therefore required that the very words complained of be set out “in order that the court may judge whether they constitute a ground of action and also because the defendant is entitled to know the precise charge against him and cannot shape his ease until he knows.”

(IT) The Characteristics and Form of the Declaration in Slander.—Because the Common-Law Courts regarded libel and slander as an innovation, and applied the rule of strict construction in pleading such actions, it is no surprise to find that the Declaration in slander at Common Law consists of an elaborate and absurd jargon of recitals and explanations which obscure the real issues to be tried almost as effectually as if the pleadings were still drawn in Latin, as will appear from the form set out below:

DECLARATION IN THE CASE FOR SLANDER

IN THE CIRCUIT COURT OF COOK COUNTY

To the October Term, A.D. 1926

COUNTY OF COOK, ~ s

SPATE OF ILLINOIS,

Arthur Brown, by William Jolmson, his attorney, complains of Clarence Flowell, defendant, who has been summoned to answer the plaintiff in a plea of trespass on the case for slander.

BODY:

INDUCEMENT: For that whereas, on the 16th day of January, 1926, in the County of Cook, and until the committing of the grievance by the defendant as hereinafter mentioned,

the plaintiff was always reputed, esteemed, and accepted by all his neighbors, and other good and worthy citizens of the State to whom he was in any wise known, to be a persos of good name, tame and credit, and he was, is, and always has been a good, true and faithful citizen of the State, and has never been guilty of or suspected of being guilty of the crime of perjury or any other crime.
2. The principles of General Application as to Declaration and subsequent pleadings, both as to Form and Substance, are considered in Chapter 5, The Declaration—General Rules as to Alleging Place, Time, title and Other Common Matters; and Chapter & The Declaration—General Rules as to Manner of Pleading.

FORM OF PASS ON

**CAPTION OR TITLE:**

~ourt~

Term:

**VENUE:**

**COMMENCE MENT:**

Plaintiff's

**Good Name:**

Sec. 93 **TRESPASS ON THE CASE**

**BODY:**

Preliminary

Extrinsic Facts: And whereas no, before the said grievance of the said defendant, a certain action had been pending before the said defendant, a justice of the peace, wherein the State of Illinois was the plaintiff and one Fred Jones was the defendant, and which action had been tried at the Circuit Court for the County of Cook, and on such trial the plaintiff was examined on oath, bel elaborate averments are required to prove and had given his evidence as a witness “certainty” in the charge, the formal parts of which are five in number:

(A) The Inducement, the Preliminary

Yet the said defendant, well known- **Statement of Extrinsic Matter; and the** ing the premises, but contriving, **Gravamen.**—**‘ritiis** part of the Declaration wickedly and maliciously, to injure contained a statement that prior to a certain

the said plaintiff in his name, fame and credit, and to bring him into day the plaintiff had enjoyed a good name public scandal, infamy and disgrace among his neighbors, and if the words uttered and amongst all his neighbors tered were not actionable in themselves, it and other good citizens of the State, and cause it to be suspected and be set forth the preliminary extrinsic facts to lieved by those neighbors and citizens which the slander applied, and established a of the State that plaintiff had been basis for showing damage to the plaintiff.

But if the words are **prima facie** actionable,

**COLLOQUIUM:** In a certain discourse which the no averment of extrinsic facts was necessary, defendant had with the said plaintiff, as, for example, in **Worth v. Butler,** in on the 16th day of January, 1920, in which the defendant charged the plaintiff, an the County of Cook, of and concerning the said plaintiff, in the presence and unmarried woman, of fornication, which was hearing of divers persons, and of and a felony.
concerning the said action, and of
and concerning the said evidence The gravamen of an action for libel is not given by the plaintiff on the trial
injury to the plaintiff’s feelings, but damage aforesaid, did falsely, wickedly, and to his reputation in the
eyes of others. It is
maliciously compose, speak and publish, of and concerning the plaintiff, not sufficient, therefore, that the
plaintiff
in the presence of divers persons, cer-
should understand himself to be referred to
thin false, scandalous, malicious and in the article. It is necessary to constitute
defamatory words, that is to say, “He” (meaning the plaintiff) “took a libel that others than the plaintiff
should be
false oath.” in a position to understand that the plaintiff is the person referred to 24

INNUENDO: Thereby meaning and intending
that the plaintiff, in the evidence
given as a witness at the trial afore-
said, had sworn falsely and had been
guilty of the crime known as perjury.

DAMAGES: And by means of the said premises the said plaintiff is greatly Injured
In his credit and reputation, and
brought into public scandal, infamy
and disgrace with and amongst his neighbors, &c,

198

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. S

clearly apply to the plaintiff, a colloquium is not necessary. In Milligan v. Thorn, 25 the plaintiff complained that he
had been slandered, but he was not named in the slanderous words, The plaintiff therefore was required to include a
colloquium, that a conversatio


25 7 Blackf. (Int.) 251 (1844).

26 Where Defamatory language Is of a clear import and on its face applies to the plaintiff, no colloquium or setting is necessary in the
Declaration. Choctaw Coal & Mining Co. v. Lulich, 204 Ala. 533, 56 South. 383, 11 Ala. 358; 17 R.C.L. 394. “Thus, if the imputation be that
the plaintiff was ‘foresworn,’ this not being of itself actionable, because it does not necessarily impute the offense of perjury, it must be
specifically alleged, by way of Inducement, that there had been a Judicial Proceeding, in which the plaintiff was a witness and gave
evidence, and that the defendant was speaking of and concern-

(C) The Publication of the Scandal Itself.

—As the basis of actions for libel and slander is damages for the injury to the character of the plaintiff in the
opinion of others, and that can only arise where the words uttered or written are published to third persons, the
declaration must allege publication of the slanderous or libelous matter. Thus, for

25 6 Wend. (N.Y.) 412 (1581).

example, in Waistel v. Holman, 27 where the declaration averred that the defendant composed, wrote and delivered
to the plaintiff a certain libel, addressed and directed to the plaintiff, a Demurrer was sustained, as the averment
failed to show a publication of the libel; sending a sealed letter to the plaintiff was not a publication.

(D) The Innuendo.—This part of the Declaration followed the colloquium, and its object was to explain the
defendant’s meaning by reference to the previous statements in the inducement and colloquium; but an innuendo cannot enlarge the meaning shown by the inducement in which the surrounding conditions are set forth. In Roella v. Follow, the colloquium stated that “He” (meaning the plaintiff) “took a false oath,” but the Court held that the Declaration was inadequate in that the words were not in themselves actionable, and require an “innuendo which is necessary, in such cases, to explain the defendant’s meaning by reference to previous matter.”

(E) The Consequent Dantage&—This was merely a conclusion of the plaintiff that he had sustained damages to a certain amount, and therefore, he brings his suit.

Over and above these technical parts of the Declaration, there were other requirements, Odgers, in his famous work on Libel

and Slander, states: “So, too, many other allegations were required describing the locality, the relationship between the various persons mentioned, and all the surrounding circumstances necessary to fully understand the defendant’s words. And these matters could not properly be proved at the trial unless they were set out on the record; if they were not, and the plaintiff had a verdict, the court would subsequently arrest judgment on the ground that it did not appear clearly on the face of the record that the words were actionable. And this technicality was carried to an absurd extent. Thus, where the defendant said, ‘Thou art a murderer, for thou art the fellow that didst kill Mr. Sydnam’s man,’ the court of Exchequer Chamber, on error brought, arrested judgment, because there was no averment that any man of Mr. Sydnam’s had in fact been killed. Had the words been ‘and thou art,’ instead of ‘for thou art,’ the plaintiff would probably have been allowed to recover, Again, in Ball v. Roane (1598) Cro.Eliz, 308, the words were: ‘There was never a robbery committed within forty miles of Wellingborough but thou hadst thy part in it.’ After a verdict for the plaintiff, the court arrested judgment, ‘because it was not averred there was any robbery committed within forty miles, etc., for otherwise it is no slander.’ So in Foster v. Browning (1625) Cro.Jac. 688, where the words were, ‘Thou art as arrant a thief as any is in England,’ the court arrested judgment ‘because the plaintiff had not averred that there was any thief in England.’ But the climax was reached in a case cited in Dacey v. Clinch (1661) 1 Sid. 53, where the defendant had said to the plaintiff, ‘As sure as God governs the world, or King James this kingdom, you are a thief,’ After verdict for the plaintiff, the defendant moved in arrest of judgment, on


(F) The Defamatory Words Themselves Must be Set Out Verbatim.—At Common Law, the general rule was that in suing on written instruments, the contract could be set out verbatim or according to its legal effect. As setting forth a writing verbatim often resulted in a motion for nonsuit on the ground of variance between allegation and proof, usually the writing was set out according to its legal effect. But in libel and slander cases the words had to be
alleged verbatim, or in haec verba. As we have stated earlier, this was due to the civil law origin of libel and slander, both of which were regarded as innovations upon the Common Law, and to the fact that the criminal and Appellate Courts, on review, could not determine whether the lower courts had properly determined whether the words uttered or written, as a matter of law, were slanderous or libelous. The defendant, of course, was also entitled to know the precise charge against him.

32. Webster `cc florhms, 82 N.J.L. 55, 40 A. 778 (1898); See, also, Wormouth v. Cramer, 5 Wend. (N.Y.) 394 (1829), where the words uttered were in the German language, but were set forth in the Declaration in the English language, with the result that the plaintiff was Nonsuited.

Proof of similar or equivalent words is not admissible. Wallace `cc Dixon, 82 D.L. 202 (1876); Schultz `cc Short, 201 Ill.App. 74 (1909). But a slight variance is not fatal; i.e., “You are a liar” is supported by proof that “You are a damned liar.” 25 Cyc. 472.

33. “The gravamen of an action for libel is not injury to the plaintiff’s feelings, but damage to his reputation in the eyes of others. It is not sufficient, therefore, that the plaintiff should understand himself to be referred to in the article. It is necessary to constitute libel that others than the plaintiff should be in a position to understand that the plaintiff is the person referred to.” Duvivier v. French, 104 Fed. 278, 43 C.C.A. 529 (1900).

200

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

(G) The Technical Common-Law Rules of Pleading in Libel and Slander Modified.— Under modern practice the technicalities governing pleading in libel and slander cases have been largely abandoned. This tendency first took on substantial form in England when the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852 provided:

“In Actions of libel and slander, the plaintiff shall be at liberty to aver that the words or matter complained of were used in a defamatory sense, specifying such defamatory sense without any prefatory averment to show how such words or matter were used in that sense, and such averment shall be put in issue by the denial of the alleged libel or slander, and where the words or matter set forth, with or without the alleged meaning, show a cause of action, the Declaration shall be sufficient.”

This section was adopted into the New Jersey statutes in 1855.

The purpose of the above provision, as expounded by the courts of England and New Jersey, was to afford the plaintiff the right to set out in his Declaration the words complained of, and to place upon those words, by innuendo or specified defamatory sense, any construction he may see fit to attribute to them, without showing, by means of a colloquium, or other explanatory matter, how the words contained a defamatory charge. “The effect of this change,” according to Lanning, 3., in Allen v. Oppenheimer, “in the law of pleading, as to this class of cases, is that if the words complained of are actionable per se, and the plaintiff by innuendo puts a construction upon them different from what they would mean without the innuendo

34. 15 and 10 Wet. e. 76, § 61, 02 Statutes at Large

208 (1852).


36. English: Hemmings v. (lasson, 4 Sur. (N.S.) 834 (1858); New Jersey: Rand `cc Whiten, 38 N.J.L. 122 (1875); Andrew v. Deshler, 43 N.J.L. 16 (1881).

37. 166 Fed. 826 (00., D.N. ~, 1909).

38. Neglect of Official Duty

CASE is a proper remedy against an officer
for failure to perform his duty, whereby the plaintiff has sustained an injury (though an action ex contractu on his bond may be a concurrent remedy), as, for not Levying an Execution, or for not returning it, or for not taking a Replevin Bond, or for taking an insufficient bond, etc.; 4° and it will lie against an officer for making a False Return; 41 or against an election officer for

39. “At Common Law the pleading of a plaintiff in a slander suit, contained, when necessary, what was known as an ‘Inducement’, a ‘Colloquium’, and an ‘Innuendo’. The peculiar office of these separate divisions of the Pleading was distinctly circumscribed, but in more Modern Tunes, when the Technical Rules of Common-Law Pleading have been superseded by the enactment of Codes of Practice, the extreme Common-Law Technical Rules with respect to Pleadings in Libel and Slander Cases have been largely modified, so that now, if a Pleading contains the necessary Allegations, whether they be found in that part of it appropriately styled the ‘Inducement,’ the ‘Colloquium’, or the ‘Innuendo’, it will be sufficient although not contained In that particular division where the Rules of the Common-Law required it to be.”

Thomas, J., in Castineau v. McCoy, 100 Ky. 463, 465, 227 SW. 801, 802 (1921).

39. In general, on Libel and Slander, see Veeder, History and Theory of the Law of Defamation, 3 CoIL. Rev. 546 (1903).

40. Sabourin v. Marshall, 3 Barn. & Adol. 440, 110


Sec. 93

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

refusal to allow a vote; 42 and, generally, against an officer for any neglect of duty, 43

Statutory Liability

WHENEVER a Statute prohibits an injury to an individual, or enacts that he shall recover a penalty or damages for such injury, and is silent as to the form of remedy, an Action on the Case (and in some cases other actions) will lie. 44 And if a statute gives a remedy in the affirmative, without a negative, express or implied, for a matter which was actionable in Case at Common Law, the party may still sue at Common Law. 45 But where a statute gives a new right, or creates a new liability, and prescribes a particular remedy, or if it prescribes a new remedy to enforce a Common-Law right, and expressly or impliedly excludes the Common Law remedy, the statutory remedy must be pursued. 46


Almy v. Harris, 5 Johns. (N.Y.) 175 (1809); Pennsylvania: Weller v. Weyand, 2 Grant, Cas. (Pa.) 103 (1853); Brown v. White Deer Pp., 27 Pa. 109 (1856); Wisconsin: Babb v. Mackey, 10 Wis. 371 (1860).
Thus, where a Statute authorizes the taking or injuring or private property for a public use, under the Liability for Injuries by Animals

At Common Law, if a wild or vicious beast is turned loose, and mischief immediately ensues to the person or property of another, the injury is immediate, and Trespass, not Case is the remedy. But if a vicious animal is kept with knowledge of its dangerous propensities, and a person is thereby injured, the remedy is in Case. Where, however, damage is done by a domestic animal, kept for use or convenience, the owner is not liable to action on the ground of negligence, without proof that he knew that the animal was accustomed to do mischief.

If the action for injury by an animal is in Trespass, it should contain a concise statement as to the injury complained of, whether to the person, or to the personal or real property, and should allege that such injury was committed with force and arms and against the peace.

right of eminent domain, and prescribes the remedy by which the owner shall obtain redress, that remedy must be pursued. Stevens v. Proprietors of Middlesex Canal, 12 Mass, 466 (1815); Proprietors of Sudbury Meadows v. Proprietors of Middlesex Canal, 23 Pick. (Mass.) 36 (1840); I-Macn v. Essex Co., 12 Cush. (Mass.) 475 (1853). But if the damage done is not incident to the exercise of the power given, but is due to an improper exercise of the power, Case or Trespass will lie. Massachusetts: Mellen v. Western B. Corp., 4 Gray (Mass.) 301 (1855); Thompson v. Moore, 2 Allen (Mass.) 350 (1861); Michigan: Detroit Post Co. v. McArthur, 16 Mich. 447 (1868); Mississippi: Thorndasson v. Agnew, 24 Miss. 93 (1852).


202

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. S

ANTICIPATING DEFENSES IN CASE

94. In some Jurisdictions the plaintiff must negative the possible existence of certain technical defenses, viz, contributory negligence, fellow-servant rule, and assumption of risk.

In some Jurisdictions it is necessary in a Declaration for negligence by a servant against the employer to negative the defenses of contributory negligence, fellow-servant rule, and assumption of risk. In Calumet Iron and Steel Company v. Martin, the general rule is declared to be that, in order to recover for injuries from negligence, it must be alleged and proved that the plaintiff was, at the time he was injured, observing ordinary care for his personal safety. After the period of the statute of limitations, the declaration cannot be amended to supply this “substantial fact.” In an Action of Trespass on the Case by a servant against his employer a Declaration was defective in Illinois and some other states which did not negative knowledge or assumption of risk. It has been held that negativing knowledge of the risk is insufficient as it does not appear but that the servant had easy means of knowing.

In an action by a servant against his employer to recover for a personal injury for negligence, the declaration must negative the defense of the fellow-servant rule, if it is alleged that the negligent acts were done by the servants of the defendant without showing to what class they belonged. It is held, however, that if the allegations indicate

51. 115 Ill. 358, 3 N.E. 456 (1885).
53. City of LaSalle v. Costka, 190 Ill. 130, 60 N.E. 72 (1901); Dalton v. Rhode Island Co., 25 RI. 574, 57 Atl. 383 (1904), that the plaintiff was not a fellow servant, no negative allegation is needed.
What the plaintiff must allege as a matter of pleading to state a cause of action is a more or less arbitrary matter. Since the plaintiff comes into court asking relief, it might seem that logically he should be required to set up and prove all the conditions essential to recovery, and that he should negative all possible defenses, such as contributory negligence, assumption of risk, and fellow-servant rule. In fact, however, the plaintiff is ordinarily only required to make out a prima facie case and need not refer to all the conditions, positive and negative, which are ultimately essential to a recovery. The plaintiff must show an apparent reason for his request and give fair notice of the facts relied on as the basis of his claim. This will, in general, indicate as to what matters the plaintiff has the burden of proof, which is a question of fairness, policy and convenience. Matters of justification and excuse are for the defendant to prove, since it is unfair to require the plaintiff to disprove the existence of each and all of them. The defenses of contributory negligence, assumption of risk, and fellow-servant rule are technical at best and should not be favored by the rules of pleading. If they are to be raised at all, they should be set up affirmatively by the defendant.


56. in Illinois the burden of proof to negative assumption of risk was on the plaintiff. Swift Co. v. Gaylord, 229 Ill. 389, 840, 82 N.E. 299 (1901).

95. The Action of Trespass on the Case was adapted to many circumstances and factual situations which characterized the growth of society, and the ability of the law to meet the demands of a constantly advancing civilization largely has been made possible by the expansionistic character of this action.

IT Is impossible to enumerate all the factual situations in which an Action of Trespass on the Case can be maintained, hence the particular applications of the action above discussed are merely illustrative of its enormous scope. It is referred to as the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law for the reason that the law has never placed a limitation on its continual expansion. As we have seen it was largely through the constant and ever increasing application of this action to a myriad of different factual situations involving a wrong not remediable by any other Form of Action which enabled the Judges of England to build up the Common Law of that country as it is known today.

Before modern research revealed that Case did not originate out of the Statute of Westminster 111 (1285),-- it was often suggested that a liberal construction of that Statute would have eliminated any need for the Chancellor’s extraordinary jurisdiction in filling out the alleged deficiencies of the Common Law. This suggestion was predicated upon the view that Equity originated out of the failure of the Common Law Courts to adapt themselves to the changes and needs of a developing society. It is submitted, however, that the view that Equity originated out of a failure of the Common Law Courts to so adapt themselves is wholly untenable and contrary to fact, for, as has been observed, the Common Law Courts could in no event have afforded the kind of relief which Equity was eventually to offer without completely revolutionizing their procedures and enlarging their jurisdiction.

56. in Illinois the burden of proof to negative assumption of risk was on the plaintiff. Swift Co. v. Gaylord, 229 Ill. 389, 840, 82 N.E. 299 (1901).


Sec. 96

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

THE EXPANSIONISTIC CHARACTER
OF CASE

95. The Action of Trespass on the Case was adapted to many circumstances and factual situations which characterized the growth of society, and the ability of the law to meet the demands of a constantly advancing civilization largely has been made possible by the expansionistic character of this action.

IT Is impossible to enumerate all the factual situations in which an Action of Trespass on the Case can be maintained, hence the particular applications of the action above discussed are merely illustrative of its enormous scope. It is referred to as the Great Residuary Remedy of the Common Law for the reason that the law has never placed a limitation on its continual expansion. As we have seen it was largely through the constant and ever increasing application of this action to a myriad of different factual situations involving a wrong not remediable by any other Form of Action which enabled the Judges of England to build up the Common Law of that country as it is known today.

Before modern research revealed that Case did not originate out of the Statute of Westminster 111 (1285),-- it was often suggested that a liberal construction of that Statute would have eliminated any need for the Chancellor’s extraordinary jurisdiction in filling out the alleged deficiencies of the Common Law. This suggestion was predicated upon the view that Equity originated out of the failure of the Common Law Courts to adapt themselves to the changes and needs of a developing society. It is submitted, however, that the view that Equity originated out of a failure of the Common Law Courts to so adapt themselves is wholly untenable and contrary to fact, for, as has been observed, the Common Law Courts could in no event have afforded the kind of relief which Equity was eventually to offer without completely revolutionizing their procedures and enlarging their jurisdiction.
What is true, however, is that the Action of Trespass on the Case revealed such great potentialities as to permit its adaptability to the many circumstances and factual situations which have characterized the growth of our society. Indeed, the ability of our law to meet the demands of our constantly advancing civilization largely has been made possible by the expansionistic character of this action. And, in this connection, it should be remembered that the capacity of this action has not been destroyed by the Reformed Procedure, under which the Single Action provided is in the Nature of an Action on the Case, and hence the process of expansion and growth continues at full pace.

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

96. The Common Law Action of Trespass on the Case continues to exist under modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, although the label, as such, has been removed.

The Modern Status of the Action of Trespass on the Case appears plainly from two cases, one decided in 1939, the other in 1951. In the first case, Williamson v. Columbia Gas & Electric Corporation, in which the plaintiff complained that the acts of The Columbia Gas & Electric Corporation were in violation of Section 7 of the Clayton Act, the section which barred corporations from acquiring, directly or indirectly, any stock of another corporation engaged in commerce,

where the effect would be to substantially lessen competition, the plaintiff also claimed threefold damages under Section 4 of the Clayton Act. The defendant moved to dismiss the complaint, on the ground that it did not state a cause of action which accrued within a period of three years prior to the Commencement of the Action. It was stipulated that the right of action accrued not later than January 1, 1931. The complaint having been dismissed by the District Court, the plaintiff appealed, thus raising a question as to whether the plaintiff’s action was barred under the applicable Delaware Statute of Limitations, Section 5129 of which provided: “No Action of Trespass, no Action of Repleviri, no Action of Detinue, no Action of Debt not found upon a Record or Specialty, no Action of Account, no Action of Assumpsit, and no Action upon the Case shall be brought after the expiration of three years from the accruing of the cause of such action.”

In affirming the Order of the District Court, the Circuit Court of Appeals held that the action sounded in tort and that the appropriate Form of Action was the Common Law Action of Trespass on the Case. Chief Justice Mans declared:

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. S

In this situation the plaintiff concluded his action was in the nature of an Action of Debt on a Specialty and hence was not barred, having been brought within twenty years, the period prescribed by the Statute. The defendant argued that the complaint set forth a cause in tort for which an Action on the Case was the only remedy and that since the suit was brought more than three years after the action had accrued, recovery was barred by the Statute. Thus, in the Appeal, the issue of law was whether an Action in the Nature of Debt on a Specialty at Common Law might be brought to recover Damages for injuries to business resulting from acts prohibited by Section 7 of the Clayton Act; or whether an action in the Nature of the Common Law Action of Trespass on the Case was the sole remedy of the aggrieved party.

In affirming the Order of the District Court, the Circuit Court of Appeals held that the action sounded in tort and that the appropriate Form of Action was the Common Law Action of Trespass on the Case. Chief Justice Mans declared:
“In order to apply a statute of limitations, such as that of Delaware, which reads in terms of Common Law Actions, to a Civil Action brought in a District Court, it is necessary for the court through a consideration of the nature of the Cause of Action disclosed in the complaint to determine the Form of Action which would have been brought upon it at Common Law. It is evident that the complaint in the case before us discloses a Cause of Action which, under the Common Law of Delaware, would be enforceable in an Action on the Case and not in an Action of Debt on a Specialty. The District Court, therefore, properly held that the action was barred by the Delaware Statute of Limitations.”

In the second case, *Eisener v. Maxwell,* a Canadian case decided in 1951, the plaintiff’s Statement of Claim alleged Damages caused by the negligent operation of a motor vehicle on a highway, to which the defendant pleaded that there had been no negligence. The Statute of Limitations for batteries was one year, and for causes which formerly would have been brought in the Form of Action Known as Trespass on the Case, six years. At the Trial the defendant urged that an action for personal injury was an Action I or Assault and Battery, and since it was brought after the expiration of one year, was barred by the Statute of Limitations. The plaintiff contended that automobile collisions on the highway should be treated as Actions of Negligence, and hence should be regarded as within the class which formerly would have been brought in the Form of Action called

TRESPASS ON THE CASE
Trespass on the Case, and, therefore, was not barred, as it fell within the purview of that Section of the Statute of Limitations which prescribed a six year period of limitations. The Lower Court held for the defendant, but on Appeal, it was held that automobile collisions on the highway should be treated as giving rise to a new right of action to be known as an Action of Negligence. As such, it fell within the class which formerly would have been brought in the Form of Action Known as Trespass on the Case, and hence the six year Statute of Limitations applied.

Thus, from the standpoint of a Federal case, decided in 1939, or a Canadian case, decided in 1951, It clearly appears that the Common Law Action of Trespass on the Case is very much alive under Modern Codes, Practice Acts, and Rules of Court, even though the label, as such, has been removed; and, what is more significant, is showing sufficient strength to create new substantive rights of action.

Sec. 96

205

CHAPTER 9

THE ACTION OF TROVER’

Scope of the Action.
Property Which May be Converted.
Trover—Distinguished from and Concurrent
Form of the Declaration in Trover.
Declaration in Trover—Essential Allegations:

(1) In General.
102. Declaration in Trover—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.
103. Declaration in Trover—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Defendant’s Wrongful Act of Conversion.
104. Declaration in Trover—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages.
105. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

SCOPE OF THE ACTION

97. The Action of Trover, or Trover and Conversion, lies to recover Damages for the conversion by the defendant to his own use of specific personal property, of which the plaintiff was entitled to the immediate possession; the object of the action is the recovery of the ‘value of the property as Damages for its conversion; it is not the object of the action to recover Damages for the taking, nor is it the recovery of the property itself.
IN its origin, the Action of Trover, or Trover and Conversion, was a Specialized Form of the Action of Trespass on the Case to recover Damages against a person who had found goods, and refused to deliver them to the owner, but converted them to his own use.

As Detinue was subject to the disadvantages of Wager of Law and great particularity in the description of the chattel sought to be recovered, Trover, by a fiction of law—that is, by alleging a fictitious loss and finding—at length was allowed against any person who obtained possession of the personal property of another by any means whatever, and sold or used it without the consent of the owner, or refused to deliver it when demanded. The injury lies in the conversion or misappropriation of the goods, which is the gist of the action, and the statement of the finding is neither material nor traversable.

The object of the action is not the recovery of the property itself—that can be recovered only by Detinue or Replevin—but to recover the value of the property. Lord Mansfield, in *Humbly v. Trott*, said: “Trover is in Form a Tort, but in Substance an Action to Try Property. ... An Action of Trover...


Comments: Trover and Replevin—Title to Things Severed from Real Estate by Adverse Possession, 5 Minn. L.Rev. 155 (1920); Unsatisfied Judgments in

with Other Actions.

206 ACTION OF TROVER

Sec. 98
Trover, 3 Yale L.J. 742 (1921); Conversion—Bailee’s Unauthorized Use of a Baileid Chattel, 21 Cornell L.Q. 112 (1935).

Annotation: Respective Rights of Carrier, or of One in Similar Relation to Owner, and Finder of Property Lost or Mislaid, 9 L.R.A. 1388 (1020).

Decision: Dame v. Dame, 43 N.H. 37 (1801).

2. The action was therefore called “Trover” from the French ‘trouver”—meaning to find. See the following cases: Illinois: Harper v. Scott, 63 Ill. Apr., 401 (1896); New York: Hull v. Southworth, 5 Wend. (N.Y.) 265 (1830).


is founded on property.” — It is thus a substitute for a property action to recover the possession— in short it makes the converter a compulsory purchaser.5

5 In Trespass the plaintiff is compensated by Damages measured by the actual harm done to the goods or chattels or the use lost; in Trover the injured party is compensated by Damages measured by the entire value of the property involved at the time of the conversion.

The manner in which the defendant may have obtained possession of the property is no longer material. The Form of the Action supposes that the possession may have been obtained lawfully, that is, by a bailment or a finding, but it lies as well where the possession was obtained by a Trespass. In such a case, however, the plaintiff, by bringing Trover, waives the Trespass; and no Damages are recoverable for the act of taking; they are recoverable only for the wrongful act of conversion.6

PROPERTY WHICH MAY BE CONVERTED

98. Trover may be maintained for all kinds of personal property, including legal documents, but not where articles are severed from land by an adverse possessor, at least until after the land has been recovered. It lies for the misappropriation of specific money, but not for the breach of an obligation to pay where there is no duty to return specific money.

THE Action of Trover is confined to the conversion of personal property. It does not lie, therefore, for the appropriation of fixtures still annexed nor for any injuries to


6 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Forms, c. II, Of the Forms of Action, 164, 165 (16th Am. ed., by Perkins, Springfield 1876).


land or other real property, even by a severance of what properly belongs to the freehold, unless there has also been an asportation.5 If, however, after trees, earth, minerals, buildings, or other fixtures have been severed from the freehold, they are carried away, the property is thereby converted into personalty, and Trover will lie. It must be


5 English: Boraston v. Green, 16 East, 77, 104 Bug. Bep. 1010 (1812); Pennsylvania: Lehr v. Taylor, 90 Pa. 381 (1879); Cf. Sanderson v. Ilaverstick, 8 Pa. 294 (1848), where It was held that the action would lie for cutting timber without carrying it away.

Where growing corn or any other crop is cut and carried away and converted, Trover will lie. Illinois:
Simicins v. Rogers, 15 Ill. 397 (1854); Altes v. Hinckler, 36 Ill. 111. 275, 85 Am.Dec. 401 (1864); Michigan: weldon v. Lytle, 53 Mich. 1, 18 N.W. 533 (1884).

So, also, where trees have been cut and carried away and made into charcoal, or otherwise converted.


Growing grain eaten by trespassing cattle cannot be said to have been converted by the owner of the cattle. The remedy is Trespass. Smith v. Archer, 53 Ill. 241 (1870).

And as to manure, see the following cases: Massachusetts: Anderson v. Todesco, 214 Mass. 102, 100 N.E. 1068 (1913); New Hampshire: Pinkham v. Gear, 3 remembered that not everything that is fastened to real property thereby becomes real.10 A building erected under an agreement that it shall remain personal property, remains so, and Trover will lie for its conversion.” So, as between landlord and tenant, mortgage and mortgagor, vendor and purchaser, etc., property may remain personal though annexed to the freehold, and if it is personal, Trover is the proper remedy for its conversion.11

It may be stated here that the action does not lie for stone or gravel dug from land or crops or other articles severed, where the defendant has the actual adverse possession of the land, and claims title to it,” The owner must resort to his remedy for the recovery of the land itself. Some cases allow the Personal Actions for things severed after the

N.E. 484 (1826); New York: Middlebrook v. Ccc-win, 15 Wend. (N.Y.) 169 (1856).

10. Where machinery is sold to be set up in a mill, but with a stipulation that title shall not pass until it is paid for, and without the vendor’s knowledge it is so attached to the realty as to make it, under ordinary circumstances, a fixture, and before It is paid for the property is sold to someone with notice of the vendor’s claim, Trover will lie for the conversion of the machinery. Ingersoll v. Barnes, 47 Mich. 104, 10 NW. 127 (1881).


Where the landlord takes possession before the end of the term, without the tenant’s consent, and prevents him from removing his personal property, the tenant can maintain Trover, though the property is attached to the realty. Watts v. Lehman, 107 Pa. 106 (1884).


See, also, Note: Trover and Replevin—Title to Things Severed from Real Estate by Adverse Possessor, ~ Minn.L.Rey. 155 (1921).
Sec. 99

ACTION OF TROVER

209

recovery of possession of the land, but the normal remedy after Ejectment is a claim for Damages by way of Mesne Profits.

It is also necessary, in order to maintain this action, that the plaintiff shall have the right to some specific property. The action will lie for so many pieces of money taken and converted by the defendant; but it will not lie for money had and received general-

The fact that the plaintiff’s interest in the property is in common will not defeat the action. It will lie for an undivided interest in a specific chattel or in a mass."16

The conversion of any specific personal property of any sort whatever will give rise to an Action of Trover.7 It will lie for the conversion of any valuable paper, as an insurance policy, promissory notes, bonds, certificates of stock, title deeds, copies of records, etc.8


17. For example, animals feræ naturæ converted after being tamed or killed. Amory v. Flyn, 10 Johns. (N.Y.) 102, 6 Am.Dec. 316 (1813).


TROVER—DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

99. fly the successive extensions over a period of time of the action of Trover, by the close of the Eighteenth Century it had become a concurrent remedy with Detinue, Replevin and Trespass de Bonis Asportatis. Each of these remedies had their own peculiar characteristics and Trover was not completely coextensive with them.

THE Action of Detinue, in its broadest scope, and the Action of Trespass failed to adequately protect the rights of owners in their chattels. Thus, if a bailee or other person in possession misused the goods of the bailor in such a way as to impair their value, and thereafter, at the request of the bailor, surrendered them, the only remedy available to the bailor was an Action on the Case, if he desired to recover full Damages.19 Of course, if, after diminishing the value of the chattels, the bailee still refused to deliver them upon the demand of the owner, Detinue was available, in which the owner might recover the chattels or their value, with Damages for the unlawful detention. But if the defendant saw fit to restore the chattels under the judgment and the owner wished to recover Damages for the injury or diminished value of the chattels, he was forced to bring Case. By bringing Case in the first instance, the owner was able to avoid a multiplicity of actions.20 Originally, where the chattel bailed found its way from the bailee
into the hands of a third party and was destroyed, the bailor, it was said, could not recover in Detinue, as it was regarded as impossible to show a detention where the goods had been previously destroyed. Whatever doubt prevailed on the point as to whether Case would lie in favor of the owner in this situation was ultimately resolved in favor of permitting the action. It having now been held that Case would lie against any possessor for misusing the goods, and any possessor other than a bailee for the destruction of the goods, it was bound to follow that such an action would be permitted against a bailee who destroyed the goods, which occurred in a case decided in 1479. In a case decided in 1510 it was held that a wrongful sale by a bailee would amount to a conversion, and in Vancirinic v. Archer, the same effect was given to a sale by a finder, as a result of which Trover became established as a concurrent remedy with Detinue in those cases involving a misfeasance.

The next step was for Trover to become concurrent with Trespass. Basset v. Raynard was held in the year 1601 that Trover would lie for a wrongful taking, and in 1604, in the case of Bishop v. Montague, it was held that the plaintiff might elect between

28. I.E. 18 Edw. IV, I, 28, p. 5. Dean Ames states that this “is noteworthy as being the earliest reported case in which a defendant was charged with ‘converting to his own use’ the plaintiff’s goods,” Lectrnts on Legal History, Lecture VII, Trover, 84, 85 (Cambridge 1913).
30. 1 Leo, 221, 74 Eng.flep. 208.
32. Cro.Eliz. 824, 72 Eng.Rep. 1051. For later cases on the same point, see Leserson v. Kirk, 1 BoNe, Abridgment, 105 (M) 10 (1610); Khaston v. Moore, Cro.Car. 89, 79 Eng.ltep. 678 (1627), In which the Justices and Barons declared that “although he took it ~ ~ trespass, yet the other may charge him in Sn AcUmni upon the case In Trover If he will.”

Trover or Trespass. And in 1596, in the case of Eason v. l’Iewman, Trover was permitted against a finder, even though the original taking was not adverse, on the ground of refusal to surrender the goods on demand of the owner, it having been earlier held that Trespass could be maintained as the taker was a trespasser ab intito. Ames suggests, however, that the action was allowed as a substitute for Trespass, and not as an alternative of Detinue, a conclusion based on the fact that for many years thereafter Prover was not permitted against a bailee who refused to deliver the chattel to the bailor upon request. But after various negative holdings, in 1675, it was held that Trover was available against the bailor on mere demand and denial. Under the foregoing decisions, Trover became a concurrent remedy with Detinue, except where the bailee was unable to deliver the goods as they had been negligently lost; in such a case the bailor was liable in Assumpsit. The net result, therefore, was that Trover, not being subject to Wager of Law, was substituted in lieu of Detinue, until after the early part of the Nineteenth Century. One further conquest remained to be made, although Trover had now been extended to cover the Field of Both Detinue and Trespass. After Trespass became concurrent with Replevin, which lay for a wrongful distress, Prover followed suit and also became available on the theory that a wrongful distress constituted a conversion.

Thus, Trover had finally emerged as a remedy concurrent with Detinue, Replevin and Trespass, and supplemented by Case and Assumpsit.
ACTION OF TROVER

FORM OF THE DECLARATION IN TROVER

100. As the Action of Prover was an offshoot of the Action of Trespass on the Case the Form of the Action in some respects follows the Form of Case. The Form of the Original Writ and so also the Early Forms of the Declaration contained a statement that the defendant had acted to deceive and defraud the plaintiff. The statement as to the Loss and Finding ultimately became immaterial when Trover was extended to cover any wrongful taking, and thereafter was dropped.

DECLARATION IN TROVER

(Alleging Loss and Finding)

EDWARD the Third, by the grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith
To the Sheriff of County,

GREETING:

COMMENCEMENT. Recital of Writ.
Middlesex, to wit [venue]. D. D. was attached to answer P. P. of a plea of trespass on the case;

Queritur. and thereupon the said P. P., by J. H. his attorney, complains:

BODY. INDUCEMENT. Possession. For that, whereas, the said P. P. heretofore, to wit, on the first day of May in the year 1800, at Westminster in the county aforesaid, was lawfully possessed, as of his own property, of certain goods and chattels, to wit, ten tables and ten chairs, of great value, to wit, of the value of ten pounds of lawful money of Great Britain;

Loss. And being so possessed thereof, the said P. P. afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at Westminster aforesaid, casually lost the said goods and chattels out of his possession;

Finding. and the same afterwazt, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid at the place aforesaid, came to the possession of the said D. D. by finding;

GRAVAMEN. Conversion. Yet the said li D., well knowing the said goods and chattels to be the property of the said P. p. [and of right to belong and appertain to him, but contriving and fraudulently intending craftily and subtilly to deceive and defraud the said P. P. in his behalf,] hath not as yet delivered the said goods and chattels or any part thereof to the said P. P., although often requested to do so, but so to do hath hitherto wholly refused, and still refuses; and afterward, to wit, on the day and at the place aforesaid, converted and disposed of the said goods and chattels to his, the said D. D.'s, own use;

CONCLUSION. Ad Damnum. to the damage of the said P. P. of [in the sum of] £10;

Production of Suit, and therefore he brings his suit [inde producit sectam.]


DECLARATION IN TROVER—ESSENTIAL
ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

101. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration in Trover are:

(I) The plaintiff’s Possession or Right of Immediate Possession of certain goods, with description; the description of the property converted and the plaintiff’s right thereto, must be sufficient for purposes of identification, but the plaintiff’s property or right may be stated generally;

(II) The Conversion, including in some cases Demand and Refusal;

(III) The Value of the Goods and Damages

by their Conversion.

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS
DECLARATION IN TROVER—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS— (2) THE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

192. The plaintiff must have the Right to the Immediate Possession. A defrauded seller may regain his Right of Possession by election to rescind the sale. The Right of Possession may arise from a bailment or from bare possession itself. A mere servant has custody, not possession. The Right of Possession is sometimes spoken of as Constructive Possession.

**Title and Possession to Support Ti-over**

In order to maintain this Form of Action, it is commonly said that the plaintiff must, at the time of the conversion, have had a Property, either General or Special, in the chattel, and also the actual possession, or the right to the immediate possession. “Special Property” may arise from a bailment or even from bare possession. The immediate right of possession as against the wrongdoer is all the property right necessary.

It is sufficient that the plaintiff at the time of the conversion had the right to immediate possession, arising either from the actual possession or from title of any sort. 32

---

30. Illinois: Bisendrath v. Knauer, 434 Ill. 311. 300 (1872);

And see, Baals v. Stewart, 101 Ind. 371, 9 N.E. 403 (1831), as to the statement under the Indiana Code. See, also, 21 Eney.Pl. & Prae. 1063 (Northport 1895—1902); Bowers, A Treatise on the Law of Conversion, c. IX, §1490—492 (Boston 1917).

In an action for conversion, the plaintiff must allege that he was in possession or entitled to possession of the property at the time of the alleged conversion.


107 Eng.Rep. 1309 (1825); Alabama: Glaze v. McMillion, 7 Port. (Ala.) 270 (1828); Illinois: Chickering v. Raymond, 15 Ill. 362 (1854);

Midtson v. Waldron, 31 Ill. 120, 83 Am.Dec. 200 (1863); Owens v. Weedman, 82 Ill. 409 (1876); Indiana: Traylor v. Horrell, 4 Blackf. (Tad.) 317 (1837); Barton v. Dun-fling, 6 Black’s. (In & In) 209 (1842); Michigan: Ste.

If goods are obtained by fraud, the vendor may avoid the sale, and bring Trover against the vendee, at least after a demand and refusal to return the goods, and, by the weight of authority, without a previous demand. 33 It must be borne in mind, however, that if the contract is affirmed, with knowledge of the fraud, by bringing an assumpsit or otherwise, the property passes irrevocably, and therefore Trover will not lie.


A statute giving the lessor a lien on crops grown on the demised land does not vest him with such title thereto as to enable him to bring Trover for the crops against a purchaser from the tenant. Prink v. Pratt, 130 IUt. 327, 22 N.E. 819 (1889).

And that a mere lien without possession is not enough, see the following cases: Alabama: Street v. Nelson, 80 Ala. 230 (1885); Delaware: Stewart v. Bright, 6 Houst. (Del.) 344 (1881); New York: Deficy v. Dwight, 132 N.Y. 59, 30 N.E. 258, 18 L.RA. 298 (1892); Rhode Island: Rexroth v. Coon, 15 n.J.
ACTION OF TROVER

A bailee or any person in possession of goods may maintain Trover against a stranger who takes them out of his possession. The action will therefore lie by an officer who had the possession of, and a special property in, the goods by virtue of an Execution or Writ of Attachment; or by a carrier, a warehouseman, a consignee, a gratuitous bailee, or by any agent who is responsible over to his principal.

The finder of goods has a Special Property in them which will enable him to maintain Trover against any one but the true owner.


37. Smith v. James, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 329 (1827); Everett v. Saltus, 15 Wend. (N.Y.) 474 (1826).


40. Wilbraham v. Snow, 2 Wms.Saund. 47(b), 85 Eng. Rep. 624 (1609); Blades v. Arundale, 1 M. & S. 5, 711, 105 Engtep. 265 (1813); Massachusetts:

Brownell v. Manchester, 1 Pick. (Mass.) 232 (1822); Caldwell v. Eaton, 5 Mass. 399 (1809); Badlam v. Tucker, 1 rick. (Mass.) 389, 11 Am.Dec. 202 (1823);

Michigan: Burk v. Webb, 32 Much. 173 (1875); Witherspoon v. Clegg, 42 Much. 484, 4 N.W. 209 (1880); New Hampshire: Poole v. Symonds, 1 N. I. 289, 8 Am.Dec. 71 (1818); New York: Dillenback v. Jerome, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 297 (1827); Barker v. Miller, 6 Johns. (N.Y.) 195 (1810); Pennsylvania:

Weidensaul v. Reynolds, 49 Pa. 73 (1865); Vermont:


Bare possession, even though wrongfully obtained, gives the possessor sufficient property to maintain the action.
against a mere stranger.\(^{42}\)

The rule by which a bailee, finder, or wrongful possessor is permitted to sue and recover Damages which he has not sustained, and by such recovery bar a subsequent action by the bailor for an injury to his general property without his consent, is **criticized as unsound** by certain authorities.\(^{43}\) It is suggested that the General Owner and the one having a special property should each bring an action for the actual loss or damage to his own particular interest. This might well be the rule where the person in possession does not claim complete Title, or where the General Owner does not consent to his recovering the **total loss**. **Indeed, it is recognized that the mere naked bailee, at the will of the bailor, cannot recover against a third person for the conversion of the bailed property, where the bailor or owner has intervened and asserted his general property.** It is otherwise in the case of a bailee with the right of possession for a specific time and purpose, who has the


\(^{43}\) See Note: Damages for Injury to Chattels Recoverable by Person Having Possessory Interest Only. 25 Harv. L.Rev. 655 (1912), criticizing the case of The Winkfield [1902] p. 42 in which the court established the doctrine of Modern Damage Law, that a bailee may recover the **whole damage** done to a bailed chattel by a wrongdoer, though the bailee would not be liable to the bailor for such wrongful act. See, also, 2 Beven, Negligence in Law, c. IV, 736, 737, note (3d ed., London 1908); Clerk & Lindsell, Law of Torts, c. VII, 262, 282 (3d ed., London 1904).

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

Ch. 9

right to recover to the extent of the value of his special interest in the property, even where the general owner intervenes.\(^{44}\) It does seem strange that a bailee is entitled to recover for the entire Damage done to property by its injury, loss or misappropriation, while a joint owner of personal property, who sues without joining the other co-owners, is entitled to recover only his own Damage. But it is generally recognized that “the peace and order of society require that persons in possession of property, even without Title, should be enabled to protect such possession by appropriate remedies against mere naked wrongdoers.” Thus the United States Government, in carrying on the post office, is bailee of the letters and their contents for hire, and has sufficient interest to maintain an Action of Trespass or Trover against a thief or wrongdoer for disturbing that possession, like any other bailee, and may recover the entire value of the property.\(^{45}\)

A person having a special property in goods, and being entitled to the possession as against the general owner, as in the case of a pledgee for value, a chattel mortgagee after condition broken, or a bailee having a lien, may maintain Trover even against the General Owner, or against one who has converted the goods by authority of, or on Process against, the General Owner.\(^{46}\)

\(^{44}\) Engel v. Scott & Hobston Lumber Co., 60 Minn. 39, 61 NW. 825 (1895).


\(^{46}\) National Surety Co. v. United States, 129 Fed. 70 (1904).

\(^{47}\) English: Roberts v. Wyatt, 2 Taunt. 268, 127 Eng. Rep. 1080 (1810); Illinois: Hutton v. Arnett, 51 Il. 108 (1869); Indiana: M’Connell v. Maxwell, 3 Inda. 419 (1839); Massachusetts: Eaton v. Lynde, 15 Mass. 242 (1818); Crocker v. Tew, 144 Mass. 588, 12 N.E. 421 (1887); New York: Ingersoll v. Van Bokkel, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 610 (1827); Moore v. Fletcher, 4 Wendt (N.Y.) 292 (1830); Duncan v. Spear, 11 Wendt (N.Y.) 54 (1833); Daniels v. Ball.

A mere servant, however, acting professedly as such, and having only the custody of the goods, cannot maintain
the action, but, if brought at all, it must be brought by the master.48

Constructive Possession or Right to Possession;

IN order to maintain Trover, the plaintiff must have had possession, or the right to immediate possession, at the time of the conversion.49 One is said to have constructive possession when he is given the same rights and remedies as if he were in actual possession. This may be the case of an owner when no one is in actual possession, or when some bailee at will is in possession subject to his orders.

Where the property was, at the time of the conversion, in the hands of a bailee at will, Trover may, in most cases, be maintained

11 Wend. (N.Y.) 57, note (1833); Faulkner v. Brown, 13 Wend. (N.Y.) 63 (1834).


The right to possession must have been immediate, absolute and unconditional, and not dependent on some act to be done by the plaintiff. It is not enough that the plaintiff had a good right of action, or a right to take possession at some future day. Frink v. Pratt, 130 Ill. 327, 22 N.E. 819 (1889).

Sec. 102

ACTION OF TROVER

either by the General or the Special Owner— that is, by the bailor or bailee—though a Judgment obtained by one of them will be a Bar to an action by the other—50 But this is not the case where the bailee has the exclusive right of possession as against the bailor.

Therefore, where goods leased as furniture with a house were taken in Execution against a former owner, and sold by the sheriff, it was held that the landlord could not maintain Trover against the sheriff pending the lease, but should have brought an Action on the Case, as the right of possession was in the tenant51. A landlord, however, generally has such a right of possession of timber wrongfully cut down during the lease as to enable him to maintain Trover if it is removed.52

The person who has the absolute or general property in goods may maintain Trover, though he has never had the actual possession, provided he had the right to immediate possession. The general ownership with the right to possession creates a constructive possession.53 Thus, where a person has de


liverS goods to a carrier or other bailee, who has not the right to withhold the possession from the General Owner, he may maintain Trover for conversion by a stranger, for the owner has the constructive possession. M So an executor or administrator has constructive possession of the goods of his testator or intestate from the time of his death; ∼ a trustee of goods has constructive possession, though they are in the actual possession of the cestui que trust; ∼ a consignee of goods, who is also the vendee, may bring Trover for their conversion after their delivery to the carrier, and before he has acquired actual possession; ∼ and the vendee of goods, where the property in them has passed, may maintain the action for their conversion before they left the actual possession of the vendor.58

If the bailee of goods, having the right to their possession, as against the bailor, so that the bailor could not in general maintain Trover for their conversion, so deals with them as to terminate the bailment, the bailor acquires constructive possession, and for their subsequent conversion he may maintain Trover. Thus, where the owner of cattle leased them, with a farm, for four years,

under an agreement by which the lessee might return or purchase them at the end of the term, and before the term had expired the lessee sold them, it was held that the sale terminated the lessee’s right to possession, and gave the lessor constructive possession, and that the lessor could maintain Trover against both the lessee and his yen-dee59

A bailor may maintain an action of trover against the bailee, if by wrongful use or disposal of the goods the bailee has repudiated his obligations, and thereby enabled the bailor to exercise the rights and remedies of a person entitled to possession. If a bailee misappropriates the property, as by selling or pledging it as his own, the bailor may immediately Elect to treat the bailment as ended and bring trover for its Value, or he may Elect to treat the bailment as continuing and sue for Damages. A bailee, if he has any right of enjoyment or use, must use the thing in moderation, and not exceed the limits of the bailment. If his acts imply an assertion of Title or right of dominion inconsistent with the bailor’s ownership, this is a conversion of the property. Mere misuse, or unauthorized use of the thing bailed without adverse claim, or negligent loss, may only amount to a breach of
obligation, or a tort in the Nature of Waste, falling short of conversion.

**Title in a Third Party as a Defence**

In Trespass and Trover at Common Law there was some difficulty as to whether Title in a Third Party was a good Defence. As Trespass is based on possession, the Defence of Title in a Third Person was obviously not good. But in Trpver the situation may be different where the plaintiff, not being in possession, is relying on his right to possession. 59 is relying on his right to possess-

59 Grant v. King, 14 Vt. 367 (1842). See, also, Turner v. Waldo, 40 Vt. 51 (1867).

If the plaintiff in Trover is relying on possession, title in a third party may not be pleaded successfully. In the latter case, the defendant may sometimes effectively take issue as in the case of Leake v. Loveday, 60 in which A was the holder of a bill of sale upon furniture belonging to B, the effect of the bill being to leave the possession of the furniture in B, but to convey the ownership to A, with a provision that if B failed to pay the money due under the bill, A should have an immediate right to possession. B went into bankruptcy, whereupon the Title to the furniture, being still in his “order and disposition,” passed to his assignees in bankruptcy. Before the assignees could liquidate, the furniture was seized on Execution, in satisfaction of a debt which B owed to other creditors. In this situation A, relying on his bill of sale, sued the defendant-sheriff, who took under the Execution, in Trover, only to be met with the Defence that Title was in Third Parties—the assignees in bankruptcy. In holding the Defence good, it was pointed out that since the plaintiff was not in possession he necessarily had to make out his right to immediate possession, and hence by Way of Defence the sheriff could plead the Superior Title of the assignees in bankruptcy, even though he was not acting under their authority.

**Description of Property**

In actions for injuring or taking away goods or chattels, it is in general necessary that their kind, quantity, number, and value should be stated. 61 It would be insufficient fully. Webb v. Fox, 7 T.R. 391, 101 Eng.Rep. 1037 (1797).


**ACTION OF TROVER**

217 to allege that the defendant injured or took the plaintiff’s goods and chattels without showing their number or nature. In Trover, Trespass, and Case less particularity is required than in Detinue or Replevin, in which the plaintiff seeks to recover the goods themselves, The price or value should be stated, though it has been held that the omission to do so will not be fatal. 62 The time should also be alleged, though it seems that it is only essential to show a time before suit broughtM It is usual to state that the plaintiff, being possessed of such goods as are described, on a certain day, casually lost the same out of his possession, and that afterwards, on the day and year aforesaid, they came into the possession of the defendant by finding, in accordance with the ancient form,


It is sufficient to allege the nature and kind of chattels referred to and the quantity or number converted. Howton v. Mathias, 97 Aja. 457, 78 So. 02 (1916).
A complaint for the conversion of money derived from the sale of the plaintiff's cotton was held sufficient to describe the money. Howton v. Mathias, 197 Ala. 457, 73 So. 92 (1916).

64. Conno v. Meir, 2 E.D.Smith (N.Y.) 314 (1854).


In a complaint for the Conversion of an automobile, the description of an automobile In the complaint as “one automobile, the property of the plaintiff,” was held sufficient In Robertson v. Hooton, 17 Ala.App. 258, 85 So. 5-- (1919).

64. Maryland: Dietus v. Fuss, 8 Md. 145 (1855); New Jersey: Glenn v. Garrison. 17 N.J.L. 1 (1790).


though the statement of the finding is not now material. 65.

DECLARATION IN TROVER—ESSENTIAL

ALLEGATIONS: (3) THE DEFENDANT’S WRONGFUL ACT OF CONVERSION

103. The Declaration should allege a Conversion by the defendant to his own use, contrary to the Right of the plaintiff. A Conversion may be:

(I) By wrongfully taking and carrying away goods, or assuming a dominion over them, or otherwise depriving the owner of them,

(II) By wrongfully assuming the control, or dominion over, or right to dispose of goods, of which the actual possession has been lawfully obtained.

(III) By merely wrongfully Cetaining goods lawfully obtained. In this case, and in this case only, a demand and refusal to restore the goods are necessary before bringing the Action. A demand and refusal are not necessary to make a Conversion where the defendant has already done an Act of Conversion.

The Nature of Conversion.

A CONVERSION of the property is the gist of the Action of Trover, and is always essential to support it. It is for the conversion of the goods by the defendant to his own use, not for the act of taking them, that Damages are recoverable. For the act of taking, the remedy is Trespass.

To constitute a conversion, it is necessary that he shall have, in some sense, n,isappropriated or assumed adverse dominion over


A General Demurrer to a Petition in an Action for Conversion which avers facts showing that the plaintiff has a General or Special Property in the chattels alleged to have been converted, the right of possession thereof at the time of conversion, and that the defendant has converted the same to his own use, Is properly overruled. Wire v. Siocum, 80 Okla. 111, 104 P. 1061 (1921).

218

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 9

the goods and deprived the owner of them. 66 A conversion may take place in the following ways:

(I) By a Wrongful Taking and Carrying Away or Destruction.—The wrongful taking, it folloWed by a removal or carrying away or assumption of dominion, of the goods of another, who has the right of immediate p05session, is of itself a conversion; and so is the compelling of a party to deliver up goods, and carrying them away. The wrongdoer need not further use or dispose of the goods. It has been said that, wherever Trespass will lie for
taking goods of the plaintiff wrongfully, Trover will also lie; but this is not so. Trespass and Trover are concurrent remedies for the wrongful taking of goods where there has been a complete carrying away.\(^8\)


Trove does not lie where the plaintiff has the possession, and the defendant, who had the Legal Title, has merely asorted it by a sale, without an actual taking or delivery of possession. Massachusetts: Bubin v. Huhn, 229 Mass. 126, 118 N.E. 290, 4 At. II. 1190 (1918); Pennsylvania: Moorotievy. Seefield, 111 Pa. 554, 5 A. 732 (1886). See, also, articles by Clark, The Test of Conversion, 21 Harv.L. Rev. 408 (1908); 21 L.Q.Rev. 43 (1905); Salmond, Law of Torts, e, III, 296—308 (London 1907).


The collection of it note by one who has no interest in it is a conversion, Chiekering v. Raymond, 15 111. 362 (1854).


**but not otherwise.** A conversion is not necessary to support trespass, but it is necessary to support Trover. A mere seizure of goods by a stranger, who immediately relinquishes possession, even though there was some asportation, will support Trespass, but not Trover, for there is no conversion.\(^9\) If, by a mere seizure without a carrying away, the possession is changed in law, then there is a conversion. Trover will therefore lie where goods are wrongfully seized, as a distress, though there is no removal of them.\(^7\)

Trover lies to recover the value of goods obtained by the defendant from the plaintiff by fraud. Replevin will also lie. This in effect is the specific enforcement of the duty of the fraudulent buyer to return the goods and the corresponding right of the seller to immediate possession.\(^7\)

(II) **By a Wrongful User, or Assumption of Title**—Again, the wrongful assumption of the property in goods, or dominion over them or right of disposing of them, may be a conversion in itself, though actual possession may have been obtained lawfully, or not obJanvinr, 41 N.H. 520, 77 Am.Dec. 780 (1800); Drew v. Spaulding, 45 N.H. 472 (1864); in other words, Trover is a concurrent remedy with “Trespass do Rents Asportatis.”


The seller must, as a rule, tender to the buyer the return of whatever was paid for the goods. Willis-ton, The Law Governing Sales of Goods, at Common Law and under the Uniform Sales Act, c. 22, 567 (Rev. ed., New York 1948). Sec. 103

**ACTION OF TROVER**
tamed at all. The mere taking of an assignment of goods from a person who has no right or authority to dispose of them, has been held a conversion.

As a rule, Trover will not lie for a mere omission or nonfeasance against a person where a person intimated with the goods of another wrongfully puts them into the hands of a third person, or otherwise disposes of them, or misuses them, it is a conversion.


And Trover lies for property lawfully distrained or taken in execution, if it is used or sold without a compliance with the law as to appraisal. Tripp v. Grouner, 60 Ill. 474 (1871).

It is not essential, to a conversion, that the property be appropriated to the use of the wrongdoer. It is enough that he disposes of it or assumes to dispose of it. Mead v. Thompson, 78 Ill. 62 (1875).


But not for mere negligent loss by carrier; In this case the action should be Case or Assumpsit Moses v. Norris, 4 N.H. 304 (1828).

It lies against a person who Illegally makes use of property of which he has lawfully obtained the actual custody or possession. English: Mulgrave v. Ogden, CroEliz. 219, 78 Eng reporter. 475 (1590); Nicholson v. Chapman, 2 El., IL, 254, 126 EngSrep. 536 (1793); Richardson v. Atkinson, 5 Str. 576, 93 Eng. Rep. 710 (1723); Illinois: Johnson v. Weedman, 4 Scam. (III.) 461 (1834); Maine: Rice v. Clark, 8 VT. 109 (1836).

The action will lie against a warehouseman with whom rain has been placed merely for storage, and who has wrongfully mixed it with his own.

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

who was lawfully in the actual possession of goods, as against a carrier or other bailee who negligently loses the goods, or neglects to deliverthem, but the remedy in such cases is by Assumpsit or Case.” There is no conversion if the bailee sets up no title or claim in defiance of the owner’s right, or has not exercised a dominion inconsistent with his title.

The rule is that one tenant in common of goods cannot maintain Trover against his cotenant if the goods remain in the latter’s possession, although he refuse to permit the former to participate in the use of the article, since, in law, the possession of one is the

it as a part of its own assets, First Nat. Bank of Monmouth v. Dunbar, 19 Ill.App. 558 (1886).

Or against a carrier of liquor or his servant for an adulteration of it. flench v. Walker, 14 Mass. 500 (1780).


possession of both.” But, if one tenant in common destroy the chattel, or commit an act which is equivalent thereto, as selling or otherwise disposing of it, his cotenant may maintain Trover for the value of his share)

And In Needham v. Hill, 127 Mass. 133 (1879), It was held that, where one tenant In common of chattels so appropriates them to his own use as to render any future enjoyment of them by his cotenant im

CII. 9
Sec. 103

ACTION OF TROVER

(III) By a Wrongful Detention.—Again, the mere detention of goods, without right, may constitute a conversion. In the cases thus far dealt with, proof of the wrongful act of the defendant is sufficient to establish a conversion, without showing a demand of the goods and a refusal to restore them.

possible, the latter may maintain Trover against him. See, also, Ripley v. Davis, 15 Mich. 75, 90 Am. Dec. 262 (1866).

It has also been held that where a tenant in common of an indivisible chattel, holding possession thereof, claims sole ownership, and refuses to allow his cotenant to hold at all, the latter may maintain Trover. Bray v. Bray, 30 Mich. 479 (1874); Grove v. Wise, 39 Mich. 161 (1878).
A demand and refusal are necessary in all cases where the defendant became, in the first instance, lawfully possessed of the goods, and the plaintiff cannot show some distinct misuse or misappropriation. Thus, where goods are delivered under a contract, as to do something with them, and return them when completed, the mere omission to perform the contract is not in itself a conversion. Where a demand is merely to give an opportunity to restore the goods. If it does not, it is a conversion. In other cases, where the defendant has sold the property and the plaintiff does not have a claim to the property, the plaintiff must show that the defendant refused to deliver the property.

The demand must be made by the person who is the Owner of the Goods, General or Special, and entitled to the possession, or by his duly-authorized agent; and it must be made upon the party who, at the time, has the possession or control of the goods by himself or his agent or servant, or the general controlling power over them. Where a demand is necessary, it must be made before the action is brought. It need not be in any particular form) since its purpose is merely to give an opportunity to restore the goods. If it distinctly notifies the party who is the claimant and of the goods demanded, it is sufficient.

The demand must be made by the person who is the Owner of the Goods, General or Special, and entitled to the possession, or by his duly-authorized agent; and it must be made upon the party who, at the time, has the possession of the goods by himself or his agent or servant, or the general controlling power over them. Where a demand is necessary, it must be made before the action is brought. It need not be in any particular form) since its purpose is merely to give an opportunity to restore the goods. If it distinctly notifies the party who is the claimant and of the goods demanded, it is sufficient. It need not be made on the party.
A demand in writing left at his house is sufficient. It must be absolute in its terms, and not qualified with conditions, and it must not be excessive.

Where a demand is necessary, there must also be a refusal. Where there has been a refusal to restore the goods, it will not constitute a conversion unless the demand was properly made, as just explained, nor unless the party refusing has the power to deliver up the goods, and the circumstances are such that it is his duty to restore them. A refusal to deliver a thing upon demand is not of itself a conversion, but merely presumptive evidence of a conversion, and open to rebuttal by proof of facts which constitute a legal justification or excuse.

An unconditional refusal to restore goods will amount to a conversion, though, for some particular reason.

The Declaration must state the Damages which are the legal and natural consequence of the Conversion and the amount laid should cover the value of the goods and other actual Damages.

The amount of Damages which is recoverable in this action is usually measured by the value of the goods at the time of conversion, with interest; but the plaintiff is entitled to include also any other loss that is its legal and natural consequence, if not too remote, and the statement therefore should be large enough to cover the actual Damages inflicted.

There may be a right to detain the goods, as where the party has a lien on them. The reason for the refusal, in such a case, should be stated.

One in the possession of property may always claim a lien upon it, or he may have the right to satisfy himself, as any prudent man would do, that the party demanding it is the real owner, or the proper agent to receive it.


The general rule that the plaintiff cannot recover a larger amount than he alleges to be due in his Declaration is, of course, applicable to Trover. I. H. Pitts & Son Co. v. Bank of Shiloh, 20 Ga.App. 143, 92 SE. 775 (1917).

In Trover, without any specific ad damnum clause in the Declaration, but with a prayer that the defendant appear and answer, the amount of Damages asked for will be construed to be the alleged value of the property sued for. I. H. Pitts & Son Co. v. Bank of Shiloh, 20 Ga.App. 143, 92 SE. 775 (1917).

92. An Allegation that the Conversion was "to the great Damage" of the plaintiff, has been held sufficient [Mattingly v. Darwin, 23 Ill. 618 (1860)], though this, it would seem, could only be because the statement had been made elsewhere than in the ad damnum clause, of the value of the goods, as

The defendant may lessen the amount of the recovery by showing, in Mitigation of Damages, that the plaintiff has himself recovered the property, or that it has been restored to him and accepted; but this is matter of Defense, and the Allegation of the Declaration must still be made. As in other actions, the Form of Laying Damages will vary, depending on whether they are General or Special. The plaintiff might recover Special Damages in Trover, if they were laid in the Declaration. And the Jury might, on the Trial or Inquisition of Damages, by authority of a statute, give Damages in the nature of interest over and above the value of the goods at the time of the conversion or seizure, in an actions of Trover or Trespass de Bonis Asportatis.

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

105. While the Codes and Practice Acts have taken the labels from the various Common Law Actions, and thereafter every action became in form a Special Action on the Case, the intrinsic differences between the actions as known to the Common Law were not abolished. Hence, if a plaintiff sues, under the

some averment was certainly necessary as a basis of computation.

In general, as to Damages in this action, see Iowa:


94. 3 & 4 Win. IV, s. 42, 29; 73 Statutes at Large 280 (1883).

Koffler & Reppy Com.Law Pldg. H.S—9

224

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 9

Code, for the conversion of property, when the injury consisted of improper interference with the property of another, for which the remedy was Case, the action will still be dismissed.

THE Status of the Action of Trover under the Modern Law was clearly stated a few years after the adoption of
the New York Code in 1848, in the case of Goulet v. Asset. In that case, the plaintiff, a mortgagee of chattels which had been sold under an execution against the mortgagor, brought the action, in the nature of Trover or Trespass, on the theory that the defendant had taken, sold and converted the goods to his own use, and that plaintiff was entitled to recover the value of the goods. At the Trial, the Court instructed the Jury to assess the value of the goods, and to find a Verdict for the plaintiff for that value, subject to the opinion of the Court, with power to dismiss the Complaint. The Jury fixed the value of the property at $850.00 and the Court at General Term entered Judgment for this amount, whereupon the defendant appealed. In reversing the Judgment and granting a New Trial, SeMen, 3. declared: “Although the Code [of Procedure] has abolished all distinction be-

95. 22 N.Y. 225 (1860).

94. The advantage of an Action of Trover as opposed to an Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit for the collection of a debt, is clear. It gives or gave a right to hold to bait during the pendency of the action; and a right to imprisonment upon Execution, In addtion to the usual resort to the property of the defendant. Salt Springs National Bank v. Wheeler, 43 N.Y. 492, 5 Am.Rep. 564 (1872).

See, also, Section 6101 of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules (1963), which provides for an order for the arrest of a defendant, other than a woman, as a provisional remedy, ’where there is a cause of
tween the mere Forms of Action, and every Action is now in Form a Special Action on the Case, yet actions vary in their nature, and there are intrinsic differences between them which no law can abolish, It is impossible to make an action for a direct aggression upon the plaintiff’s rights, by taking and disposing of his property, the same thing, in substance or in principle, as an action to recover for the consequent injury resulting from an improper interference with the property of another, in which he has a contingent or prospective interest. The mere Formal Differences between such Actions are abolished; the substantial Differences remain as before. The same proof, therefore, is required in each of these Two Kinds of Actions, as before the Code, and the same rule of Damages applies. Hence, in an action in which the plaintiff establishes a right to recover, upon the ground that the defendant has wrongfully converted property to the possession of which the plaintiff was entitled at the time of the conversion, the proper measure of Damages still is, the value of the property; while in an action in which the plaintiff recovers, if at all, upon the ground that the defendant has so conducted himself in the exercise of a legal right in respect to another’s property, as unnecessarily and improperly to reduce the value of a lien, which the plaintiff could only enforce at some subsequent day, the damages must, of course, depend upon the extent to which that lien has been unpaired.”

action to recover damages for the conversion of personal property”.

See.

CHAPTER 10
THE ACTION OF EJECTMENT”

106. Scope of the Action.
107. Ejectment—Distinguishecj From and Concurrent —with Other Actions.
108. Forms of Declaration and Common Consent Rule.
109. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General.
110. Declaration in Ejectment—Essntial Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.
111. Declaration in Ejectment—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Wrongful Ouster or Dispossession.
112. Declaration in Ejeetinent—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages.
113. The Judgment in Ejectment.
114. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General.
115. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession,
116. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Ouster or Ejection.
117. Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages.


SCOPE OF THE ACTION

106. The Action of Ejectment lies to recover possession of Real Property adversely held by the defendant. In order that the Action may be maintained:

(I) The Plaintiff must have the right to possession at the time the Action commenced; prior possession is sufficient as against a mere intruder or trespasser.

(II) The plaintiff must have been dispossessed or ousted.

(III) And the defendant must be in the adverse and illegal possession of the land, actual or constructive, at the time the Action is brought.

In the absence of a Statutory Provision to the contrary, merely Nominal Damages are given for the dispossession in the Action of Ejectment proper. The Mesne Profits, during the defendant’s possession, must be recovered at Common Law in a separate Action of Trespass for Mesne Profits, or by some similar remedy, in many Jurisdictions, by Statute, Mesne Profits and other Damages may be, and in some, must be recovered in the Action of Ejectment proper.

1. In general, on the origin, history and development of the Action of Ejectment, see:

Treatises:
- Malloy, Quare Impedit, Containing an Abridgment of the Law Concerning the Patronages of Churches, the Titles of Ecclesiastical Persons, &c., and Precedents of Pleadings, &c. (London 1737); 3 Blackstone, Commentaries on the Laws of Eng. land, c. II, Ejectment, 199; (1st Am. ed., Philadelphia 2772); Gilbert, The Law and Practice of Ejectments (London 1751); Runnington, The History, Principles and Practice, Ancient and Modern, of the Legal Remedy by Ejectment, and the Resulting Action for Mesne Profits (Amer. ed. by Ballantine, New York 1800; London 1820); Wareing, The Practice of the Court of Common Pleas at Lancaster

225

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 10

THE Action of Ejectment is a Form of the Action of Trespass Quire Ckru-sum Fregit, extended to the situation where a trespasser


Articles; Wire The Plea of Jus Tertil, in Ejectment, 41 L.Q.Rev. 139 (1925); Hutchins, Equitable Eject-went, 26 Col.L.Rev. 436 (1926); Philbrick, Seisin and Possession as the Basis of Legal Title, 24 Iowa L. 11ev. 268, 299, note (1939); flargreaves, Terminology and Title in Ejectment, 36 L.Q.Rev. 376 (1940);

takes and keeps the land. At Common Law estates in land Were of two kinds—freehold and non-freehold estates. A freehold estate was a life estate or any estate above a life estate; a non-freehold estate was any estate Jess than a life estate. In legal theory, if the owner of a freehold estate was ousted from possession, he was, at the Common Law, afforded a number of remedies in the Form of some of the Ancient Real Actions, such, for example, as the Writ of Novel Disseisin, under which, if carefully selected and patiently pursued, he might recover possession and establish his Right or Title The lessee of a term, or the holder of a non-freehold estate, however, if ousted, might
recover only Damages for the wrongful ouster, but he could not regain possession of the land, nor could he, in that Form of Action, recover

Hohdsworth, Terminology and Title in Ejectment— A Reply, 56 L.Q.Rev. 479 (1940).


Annotations: Statutory Remedy of Forcible entry anti Detainer as Exclusive Remedy of Occupant Dispossessed Without Legal Process, 154 A.L.R. 181 (1945); Instructions in Ejectment on Rule that Plaintiff Must Recover on Strength of Own Title, 159 ALIt. 646 (1945); Remedy of Tenant Against Stranger Wrongfully Interfering with his Possession, 12 A.L.R.24 1192, at 1197 (1950); Mandatory Injunction to Compel Removal of Encroachments by Adjoining Landowners, 28 A.L.B.2d 679 (1953).

2. Cunningham v. Macon & B. R. R. Co., 100 U.S. 446,
3 S Ct 292, 609, 27 LEd. 992 (1853), in which Miller, 1, declared: “Ejection Is in its essentiail character an Action of Trespass, with the power in the Court to restore the possession to the plaintiff as part of the Judgment”

3. See Chapter 2, The Development of the Common Law Forms or Action, for an account of the Ancient Real Actions. 226

Sec. 106

ACTION OF EJEOTMENT 227

Damages for Mesne Profits— the subsequent rents and profits between the date of the original ouster and the date of the recovery of possession.

To provide an adequate remedy for the holder of a Non-freehold Estate, the Action known as Trespass for Ejectment was developed. But at this point, it should be pointed out that this Newly Developed Remedy was available only to the holder of a Non-freehold Estate, to wit, a tenant for years, who was regarded as having only a mere Chattel interest and not an interest in Real Estate; it was not available to vindicate the right of one who was asserting Title to a freehold interest in land. If the plaintiff desired to try Title to the land in question, he was still required to invoke one of the Ancient Real Actions, which, as we have pointed out in an earlier chapter, were highly dilatory, expensive and unduly technical.

In the fifty to a hundred years after 1499, the year in which it was held that the tenant could recover the Term as well as Damages, this New Action of Trespass for Ejectment


— These Actions, some sixty in number, arc discussed in Chapter 2, The Development of the Common Law Forms of Action.

4 “The Common Law furnished an endless number of Real Writs to determine the rights of property in, or possession of, a freehold estate. The highest technical skill and learning were requisite to comprehend and define the nature and purposes of these various writs, the distinctions between which were refined, abstruse and often scarcely perceptible. In Personal Actions, however, there were never many WRITS at Common Law. This very scarcity made personal actions attractive in early times, the pleader being seldom at a loss to know which Writ to choose; while in Real Actions the most experienced practitioner, exercising the utmost care, frequently sued out a Real Writ of the wrong degree, class or nature, thereby rendering the proceeding of no avail, and frequently Imperilling the demandant’s right to the proper writ or remedy. Not only were the distinctions between Real Writs very technical, and the selection of the proper writ a delicate task, but became such an effective instrument for trying the Right of Possession which, in substance, amounted to trying Title, that the landlords, who, in Legal Contemplation, already had an Adequate Remedy, in the Form of the Real Actions, for the recovery of Possession, began to seek ways and means whereby the New Remedy—now known as Ejectment—and open only to the holders of non—freehold estates, might be made available to the holders of freehold estates, without violating the Common-Law theory that the remedy was available solely for the use of non-freehold owners.

This end was to be accomplished by working out a scheme whereby the Action of Trespass Quare Ejectione Firmae—Trespass for Ejectment—could be adapted to the use of the owners of freehold estates without violating the fundamental theory of the action—that it was available only to the owners of non-freehold interests in land. And it was the ensuing effort which ushered on to the stage of procedural legal history the law’s most famous fiction—the Fictional Proceeding in Ejectment—which did not reach full fruition except as an incident of passing through three stages of development:
First, wherein there was no fiction whatever involved; second, where there was a resort to fiction, but wherein the steps upon which the fiction was grounded were actually true in

the proceedings under them were so conveniently long, tedious and costly, and the resources for delay so numerous, that the Judgment when obtained was a tardy and inadequate remedy.” Sedgwick and Wait, Principles and Practice Governing the Trial of Title to Land, c. I. 2, p. 3 (New York, 1882).

7. The Common Law believed in an economy of remedies. Where the Law supplied a remedy to a given group of litigants, like the owners of freehold estates, they were generally limited to that remedy. When, therefore, the New Action of Trespass for Ejectment was created, there naturally followed a period of time during which the new remedy remained unavailable to the holders of freehold estates.

229

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

1. Where the Requisite Conditions to Support Trespass Quare Ejectione Firmae were Actual.—Where A, a freeholder, actually leased I3lackacre to B, who took actual possession, and was thereafter disseised, B, the tenant, might bring an Action of Trespass for Ejectment. C, the disseisor, usually defended by asserting a Title paramount to that of A, the lessor. Thus, the merits of B’s Title under A, and C’s title, were brought into opposition and comparison, as an incident of B’s claim to a right of possession. The Judgment which followed necessarily determined who had the true Title. And by this process the landlord, through the suit of his tenant, B, against C, for interference with B’s possession, in effect avoided the necessity of instituting a Real Action.

(I) Where the Requisite Conditions to Support Trespass Quare Ejectione Firmae were Fictitious, but Grounded on True Facts,

—It was soon discovered that the same result could be achieved by resort to a fictitious proceeding which, however, in the beginning, was based on a true state of facts, The scheme devised worked substantially as follows. The Landlord, 4 desiring to try Title to land not previously under lease, recruited two friends or collaborators, 4 and B, who then made an actual Entry upon the land, subsequently to be spoken of as the Entry. Such Entry was required in order to avoid being charged with the common-law crime known as maintenance, 9 or promoting

— 4 Minor, Institutes of Common and Statute Law, Division 111, 390 (Richmond 1591—1895).


19. “It is a general rule, that no right of entry, or re-entry, can be reserved, or given to any other person, than the feefer, donor or lessor, A, and their heirs; and such right of entry cannot be assigned

lawsuits, as every lease of real estate by an owner not in possession was bound to result in some form of action. 4 A and B, now being on the land in question, L, the real disseisor, then handed an actual lease of the premises to A, hereinafter to be known as the Lessee, and then instructed B, hereinafter to be known as the Casual Ejector, to eject A, the lessee, which he proceeded to do, all of which activity was unknown to the Actual Tenant of the premises, Z. Thereafter, A, the tenant selected by L, the landlord, instituted a suit against B, his disseisor, under the scheme. Thus, the official line-up became A, ex dem. (lessee of) l, the landlord, v. B, the Casual Ejector. As B put up no Defense, Judgment was entered for A, a Writ of Execution issued against Z, the actual tenant, and A was placed in possession, after which he surrendered his lease to the landlord. The student should observe at this point that so far there has been no feigning of the facts. The plaintiff made a bona tide Entry into the land under dispute, thereafter on the land he executed an actual Lease to a real lessee, who immediately took possession, after which he was actually ejected. Thus, every element of the case was of actual occurrence.

And! thus, by this process, the landowner was able to try Title to the land in question, without violating the theory that the Action of Trespass for Ejectment was available only to the owner of a non-freehold estate, as A, the fictitious lessee, and the nominal plaintiff (the landlord was the real plaintiff, al-fact; and third, where the the fiction were assumed to three situations will now be facts supporting be true. 8 These discussed:

or transferred to another —Litt. f, 341]. This principle had its origin in the policy of the Ancient Law, to guard by all possible means
against main tense, the subversion of justice, and the oppression of the poor, by the rich and powerful. For if me’~ were allowed to grant before they obtain possession, as Lord Coke remarks, pretended titles might be granted to great men, whereby right might be trodden down, and the weak oppressed,” Stearns, *A Summary of the Law and Practice of Real Actions*, Introduction, § XII, 24 (Boston 1824).

Sec. 106

ACTION OF EJECTMENT

though not a party to the action) was, so far as the Record went, the holder of a non-freehold or leasehold estate.

It is not surprising, therefore, to find that both Court and Counsel eagerly availed themselves of the loophole thus discovered by means of which questions concerning Titles to land which ordinarily could be raised only in some one of the numerous and technical Real Actions, might now be brought and determined in a purely Personal Action, with the same results of a Real Action achieved in a simple Action of Trespass, at least so far as possession was involved. In referring to this very point, Sedgwick and Wait aptly declared: “The history of procedure nowhere presents a more curious fact than that the owners of the soil [freeholders] should have suddenly relinquished a system of remedies [the Ancient Real Actions]; which had been matured by the experience of centuries, and have consented to try Titles to the freehold in a Personal Action, originally devised to protect the precarious estates of the inferior tenantry.”

This rapid change in procedure, which began in the reign of Henry VIII (1509—1547) ultimately resulted in the obsolescence of the Real Actions, once it was realized that Ejectment was an efficient instrument for trying the right of possession, and that, in the final analysis, no title could be tried without also trying possession. There was also the additional advantage that Ejectment being a Personal Action, might be instituted in either King’s Bench or Exchequer, whereas the old *Real Actions for trying Title* could only be brought in the Court of Common Pleas. And, as in Assumpsit and Trover, now also just coming into vogue, the pleading in Ejectment was genera], with the result that there was small risk of a disastrous variance.


(III) Where the Requisite Conditions to Support Trespass Quare Ejectione Fh’mae were all Assumed to be True, but were aU

Fictitious:

(A) In General.—After it was discovered that the New Action could be utilized by the freeholders through the use of the Entry, Lease and Ouster, along about the year 1640, or shortly after the close of Queen Elizabeth’s Reign (1558—1603), it finally became clear that it was a useless formality to make an actual Entry, Lease and Ouster, so the practice grew up that these steps might be eliminated by merely alleging a Fictitious Entry, Lease, and Ouster by the Casual Ejector, This procedure was made workable by the fact that the Courts, eager to escape from the old Real Actions, overlooked the falsehood involved. As previously observed, the Casual Ejector did not defend, so that Judgment was given in favor of the Fictitious Lessee and plaintiff, who promptly sued out a Writ of Execution, under which the lessee was placed in possession, the actual tenant, Z, being dispossessed by the Sheriff.

(B) The Common Consent Rule—It is not difficult to imagine what Z, the Actual Tenant, who up to now had heard nothing of this suit, said when thus confronted with the Execution. And what he and other Z’s in a similar position said was expressed in such loud, raucous and determined tones that the Courts decided to do something about it What they did was to make a Rule of Court that no Execution should issue where the Ejector was a stranger, or not the Actual Tenant, until the adverse actual occupant— the Actual Tenant, Z—was notified of the pendency of the action, and offered an opportunity, if he so desired, to appear and defend the action in place of the Casual Ejector. This end was accomplished through the device of a note or letter from the Casual Ejector to the Actual Tenant, notifying him that he had been sued, and that if he desired to defend, he should appear and ask to be substituted as the defendant in place of the Casual Ejector.

And it was at this moment, and as a sort of condition precedent to such substitution of the Actual Tenant, that the Actual Tenant was advised by the Court that he might be permitted to defend, if he agreed to enter into the Common Consent Rule, which involved an admission of the Entry, Lease and Ouster, thus leaving the only remaining issue one of title, which was the objective of the fiction and which thus made available to the owner of a freehold estate a remedy which in legal theory was available only to the holder of a non-freehold estate. Now, the lineup of the parties reads as follows: A ex dem. (lessee) of L v. Z, the Actual Tenant. The whole process is set forth in the chart which appears below:

**CHART OF THE FICTITIOUS PROCEDURE IN EJECTMENT**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Landlord and his Two Collaborators,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The Fictitious Lessee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and the Casual Ejector B</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Blackacre, the Tract of Land, Title to Which</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>is in Issue b'y the Above Chart</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**FROM the Chart as set forth above the** student may derive an understanding of how take advantage of a remedy which, in legal Theory, was available only to the holder of a non-freehold estate, as previously explained. He may also clearly see the meaning of the phrase “the lessor of the plaintiff,” so often seen in the cases on property. Thus, a glance at the Chart will reveal that after the Fiction in Ejectment had been invoked, the lineup of the parties stood as follows: A, cx dent. L v. Z. Obviously, under this setup, the lessor of the nominal plaintiff, A, is L, the landlord, who, in reality, is the true plaintiff.

In the third place, from the Chart the student may understand the basis of the Common Law rule that a Judgment in one Action of Ejectment was never a Bar to recovery in another Action. In the case of Caperton v. Schmidt,” the rule has been explained by Sawyer, 3., who declared: “But we have seen, that the nile in all cases requires that
the matter tried must be directly, and not merely collaterally in issue, in order that the judgment shall be a Bar. And in an Action of Ejectment at Common Law the title is not directly in issue; hence the Judgment under the rule was not a bar, nor could the determination of the title be used as a matter of estoppel.”

The Classification of Ejectment
THE Action of Ejectment has been variously classified. While it was developed as and became a substitute for the Ancient Real Actions, it has never assumed the character of a Real Action. It has sometimes been classified as a Mixed Action, but it does not possess the characteristics of the Common-Law Mixed Action, except the single circumstance that it made it possible for the plaintiff to regain possession of his land. This characteristic, as Professor Keigwin aptly observes was “an adventitious and almost accidental incident of the action, tacked on long after the invention of Ejectment and resulting from extrinsic causes and an originally unforeseen development.”

It is no surprise, therefore, that most modern authorities declare that Ejectment is still a Personal Action.

Ejectment Asserts Right of Possession of Land
SINCE the abolition of the Ancient Real Actions, Ejectment has become the chief means of trying Title to lands or tenements and recovering possession thereof. It is the name now applied to the action by which the plaintiff asserts his right to possession of land, resulting either from absolute ownership or some lesser proprietary right, whereby he is entitled to enter into immediate possession of some interest in land. The action is, therefore, limited by definition to the recovery of corporeal real property; but not things which are not tangible real property. Ejectment may be brought to recover lands or things attached to the land so as to partake of the nature of realty, such as timber, growing crops and the like. Personal property and in general incorporeal hereditaments may not be recovered, as the action is limited to property the possession of which may be delivered by the sheriff.

For What Property Will Ejectment Lie to Recover?
IN consequence, Ejectment will only lie for the recovery of the possession of real property, as for lands, or buildings annexed to land,


17. Pennsylvania: Black’s Lessee v. Hepburne, 2 Yentes (Pa.) 331 (1798); Vermont: Judd v. Leonard, I D.Chip. 204 (1814).


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

upon which an entry in point of fact might be made, and of which the sheriff could deliver actual possession. It will not lie, as we have observed, to recover property which, in legal contemplation, is not tangible, as rent, or other incorporeal hereditaments, or a water course, where the land over which the water runs is not the property of the claim-

Whenever a right of entry exists, and the interest is tangible, so that Possession can be delivered, Ejectment will lie. Thus, where a grantor in a Deed reserved to himself, his heirs and assigns forever, the Right and Privilege of erecting a milldam at a Certain place, and to occupy and possess the said premises without any hindrance or molestation from the grantee or his heirs, it was held that the right reserved was such an interest in the land as would support an Action of Ejectment. Jackson v. Bud,

0 Johns. (N.Y.) 298 (1812).

The owner of the soil may maintain Ejeitment against one who appropriates a part of a highway to his own use. Wright v. Carter, 27 N.Y., 77 (1858).

The riparian owner may maintain Ejectment for land below the high water mark. Nichols v. Lewis, 15 Conn. 137 (1842).

The action lies for a room or chamber without land. Otis v. Smith, 9 Pick. (Mass.) 297 (1830).

Where a boiler, engine and stack are erected upon the land of a person at the joint expense of himself and another, under an agreement to use the same as a common source of power, without limitation as to time, the interest thus created is in the nature of real estate, for which Ejectment will lie in the case of tin ouster. Hill v. Hill, 43 Pa. 521 (1862).


Ejectment lies whenever the right of entry exists and the interest is of such a character that it can be held and enjoyed and possession thereof delivered in execution of judgment for its recovery. Walters v. Sheffield, 75 Fla. 505, 78 So. 580 (1918).

2. It will, however, lie for land covered by water, as such land may be owned, but not for tile water.


Or tenants In common may sue jointly. California:

Touchard v. Keyes, 21 Cal. 202 (1862); Kentucky:

Innis v. Crawford, 4 Bibb (Ky.) 241 (1851); Federal:

fliels v. Rogers, 4 Cranch (U.S.) 165, 2 L.Ed. 583 (1807). And one tenant In common may maintain an action against the other if he can show an oustot..
Sec. 106

**ACTION OF EJECTMENT**

an estate as entitles him to possession, but the right must also be of some duration, and exclusive.

The plaintiff, in all Cases, must recover on the strength of his own Title. He cannot found his claim upon the insufficiency of the defendant’s title, for the possession gives the defendant a right against every one who cannot show a better Title, and the party who would change the possession must, therefore, show a prior possession, or trace his Title back to some one who can be shown to have had possession, or else to some acknowledged source of Title, such as a grant from the government.

---


On the right of a lessee to maintain Ejectment before entry into possession, see Note, Lessees—Right to Possessory Action Before Entry, 2 Minn.L.Rev. 367, 370 (1918); 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. II, c. IV, Ownership and Possession, § 4, 100 (Cambridge 1895).


The right reserved to a grantor of land to erect a milldam and occupy the land for that purpose, will support Ejectment. Jackson v. Bud, 9 Johns. (N.Y.) 298 (1812).

The Action of Ejectment involves both the right of possession and the right of property. Chance v. Carter, 81 Or. 229, 158 Pac. 947 (1916).


If the defendant shows a paramount outstanding title in some third person, the action must fail. Illinois: Itupert v. N ark, 15 111. 540 (1854); Masterson v. Check, 23 Ill. 72 (1859); Holbrook v. Brenner, 31 Ill. 501 (1863); Enracht v. Flood, 52 Ill. 40 (1869); Casey v. Kimmel, 181 111. 154, 54 N.E. 605 (1890); Burns v. Carman, 275 Ill. 448, 114 N.E. 160 (1910); New York: Jackson v. Girvin, 8 Johns. (N.Y.) 137, 5 Am.Dec. 328 (1811); Pennsylvania: Hunter v. Cochran, 3 Pa. 105 (1846); Tennessee: Peak v. Carmichael, 9 Yerg. (Penn.) 325 (1836); Sissengill v. Boyles, 11 Humph. (Penn.) 112 (1850); Virginia: Atkins v. Lewis, 14 Graff. (Va.) 30 (1851).


The defendant may hold the land without any Title thereto, as his mere possession gives him a right to resist Ejectment until some one asserts and shows a better right to the property. Thus, by the weight of authority, prior possession, without any further Title, is sufficient as against a mere intruder; so that if a stranger, who has no Color of Title, should evict a person who has been in quiet possession, but who has no strict legal Title, the latter may maintain ejectmerit against him.
The plaintiff must, of course, have the right of possession at the time the action is

A party cannot recover in Ejectment on the basis of an estoppel in pais (as an estoppel of the defendant to set up a title against a title acquired by the plaintiff in reliance upon the defendant’s representations). Hayes v. Livingston, 84 Mich. 384, 22 Am.Rep. 533 (1876). Nor can the defendant set up an equitable estoppel against the plaintiff’s legal title. Illinois: Nichols v. Caldwehl, 275 111. 250 (1811); New York: Jackson v. Sisson, 2 Johns. 730 (1812); Pennsylvania: l3rolaskey v. Mclean, Oil Pa. 146 (1860). But a trustee may maintain Ejectment against his tenants and upon a showing to that effect, he may recover upon his better but Imperfect Title.28


Ch. 10

The plaintiff must, of course, have the right of possession at the time the action is

Federal: Smith v. McCann, 24 flow. (U.S.) 398, 16 Led. 714 (1861). If the defendant has the legal title, though he acquireth $t by fraud, and though the plaintiff may be equitably entitled to the land, the action cannot be maintained. The plaintiff must seek his remedy in a court of Equity. Rountree v. Little, 54 Ill. 323 (1870); Dyer v. Day, 61 Ill. 336 (1871); Union Brewing Co. v. Meier, 103 III. 427, 45 N.E. 264 (1896).
But, where trustees ought to convey to the beneficial owner, it will, after a lapse of many years, and under certain circumstances, be left to the jury to presume that they have conveyed accordingly; so where the beneficial occupation of an estate by the possessor under an equitable title induces a fair presumption that there has been a conveyance of the legal estate to such possessor. But, when the facts of the case preclude such presumption, the party having only the equitable interest cannot prevail in a Court of Law. 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties in Actions with Precedents and Fornas, c. II. Of the Forms of Action, 212 (16th Am. ed. by reianger, springfield 1876); English: England en 4cm. Syburn v. Lisle, 3 T.R. 47 (1778); New York: Ogden v. Steele, 3 Ham. (N.Y.) 404 (1829); Connecticut: Landon v. Pearson, 5 Black, 548 (1850);

Against Whom Will the Action Lie?

EJECTMENT will only lie for what, in fact, or in legal consideration, amounted to a dispossession or ouster of the plaintiff's lessor, that is, the landlord of the plaintiff, the fictitious lessee, or of the plaintiff; 30

If a cc-stui qua trust is legally entitled to the possession as against the trustee, he may maintain Ejectment. Kennedy v. Fury, 1 Dall. (Pa.) 72, 1 L.Ed. 42 (1783); Presbyterian Congregation v. Johnston, 1 Watts & S. & (Pa.) 9 (1841); Calhoun v. Lowden, 3 Brewst. (Pa.) 63 (1868).


31. On the effect of Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court on an equitable title as a factor in the Action of Ejectment, see Section 118 of this Chapter.

32. 3 Blackstone, Commentaries on the Laws of England, e. XI, Of Dispossession, or Ouster of Chattels Real, 199 (7th Ed., Oxford 1779); 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties in Actions with Precedents and Forms, e. 11, Of the Forms of Action, 213 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1876); Louisiana: Deuchatell v. Robinson, 24 La. Ann. 176 (1820); New York: Garnsey v. Pike, 9 Cow. (N.Y.) 69 (1828). Wrongful detention, after a lawful entry, may amount to an ouster, as where a tenant holds over after his term has expired, and refuses to quit possession.

and further than this the defendant must be in the adverse and illegal possession of the land at the time the action is brought. 33


The mere receipt of all profits by one tenant in common of land does not amount to an ouster, entitling his cotenant to maintain Ejectment. I Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties in Actions with Precedents and Forms, e. II, Of the Forms of Action, 214 (10th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1870).

If the possession of one tenant in common is not adverse to the other’s right, the latter cannot maintain the action. Gower & Quinlan, 40 Mich. 572 (1879).

But if a tenant in common excludes his cotenant, and refuses to let him occupy the land, it is otherwise. Coke, Upon Littleton 11D (Philadelphia 1853); 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties in Actions with Precedents and Forms, c. II, 214 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1876); California: Lawrence v. Ballou, 37 Cal. 518 (1868); Illinois: Lundy v. Lundy, 131 Ill. 138, 23 N.E. 337 (1893); New York: Valentine v. Northrop, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 494 (1834); Shaver v. McGraw, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 558 (1834); Pennsylvania: Cumberland Valley U. Co. v. McLanahan, 59 Pa. 23 (1863); Federal: Ilnarita v. Casey, 7 Cranch (U.S.) 456, 3 L.Ed. 403 (1813).
English: Right en dem Lewis v. Board, 13 East
210, 104 Eng.Rep. 359 (1811); Goodright en dem,
Raleb v. Rich, 7 P.R. 327, 101 Eng.Rep. 1001 (1797);
Illinois: Reed v. Tyler, 56 Ill. 288 (1850); Whitford
v. Drexel, 118 Ill. 600, 9 N.E. 208 (1886); Michigan:
Lockwood v. Drake, 1 Mich. 14 (18-17) ; White v.
178 (1883); Mississippi: Wallis v. Doe en dem.,
Smith’s Heirs, 2 Smedes & Har. (Miss.) 220 (1844)
Smith v. Doe en dem., Walker, 10 Smedes & M.
(Miss.) 584 (1848); New York: Kibbb v. Downing, 25 Pa. 399 (1855);
Banyer v. Empie, 5 Hill. (N.Y.) 48 (1813);
McIntire v. Wing,
113 Pa. 67, 4 Atl. 197 (1886); Vermont; Cooley v.
Penfield, 1 Vit. 244 (1828).

It was held, for instance, that a landlord in possessiot could not maintain the action to bar the right of his absconding lessee. Jackson en Oem.
Clowes v. Rakes, 2 Caines (N.Y.) 335 (1805).

An actual possession by the defendant is not necessary. It is sufficient if he has a deed for the premises, which has been recorded, and claims to
have purchased them. Michigan: Anderson v. Court-right, 47 Mich, 161, 10 N.W. 183 (1881); Heinmüller v. Hatheway, 60 Mich. 391, 27 NW.
558 (1888); New
York: Banyer v. Empie, 5 Hill. (N.Y.) 48 (1813);
Vermont: McDaniels v. Reed, 17 Vit. 674 (1845).

Sec. 106 ACTION OF EJECTMENT

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

If there has been no Ouster, or the defendant is not thus in possession when the action commenced, the action must fail. Trespass, not Ejectment, would be the proper remedy in such case.

EJECTMENT.—DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

107. Strictly speaking, Ejectment is to be distinguished from the Writs of Right to Try Title among the old Real Actions, and from Trespass to Try Title; and it was concurrent with trespass in its early stages of development and with the Writ of Entry.

THE Action of EjeCtment, in theory, was designed to try the right of possession, and is to be distinguished from the Writs of Right, which, in legal theory, were designed to try Property Rights or Title. These Ancient Real Actions, however, were finally abolished, and Ejectment was substituted in lieu thereof, as it was found as a practicable matter that you could not Try Title without trying the Right to Possession. The Action is also to be distinguished from Trespass to Try Title, which prevailed in a few Southern States, and which, in those states, was a substitute for Ejectment, but, unlike Ejectment, could be maintained on an Equitable Title. Ejectment was, of course, concurrent with Trespass, in its early stages of development, as it grew out of Trespass. And, in the sense that it lay wherever the plaintiff had a Right of Entry, it was also concurrent with the Writ of Entry.

FORMS OF DECLARATION AND COMMON CONSENT RULE

105. This section includes Forms of a Declaration in Eject-tent, and of the Common Consent Rule in Ejectment.

DECLARATION IN EJECTMENT

IN THE QUEEN’S BENCH, [OR. “COM
MON PLEAS”] Term, in the __
year of the reign of Queen Victoria.
to wit, Richard Roe was attached
to answer John Doe of a plea of trespass and ejectment &c. and thereupon the said John Doe by his attorney,
complains against the said Richard Roe, that whereas one AS., heretofore, to wit, on the ___thy of ___in the year of
our Lord __ in the parish of ___ in the county of
had demised unto the said John Doe
messuages, cottages,
barns, stables, coachhouses, outhouses, yards, gardens, orchards, acres of arable land, acres of meadow land, acres of pasture land, acres of woodland, acres of land covered with water, and ____ acres of other land, with the appurtenances, situate and being in the said parish of in the ccamty afore said, to have and to hold the same to the said John Doe and his assigns thenceforth for the term of fourteen years [a sufficient number of years to extend beyond the time within which judgment can be obtained,] thence next ensuing and fully to be completed and ended; by virtue of which said demise, the said John Doe entered into the said tenements with the appurtenances, and became and was possessed thereof for the said term so to him thereof granted; and the said John Doe being so thereof possessed, the said Richard Roe afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, [or, on the day of

in the year aforesaid,] with force and arms, &c. entered into the said tenements with the appurtenances in which the said John Doe was so interested, in manner, and for the term aforesaid, which is not yet expired, and ejected the said John Doe from his said farm, and other wrongs to the said John Doe then and there did, to the great damage of the said John Doe and against the peace of our lady the queen; Wherefore

Actions, c. I, Of the Proceedings in an Action, from its Commencement to its TerminatIon, 27 (Williston ed, Cambridge, 1805).

For another Form of Declaration, see Stephen, A Wreatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil

Sec. 109

ACTION OF EJECTMENT

the said John Doe saith he is injured and hath sustained damage to the value of £100, and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

2 Chitty, Pleading, p. 875 (Springfield, 1859).

Form of Common Consent Rule IN EJECTMENT

Hilary Term, the twenty-ninth year of King George the Second.
iT is ordered by the court, by the assent of both parties, and their attornies, that George Saunders, gentleman, may be made defendant in the place of the now defendant William Stiles, and shall immediately appear to the plaintiff’s action, and shall receive a declaration in a plea of trespass and ejectment of the tenements in question, and shall immediately plead thereto, not guilty: and, upon the trial of the issue, shall confess lease, entry, and ouster, and insist upon his title only. And if, upon trial of the issue, the said George Saunders do not confess lease, entry, and ouster, and by reason thereof the plaintiff cannot prosecute his writ, then the taxation of costs upon such non-pros, shall cease, and the said George Saunders shall pay such costs to the plaintiff, as by the court of our lord the kind here shall be taxed and adjudged for such his default in non-performance of this rule; and judgment shall be entered against the said William Stiles, now the casual ejector, by default. And it is further ordered, that, if upon trial of the said issue a verdict shall be given for the defendant, or if the plaintiff shall not prosecute his writ, upon any other cause than for the not confessing lease, entry and ouster, as aforesaid, then the lessor of the plaintiff shall pay costs, if the plaintiff himself doth not pay them.

By the court.


DECLARATION IN EJECTMENT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (I) IN GENERAL

109, The Essential Allegations in the Declaration in Ejectment are:

(I) The Title of the plaintiff to certain Land
(II) The wrongful Ouster or Dispossess sion
(III) The Damages

The Fiction by which Ejectment was extended from a remedy for Non-Freehold Tenants to Freeholders has in general been abolished. Today, the suit is usually brought by the real plaintiff against a defendant who is the Actual Occupant.

All Declarations in Ejectment must describe the premises demanded with certainty and precision.

THE fictions by which the Action of Ejectment was extended from a remedy for a lessee to all claimants, involved alleging in the declaration: (1) A Lease from the real plaintiff to the nominal plaintiff, John Doe; (2) The Entry by the nominal plaintiff wider the Lease; and (3) The Ouster of the nominal plaintiff by the nominal defendant (the Casual Ejector, Richard Roe) during the term of the lease. This childish mummerly is now generally discarded.

Description of Premises

As the recovery of a specific tract or tracts of land is the main object of this action, the Declaration must describe the premises demanded with certainty and precision, so as to clearly identify them, not only in order that it may be seen that the property demanded is the same as that with reference to which evidence is introduced, but also in order that possession may be delivered to the plaintiff or demandant if he succeeds in establishing his right.35


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 10

DECLARATION IN EJECTMENT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) THE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

110. The Declaration in Ejectment must describe the premises in question, and state the Title. It should also allege a Right of Entry in the plaintiff at the time the action is brought.

The Plaintiff’s Right

As we have shown above, the plaintiff, to maintain Ejectment, must have a Legal Right to possession at the time the action is commenced, though prior peaceable possession, without further Title, may be sufficient as against a mere intruder or trespasser, The Declaration must, of course, show such a Title and Right, or it will fail to state a good cause of action. It is sufficient under some statutory forms to allege that plaintiff was owner and possessed of the premises sued for, describing them as in a deed of conveyance.36

DECLARATION IN EJECTMENT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (3) THE WRONGFUL OUSTER OR DISPOSSESSION

111. The Declaration should state an Ouster or Dispossession of the plaintiff, in fact or in law, and an actual, adverse possession by the defendant.

The Action of Ejectment, as we have seen, is only proper where there has been

36. Alabama: flush v. Clover, 47 Ala. 167 (1872); Jackson v. Tribble, 156 Ala. 480, 47 So. 310 (1908); Ala.Code 1907, § 3830; Georgia: Dugas v. Hammond, 130 Ga. 87, 60 SE. 268 (1908); Illinois: Parr v. Van Horn, 38 111. 226 (1865); Holt v. Bees, 44 Ill. 30 (1867), holding that the Allegation of Possession will be supported by proof of a Legal Right to Possession; Almond v. Bonnell, 76 Ill. 538 (1875); flink-Orson v.
what amounts, in point of fact or in point of law, to an ouster or dispossession of the person having the Right of Entry upon the premises in question. As we have also seen, the Ouster need not be by an actual turning out of the plaintiff. It may be, for instance, merely a holding over by a tenant after the expiration of his term. It is also generally essential that the defendant shall be in actual possession when suit is brought, and that such possession shall be adverse. These requirements may not exist in all the states, for the scope of this action has been enlarged in some of them by statute, The Declaration must, in all cases, show such an Ouster or Dispossession, and such adverse possession or claim, as is necessary in the particular jurisdiction to a maintenance of the action.37

DECLARATION IN EJECTMENT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (4) THE DAMAGES

112. The Declaration should also state the Damages caused by the dispossession of the plaintiff, though their recovery is not the main object of the Action. They are usually, at Common Law, Nominal only. If the Action, as in some states, includes the recovery of Mesne Profits, the Damages must also include such profits, and should be laid high enough to cover both the Full Amount of Such Profits and the Damages for the injury-

WHILE at Common Law the Damages recoverable in this action were, and in some states still are, only those caused by the dispossession or ouster, and the amount would, therefore, be generally only a nominal sum, in most the plaintiff is also allowed to recover the Mesne Profits, or those which the defendant has received during his adverse possession; and in such case the Damages alleged must include a sum sufficient to cover these.38 At Common Law, and when the above privilege is not allowed, as the right of possession only is the subject of controversy, the Damages in Ejectment are merely nominal, and a nominal amount only need be stated.38

THE JUDGMENT IN EJECTMENT

113. At Common Law a Judgment in an Action of Ejectment was never a Bar to another action, as the real plaintiff, the Landlord, although mentioned in the title of the action, was not, in reality, a party to the action, and hence was not bound thereby. With the abolition of the Fiction in Ejectment, the action is now directed against the Actual Occupant, as opposed to the Fictitious Lessee, hence a Judgment is now binding and may be pleaded under the doctrine of res judicata.

AS explained earlier, because the landlord, who was mentioned in the Title of a case in Ejectment, was not in reality a party to the action, the Judgment in Ejectment at Common Law was not conclusive, and hence could not be invoked under the doctrine of res judicata. The judgment, for the same reason, was not even conclusive as between the same parties or as to the same land, as the defeated landlord, not being a party to the action, was free to seek two new collaborators, and thus start litigation all over again. This situation created so much dissatisfaction that in the early part of the Eighteenth Century, after the plaintiff had been defeated in several

37 Rhode Island: Whipple v. McGlinn, 18 B.J. 55, 25 A. 652 (1892), holding that detention by the defendant must be alleged; South Carolina: Guerard v. Jenkins, 80 S.C. 223, 61 So. 258 (1908).
38 Alabama: Scott v. Colson, 156 Ala. 450, 47 So. 60 (1908); Lyons v. Stickney, 170 Ala. 134, 54 So. 496 (1911); Florida: Norman v. Beekman, 58 Fla. 325, Sec. 114

ACTION OF EJECTMENT
Rhode Island: Berresboff v. Tripp, 15 11.1, 02, 23 A. 104 (1885); West Virginia: Croston v. McVicker, 76 W.Va. 461, 85 SE. 710 (1915).


In suits, the Court of Chancery intervened to enjoin the plaintiff from prosecuting further actions. This same early practice was sometimes the cause of what was known as Equitable Bills of Peace. Under modern statutes abolishing the Fiction in Ejectment, the action is now directed in the names of the actual parties, hence the Judgment carries the same conclusiveness and finality as any other Judgment and, of course, may be pleaded under the doctrine of rca judicata.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(1) IN GENERAL

114. In the Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits, the Essential Allegations are:

(I) The Tithe of the Plaintiff

(II) The Ouster or Ejectment

(III) The Damages

EVERY wrongful Ejectment includes a Trespass, as Ejectment was created by extending the Action of Trespass to protect the interests of the non-freeholders or tenants. It follows, therefore, that one who recovers land from which he has been ousted is not only entitled to recover Damages for the original act of dispossession, but he is also entitled to recover Damages for the time the disseisor continued in occupation of the premises and for the wrongful withholding thereof. This act of withholding was, however, not a Trespass, though tortious. As Saimond remarks: “To remain wrongfully in possession of land is not, as we have seen, a trespass, although the act of first entering upon the land was a trespass.” In consequence, the profits realized from the land by the wrongdoer during the period of wrongful retention of the property, were not recoverable in the Action of Ejectment; only Damages for the wrongful Ouster, the amount being merely nominal, and not sufficient to compensate the plaintiff for the long period of occupation by the wrongdoer, extending from the date of the original disseisin until the time of recovery of possession. In order to place himself in a legal position to recover the profits acquired by the wrongdoer, the plaintiff was required to regain possession by a lawful Re-Entry, or by a Judgment in the Action of Ejectment. Having recovered possession, the owner was, by a Legal Fiction, presumed to have been in possession throughout the intervening period. Upon this presumed possession, the plaintiff may then bring an Action for Mesne Profits against the person who was the defendant in the Action of Ejectment. In this action, the wrongful occupation may be alleged as a continuing Trespass which entitles the owner, now restored to possession, to all the profits made during the period of his ouster. These profits included crops, rents, or other assets taken from the land during the period of disseisin, as well as other Damages due for injury to the property.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS
PROFITS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:
(2) THE PLAINTIFFS RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

115. The Declaration in Trespass for Mesne Profits must describe the premises from which the profits arose, and the title of the plaintiff thereto, as well as the value of the profits themselves, and their receipt by the defendant.

IT is obvious from the nature of this action that the plaintiff must expressly state and describe the different parcels of land

45. Illinois: Smith v. Wenderlich, 70 111. 426 (1873);
     New York: Dewey v. Osborn, 4 Cow. (N.Y.) 321 (1825); Pennsylvania: King v. Laker, 25 Pa. 186 (1855),

from which the profits arose, as the defendant might otherwise compel him to make what is called a New Assignment, or restatement of the grounds of his action, by pleading “iiberwrt tenementum” or the common bar. As it is a separate action from the prior Action of Ejectment, the plaintiff’s title to the premises should also appear, as well as the value of the Mesne Profits accrued, and their receipt by the defendant during the period of the Ejectment. All these facts are stated in a general and summary manner, as in other Forms of Trespass, save that the description of the premises must be such as to identify them, and the value of the Mesne Profits which the defendant is alleged to have received must be correctly alleged. The pleader will here avoid confusion by noting that while this action may be between those only who were parties to the prior Action of Ejectment, and while in such cases the Judgment in that Action will be Conclusive Proof of the plaintiff’s Possessory Title, and of the Entry and Possession of the defendant, the suit may also be for the recovery of Mesne Profits for an occupancy antecedent to the time for which the plaintiff’s Title has been actually established, or the Action may be brought against a precedent occupier, in which cases the Record would not be admissible, and the plaintif would be compelled to prove his Title as in any action.49 The action, therefore, so far as the pleadings are concerned, must be separate and independent, as if no prior adjudication had been made.

47. Ibid.

Sec. 118

ACTION OF EJECTMENT

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(3) THE OUSTER OR EJECTMENT

116. The Declaration must also state the Entry and Ouster or Ejectment by the defendant, and the time during which the latter continued.

FOR the same reasons as those above given regarding the particularity of statement necessary in showing the plaintiff’s right, the Declaration must also contain a Formal Allegation that at a certain time the defendant
wrongfully entered upon the premises in question, and ejected the plaintiff therefrom, and the length of time such dispossession continued; so and this statement of the injury should also include an Allegation of Waste or other injury to the property committed by the defendant during that period, as the plaintiff will be allowed to include such Damage in his recovery.

DECLARATION IN TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(4) THE DAMAGES

117. The Declaration must also state the Damages resulting from the wrongful dispossession, which, in this Action, are generally the value of the Mesne Profits received by the defendant.

WE have before seen that the Damages in the Common-Law Action of Ejectment are Nominal, only. In this Action for Mesne Profits, the recovery of the profits themselves, or rather their value, is the object of the action, and not the enforcement of the possessory right. The Damages to be stated, therefore, are the value of such profits during the period of dispossession; but the plaintiff may add to this, if specially alleged as part of his claim, the Damage resulting from any injury done to the premises in con


52. And this case is also an instance within the general rules that the recovery cannot exceed the Damages laid.

STATUS OF EJECTMENT AND TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

118. Under certain Modern Codes and Practice Acts the Plaintiff may recover mesne profits in his action to recover possession of real property, thereby in effect permitting a combination of what at the Common Law were the separate actions of Ejectment and Trespass for mesne profits.

Ejectment

(I) In England.—In the form and scope, as outlined above, the Action of Ejectment continued down to modern times, superseding practically all the Ancient Real Actions known to the Common Law. By the Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 27, § 36 (1833), the Real Actions were abolished, Ejectment, under Section 36 being one of Four Actions excepted. The Statute provided that no descent cast, discontinuance, or warranty shall hereafter defeat any Right of Entry or Action for the recovery of any lands, and this enactment, in effect, converted all Titles into Possessory Titles, and thus made the remedy by Ejectment of universal application, and, in this Form, it remained unchanged until 1852.

(A) The Common Law Procedure Acts of 1852, 1854 and 1860.—Under the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852 ~ and the Amendatory Acts of 1854” and 1860, the


53. 15 & 16 Viet. e. 76, 92 Statutes at Large 285 (1852).

54. 17 & IS Viet. e. 125, 94 Statutes at Large 794 (1854).
OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Cli. 10

Common Law Action of Ejectment, as developed by the Courts, having escaped the abolishing effects of 3 & 4 Was. IV, c 27 (1833), underwent material change, which had the effect of abolishing the fictitious proceeding in Ejectment and of reforming and simplifying its procedure. Pleadings of all kinds were abolished and thereafter the action was commenced by a Judicial Writ directed to the person in possession and to all persons entitled to defend the possession of the property claimed and described in the Writ, commanding them to appear and defend the possession of the property sued for, or such part thereof as they may deem fit, and notifying them that in default of appearance they would be turned out of possession. If the defendants failed to appear, or appeared for the purpose of defending only a part of the property, the plaintiff was entitled to a Judgment of Recovery of all or part of the land sued for, as the case might be. As appearance itself constituted a Defense to the Writ, the Court then made up an issue between the one who claimed possession in the Writ and the parties appearing to defend their possession. Such issue, thus formulated, was then tried according to the general principles which the Common Law had developed for the governing of the former Action of Ejectment. It was assumed that these three Reforming Acts authorized the use of Equitable Defenses, but the Courts in construing them held that such Defenses were not available, as the Pleadings had been abolished.

(B) The Supreme Court of Judicature Act of 1873.—In this Form the Action continued down to the Supreme Court of Judicature Act of 1873. Under this Act the Superior Courts of Law and the Courts of Chancery were consolidated into the High Court of Justice, with five divisions, and thereafter the Action of Ejectment, and all other actions, were commenced by a Judicial Writ of Summons, upon which the plaintiff endorsed a Statement of his Claim, together with the relief asked for, to which the defendant made a Statement of his Defense. The pleadings were governed by Rules of Court under General Orders issued in 1833. By Rule 21 under Order XXI, a defendant in possession was excused from pleading his Title unless his Defense depended upon an equitable estate or right, or unless he asked for relief on equitable grounds. Under the influence and effect of the foregoing statutory changes, extending from 1833 until now, in England, Ejectment has lost its name and many of its distinctive features, but even today, the principles underlying the Action of Ejectment still govern where an Action is brought for the recovery of land.

(II) In the United States.—The Action of Ejectment, as developed at Common Law, and prior to the modern statutory changes in England, was generally adopted in the Several States of the United States. Some idea as to the extent of its acceptance can be seen in Tyler’s excellent work on Ejectment, the particulars of which cannot be included here, In most states the Fictitious Proceeding in Ejectment has been wholly abolished, and such statutes usually provide that the action shall be brought in the name of the Real Claimant out of possession against the Actual Tenant or occupant of the land. With the old Fictitious Allegations swept away, the Action has been converted into a simple and direct remedy for the assertion of Title to real property held adversely, and for the recovery of its possession. Thus, for example, in the State of Illinois, the Action of Ejectment was expressly retained by the Statute, but Section 8 of the same statute provided that “The use of fictitious names of

It 36 & 37 Victoria, c. 66, 8 Law Reports 306 (1873).
Sec. 118

ACTION OF EJECTMENT

plaintiffs or defendants, and the names of any other than the Real Claimants and the Real Defendants, and the Statements of any Lease or Demise to the plaintiff, and of an
Ejectment by a Casual or Nominal Ejector, are hereby abolished.” And the same was true in Michigan and other states. 59

In those states where a Statutory Form of Ejectment was adopted, as in Illinois, Michigan and New York, while the name was retained, the Mode of Procedure, and the circumstances under which it would lie, were prescribed. 60 It still remains true, however, that the rules and principles which for centuries were applicable to and developed by the old Common Law Action of Ejectment are, for most part, equally applicable to its Modern Statutory Counterpart, which, alter all, is merely an evolutionary development of its ancestor.

The situation was modified in most of the Code States, in most of which it was provided that a defendant might Plead as many Several Defenses as he had, whether Consistent or Inconsistent, or whether denominted Legal or Equitable. In such states a defendant may offer Proof of an Equitable Title against a Legal Title shown by a plaintiff in an Action of Ejectment. And the same provision also prevails even in some states which failed to adopt the Code Form of Procedure.

Trespass for Mesne Profits

ORIGINALLY, the Action of Ejectment was an action for the recovery of Damages, not for recovery of the premises, and at that time the Mesne Profits were the measure of the Damages. But when it became established that the premises was recovered in an Action of Ejectment, the Damages in the action were limited to Nominal Damages. And this was the development which created the necessity of what came to be known as the Action of Trespass for Mesne Profits. 61

In some states this Form of Action is still the proper remedy. In certain states, however, by statute, the plaintiff was required to recover for Mesne Profits in the original action to recover the premises, 62 whereas, in others, the provision was not mandatory. 63 An example of this type of statute, changing the Common Law Rule, may be found in Section 601 of the New York Real Property Actions and Proceedings Law, 1968, which contains the following provisions: “In an action to recover the possession of real property, the plaintiff may recover damages for withholding the property, including the rents and profits or the value of the use and occupation of the property for a term not exceeding six years; but the damages shall not include the value of the use of any improvements made by the defendant or those under whom he claims.”


63. 2 N.J.Comp.5t., 1910, p. 2063, 45; Va,Code, 1919, § 5481.

Sec.

CHAPTER 11

THE ACTION OF DETINUE

119. Scope of the Action.
120. Detinue—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions.
121. Forms of Declaration and Judgment in Detinue.
122. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General,
123. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.
124. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:
The Unlawful Detention.

125. Declaration in Detinue—Essential Allegations:

(4) The Damages.

126. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

SCOPE OF THE ACTION

119. The Action of Detinue lies where it is sought to recover, not Damages for the taking or detention of a personal chattel, but the chattel itself, with Damages for its detention. The Judgment awards either recovery of the chattel itself, or its value, with Damages for its detention. To maintain the action—

(I) The chattel must be specific and capable of identification;

(II) The plaintiff must have either a General or Special Property in the chattel, or the Right to Immediate Possession;

(III) The defendant must be in the Actual Possession of the chattel at the time of Commencing Suit.

THE action of Detinue is the only remedy by suit at common law for the recovery of personal property in specie, except in those cases where the party can maintain Replevin.² In Trespass or Prover for wrongfully taking or detaining goods, or in Assumpsit for not delivering them, Damages only, and not the Specific Property, can be recovered. It seems that the action was originally deemed an action ex contractu, but now the wrongful detention of the goods is considered the Gist of the Action. The action lies without regard to any bailment or contract, and even though the defendant may have wrongfully obtained possession in the first instance; and it is therefore more properly classed with Actions ex delicto, or with Proprietary Actions.³

(3) The Unlawful Detention.

(4) The Damages.

West Virginia: Young v. Edwards, 64 W.Va. 67, 60 SE. 992 (1908).

Ca’ contraetu or sa’ deticto form of action.

The right to join debt with detinue, I Saunders, The Law of Pleading and Evidence in Civil Actions. Detinue, 502 (434) (Philadelphia 1831), and to sue in detinue for not delivering the goods in pursuance of the terms of a bailment to the defendant, it is argued, seems to afford ground for considering it rather as a contract than as a tort action.

On the other hand, since detinue lies, although the defendant wrongfully became the possessor thereof (of goods), in the first instance, without relation to any contract, it has recently been considered as a tort. The gist of the action is the wrongful detainer, and not the breach of the contract. Gledstone v. Hewitt, 1 Cromp. & 1 565, 148 Eng.Rep. 1548 (1831); Wilkinson v. Verity, LII. C OP. 206 (1871); Bryant v. Herbert, 3 O.P.D. 389, 390, 391 (1878); Gossert v. Morrow, 187 Ala. 387, 65 So. 826 (1914); 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, Bk. II, c. IV, Ownership and Possession, 175, 170 (Cambridge 1895); Marlin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, a III, Personal Actions, Ex Delicto, Art. II, Detinue, ~ 81—85, p. 75 (St. Paul 1905).

McKelvry, in his short work on Principles of Common-Law Pleading, e. II, § 18, 11 (New York 1804), in discussing the problem of the proper classification of detinue, declares: “In detinue this feature is not quite so apparent; in fact, the tendency has been to class the action with that of Trover, and to treat the detaining in the former action as a tortious act similar to the coveting in the latter.

The Action of Detinue was for a long period the proper remedy of the bailor and

special or acquired right. For, while it is true that one person has the natural right not to have his property interfered with by another, and that wrongful detention is an interference which would be a violation of this right, yet, viewed in this light, the wrongful act furnishes ground for an action of Trover, and not Detinue. [Kettle v. Bromsall, Willes 120, 125 Eng.Rep. 1087 (1738), where the distinction is noticed, and it is held that Trover and Detinue cannot be joined.]

“The same act may furnish grounds for an action of Detinue, but not unless it is viewed in another light, namely, as a detention of property which the defendant is under an obligation to deliver to the plaintiff, or in other words, a failure to perform a special obligation, a violation of a special right, which the plaintiff has acquired not by reason of his simple ownership of the property, but by reason of the fact that there is a special relation between himself and the defendant, such as a bailment, and that owning or having the general right to the property which is lawfully in defendants possession, he has asserted that right in such a way—a g., by demand—as to acquire a special right to the immediate possession of the property, and to put upon the defendant a special obligation to deliver it to him. It has already been seen that the judgment in the action of Detinue is for the recovery of the property or its value in the alternative. The special obligation to deliver the property, similar to an obligation based on a promise and arising because of the special relation of the parties, is thus recognized and enforced. In fact, the action of Detinue has been brought upon a contract to deliver a specific chattel. [Fitraherbert, Natura Breviuni, p. 138]. It seems clear, therefore, that Detinue is properly classed with the actions of Debt, Covenant, and Assumpsit. [These forms of action are generally distinguished by the term actions C oontroct", as distinguished from the actions known as Ca delictu, on the theory that the former are brought upon contract and the latter for a tort or wrong. The terms, however, are not strictly applicable, as the idea of contract in its usually understood sense does not necessarily enter into the action of Debt or that of Detinue, both of said actions many times being founded upon obligations arising from special relations between the parties other than contractual. Further, to say that an action is for a wrong, does not distinguish it, as every action is for a wrong. The writer submits that the true basis of the distinction which undoubtedly does exist, is that the one class of actions is for wrongs which are violations of original or natural rights,—rights which belong to one person as against all others; while the other class is for wrongs which are y

“It is conceived that the true theory of the action of detinue is that the detention is the violation of a

246

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 11

was chiefly used in the field of bailment. When an owner bails or delivers a thing to another for any purpose, he has an action against the bailee for the return of the goods; but whether the action was based upon ownership or upon contract was a distinct—tion not clearly drawn or perceived. Gradually the claim for a Specific Chattel was distinguished from a Debt or Claim for a Certain Quantity of Money, or of Corn or the Like. Roughly, this distinction may seem to correspond with that between contractual and proprietary rights.

Detinue in its modern form (theory) has come to be what we may term a Proprietary Action, a remedy to enforce a right of prop—erty. It carries into effect the right to the immediate possession of a particular thing. The restitution of the goods themselves wrongfully withheld makes it necessary, in this action of Detinue, to ascertain the thing detained, in such manner that it may be specifically known and recovered. Therefore it cannot be brought for money, corn, or the like; for that cannot be known from other money or corn, unless it be in a bag or sack, for then it may be distinguishably marked, and unless the property is specified the duty enforced would be a mere debt or obligation.

latios of special or acquired rights,—rights which one person has against some other particular person or persons who have come into some special relation with him.”
It was formerly urged by such a distinguished scholar as Dean Ames, that detinue originated out of the contract of bailment under which the defendant bailee was forced to deliver up specific chattels. Thereafter, the scope of the action was extended, so that it ceased to be based on a personal obligatio and became based on a property right and wrongful detention. The view of Dean Ames has been brought in serious question by Professor F. foot, in his excellent recent work on The History and sources of the Common Law, c. 2, Detinue, 24-43 (London 1949).


There was a most serious imperfection in the remedy of Detinue, even where it existed. Its Judgment was Conditional—that the plaintiff should recover from the defendant the said goods, or (if they cannot be had) their Value and the Damages for detaining them. This left to the defendant the choice between delivering up the thing and paying a sum of money, and if he would do neither the one nor the other, then goods of his were seized and sold, and the plaintiff in the end had to take money instead of the thing that he demanded. 6

In modern times this defect has been cured, so that a plaintiff who recovers in Detinue gets a Judgment for the specific delivery of the chattel detained. The action may now be used concurrently with Replevin, Trover, and Trespass de bonis asportatis, in all cases of the wrongful detention of chattels, regardless of whether the defendant originally acquired possession lawfully by bailment or by theft.

For What Property

DETINUE lies for the recovery of a Specific Chattel only, and not for the recovery of fixtures, or other real property. The goods for which it is brought must be distinguishable from other property, and their identity ascertainable by some certain means. It lies to recover any chattel that is

4. ICirkiand v. Pileher, 174 Ala. 170, 57 So. 46 (1911). This was changed under Section 78 of the Common-Law Procedure Act of 1852, 17 & 18 Vict. e, 125.

5. English: Coupledike v. coupledike, Cro,Jac, 39, 79 Engelrep. 31 (1605); West Virginia: McFadden V. Crawford, 36 W.Va, 671, 15 SE. 408, 32 Asn.St.nep.

so identified that it may be recovered in specie. The chattel, of course, must be in existence. The action cannot be maintained in case of its destruction before suit is brought. 5 But if the chattel is destroyed after suit is commenced defendant will not be relieved from liability. 7

DETINUE—Distingished FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

120. Once Detinue was differentiated from Debt, it was distinguishable from that action as being for the recovery of specific chattels as contrasted to money; it was distinguished from Replevin originally as being available only where the defendant acquired possession lawfully, whereas in Replevin the defendant obtained possession wrongfully; it differed also in respect to the time when possession or its equivalent was to be restored to the plaintiff. In its final state of development Detinue became to a considerable extent a concurrent remedy with the Actions of Trespass de bonis asportatis, Replevin and Trover.

AS indicated in the hypothetical cases in which A loaned his horse to B to b3 returned


8. Alabama: Lindsey v. Perry, 1 Ala. 203 (1840); Kentucky: Caldwell v. Fenwick, 2 Dana (Ky.) 332 (1841).

at the end of thirty days, and also loaned to B five hundred dollars to be repaid in thirty days, and at the end of the period, if B, upon demand, refused to deliver up the horse or to repay the money, Debt, not Detinue, lay to recover the money, as both possession and title passed to the bailee, whereas Detinue, not Debt, lay to recover the horse, as only possession, not Title, was transferred to B by the loan. Detinue therefore differed from Debt in that it was for the recovery of specific chattels, but not chattels in the form of money, which, because of its negotiable character, was treated as creating a debt. Originally Detinue was distinguished from Replevin in that it lay only for goods lawfully obtained, whereas Replevin lay only where the goods were unlawfully taken;” ultimately, however, Detinue also became available where the taking was tortious. The two actions were and are still distinguishable in that in Replevin the plaintiff is restored to the possession prior to the determination of the matter of right between the parties, whereas in Detinue the plaintiff does not recover his property until the matter of right between the parties has been determined by a Final Judgment in the Action, and not even then if the defendant prefers to keep the chattel and pay its assessed value.” In Trover, as contrasted with Detinue, the Judgment was for the recovery of Money Damages for the wrongful act of conversion, whereas, in Detinue, the Primary Object of the Action was to recover Specific Chattels, although, as just observed, the defendant was permitted to exercise an option of surrendering the goods or paying the Assessed Damages. And so in Trespass do bonis asportatis, unlike Detinue, the action is for the recovery of Money Damages as compensation to the plaintiff for the infringement to the right of possession of his property, the value of the property being considered as an important element in the measurement of Damages. Detinue had become, in its final stage of development, to a considerable extent a concurrent remedy with the actions of Trespass do bonis asportatis and Trover.

FORMS OF DECLARATION AND JUDGMENT IN DETINUE

121. The Forms under the Action of Detinue include not only the Declaration, but also a Form of a Judgment. The latter is included in order to show that the Judgment in Detinue, contrary to Judgments in the other Actions, was Conditional or in the Alternative, that is, for the Specific Chattels sued for, or if they were not available, their Value plus Damages for the wrongful detention.

DECLARATION IN DwnNus
IN THE EXCHEQUER OF PLEAS.

The 15th day of June, in the year of our Lord 1845.

Berkshire, to wit.—Anthony Brown (the plaintiff in this suit), by Peter Black, his

13. “The reason of this may perhaps be found partly in the perishable character of medieval movables, and the consequent feeling that the court could not accept the task of restoring them to their owners, and partly in the idea that all things had a ‘legal price’ which, if the plaintiff gets, is enough for him.” Maitland, The Forms of Action at Common Law, Lecture V, 02 (Cambridge 1948).

14. One of the major defects in the Action of Detinue consisted of the fact that its judgment was conditional or in the alternative. Thus, it provided that the plaintiff should recover of the defendant the specific chattels sued for, or if they were not available, their value plus damages for the wrongful detention, See Kirkland v. Fillcher, 174 Ala. 170, 57 So, 48 (1911). This defect was remedied by Section 78 of the Common Law Procedure Act of 1854, which empowered a court or judge, upon applica

attorney, complains of Augustus White (the defendant in this suit), who has been summoned to answer the said plaintiff in an action of Detinue. For that whereas the said plaintiff heretofore and before the commencement of this suit, to wit, on the 12th day of February, in the year of our Lord 1845, had delivered to the said defendant certain goods and chattels, to wit, twenty pipes of wine of the said plaintiff, of great value, to wit of the value of £2,000, to be redelivered by the said defendant to the said plaintiff when the said defendant should be thereunto afterwards requested: yet the said defendant, although he was afterwards, to wit, on the first day of March, in the year aforesaid, requested by the said plaintiff so to do, hath not as yet delivered the said goods and chattels, or any of them, or any part thereof, to the said plaintiff, but so to do hath hitherto wholly refused, and still refuses, and still unjustly detains the same from the said plaintiff, to the damage of the said plaintiff of £800, and thereupon he brings his suit,~

MARTIN, Civil Procedure at Law, 371 (St. Paul, 1905).

JUDGMENT IN DETINUE

THEREFORE it is considered that the plaintiff do recover against the defendant the said goods and chattels (or “deeds and paper” etc. or enumerating them, if enumerated in the postea,) or the said sum of

motion of the plaintiff, to order the return of the specific chattel in question, thus depriving the defend’ ant of his option of retaining the chattel upon payment of the value assessed, Cf. Tierney v. Corbett, 2 Mackey S.C.D.C. 264 (1883).

15. An examination of the form of the judgment in detinue will indicate that it is couched in alterna’ tire language to cover the possibility of the defendant hating disposed of the chattel before the judg’

Tinder ~ 7108 of the New York Civil Practice Law and titles (1908), the plaintiff may in certain circumstances have either the chattel or the value there-

of. See also, Dame v. Dame, 43 NJ!. 37 (1861).

Sec. 123

ACTION OF DETINUE

£ for the value of the same, if the plaintiff cannot have again his said goods and chattels, (or “deeds” etc.) and also his said damages, costs and charges to beyond the value, aforesaid, by the jurors aforesaid in form aforesaid assessed, and also for his said costs and charges by the court here adjudged of increase to the plaintiff, and with his assent, and the defendant in mercy, etc. And hereupon the sheriff is commanded that he distract the defendant by all his lands and chattels in his bailiwick, so that neither the defendant, nor any one by him, do lay hands on the same until the said sheriff shall have another command from the court here in that behalf, and that the said sheriff answer for the issues of the same, so that the defendant render to the plaintiff the goods and chattels (or “deeds” etc.) aforesaid, or the said sum of for value of the same; and in what manner, etc., he is commanded to make appear, etc.

TIDD, Forms of Practice, 340 (London 1828).
DECLARATION IN DETINUE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

122. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration in an Action of Detinue are:
(I) The Right of the plaintiff to Certain Goods and Chattels of a certain value, described;
(II) The Unlawful Detention;
(III) The Damages.

DECLARATION IN DETINUE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) TILE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OF POSSESSION:

123. The Declaration must describe the thing detained sufficiently for purposes of identification and assert the plaintiff’s Title and Right of Possession.

The plaintiff’s Right may arise from General Ownership, or some Special Interest, or as against a wrongdoer, from Bare Possession.

Description of the Property

As the Action of Detinue lies only to recover specific chattels, known and distinguished from all others, more certainty is required in the Declaration in their description than in Trespass or Trover; and it must be such as to particularly identify them as the goods in question.” This particularity, however, need not extend to every matter of detail, and need only include enough to identify them, either as individual articles or as a number of things belonging to a particular class, according to the circumstances of each particular case."

There were anciently Two Modes of Counting in Detinue. The plaintiff must say either, “I bailed the chattel to you,” or “I lost the goods and you found them” (detinue stir tro-ver). Only in times much later did the lawyers say that these phrases about finding (Trover) and bailment, though one of them must be used, are not “Traversable,” and that defendant must not deny them, but must deny the wrongful detention.8

The Plaintiff’s Right

The plaintiff must have either a General or Special Property in the chattels, or he must have a Right to the immediate Possession of them.” That he has this right


743 at 744 (1845); Haynes v. Crutchfield, 7 Ala. 189 (1544).


II. See Ames, Lectures on Legal History, c. VI, Detinue, 71 (Cambridge 1913); Whitehead v. Harrison, 0 Q.B. (KS.) 423, 115 Eng.Rep. 102 (1884); Heffner v. Fidler, 58 W.Va. 159, 52 SE. 513, 3 L.R.A.

Sec. 126

ACTION OF DETINUE

251

does it lie against a bailee who has lost the chattel by accident before demand; 25 but if he has wrongfully and elusively sold and delivered, or otherwise disposed of, the chattel to another, he remains liable.20 If a person, by representing that he has the chattel, induces the owner to bring the action against him, he will be estopped to deny possession of it by him.2
DECLARATION IN DETINUE—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (4) THE DAMAGES

125. As the Judgment in this Action is in the Alternative, that the plaintiff recover the goods, or the value thereof, if the specific goods cannot be had, Damages should be laid sufficient to cover both such value and the actual loss caused by the detention.

THE Allegation of Damages in the Declaration in this Action is always necessary, as the Judgment is that the plaintiff recover the Specific Chattel, or, in case it is not forthcoming, its Value; and a sum should be laid which will be large enough to cover both this Value and any Actual Damage which the plaintiff has suffered by the fact of the detention.

252 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

especially appropriate, and the averments in the Complaint in the case at Ear are substantially those required in such
action. 3 El. Comm. 151; the form of declaration on page 38, Steph.Pl., 9th Am,Ed., by I-Turd; Rucker v. Hamilton, 3 Dana, 36. While we have no Forms of Action here, yet when the Averments of facts in a Complaint show the case to be one for which a particular Form of Action would have been a proper one at Common Law, then the general principles of pleading and practice apply to it which apply to the Special Form of Common-law Action, Now, it was no Defense to the Action of Detinue to plead that the defendant, before the Commencement of the Action, had wrongfully disposed of the property, and therefore was not in possession of it. * *

[The court cited several American cases and Reeve v. Palmer, 5 C.B., N.S., 8411. The principles declared in the foregoing authorities are eminently just, and are founded on the maxim that no one can take advantage of his own wrong; and they are as applicable now to an action based on a contract of bailment as they were to such an action when it had to be brought under the Special Form of Detinue. The usual Judgment in such Action is in the Alternative,—that is, that the plaintiff recover possession of the property, or its value in case delivery cannot be had; but where it appears that the property cannot be delivered the defendant is in no way prejudiced by a Judgment for the value only, and the fact that the Judgment is not in the Alternative is no ground for reversal."

**CHAPTER 12**

**THE ACTION OF REPLEVIN**

1. **Scope of the Action.**

2. **Replevin—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions.**

3. **Forms of Original Writ, Plain, Declaration and Bond in Repievin.**

4. **Declaration in Repievin—Essential Allegations:**

   (1) In General.

   (2) The Plaintiff’s Right, Title, Interest or Possession.

5. **Declaration in Repievin—Essential Allegations:**

   (3) The Wrongful Act of Taking and Detention by the Defendant.

6. **Declaration in Repievin—Essential Allegations:**

   (4) The Damages.

7. **Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.**

**SCOPE OF THE ACTION**

127. The Action of Replevin lies, where Specific Personal Property has been wrongfully taken and is wrongfully detained, to recover Possession of the Property, together with Damages for its detention. To support the Action, it is necessary:

   That the Property shall be Personal;

   That the plaintiff, at the time of the Suit, shall be entitled to the Immediate Possession;

   (III) That (at Common Law) the defendant shall have wrongfully taken the property (Replevin in the Cepit). But, by Statute, in most States, the Action will also Lie where the property is wrongfully detained, though it was lawfully obtained, the first instance (Replevin in the Detinet);

   (W) That the property shall be wrongfully detained by the defendant at the time of the Suit.

The Primary and Secondary Objectives of Replevin

THE Primary object of Replevin is to enable the plaintiff to obtain possession of the

1. In general, on the historicj origin and develop’ mont of the Action of Beplevin, see:

   Tm tins: Gilbert, The Law and Practice of Distresses and Replievies (3d ed. by Hunt, DublIn 1702);
   goods at the outset, without waiting until he has established his Right by Action. Like Detinue, the Action is primarily to recover


Articles: Maitland, The Selsin of Chattels, I.Q. Rev. 324 (1885); Ames, The Disseisin of Chattels. 8 Harv.L.Rev. 23 (1889); Barewen, Property in Chattels, 253 (1885). OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Replevin in the Nature of a Provisonal Remedy

REPLEVIN may be described as an Action for the recovery of possession, in which the


The Action, therefore, is not founded merely upon the right to obtain redress for a tort; in Replevin and
Detinue, recovery of specific property is the end and aim of the Action. In present-day Law, the Action of Replevin differs from Detinue chiefly by the circumstance that the plaintiff at once secures possession of the chattels in dispute. This immediate relief is in the nature of a provisional remedy, granting the plaintiff a recovery of the chattels pending the outcome of the action. By this provisional relief the plaintiff really accomplishes his object to get possession of his goods; to retain possession, however, he must prosecute his action and establish his right. Hence, as a condition of securing this relief in advance and having the Sheriff deliver the property—the horse and plough—over to him, he was and is required to give security in the form of a bond or undertaking, with sureties, to make out the justice of the claim or return the property to the defendant.

**Does Replevin Lie for All Unlawful Takings?**

At Common Law Replevin lay only for an unlawful taking of goods. But for several hundred years it was employed chiefly for only one sort of unlawful taking, that of a wrongful distress. The Writ of Replevin, as shown by the Form in the Register, merely alleged an unlawful taking and withholding by the defendant—cepit et injuste detinett, or taken and unjustly detained—and there is no suggestion in the early Law which in theory limits Replevin to the field of distress, and this view is supported by the fact that the Writ and Pleadings, which is always good evidence of the Law, contains no language restricting the action to a wrongful distress.

As thus developed, an Action of Replevin was the regular way for the plaintiff-tenant to contest the validity, of the extra-judicial seizure by which his landlord had taken his goods upon a distress for rent. It consisted in a redelivery of the pledge, or thing taken in distress—the horse and plough—to the owner, upon his giving security or bond to try the right of distress and to restore it if the right should be adjudged against him.

The theory of the action, as we have observed, was broad enough to cover any case of wrongful taking, and the statement of Blackstone that it was only available in cases of wrongful distress was soon shown to be incorrect. It is now clearly recognized as for Fines and Amercements, (1st Am. ed. New York, 1808).

Distress, as here defined, is not to be confused with the remedy of distress as used for the enforcement of Recognizances or to compel the payment of fines and amercements, where the right to distrain is derived from the agreement of the parties or from custom. Bradby, on Distress, e. VIII, Of a Distress for Fines and Amercements, (1st Am. ed. New York, 1808).

Apparently, the earliest American case to extend Replevin to cover a wrongful taking other than a distress, was the New York case of Pangburn v. Patridge, 7 Johns. (N.Y.) 140 (1810), extending to any unlawful taking from the plaintiff's possession.

Declared: “The passage to that effect [that Replevin lay only for an unlawful distress], in Blackstone’s commentaries [first published in 1767], is not warranted by the books. This action is usually brought to try the legality of a distress; but it will lie for any unlawful taking of a chattel. Possession by the plaintiff, and an actual wrongful taking by the defendant, are the only points requisite to support the action; and none of the cases, defining the nature of the action, confine it specially to the ease of a chattel, taken under pretence of a distress. The old authorities are, that Replevin lies for goods taken tortiously, or by a trespasser; and that the party injured may have Replevin, or Trespass, at his election. This is so laid down by Gascoigne, J., in 7 Hen. IV, 25b, and by Danhy, 3., in 2 Ed~v. IV, 16, and by Brian, J., in 6 Ilen. VT1,
9, and these dicta are cited as good law, in Bro. tit. Replevin. p1. 86, 30, and in RollAbr. Tit. Replevin, B. The same rule was admitted by the judges in the case of Mason v. Dixon, (Jones Rep. 173) in Bishop v. Montague, Cro.Eliz. 824). Similar language is held, in many of the modern authorities, cited by the plaintiff’s counsel, upon the argument; and particularly by Baron Gilbert, Baron Comyn, and Lord Redesdale. The opinion of the latter is reported by Schoales and Lefroy. In which he lays down the law, with peculiar accuracy and precision. The provisions in our statute (11 Sess. e. 5). 12 R.8. 522, et seq.] apply chiefly to cases of illegal distress; but there is nothing which confines the remedy to that particular injury.

“If this question he considered upon principle, It is proper this Action should be maintainable, wherever there is a tortious taking of a chattel out of the possession of another. A great variety of cases might be stated, in which no Damages which a Jury is legally competent to give, can compensate for the loss of a particular chattel.”

“The Nonsuit must, therefore, be set aside, and a New Trial granted, with costs to abide the event of the suit.”


Replevin at Common Law was maintainable in cases where there was an unlawful taking and an unlawful detention of personal property, and in such a proceeding there was a seizure under a Writ of Replevin of the subject matter of the litigation at the beginning of the proceeding, while Detinue at Common Law was maintainable for the recovery of per-

Sec. 127

ACTION OF REPLEVIN

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 12

The Extension of Replevin to Include Datinue

In the leading English case, Mennie v. Blake, and in the leading American case of Harwood v. Smethurst, on Detinue factual situations, that is, where the defendant came into possession of the chattel lawfully, and thereafter unlawfully detained it, the plaintiff, in both cases, instead of suing in Detinue, brought Replevin, thus in effect requesting the respective Courts to expand the Scope of Replevin so as to include a mere wrongful detention, and by this process of Judicial Legislation bring about the absorption of Detinue by Replevin. This, both Courts, English and American, refused to do. Chief Justice Whelpley, in Harwood v. Smethurst, stating in the following striking language: “Although this remedy [Replevin] may be prompt, efficacious, and beneficial, and in many cases the only one giving the necessary relief to a party having a right to the possession of chattels, I do not feel at liberty, entertaining, as I do, a clear conviction that a tortious taking is necessary by the Common Law as the ground of the action, to indulge in judicial legislation for the purpose of enlarging the Scope of the Action.” Thus, the Court refused, by judicial action, to extend Replevin to include an unlawful detention, and thus bring about a merger of Detinue in Replevin.

But what the Court refused to do by Judicial Legislation in the Mennie and Harwood cases, the Legislature of New Jersey did by express enactment, thus finally extending the scope of Replevin to include a lawful taking and an unlawful detention, which the Court

sonal property In all cases where there was an unlawful detainer, regardless of the manner of taking, and recovery of the property was had only after Judgment. Tray Laundry Machinery Co. v. Carbon City Laundry Co., 196 N.J. 745 (N.M.1921).

L. 6 El. & BL. 842, 119 Engilep. 1078 (1850).


a 29 NIL. 195, 197, 80 AnDec. 207, 208 (1861).

had refused to sanction. The end was achieved by a statute which provided “That any unlawful detention of goods and chattels from their lawful owner, or the person entitled by law to the possession of the same, shall be deemed an unlawful taking for the purpose of supporting an Action of Replevin.”

Prior to this development, if B merely detained goods which he had acquired lawfully, A had to proceed in Detinue and could not repleve the goods on the basis of an unlawful detention. Replevin was in this respect like the statutory Summary Proceedings for Forcible Entry on Land. It contemplated the situation where property, being in the peaceable possession of A, is seized by B. Provisionally, the status quo is at once restored, pending the
settlement of the controverted right. In Form the Action proceeds for Damages, but, if the plaintiff fails, the defendant will be given Judgment for the return of the chattels—the horse and plough.

After the provisional remedy of immediate delivery is granted both parties, as we have seen, become actors in the suit; the plaintiff to be vindicated in his possession and to recover Damages, while the defendant is like a plaintiff asserting his claim to the chattels. The pleading by which the landlord-defendant prayed for their return was formerly called an Avowry or Cognizance, which was in the nature of a Cross-Declaration. It followed therefore that the tenant’s next pleading, instead of being a Replication, was a Plea, with all other pleadings in consequence being deferred an additional stage, as compared with an ordinary action.

When is the Action Available—Nature of the Property

TO support Replevin, the property must be personal. The Action will not lie for taking property so attached to the freehold as to acquire the character of immovable fixtures,

or real property; nor does it lie to recover growing crops or timber. But it will lie for removable fixtures, such as tenant’s fixtures; and it will lie for things previously attached to the freehold, and for crops and growing timber which have been severed and converted into personal property. Replevin cannot be maintained for money which has no identifying marks or receptacle.

Wham is the Action Not Available

THE Action will not lie to determine the title to land. But the fact that question of

Growing crops are subject to Replevin, without regard to whether they are growing or, having matured, have ceased to derive any nutriment from the soil. Stephens v. Stckdaub, 202 Mo.App. 392, 217 8.W. 871 (1920).

Where the owner of land and all parties interested treated a warehouse erected theon as personal property, Replevin will lie against one wrongfully taking possession of the same. Burdick t. Thm.-Alurn Lumber Co., 91 Or. 417, 179 Pac. 245 (ThiD).

title may incidentally arise will not necessarily defeat the action. Replevin will not lie for timber, crops, or minerals severed and removed from land by one who is in the adverse possession of the land under a claim of title. It will not lie for property which is in the custody of the Law; that is, in the hands of Court or Executive Officers under Attachment or otherwise.

REPLEVIN—DISTINGUISRED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS
Replevin and Detinue were distinguishable, one lying for a wrongful taking and an unlawful detention, the other for a lawful taking, followed by a wrongful tie.

It was held that Replevin could lie for ore dug from the plaintiff’s land, and that it was no objection that the question of title might incidentally arise, if the action was not brought to try the title. Grecu v. Ashland Iron Co., 62 Pa. 97 (1869); Cl Christensen v. Banna, 183 Dl.App. 115 (1917).


Replevin and Trespass were to be distinguished, in the sense that Replevin assumed property in the plaintiff, whereas Trespass assumed property in the tortfeasor. Otherwise Replevin became to a considerable extent a concurrent remedy with Detinue and Trespass; and later with Trover.

It was early settled that Replevin would lie upon any wrongful taking. In consequence, Gascoigne, C. 3., in a case decided in 1406, said that Replevin was concurrent with Trespass. In theory, therefore, one who was disseised of a chattel might elect to sue in Detinue, Replevin and Trespass. If he sued in Detinue he might recover the chattel, or if it was not available, then he might recover its value, but it remained in the defendant’s hands until the action was completed. If he sued in Replevin, he reacquired the chattel as his own, plus damages for the wrongful detention. If he sued in Trespass, he could recover damages for the full value of the chattel, as the action proceeded on the theory that the property had vested in the tortfeasor. Still later, in more modern times, the Action of Trover also became available against a trespasser who took and converted chattels to his own use. But for some reason, not quite clear, Replevin did not become popular as a concurrent remedy with Trespass. Street suggests that the explanation may lie in the circumstance that in Bracton’s day Replevin was subject to Wager of Law, or it may have been due to the fact that the defendant—lord might sidetrack the action by raising an issue as to the ownership of the chattels—the horse and plough.
But while Replevin and Detinue were concurrent in a certain sense, they were to be distinguished with respect to the return of the chattel pending a determination of the matter of right between the parties. Of course, this distinction evaporated under modern statutes merging the two actions. And as we have seen, Replevin was to be distinguished from Trespass, the one being available where the property in the chattel remains in the plaintiff, the other being available where the plaintiff chooses to assume the property to be in the trespasser.

FORMS OF THE ORIGINAL WRIT, PLAINT, DECLARATION AND BOND IN REPLEVIN

129. This section contains Forms of the Original Writ, Plaint, Declaration and Bond in the Action of Replevin,

The Original Writ in Replevin

THE Original Writ in Replevin gave the Action a dual character: it furnished an expeditious method by which the tenant could immediately regain possession of the horse and plough, and it authorized a hearing as an incident thereof to determine the legality of the alleged wrongful taking and detention, and award Damages, and at one stage in the development of the Action this hearing might be held before the Sheriff. Viewed from the standpoint of the first command of the Writ, the Action appears to be a proceeding to regain possession of personal property wrongfully taken and detained, and it has been so viewed by some authors. Viewed from the standpoint of the second command of the Writ, the Action appears to be a Proceeding to Recover Damages for the unlawful taking and detention of personal property,

ACTION OF REPLEVIN

and it has been so defined by Saunders, Stephen and Tidd. Despite statements which have been construed to the contrary, no case of Replevin appears which has not been commenced with a Writ requiring the Sheriff to cause the goods to be replevied, or by Plaint to the Sheriff, followed by a precept to replevy the goods. The two proceedings, in reality, were never separate and independent of each other. The recovery of the goods under the first command of the Writ was only provisional, that is, it restored possession of the chattels to the plaintiff, pending proceedings under the second command to do justice; if the plaintiff failed to make out his case, the chattels of necessity were returned to the defendant. The dual character of the Original Writ in Replevin will appear in the Form of the Original Writ set out below.

Distinction Between Replevin in the Detinuit and Replevin in the Detinet

AT Common Law Replevin in the detinuit lay for a wrongful detention of goods taken under a lawful distress for rent. But in practice the action was usually confined to cases of wrongful distress, such as a wrongful distress for rent, damage feasant, sewers’ rates, and the like.


The Modern Form of the Action of Replevin is in the *detinuit*, which is so called because, as the word imparts, it is brought when the goods have been delivered by the Sheriff to the plaintiff. 29 Replevin in the *detinet* lay to recover goods which were still detained, but it has long been obsolete. It follows therefore that when Replevin in the *detinet* was available, the plaintiff was entitled to recover the value of the goods as well as Damages for their taking; whereas in Replevin in the *detinuit*, the plaintiff was entitled to recover only Damages for the wrongful taking.

Wilkinson understood that there were two *kinds of Replevin*—one in the *detinuit* and the other in the *detinet*. But Martin suggests that this supposition was the direct outgrowth of a reasonable Variation in the Declaration, turning on whether the Sheriff found or failed to find the property. If the property was found and delivered to the plaintiff, the plaintiff then declared in the *detinuit*, describing the wrong for which he claimed Damages as an accomplished act of the past. 32 In this Form of the Declaration, it was alleged that the goods taken “were detained until replevied by the Sheriff” a phrase which came to be abbreviated by alleging that they were “detained until, etc.,” which was called “Declaring in the Detinuit.” As the Sheriff was usually successful in delivering the horse and plough, this was the more usual Declaration; it was filed after the result of the Sheriff’s action was known, and Damages were only for the orig


260

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

The plaintiff in an *wrongful* taking and past detention by the landlord-defendant. 34 If, however, he was unable to find and return the horse and plough to the tenant, the plaintiff might, at his option, compel the defendant to answer for the wrongful taking and detention, in Damages, in which case he declared in the *detinet*. In such an instance the plaintiff recovered Damages for the continued detention of the chattels, which was inclusive of the full value of the chattels taken and still detained, as well as Damages for the wrongful taking. 35 The same Declaration could be a *detinuit* as to the part returned, and a *detinet* as to the residue not found or returned. 36

Martin suggests that there probably never was a distinct Action of Replevin in the *detinet*, but that there was also probably never a time when, after issue of the Replevin Writ, the plaintiff could not declare in the *detinet* if the Sheriff failed to redeliver the goods, as it was quite clear that unless he did so, he could not recover the value of the chattels. 33

In any event it seems evident that the Variation in the Form of Declaration had no effect in changing the action; but went only to the Measure of Damages, and this ceased to be necessary, as under the Declaration in the *cietinuit*, as finally developed, the Courts permitted the plaintiff to show that the goods were still detained, so as to bring their *value into the assessment*, and hence to that *end* the value was alleged in the Declaration.

3. For a Declaration in which the Two Forms are combined, see Morris, Law of Replevin in the United States, c. VIII, 306 (Philadelphia, 1878); and for another example, see McKelvy, Principles of Common Law Pleading, c. UI, Actions Based on Natural Rights, Section IV, Replevin, 69, p. 50 (New York, 1894).


As present detention might be treated as a continuation of the original taking and detention, as it went only to the Measure of Damages, and not to the right of action, it became unnecessary to declare in the detinuit, and this may explain why this latter Form of Declaration in Replevin became obsolete.

It should be observed, however, that the Writ was always in the detinuit, and that the Modern Action of Replevin in many American States, being instituted before the issuance of the Writ or Order, is usually in that form.

The Venue in Replevin is Local, but the Venue in an Action on the Bond is transitory. And the goods must be stated with certainty in the Declaration, but certainty to a general intent is sufficient.

FORM OF ORIGINAL WRIT IN REPLEVIN

GEORGE THE FOURTH, by the grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith,

To the sheriff of County,

GREETING:

We command you, that justly and without delay you cause to be replevied to AS. his cattle, goods, and chattels which C.D. hath taken and unjustly detaineth, as he saith, and after cause him to be brought to justice for the same; that we hear no more complaint for want of justice. Witness ourself at Westminster, the day of in the year of our reign.


3-. McKelvy, Principles of Common Law Pleading, c.
III, Actions Based on Natural Rights, Section IV, Replevin, ~ 69, p. 50 (New York, 1894).


285 (1785).

Sec. 129

ACTION OF REPLEV'IN

FORM OF PLAINT IN REPLEVIN

To the sheriff of county.

GREETING:

A.B. complains against CD. in a plea of taking and unjustly detaining his cattle against sureties and pledges, etc. Pledges to Prosecute,

E.F.

&

G.H.


FORM OF DECLARATION IN REPLEVIN
State of
County.

Court of County.
Term, A.D. 19—.

Plaintiff in this suit, by his attorney, complains of defendant in this suit, of a plea wherefore he wrongfully took the goods and chattels of the said plaintiff and unlawfully detained the same until, etc. For that the said defendant, on the day of in the year 19_, at No. Street in the city of in the county aforesaid, wrongfully took the goods and chattels, to wit: [describing them], of the said plaintiff, of the value of dollars, and unjustly detained the same until, etc.

And also wherefore the defendant unjustly detained the goods and chattels until, etc. For that the said defendant, on the day of in the year 19_, at No. Street in the city of in the county aforesaid, the goods and chattels of the said plaintiff, to wit, [describing them], of the value of dollars, wrongfully detained, etc.

But that the said defendant, although often requested, has refused, and yet refuses, to deliver the said goods and chattels above mentioned to the said plaintiff.

Wherefore the said plaintiff says he is injured and hath sustained damage to the amount of dollars, and therefore he brings his suit, etc.

Plaintiff’s Attorney

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF FORMS. Forms No. 6,939 and No. 17,730.
FORM OF BOND IN REPLEVIN
SUPREME COURT

(New York) County.

(WHEREAS, (John Jones), the plaintiff in this action, has made an affidavit that the defendant (John Doe) wrongfully detains certain personal property in said affidavit mentioned, of the value of (eight thousand) dollars ($8,000), and the plaintiff claims the immediate delivery of the said personal property to him, as provided for by Article 66 of the Civil Practice Act.

NOW, THEREFORE, in consideration of the taking of said property or any part thereof by the sheriff of the County of (New York), by virtue of the said affidavit and the requisition thereupon indorsed, we, the undersigned (John B. Taylor), of (No. 2– West First Street, Borough of Manhattan, City of New York), and (Charles T. Furman), of (No. 134 East Fourth Street, Borough of Manhattan, City of New York), and (John Jones), of (No. 76 West Seventieth Street, Borough of Manhattan, City of New York), do hereby jointly and severally undertake and become bound to the defendant in the sum of (Sixteen thousand) Dollars ($16,000) [not less than twice the value of the chattels or chattels as stated in the affidavit], for the prosecution of the action by the plaintiff, in the (New York Supreme Court), against the defendant, for the return

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 12

to the defendant of the said property if possession thereof is adjudged to him, or if the action abates or is discontinued before the said property is returned to the said defendant, and for the payment to the defendant of any, sum which the judgment
awards to him against the plaintiff.

Dated, (New York, July 24, 19—).

(John B. Taylor),
(Charles T. Furman),
(John Jones).

MEDINA’S BOSTWICK, Common Practice Forms (Form 564) 838 (5th ed. by Cannon, Davison, Edelman, Grimes and Schneider, Albany, N.Y. 1955).

DECLARATION IN REPLEVIN—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS; (1) IN GENERAL

130. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration are:
   (I) The plaintiff’s Title to Certain Goods at the Commencement of the Action;
   (II) The Unlawful Taking and Detention; or by Statute in Some States, an Unlawful Detention only;
   (III) The Demand and refusal in Certain Cases;
   (IV) The Damages

The property must be described sufficiently for identification, but the right of the plaintiff may be generally stated.

AS has been stated before, the property which is the subject of this action must be personal, and such as is capable of definite description and of delivery; and, in describing it in the Declaration, care and accuracy must be used, since the question of identification is an important one. Where the chattels taken and detained are in their nature distinguishable from others of a similar kind, less particularity of description is required than when they are not so distinguishable. In the latter case the Declaration must go further, and show what indicia or earmarks are peculiar to them. The plaintiff should Count on the identical chattels replevied, and no more or less, as the defendant might be entitled to a Judgment for the return of a larger or the correct number, though not a number less than actually in question; and the Declaration should also state their value correctly, though the strictness formerly necessary is not now required. In brief, here, as in all cases where specific property is in question, the statement must be sufficiently accurate and complete for the Court and Jury to see that the property as to which evidence is offered is the same as that referred to in the pleadings.

The practice in bringing Actions of Replevin is now almost universally regulated by statute, and the statutes must therefore be consulted. In some states the Declaration is not used at all, but an Affidavit takes its place. In these cases the Affidavit must comply with the rules above stated, for it must, like a Declaration, show facts constituting a cause of action.

DECLARATION IN REPLEVIN—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) THE PLAINTIFF’S RIGHT, TITLE, INTEREST OR POSSESSION

131. It is sometimes said that the Declaration must allege a General or Special Property Interest in the articles taken and detained, or (by statute) merely detained, and the plaintiff’s
right thereto, but in truth the right of immediate possession is necessary.

TO support Replevin, the plaintiff must have and must allege such a property in the goods, either General or Special, as entitled him to the immediate possession of them, as against the defendant. It is not sufficient to allege that the plaintiff was "entitled to the possession of the goods"; the Declaration should aver that the articles were the "goods and chattels of the plaintiff" at the time of the taking. If he cannot show this, the action must fail, without regard to whether the defendant has any title, or not; for the action must be maintained, if at all, on the strength of the plaintiff's own title and right. Even though he may have an interest in the property, if, as observed above, he is not entitled to the immediate possession thereof, he must seek redress in some other form of action, for Replevin will not lie.

Possession in the plaintiff at the time of the caption is not necessary. It is sufficient

Though a chattel mortgagee may maintain Replevin against the mortgagor or a third person after condition broken, he cannot maintain the action either before default in payment, nor after such default, but before expiration of the time during which the mortgagor may retain possession. Even the General Owner of a chattel cannot maintain the action where another has a Special property interest therein giving him, and not the general owner, the right to possession. The action must be brought by the special owner. Hunt v. Stearn, 33 Mass. 85 (1875).
The seller of a chattel unconditionally cannot maintain Replevin therefor against the buyer merely because the latter has not paid for it. McNail v. Ziegler, 68 Ill. 224 (1874).

But if the sale was for “cash on delivery,” the Action lies, if the chattel is not so paid for immediately upon demand therefor. Dole v. Kennedy, 38 Ill. 282 (1865).

And a vendor may replevy goods sold by him where the possession was obtained from him by the perpetration of a fraud. Illinois: Goldscheidt v. Berry, 18 Ill. App. 276 (1885); Farwell v. Hanehart, 19 Ill. App. 620 (1886); Farwell v. Hanchett, 120 Ill. 573, 11 N.E. 875 (1887); Michigan: Carl v. McGonigal, 58 Mich. 567, 25 N.W. 516 (1885); Pennsylvania: Bush v. Bender, 113 Pa. 94, 4 Atl. 213 (1886).

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

if he has the right to possession at the time of suit.\(^{47}\)

It is not at all necessary that the plaintiff shall be the General Owner. A Special Property will support the action, even as against the General Owner, if it is such as to give the right to the immediate possession.\(^{45}\)

\(^{42}\) Arkansas: Bostick v. Brittain, 25 Ark. 482 (1854);


One who has the legal right to the possession of property under a Bill of Lading may maintain Replevin therefor, although he has never had possession. Powell v. Braddick, 6 Gill. & T. (Md.) 220 (1876).

And the Action may be maintained by the mortgagee of a chattel against one who takes it from the possession of the mortgagor after default in payment by the latter. Massachusetts: Esson v. Tarbell, 9 Cush. (Mass.) 412 (1852); New York: Fuller v. Acker, 1 Hill (N.Y.) 473 (1841).

So, where a person, to secure advances, gave another a shipper’s receipt for goods in transitus, it was held that the latter could maintain Replevin. Midvale Steel Works v. Hallgarten, 15 Wkly. Notes Cas. (Pa.) 47 (1791).

The gist of an Action in Replevin is the right to the immediate possession of the property in controversy. Bank of Buffalo v. Crouch, 174 Pac. 764 (Okla. 1918). The Writ of Replevin is a possessory action, and does not necessarily involve title. Scarborough v. Lucas, 119 Miss. 128, 80 So. 521 (1919).


The action may be supported by the mortgagee of chattels upon estoppel broken. Illinois: Cleaves v. Right of Possession is the ground Of the action, rather than General Ownership.

In reason, it would seem to be clear that the right of the plaintiff to possession of the property, as against the defendant, should be the only question to be determined, and that actual title should only be material in so far as it determines this right. In some states, however, it is held that mere posses.
sion at the time of the unlawful taking of property by one without any authority at all is not enough to support Replevin, though it might be sufficient to support Trover; that either a General or Special ownership must be shown, even as against a mere wrongdoer; and that, for instance, one who has the care of goods merely for safe-keeping, without any interest in them, cannot maintain the action. In some states, on the other hand, no title need be shown, as against

And the mortgagee may maintain Replevin against a person who levies on the property as the property of the mortgagor, where the mortgage provides that the debt shall become due, and the mortgagee shall be entitled to possession in case of a levy. Quinn v. Schmidt, 91 Ill. 310 (1870).

But the action will not lie where the time during which it is agreed that the mortgagor may retain possession has not expired. Maine: Ingraham v. Martin, 15 Me. 378 (1839); Massachusetts: Essou v. Tarbell, 9 Gush. (Mass.) 412 (1852).

The action may be maintained by an auctioneer who is entitled to possession. Tyler v. Freeman, 3 Gush. (Mass.) 261 (1849); Rich v. Rider, 105 Mass. 310 (1870).

And it may be maintained by an officer having a right to possession under a levy. Massachusetts: Gordon v. Jenney, 16 Mass. 465 (1820); New York: Dezell v. Odell, 3 Hill (KY.) 215, 38 Am. Dec. 628 (1842).

49. Indiana: Walpole v. Smith, 4 Blaekf. (Ind.) 304 (1837); Massachusetts: Waterman v. Robinson, 5 Mass. 803 (1809); Ferley v. Foster, 9 Mass. 112 (1812); Warren v. Leland, 9 Mass. 265 (1812); New York: Dunham v. Wyckoff, 3 Wend. (N.Y.) 280, 20 Ch. 12 Sec. 131

ACTION OF REPLEVIN

a mere wrongdoer. Where goods are taken from a person in peaceable possession, by one who has not title or authority, the mere prior possession will support the action against the latter. 52

The mere custody of a servant or agent is an insufficient basis to enable him to bring Replevin for a wrongful taking, but suit must be brought by the one for whom he holds. 53

The plaintiff must in all cases have the right to possession at the time the action is brought, and not merely at some prior or subsequent time; for “the state of things existing when the suit is commenced will control the determination.” 55

Am.Dec. 695 (1829); Miller v. Adslt, 16 Wend. (N.Y.) 335 (1836).

Replevin is a possessory action, and lies only in favor of one entitled to possession at the time of its commencement, and the right to possession must be coupled with Ownership, either General or Special. Delaware: Prick v. Miller, 7 Boyce (Del.) 366, 107 Atl. 391 (1918), judgment af’tu’d Miller v. Frick’s Admr, 7 Boyce (Del.) 374, 107 Atl. 394 (1919); Pennsylvania: White Co. v. Union Transfer Co., 270 Pa. 514, 113 Atl. 432 (1921).

50. Illinois: Cleaves v. Herbert, 61 Ill. 126 (1871)

One in the sole and peaceable possession of goods, not as an intruder, trespasser, or wrongdoer, but as owner, either of the whole or some Special Property in them, has a valid title as against all strangers, which they cannot defeat by showing an outstanding title in some third party. Michigan: Van Baalen v. Dean, 27 Mich. 104 (1873); Sandford v. Milliken, 144 Mich. 311, 107 NW. 884 (1906); South Carolina: Hall v. Ligon, 11 S.C. 245, 97 SE. 710 (1918); Federal: Wood v. Weimar, 104 U.S. 786, 26 L.Ed. 779 (1881), holding that a right of possession suffices.


52. Cobbey, Law of Replevin as Administered by the Courts of the United States, e. II, Scope and Nature of the Action, § 25 (2nd ed. Chicago, 1900); See, also, the following cases: Illinois: Moriarty v. Stoffferan,
   A Tenant in common cannot maintain Replevin against his co-tenant. 13 And it is held in some states that one tenant in common of goods cannot alone maintain this action; that he cannot, for instance, maintain it against an officer who attaches the goods as the sole property of the other owner. 34 “Replevin,” said the Massachusetts Court, “is an action founded on the General or Special property of the plaintiff, and it is settled that, when a chattel is
illegally taken and detained, all the part owners must join in Replevin; and it is a good Plea in Abatement that the property is in the plain-tiff and another.” ~
This would not apply to the full extent in those states where it is held that mere possession at the time of the unlawful taking of goods, without any other title, is sufficient to support Replevin against the wrongdoer. 56

89 Ill. 528 (1878); Michigan: Gary v. Hewitt, 26 Mich. 228 (1872).

The right to maintain Replevin must exist at the very moment the Writ is issued. Wattles v. Du Boir, 67 Mieb. 313, 34 NW. 672 (1887).


But when a mass or mixture of similar, specific and fungible articles belong to several parties in different and distinct proportions, each owner may maintain Replevia for his proportion against one who unlawfully takes and detains all the articles, though they have never been separated, and have no distinguishing marks. Massachusetts: Gardner v. Dutch, 9 Mass, 427 (1812); New Mexico: Page v. Jones, 26 NM. 195, 190 Pac. 541, 10 ALR. 761 (1920); Halsey v. Simmons, 85 Ore. 324, 166 Pac. 944, L.R.A.1918A, 321 (1917).


66. In Michigan, for instance, It was held that Replevin lies by a tenant In common who is entitled to the possession of an undivided interest in personal property against a wrongdoer who is a stranger to the property. MeArthur v. Oliver, 60 Mich. 605, 27 NW. 689 (1886).

But in order to maintain the action, a tenant in common must show something more than his undivided ownership; he, at least, must show that he was in possession. Hess v. Griggs, 43 Mich. 307, 5 KW. 427 (1850).

One partner can bring fleplevin for the whole partnership property, if it is seized on Execution for another’s individual debt. Hutchinson v. Dubois, 45 Mich. 143, 7 N.W. 714 (1881).


It lies for goods obtained by false pretenses. Maine:

At Common Law, the Action would only lie where the property was tortiously or unlawfully taken from the actual or constructive possession of the plaintiff, a Trespass in the taking being absolutely essential, and this is still the rule in some of our states. Under such circumstances the action is called “Replevin in the Cepit.”

In many other states, however, the remedy by Replevin has been extended by Statute, that is, so as to embrace these cases in which property has been lawfully obtained, but unlawfully detained, as under a contract. In these it will lie where the property was wrongfully taken, or where, through possession was originally acquired lawfully, the property is wrongfully detained.

Under these Statutes the action will lie generally whenever Trover could be supported—that is, whenever the defendant wrongfully detains the goods, or converts them, without regard to the manner in which he obtained them. Cobbey, Law of Replevin as Administered by the Courts of the United States, c. IV, When the Action Lies Generally, 51 (2d ed. Chicago, 1900); Maine: Sawtelle v. Rollins, 23 Me. 196 (1843); New Mexico: Enfield v. Stewart, 24 N.M. 472, 174 Pac. 428, 2 A. Lit. 196 (1918); New York: Pangburn v. Patridge, 7 Johns. (N.Y.) 140, 5 Am.Dec. 250 (1810); Marshall v. Davis, 1 Wend. (N.Y.) 109, 19 Am.Dec. 463 (1828); Allen v. Crary, 10 Wend. (N.Y.) 349, 25 Am.Dec. 560 (1833).

Some Form of Action for Damages should be brought if the defendant has not the actual possession of the property when the action is commenced, for the remedy is proprietary and enforces the right of possession. While the Action is primarily for the recovery of possession, the same facts which show a wrongful obstruction of the right of property show also a tort, and the plaintiff is entitled to recover Damages which he has suffered by the wrongful taking or detention, and also the value of the goods in case the property itself cannot be had.

The defendant must In all cases have actual or apparent possession and control of the property at the time the action is commenced. If the property has been lost or destroyed, or disposed of by him to the plaintiff’s knowledge, the action will not lie, but the plaintiff must bring Trespass or Trover. But if the defendant has been in the unlawful possession of the property, and the plaintiff brings Replevin without reason to know of any change in the circumstances, the defendant cannot defeat the action by showing that, unknown to the plaintiff, he had disposed

v. Pales, 16 Mass. 147 (1819); Whitman v. Merrill, 125 Mass. 127 (1878); New Hampshire: Hart v.
Boston & M. B. B., 72 N.H. 410, 56 Atl. 920 (1903)

Replevin will lie although the property is not in the actual possession of the defendant, if it is under his control, so that he may deliver it if he so desires.


of the property before issuance of the Writ; but the action will proceed, and the plaintiff may recover the value of the property. And where the plaintiff is in possession of the property when the Writ issues, but the property has been injured or depreciated through the defendant’s fault, or if he is in possession of a part only, the plaintiff is not bound to accept the property, or the part thereof— but may proceed with his action for Damages.

The Action will not lie to determine title and right to possession of property which is claimed by the defendant, but of which the plaintiff has possession at the time of suit.62


One cannot bring Rep)evia for property actually in his own possession against an officer who has merely levied on it. I liekey v. Hinsdale, 12 Mich. 99 (1863). It is not always necessary, however, that goods levied on shall have been actually removed, in order to constitute such a change of possession from the owner to the officer as will entitle the owner to maintain Replevin. Michigan: O’connor v. Gidday, 63 Mich. 630, 30 N.W. 313 (1886); Mcilhargey, 69 Mich. 377, 37 NW. 303 (1888); New York: Fonda v. Van home, 15 Wend. (N.Y.) 631, 30 Aatflee. 77 (1836).

Thus, where property was seized on an Attachment, an inventory made, and a portion of the goods packed up in a trunk, but left in the owner’s office, and a portion was removed, and the key of the office was retained for a time by the officer, it was held that this was a sufficient change of possession.

\[268\]

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

The Action, by Statute, Becomes Transitory

FROM the early use of this action as a remedy for a wrongful distress the place of taking became a material fact, to be truly laid and proved.” The strictness of this rule has been much relaxed, however, and in some of the states the action is now made transitory, but it seems still necessary that the Venue should be laid in the county in which the Cause of Action arose. Clearly, it should be accurately stated when such place is involved as a matter of essential description. Should it not be within the plaintiff’s power to ascertain the true locality, he may, it 'seems, aver a taking and detention, or a detention only, at any place where the property has been discovered in the possession of the defendant.”

When a Demand May be Necessary

A DEMAND is not necessary before bringing the Action, where the possession of the property was wrongfully obtained, as under a void sale by a pound master, or under an execution against a third person, or where the defendant acquired possession by fraud or trespass, or a sale voidable for fraud, so long as the goods are in the hands of the buyer.”63 On the other hand, in those states,

When property levied on has been left in the owner's possession, the fact that he became receptor for it to the officer does not entitle him to maintain Replevin. Morrison v. Lumbard, 48 Mid., 548, 12 N. W. 696 (1882).

§ 3. Gardner v. Humphrey, 10 Johns. (N.Y.) 53 (1813). See Dyers v. Ferguson, 41 Or. 77, 05 1' ac. 1067, 08 Rae. 5 (1902).


where the action is allowed to recover property lawfully obtained, but unlawfully detained, the Declaration, if it does not show an unlawful taking, but relies merely on an unlawful detention, must allege demand and a refusal to surrender the property; a demand being necessary to render the detention unlawful."

DECLARATION IN REPLEVIN—ESSENTIAL

ALLEGATIONS: (4) TUE DAMAGES

133. The Declaration must state Damages which are the legal and natural consequences of the wrongful act.

The Allegation of value is essential, and such general and special damages as are present should be stated, and laid high enough to cover the actual loss.

As the object of this action is the recovery of the thing itself, the damages recoverable will be generally for the unlawful taking and detention, or for the latter where the taking is justified; and the allegation here referred to is the statement of at least a nominal sum in the declaration to cover the loss so sustained. An allegation of some damage is always essential, and the plaintiff may often recover compensation for the use of the property, as well as vindictive or punitive damages, and damages may be assessed up to the time of the trial.


67. See Washington Tee Co. v. Webster, 02 Me, 341,

16 Am.Bep. 462 (1873); toungevloge v. Knox, 44 Fla. 743, 33 South. 427 (1902).


Sec. 133

ACTION OF REPLEVIN

The Judgment

ASSUMING that the Sheriff had found and delivered the distrained chattel to the plaintiff-tenant, in the action which followed the Judgment for the plaintiff was for the recovery of Damages for the taking and detention of the chattels—the horse and plough—together with costs. Where the property was not returned to the plaintiff, he recovered in addition the value of
the property still detained.\textsuperscript{70}

In the event of a Judgment by default, where the Damages were not confessed, a Writ of Inquiry issued to assess them, the amount of which turned on the result of the Sheriff's effort to recover the chattels in question.”

The nature of the Judgment, when for the defendant, varied. But under the general Common Law Rule he was adjudged return of the property, without Damages or costs.\textsuperscript{72} If the defendant proceeded under the Statute of 7 Hen. VIII (1515) \textsuperscript{7} which provided that

-the recoverer may distraint for the rents and services of the tenant, fermor, etc., and 21 Hen. VIII (1529) \textsuperscript{8} which provided that the avowant shall recover damages and costs of suit, he recovered, after Verdict in his favor, his Damages and costs, in the same manner as the plaintiff might have done, if he had

\textsuperscript{69} 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions with Precedents and Forms, c. II, Of the Forms of Action, 186, Section III, Replevin (16th ed. by Perkins, Springfield, 1876).

\textsuperscript{70} wilkinson, The Practice in the Action of Replevin, with a Collection of Practical Forms, 43 (London, 1825).

\textsuperscript{71} 2 Roscoe, Law of Actions Relating to Real Property, 645 (London, 1825).

\textsuperscript{72} 1 Esplnasse, Settling of Evidence for Trial at Nisi Prius and the preparing and Arranging of Necessary Proofs, 375 (Philadelphia, 1822).

\textsuperscript{73} c. 4, § 3, 4 Statutes at Large 144.

recovered from the defendant.\textsuperscript{75} By the Statute of 17 Car. II (1665) \textsuperscript{76} when Judgment was given on Demurrer for the defendant Avowing or making Cognizance for any rent, he was entitled to a Writ of Inquiry as to the value of the property distrained, and a Judgment for the arrears of rent admitted by the Judgment to the amount of the value of the property distrained, together with Costs.” Apparently, it was optional with the defendant whether he would take Judgment under this last Statute alone, or in addition to the Common-Law, Judgment for a return of the property. If, however, the Judgment were taken under the Statute along with the Common-Law Judgment for a return, it operated as a stay of the Writ for the Return of the goods. If, under Section 21 of the same Chapter and Statute, the plaintiff was nonsuited before issue joined, the defendant was entitled to an Inquiry as to the amount of rent in arrear, and the value of the property distrained, upon which finding Judgment went in his favor as on Demurrer. In such case he had the option to sue out the Writ of Return, or have Execution for the Damages.”

\textsuperscript{74} 2 Roscoe, Law of Actions Relating to Real Property, 046 (London, 1825).

\textsuperscript{75} e, 7, § 3, which provided: “And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That if Judgment in any of the Courts aforesaid be given upon Demurrer for the Avowant, or him that maketh Cognizance for any Rent, the Court shall, at the Prayer of the Defendant, award a Writ to inquire of the Value of such Distress; and upon the Return thereof Judgment shall be given for the Avowant, or him that makes Cognizance as aforesaid, for the Arrears alleged to be behind in such Avowry or Cognizance, if the Goods or Cattle so distrained shall amount to that Value; and in case they shall not amount to that Value, then for so much as the said Goods or Cattle so distrained amount unto, together with his full Costs of Suit, and shall have like Execution as aforesaid.”


\textsuperscript{77} c. 19, § 3, 4 Statutes at Large 196.

\textsuperscript{78} OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Cl. 12

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

13t Under Modern Codes and Practice Acts Replevin is generally Expanded so as to cover all forms of taking, whether lawful or unlawful, and may be maintained in circumstances where either Replevin or Detinue would lie at the Common Law.

AS we have previously observed in Mennic

Page 286 of 735
This was the situation when the Codes

purported to abolish the Common Law Actions. What effect, then, has the Code had upon the Action? The answer to this question may be found in the 1901 New York case of *Sinnott v. Felock,*" in which the plaintiff brought an action to recover certain chattels, which the Court referred to as an Action of Replevin, and in which it was alleged the plaintiff had been induced to sell the chattels to the defendant by fraud on the part of the latter. In his Opening Statement the plaintiff’s counsel conceded that prior to a demand for the return of the goods and before the Commencement of the Action, the chattels had been taken from the defendant on an Execution against him and sold, so that at the time of such


80. 29 N.Jt. 195, 80 Am.Dec. 207 (1801).


The determination of this issue turned, therefore, upon an examination and consideration of the Action of Replevin as it existed under the New York Code and Statutes. In affirming the Judgment for defendant, and in speaking for the Court of Appeals, Cullen, J., declared: 82

‘Originally at Common Law the Action of Replevin lay to recover the possession of goods illegally distrained by a landlord. The primary object of the Action was to recover possession of the specific chattels. The Form of Action was so useful that the action was extended to nearly all cases of unlawful caption or detention of chattels where it was sought to recover the chattels in specie. In many cases where the plaintiff was unable to obtain the return of the chattels he could recover in the action their value. Still, the action remained essentially one to recover the possession of chattels as distinguished from actions in Trespass or Trover to recover Damages for the seizure or for the value of the property. There were many technical rules in force relating to this Form of Action, which at times made proceedings under it difficult, and in 1788 a Statute was passed in this state (1 Rt.1813, p. 31) to simplify the procedure. It directed the form of plaint before the Sheriff in which the plea was ‘of taking and unjustly detaining’ beasts, goods or chattels. Afterwards, the Revised

Sect. 134

**ACTION OF REPLEVIN**

Statutes prescribed the rules governing actions of Replevin and the procedure therein. (Title 12, chap. 8, part 3.) In the original note of the revisers is stated their intention to so extend the Action of Replevin ‘as to make it a substitute for Detinue, and a Concurrent Remedy in all cases of the unlawful caption or detention of personal property, with Trespass and Prover.’ We do not think the revisers used the term ‘Concurrent’ as meaning ‘Co-extensive,’ for by Section 6, title 12, it is provided that the Action shall in all cases be commenced by Writ, the Form of which is prescribed as follows: ‘Whereas A.B. complains that C.D. has taken, and does unjustly detain (or, “does unjustly detain,” as the case may be).’
The Execution in the Action required the Sheriff to Replevin the goods if they could be found and deliver them to the plaintiff, and in case they could not be obtained to collect their value with the damages and costs from the property of the defendant. The provisions of chapter 2 of title 7 of the Code of Procedure of 1848, entitled ‘Claim and Delivery of Personal Property,’ operated as a substitute for those of the Revised Statutes. They direct that at the Commencement of the Action the plaintiff may replevy the chattels, but in the Affidavit to obtain the writ there is required the statement that the defendant ‘unjustly detains’ them. The provisions of the present Code of Civil Procedure in the article entitled ‘Action to recover a chattel’ (§ 1689 to § 1730), are substantially the same as those of the old Code.

The question several times arose, under the Code of Procedure whether Replevin could be maintained against a party who was not in possession, either actual or constructive, of The chattels, and was the subject of conflicting decisions in the Supreme Court and in the Superior Court of New York. It finally came to this Court in Nichols v. Michael, (23 N.Y. 264) This was also a case of fraudulent purchase of goods in which the defendant, before the action was brought, had voluntarily transferred the goods to his assignee. It was held that the Action could be maintained. ...

“*It is urged that whatever may have been* originally the nature and character of an Action of Replevin, there is now no longer reason for maintaining a distinction between it and an Action for Conversion, and that it would conduce greatly to the speedy administration of justice to permit the use of the first Form of Action as a substitute for the second. A good deal may be said in favor of this claim, great as would be the innovation resulting in its acceptance. There is, however, a serious objection to adopting this view of an Action of Replevin. If a defendant is arrested in an Action to recover a chattel he can be discharged only upon giving a bond for the return of the chattel or the full payment of any judgment that may be recovered against him; while in an Action for Conversion the bond is conditioned only for his personal surrender to any mandate or final Judgment against him. (Code Civ. Pro. § 575.) The Form of the Action, therefore, seriously affects the rights of the defendant against whom it is brought. While this consideration should not induce us to limit the Scope of an Action of Replevin except within the bounds prescribed by Statute and the authorities, it may well restrain us from taking any radical departure in the Law.”

Section 1093 of the New York Civil Practice Act, which provided that a defendant, liv answer, could defend on the ground that a third person was entitled to the chattel, without connectin~ himself with a latter’s title, was held not applicable to wrongful taking cases; it was applicable to the wrongful detention cases. Griffin! Receiver v. fling Island By. Co., 101 N.Y. 348, 4 N.E. 740 (1886); Hofferinan v. Simmons, 290 N.Y. 449, 49 N.E.(2d) 523 (1943). For an extended discussion of the New York decisions and Statutes see Article by Finkelstein, The Plea of Property in a Stranger in Replevin, 23 col.L.Rev. 652 (1923). Section 7101 of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, 1968, provides that, “An action under this article may be brought to try the right to possession of a chattel.” The intent of this defendant, contrary to the Common Law Rule, is new section Is that the decision should he based up- permitted to retain the property upon posting a on the relative possessory rights of the parties, bond. To the same effect, see Section 514, CaliforUnder Modern Statutes, such as Section 7103 of the ala Civil Procedure Code, West’s Civil Procedure New York Civil Practice Law and Rules (1968), the Probate Codes (1941) 230.

CHAPTER 13

THE ACTION OF DEBT

In Debt on a Judgment.


1. In general, on the origin, history and development of the Action of Debt, see:

Treatises:

Articles:


Having considered the Allegations essen- of Trespass, Trespass on the Case, Trover, hal to establish liability in the Tort actions Ejectment, Detinue and Replevin, we shall

273

274

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 13

in this and succeeding chapters consider the allegations necessary to show liability in the Contract Actions of Debt, Covenant, Account, Special Assumpsit and General (Indebitatus) Assumpsit.

Prima Facie Case in Contract Actions

IN Contract Actions the plaintiff's prima facie case consists in showing the normal affirmative elements of a valid contract and the coming into operation of an affirmative contractual duty; on the other hand, negative elements, such as fraud or illegality, which destroy the validity of the contract, and Matters of Excuse and Discharge, as impossibility, performance, or release, must come from the defendant, to prevent plaintiff’s recovery. Thus, where the plaintiff has proved the existence of the debt sued on, the burden of proving payment is on the defendant. The plaintiff must allege nonpayment of the money demand to make the Declaration perfect on its face; but payment is an Affirmative Defense, even in many jurisdictions where it may be raised by the defendant under a Denial. Thus negative averments may be necessary to the plaintiff’s pleading, though they constitute no part of his original substantive cause of action which he is called upon to prove or establish.

In General, on Imprisonment for Debt, see:


Relating to Insolvent Debtors (London 1838).


Comment: To Gaol for Debt In Wisconsin, 1952 Wis. L.Rev. 764.

In Actions upon Contracts for Damages, the plaintiff must assign the breach by the defendant which is relied upon as ground for recovery, and allege the essential facts to apprise the defendant in what particulars he has failed to perform. But when the plaintiff pleads or proves the contract, and the fulfillment of conditions to create an operative duty of performance by the defendant as by tender or performance on his own part, it is then incumbent upon the defendant to prove performance, or sufficient excuse for nonperformance as an Affirmative Defense, without proof of breach on behalf of the plaintiff. Even the burden of proving the General Allegation of Performance by the plaintiff as a Condition Precedent is taken off the plaintiff in Modern English Practice, unless the defendant specially pleads nonperformance of some Condition.

As the first of the Contract Actions we shall treat with the Action of Debt, and, as in the case of the Tort Actions, one of our principal considerations is, what facts must be alleged in order to state a good cause of action?

SCAPE OF THE ACTION

135. The Action of Debt lies where a party claims the recovery of a debt; that is, a liquidated or certain sum of money due him. The Action is based upon Contract, but the Contract may be Implied, either in Fact or in Law, as well as being Express; and it may be either a Simple Contract or a Specialty. The most common instances of its use are for debts:

(I) Upon Unilateral Contracts Express or Implied in Fact;
(II) Upon Quasi Contractual Obligations having the force and effect of Simple Contracts;
(III) Upon Bonds and Covenants under Seal;
(IV) Upon Judgments or Obligations of Record;
(V) Upon Obligations Imposed by Statute.

Sec. 135

ACTION OF DEBT

The Action of Debt will not lie:

(I) To recover Unliquidated Damages for Breach of a Promise;
(II) Nor, generally, to recover an Installment of a Debt, payable in Installments before the Whole is Due;
(III) Nor on a Promise to pay out of a Particular Fund, or in a Particular Kind of Money, or in Property or Services,

The Nature of the Obligation of a Debt, Cawsa Debendi

AS Debt was and, in its nature, is a Real Action, the object of which is to recover a yes which belongs to the plaintiff, it is proprietary in character. By this we mean

2. The Action of Debt was the Common Law’s remedy for the enforcement of its earliest known obligations. See article by Pollock, Contracts in Early English Law, 6 Harv.L.Rev. 50 (1893).

3. “This Action of Debt was nothing in essence but an action in Detinue for the recovery of money unjustly detained, together with Damages for the said wrongful detention, such Damages being claimed, not in the Writ, but in the plaintiff’s first count.” See article by Stone, Debt at the Time of the Year Books, 30 L.Qdtev. 61, 62 (1920). See, also, 3 Holdsworth, History of English Law, c, Ill, Contract and Quasi-Contract, 425 (3d ed. Boston, 1927).

An Action for the Recovery of a Debt was thought of as like an action for the recovery of a book lent, or for the recovery of a plot of land
which the defendant unjustly detained from the plaintiff.

This crude and primitive Common-Law Conception of Debt, that the creditor was demanding the return of his own money, and that the action was "proprietary" or "reU," seems to be somewhat overemphasized by many legal scholars. See article by Henry, Consideration In Contracts, 601 A.D. to 1520 A.D., 26 Yale L.J. 664, 690—904 (1017).

Debt was indeed a "proprietary action," in the sense of being the vindication or enforcement of a right. The Judgment was not for Damages for breach of promise, but for recovery of the debt itself. See Chief Justice Vaughan, in Edgecomb v. Dee, Vaughan 89, 124 Eng.Rep. 984 (1670); Ames, Lectures on Legal History, Lecture XIV. Implied Assumpsit, 148, 150—151 (Cambridge 1913).

It is said that the duty to restore the money arose not because the debtor had promised or contracted to pay, but because of some transaction, as that he had borrowed it or received value, known as quid pro quo. But the promise or agreement to pay the it does not lie for Damages as reparation for a tort, nor does it proceed upon the theory that the plaintiff’s right to recover, or the defendant’s obligation to surrender the property sued for, is grounded upon a promise. The property sought, whether land, a corporeal chattel, or a sum of money, is demanded because the defendant is withholding something which rightfully belongs to the plaintiff.4

(1) Title as the Basis of the Action of Debt.—Thus, if the plaintiff is to recover, it must be on the basis of some form of title, clear of any claim grounded in tort and independent of any promise. There are two possibilities as to such title: (1) where the goods or money in issue were originally the property of the plaintiff and his claim to recover is based on a prior vested interest,

price was just as much a part of the debt transaction as the delivery of the ‘-es. See article by Henry, Consideration in Contracts, 601 A.D. to 1520 AD., 26 Yale Li. 664, 694 (1917).

In Debt the word “agreed” must be used instead of “promised,” but this is mere form. McGinnity v. Laguerenne, 5 Gil. (Ill.) 101 (1848).

4. On Debt for the recovery of a specific amount of unascertained chattels, see Ames, Lectures on Legal History, Lecture VII, Debt, 89 (Cambridge 1913).

This action gives specific enforcement of the duty to pay. It gives the specific thing demanded, namely, the recovery of a debt eo nomine and in numero, and not merely the recovery of damages. 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Action, with Precedents end Forms, c. II. Of the Forms of Action, 121 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield 1876); Tennessee: Thoinpsos v. French, 18 Tenn. 452 (1837); Virg.,wa: Minnick v. Williams, 77 Va. 758 (1883).

The action does not lie for the breach of a sealed contract to convey land, or to recover purchase money paid. The action being for the breach, and not for a sum of money Co nomine and in numero, it should be Covenant. Haynes v. Lucas, 50 Ill. 436 (1869).

It would lie to recover the purchase money as a debt arising from the obligation created by law to repay It as money had and received. The terms “sum certain” and debt eo nomine and in numero are used to distinguish a claim for a liquidated debt from a claim for unliquidated damages, which are not ascertainable in amount.

REFLECTIONS ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE COMMON LAW

As, for example, where A bailed a chattel to B, or B wrongfully took A’s chattel; or (2) where originally the property was the property of the defendant, the present possessor, but as a result of the happening of some subsequent event, he ought, debet, to deliver it to the plaintiff who has become entitled to recover it. If the plaintiff’s claim is based on a previously vested title, he is demanding the land, chattel or money as a jus in re, that is, a right which belongs to a person, absolutely and immediately, in a thing; if, however, the plaintiff’s claim is grounded on a right to a thing now in the defendant’s possession, a res which as yet has never been in the plaintiff’s possession, but to which the plaintiff, by operation of law is presently entitled, this right of the plaintiff to have the thing is known as a jus ad rem, or a right which belongs to a person only mediately and relatively, and has for its foundation an obligation incurred by a particular person.

In the Personal Action of Debt-Detinue, both forms of title were available, that is, the plaintiff in such action might recover because the goods or the money belonged to him originally or because, by operation of law, or otherwise, he had acquired a right to recover the property which as yet was still in the defendant’s possession. And it was this distinction as to title which ultimately led to the differentiation between Debt in the Detinet and Debt in the Debet et Detinet; that is, between the situation in which A bailed his horse, Damascus, to B, for thirty days.
and where A loaned $.3 $500 for thirty days; in the first case, B acquired possession, but not title, hence when A sues B at the end of the thirty days, after demand, he is relying on a prior vested title, a _jus in re_; in the second case, B acquired both possession and title, hence when A sued B to recover the ~500, he was suing by virtue of an accruing title, a _jus ad rem_.

(II) Debt in the Detinet, or for Goods not Pecuniary.—In theory at least that Form of the Action which lay for the recovery of a _certain quantity of specified goods_ and chattels, _may_ still be maintained upon an _Executed Contract_.

Apparently the last case

5. Debt will lie on any Simple Contract to recover money due upon an Executed Consideration, whether the contract is verbal or written, express or unplied. People v. Dummer, 274 Ill. 637, 111 N.E. 934 (1916).

Simple Contract Debts, of course, must be founded on a _quid pro quo_ or Executed Consideration. See article _by Ames_, Parol Contracts Prior to Assumpsit, S Harv. L. Rev., 252 (1895).

It also lies to enforce a quasi contractual obligation to pay a sum certain. Van Deusen v. 13mm, 18 Pick. (Mass.) 229, 29 Am-Dec. 582 (1836).

Debt also lies at the suit of a person entitled to costs in an action, either as a party or as an officer, there being an implied contract. Doyle v. Wilkinson, 220 Ill. 430, 11 N.E. 590 (1887).


It will lie to recover money lent, money paid by the plaintiff to the defendant, money bad and received by the defendant for the use of the plaintiff, or the balance _due on an_ Account Stated. 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Action, with Precedents and Forms, e. U, _Of the_ Forms of Action, 122 (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield, 1876); English: Speafre _v._ Richards, Hob. 207, 80 Eng. Rep., 353 (1617); Tennessee: Young v. Hawkins, 4 Verg. (Penna.) 171 (1838).

Debt will lie to recover interest due on the loan or forbearance of money: English: Berries _v._ Jamieson, 5 T.R. 553, 101 Eng. Rep. 310 (1794); Pennsylvania: Sparks _v._ Garrigues, 1 Bin. (Pa.) 152 (18043); for work and labor, or for work, labor and materials: Comyn Digest, “Debt” B (Philadelphia 1824); Maine: Seretto _v._ Stockland, S. P. & O. II. By. Co., 102 Me. 140, 63 A. 651 (WOO); Massachusetts: Smith _v._ Proprietors of First Congregational Meetinghouse in Lowell, S Pick. (Mass.) 178 (1329); Tennessee: Thompson _v._ French, 18 Penn. 452 (1837).

Debt will lie for goods sold and Delivered, or Bargained and Sold. English: Emery _v._ FeU, 2 P.R. 28, 100 Eng. Rep. 16 (1787); Federal: Dillingham _v._ Skeln, 1 Hempst. 181, Fed. Cas. No. 3912a (1882).

Sec. 135

**ACTION OF DEBT**

in which Debt was used to recover specific _chattels was that_ of the Earl of Faimauth _v._ George, decided in 1828, in which the plaintiff sought to recover a certain number of fishes alleged to be due by way of toll for the use by the fishing boats of a capstan which the plaintiff maintained on the shore. _The Action was said to be_ Debt _in the detinet_, the Allegation that the defendant _debet_, being omitted. In 1769 Blackstone _observed that_ this Form of Debt was “neither more nor less than a mere _Writ of Detinue_,”

_and he insisted that nothing but money could_ constitute a debt, which view has been approved by certain American courts. Keigwin, however, declares: “As a matter of _historical fact, however_, Detinue and Debt for goods have always been distinct, the former lying for goods previously the property of the plaintiff, and going upon his _jus in re_, while Debt in the _detinet_ went for a body of goods to which, as to a sum of money, the plaintiff was entitled, proceeding upon his
Thus generally in all cases where the Consideration has been Executed and where there is an absolute duty to pay In money the value of the performance rendered, there Debt on Simple Contract or Indebitatus Assumpsit is a proper remedy. Debt lies in all cases where the Law Courts can properly give specific performance of a duty to pay money, namely, where the duty is an absolute one, not subject to any conditions.

For the plaintiff to recover in Debt, therefore, he must set forth in his Declaration a right to the thing demanded; that such right arises from something other than a promise or voluntary assumption; it must, in truth, be independent of what we now understand as a contractual obligation. Under the ancient law, matter which created in one person a right to something in the possession of another, was called a causa debendi, or “a ground of indebtedness, a basis of the duty to deliver, the origin of an obligation to pay.” As Pollock and Maitland said:

“It enters no one’s head that a promise is the ground of this action. No pleader propounding such an action will think of beginning his Declaration with ‘whereas the defendant promised to pay,’ he will begin with ‘whereas the plaintiff lent or (as the 0. Keigwin, The Action of Debt, Pt. II, 12 Geo.L.J. 25, 29-30 (1923).

10. Where one of the parties to the Action of Debt died, the Form of Declaring was in Debt in the detinet, not in Debt in the dsbet et detinet. It was said that these distinctions, which require the Declaring to be only in the detinet, where one of the original parties died, were held to be substantive as late as 1619. Beynell v. Langcastie, Croine, 545, 79 Eng.Rep. 467. A defect as to wording was, however, only available on Special Demurrer after the Statute of 4 Anne, e. 16, c. 1 (1705). Child ress v. Emory, S Wheat. (U.S.) 642. But according to 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Forms, e. III, Of Pleading in General, 284, note b (16th Am. ed. by Perkins, Springfield, 1876), an Improper use of the word “debet” was not even subject to a Special Demurrer, being treated as mere surplusage.


278

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 13

case may be) sold or leased to the defendant.’ In short, he will mention some causa debendi, and the cause will not be a promise.”

(III) A Parol Promise Created No Obligation During the Developmental Stages of Debt.—Let us, by way of illustration, suppose that A undertook to sell his horse, Damascus, to B, the defendant, in exchange for two steers, that A delivered Damascus to B, and that B thereupon refused to deliver the steers, but retains them in his possession. Clearly A is entitled to recover the steers. But is this so because B has Executed a Contract Obligating himself to make delivery? Certainly not, and, if this were the only basis of A’s claim, he could not have recovered; the Court might well have told him that he deserved to lose his horse because of his folly in trusting B’s word. In other words, at the time when Debt was reaching maturity, a parol promise, which several Centuries later became enforceable in Special Assumpsit, created no legal obligation; the obligation, if any, was merely moral, and hence
not justiciable. In such a case, however, A would recover, as B has received a benefit at his expense, and one who profits by the act of another ought, debet, to compensate that other in a manner commensurate with the benefit conferred. Or to put it in technical language, B, having received A’s horse, ought to render a quid pro quo, or the steers, as a balance against the horse, the so-called “Executed Consideration.” Thus, where a Simple Contract has been executed on one side so as to transfer a quid pro quo, or a benefit to the other side, the benefit received creates in the receiver, by operation of Law, a legal duty to render an equivalent benefit to the plaintiff, that is, it creates an indebtedness, which may be regarded as an example of causa debendi. And these causa debendi, vaguely understood in the early stages of development, gradually took on definite form, and were ultimately clarified as being derived from three sources, Simple Contracts, Specialties and Records, including Statutes.

DEBT—DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

136. Debt was distinguished from Special Assumpsit in that it lays for the recovery of a Sum Certain; whereas the latter was for the recovery of Damages; Debt was a concurrent remedy with Indebitatus Assumpsit in the field of Simple (Executed) Contract, but in being available upon Specialties, Records and Statutes, it was broader than the latter action. Debt and Covenant were concurrent remedies where the Damages upon breach of the Sealed Instrument were liquidated. And Debt, Special Assumpsit and Indebitatus Assumpsit were concurrent remedies, where, over and above a Simple (Executed) Contract, there was also an Express Promise which had been breached.

SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT is to be distinguished from Debt, in that it lies for the Breach of a Modern Contract, in which what is recovered is Damages, whereas, when we say that Debt lies on a Simple Contract, we are referring to the early Common-Law Concept of what is termed “a Simple Executed Contract,” which term is descriptively not of a contract in the modern sense, but in the sense that the plaintiff has delivered a quid pro quo to the defendant, for which the defendant has failed to pay, or has otherwise become indebted to the plaintiff by operation of law. And it is of course settled, as previously observed, that Debt will not lie upon a promise for a promise, as in such case there is no quid pro quo passing to the defendant.

Debt is to be distinguished from Indebitatus Assumpsit, being in many respects much broader than the latter action. It is true that Debt and Indebitatus Assumpsit are concurrent remedies in the Field of Simple (Executed) Contract, but Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie upon a Sealed Contract, a Record, or, with some exceptions, upon a Statute. In the sense that Indebitatus Assumpsit came to be the remedy for recovery of Quasi-Contractual Obligations through the use of the Common Counts, it may be said to be broader than Debt. This advantage was later lessened by the fact that in some jurisdictions Debt also came to be recognized as a Quasi-Contractual Remedy, by a process which is not clear. And, of course, Debt was subject to Wager of Law, whereas Indebitatus Assumpsit was not, and it was this fact which led to the obsolescence of Debt some time after Slade’s Case when the Two Actions were concurrent remedies on a Simple (Executed) Contract.

Generally, Debt and Covenant are exclusive remedies, except where the amount of Damages due upon the breach of a sealed instrument are liquidated. In such instance, Debt and Covenant are concurrent remedies; where, however, the Damages upon Breach of a Specialty are unliquidated, Covenant is the only remedy.

Finally, under certain circumstances, Debt, Special Assumpsit and Indebitatus Assump

12. On the early attempts at classifying the varieties of debt, see Fifoot, History and Sources of the Common Law, e. 10, Debt, 223 (London 1049), in which he cites a case in which it was said that “each writ of Debt is general and in one form, but the count is Special and makes mention of the Contract, the Obligation or the Record, as the case requires.” Anonymous, TM, ii lien. IV, f. 73, p. 11 (1410).

Originally this concurrence did not obtain; Cov~


sit, were concurrent remedies. To illustrate, let us suppose that A says to B, “I will deliver ten cords of wood to you at five dollars a cord.” to which B replies, “Go ahead and deliver it and I will pay for it.” A then delivers the wood, but B refuses to pay. Debt will lie, for a quid pro quo—a benefit—has passed from A to B and B has failed to give A what, by operation of law, belongs to him. Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie as it is a concurrent remedy with Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract; and Special Assumpsit will also lie, because over and above the benefit received by B—the delivery of the wood—the defendant B has breached his express promise to pay. Thus, Debt, Special Assumpsit, and Indebitatus Assumpsit were concurrent remedies, where, over and above a Simple (Executed) Contract, there was also an Express Promise which had been breached.

FORMS OF DECLARATIONS
137. Included in this section are forms of Declarations in Debt on a Simple Contract, Debt on a Spedalty, Debt on a Statute, and Debt on a Judgment.

DECLARATION IN DEBT ON SIMPLE

CONTRACT

IN THE KING’S BENCH, Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

to wit, C.D. was summoned to answer A.B. of a plea that he render to the said A.B. the sum of £_____ of good and lawful money of Great Britain, which he owes to and unjustly detains from him.

And thereupon the said A.R. by his attorney, complains: For that whereas the said C.D. heretofore, to wit, on the day of _____ in the year of our Lord ____ at ______ in the county of ______ was indebted to the said LB. in the sum of L____ of lawful money of Great Britain, for divers goods, wares, and merchandise by the said AR. before that time sold and delivered to the said C.D., at his special instance and request, to be paid by the said C.D. to the said A.B. when he, the said C.D. should be thereto afterwards requested; whereby, and by reason of the said last-mentioned sum of money being and remaining wholly unpaid, an action hath accitted to the said LB. to demand and have of and from the said C.D. the said sum of £____ above demanded. Yet the said C.D. (although often requested) hath not as yet paid the said sum of £____ above demanded, or any part thereof, to the said A.R., but so to do hath hitherto wholly refused, and still refuses, to the damage of the said A.B. of £____; and therefore he brings his suit, &c.


DECLARATION IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY & ON A COMMON MONEY BOND

IN THE COURT OF KING’S BENCH (or Common Pleas).

On the day of AD.

(Venue) to wit. A.B. by E.F. his attorney (or in his own proper person) complains of CD. who has been summoned to answer the said A.B. (or plaintiff) in an action on debt on a common money bond. For that whereas the defendant, on the day of ______, by his certain writing obligatory sealed with his seal, and now shown to the said Court here, acknowledged himself to be held and firmly bound to the plaintiff in the sum of £____ above demanded, to be paid to the plaintiff,
Debt on a Specialty and Covenant are concurrent remedies where the amount Joe upon the breach of a sealed instrument is a sum certain or a liquidated amount, Anonymous, 3 Lew. 119, 74 Eng.Rep. 570 (1585).

Wager of law had no application in Debt on a Specialty. Morgan, The Study of Law, c VI, Debt, 02 (2d ed. Chicago 1948).

yet the defendant (although often requested so to do) hath not as yet paid the said sum of £ above demanded, or any part thereof, to the plaintiff, but hath hitherto wholly neglected and refused, and still neglects and refuses to do so; to the damage of the plaintiff of £ and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

2 CHITTY, Precedents in Pleading, 43S (Springfield 1859).

DECLARATION IN DEBT ON A STATUTE

IN THE KING’S BENCH [or Common
Pleas], Term, in the ___ Year of the reign of King

For that whereas the defendant before and at the time of the giving of the notice and making the demand as hereinafter mentioned, and from thence until a certain day, to wit, the Day of ___ held and enjoyed a certain

messuage and premises, with the appurtenances, as tenant thereof to the plaintiff, to wit, from year to year, for so long a time as the plaintiff and defendant should respectively please, the reversion of the said premises, with the appurtenances, during all that time belonging to the plaintiff; and thereupon, whilst the defendant so held and enjoyed the said tenements, with the appurtenances, as tenant thereof to the plaintiff as aforesaid, and whilst the said reversion thereof belonged to the plaintiff as aforesaid, to wit, on [8cc.] the plaintiff gave notice in writing to the defendant, and then and there demanded of and required the defendant to deliver up the possession of the said tenements, with the appurtenances, to the plaintiff, on the said

day of ___ A.D.; and the plaintiff avers that the tenancy aforesaid

This specific form was used by a landlord who sought to recover Debt on the Statute of 2 Oco. II, c 28, 1 (1728) for double value for holding over after notice to quit, and was taken in substance from the form used in Wilkinson v. Ball, 3 Bing N.O. 508, 132 Eng.Rep. 506 (1837).

Sec. 137

ACTION OF DEBT

ended and was duly determined on the last-mentioned day by the said notice. Nevertheless the defendant, not regarding the statute in such case made and provided, did not nor would, on the determination of the said term and tenancy as aforesaid, deliver the possession of the said tenements, with the appurtenances, to the plaintiff, according to the said notice so given, and the demand so made as aforesaid, but wholly neglected and refused so to do; and on the contrary thereof, the defendant willfully held over the said tenements, with the appurtenances, after the determination of the said term and tenancy, and after the said notice had expired, and after the said demand so made as aforesaid, for a long space of time, to wit, for the space of time next following, during all which time the defendant did keep the plaintiff out of the possession of the said tenements, with the appurtenances, (he, the plaintiff, during all that time being entitled to the possession thereof), contrary to the form of the statute in such case mentioned and provided; and the plaintiff avers, that the said tenements, with the appurtenances, during the said time of holding over the same, and keeping the plaintiff out of the possession thereof as aforesaid, were of great value, to wit, the yearly value of £ and by reason of the premises and by force of the statute in such case made and provided, the defendant became liable to pay the plaintiff a large sum of money, to wit, the sum of £ being at the rate of double the yearly value of the said tenements, with the appurtenances, for so long as the same were so detained as aforesaid; and thereby and by force of the said statute, an action hath accrued to the plaintiff, to demand and have of and from the defendant the said sum of £ being the sum above demanded, yet the defendant hath not paid the same or any part thereof, to the damage of the plaintiff of £ and therefore he brings his suit, &c.

2 CHITTY, Precedents in Pleading, 493 (Springfield, 1859).

DECLARATION IN DEBT ON A JUDGMENT"
IN THE KING’S BENCH [or Common Pleas], Term, in the year of the reign of King

For that whereas the plaintiff heretofore, to wit, in Term, in the year of our Lord [or 'on the day of A.D.'], in the Court of our Lord the King at Westminster, in the county of Middlesex, by the consideration and judgment of the said Court, recovered against the defendant in the sum of £__ above demanded, which in and by the said Court was then and there adjudged to the plaintiff for his damages, which he had sustained as well by reason of the non-performance by the defendant of certain promises and undertakings, then lately made by the defendant to the plaintiff, as for his costs and charges, by him about his suit in that behalf expended, whereof the defendant was convicted as by the record and proceedings thereof, remaining in the said Court of our said Lord the King, more fully appears; which said judgment still remains in full force and effect, unreversed, and unsatisfied, and not otherwise vacated; and the plaintiff hath not obtained any execution or satisfaction of or upon the said judgment; whereby an action hath accrued to the plaintiff to demand and have,

19. The Judgment in Debt on a Record provides that the plaintiff “do have and recover of the defendant” a given sum of money or a specific article. This language implies that the plaintiff is entitled not to something new, but to regain property which belongs to him although unlawfully possessed by the defendant, Likewise with a Becogoizance entered upon the Records of a Court declaring one person indebted to another. In both cases the Judgment establishes the plaintiff’s right to the money or the chattel and at the same time imposes upon the defendant a duty to pay the money declared due or to deliver the specific chattel to the complainant. Once the indebtedness is established by a Record, Debt, by reason of its proprietary nature, becomes an effective remedy.

282

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. ia

of and from the defendant the said sum of £__ above demanded, yet the defendant hath not paid the same or any part thereof, to the plaintiff’s damage of £

and thereupon he brings his suit, Sac.

2 CHITTY, Precedents in Pleading, 480 (Springfield, 1859).

DECLARATION IN DEBT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

138. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration are:
(I) In Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract:
   (A) A Statement of the Debt and quid pro quo;
   (B) The Breach—Nonpayment;
   (C) The Damages (II) In Debt on Specialty:
   (A) A Statement of the Execution of the Specialty;
   (B) Nonpayment by the defendant;
   (C) The Damages (III) In Debt on Statutes:
   (A) A Statement of the Act or Omission in Violation of the Statute;
   (B) Nonpayment of the Debt or Penalty;
   (C) The Damages
   (W) In Debt on Judgments:
   (A) A Statement of the Judgment;
   (B) Nonpayment or Nonsatisfaction;
   (C) The Damages

For Sum Certain Only

THE Mode of Stating the Cause of Action in Debt varies according to the source or basis of the obligation, which may be either a Simple (Executed) Contract, a Specialty, a Statute, or a Judgment. However, before
considering the Essential Allegations applicable to each of the Four Varieties of Debt, it may be helpful to discuss in more detail the requirement that the action must be for a sum certain—a requirement which is common in each of the Four Forms of Debt.

The action of Debt lies only for a liquidated sum of money; that is, a pecuniary demand where the amount due is fixed and specific or where it can readily be reduced to certainty by a mathematical computation. Blackstone tells us that in an Action of Debt the plaintiff must prove the whole debt he claims, or recover nothing at all, for the debt is only a single cause of action fixed and determined, and which, therefore, if the proof varies from the claim, cannot be looked upon as the same contract whereof the performance is sued for. “If, therefore, I bring an action for £30, I am not at liberty to prove a debt of £20 and recover a Verdict thereon, any more than, if I bring an Action of Detinue for a horse, I cannot thereby recover an ox.”

In Rudder v. Price, however, Lord Loughborough says, that while the demand in an Action of Debt must have been for a sum certain in its nature, yet it was by no means so necessary that the amount be set out precisely that less could not be recovered.

A promise to pay so much as certain services or goods were worth would not formerly support a Count in Debt, as the price must be fixed. But at the present day either Debt or Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie for the reasonable value of services or goods, though not fixed by the parties. If the claim is for the value of something given as contrasted with unliquidated damages, that is sufficiently certain.

Debt will not lie, for instance, for a refusal to convey shares in a building according to the terms of a contract under seal. The remedy is by Action of Covenant.

Neither will Debt lie for breach of a promise of indemnity against loss or damage by fire contained in a fire insurance policy, although on principle this may well be questioned as the duty to pay is absolute.

Debt will not lie on a guaranty contract, as on a promise to pay the debt of another in consideration of forbearance, etc., or in some jurisdictions against the indorser of a bill or note, or by an indorsee against the

20. 3 J. Blackstone, Commentaries on the Laws of England, c. 9, Of Injuries to Personal Property, 154 (7th ed. Oxford 1775). See, also, the following cases: Arkansas: Gregory v. Bewsly, 5 Ark. 318 (1843); Illinois: Mix v. Nettleton, 29 Ill. 245 (1862); Roy v. Floy, 44 Ill. 469 (1867); Raynes v. Lucas, 50 Ill. 436 (1869); Massachusetts: Knowles v. Inhabitants of Eastham, 11 Gush. (Mass.) 429 (1853); Pennsylvania: Banal v. Tonkin, 110 Pa. 569, 1 AU. 585 (1885).


SEC. 138

ACTION OF DEBT

must be fixed. But at the present day either Debt or Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie for the reasonable value of services or goods, though not fixed by the parties. If the claim is for the value of something given as contrasted with unliquidated damages, that is sufficiently certain.

Debt will not lie, for instance, for a refusal to convey shares in a building according to the terms of a contract under seal. The remedy is by Action of Covenant. Neither will Debt lie for breach of a promise of indemnity against loss or damage by fire contained in a fire insurance policy, although on principle this may well be questioned as the duty to pay is absolute.

Debt will not lie on a guaranty contract, as on a promise to pay the debt of another in consideration of forbearance, etc., or in some jurisdictions against the indorser of a bill or note, or by an indorsee against the


The action cannot generally be supported for one entire debt, payable in installments, till all are due, though for rent payable quarterly, or otherwise, or for an annuity, or on a stipulation to pay a certain sum on one day and a certain sum on another day, Debt.


In Watkins v. Wake, 7 Mees. & W. 488, 151 Eng.Rep. 858 (1841), it was held that the action would lie by the indorsee against his immediate indorser. See, also, Stratton v. Hill, 3 Price 253, 146 Eng.Rep. 253 (1816).

And it has been held that Debt will lie by the indorsee of a bill or note against the drawer or maker. New York: Willmarth v. Crawford, 10 Wend. (N.Y.) 343 (1833); Pennsylvania: Camp v. Bank of Oswego, 10 Watts (Pa.) 130 (1840).


284 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 13

lies on each default. And even where one sum is payable by installments, if the payment is secured by a penalty, Debt may be maintained for the penalty.

Debt will not lie to recover on a promise to pay a debt out of a particular fund, or in services, or in a particular kind of currency not legal tender. It does not lie, for instance, on a note or writing obligatory for the payment of a certain sum in “United States bank notes, or its branches,” or in notes of a particular bank, or in lumber.
Debt will lie on a contract to pay either in property "or" in money. Alabama: Henry v. Gamble, Minor (Ala.) 15 (1820); Bradford v. Stewart, Minor (Ala.) 44 (1821); Kentucky: Dorsey v. Lawrence, Hardin (Ky.) 517 (1808); Tennessee: Crockett v. Moore, 3 Sneed (Tenn.) 145 (1855); Virginia: Minniek v. Williams, 77 Va. 758 (1883).

Cassady v. Laughlin, 3 Blackf. (md.) 134 (1832).

It seems, however, that Debt lies if the debtor merely had the option to pay in goods, or do some other act, and has not done so. Illinois: Pox River Mfg. Co. v. Reeves, 68 Ill. 403 (1873); Ohio: Nelson v. Ford, 5 Ohio 473 (1832); Tennessee: Bloomfield v. Hancock, 1 Yerg. (Term.) 101 (1826); Young v. Hawking, 4 Yerg. (Term.) 171 (1833), or in county orders. But it will lie for a debt payable in money or goods at the option of either party, or to pay a definite sum in goods.°

In the cases mentioned the only remedy is by Special Assumpsit or Covenant to recover Damages for Breach of Promise as contrasted with specific enforcement of the Duty to Pay a Sum Certain.

The Breach

AS this Action is only sustainable for the recovery of a debt, the Breach is necessarily confined to a Statement of the Nonpayment of the Money previously alleged to be payable; and such Breach is nearly similar, whether the Action be on Simple Contract, Specialty, Record, or Statute. It is an Allegation that the defendant, though often requested so to do, has not paid to the plaintiff the sum demanded, but has wholly neglected and refused so to do. If the Action be on a Bond, whether a Common Money Bond or a Special Bond for the Performance of Covenants, within the Statute, the pen-

35. See Mix v. Nettleton, 29 Ill. 245 (1862), in which it was held that Debt will lie on a Judgment payable in United States gold coin. Cf. Belford v. Woodward, 158 Ill. 122, 41 N.E. 1097, 29 L.R.A. 593. (1805).


38. The Allegation of a Demand is necessary, though the omission is cured by a Verdict Lusk v. Cassell~ 25 Ill. 209 (1861).

39. The act referred to is the English Statute of 8 & 9 William III, c. 11 (1096), which has been substantially adopted into the Common Law of this country. New Jersey: Morris Canal & Banking Co. v. Von Voorst, 20 N.J.L. 163 (1843); West Virginia: Reynolds v. Hurst, 18 W.Va, 648 (1881).
Sec. 139

ACTION OF DEBT

285

ality is the debt at law, and the Breach by Nonpayment should therefore be alleged in the above form; but, if the Bond have a Condition within the Statute, the Breaches of such Condition should be Assigned. Real Conditions Subsequent need not be Negativised In the Declaration.

The Damages

BY the term “Damages” is here meant a demand additional to and independent of the sum or debt claimed, which, if for the detention of the sum expressly agreed to be paid, as for interest, should be for more than a nominal sum, and for sufficient to cover the amount of the demand. The Damages in this action are usually nominal only, for a small sum. Though they are only an incident to the main object of the suit, some Damages must always be alleged for the detention of the debt.

In an Action on a Penal Bond, the Damages assessed for Breach of Condition Subsequent are not included in the Judgment, and will be greater than those laid for the detention of the debt.

40 PatrIck v. Bucker, 19 III. 428 (1858).


See, also, 2 Williston, A Treatise on the Law of Contracts, c. XXIV, 0 67, 1287 (New York, 1936—1945).


42. fnlons: Russell v. City of Chicago, 22 III. 283 (1859); Brown v. SmIth, 24 IB. 196 (1860); Under v. Monroe’s Ex’trs., 83 UI. 388 (1864); Magulre v. Town of Xenia, 54 III. 299 (1870); New Jersey: Al’ len v. SmIth, 12 NJ.L, 159 (1631).

DECLARATION IN DEBT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) IN DEBT ON SIMPLE (EXECUTED) CONTRACT

In Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract, the Declaration must allege facts showing that the defendant received a quid pro quo, that is, the receipt of value from which, by operation of law, the debt arises; in addition it must allege, by way of the Breach, Nonpayment of the Debt, and Damages.

BEFORE discussing the problem of stating a cause of action in Debt as applied to Simple Contracts, it is essential to consider the distinction between what were called Executed Contracts at Common Law and what are considered as Contracts Under Modern Law; also the distinction between Executed and Executory contracts as they originated at Common Law, together with some of the characteristics and peculiarities of each. Thereafter, with an understanding of the source or basis of the obligation sought to be enforced, we may intelligently consider the essential obligations necessary to state a good cause of action in Debt.

Executed Contracts

BOTH an Executed and an Executory Contract, if broken, will subject the parties who commit a breach, to liability, but upon wholly different theories. Thus, if B agrees to buy certain goods from A, and to pay for the same, if A delivers the goods, and B fails to pay for the goods, B is clearly liable to A, as a matter of morality, but not because of his promise. His obligation is entirely independent of the promise, and would be equally binding if there were no promise. But if B refused to accept the goods when delivered, A, the vendor might hold B liable in damages for any loss sustained by reason of B breaking his promise to accept and pay for the goods. The theory of liability in this latter situation is that B has breached his contract, not that B has received anything with which entitled A to an equivalent amount.
Such Damages will usually be nominal, or at least bear little proportion to the value of the goods which the vendor sold. In other words, as we have seen, prior to the advent of Special Assumpsit A would have had no remedy at all where B refused to receive the goods, as a parol promise created no legal obligations, nor did it give the promisee a right of action for its breach. But prior to Special Assumpsit, under which the vendor could recover for his loss of a profit resulting from B’s breach, a purchaser could not take or receive another’s property without compensation therefor. Such acceptance of goods constituted a ca, sa debendi, upon which the Action of Debt might be sustained.

(I) Debt Not in General Available on a Broken Promise.—Debt, then, was applied to such cases on a theory not generally understood by the modern mind. To adapt the Ancient Real Action—the Writ of Right—to the recovery of a loan, sale or other Executed Contract, it was essential to first, estimate the amount owed as a specific sum of money, and second, to impute to the plaintiff a property in that pecuniary res—by treating the sum owed as a specific piece of property in the hands of the debtor and which, by means of the force and effect of the so-called Executed Contract, had been transmitted to the ownership of the creditor, becoming his, by operation of law, the equivalent of the quid pro quo which the creditor had transferred to the debtor. And under this theory the law sometimes recognized such reciprocal transfer of title, even where there was no passing of a quid pro quo, as in the case where B bargained to buy a horse from A, the Court held that the property was in B, hence lie was entitled to bring Deblime, where A, the seller, was entitled to have a Writ of Debt for the price.44

44. Y.B. 20 Henry VI, 35 (1442). See, also, a statement by Mr. Justice Holmes, in 1916, in the ease of

In consequence of the foregoing, then, we may say that Debt lies upon what we now refer to as Simple (Executed) Contracts, upon any parol agreement which has been carried out by the plaintiff in such a manner as to transfer a quid pro quo, goods, labor, or money, to the defendant, so as to entitle the plaintiff to recover the corresponding price which is still in the hands of the defendant debtor. Says Professor Keigwin: “The efficient fact is the meritorious performance on the one side which—of itself and apart from the agreement—engenders the duty to make recompense for the benefit thereby imparted to the other side. The obligation enforced results from the facts accomplished by the plaintiff, and is founded upon the emolument inuring to the defendant from the transaction.” ~

(II) Debt Lies on the Simple (Executed) Contract, Assumpsit on the Promise.—What, then, was meant when it was said that Debt lies on the Contract, Assumpsit on the Promise?—The distinction may be dearly perceived if we examine the case of Sands v. Trevelian,47 decided in 1630. In that case .A re11, 37 Sot. 3, 4, 61 LEd. 116, 118, in which he said:

“When a man sells a horse, what he does from the point of view of the law is to transfer a right, and a right, being regarded by the law as a thing, even though a res inorporalis, It is not illogical to apply the same rule to a debt that would be applied to a horse.”


46. In Comyn’s Digest, written about 1740 and published in 1762 after the author’s death, It is laid down that ‘Debt lies upon every contract in deed or In law’; and the instance given to illustrate the doctrine is a use of the action to recover a statutory penalty, the unlawful act being the contract. So in 1677, in the Fourth Section of the Statute of Frauds, provision Is made concerning, not any contract for the sale of lands, but any contract or sale of lands, apparently distinguishing between an Executed Transaction and an Executory Agreement.” Keigwin, The Action of Debt, 11 Geo.L.J. 28, 37 (1923).


Sec. 139

ACTION OF DEBT

quested B, an attorney at law, to defend his friend C, who had been sued, and A undertook to pay for the service rendered. B performed the service requested and C, having failed to pay, B demanded payment by A, and upon his
refusal, sued A in Debt upon his undertaking. In the Court of Common Pleas it was held that Debt by B against A would not lie, but that Special Assumpsit would lie on A’s promise to B to pay the debt of C—Special Assumpsit is the only remedy, the theory being that there was no quid pro quo passing from B to A, and hence no debt.

From the result in the Sands case, two inferences may be drawn, first, that in the legal mind of the late Sixteenth and early Seventeenth Centuries, the word “contract” meant only a Simple (Executed) Contract, which covered factual situations, in which there had been an engagement to swap something of material benefit, the effect of which was an emolument moving from one party to the other, as in the instant case, from the attorney B, to his client C; second, a debt could not be created by a promise, where it was made to pay a debt chargeable to another other than the promisee. In the Sands case the only debt was that created by B’s performance of services to C, which performance, by operation of law, imposed a legal duty upon C to pay B, which was remediable in Debt by B against A. No debt existed as between B and A, and A had received no quid pro quo from B. As to A, then, no causa debendi in Debt existed; there was, however, an undertaking which did not involve any benefit to A, the promisor, but which did involve a breach of promise, remediable in Special Assumpsit, and for which the object of the action was the recovery of Damages and not a Specific Sum Certain, as required in Debt.

It follows from the foregoing discussion that when there is what we now refer to as a Contract in the early Common-Law sense, there is a Simple (Executed) Contract which involves the performance of meritorious services by one party for the benefit of another. Even if there be a promise in such case, as there often may be, the Action of Debt which lies, is not grounded upon that promise; indeed, if only a promise existed, without the delivery of some benefit from the plaintiff to the defendant, Debt could not be sustained.

(Ul) Debt and Special Assumpsit, While Sometimes Concurrent Remedies, are Grounded on Different Theories.—It was for this very reason that Special Assumpsit was, as we shall see later, developed as a remedy whereby a plaintiff might recover Damages for the breach of an express promise, as in the sale of goods, the loan of money, or the rendition of services of value to the defendant. Special Assumpsit may be concurrent with Debt, where over and above the Simple Executed Contract, performed on one side but not on the other, there is also an Express Promise to Pay, but, in general, the action lies in many factual situations wherein no debt exists. Where concurrent, it should be observed, that the theory upon which each action proceeds, is different. Debt lies upon the Contract, as conceived by the Common Law, long prior to the emergence of the Modern Contract as an incident of the development of Special Assumpsit, and under which the plaintiff seeks recovery of the equivalent of the benefit or quid pro quo which has passed to the defendant. In such case Debt proceeds independently of any promise to pay, and not upon any promise; Special Assumpsit proceeds upon the theory of the Breach of an Express Promise, and its occasional concurrence with Debt may be attributed to the presence of a Breach of an Express Promise over and above a Simple (Executed) Contract as known under the early Common Law, if a promise is essential to recovery Debt will not lie. This was made clear in Hersey v. Northern Assurance

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 13

Co. ~,49 in which the plaintiff sought to recover in two Common Counts in Indebitatus Assumpsit, which became a substitute for Debt, upon a fire insurance policy, under which the Insurance Company undertook to indemnify against loss by fire. The Court held that Debt or Indebitatus Assumpsit would not lie, as the Allegations of Fact, aside from the Express Promise to indemnify in case of loss by fire, were not sufficient to create a Common-Law Debt—a Debt created by a Simple (Executed) Contract. Said the Court: “In the present case the facts aside from the promise, via: the plaintiff’s ownership of the property, its destruction by fire without his fault—even the payment of the premi-uns,—do not raise an implied promise by the defendant to pay; it is only the fact that it promised, upon certain conditions, to pay, that makes it liable. Consequently, at Common Law, the promise, the conditions, and the fulfillment of the conditions, must be set forth—in other words the Count must be special.” ~ And the same rule applies in the case of a wager, a breach of warranty, or where the vendor fails to deliver the goods to the vendee.50

Page 303 of 735
In all such cases, nothing of value having passed to the defendant, no debt *has* been created, or no *causa det'endi* making it his duty to pay; the remedy in such case is Special Assumpsit for the breach of an express promise.


And this rule was applied even after the Abolition of the Common Law Actions under the Codes. See Henry Glass & Co. v. Misroclt, 210 App.Div. 783, 206 N.Y.Sup. 373 (1924) modified in 239 N.Y. 475, 147 N.E. 71 (1925).

51. “But the distinction between Debt and Assumpsit is fundamental. For while Assumpsit might always be brought where Debt would lie upon a Simple Contract, the converse is not true. There were

**Executory Contracts**

WHERE a person promises to perform a certain act and then fails to perform, there is no basis for supporting an Action of Debt. There is no Simple (Executed) Contract, no Specialty Contract, no Judgment and no Statute. The only operative fact fixing liability of the contractor is his breach of promise. At Common Law, there were two reasons why a mere Breach of Promise would not support an Action of Debt. In the first place, at Common Law, the breach of a parol promise, while a lie, and hence **immaterial**, was not regarded as a civil wrong, and therefore there was no remedy provided for breach of a parol promise; in short, the wrong was of such a character as to be not justiciable. However, by a long process of development which extended from *Watton v. Brinth* ~ in 1400, up to *Cook and Songate’s Case* in 1588, the Action of Special Assumpsit, as a remedy for the Breach of Parol Promises, was created by extending the tort Action of Trespass on the Case Super Se Assumpsit into the Modern Field of Contract, thus filling the *lacuna* or gap which has been described as a deficiency in the Common Law Scheme of Remedial Justice. But this development in no way affected the Nature or Scope of Debt. In the second place, Special Assumpsit, as the remedy for the Breach of a Promise, was not proprietary in character; the injury to the deceived promisee could not be treated, as in Debt, as a specific *res, of* either chattels or money, in the posmany cases where Assumpsit was the only remedy.

Assumpsit would lie both where the plaintiff had incurred a detriment upon the faith of the defendant’s promise, and where the defendant had received a benefit. Debt would lie only in the latter class of cases. In other words, Debt could be brought only upon a Real Contract, Assumpsit upon any parol contract” Ames, Parol Contracts Prior to Assumpsit, 8 Harv.L.Rev. 252 (1894).

52. 4 Leo. 31, 74 Eng.Rep. 708.

64. Thorne v. Deas, 4 Johns. (N.Y.) 84 (1809).

**ACTION OF DEBT**

(1) *The Common Law Versus the Modern Law Meaning of the Term “Contract”*.—As previously suggested, at Common Law, when it was said that Debt lies on a Simple Contract, it was used to describe transactions not included within the term “Contract” as understood in Modern Law. Originally, it was used in a very narrow sense and to describe a Real Contract, under which the defendant was, by operation of law, placed under a duty to recompense the plaintiff in a _sum_ equivalent in value to the _quit pro quo_ received. The Specialty Contract, by way of contrast, was described as a _Covenant_, Grant or Obligation, but not as a Contract. As Professor James Barr Ames observes: “A Simple Contract Debt, as well as a Debt by Specialty, was originally conceived of, not as a Contract, in the Modern Sense of the Term, that is, as a Promise, but as a Grant. A bargain and sale and a loan were exchanges of
values. The Action of Debt, as several writers have remarked, was a Real rather than a Personal Action. The Judgment was not for Damages, but for the recovery of a Debt, regarded as a "res." 

Such a view of the Common-Law Concept of Contract excludes those factual situations where the defendant’s obligation is founded on a mere promise to perform, unaccompanied by the receipt of a quid pro quo.

- According to Bovier, Law Oiceionary, p. 660, (3rd Rev. Philadelphia, 1914) Real Contracts are those in which it is necessary that there be something more than mere consent, such as a loan of money, deposit or pledge, which from their nature require a delivery or the thing, v-e-s.

- Ames, Lectures on Legal History, Lecture XIV, Implied Assumpsit 1.-9, 151 (Cambridge, 1913.)

The word “Contract” meant an Executed Contract, under which a res passed from the plaintiff to the defendant. If the undertaking was executory, or dependent alone upon a promise, with provision for mutual exchange of benefit, Debt would not lie. Thus, cases involving suretyship or warranty, were not referred to as contract. And this explains why, as late as 1630, in the case of Sands v. Trevilian, the Court held that a Contract of Guaranty was unenforceable in an Action of Debt, as the guarantor had received no quid pro quo from the promisee. In consequence, even unto this day, Debt will not lie for the mere Breach of a Promise, and this remains true even where the consideration itself creates an obligation to restore it if the promise be not performed, as where there is a payment on account for goods sold, and there is a failure of delivery. In such case the money paid constitutes a debt for which Debt will lie; but any loss resulting from the failure of the sale is remediable only in Special Assumpsit for Damages, as opposed to Debt for a Sum Certain. And, of course, as previously observed, the exchange of Mutual Promises does not create a Contract upon which Debt will lie; as there is no quid pro quo passing to the defendant; there is, however, a Contract in the Modern Sense, upon the Breach of which Special Assumpsit will lie.

(II) Debt Not Available Upon a Collateral Contract.—The Common-Law Rule was that Debt would not lie upon a Collateral Promise to pay the Debt of Another,—a principle.

See Maylard v. Kister, Moore K.li. 711, 72 Eng. Rep. 857 (1598), in which the Court of Queen’s Bench held that Special Assumpsit was not available upon a promise to pay for goods sold and delivered, ‘because Debt properly lay, and not an action on the Case [Special Assumpsit], the matter proving a perfect sale and contract.’

Thus, in one of the oldest cases upon the subject, is Edw.- III, 13 (1344), It is said: ‘If A bought of Inc certain goods for a certain sum, and B at the
the subtle theory of the thy it was held

same time undertook to pay for them at the day if A did not; if A should not pay for them, debt could not be brought against B, because it would sound In covenant.”’ Beasley, C. 3., In Gregory v. Thompson, 31 N.J.L. 166, 168 (1865).

~O. I Reeves, History of English Law, e. IV, 425 (Finlason’s .Ani.EL, Philadelphia 1880).

that such a promise by B did not create a debt; the party originally liable, A, remained the debtor; B, who made himself a Surety did not by that act impose upon himself a debt.

It thus appears that the existence of this ancient rule of law has never been denied, although Chief Justice Beasley, in Gregory v. Thompson, suggests that in some instances it has been misapplied. He discusses the Anonymous case, in which it was held that an Action of Debt brought by the payee of a Bill of Exchange against the acceptor, could not be supported, on the ground that the engagement was collateral. Chief Justice Beasley observes that while this decision has since been overruled in this country, it in no way affected the principal doctrine, as the reversal did not rest on grounds which involved the doctrine under elucidation. Chitty, a modern English authority, sustains the ancient doctrine, declaring:

“Where a Simple Contract creates a Collateral Liability, as for the payment of the debt of a third person, Debt not being sustainable, Assumpsit is the only Form of Action.” ~ The same rule, Chief Justice Beasley observes, has found sanction in America in Pierce v. Crafts and Willmarth v. Crawford and the principle is not affected because the engagement sued upon has been expressed in an instrument under seal. This very issue was presented in 1838 in the case

62. 31 NiL. 166 (1805).


In Bishop v. Young, 2 Boa. & P. 78, 126 Eng.Rep. 1166 (1800), Lord Eldon reviewed the Anonymous case reported in Hardres, and held that it rested on solid ground; and it was also treated with like respect by Justice Laurence in Priddy v. Henbray, 1 B. & C. 074, 107 Eng.Rep. 248 (1823).


65. 12 Johns. (N.Y.) 90 (1815).

66. 10 Wend, (N.Y.) 341 (1833).

61. 0 Henry V. 14~ p1. 23(1421).

ACTION OF DEBT

291

of Randall v. Rigby, in which Debt was brought upon an indenture whereby A had granted to B and C certain lands in fee simple, reserving to himself and his heirs forever an annual rent, and B and C had covenanted that they or one of them, or some one of their heirs, would pay the rent. The Declaration alleged that one of the stipulated installments of rent was unpaid. A brought Debt against C, and a Demurrer to the Declaration was sustained, the Court holding that Covenant under which the defendant C, jointly with another, had undertaken to secure the payment of an annuity issuing out of the land, was Collateral, and hence would not, support an Action of Debt.

Finally Chief Justice Beasley refused to follow Mr. Justice Story’s suggestion in Bidlard v. BeIl, ~ that it would not be overstraining the doctrine of Debt to apply it to Collateral Undertakings to pay a sum certain.

(III) A Single Quid Pro Quo Will Not Create Two Debts.—As previously observed, Debt was not available against a defendant if a benefit was conferred on a third person even though at the defendant’s request, as there was no quid pro quo essential to create a debt. As a result, however, of a case decided during the reign of Henry VI (1422—1461), it was established that whatever would constitute a quid pro quo, if rendered to the defendant himself, would constitute a quid pro quo if delivered to a third person, provided it was delivered at the defendant’s request, and that such third person did not become liable therefor to the plaintiff, as one quid pro quo could not give
rise to two debts. This was the principle on which


Shandois v. Simson was decided, a woman being held liable in Debt by a tailor for embroidering a gown for the maid of her daughter.

(IV) The Statute of Frauds and the Rule that Debt Will Not Lie Upon a Collateral Promise.—The principle that Debt will not lie on a Collateral Promise to pay money primarily due from another is vital when it comes to the application of the Fourth Section of the Statute of Frauds, which provided that no action shall be brought upon a promise to answer for the debt of another unless the agreement shall be in writing. The Statute would, of course, have no application except where the promise to pay the debt of another was Collateral and was not in writing.

The Mode of Declaring on Simple Contracts

WHERE the action is brought on a Simple Contract Debt, the Declaration must show the Consideration on which such Contract was founded with exactitude, and it must appear that there is a liability established either by law or by an express agreement of the defendant. The Form of the Statement should be that the defendant agreed to pay the debt, and not that he promised; the


See, also, Stonehouse v. Bodvil, Raym.T. 67 83 Eng. Rep. 37 (1662), in which the action was Indebitatus Assumpsit instead of Debt.

29 Car. II (1677). See, also, on this point, article by Ames, Parol Contract Prior to Assumpsit, 8 Harv. L.Rev. 252 (1895); Hening, A New and Old Reading on the Fourth Section of the Statute of Frauds, 57 U. of Pa.L.Rev. 611 (1909).

The whole Doctrine as to Collateral Promises to Pay exercised a restraining influence on the issue which long divided the Courts as to whether the Actions of Debt and Indebitatus Assumpsit should be extended to penitui recovery for debts created by Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes.


292 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 13

basis of the action being the receipt of value and the duty arising from an Executed Consideration, and not, as in Special Assumpsit, from the promise.

The indebitatus Count in Debt differs from those in Indebitatus Assumpsit; for, although it states that the defendant was indebted to the plaintiff in a named sum of money “for goods sold,” etc., precisely as in Indebitatus Assumpsit, and it is not necessary to set forth the nature or particulars of the transaction in detail, yet no promise should be stated, as in Assumpsit. The quantum meruit and quantum valebant Counts were formerly used in Debt, and resembled those in Assumpsit, except the words “agreed to pay” were used, instead of “promised to pay.”

DECLARATION IN DEBT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (3) IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY

140. In Debt on a Specialty, the deed or instrument relied upon must be stated in the Declaration in precise words, that is, verbatim, or according to its substance and legal effect. The Consideration need not be alleged, unless performance of it is a condition precedent.
A Sealed Instrument Fixing a Present Obligation

SEALED instruments creating a Present Obligation might take the form of a bond to pay a specific sum of money, as on a single or common money bond, without any condition, or they may take the form of a bond with a penalty or with a collateral condition. In each case the debt was created by the act of the parties to be charged in executing the instrument under seal which is the basis of the suit. Thus, where a bond is drawn in the conventional form and for the purpose of securing the payment of money, it purports and acknowledges that the obligor or the person who signs and seals the instrument is “to be held and firmly bound to the said” obligee, or the said “plaintiff” in a specific and certain sum of money, which is to be paid to the said plaintiff (obligee), or his personal representatives at once or upon demand or at some fixed date or upon the happening of some contingent act or event. The phrase “to be held and firmly bound to the said plaintiff,” as it appears in the Declaration imports an obligation on the part of the obligor to render the specific thing—the indebtedness—to the obligee, and such language executed under seal amounts to a conclusive declaration by the person who thus acknowledges his indebtedness that he has in possession money which belongs to the obligee and which he ought to deliver to him. If the obligor fails to perform the duty to pay, as undertaken under seal, an Action of Debt on the bond lies to recover the money specified in the instrument, the theory being that the obligee or plaintiff is the owner of the specific sum designated and hence is merely seeking that which belongs to him as provided in the bond. And such an acknowledgment under seal of indebtedness by the obligor is conclusive, even where there was in fact no pre-existing debt, or where the debtor-obligor had no property which belonged to the obligee. The reason for this was that such an acknowledgment of indebtedness, when widened by the solemn act of seal, operated as an estoppel, at least in a Court of Law; and it had the practical effect of barring the obligor from denying what he had previously so solemnly admitted, thus placing the matter beyond dispute and eliminating any necessity of inquiry as to the nature and origin of the debt; and in short, under such an obligation, the issue as to how the debt arose, became immaterial.

By reason of the peculiar characteristics of the sealed instrument creating a present obligation, it became possible for the obligee to use this form of instrument to obtain a benefit from the obligor which was clearly something other than the payment of a debt. Thus, suppose B, the obligor, executes a bond agreeing to pay the obligee, A, a certain sum of money. In effect the instrument becomes evidence of an absolute indebtedness. Now, suppose there is added to this instrument a condition in the form of a clause providing that the entire instrument should be void if the debtor-obligor, B, performs some other act, such as indemnifying the obligee against certain contingencies, answering for the defaults of some third person, conducting himself in the proper and legal manner in some public office, paying a smaller sum of money, or performing a collateral contract. If the obligor, B, performs the condition set forth in the contract, the condition is said to have been fulfilled, with the result that there is nothing due on the bond; that is, the bond is void. If, however, the obligor, B, fails in any manner to meet the conditions as set forth, the bond is converted to an obligation as absolute in character as it was upon its original execution, with the result that the obligee, A, may sue in Debt to recover the sum specified in the bond as a conclusively acknowledged debt.
In such an instance, what the bond secured was not the sum certain as a debt, but an agreed penalty or Liquidated Damages for failure to do something other than paying the debt. Thus, it becomes apparent that the obligor’s acknowledgment of an obligation to pay a specific sum, was, in reality “a cloak to disguise a collateral undertaking; and when the obligee sues on the bond for the amount therein acknowledged to be due, what he actually goes for is not a debt but Damages for the nonperformance of the contract contained in the condition.” And under the Common Law, as the Breach of a Condition operated to convert the indebtedness into the absolute obligation it purported to be, the obligee, A, recovered the full amount prescribed by the bond, in total disregard as to the circumstances under which or the reason why the obligor failed to perform or the extent of the damage suffered by the obligee A, which, in some instances, was outrageously small. Thus, to illustrate, suppose B, the obligor, by bond, acknowledges an indebtedness to A, the obligee, of $10,000, with a condition that the bond is to be void upon the payment of $5,000 on a day certain. If, for any reason whatsoever, B failed to pay on the specified date, the larger amount became absolutely due. And, if thereafter, the obligor offered to pay the smaller sum, the amount, let us say, actually owed, his tender was of no avail.

A Sealed Instrument Fixing a Future Obligation

WHERE a sealed instrument contains an agreement to perform a certain act at a future time, such as to build a house, the promise cannot sue the obligor upon any predicate of prior indebtedness; in such a case Covenant to recover Damages for the breach of the sealed instrument is the appropriate remedy, as Debt does not lie for an obligation originating in that manner. If, however, the sealed instrument had provided for the payment in the future of a specified sum of money, there is a suggestion of a pre-existing duty, the money promised presumably being in discharge of a present debt, as for a loan or for goods, which constitute a causa debendi. By the mediaeval mind, such a promise was conceived of and treated as a present Grant of the specified sum, or a transfer of the title to the plaintiff obligee, which created a debt in the present, but a debt which was to be paid in the future. In other words, B’s agreement to pay A a specific sum of money next year, makes A the owner of that sum at once, even though A may make no claim of the property until the day specified. Thus, in the Early Law, it was thought that an Agreement by Specialty for the payment of money on a Future Day, in effect, operated as an immediate transfer of title to the sum mentioned, whereby the plaintiff-obligee was authorized, upon the arrival of the date specified, or the event designated, to demand the specified sum as his own. Debt on Specialty, therefore, is the proper remedy to recover a certain and fixed sum of money, made payable by a sealed instrument, and which under the language of the engagement, is not something other than the debt of the obligor. As Professor Keigwin so truly observes: “When, therefore, Action was brought upon a Specialty obligating the defendant to a future payment, the plaintiff did not sue to enforce performance of an Executory Engagement, but to recover a specific sum to which the title had become vest


The Mode of Declaring in Debt on Specialties

IN Debt on Sealed Instruments the Declaration usually states the Execution of the Specialty, and makes Profert of it, without any mention of the Consideration on which the Contract was founded. It is necessary, however, where performance of the Consideration by the plaintiff is a Condition Precedent to his right to sue, to allege Fulfillment of the Conditions to defendant’s liability. The Statement of the Specialty must be a correct description of it, as to time, parties, etc.; mid it must appear, either by Express Allegation or by the use of descriptive words importing the fact, that it was under seal. If not set out verbatim, it must be stated according to its legal operation and effect. It must appear that the contract


79. Kentucky: Scott v. Curd, Hardin (Ky.) 69 (1806); Cleveland v. Rodgers, I A.I.C.Marsb. (Ky.) 193 (1818); Massachusetts; Bender v. Sampson, 11 Mass. 42 (1814).


ACTION OF DEBT

Sec. 141

was by deed, and it is a general rule, as we shall hereafter see, that Prof ert of the deed must be made, unless it is in possession of the adverse party or lost or destroyed.\(^3\)

In an Action upon a Penal Bond, it was formerly the practice for plaintiff to set out only the defendant’s obligation to pay the penalty, without mentioning the Condition Subsequent which it was the object of the bond to enforce. The defendant, if he thought he was able to prove performance of the Condition, would then crave Oycr of the Conclition and Plead Pert onnance, and the plaintiff would Reply, Assigning Breaches of the Condition.\(^4\) Upon a Penal Bond the Real Cause of Action is the Breach of the Condition Subsequent. It is in effect a Covenant to Perform the Condition of the Bond. The Action is only in Form for a Debt, which is excised by way of penalty, and in reality is an Action for Damages for Breach of Contract. Contrary to the situation at Common Law, described above, where the full penal sum was always obtained if the defendant had failed to perform the condition, now only the Actual Damages can be collected.

By statute the plaintiff is usually required to Assign the Breaches Complained of in his Declaration, and the defendant may then meet them in his Pleas. Although Judgment may still be entered for the penalty of the bond, this stands merely as security for the Damages caused by the Breach of Condition as found by the Jury.\(^5\)


\(^3\) Massachusetts: Bender v. Sampson, 11 Mass. 42 (1814). See, also, Conwell v. Clifford, 45 md, 392 (1873).


DECLARATION IN DEBT—ESSENTIAL AL LEGATIONS: (4) IN DEBT ON A STATUTE

141. In Debt upon a Statute, the statement should embrace all the material facts to show that the offence or act charged against the defendant was within the provisions of the statute, If there is an Exception or Proviso incorporated in the Enacting Clause of the statute and part of it, the plaintiff must show that the defendant was not within the Exception; but, if the Exception is contained in a subsequent clause, it is a matter of defense only.

\(^5\) In Genei-al
DEBT is the proper remedy to recover a Specific Sum of Money Due by Virtue of a statute, where the statute prescribes no particular Form of Action. Thus, where a statute prohibits the doing of an act under a certain penalty prescribed by the act, to be recovered either by the party aggrieved, or by an informer, and provides no particular mode of recovery, Debt will lie. Such a statute, in effect, provides that a specific sum of money or a specific chattel which now


81. When a penal statute gives the whole or a part of a penalty to a common informer, and enables him generally to sue for the same, Debt will lie, and he need not declare quia tuem. Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions with Precedents and Forms, II, Of the Forms of Action, 126 (16th Am. ed. by Perk-ins, Springfield 1876); but there must be an express provision enabling an informer to sue. Rex. v. Malland, 2 Str. 828, 93 Eng.Rep. 877 (1728); Fleming v. Bailey, 5 East 313, 102 Eng.Rep. 1000 (1804).


89. Patrick v. Reeker, 19 111. 428, 439 (1858), (Condition must be set out and Breaches Assigned).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Debt will also lie to recover, under a statute, money lost and paid on a wager, or to recover usury paid, or to recover a delin


guent tax. Also, where, by statute, the owners of a bank are obligated to pay all the debts of the business, or a specific portion thereof, Debt will lie. And whenever a statute gives the right to recover damages for any particular injury, as for waste, extortion, etc., and the Damages are ascertained by the act, and are not uncertain, Debt will lie to recover them, if the statute prescribes no other remedy. Where, however, the statute giving the right to sue for a penalty, or other debt created by it, prescribes a specific remedy for its recovery, other than Debt, the Action of Debt will not lie; the form of action provided is then regarded as the exclusive remedy.
lies, if 110 other specific remedy is provided.” Bigcloiv v. Cambridge, etc., Turnpike Corp., 7 Mass. 202 (1810). See, also, Alabama: Blackburn v. Baker, 7 Port. (Ala.) 284 (1838); Strange v. Powell, 15 Ala. 452 (1849); Illinois: Israel v. President, etc., of Towa of Jacksonville, 1 Seam. (111.) 200 (1886); Cushing v. Dill, 2 Seam. (Ill.) 460 (1840); Vaughan v. Thompson, 15 Ill. 30 (1853); Kentucky: Portlaad D‘ Dock & Ins. Co. v. Trustees of Portland, 12 B. Mon. (Ky.) 77 (1851).

And in Reed v. Davis, 8 Pick. (Mass.) 514 (1829), where a statute gave the remedy by an Action of Debt generally to recover penalties and forfeitures prescribed by the statute, it was held that Debt would lie to recover Treble Damages for Waste given by the statute, though it is evident that the amount was neither ascertained nor certain.


Sec. 142

ACTION OF DEBT

The Mode of Declaring in Debt Upon Statutes

IN Debt on a Statute at the suit of the party aggrieved, or by a Common Informer, the statement should embrace all the material facts to show that the offence or act charged against the defendant was within its provisions. All circumstances necessary to support the action must be alleged, but it is sufficient if these be substantially set forth, and the precise words of the statute need not be used. If there is an Exception or Proviso incorporated in the Enacting Clause of the statute and part of it, the plaintiff must show that the defendant is not within the Exception; but, if the Exception is contained in a Subsequent Clause, it is a matter of Defense only. In Framing the Declaration, it is necessary to include the words, “against the form of the statute” or “contrary to the form of the statute”, in or (der to show, on the face of the Record, that the Action is Founded on the Statute.


99. A Declaration to Recover Damages given by a Special Statute should embrace all the material events of the statute. Henniker v. Contoocook Valley B. Co., 29 N.H. 246 (1854). See, also, the following cases: Alabama: Gunter v. Dale County, 44 Ala. 639 (1870); Rogers v. Brooks, 90 Ala. 51, 11 So. 753 (1892); Maine: Berry v. inhabitants of Tewksbury, 3 Mass. 307 (1807); New Hampshire: Smith v. Woodman—, 28 N.F. 520 (1854).


(1812); DECLARATION IN DEBT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: 5 IN DEBT ON A JUDGMENT

142. In Debt on a Judgment, where the Action is based on a Judgment obtained in a Court of Record, no statement of the cause of action on which the Record was founded is necessary; the statement should consist of a Description of the Judgment, which may be in a concise form, and need not state in full the previous proceedings in the Action in which it was obtained.

In General

In a Court of Record, according to a “formulary of immemorial usage,” a Final Judgment declares that “it is considered that the plaintiff do have and recover of the defendant” a certain sum of money or a specific chattel; that is, the Judgment merely determines the matter of right between the parties, under which the plaintiff is to regain
something which already belongs to him and which is wrongfully possessed by the defendant. What the language of the Judgment imports, and what the Judgment does, is to establish the plaintiff’s title to a specific chattel or to a certain sum of money. In like manner, a Recognizance, whereby one person enters upon the records of a court an acknowledgment of his indebtedness to another, is treated as creating a legal obligation on the part of the defendant to pay the debt admitted to be due. And so, in any case where the indebtedness is demonstrated by a Record, the Action of Debt, because of its proprietary Character, was peculiarly appropriate as a remedy whereby the plaintiff could recover money manifested to be his property.

Thus, a Judgment for a sum of money adjudged by the court to be due from the defendant to the plaintiff in any Former Action, is a Debt of Record; that is, a sum of money which is adjudged to be due by a Judgment of a Court of Record. This is an obligation of the highest nature, being established by the adjudication of a Court of Record. An Action of Debt was the only means for the enforcement of a Judgment after a Year and a Day had elapsed from the time of its recovery. After such time Execution could not issue thereon, as the Judgment was presumed to be satisfied. So that, if one has once obtained a Judgment against another ‘for a certain sum, and neglects to take out Execution thereupon, he may afterwards bring an Action of Debt upon this Judgment, ‘and shall not be put upon.the Proof of the Original Cause of Action; but, upon showing the Judgment once obtained, still in force, and yet unsatisfied, he is entitled to a New Judgment for the debt.

Debt thus lies on any obligation of Record to pay money. It lies, for instance, on a Domestic Judgment of a Court of Record, and on the Judgment of a Court of Record of a sister state, which is generally regarded as a Specialty. Debt will lie on a Judgment of a Court Not of Record and on a Judgment of a Foreign Country, but generally not as on a Record or Specialty, but rather as in the nature of a Debt on a Simple Contract, in which action the plaintiff may be required to again prove the Original Cause of Action.

Debts Upon Recognizance

THESE debts involve a sum of money, recognized or acknowledged to be due to the state or to an individual, in the presence of some Court or Magistrate, with a Condition that such acknowledgment shall be void upon the
appearance of the party in a criminal proceeding, his good behavior, or the like; and these, if forfeited upon nonperformance of the condition, are also ranked among this principal class of debts, viz., Debts of Record, since the contract on which they are founded is witnessed by the highest kind of evidence, viz, Matter of Judicial Record.

The Mode of Declaring in Debt Upon Judgments

If the Action is Based on a Judgment obtained in a Court of Record, no statement of the cause of action on which the Record was founded is necessary. The Statement should consist of a description of the Judgment, which may be in a concise form, and need not state in full the previous proceedings in the action in which it was obtained. The particular form which should be used may be a brief statement, that at a certain time and in a certain Court of a given County and State, an action was duly brought, and that in such action a Judgment was duly rendered in favor of the plaintiff therein for a certain sum; and, while it has been held unnecessary to allege that such Judgment is still in force, it would seem the better practice to do so. If the Judgment sued on is a domestic one, rendered by a Court of the State in which it is sought to be enforced, and by a Court of Record, it is not essential to allege that such Court had jurisdiction, the statement that it was a Court of Record being sufficient; but if rendered by an Inferior Court, as that of a Justice of the Peace, it should be averred that the Court had jurisdiction, both of the parties and the subject matter. Where the Judgment is a Foreign one, rendered in a Court of a Foreign Country, the Allegation of such Jurisdiction is always necessary, but not where Judgment is rendered by a Court of General Jurisdiction in a sister state, and, in declaring upon a Justice’s Judgment of a sister state, the status

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

143. The Status of the Action of Debt under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court may be made clear by reference to a few cases. Within four years after the Code of Procedure was adopted in 1848, the issue was presented
in Allen v~ Carpenter v. Patterson,\textsuperscript{10} in an Action which, under the Code was equivalent to either an Action of Debt or Indebitatus Assumpsit, in which the plaintiff brought suit for goods sold and delivered, under the Code Provision that the Complaint should contain a plain and concise statement of the facts constituting the cause of action, alleging that the defendant was indebted to the plaintiffs in the sum of $371.01 for goods sold, and that there “is now due them from the defendant” the said sum for which they demand Judgment, &c. The defendant Demurred on the ground that the complaint did not state a cause of action in that the Allegation that “there is now due,” did not amount to a statement that the debt had become payable, or that it meant no more than the statement that the defendant is “indebted.” In affirming the Judgment for the plaintiffs, the Court of Appeals declared that it was required to treat the term “due” as having been used in the Complaint to express the fact that the money sought to be recovered had become payable. The Court declared:

“The Code requires that a Complaint shall contain a plain and concise statement of the facts constituting the Cause of Action (§ 142). Every fact which the plaintiff must prove to enable him to maintain his suit, and which the defendant has a right to controvert in his answer, must be distinctly averred or stated. This rule of pleading in an action for a legal remedy is the same as formerly in this, that facts and not the evidence of facts must be pleaded (1 Chitty Fl. 215; Read v. Brookman, 3 Term, 159, per BULLER, J.; Eno v. Woodworth, 4 Com. 249). * * * The counsel for the defendant insisted that the statement that there is “due,” &c., did not amount to a statement that the debt had become payable; that it meant no more than the statement that the defendant is “indebted,” &c., and that if the word “due” had two significations, the pleader could not select between them, and impute to it the one which suits his purpose best; for the maxim was that everything should be taken most strongly against the pleader, or if the meaning of the words be equivocal and two meanings present themselves, that construction shall be adopted which is most unfavorable to the party pleading. In the case of United States v. State Bank of North Carolina (6 Pet. 29), Judge Story said that the term “due” was sometimes used to express the mere state of indebtedment, and then it was an equivalent to owed or owing, and it was sometimes used to express the fact that the debt had become payable. In the latter sense, I think that the word “due” was used by the pleader in the complaint in this suit, and in that sense it may be deemed to have been used.””

Five years later, in 1857, in the famous case of McKyring v. Bull,\textsuperscript{11} the status of the

\textsuperscript{10} Sheldon v. Hopkins, 7 Wend. (N.Y.) 435 (1831); See, also, the following cases: Illinois: Spooner v. Warner, 2 Ill.App. 240 (1878); New York: Stiles v. Stewart, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 473, 27 Am.Dec. 142 (1834); Vermont: Hubbard v. Davis, 1 Aiken (Vt.) 296 (1825).

\textsuperscript{11} 7 N.Y. 476 (1852).
Assumpsit and of Debt on Simple Contract, at Common Law. The decisions upon the subject, therefore, in the English courts, although not obligatory as precedents since the changes introduced by the Code, will nevertheless be found to throw much light upon the question presented here.

“While the General Issue, both in Assumpsit and Debt, was, in theory, what the general denial allowed by the Code is in fact, viz., a simple traverse of the material allegations of the Declaration or Complaint, yet,

Sec. 143

ACTION OF DEBT

from the different phraseology adopted in the Two Forms of Action, a very different result was produced. The Declaration, in Debt, averred an existing indebtedness, and this amount was traversed by the plea of nil debet, in the present tense; hence, nothing could be excluded which tended to prove that there was no subsisting debt when the suit was commenced. In Assumpsit, on the contrary, both the averment in the Declaration and the traverse in the plea were in the past, instead of the present tense, and related to a time anterior to the commencement of the suit. Under non assumpsit, therefore, so long as the rule of pleading which excludes all proof not strictly within the issue was adhered to, no evidence could be received except such as would tend to show that the defendant never made the promise. That this was the view taken of these pleas, in the earlier cases, is clear.”

Judge Selden observes, however, that contrary to this view in the earlier cases, a practice grew up for centuries under which evidence was received of payment, and other special defences under the plea of non assumpsit, as well as nil debet. But, he points out, this practice was swept away under the rules of Hilary term, adapted under the authority of the act of 3d and 4th William IV., ch. 42, § 1, under which the plea of nil debet was abrogated, and that of non assumpsit restored to its earlier status. And, guided by this fact, Judge Selden concludes:

“My conclusion therefore is, that neither payment nor any other defence, which confesses and avoids the Cause of Action, can in any case be given in evidence as a defence, under an answer containing simply a General Denial of the Allegations of the Complaint.”

Finally, we come to the case of Stinson v. Edgemoor Iron Works,” a 1944 Federal case involving diversity of citizenship jurisdiction, and decided under the Delaware Law. The plaintiff alleged that he was employed by the defendant for one year from February 22, 1943, under a contractual arrangement reached on March 12, 1943, but retroactive to February 22, 1943, at an annual salary of $8,200; that the defendant breached the contract by wrongfully discharging the plaintiff on March 17, 1943, whereby he became entitled to damages in an amount representing the balance of his unpaid salary, the amount of which is $6,491.65. The defendant Moved to Dismiss the Complaint on the ground that the plaintiff had failed to state a cause of action. In denying the defendant’s Motion to Dismiss, the United States District Court declared:

“The Delaware System of Pleading and Practice is presently that which prevailed in England at the time of the separation of the Colonies. Whatever may have been the changes in the Action of Debt in other states, that Action in Delaware remains today as it was at Common Law in England even prior to the adoption of the Hilary Rules in 1834. It is very clear that the Action of Debt as developed in England prior to the Hilary Rules of 1834 could not be used to recover Damages for breach of an employment contract. In such suits the amount of Damages—in accordance with the test set forth in the Delaware case of Ogden-Howard—is necessarily uncertain and unliquidated. The amount of such Damages can only be ascertained by Judgment of the Court or by Verdict of a Jury after the consideration of many factors. The Delaware authorities reassert the principle that an Action of Debt will not lie, unless the demand is for a sum certain, or for a pecuniary demand which can readily be reduced to certainty by computation. No Delaware case has been found which even hints that its Courts are disposed to deviate from the limitations of the Action of Debt as They existed in England at the time of the Revolution. Delaware inherited
OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 13

from England the law relative to an Action of Debt, and that law remains in force until it is changed by the Delaware Courts or its Legislature. In fact, there have been no changes in the Delaware law relative to Actions of Debt, except in one instance. In 1933 the Legislature of the State of Delaware, Laws of Del., Vol. 38, Chap. 201, abolished the distinction between an Action of Covenant and one of Debt. But only to this limited extent has the original Action of Debt been changed from its formal status at Common Law and this was apparently found necessary by the enactment of a specific statute for this particular purpose.

"Viewed against the Historical Development of the Action of Debt, it is apparent that Debt would not lie in Delaware to recover Damages or compensation for breach of an employment contract regardless of the Allegations in the Declaration. Consequently think it clear that Ogden-Howard Co. v. Brand, supra, merely held that an Action of Debt was not the proper Form of Action, and consequently there is no basis for defendant's contention that there are additional holdings implicit in that decision. The precise problem before me is, therefore, the simple one of whether the Complaint filed in the instant case is sufficient to satisfy the requirements of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, 28 U.S.C.A. following section 723c. I think it sufficient—especially, since the rules are to be construed to 'secure the just, speedy, and inexpensive determination of every action.' Here, the plaintiff, after stating the existence of a contract of employment and a discharge without cause by the defendant-employer, alleges:

'8. By reason of Defendant's said breach of its contract with Plaintiff, Plaintiff is entitled to Damages from Defendant in an amount representing the balance of Plaintiff's unpaid salary under his said contract with Defendant, the amount of which is the sum of $6,491.65. I think this is a perfectly adequate and clear allegation and one that satisfies the requirement of Rule 8.' ~s


In the case of Williamson v. Columbia Gas and Electric Corporation, 110 F.2d 15, decided in 1939 the Circuit Court of Appeals took notice of the formal view of Delaware on the Action of Debt, as applied to the Delaware statute of Limitations. Chief Justice Maria declared:

'In order to apply a statute of Limitations, such as that of Delaware, which reads in terms of Common Law Actions, to a Civil Action brought in a District Court, it is necessary for the court through a consideration of the nature of the Cause of Action disclosed in the Complaint to determine the Form of Action which would have been brought upon it at common Law. It is evident that the complaint in the case before us discloses a Cause of Action which, under the Common Law of Delaware, would be enforceable in an action on the Case and not in an Action of Debt on a Specialty. The District Court, therefore, properly held that the action was barred by the Delaware Statute of Limitations.'

And this was the view taken despite the plaintiff's contention that since the "Civil Action" provided for by the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, 28 U.S.C.A. following Section 723c, had abolished all distinctions in the Forms of Action, the State Statutes of Limitations based upon differences in Forms of Action no longer apply.

For a similar unavailing contention under the Supreme Court of Judicature Act of 1783, see Gibbs v. Guild. [1882] 9 O.B.D. 59, 67.

CHAPTER 14

THE ACTION OF COVENANT'

Scope of the Action.

Covenant—Distinguished From and Concurrent With

Form of Declaration in Covenant.

Declaration in Covenant—Essential Allegations:

(1) In General.

148. Declaration in Covenant— Essential Allegations:

(2) The Execution of the Covenant.

149. Declaration in Covenant— Essential Allegations:

(3) The Promise.

150. Declaration in Covenant— Essential Allegations:

(4) The Performance of Conditions Precedent.

151. Declaration in Covenant— Essential Allegations:

(5) The Breach.
152. Declaration in Covenant—Essential Allegations:

(6) The Damages.


SCOPE OF THE ACTION

144. The Action of Covenant lies for the recovery of Damages for Breach of a Covenant, that is, a Promise under Seal, whether the Damages are liquidated or unliquidated. When

1. In general, on the Origin, History and Development of the Action of Covenant, see:


the Damages are unliquidated, it is the only proper Form of Action.

THE Action of Covenant—a Writ for the enforcement of an Agreement or Covenant, and a descendant from the ancient breve


Articles: Salmond, The History of Contract, 3 L.Q. Rev. 166, 169 (1887); Ames, Specialty Contracts and Equitable Defenses, 9 Illa.L.Rev. 49 (1895);


Comments: Agency—Undisclosed Principal—Right to Enforce a Contract Under Seal, 31 Yale L.J. 94 (1921); Principal and Agent—Suit by Undisclosed Principal—Sealed Instrument, 22 Coll.Rev. 82 (1922); Agency—Right of an Undisclosed Principal to Sue on a Sealed Contract, 7 Corn.L.Q. 143 (1922); Contracts—Contracts Under Seal—Suit by Orally Disclosed Principal When Agent Signs and Seals as Party, 35 Harv.L.Rev. 339 (1922); Agency—Liability of Third Person to Undisclosed Principal on Sealed Contract, 20 Mich.L.Rev. 441 (1921); The Significance of the Seal in New York, 23 Coll.Rev. 663 (1925); The Present Status of the Sealed ObligAtion, 24 Illi..Rev. 457 (1939).

Sec.

144.

145.

146.

147.

Other Actions.

303

tie conventione—is a remedy for the recovery of Damages for the Breach of a Sealed Contract, According to Street, “This remedy is the exact analogue of (Special) Assumpsit, the only difference between the two actions, being that the latter lies for the Breach of a Simple Promise, while Covenant is maintainable only upon a Specialty.” ~

The Action of Covenant lies for the Breach of a Contract under Seal, executed by the defendant; and at Common Law it will lie in no other case.3 If the Specialty has been materially varied or modified by a subsequent informal agreement, the remedy is in Assumpsit.4

Where a Contract for the sale of lands is Signed and Sealed both by the Vendor and Vendee, Covenant will lie for Breach of a Promise therein by the Vendee to pay


3. Alabama: Jackson -cc Waddill, 1 Stew. (Ala.) 570 (1828); Illinois: Rockford, 11. I. & St. L. R. Co. v, Beckemeier, 72 Ill. 267 (1874);
Kentucky: Tribble v.- Oldhajn, 5 J.J.Marsh (Ky.) 137 (1830); New York:
Gale v. Nxson, 6 Cow. (N.Y.) 445 (1826); Pennsylvania: Wilson v. Brechemin, Brightly, N.P. (Pa.) 445 (1828); ManLe v. Weaver, 7 Pa. 320 (1847);

For the Form of the Declaration in Covenant, see Section 146, following hereinafter. In some States, even where Common-Law Procedure still prevails, the distinctions as to Forms in Actions on Sealed Instruments and Actions on Unsealed Instruments has been abolished by Statute. Adam v. Arnold, 86 Ill. 185 (1877).

But the Statute does not, by allowing Special Assumpsit, prevent the plaintiff from suing in Covenant.

It has been held that covenant lies on an Instrument purporting to be, and operating as a deed, although not scaled. Jerome v. Ortman, 66 Mich. 668, 33 N. W. 759 (1887).


Ch. 14

the purchase money, but if the Contract is Signed and Sealed by the Vendor only, and merely delivered to and accepted by the Ven– dee, the Vendor cannot maintain Covenant against the Vendee on what purports in the instrument to be a Covenant by the latter to pay the purchase money. The Action must be Assumpsit, or perhaps Debt.5

The Action of Covenant could not be employed for the recovery of a debt, even though the existence of the debt is attested by a Bond or Sealed Instrument. “The Law is economical; the fact that a man has one action is a reason for not giving him another.” 6 Covenant came, however, to be permitted in the case of a Sealed Debt, where there was an Express Covenant to pay the Debt, or where there were words that could be construed as such.7

Whenever the defendant has executed and delivered a Contract under Seal, and has broken it, Covenant is the proper remedy.8

5. Illinois: Schmidt v. Glade, 126 III. 485, 18 N.E. 762 (1888), involving a grantee by deed-poll; New York; Gale v. Nixon, 6 Cow. (N.Y.) 445 (1826); Vermont:


5. Illinois: Northwestern Ben. & Mut. Aid Ass’s of
Illinois v. Wanner, 24 Ill.App. 357 (1887); Moore v. Vail, 17 Ill. 185 (1855); Massachusetts: Hopkins v. Young, 11 Mass. 302 (1814); Morse v. Aldrich, 1 Mete. (Mass.) 544 (1844); Michigan: Goodrich v. Leland, IS Ifleh. 110 (1869); Pennsylvania: New Holland Turnpike Co. v. Lancaster, 71 Pa. 442 (1872); Rhode Island: Douglass v. Hennecsey, 15 R.I. 272, 3 A. 213 (1886); 7 A. 1 (1886); 10 A; 583

(1887)
304

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Sec. 145

ACTION OF COVENANT

305

It may be maintained whether the Covenant for the Breach of which it is brought is Express, or is to be Implied by
Law from the terms of the deed, and whether it be for something that has been done in the past, or something in praesenti, or for the performance of something in the future.

The Damages sought to be recovered need not necessarily be unliquidated. If they are

The Action is proper to recover damages for Breach of a Covenant of Warranty, or of seisin, or against incumbrances, or for quiet enjoyment, contained in a conveyance of land under seal. Illinois: Moore v. Vail, 17 Ill. 185 (1855); Harding v. Larkin, 41 Ill. 413 (1866); Jones v. Warner, 81 Ill. 343 (1876); Illinois Land & Loan Co. v. Banner, 91 Ill. 114 (1878); Massachusetts: Barlow v. Thomas, 15 Pick. (Mass.) 66 (1833); Donahue v. Emery, 9 Mete. (Mass.) 63 (1845); Michigan: Hovey v. Smith, 22 Mich. 170 (1871); Peek v. Boughtaling, 35 Mich. 127 (1876).


A Covenant of quiet enjoyment is an illustration of a Covenant for coming in the future. Sndy v. Spurek, 27 Ill. 478 (1861). And any promise under seal, whether to pay money, or to do some other act, or to forbear from doing some act, is such a Covenant, liquidated, so that Debt will lie, the plaintiff may nevertheless bring Covenant instead, for the remedies are concurrent; but if the sum, the payment of which is secured by a Writing under Seal, is unliquidated and uncertain in amount, Covenant is the only remedy for its recovery.” Indeed, since Assumpsit will not lie for Breach of a Contract under Seal, it follows that Covenant is the only remedy to recover unliquidated Damages for the Breach of a Contract under Seal.

COVENANT--DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

145. Covenant may be distinguished from Debt, as it lies only on an instrument under Seal, whereas Debt lies upon a Statute, a Record, a Simple Contract and on a Specialty. Where the Damages are liquidated upon Breach of a Sealed instrument, Debt and Covenant are concurrent remedies; but where the Damages are unliquidated only Covenant will lie. Special Assumpsit and Covenant are in no instance concurrent, but Covenant and Case are as against a tenant for yeas’s who committed Waste.

THE Action of Covenant is distinguishable from Debt in that it lies only on a sealed instrument, whereas Debt lies upon a Statute, a Record, and a Simple Contract, as well as a Specialty. Covenant may be brought for the payment of uncertain as well as certain sums of money, and for the non-performance of Covenants to do or not to do any other lawful thing. As we have seen, Covenant and Debt became concurrent remedies on all Sealed Instruments upon the Breach of which the Damages were liquihted.

For Breach of a Contract executed under the seals of both parties thereto only an Action of Debt or Covenant will lie. Van Huron Light & Power Co. v. Inhabitants of Van Buren, 118 Me. 458, 109 A. S (1920),

306

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. [4

Special Assumpsit and Covenant were in no instance concurrent, as the former action was the remedy for the Breach of an Unsealed or Simple, Express Promise, whereas the latter action was the remedy for Breach of a Sealed Promise,12 along with Debt on a Specialty. In this connection, it should be remembered that Covenant, as a remedy on a Sealed Instrument, gave the plaintiff a remedy of a higher nature than Special Assumpsit.13

Covenant and Case in the Nature of Waste were concurrent remedies. Thus, in Kinlinside v. Thornton,14 an Action on the Case in the Nature of Waste was permitted even though it was clear there was a Covenant not to commit waste. Chief Justice De Grey declared: “I have no difficulty upon this question. The tenant for years Commits waste and delivers up the place wasted to the landlord. Had there been no deed of Covenant, the Action of Waste or Case in the Nature of Waste would have lain. Because the landlord by the Special Covenant acquires a new remedy, does he therefore lose his old?”15

As the sole and exclusive remedy on Sealed Instruments for the payment of an uncertain sum of money, or for the performance or non-performance of other things, according to Browne,16 it was generally required that the defendant have executed the Covenant under Seal; but it was not usually essential that the plaintiff should have executed it, as a Covenantor, having executed the contract, was chargeable on his Covenant, even

15. Id. at 1113, 96 Eng.Rep. at 657 (1776).

though the Covenantee had not executed, as the assent of the latter to the contract may be implied from other circumstances,17

FORM OF DECLARATION IN COVENANT

146. A Form of a Declaration in Covenant is set out below.

DECLARATION IN COVENANT

IN ThE XrNG’S BENCH (or Common Pleas)

London, to wit (venue). C.D. was summoned to answer A.B. of a plea, that he keep with him the covenant made by the said C.D. with the said A.B., according to the form and effect of a certain indenture (or “deedpoll,” &c., according to fact) made between them (according to fact); and thereupon the said A.B., by his attorney, complains, for that whereas, &c. (state the deed and breaches, &c., and conclude thus): Wherefore the said A.B. saith that he is injured, and hath sustained damage to the amount of £ - and therefore he brings his suit, &c. (no pledges).


DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (1) IN GENERAL

147. The essential Allegations in the Declaration in the Action of Covenant are:
(I) The Execution of the Covenant

(II) The Promise

(III)
The Performance

Precedent

(IV) The Breach

(IV) The Damages

DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) THE EXECUTION OF THE COVENANT

148. The Declaration in Covenant should state the deed or contract, or such portions as are essential to the cause of action, and allege that it was under Seal and was Delivered.

of Conditions

17. Id. at 353.

Sec. 151

ACTION OF COVENANT

DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (3) THE PROMISE

149. The Promise may be Alleged according to the Express Words or according to their Legal Operation and Effect.

DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (4) THE PERFORMANCE OF CONDITIONS PRECEDENT

150. The Consideration of the Specialty need not be stated, unless performance of it was a Condition Precedent. In the latter case it must be described, and performance Alleged or Non-performance Excused.

MOST of the rules to be observed in framing a Declaration in Assumpsit and Debt equally apply in framing the Declaration in Covenant. As in all cases of written instruments, the deed or contract may be set out in its Express Words, or stated according to its Legal Operation and Effect. Only such portions need be mentioned as are essential to the cause of action and Covenants which are not expressly mentioned, but are Implied from those stated or from the general tenor of the instrument, should be set forth in the Declaration in the same manner as if they were expressed. The deed or contract should also be stated as being under Seal, and its delivery should be alleged.


See also, Eddy v. Chace, 140 Mass. 471, 5 N.E. 306 (1886).


21. English: Moore v. Jones, 2 Leclaym. 1536, 92 Eng.Rep. 496 (1728); Maryland: John W. Waldeck Co. v. Emmart, 127 Md. 470, 96 A. 654 (1916); New Jersey: Bilderback v. Pouner, 7 N.J.L. 64 (1823). There the Declaration did not allege that the Contract stood on was under Seal, the action was one of Special Assumpsit and not Covenant. Kerr, Evans and profert made, or an excuse shown for the omission. As the seal dispenses with the necessity for a consideration, a statement of the consideration is generally unnecessary; but, when the Performance of the Consideration constitutes a Condition Precedent to the right of the plaintiff to bring the action it should be stated as
in Special Assumpsit, and performance alleged or excused as in that action.\textsuperscript{24}

DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (5) THE BREACH

151. The Breach of a Covenant may be stated According to its Substance, or in the Express Words of the Covenant. The Declaration must show the Covenant broken and a right of action in the plaintiff.

THE Breach in this action is the violation by the defendant of the terms of his Covenant; and the form in which it is to be assigned may be by a general assignment, if enough will thereby appear on the face of the statement to show a violation and a

& Co. v. Cooperative Improvement Co., 120 Md, 469, 90 A. 708 (1916).

22 Perkins v. Reeds, S Mo. 33 (1843).


25 Delaware: Handel v. President, etc. of Chesapeake & D. Canal, 1 Har. (Del.) 151 (1832); Iowa: Camp v. Douglas, 10 Iowa 580 (1850).

308 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

resulting cause of action in the plaintiff.\textsuperscript{25} It may also be assigned According to the Substance,\textsuperscript{26} instead of the Letter, of the Covenant; and the Assignment may be in the Alternative, where it is necessary to thus conform to the Covenant itself. There may be Several Breaches in the same Declaration, and, if One be well Assigned, the Declaration cannot be held ill on General Demurrer.

DECLARATION IN COVENANT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (6) THE DAMAGES

152. The Damages, which must be the Legal and Natural Consequences of the Breach, are the Principal Object of the Action, and must be laid high enough to cover the actual demand.

THE amount recoverable in this action is the Damage Caused by the Breach, and the Damages may either depend upon the

25 Delaware: Handel v. President, etc. of Chesapeake & D. Canal, 1 Har. (Del.) 151 (1832); Iowa: Camp v. Douglas, 10 Iowa 580 (1850).

26 Alabama: Griffin v Reynolds, 17 Ala. 198 (1850)
While, in an Action for Breach of a Covenant, the covenant may be set out in its own words, the plaintiff must be assigned in accordance with its meaning. Illinois: Chicago, Isi. & St. P. II. Co. v. Hoyt, 37 Ill.App. 64 (1890); Federal: Jobbins v. Kendall Mfg. Co., 196 Fed. 210 (U.S.D.C.R.I.).

While, in an Action for Breach of a Covenant, the covenant may be set out in its own words, the plaintiff must be assigned in accordance with its meaning. Illinois: Chicago, Isi. & St. P. II. Co. v. Hoyt, 37 Ill.App. 64 (1890); Federal: Jobbins v. Kendall Mfg. Co., 196 Fed. 210 (U.S.D.C.R.I.).

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS, AND RULES OF COURT

153. In a majority of the states the effectiveness of the seal has been abolished or substantially modified by Statute.

IN a majority of the states, the effectiveness of the private seal has been abolished or substantially modified by Statute. The change in effectiveness of the seal raises questions in pleading which, although not related to the Codes, are nevertheless of considerable importance in Modern Practice. For example, in Rondot v. Rogers as follows: “At common law, a defendant having entered into an agreement in writing under seal, a breach thereof and resulting damages gave rise to an action styled ‘covenant’. It was the pe

27. Comyn, Digest, “Pleader” 2 V., 2, 3 (Dublin, 1793);

28. Alabama: Taylor v. Pope, 18 Ala. 190 (1840); Kentuckv: Mccoy v. Hill, 2 Litt. (Ky.) 374 (1822); Thome v. flaky, 1 Dana (Ky.) 268 (1833). opinion of the Jury, in which case they are said to be unliquidated, or they may be a specific sum stipulated for in the contract. In either case the amount alleged must be large enough to cover the sum intended to be proved; for the plaintiff cannot recover more than his Declaration calls for.

ACTION OF COVENANT


29. See Patterson, Goble and Jones, cases on Contracts, C 3, Formalities in Contracting, 44--447 (Brooklyn 1957), for discussion of the Seal and Statutes abolishing or modifying its effectiveness.


On the other hand, in Allied Amusement v. Glover, the Hawaii Court) after pointing out that seals had lost their significance in Hawaii, concluded as follows: “In this jurisdiction, therefore, assumpsit rather than covenant lies for recovery of damages in breach of a contract whether it be under or not under seal.”

In a jurisdiction where the seal has retained its effectiveness, and the Code has been adopted, there is some authority to the effect that where the action of Covenant was the proper action at Common Law, the allegations in an action under the Code must be such as would have supported the Common Law action of Covenant. The New Jersey Court addressed itself to this point in Katin v. Crisp, as follows: “At common law, a defendant having entered into an agreement in writing under seal, a breach thereof and resulting damages gave rise to an action styled ‘covenant’. It was the pe

3. 40 Hawaii 92, 95 (1958).

22 NJ.Misc. 394, 39 A.2d 154, 184 (1944).
culiar remedy for the non-performance of a contract under seal, where the damages were unliquidated and depended in amount upon the opinion of the jury. Chitty on Pleading, page 118.

“The plaintiffs contend that the format of their action is proper. Under the formulating system of pleading at common law, their action would be styled ‘covenant’. Prior to the Practice Act of 1912, two principal categories of actions were provided in personal actions, 1, actions upon contract, and 2, actions ex delicto. The act of the Legislature in 1912, Chapter 231, paragraph 3, N.J.S.A. 2:27—7, re-styled the names of actions at law by providing that there should be one form of civil actions in the courts of law, denominated ‘action at law’. The change abrogated the names of the former classifications, but it did not destroy the value of classification nor eliminate the averments requisite to a good count or the facts to be proved in support of them. Ward v. Huff, Sup.Ct.1919, 94 N.J.L. 81, 109 A. 287.”

Sec.

CHAPTER 15

THE ACTION OF ACCOUNT

154. Scope of the Action.
155. Account—Distinguished From and Concurrent with Other Actions.
156. Form of Declaration in Account.
157. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations:
   (1) In General.
158. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations:
   (2) A Statement of the Facts Showing a Legal Relation Between Plaintiff and Defendant Which Gives Rise to the Right to an Accounting.
159. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations:
   (3) The Refusal to Account or the Breach.
160. Declaration in Account or Account Render—Essential Allegations:
   (4) The Damages.

SCOPE OF THE ACTION

154. The action of account lies where one has received goods or money for another in a fiduciary capacity, to ascertain and recover the balance due. It can only be maintained where there is such a relationship between the parties, as to raise an obligation to account, and where the amount due is uncertain and un-liquidated.

WHERE one has received property belonging to another, to invest or use on his behalf,

1. In general, on the origin, history and present significance of the Action of Account, see:


2. Thouron v. Paul, 6 Whart. (Pa.) 615 (1841).

Sec. 154

ACTION OF ACCOUNT

from the receipt of something. Agents charged with handling for profit money or goods, or collecting rents and profits from another’s land, such as Bailiffs, Partners, Factors, Commission Merchants, Executors, Trustees, and Guardians, come under a legal obligation to render an account of the capital (corpus) and proceeds which they receive on behalf of their principal. The Obligation to Account is thus one which the law imposes independently of contract. It is not founded on promise, but on the existence of a relationship of fact, namely, the being intrusted with the handling of property belonging to another.

This obligation was recognized by the Ancient Common Law and was enforced by the Action of Account. Owing to defects of legal procedure, this action was later superseded by the Action for Money Had and Received and by Bill in Equity. In the Action of Account the amount of money claimed is uncertain and unliquidated, but by an accounting before Auditors the balance due is ascertained and declared by the Judgment of the Court as a Debt.

Account is the proper form of action when one has received money or property for the use of another for which he should account to the latter,5 or where two persons are partners in a mercantile adventure.~

“It is said of this action that it is one of antiquity, and lies at Common Law against Guardians, Bailiffs, Receivers, and Mercantile Copart


ners, to compel an account of profits or moneys received. It was an action, provided by law, in favor of merchants, and for advancement of trade and traffic, as when two joint merchants occupy their stock of goods and merchandise in common, to their common profit, one of them, naming himself a merchant, shall have an account against the other, naming him a merchant, and shall charge him as reector denariorum.” ~ Clfly the Common Law, the action lay only against a Guardian in Socage, Bailiff, or Receiver, or by one in favor of trade and commerce against another wherein both were named merchants; that is to say, against all who had charge or possession of the lands, goods, chattels, or moneys of another with a liability to render an account thereof, such as Partners, Trustees, Guardians, and all who could be specially described as above.” ~ At


A receiver is a collector, who has received money; a bailiff is a manager of an estate, who has hail charge of property under a duty to account for its proceeds or profits. 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, e. IX, 109—111 (Northport 1906). A factor or commission merchant is one employed to buy or sell goods. Ames, Lectures on Legal History, Lecture XI, Account, 116 (Cambridge 1913).

Account lies against an attorney for money received from his client, Brcdin v. Khiglnd, 4 Watts (Pa.) 420 (1835); and generally wherever one person has received money as the agent of another, and should account therefor. Long v. Fitzimmons, 1 Watts & S. (Pa.) 530 (1841); Shriver v. Nimlick, 41 Pa. 91 (1861).

If a father takes possession of and manages the estate of his deceased son, without administering, he may be held liable to the child of such decedent in account render, as agent or bailiff. McLean’s Ex’rs v. Wade, 53 Pa. 146 (1866).

And the action lies by a landlord against his tenant, who is bound to render a portion of the profits as rent. Long v. Fitzimmons, 1 Watts & S. (Pa.) 530 (1841).

It lies by one tenant in common against the other for his share of the rents and profits. Connecticut:

Barnum v. Landon, 25 Conn. 137 (1856); Illinois;
Cheney v. Ricks, 187 Ill. 171, 58 S.E. 234 (1900);

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Common Law the action could be maintained between Mercantile Partners where there were two of them only, and not when the firm consisted of more than two.\(^3\) But in most states where the action is in use this has been changed by statutes.\(^6\) Indeed, in many respects the scope of this action has been very much extended by statute, both in England and in this country.\(^2\)

The Action is in Form an Action arising Ex Contractu, and will only lie where there is a relation giving rise to an Obligation to Account between the parties upon which it can be founded. This Obligation, like that of Debt, is specifically enforced. There is an analogy between the Obligation to Account and a Trust, and it has been called a Common-Law Trust.\(^1\)


746 (1806).

And it lies by a cestui que trust (beneficiary) against a trustee who has received the profits of lands, Dennison v. Goehring, 7 Pa. 175, 47 Am.Dec. 505 (1847); or against a testamentary trustee for an account of his receipts and expenditures. Bretlin v. Dwen, 2 Watts (Pa.) 95 (1833).


9. 1 An. & Eag.Encyc.Law v 130 (1st ed. Philadelphia, 1887). See, also, the following cases: Connecticut:


The action will only lie where the amount

sought to be recovered is uncertain and unliquidated.\(^9\) If the mutual debits and credits of the parties have been ascertained, or an account has been stated between them, Assumpsit or Debt, and not Account, is the proper remedy to recover the definite balance due.\(^12\) In some cases Assumpsit or Covenant may be Concurrent Remedies with this Form of Action; but Debt can never be so, for account will never lie where the object of the suit is the recovery of a sum certain.

The Action of Account-Render differs from the other Common-Law Actions in the Mode of Procedure. Though it is Commenced like them, the Judgment is first rendered upon the liability to account, quod computet, which is an Interlocutory Judgment only.\(^13\) The Court thereupon appoints Auditors or Arbitrators, whose business it is to take and report the account between the parties, with the balance due, and upon their report the

Final Judgment is rendered. If the balance was found in favor of the defendant, no Judgment for it could be given him at Common Law. In Pennsylvania the jury might
settle the accounts in the first instance, and then Final Judgment only was rendered; but, where this could not be done, the practice was as above indicated. In Illinois and some other states the Jury merely determined the liability to account, and heard no evidence as to the state of the accounts; that being


12. Langdell, Equitable Jurisdiction, c. IV, 75—SC (Cambridge, 1008).

13. Illinois: Leinhart v. Kirkwood, 130 Ill.App. 308 (1906); North Carolina: McPherson v. McPherson, 33 N.C. 391, 53 Am.Dec. 416 (1850), which involved two Judgments—lost, that plaintiff and defendant met account together; and, second, that plaintiff or defendant recover the balance found to be due.

left to the Auditors appointed to take the account and ascertain the balance due. 313

ACCOUNT—DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

155. The Action of Account should be distinguished from an Action for an Accounting, which was Equitable in character, and from the Action on an Account, which might be in Debt or Indebitatus Assumpsit. It is concurrent in certain situations with Debt, Detinue, Indebitatus Assumpsit, and a Bill for an Equitable Accounting.

THE Action of Account, at Common Law, was available against a Bailiff, Guardian or Receiver, or any person who received money or other goods to be used for another’s benefit and in due time accounted for. 15 As the Action of Debt finally developed, it became a Concurrent Remedy with Account, and as Indebitatus Assumpsit was a Substitute for Debt in the Field of Debt on Simple Contract, it also became a Con-

14. Per a ease in which the procedure in an Action of Account is shown in all its technicality, see Willson v. Willson, 5 NIl. 791 (1820), in which Kilpatrick, C. J., observes: "This is a Writ of Error to Gloucester Pleas, In an Action of Account. This Form of Action, is, in itself, very difficult, dilatory, and expensive; it has long since fallen into disuse, in a great measure, in England; amid in New Jersey, I have never known, or heard of, more than two or three cases, either in my own time, or before; and I doubt whether even they were carried through to Final Judgment. Hence, we have but few precedents to guide us in a suit of this kind, and these few, of pretty ancient date; not very intelligible, and still less applicable, at this day. In most in-

stances, therefore, the Action on the Case, which is simple, easy and well understood, has taken the place of this, in the Common Law Courts, and when that did not afford a complete remedy, resort has been had to Equity, where confidential concerns and trusts of this kind, are more properly cognizable. Still, however, like all other actions, it is open to all; and in some cases, where the expense of a Court of Chancery would be too heavy for the subject-matter, as it must be confessed, under its present establishment, it frequently would be, it may, also be necessary."

current Remedy with Account. 16 And in the field of Bailments Detinue and Account became Concurrent Remedies for the Bailor.

To avoid the delay incident to the Action of Account and to keep the business of accounting in mercantile matters within the jurisdiction of the Common Law Courts, where there was an express promise to account, an Action of Trespass on the Case on promises, for the refusal to account, was sanctioned. 17 And, as a matter of principle it was urged that Case would also lie where the obligation to account was raised by operation of law. 18 Martin states that it has been doubted whether the law raises an implied promise on the part of an agent or factor to account, 19 but feels there is no sufficient reason against it. 20

When the action fell into disuse, its function was largely taken over by the Equitable Bill for an Accounting, the Court of Equity affording a more flexible machinery for the handling of Complicated accounts, in the Form of Discovery before a Master, who possessed power to examine the Witnesses under Oath, to compel the production of books and documents, to pass upon disputed

11. See article by Langdell, A Brief Survey of Equity Jurisdiction, 2 Harv.L.Rev. 75, 57 (18%).

It was not until the Seventeenth Century, that Debt was allowed as an alternative to Account. Harris v. de Borvoir, Cro.Jae. 687, 79 Eng.Bey. 596
And on the distinction between Account and Indebitatus Assumpsit, see, 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. IX, The Action of Account, 105 (Northport 1906).


Sec. 155 - ACTION OF ACCOUNT


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

156. The Declaration in Account was highly technical and cumbersome in character, as will appear from the Form of the Declaration as set out below.

DECLARATION ON ACCOUNT

rN THE COMMON PLEAS.

Term, Will, IV.

London, (to wit). AS. was summoned to answer W~S. in a plea that she render to the said W.S. a reasonable account for the time during which she was bailiff to the said WS. in the parish of [St. Botoiph, Bishopsgate Street,] in the [city of London]. And thereupon the said W.S. by his attorney saith, that whereas, heretofore, to wit, on the day of , in the year of our Lord , and from thence for a long space of time, to wit, hitherto the said plaintiff was lawfully possessed of one undivided moiety or half part, the whole in moieties to be divided [or if the plaintiff
Second: Action for an Accounting. This is an Action in Equity. The best considered authorities put Equitable Jurisdiction for an Accounting upon three grounds, to wit: The need of a discovery, the complicated character of the accounts, and the existence of a fiduciary or trust relation. The relief which is given in this action is an Accounting and a Judgment for the balance due of the account. 1 C.J. 613, § 56. The basis of Equitable Jurisdiction in Accounting is the inadequacy of a Legal Remedy. 1 C.J. 615, § 58; Johnston v. Starr Bucket Pump Co., 274 Mo. 414, 202 S.W. 1143 (1918); Ray v. Bayer Steam Soot Blower Co. (Mo.App.) 282 S.W. 176; Palmer v. Marshall (Mo.App.) 24 S.W. (2d) 229. It is a remedy particularly applicable to mutual and complicated accounts. 1 C.S. 618, § 63. And cases where a confidential or fiduciary relationship exists. 1 C.J. 621, § 68.

Third: Action on Account. This is an Action of Assumpsit or Debt which is for recovery of money only for services performed, property sold and delivered, money loaned, or damages for the nonperformance of Simple Contracts, Express or Implied, when the rights of the parties will be adequately conserved by the payment and receipt of money. 1 CL. 648, § 142 to 146; 5 C.J. 1381, § 6.” Hyde, C. in Dahlberg v. Fisse, 328 Mo. 213, 220, 40 S.W.2d 606, 600 (1931).
several are magic defendants, the averment must be of a joint liability only. In some cases it must be shown from whose hands the defendant received the money.

AS the object of the Action of Account or Account-Render is to ascertain the amount of the plaintiff’s claim, it is unnecessary that the sum should be accurately stated; and it is sufficient, as to time, that the defendant be charged as receiving the money or property between certain dates. To sustain the action privity or relationship between the parties is essential, and such privity must therefore be alleged.~3 And the particular

23. The meaning of the term “privity” as given in the authorities is somewhat confusing, and the division of it into several classes is not much better. Probably the best definition is that it is a fiduciary ac-

316

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

character or capacity in which the defendant acted and is chargeable must also be stated, as the proof must, in every case, correspond with the plaintiff’s Allegations.24 It seems necessary, where the action is against a receiver of money, to show from whom he received it, in order that he may be prepared to meet the charge against him; 25 and in Actions Between Tenants in Common, under the Statute of Anne,26 as well as in actions between partners, it is necessary to aver that the money was received for the common benefit of the plaintiff and defendant, and that the defendant has received more than his share of the profits?27

DECLARATION IN ACCOUNT OR ACCOUNT

RENDER—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(3) THE REFUSAL TO ACCOUNT OR THE BREACH

159. The Declaration must also allege a neglect or refusal of the defendant to account. A demand is unnecessary.

FROM what has been stated, it is obvious that the breach or infraction of the plaintiff’s right here is the neglect or refusal of the defendant to account as to the matters in question, and the Allegation need be only a formal one to that effect. A special demand

The relationship subsisting between the immediate parties to a contract is called “privity of contract.”


Vt. 604 (1850).

25. McMurray v. Rawson, 3 Hill (N.Y.) 59 (1842)

26. See, 4 Anne, c. 16, § 27, 11 Statutes at Large 101, (1705), which has been generally adopted into the common Law of this country, or followed by the Enactment of similar Statutes here. Cheney v. Ricks, 187 Ill. 171, 58 N.E. 284 (1900).

27. Griffith v. WillIns, 3 Bln. (Pa.) 317 (1811). before suit brought is not necessary, and therefore need not be averred.28

DECLARATION IN ACCOUNT OR ACCOUNT

RENDER—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(4) THE DAMAGES
160. The amount claimed to be due should also be stated, but the recovery may exceed the sum alleged.

AS it is the object of the action to recover an uncertain sum or quantity claimed to be due, the Declaration should state the amount of the demand in the Form of a Claim for Damages, but this action is an exception to the rule as to the limitation of the recovery by the amount of Damages laid. Here it is neither necessary to state the correct sum, nor to make the demand large enough to cover all that the proof may establish, as it is the object of the action to ascertain what the Damages really are. The plaintiff may have Judgment for a greater sum than he alleges; and where he states the value of chattels, and also lays Damages, he may obtain Judgment, when entitled to it, for the value and also for Damages, distinguishing each.

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

161. While the Common-Law Action of Account, in theory at least, has been abolished, the Common Law Liability to Account has not been abolished. It may, therefore, be enforced, in some states by a legal action to compel an accounting, in which case the Allegations are essentially the same as at Common Law; in others the liability may be enforced by a Bill for an Equitable Accounting. In general, this Mode of Procedure is favored, being more flexible in character.

WHAT, then, in the light of the foregoing discussion, is the present status of the Action


Sec. 161

ACTION OF ACCOUNT

of Account under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court?

In the Missouri case of Hughes v. Woosicy, decided after 1848, the plaintiff took an Appeal from an order sustaining a Demurrer to a Declaration in an Action of Account. In reversing The Judgment the Court remarked: “At the time of the beginning of this suit, this form of remedy was open to the plaintiff, and as he has seen proper to adopt it, we are bound to sustain him.”

And in a subsequent case, Sandwich Mfg. Co. v. Bogie, decided in 1927, and under the Code, the Missouri Supreme Court held that the original claim was in the nature of an Action of Account, and an additional and different cause of action could not be subsequently commenced, as, under the facts of the case, it would have resulted in a circumvention of the Statute of Limitations. In referring to the Action of Account, the Court declared:

“The relationship disclosed is that of agent and manager of a business—a branch office of the claimant at Kansas City. As such agent and manager Losee not only handled the moneys, notes, and accounts of the claimant, but merchandise which claimant carried

20. 15 Mo. 339 (1852).

31. 15 Mo. 339, 340 (1852).

Zt. 317 Mo. 972, 298 S.W. 56 (1927).

for sale, and which Losee (working on a fixed salary) sold for claimant, and collected on such sales. The facts pleaded in the original claim bring it within the old Common-Law Action of Account. This was, as said, a Common Law Action, so the referee is right in calling it an Action at Law. Our Practice Act has left us a more limited number of actions, and trials are had of each in the same Court, but the distinction between Common-Law and Equitable Actions are recognized as before. In fact, our several Practice Acts have placed accounts (the items of which are legal as distinguished from Equitable) on the law side of our Courts, there to be tried: (1) By the Court without a Jury, under named circumstances, (2) to be tried by a Jury, or (3) to be tried by a Referee.”

Page 332 of 735
In short, then, despite the fact that the Code had abolished the Common-Law Action in favor of a single, formless form of action, the liability to account, as existing at Common Law still remained enforceable under the Code and at Law. It followed, therefore, that the Essential Allegations as required at Common Law, were still required under the Code, perhaps without some of the detail and technicality which prevailed at Common Law.


**SCOPE OF THE ACTION**

The Action of Assumpsit arose as one of the Action on the Case, upon analogy to various Rights of Action in Tort.

I. In general, on the Origin, History and Development of the Action of Special Assumpsit, see:

Treatises: Lawes, A Practical Treatise on Pleading, in Assumpsit (1st Am.Ed. by Joseph Story, Boston 1811); Lee, Precedents of Declarations in Assumpsit, Fully Adapted to Most Cases Occurring in Promissory Notes, on Bills of Exchange, Inland and Foreign, and also on Bankers' Checks, &c. (London 1825); Fox, A Treatise on Simple contracts, and the Action of Assumpsit (London 1842); Harty, Precedents of Declarations in Assumpsit and Debt, in the Superior Courts of Ireland, on Inland and Foreign Bills of Exchange, Promissory Notes, and Brokers' Cheques; With Forms of Particulars of Demand; Prepared in Conformity with the Common Rules of Hilary Term, 1832, With Full Notes and Directions (Dublin 1842); Hare, The Law of Contracts, c. VII, Assumpsit, 117-449; c. VIII, Trespass on the Case, 150, 169; e. X, Consideration, 199-226; c. XII, Antecedent Consideration, 241—261 (Boston 1887); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. II, Art. III, §—U—CO, Assumpsit, 49—CI (St. Paul 1905); 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. XIV, Action of Special Assumpsit, 172—181

Consideration became the test of whether there was sufficient ground to enforce the promise.

Special Assumpsit lies for the recovery of Damages for the Breach of a Simple Contract,


Articles: Salmond, The History of Contract, 3 L.Q. Rev. 166 (1887); Ames, History of Assumpsit Pt. I, 2 Harv.L.Rev. I (1888); Keasbey, The Right of a Third Person to Sue Upon a Contract Made for his Benefit, 8 Harv.L.Rev. 93 (1894); Ames, Parol Contracts Prior to Assumpsit, 8 Harv.L.Rev. 252 (1595); Deiser, The Origin of Assumpsit, 25 flarv.L.Rev. 428 (1912).

Annotation: Right of Third Person to Enforce Contract Between Others for His Benefit, 81 A.L.R. 1271 (1932).
168. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
(4) The Performance by Plaintiff of All Conditions Precedent.

169. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
(5) The Breach.

170. Declaration in Special Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
(6) The Damages.

171. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court,
162.
Species

318
Sec. 162

ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

either Express or Implied in Fact. The term “Special Contract” is often used to denote an Express or Explicit Contract as contrasted with a Promise Implied in Law.

The Action of Assumpsit, or Trespass on the Case in Assumpsit, is so called from the word “Assumpsit”, which means that he undertook or promised, which, when the Pleadings were in Latin, was inserted in the Declaration as descriptive of the defendant’s undertaking. It is a proper Remedy for the Breach of any Simple or Unsealed Contract, whether the Contract is Verbal or Written, or whether it is for the payment of money, or for the performance of some other act, as to render services or deliver goods, or for the forbearance to do some act. In no case will the action lie unless there has been an actual contract or promise, or unless the law will imply one; for a promise either given in fact or implied by law is essential.

The Action of Covenant hardened before it could be extended to unwritten agreements, even when made upon valuable consideration, and until near the end of the Fifteenth Century such pacts found no remedy.

2. 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions with Precedents and Forms, c. II, Of the Forms of Action lfl (Springfield, 1833); Illinois: Board of Highway Comrs’ v. City of Bloomington, 253 III. 164, 97 N.E. 280, Am.Cas.1913A, 471, 477 note (1913); New Jersey: Clark v. Van Cleef, 75 N. J.Eq. 152, 71 Atl. 260 (1908).


As to the nature of the action, see the following cases:
Michigan: Ward v. Warner, S Mich. 508 (1860);

Tennessee: Stamper v. Temple, 6 Rumph. (Tenn.) 113, 44 Ann. Dec. 296 (1855)

Assumpsit lies only when damages are sought for the breach of a contract, express or implied. Casey v. Walker & Mosby, 122 Va. 465, 06 S.E. 434 (1918).

Prior to the Sixteenth Century the Law of Contracts rested on the foundations of Debt, Covenant and Account, but for the development of this branch of the law they proved entirely inadequate. It remained for the Action of Special Assumpsit to supply the Remedy for Breach of Simple Contracts, and its extension is largely the history of the Substantive Law of Contract. The theory was that when a man undertook by promise to do something and then did it improperly, or where he obtained something by a promise and thereafter broke his promise, Writs of Trespass on the Case were allowed for the wrong done.

The Action of Assumpsit, in its broadest sense, was thus developed from the analogies of Actions Ecr Delicto rather than the analogy of Covenant, Debt, or any Action Ex Contractu. What the particular analogies were that the Courts strained to transform a tort remedy into a contract remedy in the law of obligations hardly concerns us here. Whether Special Assumpsit is descended from an Action of Trespass on the Case for Negligent
Misfeasance in doing a thing which the defendant had undertaken to do (which is in one aspect an action on the promise), or whether Assumpsit has descended from an Action on the Case in the Nature of Deceit for Nonfeasance to Recover Money Paid on the Faith of a Promise, or Damages caused by the deceitful artifice, whether from one or both of these, it concerns us principally to know the result at

5. For Assumpsit as Trespass on the Case upon a promise, see the following: Illinois: Carter v. White, 32 III. 509 (1863); Rhode Island: Bagaglio v. Paolino, 35 R.I. 171, 85 Atl. 1048, 44 LEA. (N.S.) 80 (1913), holding that Trespass on the Case Includes both Assumpsit and Case for torts. Federal:
Carrol v. Green, 92 U.s. 509, 23 LEd. 738 (1875); 3 Street, Foundations of Legal Liabilities, c. XIV, The Action of Special Assumpsit, 178 (Northport 1906).

An Action on the Case includes Assumpsit as well as an action in form ex deieto. Wadleigh v. Katalidin Pulp & Paper Co., 116 Me. 107, 100 AtL 150 (1917).
<other & Reppy Com.Law Pld,H.B.—12

220
OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS
Ch. 16
which the Courts slowly and painfully arrived— a remedy to enforce contractual duties. It is interesting to compare the evolution of Assumpsit with that of Detinue, which started with a Contractual Theory, and, as it developed, invaded the Field of Tort, although it still retained some of its Contractual characteristics.

The Action of Covenant enforced promises made in writing under Seal simply as promises, expressed in such form as to be binding. The Action of Assumpsit as finally developed enforces promises, not because they are promises, but only when they are based on Consideration. The Action of Debt on Simple Contract enforced a duty to pay for an equivalent already received. But in the Simple Contract the obligation is based on the promise, not upon receipt of the quid pro quo, and it is now immaterial whether or not one side of the Consideration has been executed. This Action of Assumpsit supplied the much-needed remedy for the recovery of unliquidated Damages for the violation of Express Contracts not under Seal. A great development took place by the extension of this action, by means of an Implied or Fictitious Promise, to debts and to obligations in the nature of debt arising from the receipt of benefits or value. This Form of the Remedy is distinguished as General Assumpsit; the original Form of the Action upon an Actual Promise being called Special Assumpsit.


It appens that the Nonperfonnance of Promises became actionable in the first part of the Sixteenth Century, or to be specific—in 1505, when money or something of value was obtained by the Promisor on the faith of his Promise. Accordingly, we find the Language of the Declaration in Special Assumpsit to read: “Yet the said defendant, not regarding his said promise, but contriving and fraudulently intending, craftily and subtly, to deceive and defraud the plaintiff,” etc. S Street, Foundations of Legal Liability, c. XIV, The Action of Special Assumpsit, 176 (Northport 1006). See, also, article by Holdsworth, The Modern Watery of the Doctrine of Consideration, 2 B.U.L.Eev. 87, 91 (1922).

The Action of Special Assumpsit will never lie at Common Law on a Specialty. Where a Bond or other higher security is taken in the place of a Simple Contract, the mere acceptance of the higher security ipso facto merges and extinguishes the lower—that is, the Simple Contract—without regard to the intention of the parties, and Special Assumpsit will not lie. The action must, therefore, be Covenant or Debt on the higher security. In order that a merger may thus result, however, the subject-matter of the two securities must be identical, and the parties must be the same; and the higher


For Breach of a Contract under the Seals of both parties thereto only an Action of Debt or Covenant will lie. Maine: Van Buren Light & Power Co. v. Inhabitants of Van Buren, 118 Me. 458, 109 A. 3 (1920); Massachusetts: Richards v. ICillam, 10 Mass, 239 (1813); Codman v. Jenkins, 14 Mass. 93
Where a Judgment is a Specialty, Debt or Seire Pad-ūs, and not Assumpsit, is the proper remedy,

In many states, by Statute, the remedy by Assumpsit was extended to contracts under Seal, and other Specialties. Illinois: Martin v. Murphy, 36 Ill.App. 283 (1885); City of Shawneetown v. Baker, 85 Ill. 563 (1877); Dean v. Walker, 107 Ill. 540, 47 Am. Rep. 467 (1883); Michigan: Goodrich v. Leland, 15 Mich. 110 (1809).


Sec. 163

**ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT**

security must be taken in the place of the lower, and not merely as collateral security. There is no merger if the higher security is void, as where a usurious bond is taken for money previously lent without usury, and on a parol promise to repay it, or where an infant gives a bond with a penalty for necessaries furnished him. In such cases Assumpsit may be brought, the higher security being inoperative.

SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT—DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

163. Special Assumpsit, which lies for the breach of an Unsealed Contract, and Covenant, which lies for the Breach of a Sealed Contract, are Mutually Exclusive Remedies. Debt, which lies on a Simple (Executed) Contract is not to be confused with Special Assumpsit which lies for the Breach of an Express Promise, or of a Simple Contract in the Modern Sense. And Special Assumpsit is distinguishable from Trespass on the Case in that the former lies for the Breach of a Promise, whereas the latter lies for Tortious Misconduct resulting in an injury, but they are sometimes concurrent remedies.

In General

SPECIAL Assumpsit, having been differentiated from its immediate ancestor, Case for Misfeasance and Case for Nonfeasance, and having in consequence achieved status as an Action *Ex Contractu*, became the recognized Form of Action to recover Damages for the Breach of a Modern Simple Contract. As such, it is clearly distinguished from Coy
enant, which lies only upon a Sealed Contract, whereas Special Assumpsit lies upon an Unsealed Contract. The two actions, therefore, are regarded as mutually exclusive. The action is distinguished from Debt, which lies for the recovery of a Specific Sum of money conceived of as belonging to the plaintiff, whereas Special Assumpsit lies to recover Damages for Breach of a Promise. While the actions are sometimes concurrent, each proceeds upon its own peculiar theory. Assumpsit is grounded upon a right of the plaintiff to be indemnified for some detriment incurred as a result of the defendant’s wrongful Breach, whereas Debt is based upon a right of the plaintiff to recover a sum certain to which he is entitled as a result of some quid pro quo supplied by him to the defendant.

**Special Assumpsit as a Concurrent Remedy with Trespass on the Case for Tortious Misconduct**

AND, of course, Special Assumpsit, while differing from its Tort Ancestor, Trespass on the Case, in that it lies for the breach of a duty imposed by the voluntary act of the parties in executing a contract, whereas in Case, the action is to compensate for a wrong independent of any contract obligation, nonetheless sometimes may be concurrent with Case, as, for example, where one purchases a railway ticket from one point to another and then suffers an injury; he may, if he so desires sue in Special Assumpsit for breach of the contract, or he may elect to waive right under the contract and sue in Trespass on the Case for the violation of a duty caus

11. Although an evicted tenant may sue on the covenant for quiet enjoyment, he may elect to treat the eviction by the landlord as an unlawful invasion of his rights and sue in Tort. Mitsakos v. Morrill, 237 Mass. 29, 129 N.E. 294 (1924).


32Z

OEPENSIVE PLEADINGS

Where property is placed in a person’s custody under a contract by which he is to repair the same, or carry it, or do any other act in relation to it, and it is lost or injured by reason of his negligence, there is a Breach of Contract as well as a Tort, and the other party may bring Assumpsit instead of Case.12

In Assumpsit for the value of a boiler placed in the defendants’ custody for repairs, and destroyed by reason of their negligence, it was contended that the action should have been in Case, but the action was proper. “If there had been no previous contract relation between the parties,” it was said, “Damages occasioned by the negligence of the defendants could have been recovered only in an Action on the Case; but the fact that the boiler came into the possession of the defendants by reason of, or as incidental to, the contract for repairs to be made upon it, imposed the duty upon the defendants to exercise ordinary care for the safety and preservation of their customer’s property. By receiving the boiler into their possession for the purpose of repairing, they must be held to have subjected themselves to an undertaking, implied from the
nature of the express contract for repairs, to do what in good faith and common fairness ought to be done for the protection of their customer’s goods. If they have failed in the performance of the duty imposed by this implied undertaking, an Action of Assumpsit will lie. At the same time it is true that if the failure involves a tort, such as the willful destruction of his customer’s goods, or a conversion.


of them to his own use, he may be proceeded against, at the election of his customer, for the Tort and in an Action ex delicto.” There are many other cases where a party may at his election sue either in Assumpsit or in Case.

Thus Assumpsit and Case are concurrent remedies for Breach of Warranty in a sale of goods. 15

FORM OF DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

164. This section contains an example of a Declaration in the Action of Special Assumpsit.

DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

FOR that whereas heretofore, to wit, on, &c. at, &c. the said LB. at the special instance and request of the said C.D. bargained with the said C.D. to buy of him the said C.D. and the said CD. then and there sold to the said A.B. a large quantity, to wit, ten loads


When the law imposes a duty arising from the relation rather than the Contract, and there is a Breach of Duty, the aggrieved party may sue in Trespass on the Case, but if there be no legal duty, except that arising from the Contract, there can be no Election, and the party must rely upon the agreement alone. Walser v. Moran, 42 Nev. 111, 173 P. 1149 (1918).


Sec. 166 ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

of wheat at the rate or price of £ for each and every load thereof, to be delivered by the said C.D. to the said A.B. in a week then next following, at, and to be paid for by the said A.B. to the said C.D. on tile delivery thereof as aforesaid; and in consideration thereof, and that the said A. B. at the like special, &c. had then and there undertaken and faithfully promised the said C.D. to accept and receive the said wheat, and to pay him for the same at the rate or price aforesaid; he the said C.D. undertook, &c. to deliver the said wheat to him the said A.B. as aforesaid; and although the said time for the delivery of the said wheat, as aforesaid, hath long since elapsed, and the said A.B. hath always been ready and willing to accept and receive the said wheat, and to pay for the same at the rate or price aforesaid, to wit, at, &c. aforesaid; yet the said C.D. not regarding, &c. but contriving, &c. to deceive and defraud said A.B. in this behalf, did not nor would within the time aforesaid, or at any time afterwards, deliver the said wheat, or any part thereof for the said A.B. at, &c. aforesaid, or elsewhere, but wholly neglected and refused.
so to do, whereby the said A.B. hath lost and been deprived of divers great gains and profits, which might and otherwise would have arisen and accrued to him from the delivery of the said wheat to him the said A.B. as aforesaid, to wit, at, &c., aforesaid—[Add one or more special counts, varying the statement—and at least one count like that in 1 East. 203—and an account stated.]

2 CHITY, Pleading, p. 105 (Phila. 1819).

DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (1)

IN GENERAL

165. The Essential Allegations of the Declaration in Special Assumpsit are:

(I) The Statement of the making of the contract and the terms of promise on which the action is founded.

(II) The Consideration.

(III) The Performance by plaintiff of all conditions precedent.

(IV) The Breach.

(V) The Damages.

DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (2) THE STATEMENT OF THE MAKING OF THE CONTRACT AND THE TERMS OF PROMISE ON WHICH THE ACTION IS FOUNDED

166. The Statement of the making of the contract may consist of an Allegation of the Consideration and Promise, and, where necessary, an Inducement, setting forth the Circumstances under which the Contract was executed.

The Promise may be set forth in the Declaration Verbatim or according to its Legal Effect,

THE statement of the making of the contract is the first important requisite in showing the cause of action in Special Assumpsit. It may include either a mere Allegation of the Consideration and Promise, or, where that is not sufficient to render intelligible the Count which follows, an explanatory Allegation or Inducement may be necessary. In any case, it must be a clear and particular statement of every fact which is necessary, in the particular case, both to show what contract was actually made, and to plainly indicate such of its terms, beneficial to the plaintiff, as constitute the part for the failure of which he sues.\(^1\)

Explanatory Inducement
WHERE the mere Allegation of the Consideration and the Promise will not alone

- O. English: Cotterill v. Cuff, 4 Taunt. 285, 128

324

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

 Cli. 16

show the Contract in an intelligible manner, it has been customary to set forth, in the nature of a preamble, the Circumstances under which the Contract was made.\(^2\) ‘This explanatory statement is termed an “Inducement.” The extent to which it is carried depends upon the necessity for explanatory matter in the particular case.
Thus, in Special Assumpsit on an award, the existing difficulties between the parties, resulting in the submission to arbitration, are concisely stated by Way of Inducement, as that “certain differences had existed and were depending” ; and, on a Contract to pay money upon a Consideration of Forbearance, the Declaration should begin by stating with brevity the existence of the debt forborne, and from whom it is due.19 So, in a Declaration against an attorney for negligence, or a carrier or innkeeper for loss of goods, it is proper to show By Way of Inducement that the defendant followed the occupation in respect of which the plaintiff employed him. Unless such an Allegation is contained somewhere in the Declaration, the defendant cannot be charged thereon for the breach of a duty which results only from the particular character which he held, and in reference to which he was retained.20

The Promise

THE Declaration must in all cases show that a Promise has been made, either by expressly averring that the defendant “promised,” or by other equivalent words.21

17. Johnson v. Clark, 5 Blaekef. (XmL) 564 (1834).
12. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. IV, Of the Pracceipe and Declaration 318 (Springfield 1833).
19. Ibid.
21. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. XV, Of the Pracceipe and Declaration, 321 (Springfield 1553); Illinois: North v. Klzer, 72 Ill. 172 (1874); Massachusetts: Cooper v. Landen, 102 Mass. 58 (1890) West Virginia: Waid v. Dixon, 55 W.Va. 191, 46 SE. 918 (1904);
Formal words need not be used if it sufficiently appear from the whole Declaration That a Promise has actually been made.22 The Promise must be stated with certainty and precision, and any material Variance between Allegations and the Proof will be fatal. It may be set forth in terms or according to its Legal Effect.23 Only such parts need be set out as show the entire act required to be done by the defendant.24


Thus, in Assumpsit on a Bill of Exchange, where the Declaration showed the defendant’s liability on the Bill as the drawer, but omitted to add that he had Promised to Pay, the Court refused to Arrest the Judgment for this omission, and held that the Count was a Count in Assumpsit, because the drawing of the Bill was a Promise. Starke v. Cheeseman, 1 Ld.Raym. 538, 01 Eng.Xiep. 1259 (1699).

And the same doctrine has been extended to a Promissory Note. English: Wegersloffe v Keene, 1 Str. 224, 08 Eng.Ilep. 480 (1710); Mountforci v. Horton, 2 Bbs. & P. (N.R.) 62, 127 Eng.Rep. 545 (1805); Massachusetts: Dole v. Weeks, 4 Mass. 451 (ISOS).


ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

It is not necessary to state that the Promise was in writing, even when a writing is required by statute, for the writing is not the Contract, but merely evidence of it. The Declaration should, however, specify the parties by and to whom the Promise was made, the time when it was made, and sometimes the place. And if the Promise is alternative, or contains limitations or restrictions of any kind qualifying the manner of performance, or the liability of the defendant to perform, the Declaration must correspond in every particular, or there will be a fatal misdescription.


And a failure to state the names of the parties, or a misdescription, may be Aided by Verdict. I Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, Of the Praeipe and Declaration, 331 (Springfield, 1833); English: iolte v. Sharp, Cro.Car. 77, 79 Eng.Rep. 668 (1625); Kentucky: Blackwell v. Irvia’s Adm’rs, 4 Dana (Ky) 187 (1836).


But the exact time need not be proved. I Chitty, On Pleading, e. IV Of the Praeipe and Declaration, 331 (Springfield 1833).

- Connecticut: Curley v. Dean, 4 Conn. 265, 10 Am. Dec. 140 (1822); Massachusetts: Pay v. Goulting, 10 Pick. (Mass.) 122 (1820); Bridge v. Austin, 4 Mass. 115 (1808); New Hampshire: Smith v. Boston, C. & 31. 11. Co., 36 N.H. 458 (1858); New York: of the Contract, which are material for, the purpose of enabling the Court to form a just idea of what the Contract actually was, or which are necessary for the purpose of furnishing the Jury with a criterion in the assessment of Damages, should be stated with certainty and precision."

It is in general sufficient to state those parts of the Contract of which a Breach is alleged, and it is not necessary or proper to set out in the Declaration other parts not qualifying or varying the material parts in question. The statement of additional matter would be confusing prolixity. The perfection of pleading consists in combining brevity with certainty and precision.

It is a general rule that the Contract must be stated correctly, and, if the evidence differs from the statement, the whole foundation of the action fails, because the Contract must be proved as laid.

DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT— ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (3)

THE CONSIDERATION

167. The Declaration in Special Assumpsit should expressly state a Consideration for the

Steno v. Knowlton, 3 Wend. (N.Y.) 374 (1820); Lower v. Winters, 7 C–. (N.Y.) 263 (1827); Butler v.Tucker, 24 Wend. (N.Y.) 447 (1840); Pennsylvania:

29. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV Of the Praecipe and Declaration, 331 (Springfield, 1833).

30. Where the defendant Promises to do two or more things, the plaintiff is only required to set forth that particular part of the Contract which he alleges the defendant to have broken. It is so where there are several covenants in a deed; the plaintiff may sue for the Breach of any one alone. Smith v. Webster, 42 N.H. 142 (1868).

31. The averment of an absolute Contract to deliver

40 bags of wheat is not supported by Proof of an optional one to deliver 40 or 50 bags, as the Contract must be declared upon in the Declaration according to the original terms of it. Penny v. Porter,


The promise must be accurately alleged to avoid a variance. Illinois: Menifee v. Higgins, 57 Ill. 50 (1870); West Virginia: Davison v. Ford, 23 W.Va. 617 (1884).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS
Promise and from such statement it must appear that the Consideration alleged is legally sufficient, for otherwise it will be nudum pactuni, and hence void.

Consideration in General
EXCEPT in cases of Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes, and certain other Contracts that import a Consideration,~ it is always necessary for the Declaration expressly to state the Consideration for the Promise, for, if no Consideration is alleged, the Promise will appear, from all that the Declaration shows, to be 

nudum pactuni, and therefore void.~~ And it is equally essential that the Consideration alleged shall appear to be legally sufficient to support the promise. 

S1 It may sometimes happen, however, that, even where there is a sufficient Consideration, the Declaration, by omitting some averment in stating it, may make it

12. In these cases the Declaration must show on its face that the Contract is of such a nature as to import a Consideration. Nothing of this character can be left to be implied. I Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV Of the Praecipe and Declaration, 321 (6th Am. ed. Springfield 1833); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. II, Personal Actions En Contractu, 1 59, Declaration, 60 (St. Paul, 1905).

- English: Jones s. Ashburnnnj, 4 East 455, 102 Eng.Rep. 905 (1864); Dartnall v. Howard, 4 Barn. & C. 345, 107 Eng.Rep. 1088 (1825); Connecticut:
Curley v. Dean, 4 Cona. 265, 10 Am.Dec. 140 (1822);
Bailey v. Bussing, 29 Conn. 1 (1860); Illinois:
Hulme v.dlenwick, 16111.371(1851); Indiana: Potter v. Earnest, 45 Ind. 410 (1874); Massachusetts:
Murdock v. Calawell, S Allen (Mass.) 309 (1864);
New Hampshire: Bendea v. Manning, 2 N.H. 280 (1820); New Market Iron Foundry v. Harvey, 23 N.H. 406 (1851); New York:
Bailey v. Freeman, 4 Johns. (K.Y.) 280 (1809); Jerome v. Whitney,
7 Johns. (N.Y.) 321 (1811); Tennessee: Shelton v. Bruce, 9 Yerg. (Tene.) 24 (1836); Virginia: Feverley v. Holmes, 4 Muaf. (Va.) 95 (1813); Moseley v. 

Jones, 5 MuM. (Va.) 23 (1816); Vermont: Harding v. Craigie, S Vt. 501 (1836).

34. Thus, if the Consideration for the defendant’s Promise was a Promise by the plaintiff, it must appear that the plaintiff’s Promise was binding on him when the defendant’s Promise was made; it must not In any case appear that the Consideration was illegal or past. Harding v. Craigie, S Vt. 501 (1836),

appear insufficient, in which case the Declaration would be as defective as if the Consideration were defective in fact. It may not be aided by intendment. Care should therefore be taken, in stating the Consideration, to make it appear sufficient on the face of the Declaration.~~ It has also been laid down as a rule that the Consideration stated must be coextensive with the Promise, in order to support it; but this is nothing more than saying that the Declaration must show a sufficient Consideration for the Particular Promise alleged.~~

If no Consideration is stated or that which is stated is clearly illegal or insufficient, the defendant may take advantage of the defect either by Demurrer, or by Motion In Arrest of Judgment, or Writ of Error; ~ but a de

35. English: Dartnall v. Howard, 4 Barn. & C. 345,

Page 342 of 735
Thus, where the plaintiff declared that a person, since deceased, was Indebted to him, and that after the death, in Consideration of the premises, “and that the plaintiff, at the defendant’s request, would give time for the payment of the debt,” the defendant Promised, etc., but did not state that there was any person in existence who was liable, in respect of assets or otherwise, to be sued by the plaintiff for the debt, and to whom he gave time—the Declaration was held bad on Demurrer; for no benefit was shown to move to the defendant, nor did it appear that any detriment had been sustained by the plaintiff, as it was not stated that anyone was liable to be sued by him, or that he had suspended the enforcement of any right. Jones v. Ashburnham, 4 East 455, 102 Eng.Rep. 905 (1804).

36. Thus, where the plaintiff stated that the defendant was liable in the character of Executor to pay a certain debt, and then averred that in Consideration thereof he personally Promised to pay the debt, the Declaration was held bad on a Motion in Arrest of Judgment, no additional Consideration being shown for his assuming personal liability. Raan v. Hughes, 7 TB 348, 101 Eng.Rep. 1013 (1797); See also, English: Mitehinson v. Le~von, 7 TIC 348, 101 Eng.Rep. 1013 (1797); Massachusetts: Berry v. Harper, 4 Gill, & J. (Md.) 470 (1832).


326

Ch. 16

Sec. 167

ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

327

fective statement will be Aid by a Verdict for the plaintiff if it sufficiently appear, upon a reasonable construction of the Declaration, that there was in fact a Consideration capable of supporting the Promise. 38

In all cases the statement should be accurate, for the Consideration is essential to the Contract, and if it is misdescribed the Contract is misdescribed. 39

The Consideration must be shown with certainty and particularity, Nothing that is essential can be left to implication and intendment. The degree of certainty will vary somewhat, according to the particular kind of the Consideration. An averment that the promise was made for a Valuable Consideration, without setting forth what it was, is insufficient upon General Demurrer. 40

Executed Considerations

CONSIDERATIONS are either Executed or Executory. An Executed Consideration consists of something done before or at the time of the Promise, at the request of the promisor. In these cases it must be shown by the Declaration that the Consideration arose at the Promisor’s (defendant’s) request. 41 It is said not to be necessary, in


stating Executed Considerations, to allege them with the same certainty and particularity as to time and place, or as to quantity, quality, value, etc., as is required in stating Executory Considerations. 42 It must, however, be shown that the Executed Consideration was furnished at the defendant’s request.

Executory Considerations

AN Executory Consideration is where the Contract is bilateral; that is, where a Promise is given for a Promise, each Promise being the Consideration for
the other. In these cases a greater degree of certainty is required than in stating an Executed Consideration. The performance of his Promise by the plaintiff may have been, according to the terms of the Contract, a condition precedent to the defendant’s liability to perform his Promise; or each may have been required to perform concurrently with the other; or the plaintiff may have been required to continue to do or forbear some act.

In the statement of an *Executory* Consideration precedent—that is, a promise by the plaintiff which was required to be performed as a condition precedent to performance by the defendant—a great degree of certainty is required.43 “The Consideration, and the Promise of the defendant, are two distinct things, and in order to show that the plaintiff

App. 48, 171 P. 806 (1018); Connecticut: Andrews v. lies, 3 conn. 365 (1820); Indiana: Cioldoby v. Robertson, 1 Blackf (md.) 247 (1823); Massachusetts: Balcom v. Craggin, 5 Pick. (Mass.) 205 (1827); Dodge v. Adams, 19 Pick. (Mass.) 429 (1837); New York: ’lner v. Crane, C Wend. (N.Y.) 647 (1854); Pennsylvania: Stoever v. Stoeror, 9 Serg. & it. (Pa.) 434 (1823); Vermont: Harding v. Cralgie, S Vt. 501 (1886).


43. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, Of the Praecipe and Deelaration, 324 (Springfield 1833).

328

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

Ch. 16

possesses a right of action, it is in general necessary to aver performance of the Consideration on his part, which Allegation being material and Traversable, must be made with proper certainty of time and place, etc. This obligation of averring performance imposes upon the plaintiff the necessity of stating the Consideration with a greater degree of certainty and minuteness than in the case of Executed Considerations; for the Court would otherwise be unable to judge whether the performance averred in the Declaration were sufficient.”

Concurrent conditions occur in the case of mutual promises which are to be concurrently performed, as in promises to marry, to sell and deliver goods, and to receive and pay for them, etc. In these cases the plaintiff must always allege a performance or an offer to perform on his part.43 A mere Allega

44 1 Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, Of the Praecipe and Declaration, 324 (Springfield, 1833); Connecticut: Russell v. Slade, 12 Coan. 455 (1838); Massachusetts: Read v. Smith, I Allen (Mass.) 519 (1861); New York: Clover v. Tuck, 24 Wend. (N.Y.) 153 (1840).

Thus, in an Action for Wages agreed to be paid to the plaintiff in Consideration that he would proceed on a certain voyage, it was held necessary to state the particular voyage. White v. Wilson, 2 lbs. & P. 116, 126 Eng.Rep. 1188 (1809); Ward v. Harris, 2 Sos. & P. 265, 126 Eng.Rep. 1273 (1800).


In an Action for Breach of a Contract by which the plaintiff had agreed to buy a certain quantity of corn of the defendant at a certain price, and the defendant had promised to deliver the corn within one month, the plaintiff merely alleged that he had always been ready and willing to receive the corn, but that it had not been delivered within the month. The Court held that readiness to receive was not a sufficient performance of his obligation by the plaintiff; that payment of the price was intended to be concurrent with delivery of the corn. As the plaintiff did not allege that, during the time in which delivery might have been made, he had been ready to pay the price, there was nothing, as he had shaped his case, to show that he had not violated the defendant’s promise which formed the basis of the contract, this may be a fatal Variance, as the whole Contract must be proved as stated, and the plaintiff will fail at the Trial unless permitted to Amend his Declaration. It is necessary that the whole of the Consideration should in general be stated and that it be proved to the extent alleged.47
DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT— ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (4) THE PERFORMANCE BY PLAINTIFF OF ALL CONDITIONS PRECEDENT

168. The Declaration must allege the Performance or Fulfillment of all Conditions Precedent to the defendant’s duty to perform his Promise. It must allege Due Performance by the plaintiff, or aver a sufficient Excuse for Nonperformance. Where Reciprocal Promises involve Mutual Conditions, to be performed at the same time, the plaintiff must aver Performance of his part of the Contract, or a readiness and an offer to perform.

A Condition which merely affords a Defense or Excuse for Failure to Perform a Contract is Matter of Defense, which need not be negatived in the Declaration. The border line as to what Conditions should be Negatived in the Declaration and what should be set up as a Defense is doubtful and uncertain.

WHERE the Consideration for the defendant’s Promise was past or executed when the Promise was made; or where, though the Contract consisted of mutual promises, the performance of his Promise by the defendant was not dependent or conditional upon performance by the plaintiff; nor up-on any other subsequent event, as the act of some third person, or the lapse of a certain fondant by non-readiness to pay. Morton v. Lamb, 7 P.R. 125, 101 Eng.Rep. 890 (1797).

46. Kane v. Koo, 13 Rr. (Mass.) 281 (1832).


The entire consideration must be alleged, such as all the property sold, in each count Stone v. White, 8 Cray (Mass.) 589 (1557). See. 168.

time, or upon notice or demand—the Declaration, after alleging the Consideration and the Promise, should proceed at once to allege the Breach.43

When, however, the Consideration for the defendant’s promise was a Promise by the plaintiff which was required to be performed as a Condition Precedent to Performance by the defendant, or if the defendant was not required to perform before the happening of some subsequent event, as the act of

48. If the day appointed in the Contract for the doing of any act by the defendant falls before the day when the act constituting the Consideration is to be done by the plaintiff, or where for any other reason the performance by the defendant does not depend upon Performance by the plaintiff, Performance need not be alleged. English Boone v. Lynne, 1 Rr. 273, note, 126 Eng.Rep. 160 (1789); Alabama: NcGhee v. Hill, 4 Port. (Ala) 170, 29 Am. Dec. 277 (1830); Kentucky: Morford v. Mastin, C P aMon. (Ky.) 609, 17 Am.Dec. 108 (1828) Malhe; Norris v. School P1st. No. 1 in Windsor, 12 Mo. 293, 28 Am.Dee. 182 (1528); Massachusetts: Kane v. Rood, 13 Pick. (Mass.) 281 (1832); New York: Bennet v. Pixley’s Ex’rs. 7 Johns. (N.Y.) 249 (1510); Cunningham v. Merrell, 10 Johns. (N.Y.) 204, 17 Am. Dec. 332 (1813); Rebb v. Montgomery, 20 Johns. (N.Y.) 200, 20 Barb. (N.Y.) 429 (1554); Pennsylvania: Obermyca v. Niche’ sa, 6 Bin. (Pa.) 159, 6 Am.Dee. 430 (1813).


A Declaration on a promise to pay money in consideration of forbearance, must aver such forbearance. Comm, Dig. ‘Pleeder”, C. 22 (London, 1822).

Thus, in an Action on a Promise to pay money, when collected, collection of the money is a condition precedent, and hence must be averred. Dodge

329
a third person, the lapse of a certain time,\textsuperscript{5} or notice,\textsuperscript{52} or a request or demand by the plaintiff,\textsuperscript{53} the Declaration must allege the Fulfillment of such Condition Precedent, or, in case of Nonperformance of a Condition Precedent by the plaintiff, must show an Excuse therefor. Excuse for the Nonperformance of a Condition cannot as a general rule be shown under an Allegation of Due Performance.\textsuperscript{14}


\textsuperscript{51} WorCey v. Wood, 6 T.B. 710, 101 Ez’g.Ilep, 7@i (1706).

\textsuperscript{52} Illinois: Independent Order of Mut, Aid v. Paine, 17 Ill.App. 572 (1885); Massachusetts Slut, Life Ins. Co. v. Kellogg, 82 Ill. 61, 614 (1870).

In order to sustain an action on a life insurance policy, the Declaration must show the Staking of the Policy, the material terms of: the Coitraet, the performance of all Conditions Precedent, such as no tie and proof of loss, the happening ci the contingency in which the defendant becomes liable to pay, and the Failure to Pay. Massachusetts Mut. Life Ins. Co. v. Kellogg, 82 Ill. 614 (1876).

\textsuperscript{53} Whenever it is essential to the Cause of Action that the plaintiff should have actually formally executed or performed the Conditions Precedent, the plaintiff would execute a Release or Conveyance, the Declaration must allege the Fulfillment of such Condition Precedent, or, in case of Nonperformance of a Condition Precedent by the defendant, such Demand or request must he aven‘ed. Bach v. Owen, S T.B. 409, 101 Eng.Rep. 229 (1793); 1 Chitty, On Pleading. c. IV, Of the Pracotipe arid Declaration 302 (Springfield 3833); Coniyu. Dig. “Pleadder,” C. 09 (London, 1822).


\textsuperscript{54} Thus, in declaring on a Promise to pay a sum. of money in Consideration that the plaintiff would execute a Release or Conveyance, the Declaration must allege that the Release or Conveyance was executed, or tendered: anti refused. English: Collins v. Gibbs, 2 Burr. 97, 1 Chitty, On Pleading. c. IV, Of the Pracotipe arid Declaration 302 (Springfield 3833); Coniyu. Dig. “Pleadder,” C. 09 (London, 1822).

\textbf{ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT}

In case of Reciprocal Promises, constituting Mutual Conditions to be performed at the same time, the plaintiff must aver Performance by him, or a readiness and Offer to Perform, or an Excuse for not Offering to Perform.\textsuperscript{55}

The Averment of Performance will, of course, be unnecessary where the plaintiff has been prevented, or in some manner discharged, by the defendant, from carrying out his part of the Contract. Maine:

Miller v. Whittier, 32 Me. 203 (1850); Massachusetts: Newcemb s’ Brackett, 16 Mass. 161 (1819);

Pennsylvania:

Shaw v. Lewistown & K. Turnpike Co., 2 Pen. & W. (Pa.) 454 (1833); Tennessee: Bryan

A Spurgin, 5 Sneed (Penn.) 081 (1558).

In such a case, the plaintiff must state the Excuse for his Nonperformance. In so doing, the particular Circumstances constituting the Matter of Excuse, including the plaintiff’s readiness, must be alleged, as it is not sufficient to net forth merely the fact that he was so prevented or discharged from completing his obligation. Indiana: Borne Ins. Co. of New York v. Duke, 43 md. 418 (1873); Massachusetts: Baker v. Fuller, 21 Pick. (Mass.) 318 (1838); New York: Clarke v. Crandall, 27 Barb. (N.Y.) 73 (1858).

Matter of Excuse must always be alleged where there has been a Failure of Performance of a Condition Precedent. Illinois: Expanded Metal Fire-proofing Co. v. Boyce, 233 Ill. 284, 84 N.E. 275 (1908); Walsh v. North American Cold Storage Co., 260 Ill. 322, 103 N.E. 185 (1913).

An Exception exists in Actions on Ellis and Notes and otherwise for money payable on demand, or a certain time after demand. English: Thorpe & Uxor v. Booth, 1 Ryan & SL 388, 171 Eng.Ilep. 1039 (1820); Carter

\textsuperscript{55} Connecticut: Smiths’. Lewis, 26 Conn. 110 (1857); Illinois: Allen v. Jiartfield, 76 Ill. 358 (1875); Clark v. Weis, 87 Ill. 438, 29 Am.Rep. 60 (1877); Massachusetts: Tinney v. Ashley, 15 Pick. (Mass.) 552, 26 Am.Dec. 620 (1834); Adams v. O’Connor, 100 Mass. 515, 1 Am.Rep. 137 (1868); New York: Leg-lev v. aewett, 11 N.Y. 453 (1828); Ohio: Bodgson v. Barrett, 33 Ohio St. 63, 31 Am.Bep. 527 (1877);

Pennsylvania:


Actual performance need not be alleged. Whitall v. Morse, 5 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 357 (1819).

In an Action for Nondelivery of goods sold, or to recover the price of goods sold, where delivery at the goods and payment of the price were to be concurrent, the Declaration must allege a readiness on the part of the plaintiff, and an offer to perform his part of the agreement English: Morton v. Lamb.

In averring the Excuse for Nonperformance by the plaintiff of a Condition Precedent, the particular circumstances which constitute the EXCUSe must be stated.—
It is sufficient to set out the Performance of a Condition Precedent in the Language of the Condition, provided the Condition appears thereby to have been performed according to the intent of the parties, but not otherwise. It is not sufficient to pursue the words if the intent be not also performed. Performance according to the intent must be shown. An exact Performance must be stated. All Allegation of performance of all Conditions Precedent in general terms is not ordinarily sufficient.

7 TB. 125, 101 Eng.Rep. 890 (1797); Illinois: Rough v. Rawson, 17 Ill. 588 (1856); Metz v. Albrecht, 52 Ill. 401 (1869); Osgood v. Skinner, 211 Ill. 229, 71 N.E. 800 (1904). 8cc, also, 2 Williston, Contracts, c. XXVI, Nonperformance of a Counter-Promise as an Excuse for Breach of Promise, § 533, What Amounts to an Offer to Perform (New York, 1920).


57 Smith’s Admr v. Lloyd’s Ex’t, 16 Crat. (Va.) 205 (1828).

58 1 Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, Of the Praecipe and Declaration, 357 (Springfield, 1833); Cemyn. Dig. “Pleadex” C. 58 (Leiden, 1822); Connecticut: Wright v. Tuttle, 4 Day (Conn.) 313 (1810); New York: Thomas v. Van Ness, 4 Wend. (N.Y.) 553 (1830).


At Common Law, the General Averment of Performance of Conditions Precedent was bad in form, for net alleging with particularity the Facts of Performance. By Statutes, in many states one may aver the Performance of Conditions Precedent Generally. 4 Encyclopedia of Pleading & Practice, 632, 633 (Northport, 1896).

In the absence of a statute, a General Allegation of Performance of Conditions Precedent by the plainti will probably be sustained after Verdict, but prior thereto Is ground of Demurrer. Indiana: Kor– biy v. Loomis, 172 Ind. 852, 88 N.E. 608, 139 Am.St. Rep. 379, 19 Ann.Cas. 904 (1909); Massachusetts: Newton Rubber Works v. Graham, 171 Mass. 352, 50

330 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 16 Sec. 168

ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

The omission of the Averment of Performance of a Condition Precedent, or of an Excuse for the Nonperformance, is fatal on Demurrer, or on objection after Judgment by Default; but after a Verdict the omission may in some cases be Aided by the Common-Law intendment that everything may be presumed to have been proved which was necessary to sustain the action; for a Verdict will cure a case defectively stated.

Conditions Subsequent and Provisos

THE plaintiff need not refer to Conditions Subsequent, but may leave it to the defendant to plead them, if he so desires, by way of Defense. The mere Language of a Condition, however, will not indicate with certainty whether it is Precedent or Subsequent. In fact, Professor Williston declares: “What are generally called Conditions Subsequent in Contracts are so called with little propriety. They are in substance Conditions Precedent to the Vesting of Liability and are subsequent only in Form.” Insurance policies always expressly except certain

N.E. 547 (1898). See, also, Note, Contracts—Pleading—Alleging Performance of Conditions Precedent, 5 Minn.L.Rev. 147 (1921).


Conditions Subsequent, Provisos, or other Irregularities in Defeasance of a right of action, are Matters of Defense to be pleaded and proved by the defendant. Wilmington & Raleigh B. Ic. v. Robeson, 27 NC. 391 (1845).

If the defendant’s Covenant or Promise be subject to Exceptions which qualify his Liability, the Declaration must notice the Exception, or there will be a fatal mis-statement.\(^a\) The cases draw a distinction between an Exception and a Proviso. An exception in the body of the Covenant or Promise must be set out. “But if A covenants to convey to B a certain farm, with a separate Proviso, that on A’s performing a certain act, he shall not be bound to convey one particular close, the


DECLARATION EN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (5) THE BREACH

169. The Breach, in Special Assumpsit, is the violation of his Contract by the defendant. Being an essential ground of the action, the Declaration must state it expressly and with certainty, but less particularity is requisite when the facts constituting it lie more properly within the knowledge of the defendant.

AS the Breach of a Contract is obviously an essential part of the cause of action, it cannot be omitted from the Declaration.\(^b\) The manner of its Allegation must necessarily be governed by the nature of the Promise or stipulation broken.\(^c\) It should be Assigned in the words of the Contract, either negatively or affirmatively, or in words which are co-extensive with its import and effect.\(^d\) Though the express words of the


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Contract will generally be sufficient, they may not always be so. The assignment must not be too general; it must show the subject-matter of complaint.~o “And therefore parcel of the farm; B in Declaring on the Covenant, need not take notice of the Proviso.” ~o For it is in the nature of a Condition Subsequent, of which A may avail himself in Defense, if he has performed the act mentioned in the Proviso, A distinction analogous to that stated prevails in declaring upon penal statutes. Where an Exception is incorporated with the Enacting clause of a Statute, he who pleads the clause ought to plead the Exception. But it is otherwise of a Proviso; that is a Subsequent and Independent Clause, which provides that in certain cases the statute shall not operate.

The safest course is to state the Breach first in the words of the Contract, and then to superadd that the defendant, disregarding, did so and so, showing any Particular Breaches not narrowing or prejudicing the previous general assignment, so that the plaintiff retains the advantage of both; and no inconvenience can result from laying the Breach as extensively as the Contract, for the plaintiff may recover notwithstanding he only prove a part of the Breach as laid. I Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, Of the Praecepice and Declaration, 368 (Springfield, 1833); Barnard v. Oaths, 5 Taunt. 27, 125 Eng.Rep. 595 (1813).

ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

it seems that a general averment quad non per formnavt, or that ‘the defendant did not perform the said agreement,’ is insufficient [on Demurrer, though Aided by Verdict], because ‘did not perform his agreement’ might involve a question of law, and also because the object of pleading is to apprise the defendant of the cause of complaint, so that he may prepare his Plea and Evidence in answer.” ~o But “where the breach lies more in the defendant’s than the plaintiff’s knowledge, less particularity is required.” 72

Where the matter to be performed by the defendant is contingent upon the happening of some other event, the Breach should not be Assigned in the Words of the Contract, but it should first be averred that such event has taken place; ~ and, if the Contract is in the Alternative or the Disjunctive, it is oh.. vious that the Assignment should be that the defendant did not do one act or the other. 73

The omission to Assign a Breach renders the Declaration fatally defective, not only on Demurrer, but on Motion in Arrest of Judgment or Writ of Error; it cannot be Aided.

1 Chitty, On Pleading, a IV, Of the Declaration, 343 (Springfield 1876); Knight v. Keech, 4 Mod. 189, 87 Eng.Rep. 341 (1601).

72 1 Chitty, On Pleading, c. IV, or the Praecepice and Declaration, 369 (Springfield 1833).

As on a Promise to deliver a horse by a particular time, or pay a sum of money, or on a Promise that the defendant, and his Executors and Assigns, should repair. English: Wright v. Johnson, 1 Sid. 440, 82 Eng.Brep. 1205 (1870); Aleberry v. Walby, 1 Sty. 229, 93 Eng.Rep. 489 (1719); Colt v. How, Ore. Ella, 348, 78 Eng.flep. 597 (1594).

But, in assigning the Breach of a Contract to pay, or cause to be paid, a sum of money, It is sufficient to say that the defendant did not pay, omitting the disjunctive words, for he who causes to be paid, pa.--'s. Aleberry v. Walby, 1 Str. 229, 53 Eng.Rep. 489 (1710).

by Verdict. But, if a Breach is Assigned, a defect in Assigning it must be taken advantage of by Demurrer, and will be cured by Verdict.76

DECLARATION IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT— ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS: (6) THE DAMAGES

170. The Declaration in Special Assumpsit should state the Damages which arise as the Direct and Legal, and sometimes the Actual, though not the Direct, Consequences of the Breach. Such Damages may be General or Special, and should be alleged according to their nature.

WHEREVER there has been a Breach of Contract, the plaintiff is necessarily entitled to some compensation in the way of Damages, though it may often be difficult to ascertain the amount.77 They must always be the direct or proximate result of the facts stated, and it is a general rule of pleading that the declaration must allege them, whether they are the main object of the action or only an incident. The amount recoverable in Special Assumpsit is generally fixed by the terms or nature of the Contract itself, under recognized rules of law, and may be only the contract price with interest, or it may include Special or Consequential Damage in addition. The manner of stating the Damage will depend upon its character, as General or Special; but a sum large enough to cover the whole claim must be alleged, as it is a general


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

nile that the recovery cannot exceed the demand,78 though it may be less.10

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

171. The Action of Special Assumpsit, de--spite efforts at change, continues to form a basis for liability, not only in the Non-Code States, but also in States operating under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court,

The ad damnum clause will govern though a less amount be laid, under a Videlicet, in the body of the Declaration. Chicago & A. U. Co. v. O'Brien. 34 Ill. App. 155 (1880).

When a larger amount is recovered than is claimed, the error may be cured by a Remittitur of the Excess, and this will generally be required. Louisville, B. & St. L. R. Co. v. Harlan, 31 Ill.App. 544 (1826).

Damages arising subsequent to the Commencement of the Action were not generally allowed at Common Law, the Judgment being taken to refer to the situation of the parties at the time the suit was brought, chiefly on the ground that these subsequent matters would take the defendant by surprise. Duncan v. Markley, 1 Harp. (S.C.) 276 (1824); Comyn, Dig. "Damages," I (London, 1822).

It is now the general rule, though its application is not free from difficulty, that such Damages may be included in the recovery where they are the direct and material consequences of the Breach, and so connected with it that they would not sustain an action by themselves. English: Fetter v. Beal, 1 Id.Illam. 339, 01 Eng.Rep. 1122 (1698); Maryland: Cooke v. England, 27 Md. 14, 02 Am.Dec. 618 (1867); Massachusetts: Pierce v. Woodward, 6 Pick. (Mass.) 206 (1828); Minnesota: Chamberlain v. Porter, 9 Minn. 260 (Gil. 244) (1864). See, also, the following cases; Massachusetts: Warner v. Bacon, S Gray (Mass.) 307, 60 Arm Dec. 25-- (1857); West Virginia: Jameson v. Board of Education, 78 W.Va. 612, 59 SE. 926 (1916).

THE Status of Special Assumpsit under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, clearly appears from a series of cases to which reference will now be made.

Long before the Code of 1848, in the pivotal New York case of Thoi-ne v. Deas, decided in 1809, which involved an Action of Trespass on the Case or Assumpsit for a Nonfeasance in not causing insurance to be taken on a certain vessel, Chief Justice Kent, after reviewing the early Common Law learning on the development of Special Assumpsit out of Trespass on the Case, from Watton v. Brinth, decided in 1400, to the Anonymous Case in 1505, held that the promise to take out insurance was not good, without showing a Consideration. In Candler v. Hart v. Rossiter, decided in 1833, the plaintiff declared in Assumpsit for Money Paid, omitting the ordinary Super Se Assumpsit—that the defendant undertook and promised—and instead thereof stated the circumstances of his case, to wit, that he bought a quantity of fish for the purpose of shipping it to a foreign port; that defendant, as a joint adventure placed a similar quantity of fish on board the same vessel, the parties to share the profit arid loss; that the fish were so damaged at sea, that they were sold at a loss, the whole of which the plaintiff sustained and paid, without having received any part thereof from the defendant, whereby the plaintiff was damaged in the sum of $500. On Writ of Error, after a Trial and Verdict for the plaintiff, it was held that the Declaration was bad in not alleging a promise by the defendant and hi not setting forth a consideration. In reversing the Judgment below, Sutherland, J., declared:

"It is probable that at this day the defect in those Declarations would be considered a

80. 4 Johns. (N.Y.) 84 (1800).
81. Y.B. 2 Hen. IV, Sb (1400).
83. as. ,~ we, ~t (N.Y.) 487 (1838).
Sec. 171

ACTION OF SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

clerical omission, as the sentence in each was obviously imperfect without the words Undertook and Promised—Super Sc Assumpsit, &c.; but They mark strongly the indispensable importance of the Allegation that the defendant promised, &c. Mr. Lawes, whose treatise on pleading in the Action of Assumpsit is of the highest authority, seems to consider the omission of the Allegation as fatal, after Verdict. This doctrine, upon the authority of the preceding cases, was also admitted by the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, in 3 Mass.R. 160; opinion of Sedgwick, J., page 176. Judge Gould, in his valuable treatise on pleading, speaking on the
subject of direct and positive averments, says, the rule appears to be, that all those facts which are directly denied by the terms of the general issue, or which may, by the established usage of pleading, be specially traversed, must be averred in direct and positive terms. Thus, in Assumpsit the Promise must be stated in terms direct and positive, because the general issue, Non...Assumpsit, purports to be a direct denial of the Promise. Gould's Treatise on Plead. 73, § 42, 44, 75. Considering therefore, that no contract or agreement whatever is distinctly stated, nor any promise by the defendant, nor any consideration for a promise, I think the Judgment must be arrested. These defects are not cured by the Statute of Jeofails; it is the case of a defective title, and not of a good title defectively set out!~

After the adoption of the Code of 1848, in the case of Bootft v. The Farmers c-Mechanics' National Bank of Rochester, the plaintiff filed a Declaration in Assumpsit containing two Counts. The first Count set forth that the defendant had assigned to the plaintiff a Judgment, that thereafter the defendant discharged the Judgment; that the defendants in the Judgment owned personal property, which, but for the discharge of the Judgment would have been liable to execution and sale; and the defendants in the Judgment are now insolvent; and the plaintiff has been injured by the discharge. The second Count alleged that defendant was indebted to the plaintiff for Money Had and Received. The defendant demurred on the ground of a Misjoinder of Actions, viz. one for a Tort, and one on Contract. On an Appeal from an Order overruling the Demurrer, the Order was reversed.

The first Count omitted the Allegation that the defendant undertook and promised to do the act complained of—that is, the Implied Promise by the defendant not to satisfy the Judgment. Without such an Allegation the Count was in Case. And as the second Count was in Contract, there was a violation of the then rule of pleading that Tort and Contract Actions could not be joined. In reversing the Order of the Lower Court, the Court decided:

“The Codifiers, while proposing to abolish the distinction between Forms of Actions, found it impossible or impracticable, in many cases, to effect their object, and this case illustrates the failure in at least one class of cases. When Case and Assumpsit were, at Common Law, Concurrent Remedies, the Form of Action that the pleader selected was determined, as I have shown, by the insertion or omission from the Declaration of the Allegation, that the defendant "undertook and promised." This right of selection remains, and Whether the action is in Tort or Assumpsit must be determined by the same criterion. If this is not so, then the right of election is taken away. If taken away, which of the two is left? An Action on Contract cannot be joined with one in Tort. How are we to determine whether the action is One on Contract or in Tort, unless the pleader, by averment, alleges the making of the Contract, and demands damages for a Breach in the one case, or by the omission of such an averment makes it an

856

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Action in Tort? I know of no more certain or convenient criterion by which to determine the class to which a Cause of Action belongs than the one suggested. If some such rule is not established the question of misjoinder will arise in every case in which, at Common Law, Assumpsit and Case were Concurrent Remedies.”~

In the case of Glanzer v. Shepard, decided in 1922, 87 public weighers were requested by the seller to weigh goods sold, and were paid for their services by the seller, and the property was accepted and paid for by the plaintiffs, the buyers, on the faith of the weigher's certificate. Upon discovering that the actual weight was short by 11,854 pounds, the plaintiffs brought suit for $1,261.26, the amount over paid. In the City Court of New York, the Trial Judge, upon Motion made by each side for the direction of a Verdict, gave Judgment for the plaintiffs. The Appellate Term reversed upon the ground that the plaintiffs had no
contract with the defendants, weighers, and must seek their remedy against the seller, whereupon the Appellate Division reversed the Appellate Term and reinstated the Verdict. On Appeal, the Court of Appeals affirmed the Judgment. Judge Cardozo declared; "We state the defendant’s obligation, therefore, in terms, not of contract merely, but of duty. Other forms of statement are possible. They involve, at most, a change of emphasis."


In the Illinois case of Banik v. BishopStoddard Cafeteria Co., The. 89 decided under the Illinois Practice Act, a former employee of a corporation, which had agreed to buy his stock in the corporation upon the termination of his employment, upon refusal of the corporation to buy the stock, filed a suit to recover damages equal to the difference between the amount which the corporation had agreed to pay and the amount realized from sale thereof on the open market. The Declaration consisted of the Common Counts, to which the defendant pleaded the General Issue and two Special Pleas, one of which stated that the alleged promises were not evidenced by any writing, and hence were within the Statute of Frauds, while the other stated that the alleged promises were without consideration. At the conclusion of plaintiff’s evidence, and at the close of all the evidence, the defendant moved for a Directed Verdict. The Motion having been de&ed, a Verdict was rendered finding the defendant liable and assessing the plaintiff’s damages at $758.00. The defendant moved for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict, in Arrest of Judgment and for a New Trial, which Motions were denied, although with a Remittiter of $350, after which Judgment was rendered in favor of Plaintiff. On Appeal, the Judgment was reversed and remanded, the Court stating that the Common Counts cannot be resorted to where there is a Special Contract and the Breach thereof is the gravamen of the action, but in such case the plaintiff must declare specially.

From the foregoing discussion, it appears that the Action of Special Assumpsit, despite the efforts at reform, is still alive and vigorous, not only in the Non-Code States, but also in States operating under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.


Sec. 172. Scope of the Action.
173. Express Contracts Which Do Not Exclude Indebitatus Assumpsit.
174. Indebitatus Assumpsit Distinguished From and Concurrent With Other Actions.
175. Forms of Declarations in Indebitatus Assumpsit.
176. The Common Counts.
177. Contracts of Record and Statutory Liabilities.
178. Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
  (1) In General.
179. Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
  (2) Statement of an Executed Consideration.
180. Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
  (3) The Promise.
181. Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:
  (4) The Breach.
182. Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit—Essential Allegations:

\[(5)\]

The Damages.

183. Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

**SCOPE OF THE ACTION**

172. Indebitatus or General Assumpsit is brought for the Breach of a Fictitious or implied Promise raised by Operation of Law from a debt founded upon an Executed Consideration. The basis of the action is the Promise Implied by Law from the Performance of the

1. In general, on the *Origin, History and Development of the Action of General (Indebitatus) Assumpsit,* see:

Treatises: Evans, Essays, on the Action for Money

Had and Received; and on the Law of Insurances

*Liverpool*, 1802; Hare, *The Law of Contracts,* c. XI, Implied Promises, 227—240 (Boston, 1887);

Keener, *A Treatise on the Law of Quasi-Contracts,* c. III, Waiver of Tort, 159—213 (New York, 1893);


General Assumpsit for Part Performance of Express

Contracts, 341—349 (St. Paul, 1905); 3 Street, *Foundations of Legal Liability,* c. XV, Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit, 182 (Northport, 1900); Woodward,

*The Law of Quasi-Contract,* c. J, *lidebitatus As-

Consideration, or from a debt or legal duty resting upon the defendant.

**Assumpsit—General or Special**

THERE finally evolved, from the original Tort Action of Trespass on the Case *Super Sc Assumpsit,* the Actions of Special Assumpsit


162 (1885); Adolphus, *The Circuiters,* An Edogue,

1 L.Q.Rev. 232 (1885); Ames, *History of Assumpsit,

Pt. II, 2 Harv.L.Rev. 53 (1888); Ames, Assumpsit for Use and Occupation, 2 Harv.L.Rev. Sir 337

238

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

and Indebitatus or General Assumpsit. As differentiated, Special Assumpsit became the remedy for the Breach of an Actual, Express Promise contained in a Contract entered into by the parties, whereas Indebitatus Assumpsit became the remedy in the field of Simple (Executed) Contract, the action not being grounded upon a Special Contract or Actual Promise, but upon a promise Implied by Law from the existence of a legal duty to pay money for value received.

**Contrats Implied in Fact and in Law**

IN this connection, however, it should at once be observed that the term “Implied Contracts” has been and is used in at least two senses.
As used in one sense it means a Tacit Contract, Implied as a Matter of Fact from the conduct of the parties, because their course of conduct shows agreement, as where one of them has delivered goods to or performed

(1889); Keener, Waiver of Tort, 6 JMar. L.Rev. 223,
269 (1803); Corbin, Waiver of Tort and Suit in Assumpsit, 19 Yale L.J. 221 (1910); Hanbury, The Recovery of Money, 40 L.Q.Rev. 31 (1924); Cohen, Change of position in Quasi-Contracts, 45 JMar.
L.Rev. 533 (1932); Langmaid, Quasi-Contract——
Change of Position by Receipt of Money in Satisfaction of a Preexisting Obligation, 21 Calif.L.
Rev. 311 (1933); House, Unjust Enrichment: The Applicable Statute of Limitations, 35 Calif.L.Q. 797 (1050); Seavey, Problems in Restitution, 7 Okla.L.Rev. 257 (1954).

Comments: Pleading: Sufficiency of the Common Counts, 4 Calif.L. Litig. 352 (1915—bIG); Pleading: Complaint: Common Counts: Allegation of Promise to Pay Where Services Rendered to Third Party, 21 Calif.L.Rev. 396 (1933); Contracts—Implied Contracts—Implied Warranty in Bailment and Other Non-Sales Contracts, 17 Minn.L.Rev. 210 (1933); Pleading—Complaint——Common Counts in Assumpsit Followed by Allegation of Promise to Pay, 21 Minn.L. Litig. 756 (1937); Eckor, Contract: Sales:

Annotation: Previous Debtor and Creditor Relationship a Condition of Account Stated, 6 A.L.B.2d 113 (1949).

services for another, at the other’s request or with the other’s knowledge, and under such circumstances as to raise a presumption that the other, as a reasonable man, must have known that payment for them was expected. Although no Express Promise to pay was made, the Law recognizes that by his conduct he Impliedly Promised to Pay, and to enforce this Implied in Fact Promise, Assumpsit is the proper remedy.²

The term “Implied Contract,” as used in a second sense, is applied to promises Implied or Created by Operation of Law, without any agreement between the parties, and oftentimes, even when the circumstances actually negative the existence of any agreement whatsoever, as where one pays money which another person ought to have paid, or receives money which another ought to have received, or, in some cases, where benefits are conferred upon another without any agreement. The Promise thus said to be Implied in Law is a sheer fiction of Law, resorted to for the purpose of allowing a remedy in Assumpsit. Such Obligations are not Contractual, but Quasi-Contractual.³

EXPRESS CONTRACTS WHICH DO NOT EXCLUDE INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

173. Indebitaths or General Assumpsit will not lie where there has been an Express Contract, except that it may be permitted in instances such as the following:

(I) Where the facts underlying the Express Contract are equivalent to the legal duty created by the Contract.

(II) Where the Contract, or some divisible part thereof, has been Fully Executed by the plaintiff, and nothing remains but the payment of money by the defendant.


Sec. 173

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

339

Contract and the Substantially Per-defendant has re/IV) Where, after part
Performance of the Contract, Further Performance is prevented by an act of the defendant, or by some act or
(V) **Where the Contract is merely void**

(not illegal), or merely unenforceable, or voidable and has been avoided, there may be a recovery in General Assumpsit for Part Performance.

(VI) **Where Additional Work has been done on request in performing a Special Contract.**

THE general rule of law is that if there is an Executory Special Contract, Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie; for the Law will not Imply a Promise to pay, except where the Consideration is Executed on the plaintiff’s part and a duty arises to pay the value of what he has done. 4

The leading English case of **Cutter v. Powell,** is cited in the leading American case of


A claim for Damages for Breach of Contract to do some act other than pay money must he Specially Plead. Hersey v. Florida, 191 Suth. 561, 158 N.W. 175 (1916).

**Hersey v. Northern Assurance Co.**, in which the Court alluded to the Common Law rule as follows: “In the present ease the facts aside from the Promise, viz: the plaintiff’s ownership of the property, its destruction by fire without his fault,—even the payment of premiums,—do not raise an Implied Promise by the defendant to pay; it is only the fact that it was promised, upon certain conditions, to pay, that makes it liable. Consequently, at Common Law, the Promise, the Conditions, and the Fulfillment of the Conditions, must be set forth—in other words the Count must be Special.”

But an Express Contract, under which a transaction has been Partially or Wholly Executed, does not always exclude an Action of Indebitatus or General Assumpsit for money due on such transaction. The factual situation involved may give rise to an Implied Contract, in which case recovery may be had on a Common Count. The occasions when this may occur may be grouped under the following heads:

4. 75 Vt. 441, 56 A. 05 (1903).


(Ill) **Where there is a plaintiff has not formed, but the ceived a benefit.**

(I) **Where the Facts Underlying the Express Contract are Equivalent to the Legal Duty Created by the Contract.**—Where the Express Contract in question creates no other obligation than that which the Law would normally imply from the existing factual situation, a Common Count in Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie; Thus, in *Gibbs v. Br- ant,* where the defendant had made a written promise to indemnify the plaintiff for a payment made by the plaintiff, it was held that the action could be supported for the payment of money by the plaintiff for the use

-2 Smith’s Leading Cases, 1 (13th ed. by Chitty,
OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

of the defendant, even though there was an Express Promise to pay the debt. 9

(II) Where the Express Contract has been Fully Executed or Performed, and nothing remains but the Payment of Money big the De\'fendant.—If the Contract has been Fully Executed by the plaintiff and nothing remains to be done but the payment of the price in money by the defendant, the plaintiff may either declare in Special Assumpsit on the Contract, or he may declare in General Assumpsit, at his Election, or he may join the Common Counts with Special Counts. 10


Indebitatus Assumpsit is Dot the proper form of action where the agreement sought to be enforced is not for the payment of money for machinery, but for the liquidation of the debt by the obtaining of notes from a third party for whom the defendant is acting. Power Equipment Co. v. Gale Installa~on Co., 210 Ill. App. 147 (1918).


Where the Declaration is in General Assumpsit, it is not based on the Special Contract, but on the defendant’s legal liability to pay for the benefits received; but the Contract is evidence of the value of the benefits, and his recovery will be limited to the compensation therein fixed.

If we assume that the insaifficient perflomance gives a right to recover, the Action would be upon the Common Counts. 11

254 (1887); New York: Jewell v. Scielroeppe], 4 Cow. (N.Y.) 56-1 (1825); Williams v. Sherman, 7 Wend. (N.Y.) 109 (1831); Pettier v. Sewal, 12 Wend. (N.Y.) 286 (1834); Dubois v. Delaware & H. Canal Co., 4 Wend. (N.Y.) 285 (1830); Pennsylvania: homeister v. Dobson, 5 Whart, (Pa.) 398 (1839); Eccley v. Foster. 2 Bin. (Pa.) 4 (1800); Miles v. Moodie, 3 Serg. & It. (Pa.) 211 (1817); Virginia: Baltimore & O. It. Co. v. Polly, 14 Gratt. (Va.) 477 (1858); Fedcal: Dermott v. Jones, 2 Wall. (U.S.) 1, 17 L.Ed. 762 (1864); Lank of Columbia v. Patterson, 7 Cranch (U.S.) 299, 3 L.Ed. 351 (1813); Chesapeake & 0. Canal Co. v. Knapp, 9 Pet. (U.S.) 541, 9 L.Ed. 222 (1835); Perkins v. Hart, 11 Wheat. (U.S.) 237, 6 L.Ed. 463 (1826).

The action cannot be brought before the expiration of a term of credit given by the Special Contract, for until then the defendant has not broken his Contract, and no right of action at all has accrued. English: Ithobon v. Godfrey, 1 Stark, 275, 171 Eng. Rep. 225 (1816); Illinois: Manton v. Gammon, 7 Ill.App. 201 (1880); Massachusetts: Hunnehmen v. Inhabitants of Orafon, 10 Mete. (Mass.) 454 (1845); Loring v. Gurney, 5 Pick. (Mass.) 16 (1827); Pennsylvanla: Gimrcl c. Taggart, 5 Serg. & fl. (Pa.) 19, ft Am.Dec. 327 (1818).

The Common Counts lie in case of a Contract for the sale of goods only where the contract has been performed by the seller, and nothing remains to be done but to make the payment. Alabama: Montgomery Co. v. New Parley Nat. Bank, 200 Ala. 170, 75 So. 918 (1917); Illinois: Brand v. Henderson, 107 111.

141 (1853).

Where an attorney rendered services under a Contract providing for a contingent fee, and the Contract was wholly Executed, he may recover his fee fa Assumpsit on the Common Counts, Carpenter v. Smithcy, 118 Va. 533, 88 S.E. 321 (1016).

Common Counts may be 3oined with a Special Count, alleging an Express Witten Contract. Conservation Co. v. Stimpson, 136 Md. 314, iIO A. 495 (1920); Alexander v. Capital Paint Co., 136 Md. 858, 111 A. 140 (1920).
For an authoritative statement of the law concerning Contracts substantially performed and the

**ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT**

Where there is an Express Contract and the Plaintiff has not Substantially Performed, but the Defendant has received a benefit. — Where the plaintiff has, without his wilful default, failed to perform the Special Contract, in some material respect, within the time or in the manner therein stipulated, he cannot maintain Special Assumpsit on the Contract, as he cannot show Substantial Performance on his part? 2 If he can recover at all, it must be in General Assumpsit, on a Promise by the defendant Implied in Law because of the benefits received by him. As to whether he can recover at all, even in General Assumpsit, the authorities are not in agreement. The question is whether the Law will refuse a party in default any relief or will Imply a Promise by the defendant to Pay for the benefits received by him. If it will, General Assumpsit will lie; but, if it will not, there can be no recovery at all. The question must be answered by the Substantive Law of Contract or Quasi-Contract. 3

remedies therefor, see Dennott v. Jones, 2 Wall. (U. S.) 1, 17 L.Ed. 762 (1860).


14. For cases In which it is held that there can he no recovery at all, see Cutter v. Powell, 8 Pkt. 320, 101 Eng.Rep. 573 (1705), to which is attached an exhaustive note, in 2 Smith’s Leading Cases, 0 (13th ed. by Chitty, Denning & Harvey, London 1929).

15. Illinois; Bannister v. Read, 1 Gil. (Ill.) 99 (18-14); Selby v. l-hutelinson, 4 Cii. (111.) 319 (1847); Catholic Bishop of Chicago v. Lauer, 62 In. ISS (1871); Banger v. City of Chicago, 65 111. 506 (1872); Guerdon v. Cobett, 87 Ill. 272 (1877); Kipp v. Massin, 15 Ill.App. 300 (1884); Indiana: Hoagland v. Moore, 2 Blackf. (md.) 167 (1828); Maine: Wright v. Has]-eli, 45 Mc. 480 (1858); Massachusetts: Moulton v. Trask, 0 Mete, (Mass.) 577 (1845); Johnson v. Trinity Church Sec., 11 Allen (Mass.) 123 (1803); Michigan: Mooney v. York Iron Ce., 82 Mieh. 263, 46 NW. 376 (1800); New York: Duljois v. Delaware & H. Canal Co., 4 Wend. (N.Y.) 285 (1850); Jones v. Judd, 4 N.Y. 411 (1850); Pennsylvania: Hall v. Uplady, 10 Pa. 231 (1849); Algeo v. Algeo, 10 Berg. & It. (Pa.) 235 (1823); Rhode Island: Greene v. Haley, SRI. 263 (1858); Vermont: Derby v. Johnson, 21 Vt. 17 (1848); Federal: Perkins ‘s-. Hart, 11 Wheat. (U.S.) 237, 6 L.Ed. 463 (1820).

v. flowes, 20 N.Y. 197, 75 Am.Dec. 386 (1859); Rhode Isla.id: Yerrington v. Crouno, 7 RI. 589, 84 Am.Dec. 578 (1863); Parker v. McComber, 17 RI. 674, 24 A. 464, 16 L.R.A. 858 (1892); Vermont: Fenton v. Clark, 11 Vt 557 (1839); Wiscon
Sec. 173
341

**OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

Ch. 17

if, after such Partial Performance, the Contract is abandoned by mutual consent, or waived or rescinded it the plaintiff may maintain General Assumpsit to recover for what he has done. Or, in the case of prevention of Further Performance by the defendant, the plaintiff may, at his Election, sue in Special Assumpsit, for such prevention is a Breach of the Contract by the defendant, and the plaintiff may, instead of claiming a Discharge of the Contract, consider it as being still in force.17

sin: Green v. Gilbert, 21 Wis. 401 (1867); Jennings v. Lyons, 30 Wis. 553, 20 Am.Rep. 57 (1876).


It was held in Illinois that a recovery of time balance due on a building Contract cannot be had under Common Counts, where the contractor relies on Matter of Excuse for not procuring the final certificate of approval by the architect; but in case of Substantial Performance, where no certificate is called for, recovery may be had under the Common Counts for labor and material in spite of slight variations. Why the plaintiff cannot show excuse for non-production of an architect’s certificate under the Corn-men Counts to show a recoverable indebtedness for value received Is not entirely clear. Expanded

(V) **Where the Contract is Merely Void (Not %llega7), or Merely Unenforceable, or Voidable and has been Avoided, there may be a Recovery in General Assumpsit for Part Performance—If the Special Contract, which the plaintiff has Partially Performed, is void (not illegal), or unenforceable, or voidable and has been avoided by the plaintiff or defendant, General Assumpsit may be maintained for the Partial Performance. This rule, as is indicated in the note below, is subject to some qualification.**15


It is otherwise in case Full Performance has been prevented by act of the defendant. Illinois: Catholic Bishop of Chicago v. Bauer, 62 lii. 188 (1871); Michigan: Mooney v. tori; Iron Co., 82 Mich. 263, 40 NW. 376 (1890). And on Substantial Performance, see Evans v. Howell, 211 lii. 85, 71 NE. 85-1 (1904).


Thus, where an infant performs services under a Contract, which he has a right to avoid because of his infancy, and lie avoids the Contract before he has Fully Performed, he may bring General Assumpsit for the services rendered. Illinois: Bay v. Italics, 52 Ill. 485 (1809); Massachusetts: Moses v. Stevens, 2 Pick. (Mass.) 332 (1824); Gaffney v. Hayden, 110 Mass. 137, 14 Am.Rep. 580 (1872); New York: Med-bury v. Watrons, 7 Hill (N.Y.) 110 (1845); Vermont:


And generally, where a person who has Partly Performed a Contract rescinds it on the ground of fraud, undue influence, duress, or for want or failure of consideration, or want of capacity to contract, or because of a Breach of the Contract by the other party operating as a discharge, he
may recover in General Assumpsit for his Part Performance. Clark, Handbook of the Law of Contract, c. 12, Quasi-Contracts, 650 (3d ed. by Throckmorton, St. Paul 1914). See, also, the following cases: English:

Plinne v. Colburn, S Bing. 14, 131 Eng. Rep. 305 (1831); Ex parte McClure, LII. 5, Ck App. 737 (1870); 1st sessell v. Bell, 10 M. & W. 840, 152 Eug. Rep. 500 (1842); Illinois: Citizens Gaslight & Heating Co. v. Granger, 118 Ill. 266, 8 N.E. 770 (1886); T. W. & W. B. Co. v. Chew, 67 Ill. 378 (1873); Kan

342

Sec. 174

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

(VT) Where Additional Work has been done on Request in Performing a Special

sas: Shanc v. Smith, 37 Ran. 55, 14 P. 477 (1877);


If the Special Contract is void because it is illegal, in that it is contrary to public policy, or in violation of the Common Law, or of a Statute, neither of the parties, if in part delicto, can recover from the other for a Partial Performance. Clark, hlad. hook on the Law of Contracts, e. 12, Quasi-Contracts, 650 (3d ed. by Throckmorton, St. Paul 1914).

When an agreement is not illegal, but merely void, or unenforceable, as where it fails to comply with the Statute of Frauds, or is made ultra vires by a corporation, or for any other reason, and one of the parties refuses to perform his part after Performance or Part Performance by the other, the Law will create a Promise to Pay for the benefits received. If a man delivers goods or performs services for another under a contract which is thus void, he can recover for his Part Performance. Clark, Handbook of the Law of Contracts, e. 12, Quasi-Contract, 650 (3d ed. by Throckmorton, St. Paul 1914).

INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT DISTINGUISHED FROM AND CONCURRENT WITH OTHER ACTIONS

174. Indebitatus Assumpsit is in general a substitute for Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract; it was not, however, as broad as Debt, as it was not available on a Specialty, a Record or a Statute, in general. It was distinguished from Special Assumpsit which lay for Breach of an Express Contract, where Indebitatus Assumpsit lay for the recovery of a debt or an obligation akin to a debt. The Action was Concurrent with Debt, Special Assumpsit and Trover, under certain circumstances, and subject to certain necessary qualifications.

It is essential that the distinctions between Indebitatus Assumpsit and other actions should be clearly understood. It is frequently said that Indebitatus Assumpsit is a substitute for Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract. For all practical purposes this is true, but in order to be technically correct, the statement requires some qualification, as strictly speaking, Indebitatus Assumpsit differed from Debt in that it might be maintained in situations where the sum alleged to be due was not susceptible of precise proof, as required in Debt; it could be used to recover installments of a debt which in its entirety was not yet due; and it lay against

Texas: Steven’s Ex’rs v. Lee, 70 Tex. 279, 8 SW.

40 (1888); Wisconsin: Ellis v. Cary, 74 Wis. 176, 42 NW. 252, 4 L.B.A. 55, 17 Am.8t.Eep. 125 (1882).


I am Executor or Administrator, against whom Debt would not lie under the Early Common Law where the testator had the right to demand Trial by Wager of Law. However, until Debt was extended to cover obligations which were not certain, but which might be reduced to certainty by averment or proof, Debt was not a remedy for Obligations similar to but not identical with a True Common-Law Debt, and now known as Quasi-Contractual Obligations. And while Indebitatus Assumpsit would usually lie where Debt would lie, the converse was not true. As Dean Ames has pointed out, there were many cases where Assumpsit was the only remedy, as the benefit received did not constitute a Real Debt or a Real Contract.

In a certain sense, however, Debt was broader than Indebitatus Assumpsit, as the latter action would not lie on a Specialty, a Record, or a Statute, generally; Indebitatus Assumpsit was a substitute for Debt originally only in the Field of Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract; and in the sense that originally Debt was not available on Quasi-Contractual Obligations, whereas Indebitatus Assumpsit would lie, the latter action might be said to be broader than the former.

Special Assumpsit was an action to recover Damages for the Breach of an Express Contract, whereas Indebitatus Assumpsit was an action to recover a Common-Law debt, and finally, to recover obligations akin to debts, but not quite identical therewith.

But as we have seen, Indebitatus Assumpsit and Debt were concurrent in the field of Debt on Simple (Executed) Contract, and Indebitatus Assumpsit may and frequently is concurrent with Special Assumpsit, where, over and above the Simple, Executed Contract, which supports the former action,

22. On the present validity of this distinction, see Ohildress v. Emory, 8 Wheat. (U.S.) 642, 5 L.Ed. 705 (1823).

there is also an Express Promise, which has been Breached. And in such a case it may be eminently judicious to so frame the Declaration in Assumpsit as to permit the plaintiff to avail himself of either basis of liability. This result may be attained by declaring in a Special Count upon the Actual or Express Contract and thereafter adding one or more Common Counts, covering the meritorious services the rendition of which may be proved.

Moreover, under certain circumstances, Indebitatus Assumpsit is a concurrent remedy with Trover. Thus, where a defendant has taken and converted the chattels of the plaintiff amid sold them, at his Election, the plaintiff may sue in Trover for the Conversion, or he may Waive the Tort, and sue in Indebitatus Assumpsit on a Count for Money Had and Received.

FORMS OF DECLARATIONS IN INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

COMMON Couper FOR GOODS Sow AND DELIVERED ~

FOR that, whereas, the said C.D. hereto fore, to wit, on the day of

Page 361 of 735
For the distinctions between the various Common Counts, see Section 176 on the Common Counts.

In an Action for Goods Sold and Delivered where recovery is based on the Common Counts, the evidence must show a delivery of the goods alleged to.

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

175. In this Section will be found the following Forms: Forms of Common Counts in Indebitatus Assumpsit, including the Common Count for Goods Sold and Delivered, the Common Count for Work and Labor, the Common Count for Money Lent, the Common Count for Money Paid, the Common Count for Money Had and Received, the Quantum Valebant Count, the Quantum Meruit Count, and the Count for an Account Stated. A Form of the Common Breach is set out after the Common Counts, a Separate Breach being always assigned to each Count, as each is a separate and complete statement of a Cause of Action.

23. Ames, Pare! Contracts Prior to Assumpsit, 8 Harv.L.Rev., 252 (1894).

See, 175

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

A.D. 17_, at . in the county of . was indebted to the said A.B. in the sum of dollars, for divers goods, wares and merchandises by the said A.B. before that time sold and delivered to the said C.D. at his special instance and request; and being so indebted, he, the said C.D., in consideration thereof, afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, undertook and faithfully promised the said A.B. to pay him the said sum of money when he, the said CD., should be thereto afterwards requested.


COMMON COUNT FOR WORK AND LABOR

AND whereas, also, the said C.D. afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, was indebted to the said AS. in the farther sum of dollars, for work and labor, care and diligence by the said AS. before that time done, performed and bestowed in and about the business of the said C.D., and for the said C.D., at his like instance and request; and being so indebted, lie, the said C.D., in consideration thereof, afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, undertook and faithfully promised the said A.B. to pay him the said last-mentioned sum of money when he, the said CD., should be thereto afterwards requested.


COMMON COUNT FOR MONEY LENT

A Count for Goods Bargained and Sold will lie where title has passed to the defendant without delivery.


A Count for Goods Bargained and Sold will lie where title has passed to the defendant without delivery.
money when he, the said C.D., should be thereto afterwards requested.


COMMON COUNT FOR MONEY PAID

AND whereas, also, the said C.D. afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, was indebted to the said A.S. in the farther sum of dollars, for so much money by the said A.S. before that time paid, laid out, and expended to and for the use of the said C.D., at his like instance and request; and being so indebted, he, the said C.D., in consideration thereof, afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, undertook and faithfully promised the said A.S. to pay him the said last-mentioned sum of money when he, the said C.D., should be thereto afterwards requested.

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Community VALEBANT COUNT

AND whereas, also, on the day last above mentioned, at the county aforesaid, in consideration that the plaintiff, at the request of the defendant, had before that time sold and delivered (or bargained and sold, as the ease may be) to the defendant, divers other goods, chattels, and effects, the defendant promised the plaintiff to pay him, when requested, so much money as the last-mentioned goods, chattels, and effects, at the time of the sale and delivery (or bargain and sale, as the case may be) thereof were reasonably worth, and the plaintiff avers that the same were then and there reasonably worth the sum of dollars, whereof the defendant, on the day last aforesaid, there had notice.

Quantum MERUIT Assumpsit COUNT

FOR that, whereas, the defendant heretofore, to wit, on the day of ___ in the year at the county aforesaid, in consideration that the plaintiff, at the request of the defendant, had done certain labor and services for him, etc. (stating the subject-matter according to the fact, and conclude as follows):

The defendant promised the plaintiff to pay him, on request, so much money as he therefor
reasonably deserved to have, and the plaintiff avers that he then and there reasonably deserved to have thereby the sum of... dollars, whereof the defendant then and there had notice.


FORM OF COUNT FOR ACCOUNT

STATED

AND whereas, also, the said C.D. afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, accounted with the said AS. of and concerning divers other sums of money from the said C.D. to the said A.B. before that time due and owing and then in arrear and unpaid; and upon that account the said C.D. was then and there found to be in arrear and indebted to the said AS. in the further sum of dollars; and being so found in arrear and indebted, he, the said C.D., in consideration thereof, afterwards, to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at... af ore-said, in the county aforesaid, undertook and faithfully promised the said A.B. to pay him... of dollars; and therefore he brings his suit, etc.

Attorney for
Plaintiff.


THE COMMON COUNTS

176. The Common Counts are certain formulae for alleging an indebtedness founded on various transactions, such as a loan of money,

26. In genera), on the Common Counts in Indebitatus or General Assumpsit, see:

Treatises: Evans, Essays: on the Action for Money Had and Received; and on the Law of Insurances (Liverpool 1502); 2 Chitty, A Treatise on Pleading, The Common Counts, 27—83 (3d Am.Ed. by Dunlap, Philadelphia 1810); Pomeroy, Code Remedies, c. III, §1 443-449 (4th Ed. by Bogle, Boston 1904); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law Appendix, Note I. General Assumpsit for Part Performance of Express Contracts, 341-349 (St. Paul 1905); Shipman, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, c. VIII, Action
the sale of goods, the doing of work and labor, or the stating of an account. They cover both Common Law Debts and Quasi-Contractual Obligations similar to but not quite identical to Common Law Debts.

BROWN states that “the Common Counts were not formerly in use, and Lord Holt used to say that he was a bold man who first ventured on them, though they are now every day’s experience.”

in General
IN Indebitatus or General Assumpsit the action is based, not on an Express or Special Promise, but on a Promise Implied by Law from the existence of a duty to pay money, arising either from a debt created by a Simple, Executed Contract or from an Obligation raised by Quasi-Contract. Like Debt, for which it was a substitute in certain areas, it specifically enforces the unconditional duty to pay money. Indebitatus or General Assumpsit lies upon a debt arising from the passage of a quid pro quo from the plaintiff to the defendant, upon a debt arising from a Contract Implied in Fact, and which has been Executed, leaving nothing to be done


Pleading—Complaint—Common Counts in Assusepsit Followed by Allegations of Promise to Pay, 21 Minn. Liter. 756 (1037).

AnnotatTon: Previous Debtor and Creditor Relationship a Condition of Account Stated, 6 A.L.R.2d 113 (1949).


OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

but pay the debt, and upon a debt arising from a Contract Implied in Law, and known as Constructive or Quasi-Contract.

And, in setting forth his Declaration, the pleader need not indicate which variety of Implied Contract—in fact or in law—he relies upon. But as the Executed Consideration is an indebtedness, and the Promise alleged to have been broken is one legally resulting from the fact of such indebtedness, the Proof at the Trial must show a debt. It follows, therefore, that the action in reality is one for the recovery of a Money Debt, due upon a Simple (Executed) Contract, such, for example, as upon the sale of goods, or lands, for rendition of services, for work, labor and materials, or on an Account Stated, as well as other similar transactions resulting in the enrichment of the defendant at the plaintiff’s expense.

If a person requests another to do work for him under such circumstances that the other has a right to expect pay therefor, and the latter does the work, the Law will, as an Inference of Fact, Imply a Promise by the former to pay what the services were reasonably worth, and the action to recover such compensation is General Assumpsit. So, if a man orders goods from another without an Express Promise to Pay a certain price, and they are delivered, the seller may maintain General Assumpsit to recover their value. So, if a person pays money which another should have paid, he may maintain General Assumpsit against the latter to recover it, such a Count being known as a Count for Money Paid by the plaintiff for the use of the defendant. And where a man receives money which in equity and good conscience belongs to another, the latter may sue in General Assumpsit to recover, this Count being known as the Count for Money Received by the defendant for the use of the! plaintiff, or for Money Had and Received. And where a man lends money to another without an Express Promise by the latter to repay it, he may recover the debt in General Assumpsit on a Count for Money Lent. And if parties state an account between them, General Assumpsit lies for the balance, the Count being known as a Count for a balance due on Account Stated. General Assumpsit is also known as the Common Counts. The Common Counts are not suited to enforce Collateral Undertakings, Guaranties, and Contracts of Indemnity.

Recovery on a fire insurance policy cannot be had on the Common Counts, as payment of the premiums is not sufficient of itself to constitute a quid pro quo or raise an Implied Promise. Accordingly the Promise itself and the conditions thereof must be specifically set forth. But in case of adjustment of the loss this makes an Account Stated, and the Implied Promise to Pay the amount due is regarded as a different Contract from the Policy itself, which may be enforced by the Common Counts.29

Varieties of Common Counts

THE Common Counts in Indebitatus or General Assumpsit have generally been classified as including (1) The Indebitatus


Sec. 176 ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

Counts; and (2) The Quantum Meruit and Counts; and (3) The Account Stated, as will Quantum Vaiebant Counts—the Value appear from the chart below:

TUE CLASSIFICATION OF TUE COMMON COUNTS 30

A. MONEY COUNTS:

1. For money paid to the defendant’s use.
2. For money had and received.
3. For money lent.
4. For interest due.
5. For money found to be due on account stated.
6. For use and occupation of land.
7. For board and lodging.
8. For land sold and conveyed.
9. For goods sold and delivered.
10. For goods bargained and sold.
11. For work, labor and services.
12. For work, labor and materials.
13. Any other circumstances on which a debt may be

B. OTHER COUNTS:

GENERAL ASSUMPSIT OR THE COMMON COUNTS

2. VALUE A. QUANTUM COUNTS: MERUIT COUNTS:

B. QUANTUM
VALEBANT

COUNTS:

ACCOUNT Stated: This Count, for money found to be due on an account stated, is also classified as an Indebitatus Count, as set out above in chart.

This chart is adopted from that found in MOKELVEY, Principles of Common Law Pleading, § P. 27 (New York 1894), with certain additions and modification.

30. See Note 30 on page 850.

1) The Indebitatus Counta—In an Indebitatus Count in Assumpsit, the most comprehensive of all, the plaintiff alleges that the defendant, on a certain day, at a certain place, was indebted to him in a certain sum, for a certain described Cause or Consideration furnished by the plaintiff, and stating the Consideration to have been furnished at the special instance and request of the defendant. In general, time and place are immaterial. If the suit is in a Court of Assumpsit, it was not necessary to set forth all the details of the transaction from which it arose. It was enough to allege the general nature of the indebtedness, as for goods sold, money lent! money paid at the defendant’s request, money bad and received to the plaintiff’s use, work and labor at the defendant’s request, or upon an Account Stated, and that the defendant being so indebted promised to pay. This was the origin of the Common Counts. Ames! Lectures on Legal History, e. XIV, Implied Assumpsit, 153, 154 (Cambridge, 1913).


A Declaration In Indebitatus Assumpsit Is good Ca General Demurrer, even though it states neither time, place, nor a request to pay.

Keyser v. Shafer, 2 Cow. (N.Y.) 437 (1823).

And consequently, in those states where special Demurrers have been abolished, it would seem that the Allegation of some of these facts would be unnecessary, though it is certainly the better practice to allege them. Alabama: McCrary v. Brown, 157 Ala. 518, 50 So. 402 (1909); Illinois: McEwen v. Morey, 60 Ill. 32 (1871).

ZZ. See Langer v. Parish, 8 Serg. & B. (Ps.) 134 (1822),


It is not necessary, however, to give a particular description of the work done, or the goods sold, etc. Lewis v. Cnibberton, 11 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 49, 14 Am. Dee. 607 (1824). See: Michigan: Crane v. Grass-man, 27 t.Iieh. 443 (1573); Federal: Edwards v. Nichols, 3 Day (Conn.) 16, Fed.Cas.No.4,296 (1808).


The statement that money was “lent” implies that it was advanced at the request of the defendant. But this does net apply to money “paid.”


And the same is true of a Count for Goods Sold and Delivered. McEwen v. Morey, 60 I.B. 32 (1871).
ferior Jurisdiction, the Declaration should allege that the cause of action arose within such Jurisdiction. The sum stated in the Declaration is generally also immaterial, provided it be laid to cover at least the actual amount due; the cause of the debt, as well as the debt itself, should be included so as to ground a subsequent plea of Res Judicata. And, of course, it must appear that the consideration for the debt was furnished at the Request of the defendant.” And these Indebitatus Counts were of two descriptions, Money Counts, and Other Counts.

(A) The Money Counts—The Money Counts relate only to Money Transactions as the basis of the debt, while the other Counts relate to any transaction other than a Money Transaction upon which a debt may be founded. These Counts, in the order listed in the chart above, will now be separately considered.

Sec. 176

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

(1) The Count for Money Paid to the Defendant’s Use.—The theory underlying this Count is that where one person allows or requests another to assume such a position that the latter may be and is compelled to discharge a legal liability of the former, the Law creates or implies a request of the former to the latter to make the payment, and a Promise to repay him thus implied, and the liability thus created may be enforced by an action of Indebitatus Assumpsit. As indicated by the heading such an action is technically called an action for money paid by the plaintiff for the use of the defendant; and in order to maintain a Count for Money thus Paid, it was necessary for the plaintiff to show, first, a payment in money, and secondly, such payment must have been paid at the defendant’s request. And money must actually have been paid; a security such as a bond, or even stock, is not sufficient.—This Count will lie where a party has been compelled to pay a debt that another should have paid. Thus, where a member of a firm gave a Promissory Note, signed in the partnership name for a debt of his own, and his partner was compelled to pay it, it was held that the latter might recover from the former as for Money Paid to his use.

Where several persons agree to contribute equally to certain expenditures, and one advances more than his share, the excess is so much paid for the use of the others and hence may be recovered in Indebitatus Assumpsit. The

(2) The Count for Money Had and Received.—The theory of this Count is that whenever one person has received money to which another person, in justice and good conscience, is entitled, the Law creates or Implies a Promise by the former to pay it to the latter, and an Action of Assumpsit will lie to enforce this liability on the basis of the Fictitious Promise. The action is tech

Where several persons agree to contribute equally to certain expenditures, and one advances more than his share, the excess is so much paid for the use of the others and hence may be recovered in Indebitatus Assumpsit. Buck-master v. Grundy, 3 Gil. (Ill.) 626 (1840). Cf. Cram v. Hutchinson, 8 Ill.App. 179 (1880).

Where several persons agree to contribute equally to certain expenditures, and one advances more than his share, the excess is so much paid for the use of the others and hence may be recovered in Indebitatus Assumpsit. Buck-master v. Grundy, 3 Gil. (Ill.) 626 (1840). Cf. Cram v. Hutchinson, 8 Ill.App. 179 (1880).


43. See Brosnne, A Practical Treatise on Actions at Law, c. VI, Forms of Actions, § 1, The Common
Counts in General, 345, 367—385 (Philadelphia 1844); Clark, Handbook on the Law of Contracts, e. 12,
Quasi-Contract, 630 (3d ed. by Throckmorton, St. Paul 1914), for a collection of the cases and discussion of the doctrine.

44. Moses v. Macferlan, 2 Burr. 1005, 97 EngRep. 676 (1760). See also, the following cases: Illinois:
Bradford v. City of Chicago, 25 Ill. 411 (1861); Creel v. Kirkham, 47 Ill. 344 (1868); Watson: Woolverton, 41 Ill. 241 (1866); Johnston v. Salisbury, 61 Ill. 316 (1846); Trumbull v. Campbell, 3 Gil. (Ill.) 502 (1846); Devine v. Edwards, 101 Ill. 138 (1881); Bennett v. Connelly, 103 Ill. 50 (1882);

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Thus, where one person by means of duress, fraud, trespass, or any other tort, obains another’s money, and converts it to his own use, or obtains his property and sells the same, and converts the proceeds, the other may Waive the Tort, and bring Assumpsit on a Promise, Created by Law, to repay the money so obtained. Or as was said:

"Thoughts much too deep for tears pervade the Court, When I AssumpsO'Neal, 73 Inch. 582, 41 NW. 701 (1880); New York: McCrea v. Pumrott, 16 Wend. (N.Y.) 400, 30 Am.Dec. 103 (1835); Pennsylvania: Miller v. Ord, 2 Bin. (Pa.) 382 (1810); Barr v. Craig, 2 DaI. (Pa) 151, 1 L.Ed. 327 (1792); Virginia: Johnson's Ex'rs v. Jennings’ Adm’r, 10 Grat. (Va.) 1, 60 Am.Dec. 323 (1853); Federal: Swift & C., & B. Co. v. United States, 111 U.S. 22, 4 S.Ct. 244, 28 L.Ed. 341 (1884).

A Count for Money Had and Received will lie only where defendant has received money or other value equivalent to morley, as a negotiable note. Thus, it lies against one who has fraudulently procured the surrender of his own note. Penobscot It. Co. v. Mayo, 67 Me. 470, 24 Am.Rep. 40 (1878).

Assumpsit will not lie for Money Received by the defendant for the rent of land, the title to which is claimed by the plaintiff, where Us claim is disputed, since the title to land cannot be tried in this form of action. Illinois: King v. Mason, 42 Ill. 223, 89 Am.Dec. 426 (1866); Kran v. Case, 123 Ill.App. 214 (1903); Pennsylvania: Lewis v. Robinson, 10 Watts (Pa.) 338 (1840).

The owner of land may waive a Trespass thereon, and, a—mlng the conversion, sue, in an Action for Money Had and Received, one who severs wood, ravel, or other parts of the realty, and transforms it into money, but only when title to the land is not in dispute. Arizona Commercial Mining Co. v. Iron Cap Copper Co., 236 Mass. 185, 128 NE. 4 (1920).

- Clark, Handbook on the Law of Contracts, e. 12, Quasi-Contracts, 632 (3d ed. by Throckmorton, St. Paul 1014); See also, the following cases: English: Atlee v. Backhouse, 3 14, & V. 633, 150 Eng.Rep. 1298 (1838); Shaw v. Woodcock, 7 B. & 0. 73, 108 Eng.Rep. 652 (1827); Neate v. Harding, 6 Exch. 349,
The Action will also lie to recover Money Paid by Mistake of Fact, as where money is paid as due upon the basis of erroneous accounts, and, upon a true statement of account, it is found not to be due.


And money paid on a purchase of land to which the vendor and grantor have no title may be so recovered back. Demesney v. Gravelin, 56 Ill. 93 (1870). Cf. Trinkle v. Reeves, 25 R.I. 214, 76 Am.Dec. 793 (1861); Laflin v. Howe, 112 Ill. 253 (1855).

whereas a loan of foreign money would lie where money has been delivered to a third party at the defendant’s request, provided credit was extended to the defendant, and he is the principal debtor, and not merely collaterally liable.55

And to establish a loan requires something more than a mere showing of a payment of money by the plaintiff; this alone raises a presumption of Law that such payment was in discharge of the debt and not by way of a loan.56 Of course such presumption is rebuttable by showing transactions between the parties from which a loan may be inferred.57 And naturally a Bill or a Note in the usual form will serve as evidence of money lent between the payee and drawer of the former, and the payee and maker of the latter.58

(4) The Count for Interest Due.—The Common-Law rule as to when interest was allowed was stated by Chief Justice Abbott in the case of Higgins v. Bargent,59 decided in 1823, where he declared: “It is now established as a general principle, that interest is allowed by law only upon mercantile securities, or in those cases where there has been an express promise to pay interest, or where such promise is to be implied from the usage of trade or other circumstances.” 60 There were some instances, however, not within the scope of the statement above, where interest was allowed, as where money was awarded to be paid on a day certain, if the money had been demanded, provided the plaintiff pro-

---


ceed by action? and not by attachment!~ In cases not falling within the first statement above, interest was in general not recoverable.

By a Series of Statutes, however, the Common-Law rules as to the allowance of interest have been considerably altered. This began with the Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. IV, c. 42, 73 Statutes at Large 280, enacted in 1833.

Section 28 provided that upon all debts or sums certain payable at a certain time or otherwise, the Jury (on the Trial or Inquiry) may allow interest, at a rate not exceeding the current rate, from the time when such debts or sums certain were payable, if such debts or sums be payable by virtue of some written instrument at a certain time; or if payable otherwise, then from the time when demand of payment shall have been made in writing, so as such demand shall give notice to the debtor that interest will be claimed from the date of such demand until the term of payment, provided that interest shall be payable in all cases in which it is now payable by law.

Section 29 provided that the Jury on the Trial or Inquiry may give Damages in the nature of interest over and above the value of the goods at the time of the conversion or seizure in all Actions of Trover or Trespass De Bonis Asportatis, and over and above the money recoverable in all actions on policies of assurance made after the passing of the act.

Section 30 provided that if on Writ of Error the Judgment be for the defendant, the Court shall allow interest for such time as the execution has been delayed by the Writ of Error.


Statute 1 & 2 Viet. c. 110, § 17, 78 Statutes at Large 550 (1838), provided: “That every Judgment Debt shall carry Interest at the Rate of Four Pounds per Centum per Annum from the Time of entering up the Judgment, or from the Time of the Commencement of this Act in Cases of Judgments then entered up and not carrying Interest, until the same shall be satisfied, and such Interest may be levied under a Writ of Execution on such Judgment”

(5) The Count For Money Found to be Due on Account Statect—As this Count appears as the third major classification in The Classification of the Common Counts, it will be discussed below at that point, and not as one of the Indebitatus Counts, although it meets the requirements of an Indebitatus Count in the legal theory.

(B) Other Counts: (1) The Count for Use and Occupation of Land—At Common Law the Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit was not available for Use and Occupation upon a quasi-contract.~ The reason for this as worked out by Dean James Barr Ames, was connected with the nature of rent. On a lease for years, reserving a rent, as well as on a sale of goods, originally Debt was the only remedy. In both cases the Obligation to Pay did not arise out of a Contract in the modern sense, as Debt for goods sold was based on the

43: ~n general, on the Development of Indebitatus Assumpsit as a remedy to recover damages for Use and Occupation, see:


Comments: Quasi-Contrat-Assumpsit for Use si d
theory of a grant, whereas Debt for rent was a reservation. As to the sale of goods, the situation was altered by the development of Assumpsit, under which Assumpsit was extended into the Field of Debt, first, by holding that Assumpsit would lie where a Promise to Pay a Debt was made subsequent to the time when the Debt was created, and second, by the holding in 1602 in Blade’s Case, in which it was decided “that the buyer’s words of agreement, which had before operated only as a grant, imported also a Promise, so that the seller might, without more, sue in Debt or Assumpsit, at his option.”

But the courts refused to take this step in the case of rent, and apparently there was only one case of Indebitatus Assumpsit for rent prior to legislative intervention. In that case, Black v. Bowsat, decided in 1623, the reporter observed: “Note, there was not any exception taken, that the assumpsit is to pay a sum for rent; which is a real and special duty, as strong as upon a Specialty; and in such case this action lies not, without some Special Cause of Promise.” And Dean Ames cites cases to support the view that thereafter the plaintiff failed to recover in Assumpsit, both where there was a subsequent Express Promise to Pay, as well as where there was no such Promise.

Assumpsit was made concurrent with Debt in order to evade Trial by Wager of Law, but

66 Ibid.
60 Slack v. Bowsal, Cro. 668, 79 Eng.Rep. 579 (1623), this incentive was lacking in the case of rent, as Wager of Law was not available in Debt for Rent. And the Executor of a Lessee was chargeable in Debt, while only Assumpsit was permitted against the Executor of a Buyer or Borrower. Hence, as Dean Ames suggests, the Courts found no reason why they should extend Indebitatus Assumpsit into the Field of Rent. In time, however, the landlord was permitted in certain cases to sue in Special Assumpsit as well as Debt, an innovation brought about by the continuing struggle between the Royal Courts for Jurisdiction. As Special Assumpsit was a branch of Trespass on the Case, over which King’s Bench had jurisdiction, this part of its jurisdiction was expanded to cover the situation, as it had no jurisdiction over cases arising by Original Writ in Debt. In its earliest attempt, as in the case of Synwock v. Payn, the Court sought to justify its usurpation by construing agreements concerning leases as not creating a rent. In 1635, in the case of Acton v. Bimonds, it was held that Assumpsit would lie concurrently with Debt where it appeared that at the time of the lease, the lessee had expressly Promised to Pay the rent. The argument was summarized in a report of the same case in Rolle’s Abridgment, where it was stated:

“The action lay, because it appeared that it was intended by the parties that a lease should be made and a rent reserved, and for better security of payment thereof that the lessor should have his remedy by Action of Debt upon the reservation, or Action upon this Collateral Promise at his Election, and this being the intent at the beginning, the making of the lease though real would not toll this Collateral Promise, as a man may covenant to accept a lease at a certain rent and to pay the rent according to the reservation, for they are two things, and so the

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Promise of Payment is a thing Collateral to the Reservation, which will continue though the lessee assign over.”

According to Dean Ames, this doctrine, as recognized by the Court of King’s Bench, was adopted by the Court of Exchequer in the case of Trever v. Roberts, decided in 1664, and by the Court of Common Bench in the case of Johnson v. May, decided in 1683. In the cases considered to this point the assumpsit was for the payment of a sum certain, but anumpsit was also admissible in cases where the amount to be recovered was uncertain, that is, where the defendant promised to pay a reasonable compensation for use and occupation of land. And, as Debt originally would not lie upon a Quantum Meruit Count, Assumpsit thus filled a gap in the remedial law, as it lay where the sum to be recovered was indefinite or uncertain, with the consequence that Debt would not lie.

Against this background, in the year 1737, the Statute of 11 Ceo. If. c. 19, was enacted. To remedy the inconvenience of suing for the recovery of rents, where the demises were not by deed, Section 14 provided that it shall be lawful for a landlord, “where the agreement is not by deed, to recover a reasonable satisfaction for the lands, tenements, and hereditaments held or occupied by the defendant in an Action on the Case for the Use and Occupation of what was so held or enjoyed; and if, in evidence on the Trial of such action, any parol or demise or agreement, not being by deed, wherein a certain rent was reserved, shall appear, the plaintiff shall not therefore be Non-suited, but may make use thereof as an evidence of the Quantum ofDamages to be recovered.” From the language of the Statute, it is evident that it was designed to eliminate two earlier difficulties which barred the use of Indebitatus Assumpsit for Use and Occupation: first, to prevent a plaintiff from being Non-Suited on the ground of a Variance, where the plaintiff had sued upon a Quantum Meruit Count, and it appeared from the evidence that the demise was for a sum certain, for which Debt was the proper remedy; and second, to escape from the necessity of proving an Express Promise at the time of the demise, where the plaintiff declared for a sum certain, and it was the removal of this second difficulty which gave the Statute its chief significance. Dean Ames summed up the matter, when he declared: “Thereby Indebitatus Assumpsit became concurrent with Debt upon all Parol Demises. In other words, the Statute gave to the landlord, in 1738, what Blade’s Case gave to the seller of goods, the lender of money, or the employee, in 1602; namely, the right to sue in Assumpsit as well as in Debt, without proof of an Independent Express Promise.”

Although the Statute only mentioned an Action on the Case, which meant Assumpsit, Debt for Use and Occupation still remained available, even where there was an Express Demise, but not by deed. Thus, the action of Indebitatus Assumpsit for Use and Occupation became concurrent with Debt upon all Parol Demises. In other words, the Statute gave to the landlord, in 1738, what Blade’s Case gave to the seller of goods, the lender of money, or the employee, in 1602; namely, the right to sue in Assumpsit as well as in Debt, without proof of an Independent Express Promise.

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

74. I Rolle, Abridgment, 8, p1. 10, (1834).
76. 3 Let. 150, 83 Eng.Rep. 624 (1683).
As the Action for Use and Occupation was based on the landlord-tenant relationship, express or implied, and as the Statute was construed as limited to cases, where by mutual agreement, the person in possession of the land was to pay either a sum certain or a reasonable compensation to the owner, it was not possible to charge a trespasser in Assumpsit for Use and Occupation.

As to pleading, it was not necessary to allege where the premises were located, as the Venue was Transitory. And where a rent had been agreed upon, that was the Measure of Damages, even though the lease was void, otherwise they would be the value of the premises, which should be proved. It was not permissible to join a Count on a Demise and a Count for Use and Occupation.

(2) The Count for Board and Lodging.— In this Count the plaintiff alleged that the defendant was indebted for certain rooms, apartments and furniture, used and enjoyed at the special request of the said defendant; and for meat, drink, fire and candles, and other necessaries, found and provided by the plaintiff at the defendant’s special request: that the said defendant undertook and faithfully promised the plaintiff to pay him so much money as he reasonably deserved to have of the said defendant; plus an averment as to the amount of money the plaintiff reasonably deserved.

(3) The Count for Land Sold and Conveyed.—The Indebitatus Counts include a Count for Real Property Sold. It has been held in many cases, that where the agreement to pay the price of Land was to pay the same in money, such price could be recovered un

85. Tomlinson v. Day, 2 Brod. & B. 680, 120 Eng.Rep. 1125 (1821). We have previously seen that where goods are wrongfully obtained and converted into

money, Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie by the owner to recover the money, as received for his use, but such Form of Assumpsit will not lie where the goods are not converted into money by the wrongdoer. Whether Assumpsit in any form will lie in the latter case is not clear. Some courts hold that the only remedy is in Tort, as by an Action of Trover. Other courts, however, hold that the owner of the goods may waive the Tort, mld sue in Indebitatus Assumpsit for the goods, as upon a Fictitious Sale, and Promise to Pay for them?

90. Thus, a sale of an automobile to which (no manufacturer had title, was held to be a conversion by the party who sold it, for which the manufacturer could maintaia Prover or he could Waive the Tort Action and recover on the Common Counts, after disposition of the car for money or other property.

And in such jurisdictions, where the goods taken have been turned into money, there can be no recovery on a Count for Goods Sold and Delivered; the Count must be for Money Had and Received. Allen v. Ford, 10 Pick. (Mass.) 218 (1837); Brown v. Holbrook, 4 Gray (Mass.) 103 (1855).

Where one wrongfully converts personal property, but does not receive any money therefor, the Tort cannot be Waived, and an Action Sw Contractu brought, because, until the wrongdoer has received money to which the owner of the property is entitled, there can he no Action for Money Had and Received, or upon an Implied Promise to Pay. Woodruff v. Zaban & Son, 133 Ga. 24, 65 SE. 123, 134 Am.St.Ilep. 186, 17 Ann.Cas. 974 (1909).


(5) The Count for Goods Bargained and Sold.—The Common Count for Goods Sold and Delivered lies in those cases only in which there has been an actual or constructive delivery; but the Count for goods Bargained and Sold lies where there has been a complete sale but no delivery. It is necessary, however, that the property in the goods should have become vested in the vendee by virtue of such sale. The right of property must be in the vendee, though the right of possession may be in the vendor; and although a sale be complete and binding in other respects, no property passes where anything material requires to be done before the delivery, to ascertain the price thereof, or the specific goods sold, and Goods Bargained and Sold therefore will not in such


*Where there has been a tortious taking or detention of property, which has not been sold by the tortfeasor, the owner may Waive the Tort and

Where the defendant appropriated the plaintiff’s property, the plaintiff may Waive the Tort and maintain an Action of Assumpsit for the value of the property, even though the defendant had not sold and converted the same into money. Daniels v. Foster & Kleiser, 95 Or. 502, 187 P. 627 (1920). See, also, an article by Deinard & Deinard, Election of Remedies, 8 Minn.L.Rev. 341, 358, 360, 502, 504 (1222).


Sec. 176

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

359

case lie. And so in the case of manufactured goods, unless the goods are specifically appropriated to the vendee, with his assent, no property passes, and Goods Bargained and Sold will not lie.95

(6) The Count for Work, Labor and Services.—When work is done or services are rendered, not under a Special Contract as to compensation, but under such circumstances that the law will Imply a Promise to pay what they are worth, or where, though done or rendered under a Special Contract, that Contract has been Fully Performed, General Assumpsit will lie to recover compensation therefor. In such cases, the action may be in Indebitatus Assumpsit, or on the Quantum Meruit—

(II) Value Counts: (A) Quantum Meruit.

—The first of the Value Counts, Quantum lktcurit, is used where the plaintiff has performed services, and he alleges that, in Consideration that the plaintiff, at the request of the defendant had done certain work, the defendant, Promised the plaintiff to Pay him so much money as he there for reasonably deserved to have, and that the plaintiff deserved to have a certain sum7


Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie for work and labor where the plaintiff has been discharged without performance. The action must lie on the special agreement. Algco v. Algeo, 10 Serg, & U. (Pa.) 235 (1823).


(B) Quantum Valebant.—The second of the Value Counts, Quantum Valebant, is used where the plaintiff has sold goods to the defendant, and he alleges that the defendant, in Consideration thereof, Promised the plaintiff to Pay him so much as the goods were reasonably worth, and that they were reasonably worth a certain sum—

(C) The Absorption of the Quantum Mentit and Quantum Valebant Counts into the Indebitatus Counts.—As Debt originally lay for a sum certain only, that action could not be maintained on the facts of a Quantum Meruit or a Quantum Valebant, because of the uncertainty of the sum involved. But when Debt was extended to such implied Obligations, under the maxim Id certum efl quocit certum reddi potest [that is certain which can be made certain], and the Indebitatus Count in Assumpsit came to be permitted in cases where by evidence an uncertain sum could be reduced to a certainty, it thus was made possible to maintain the action on such factual situations as formerly required the use of the Quantum Meruit or Quantum Valebant Counts. The Value Counts of Quantum Meruit and Quantum Valebant, in the eyes of the legal profession in England, came to be regarded as unnecessary, their original scope and purpose being brought within the purview of the Indebitatus Count in Assumpsit and in Debt.
recognition of this fact the Regulations of Trinity Term, in 1831, prescribed a Common Form for the Common Counts of Indebitatus Assumpsit and Account Stated, simplifying and relieving them from “unnecessary verbiage.”

In the United States it has been held that the use of the Value Counts is now not necessary, since the reasonable Value of Goods Sold and Delivered or Work and Labor Done may

98. Id. at 140.


See I Saunders, Pleading and Evidence, Assumpsit, Form of Remedy, 139, 140 (Philadelphia 1831).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

be recovered upon an Indebitatus Count. Thus, in Parker v. Macamber, where the plaintiff brought Indebitatus Assumpsit to recover compensation for board, maintenance, care and nursing, with the Declaration containing Four Counts, for Goods Sold and Delivered, Work and Labor, Money Had and Received, and for Interest, and the Jury returned a Verdict for the plaintiff, after which the defendant sought a New Trial, contending, among other things, that the evidence as to the services rendered was not admissible without a Quantum Meruit Count, the Court denied a New Trial, declaring: “We think it [the declaration] is sufficient. A Count in Quantum Memii, as well as one in Intt ebitat us Assumpsit for Work, Labor, Skill, Care, Diligence, etc., claims a certain sum due. In either case the plaintiff may recover less, and the Judgment is for so much of his stated claim as is found to be justly merited. The Counts in Quantum Meruit and Quantum Valebat, are therefore unnecessary in any case.”

The effect of such decisions has been to reduce the necessary Common Counts to the indebitatus Counts and the Account Stated, the latter of which will now be considered.

(111) The Common Count on an Account Stated.—The Action of Indebitatus Assumpsit lies to recover the balance due upon an Account Stated, for the law Implies a Promise to pay. The Account Stated must be with reference to former transactions between the parties, or some debt for which an action or suit would lie, or some demand which the defendant ought morally and in


justice to pay: if not, the Count is not maintainable. The rule as to when the Count on an Account Stated will lie, was laid down in the case of Porter v. Cooper, by Baron Parke, who declared: “I take the rule to be this, that if there is an admission of a sum of money being due for which an action would lie that will he evidence to go to the Jury on the Count for an Account Stated.” Thus, an Account Stated is an acknowledgment of debt.

CONTRACTS OF RECORD AND STATUTORY LIABILITIES

177. Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie, in the absence of a statute, to enforce a Domestic Judgment nor a Judgment rendered in a Sister State. But a Judgment of a Foreign Court is not considered a Debt of Record. Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie to enforce certain Statutory Obligations to pay money.

Action on Judgment

A JUDGMENT of a Court directing the payment of money clearly cannot be regarded as a true Contract, for the element of agreement is wanting. Whether or not Assump
9. In general, on contracts of Record, see Note, 29 Ann. Cas. 656 (1909).

**ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT**

Sit will lie depends on the character of the Judgment. Assumpsit will only lie on a Simple Contract, or a Quasi-Contractual Obligation having the force and effect of a Simple Contract Debt. It will not lie on a Contract under Seal, or on any other Specialty. A Judgment of a Court of Record, not being a Foreign Court, is not merely evidence of the debt, but is conclusive evidence of it. It is a Specialty, and therefore Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie.\(^1\)

It was long ago determined, however, that the Judgment of a Foreign court is merely evidence of the debt, and not conclusive, so that it has only the force of a Simple Contract, and therefore Indebitatus Assumpsit may be maintained upon it.\(^2\) The action will also lie on a Domestic Judgment of an Inferior Court Not of Record, since it is not a Specialty.\(^3\) Some of the Courts have therefore held that Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie on a Justice’s Judgment; but there are decisions to the contrary, on the ground that even a Justice’s Judgment is conclusive, and therefore a Specialty.\(^4\)

Louisiana v. Mayor, etc., of City of New Orleans, 109 I.S. 255, 3 S.Ot. 211, 27 L.Ed. 936 (1883).

\(^1\) It was at one time held in some states that the Judgment of a Court of Record in a Sister State is of the same effect as any other Foreign Judgment—merely evidence of the debt—so that Indebitatus Assumpsit will lie upon it;\(^5\) but, in view of the Full Faith and Credit Provision of the Federal Constitution that a Judgment rendered in One State shall have the same force and validity in Every Other State as in the State in which it was rendered, a Judgment of a Court of Record of One State is conclusive evidence of the debt in Every Other State (except that it may be attacked for fraud or want of jurisdiction), and therefore a Specialty, and it necessarily follows that it will not support the action of Indebitatus Assumpsit. The remedy is Debt.\(^6\)
Liability imposed by Statute

Where an Obligation to Pay Money is imposed by Statute, it may be enforced by an action of Indebitatus Assumpsit. Illustrations of such an Obligation arise where a Statute imposes a duty upon one County or Parish to pay another for money expended.

Ohio: Adairs Adair v. Rogers’ Administror, Wright (Ohio) 428 (1833).

The judgment of a Court of the pen—ii, another state is not a specialty debt of record. Indiana: Collins v. Modissett, 1 Blackf. (Tad.) 9 (1820); New Hampshire: Robinson v. Prescott, 4 N.H. 150 (1828); Mahurin v. Bickferd, 6 N.H. 567 (1833).


In some states the Courts have gone even further, and held that the Judgment of a Court of Record in a Sister State is so conclusive that it cannot be attacked for fraud. Mellam v. Mattoon, 13 Pick. (Mass.) 53 (1832).

OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS

in the support of a pauper, or where a Statute allows an action to recover usury paid, or money lost and paid on a wager. But Indebitatus Assumpsit will not lie if the Statute prescribes some other remedy and impliedly excludes the remedy by Indebitatus Assumpsit.1

IECLAEATION IN INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(I) IN GENERAL

178. The Essential Allegations of a Declaration in Indebitatus Assumpsit are:

(I) A Statement of the Executed Consideration, or quid pro quo, from which the defendant’s indebtedness arose.

(II) A Promise by the Defendant to Pay Money.

(III) A Breach of the Promise.

(IV) The Damages.

THE Form of the Declaration in Indebitatus (General) Assumpsit is very simple, and needs scarcely any discussion. The chief difficulty is in determining when General Assumpsit will lie. Instead of stating the concrete facts of the cause of action, the Corn


At Common Law a Penalty given by Statute may be recovered either in Assumpsit or Debt Ewbank v. President, etc. of Town of Ashley, 36 Ill. 177 (1864).

But, if the Statute prescribes the Form of Action for Its recovery, the recovery cart be had only in that form of action. Illinois: Confray v. Stark, 73 III. 187 (1874); Massachusetts: Peabody v. Hayt, 10 Mass. 36 (1813).
Assumpoit is the proper remedy under a Statute (providing no other remedy) to recover money paid for intoxicating liquors. Friend v. Dunks, 37 Mich. 25 (1877); Id. 39 Mich. 733 (1878).

Common Counts state only General Conclusions of Law, as that defendant is indebted for money had and received, or some other vague reason. These General Statements do not disclose the exact ground of the liability, or assist in presenting the Issue of Law and Fact on which the case depends. They are convenient in avoiding the danger of a Variance and concealing the real basis of the claim, but violate the true principles and policies of pleading. 18

DECLARATION IN INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(2) STATEMENT OF AN EXECUTED CONSIDERATION

179. The Declaration must allege an Existing Indebtedness to the plaintiff, based on a receipt of value by him, at his request.

Inebditatvs Assumpsit

AS we have stated previously, in stating the debt and its cause in the Common Counts in Inebditatus Assumpsit, the plaintiff alleges that the defendant, on a certain day, at a certain place, was indebted for a sum certain, for a Specific Consideration furnished by the plaintiff, with a Statement that the Consideration was furnished at the Special Instance and Request of the defendant. 19 Time and

18. For cases on the Common Counts, see the following: Alabama: McLeod v. Powe & Smith, 12 Ala. 9 (1847); California: Pike v. Zadig, 171 Cal. 273, 152 Pac. 923 (1915); New Jersey: Cory v. Board of Chosen Freeholders of Somerset County, 47 N.J.L. 181 (1825); Pleading: Sufficiency of the Common Counts, 4 Calif.L.Rev. 352 (1916).


A Declaration in Inebditatus Assumpsit is good on General Demurrer, though it states neither time, place, nor a request to pay. Keyser v. Shafer, 2 Cow. (N.Y.) 437 (1823).

And consequently, in those states where Special Dcstirers are abolished, it would seem that the Allegation of some of these facts would be unnecessary. Sec. 179

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

place are in general immaterial, except that a time must not be laid subsequent to the date when the Cause of Action arose; and with regard to place, if the action is brought in a Court of Inferior Jurisdiction, the Declaration should allege that the Cause of Action arose within such Jurisdiction. 21 The statement of the sum claimed is also, generally immaterial except that enough must be laid to cover the actual amount. Another requisite is the statement of the Cause of the Debt, as well as the debt itself; and this is both for the information of the defendant, so that he may know what debt is sued on and what defense to make, and in order to identify the subject-matter of the action, so as to enable him to Plead the Recovery in Bar of any subsequent action for the same debt. 22 As this Form of Action is founded upon Contract, the cause or consideration of the debt should be stated as having taken place or as having been furnished at the Special Instance and Request of the defendant. 23


21. This is in addition to the statement of the County as a Venue. Massachusetts: Bi-lggs v. President, etc. of Nantucket Bank, 5 Mass. 96 (1809);


The statement that money was “lent” implies that it was advanced at the request of the defendant.

Quantum Meruit and Quantum Valebant Counts

In the Quantum Meruit Count the plaintiff declares that, in consideration of his having performed some personal service for the defendant, at his request, the latter promised to pay him so much therefor as he reasonably deserved, and then states how much he deserves for such service. In the Quantum Valebant Count the plaintiff declares that, in consideration of his having sold and delivered real or personal property to the defendant at his request, he promised to pay him so much as the goods or land were reasonably worth, and then states what the value was. There is no necessity for using the Value or Quantum Counts rather than the Indebitatus Counts to recover for what one’s goods or services are reasonably worth. In these Counts it is not sufficient to state merely that the defendant was indebted to the plaintiff in a certain sum, and promised payment, but it must be shown what was the cause or subject-matter or nature of the debt; this does not apply to money “paid”. English: Victors v. Davies, 12 M. & W. 758, 152 Eng.Rep. 1405 (1844); West Virginia: Somerville v. Grim, 17 W. Va. 803, 810 (1881). So of Count for goods sold and delivered. McEwen v. Mercy, 60 Ill. 32 (1871).


Recovery of the reasonable value of goods sold or services rendered may be had under an Indebitatus Count, so that neither a Quantum Meruit nor a Quantum Valebant Count is ever necessary. Maine: Norris v. School District No. 1 In W.N. 293, 28 Am.Dec. 182 (1835); Parker v. Macomber, 17 111. 674, 24 A. 464, 10 LILA. 858 (1802).

364 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 17

as that it was for work done, or goods sold, etc. But it is not necessary to state the particular description of the work done, or goods sold, etc., for the only reason why the plaintiff is bound to show in what respect the defendant is indebted is that it may appear to the Court that it is not a Specialty.

Account Stated

IT is usual, in Actions of General Assumpsit, to add, to the Counts above mentioned, a statement of a Cause of Action alleging that the defendant accounted with the plaintiff, and that, upon such accounting, the defendant was found to be indebted to the plaintiff in a certain sum. As the Consideration for the Promise is here the statement of the account ascertaining and fixing the sums due which constitute the debt, and not the existence of the debt itself,
the original cause of the indebtedness need not be stated.29


27. English: lihbert v. Courthope, Ca-i-th. 276, 00

Eng.Rep. 764 (1692); Ambrose v. Roe, Skin. 217, 90
L'ng.Rep. 100 (1684); Story v. Atkins, 2 Ld.Raym.
1429, 02 Eugitep. 428 (1726); Penuslyvanin: Lewis
- Culbertson, 11 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 49, 14 Am.Dce. 007


P.09. 860 (1726); Tneman y Hurst, 1 Lit. 42, 99
Eng.Esp. 1232 (1780); Peacock v. Harris, 10 East
104, 103 Eng.Ilep. 715 (1808); Knowles v. Mielch, 13
East 249, 104 Eng.Ilep. 360 (1511); Maryland: Strullings v. Cottshalk, 77 Md. 429, 26 A. 521 (1803).

Recovery on this Count call be only when a certain a ftxed sun is admitted to be dim. Pennsylvania:
Richey v. hathaway, 140 Pa. 207, 24 A. 191 (1892);
Vermont: Warren v. Caryl, 61 Vt. 331, 17 A. 741 (1889),


DECLARATION IN INDEBITATUS AS SUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

180. The Promise of the Defendant, though it is an Implied One, must always be alleged.

IT is not intended by this that there must be a detailed statement of the defendant’s Contract, but a brief Allegation that the defendant “Promised” or “Agreed” to pay the sum owed or value claimed. This much is held essential to a proper statement of the Cause of Action, as the Declaration might otherwise show the Wedeg Consideration to be merely a voluntary or gratuitous act on the part of the plaintiff, for which there could be no recovery.30 It does not make any difference whether the defendant ever made any such Promise, nor is it necessary to prove it. All that is necessary to prove is a debt, and the law Implies a Promise. Eut some Courts will reverse a case on this technical matter.5

DECLARATION IN INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

181. The Breach of the Promise in Indebitatus Assumpsit is the neglect and refusal

The word “Promised” is riot necessary if an equivalent be used, as “undertook” or “agreed.” See:
English: Corbett v. Paekington, 6 B. &C. 268, 108
Eng.f.lcp. 451 (1827); South Carolina: Wingo v. Brown, 12 Rich. (S-C.) 270 (1859); Pennsylvania:
Shaw v. Redmond, 11 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 27 (1824);

Maine: Coffin v. Hall, 100 Me. 126, 75 All. 385 (1909); West Virginia: Viad v. Diton, 55 W.Va.
ACTION OF INDEBITATUJS ASSUMPSIT

of the defendant to perform it, that is, to pay.
As in Special Assumpsit, it is an essential part of the cause of action, and must in all cases be stated.

THE neglect or refusal of the defendant to fulfill his Promise, whether Express or Implied, is always a necessary Allegation in the Declaration, as it is essential to the plaintiff’s right to sue. In form it is usually a brief statement that the defendant has neglected and refused to pay, and still neglects and refuses so to do. This is the Common Breach usually Assigned in Actions upon the Common Counts, and a Separate Breach is always Assigned to Each Count, as each is a separate and complete statement of a cause of action.

DECLARATION IN INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT—ESSENTIAL ALLEGATIONS:

(5) THE DAMAGES

182. The Declaration must allege the Damages directly resulting from the Breach by the defendant, and must lay them high enough to cover the actual demand.

THE measure of recovery in this action will obviously be the amount of the indebtedness due, or the reasonable worth and value of the services rendered or goods or land sold, where no sum was agreed upon; and the Damages must always be laid high enough to cover all the plaintiff expects to prove, as his recovery will be limited to the amount stated.

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

183. In spite of the reform under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, a survey of the development of Indebitatus Assumpsit, covering the period from its origin until now, shows that the action is still operating with its earlier vitality substantially unimpaired.

THE Action of Indebitatus (General) Assumpsit was in general use in the several states of the United States prior to 1848. After 1848, the action remained in vogue. Thus, for example, in the Rhode Island case of Parker v. Macomber, the plaintiff brought Indebitatus Assumpsit for Goods Sold and Delivered, Work and Labor, Money Had and Received, and for Interest, and the Jury returned a Verdict for the plaintiff and assessed Damages at $1,072.50, being at a certain rate for 390 weeks, and the defendant prayed for a New Trial, contending, among other things, that the services were performed under an Entire Contract, which had not been completed, the Court denied a New Trial. In so doing, Douglas, J. declared:

“The questions which are raised by the petition are, whether the plaintiff can recover what his services are reasonably worth, notwithstanding the making of the Contract, and, if so, whether this Declaration is sufficient without a Count in Quantum Meruit to admit evidence of the value of the services, and to sustain a Judgment

Page 384 of 735
therefor.

“We cannot doubt that, when this action was brought, the agreement had been annulled, if it ever had had any validity.

“If the leasehold interest were for a term exceeding one year, the agreement amounted to an attempt to convey an interest in real estate by parol, and was void under the Statute of Frauds.


35. 17 RI. 674, 24 A. 464, 16 LiLA. 858 (1802).

366 OFFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 17

“In such case, as the defendant refused to continue the arrangement, whether justifiably or not, the plaintiff, is entitled to re—cover the value of his services already rendered. Lockwood v. Barnes, 3 Hill, N.Y. 128; King v. Welcome, 5 Gray. 41.” ~

In New York case of City of New York v. Fink,31 decided in 1927, the issue was raised as to whether, under the Code, an action would lie against a trespasser to land for the reasonable value of the Use and Occupation thereof? In denying a Motion by the defendant, under Rule 112 of the Rules of Civil Practice, for Judgment on the Pleadings, McGoldrick, J. said:

“As a Development of the Common Law a party was permitted to bring an Action of Assumpsit and thus avoid the difficulties presented in the Pleading and Proof of Causes of Action in Covenant, Debt and the like. The remedy, however, was not extended to a case in which the landlord sought to recover compensation for the use of his land, not reserved by deed, until the enactment of statutes (see 11 George II, chap. 19, § 14), in substance re-enacted in our Revised Statutes and contained in Section 220 of our Real Property Law. When it is said, therefore, that to maintain Use and Occupation the conventional relation must exist, and such action cannot be maintained against a trespasser (Prof. Ames “Assumpsit for Use and Occupation,” 2 Harv.L.R. 377; Keener Quasi Contracts, 191, 192), this merely means that the Form of Action characterized as Assumpsit and based upon the existence of the conventional relation of landlord and tenant could not be maintained against one not bound expressly or impliedly as tenant, or against a trespasser.

“It would seem to follow that the historical reasons which prevented an owner of property from recovering Damages for trespass unless he had procured a Judgment [in Ejectment] against the wrongdoer no longer exists for the apparent object of the legislation was not that compensation for trespass could only be had in an action to recover the property or the possession thereof, but to remedy a condition which made it necessary for a plaintiff in Ejectment to institute, after Judgment, a separate proceeding for the collection of his Damages.” ~

In view of the Abolition of the Forms of Actions by the Codes, an issue was bound to arise as to whether the summary method of statement of a cause of action, as found in the Action of General Assumpsit, could be used under the Codes. Dean Pomeroy held to the position that in the face of the Code requirement that the Complaint should state the facts in plain and concise language, the practice of using the Common Counts in Indebitatus Assumpsit violated one of the fundamental objectives of the Codes. ~ “But” said Judge Clark, “the Common Counts were apparently too well and favorably known and too convenient a form of pleading to succumb to this strenuous attack, for in probably all Jurisdictions the use of the Common Counts, at least for an indebtedness incurred with the defendant’s consent, is well settled.” 40

Judge Clark’s view finds confirmation in the New York case of Maxherntan Co. Inc. v. Aiper)’ decided in 1924.

§1. 130 Misc. 620, 224 N.Y.S. 404.
The Complaint, which was in the form of a Common Count in Indebitatus Assumpsit, and sought to recover the value of goods alleged to have been sold and delivered to the defendants at their


Sec. 183

ACTION OF INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

special instance and request, was held sufficient on Motion by the defendants for Judgment on the Pleadings, even though a Bill of Particulars showed that the defendants had secured the goods from third persons on an alleged purchase, but with knowledge that the third persons had no title to the goods. Said the Court:

“While it seems to me that every Complaint should state facts giving rise to a Cause of Action, complaints in the Common-Law Form have been sustained since the enactment of the Civil Practice Act. Such being the case, I cannot distinguish the Complaint in the case at Bar, supported as it is by the Bill of Particulars, from the Complaints in numerous other adjudicated cases.”

Finally, in the Federal case of Stone v. White, decided in 1937, in which the plaintiff brought a statutory action for a refund


43. 301 U.S. 532, 57 S.Ct. 851, 81 L.Ed. 1265 (1937).
of taxes erroneously collected, the Supreme Court of the United States sustained the plaintiff, Mr. Justice Stone observing:

“The action, brought to recover a tax erroneously paid, although an action at law, is equitable in its function. It is the lineal successor of the Common Count in Indebita\"tus Assumpsit for Money Had and Received. Originally an action for the recovery of debt, favored because more convenient and flexible than the Common Law Action of Debt, it has been gradually expanded as a medium for recovery upon every Form of Quasi-Contractual Obligation in which the duty to pay money is Imposed by Law, independently of Contract, Express or Implied in Fact.”

It thus appears that the Common-Law Action of Indebitatus (General) Assumpsit is still operating with its earlier vitality substantially unimpaired, despite our Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.


PART FOUR
DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

CHAPTER 18
MOTIONS OF DEFENDANT AFTER THE DECLARATION
AND BEFORE THE PLEA

Sec.
Demand of Oyer.
Views, Aid-Prayer and Voucher to Warranty.
Imparlance.
Motion for a Bill of Particulars.
Status Under Model-n Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

Page 386 of 735
DEMAND OF OYEIZ'

184. The Demand of Oyer is the Assertion of the Right of a Party to hear read (Oyer), or, in Modern Practice, to inspect, a deed of which Profert is made by the Other Party in his Pleading.

IF the Declaration contained Profert of an Instrument under Seal, upon which the plaintiff grounded his Right of Action, the first steps of the defendant, after its receipt, was a Demand of Oyer; that is, the Right to

1. In general, on the subject of Demand of Os-er, see:

Treatises: Perry, Common Law Pleading: Its History and Principles, c. VII, Of the Proceedings in an Action, from its Commencement to its Termination, 185—187 (Boston, 1897); Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading In civil Actions, c. II, Of the Proceedings in an Action, from its Commencement to its Termination, 100—104 (3rd Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, B. C. 1898); Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. VIII, Motions of Defendant After Declaration and Before Plea, Art. I, ~ 231, Demand of Oyer, 187—188 (St Paul, 1905); Shipman, Handbook of Common Law Pleading, c. XVIII, Rules as to Alleging Place, Time, Title and Other Common Matters ~ 289, Demand of Oyer, 482, (SM ed. by Balianino, St. Paul, 1023).

have the Instrument under Seal read, or in Modern Practice, to inspect it before Trial. 2 The opposite party is required to afford this inspection, either by permitting an inspection of the Instrument itself, or by showing or serving a copy.

It was necessary to have the Instrument read in Open Court, where the defendant desired to ascertain the authenticity of the Instrument, or to make use by Demurrer or Plea of such portions of the Document as were not set forth in the Declaration. The effect of granting Oyer was to make the Instrument under Seal a Part of the Record. And the Right of Oyer existed in all the Common-Law Actions, whether Mixed, Personal or Real, and by its exercise,

2. Rand v. Rand, 4 N.H. 267, 278 (1828); Judge of Probate v. Merrill, 6 N.H. 256 (1833).

The right to crave Oyer of Papers mentioned in pleading applies only to Specialties and to Letters of Probate and Administration, not to other writings. It only applies to a deed when the party pleading relies upon the direct and Intrinsic operation of the deed, Smith v. Wolstofer, 110 Va. 247, 89 SE. 115 (1916).

368
Sec. 184

AFTER THE DECLARATION AND BEFORE THE PLEA

the defendant was relieved from pleading until it was granted. It was also demandable in response to Profert made in any pleading subsequent to the Declaration?

When a Deed is pleaded with Profert, it is supposed to remain in Court all the Term in which it is pleaded, but no longer, unless the opposite party during that Term plead in denial of the Deed, in which case it is supposed to remain in Court till the Action is determined. Hence, it is a Rule that Oyer cannot be demanded in a subsequent Term to that in which profert is made. 4

A party having a Right to Demand Oyer is yet not obliged, in all cases, to exercise that right; nor is he obliged in all cases, after demanding it, to notice it in the pleading he afterwards files or delivers. Sometimes, however, he is obliged to do both, namely, where he has occasion to found his answer upon any matter contained in the Deed of which Profert is made, and not set


Oyer could only be demanded where Profert is made. Thus in an action on a bond conditioned for performance of the covenant in another deed, the defendant cannot crave Oyer of such deed, but must himself plead it with a Profert. Perry, Common-Law Pleading: Its History and
According to the settled Common-Law Rule of Practice in this State, the same not having been abrogated or altered by statute, Oyer of a bond declared on cannot be craved after the First Term succeeding the final proceeding at rules, or after the defendant has pleaded, or a Rule to Plead has expired, as thereafter presumably the bond is not in Court. County Court of Brooke County v. United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co., 504. 105 SE. 787 (1921).

Oyer must precede defensive matter whether it be by Demurrer or Plea. In such cases the only admissible method of making such matter appear to the Court is to Demand Oyer, and from the copy given, set forth the whole deed verbatim in his pleading. 5

In Pleading Performance, for example, of the condition of a Bond, where, as is generally the case, the plaintiff in his Declaration has stated nothing but the Bond itself, without the condition, it is essential for the defendant to Demand Oyer of the condition and then set it forth. 6 And in pleading Performance of Matters contained in a Collateral Instrument, it is necessary not only to do this, but it is also essential to set forth and make Profert of the whole substance of the Collateral Instrument; otherwise it would not appear that the Instrument did not stipulate for the Performance of negative or disjunctive matters; and, in that case, the General Plea of Performance of the Matters therein contained, as shown above, would be improper.

According to Martin, Oyer was not demandable of a Record Recognizance, Private Act of Parliament, Letters Patent, Agreement, Note, or other Instrument not Under Seal. It was anciently rillowed of the Orig


Where the Declaration contains a Profert of the note sued on, and Oyer requested by the defendant is granted, the defendant may at his option, either Demur or Plead, treating the note as incorporated in the Declaration, Waterbous v. Sterchi Bros. Furniture Co., 139 Tenn. 117, 201 SW. 150 (1918).

The granting of Oyer oper’s to make the instrument a part of the preceding pleading, Illinois: National Council of Knights & Ladie’s of Hibernian Bank Ass’n, 137 Ill.App. 175 (1903) Maryland: State, to Use of Kelley v. Wilson, 107 Md. 120, 68 A. 600, 126 Am.St.Rp. 370 (1905); West Virginia: Riley v. Yost, 58 W.Va. 213, 52 SE. 40, 1 L.R.A. (N.S.) 777 (1905), holding that Profert alone does not make a writing a part of the Declaration.


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

In order to enable the defendant to Demur or Plead in Abatement for any defect or Variance between the Writ and the Declaration; but that practice was abolished by Rule of Court, and the plaintiff was permitted to proceed as if no Demand for Oyer of the Writ had been made. 8

Demand of Oyer, and getting Forth Deed in Plea

FORM OF PLEA TO THE DECLARATION

(Title of Court and Cause)

And the said C. D., defendant in the above-mentioned action, by X. Y., his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury when, etc., and craves Oyer of the said writing obligatory, and it is read to him, etc. He also craves Oyer of the condition of the said writing obligatory, and it is read to him in these words: Whereas, (here the
condition of the bond, which shall be supposed to be for payment of one hundred dollars on a certain day, is set forth verbatim); which, being read and heard, the defendant says that the plaintiff ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, because he says that he, the said defendant, on the said day of ..., in the year aforesaid in the said writing obligatory mentioned, paid to the plaintiff the said sum of one hundred dollars in the said condition mentioned, together with all interest then due thereon, according to the form and effect of the said condition, to wit, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid. And this the defendant is ready to verify. Wherefore he prays judgment if the plaintiff ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him.

SHIPMAN, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, c. XVIII, Rules as to Alleging Place, Time, Title, and Other Common Matters, §

S. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. VIII.


289, Demand of Oyer, 484 (3rd ed. by Ballantine, St. Paul, 1923).

VIEWS, AID-PRAYER AND VOUCHER

TO WARRANTY

185. Preliminary to making a Defense in the Ancient Real Actions, a defendant might seek a View of the Land to better formulate his Defense, an Aid-Prayer, or a call for assistance in pleading, and a Voucher to Warranty, or a call to some other person to answer the action.

Views, Aid-Prayer and Voucher to Warranty IN the Ancient Real Actions, now obsolete to all practical intents and purposes, there were certain motions available to the defendant as a preliminary to making his Defense. A mere enumeration and definition of these early procedural devices will suffice.

In Suits by a Demandant to recover land, the tenant, in certain of the Real Actions was permitted to Demand a View of the Land in dispute. The purposes of such Demand was that he might know with some certainty what specific land the plaintiff sought to recover. Such knowledge enabled him to properly shape his Defense.°

Where the tenant felt that his own estate was weak, he might, as was said Pray in Aid or call for the assistance of another to assist him in pleading. Such a motion might be made by the life tenant, asking that the owner of the inheritance in reversion or in remainder be joined with him, or that he should assist in defending the title.*


10. Booth, The Nature and Practice of Real Actions, c. XVIII, Of Aid Praler, 59-84 fist Am. Ed. by Anthon, New York, 1808; Jackson, A Treatise on Pleadings and Practice in Real Actions, c. IV, Pleas in Bar, to Writs of Entry on Disselins, ~ VIII, Of Aid, and Receip, 185 (Boston, 1828); 4 Minor, Inst

Sec. 186

AFTER THE DECLARATION AND BEFORE THE PLEA

371

By Voucher to Warranty is meant the calling in of some person to respond to the Action, who has warranted the title to the tenant who has been sued. If and when the Vouchee put in an appearance, he was substituted as the defendant in place of the Vouching Tenant.”

IMPARLANCE
After the plaintiff had filed his Declaration, the defendant was entitled to time within which he might confer with his Adversary, with a view to an amicable settlement. The delay thus permitted was called an Imparlance, and the word Impariance came to be applied to the time given to either party in responding to his adversary’s pleading.

AFTER the defendant put in an Appearance, he was entitled to the indulgence of the Court, to some delay, before responding to the Declaration. This privilege was known as an Imparlance, taken from the French “parler”, meaning to speak. Martin says that in the Primitive or Oral Period of Pleading, it signified a Leave to confer with the opposite party, with a view to an amicable settlement of the controversy. In order to accomplish this end time was required, and, as a result, the word itself came to represent the time given by the Court to either Party to respond to the pleading of his opponent. Imparlances were of Three Kinds:

- General;
- Special: and
- General Special.

A General Imparlance is a delay granted by the Court in response to a General Prayer for leave to imparl, without the saving of any exceptions. If leave was granted, the party obtaining it could plead only in Bar of the Action; he could plead neither in Abatement, nor to the Jurisdiction of the Court. He was also precluded from pleading a Tender, claim of Conusance, or Demanding Oyer of a Deed. According to Martin, this Time-parlance, which was customarily granted, came to be entered by the attorneys as a matter of course, and operated as a Continuance of the Cause to the Next Term.

A Special Imparlance was granted in response to a prayer for an Imparlance which reserved the right to make Dilatory Pleas in Abatement to the Writ, Bill, or Count, but not to the Jurisdiction of the Court, unless the Pleas were grounded on a personal privilege. Such an Imparlance was granted only by leave of the Court of King’s Bench, or by the Court or Prothonotaries in the Court of Common Pleas, and its effect was to extend the time for pleading to some day during the same Term or to the first four days of the next Term.

A General Special Imparlance was distinguished from the foregoing Imparlances, in that it secured to the applicant the right to make any exceptions to the Bill, Declaration or Writ. It was available only by leave of Court, and it operated as a Continuance in the same manner as in Special Imparlances.

The effect of Imparlances was generally to extend the time of pleading to the next Term, or some later Term. The Uniformity of Proc...
ess Act of 1832, was construed by a Conference of Judges as impliedly annulling Imparlances in all Personal Actions. And Regulation 2 of the Hilary Rules of 4 Wm. IV, practically abolished Entries of Imparlances on Court Rolls, and prohibited the entry of Continuances by way of Imparlances.

MOTION FOR A BILL OF PARTICULARS

187. Where the plaintiff filed a Declaration containing General Allegations, which operated to expand the Scope of the Evidence which he might offer in Proof thereof, and the defendant desired to compel the plaintiff to be More Specific, he moved for a Bill of Particulars.

*Bills of Particulars*

ASSUMING the plaintiff has filed a Declaration in a Common Law Action which contains a General Allegation, how could the defendant compel the plaintiff to make his General Charge specific? The answer is

La. 2 Wm. IV, C. 30, § 118 Statutes at Large 118 (1322).

19. The relevant part of this regulation is set out in 3 Chitty, Practice of the Law, 701 (Philadelphia. 1830).

- O. In general, on the nature and scope of the Bill of Particulars at Common Law and under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Courts, see:

Articles: Wood, Bills of Particulars in Actions Based Upon Negligence, 49 Cent.LJ. 362 (1800); Lauduru, BUls of Particulars in Actions Based on Negligence, 50 Cont.LJ. 3134 (1000); Caskey & Young, The Bill of Particulars—A Brief for the Defendant, 27 Va. LRev. 472 (1941); Simpson, A Possible Solution to the l'kacling Problem, 53 Ilarv.L.Rev. 1139 (1930); Van Hook, The Bill of Particulars in Illinois, 19 I11.L.Rev. 315 (1925); Loth, Pleadings and Motions, 29 Iowa L.Rev, 23 (1043).


that he might accomplish this end by moving for a Bill of Particulars. The Procedural Device known as a Bill of Particulars enabled a defendant to ascertain the details of the plaintiff’s claim. The mere naming of this Device raises two questions; one, as to its Origin, two, as to its Scope and Application.

As to its Origin, it may be said that its development was late in point of time. No satisfactory explanation of this has been given, but it is surmised that the Origin of the Bill of Particulars is connected with the fact that the early Common Law employed a System of Oral Pleading, which, unlike Modern Pleading, was conducted in Open Court in advance of the Trial by the Parties or their Counsel by word of mouth. Since the Pleading took place Orally in the presence of the Court, the Judge could direct each Stage of the Pleadings and compel the Parties to reach an Issue on which both parties were prepared to stand.

Thus, to illustrate, let us suppose that A, in stating his case, alleged that B took his horse, whereupon B inquired, what horse? Thereupon, the Judge required A to specify what horse, to wit, a black horse, with a white forefront foot. The plaintiff’s Allegation having been made Specific, the defendant B might object that A’s case was insufficient in Law, he might deny the plaintiff’s charge, or he might seek to avoid the alleged liability by admitting the taking of the horse, and then offer the excuse that he took the horse under an Execution. Assuming B admitted the taking and offered the excuse that he took the horse under an Execution, the Judge could turn to the plaintiff, A, and say, how about this? If A traversed B’s Plea, an Issue of Fact was raised as to whether B took the horse in Execution; if A Demurred to B’s Plea, an Issue of Law was raised as to whether the taking by Execution was a legally sufficient excuse. At each stage of this Oral Altercation, during the early Developmental Period of Pleading, the Court was Sec. 187

AFTER THE DECLARATION AND BEFORE THE PLEA

Page 391 of 735
available to rule at once as to the validity of the plaintiff’s Statement of his Cause of Action or the defendant’s Statement of his Defence. Thus, if the plaintiff’s Allegation was too general, and the defendant objected, the Court could compel the plaintiff then and there to make his Declaration more specific, and so, likewise, the Court could compel the defendant to make his Defence more specific if the defendant was too general in setting forth his Defence. By permitting the Parties to restate their positions to meet with the Court’s ideas, by a process of free Amendment, the Parties were directed in the development of an Issue of Fact or of Law which fairly presented the ground upon which the Parties were prepared to conduct their part of the action. If the Pleadings terminated in an Issue of Law, the Trial was heard by the Court; if they ended in an Issue of Fact, the Trial was had according to some one of the established Modes of Trial. Whether the Issue was one of Law or of Fact, the intervention of a Bill of Particulars was not necessary to bring the parties to Issue or to Judgment.

But the whole picture changed when Litigation in Person with the Pleader serving as his own mouthpiece was changed to Litigation by Attorney, who, according to the practice of the Court, was now required to commit his instructions to writing. So reduced to writing, the Prothonotary, an Officer of the Court, recorded them on a Parchment Roll. It is not known when the pleading was first required to be written, but Holdsworth suggests a case which arose during the Reign of Henry VI (1422—1461) as involving “perhaps the first and certainly an early mention of a ‘paper’ pleading.” The first departure probably took place when the Parties or their Counsel Entered the Proceedings on the Roll, but in time this gave way to the later practice of putting the Pleadings in Writing at once. Whatever the reason for this transition, the change had a profound effect upon the Issue-Making Function of Pleading. According to Simpson,“Technicality developed; ease of Amendment disappeared; most important of all, the Pleading Stage of a Common-Law cause ceased to be conducted in the presence of the Court and became a matter for the Parties and their Lawyers alone except where the Court’s decision on the issues as developed between unsupervised counsel was required.”

Thus, reverting to our hypothetical case, suppose that A under the new regime, files a Written Declaration containing a General Allegation that B took his horse. B wants to know what horse? Since the parties are no longer pleading Orally before an Open Court, the question naturally arose as to how B could compel A to make his General Allegation more specific? It was this predicament which the defendant found himself in, which gave rise to the demand for the development of some form of procedural device by which he could compel the plaintiff to make a General Charge in his Declaration specific.

And the procedural device developed to meet this situation came to be known as a Bill of Particulars. Apparently it made its first appearance in criminal prosecutions, such as an indictment for common barratry and in legislative divorce cases.

Whether the Bill of Particulars was in any way affected by the Statute of 1731 requiring the Pleadings to be in the English language is not clear, but shortly thereafter in 1763,
in the case of Le Breton v. Braham,\(^{28}\) in which the defendant in an Action of Assumpsit offered to pay the plaintiff’s claim when ascertained, Lord Mansfield granted a Bill of Particulars. And Tidd\(^{29}\) observed that where it appeared by reference to the Bill of Particulars that some Counts were superfluous, the Court would expunge the superfluous Counts.\(^{30}\)

By 1802, as illustrated by the case of Gellett v. Thompson,\(^{31}\) the right of a defendant to Demand a Bill of Particulars, when the Declaration contained a General Allegation, had been firmly established. But as late as 1817, Chief Justice Gibbs, in Lovelock v. Cheveley,\(^{32}\) referred to the practice of granting Bills of Particular as “almost a new system within the recollection of many of us.”

It became the rule that in Actions of Indebitatus Assumpsit or in the Action of Debt for goods sold and delivered or work and labor done, when the Declaration failed to disclose the particulars of the demand, as was usually the case, the defendant’s attorney might take out a Summons before a Judge requiring the plaintiff’s attorney to show cause why he should not deliver to the defendant’s attorney in writing the particulars of the plaintiff’s demand, for which the action was brought, and why, in the meantime, all proceedings should not be stayed.\(^{34}\) Apparently such a rule to show cause could be taken out before appearance in both King’s Bench and Common Pleas, so that the defendant might be advised of the full details of the demand, in order that he might pay it, if he so desired. In general, however, the rule was taken out after Appearance and the filing of the Declaration, but before the Plea.

Once the Order for a Bill of Particulars had been granted, the plaintiff was required to deliver in writing a particular account of the items in the demand, with an explanation of how and when it arose. And where there has been an Account Current, both the credits and debits should be shown. And, of course, after the receipt of the particulars, the defendant once again was given time within which to plead, such time being regulated according to the Rules of the Court in which the case was pending.

In the Actions of Covenant, Debt on Articles of Agreement, and Special Assumpsit, or in Actions on Matters of Record, according to Martin,\(^{35}\) an Order for Particulars did not seem necessary.

In Tort Actions, as the wrong complained of was usually stated in the Declaration with some certainty, an Order for Particulars was not often demanded; it might be, however, when the Nature of the Tort was of such a character as to make such an Order necessary and proper.\(^{36}\) And, of course, where the Bill delivered was defective in that it failed to make full disclosure, a further Bill of Particulars might be obtained by Order of the Court.

At Common Law, the plaintiff was entitled, at the Replication Stage of Pleading, to an Order for a Bill of Particulars in the specific instance where the defendant entered a Plea of Set-Off for goods sold.\(^{37}\)

\(^{30}\) Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personal Actions (Dublin 1796).
\(^{31}\) Id. at 108.
\(^{34}\) Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. VIII, Motions of Defendant After Declaration and Before Plea, Art. U, § 232, Demand of Particulars, 188 (St Paul, 1905).
AFTER THE DECLARATION AND BEFORE THE PLEA

If a Bill of Particulars was delivered by the plaintiff, it was incorporated into the Declaration containing the Cause of Action upon which it rested, and the effect was to exclude at the Trial the submission of any evidence outside of the particulars delivered. The effect was the same as to Pleas, where, by Statute, the Right to Demand Particulars has been extended to plaintiff s. 35

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES

The Demand of Oyer and the Bill of Particulars continue to function and serve a useful purpose. On the other hand, the Imparlance, Views, Aid-Prayer, and Voucher of Warranty have ceased to function.

Of the Six Procedural Devices which came After the Declaration and Before the Plea, four have become almost wholly obsolete, while two retain considerable vitality. The Imparlance, Views, Aid-Prayer, and Voucher of Warranty, as previously indicated, have ceased to function, the Imparlance, by a process of construction, having been largely nullified—by the Uniformity of Process Act—and by the Hilary Rules. 36

Demand of Oyer

BUT Demand of Oyer and the Bill of Particulars, we still have with us. Thus, taking


15y a Regulation of Trinity Term, 1831, the plaintiff, in actions containing Counts in Indebitatus Assumpsit or Debt on Simple Contract, was required to deliver full particulars of his demand under those Counts where this could be comprised within three folios, and if it could not be comprised in three folios, then a statement of the nature of his claim and balance due as may be comprised within that number of folios, without any Order to that effect.” Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. VIII, Motions of Defendant After Declaration and Before Plea, Art. II, 232, Demand of Particulars, 180 (St. Paul, 1905).

3. 2 Wm. IV, c. 39, § II, 72 Statutes at Large 118 (1832).

30 Regulation 2 of the Hilary Rules of 4 Win. IV, the relevant part of which is set out in 3 Chitty, Practice of the Law, 701 (Philadelphia, 1836), the Demand of Oyer first, in the Modern Case of County Court of Brooke County v. United States Fidelity and Guaranty Co., decided in 1921, where one of the issues was as to the time when Oyer of a Bond could be craved, Lynch, J., of the West Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals declared: “Thus there is presented the novel procedural question whether Oyer of a Sealed Instrument can rightly be demanded at any time after a Demurrer or Plea is tendered or filed. This question must be answered according to the procedure prescribed at Common Law, there being no abrogation, modification, or alteration of the Common-Law Rule in that respect by any Statute of this State. Under the Title, ‘Time to Demand,’ the author of the Chapter on Pleading, found in 31 Cyc., says, at page 553: ‘It is the settled rule of Practice at Common Law that Oyer cannot be craved after the first term or after the Rule for Pleading has expired, since the Deed is not supposed to be in Court after that time; but it is demandable at any period before the time for Pleading is out, although that has been extended, unless the order except the right to Demand Oyer. Oyer must precede the Matter of Defense, whether that be by Plea or Demurrer, and regularly it should precede the entry of Imparlance’—the equivalent of a continuance.” ~

The Bill of Particulars

The operation of the Bill of Particulars in Modern Law is well illustrated in the New Jersey case
of Dixon v. Swenson,\(^41\) decided in 1925. The facts were that the plaintiff commenced an Action on July 19, 1923, to recover from the defendant the sum of $1,000 for legal services performed. Rule

41. 57 W.Va. 504, 105 SE. 757.

42. County Court of Brooke County v. United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co., 57 W.Va. 304, 512, 10.3 SE. 787, 791 (1921).

DEVELOPMENTAL PLEADINGS

Ch. 18

18 of the New Jersey Practice Act of 1912” provided that “Bills of Particulars may be ordered as heretofore.” And by Section 236 of the New Jersey Revised Laws of 1877, the right to have a Bill of Particulars was extended to the case where a plaintiff demands a Bill of Particulars of a defendant, provided he should, before Replication filed, demand in writing a Bill of Particulars. In this Action the defendant before Answer filed, demanded a Bill of Particulars, which was furnished. On August 13th the defendant notified the plaintiff of a Motion to be made on August 20th for a more specific Bill of Particulars. The day following such notice the defendant filed an Answer to the Complaint, to which the plaintiff replied, thus bringing the Cause to an Issue. On hearing, the Court ordered a further Bill of Particulars. The plaintiff then moved to Vacate the Order. On appeal, the Court held that the Order requiring a further Bill of Particulars, after Answer filed, was improperly made and should be set aside. Rule 18 therefore merely adopted the General Common-Law Rule that a Demand for a Bill of Particulars must be made before Answer filed.\(^46\)

In Vacating the Order, Kalisch, J., declared: “That a Demand for a Bill of Particulars must be made before Answer filed was the Common-Law Rule and Practice. 1 Tidd Pr. 642. The filing of a Plea was stayed until the Demand was complied with. If the Bill of Particulars was insufficient a Demand for a more specific Bill of Particulars could undoubtedly be made, and, if ordered, upon application to the Court, the Proceedings would be stayed until the Demand was complied with. * * * The Practice in

44. N.J.Pub.Law.1 388 (1912).

45. At p. 88.3.


this State was patterned after the Common Law.

“By the fifty-fourth Section of the Act of 1799 (Pat.L., p. 361), it is provided: ‘That the plaintiff or his Attorney, if required, shall deliver to the defendant, or his Attorney, a copy of the Account, or a Bill of Particulars of the Demand, or a copy of the Bill, Bond, Deed, Bargain, Contract; Note, Instrument or other writing, whereon the Declaration is founded.’

“In the case of Clinton v. Lyon, 3 N.J.L. 1038, Hornblower, afterwards Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, who appeared for the plaintiff, said;

- Our Act on the subject of a Bill of Particulars, is not a New Law, but a confirmation of the Common Law, manifested by Universal Practice.’

“And in a case under the title of Anonymus, 16 N.J.L. 346, Mr. Gifford moved for a rule that he have further time to plead, the Bill of Particulars not having been delivered till the 15th instant, and Mr. Chief Justice Hornblower said:

"The rule is that the defendant has the same time for pleading, after receiving the Bill of Particulars, that he had at the time of demanding it. The delay in the delivery is not to be counted as part of his time for pleading.’ And in Tillou v. Hutchinson, 15 N.J.L. 178, Mr. Chief Justice Hornblower (at p. 179) said: ‘By the fifty-fourth section of the Practice Act, Record Laws of 1821, page 421, the defendant, or his attorney, at any time before plea pleaded, has right to require, and the
plaintiff or his attorney, if required, is bound to deliver to the defendant, or his attorney, a copy of any bond, bill or note, on which the declaration is founded. If regularly required, the plaintiff, or his attorney, must deliver such copy, at his peril. But the requisition should appear to have been made ‘before plea pleaded,’ and in writing. Section-54, above referred to, is the same as found Sec. 188

AFTER THE DECLARATION AND BEFORE THE PLEA

in Pat.L., above referred to. The entire substance of this section is incorporated in section 236 of the Revision of 1877, page 885, with the extension to the case where a plaintiff demands a Bill of Particulars of a defendant he shall, before replication filed, demand, in writing, a Bill of Particulars, &c.

“This section, in turn, became section 102 of the Practice Act of the Revision of 1903. 3 comp.Stat. p. 4082. Under the new Practice Act (Pamph.L.1912, rule 18, p. 388), appended to the latter act, it is provided: ‘Bills of Particulars may be ordered as heretofore.’ This leaves the former statutes and practice thereunder undisturbed. Rules 32 and 94 of the Supreme Court accomplish no different result.”

Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, a Bill of Particulars is generally still available as at Common Law, including matters of Defense or Set-off. According to Clark, some states limited the use of Bills of Particulars to actions involving accounts, or demands arising upon Contract. Motions to make the Complaint more Definite and Certain, or the Amendment of plaintiff’s


Complaint have frequently been used to perform the function of the Bill of Particulars. But in some states the Bill of Particulars is more limited in its application than an Amendment of the Complaint. It has been held that a Bill of Particulars limits the Complaint so that nothing can be claimed beyond what is set forth in the Bill. On the other hand, it has been held that the plaintiff should not be permitted to rely on his Bill of Particulars to supplement his Complaint, but Clark suggests that the Bill of Particulars should perform this function and that an Amendment should not be required, and states this is the position taken in those State Systems where the Bill of Particulars is made definitely “a part of the pleading which it supplements.”

In New York, as in many other states, the Bill of Particulars, is regulated by Statute or Rule of Court. For a more detailed treatment of the Bill of Particulars under Modern Practice, consult Clark, Handbook of the Law of Code Pleading, § 54 Bills of Particulars, 838—344 (24 oct St. Paul, 1947).

50. Id. at 338—339.

51. Id. at 340.


CHAPTER 19

CONSIDERATIONS FRELIMINARY TO THE CLASSIFICATION OF DEFENSES

Parties Must Demur or Plead.
Pleas: Dilatory or Peremptory.
Other Stages of Pleading Beyond the Declaration and Plea.
Election to Demur or Plead—Factors to be Considered.
Forced Issues Under the Codes.
PARTIES MUST DEMUR OR PLEAD

189. After the Declaration, the Parties must, at each Stage of the Proceedings in the Action, either:
   (I) Demur, or
   (II) Plead:

   (A) A Dilatory Plea, or

   (E) A Peremptory Plea, or Plea in Ear

IF it is assumed that Every Liability consists of Two Elements—a given combination of Facts or Events, plus a Rule of Substantive Law attaching legal consequences to those Facts or Events; and if it be remembered that in order to state a good cause of action one need only set out the combination of facts and events, the Court taking Judicial Notice of the Rule of Law without its statement, the question arises: In how many ways may the defendant resist the Alleged Liability asserted in the Declaration?

Confronted with this Alleged Liability, with a Declaration of the Facts only, the Minor Premise, and omitting the statement of the Rule of Law relied upon, the Major Premise, the defendant was compelled to Demur or Plead. He was bound to pursue one or the other of these two courses, until Issue was Tendered, if he desired to sustain his Defense. If he neither Plead nor Demurred, but Confessed the right of the adverse party, or appeared but said nothing, the Court immediately Entered Judgment in favor of his adversary; in the former case, as by Confession; in the latter, where he said nothing, by nil dicit,'

If, however, the defendant Demurred, disputing the Rule of Law relied upon by the Plaintiff, he raised an Issue of Law, Triable by the Court; if he desired to Plead, thus disputing the Combination of Facts relied upon by the plaintiff, he raised an Issue of Fact, Triable by the Jury. If he desired to dispute the Rule of Law relied on by the plaintiff, he could do so by resorting to the procedural device known as the Demurrer, which developed in Two Forms, the General and the Special Demurrer, with the result that the Pleadings terminated in an Issue of Law, which Issue, once Tendered, must be accepted by what was known as a Joinder in Demurrer. If the defendant Demurred Generally an Issue of Law was presented as to whether the Declaration was Substantively Defective; whereas, if the defendant Demurred Specially, an Issue of Law was raised as to whether the Declaration was Formally Defective.


CLASSIFICATION OF DEFENSES

PLEAS: DILATORY OR PEREMPTORY

190. If the Declaration is sufficient in both Substance and Form, so that a Demurrer will not lie, or if the defendant does not wish to Demur, he must Plead:
   (I) A Dilatory Plea, or
   (II) A Peremptory Plea, or Plea in Bar:
      (A) By Way of Traverse:
         (1) By Pleading the General Issue, or
         (2) By Pleading the Specific or Common Traverse, or
(3) By Pleading the Special Traverse

(B) By Way of Confession

Avoidance:

(1) In Justification and Excuse, or

(2) In Discharge

Dilatory Pleas

If the defendant desired to dispute the combination of facts and events relied upon by the plaintiff, he could do so by resorting to a procedural device known as the Plea, which might assume either one or two forms—a Dilatory Plea, or a Peremptory Plea, better known as a Plea in Bar. A Dilatory Plea sought to prevent the Entry of a Final Judgment on the Merits, whereas a Plea in Bar sought to bring about a Final Judgment on the Merits. If the defendant desired to prevent a Final Judgment on the Merits, that is, if he wished to use a Dilatory Plea, he could resort to any one of three procedural devices, known as one, a Plea to the Jurisdiction, on the ground that the court had no jurisdiction over either parties or subject matter of the action; two, a Plea in Abatement, which shows some ground for Abating or Defeating the Particular Action, without destroying the Right of Action itself; or three, a Plea in Suspension of the Action, which offered some reason why the plaintiff was temporarily disabled from pursuing the action at the time.

Peremptory Pleas By Way Of Traverse or Confession And Avoidance

If, for any reason, the defendant did not desire to use a Dilatory Defense, or if such Defense proved futile, his only other recourse was to enter a Peremptory Plea or Plea in Bar, which might take either a Negative or Affirmative Form. If the defendant desired to dispute the combination of the facts relied upon by the plaintiff, he could do so by resorting to a procedural device known as a Traverse or Denial, which took one of three forms, one, the General Issue, which generally operated as a blanket denial of all the Material Allegations in the plaintiff’s Declaration; two, the Common or Specific Traverse, which denied One or More Material Allegations in the plaintiff’s Declaration; and three, the Special Traverse, a highly technical form, capable of being used only in limited circumstances, which consisted of an inducement, containing affirmative new matter, a denial, and a verification, and which did not terminate the pleadings. In the case of the General Issue and the Common or Specific Traverse, the Pleadings terminated in an Issue of Fact, triable by a Jury. In these Forms of Traverse, the General Issue and the Common or Specific Traverse, a Tender of Issue was required, which consisted of a Statement in the Pleading that the defendant was ready to go to the country, or to submit the issue to a Trial by Jury.

If, however, the combination of facts and events and the Rule of Substantive Law relied upon by the plaintiff was sufficient to constitute a cause of action; if the alleged liability could not be met by a Dilatory Plea or by some Form of Negative Plea in Bar, the defendant might dispute the asserted liability by stating that the plaintiff had not told the full story, that is, that the defendant was willing to admit the combination of facts set out by the plaintiff, or that the plaintiff had stated a prima fade case, but that there was an additional combination of facts and events, plus an additional Rule of Substantive Law which equalled non-liability, or which changed the legal effect of the Allegations admitted. The defendant could accomplish this end by use of the procedural device known as a Plea in Confession and Avoidance, which took either one of two forms, one, a Plea by Way of Confession and Avoidance in Justification and Excuse; or two, a Plea by Way of Confession and Avoidance in Discharge, the difference being that the former assumes that no liability ever existed, and the latter assumes that liability once existed but has ceased to exist because of the happening of some subsequent fact or event. Thus, to illustrate, in Trespass for Assault and Battery, the Plea of Self-Defense assumes that the defendant was never liable in point of Substantive Law, whereas in Debt for Five Hundred Dollars, the Plea of Payment assumes that a debt which once was existent is now no longer existent because of the happening of some subsequent fact or event, to wit, Payment. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance were terminated with a statement that the defendant stood ready to verify his facts.

It will be observed that if the Pleadings terminated in a Demurrer, an Issue of Law triable by the Court, arose; if the Pleadings terminated with some Form of Dilatory Plea, the settlement of the case on its merits suffered a temporary or permanent delay; if the Pleadings terminated in a Traverse, in the Form of the General Issue or the Common or Specific Traverse, an Issue of Fact triable by the Jury arose. But if the defendant pleads in Confession
and Avoidance, the pleadings remain open, and no issue emerges, and the altercation continues until an issue is produced either by a demurrer or by a traverse.

**OTHER STAGES OF PLEADING BEYOND THE DECLARATION AND PLEA**

That the defendant has met this by a Plea in Confession and Avoidance, the next Stage of Pleading is the Replication, after which follows a Rejoinder, a Surrejoinder, a Rebutter and a Surrebutter. Such a result, however, assumes that the preceding pleading was in each case in Concession and Avoidance. This process continues until one side or the other Traverses or Demurs, thus producing either an issue of Pact or of Law.

**Replication**

IF we assume that the defendant neither Demurs nor Pleads by way of Traverse, but seeks to evade liability by Pleading in Confession and Avoidance, the plaintiff, at the Third Stage of the Pleadings, may file a Replication to the defendant’s Plea, either Traversing it—that is, totally denying it—as, if in an action of debt upon bond the defendant pleads Payment—that he paid the money when due—the plaintiff in his Replication may totally Traverse this Plea, by denying that the defendant paid it, or the Replication may Confess and Avoid the Plea, by alleging some new Matter or Justification consistent with the Plaintiff’s Declaration. Thus, in an action for trespassing upon land whereof the plaintiff is seised, if the defendant shows a title to the land by descent, and that therefore he had a right to enter, and gives color to the plaintiff, the plaintiff may either Traverse and totally Deny the Fact of the Descent, or he may Confess and Avoid it, by Replying that true it is that such descent happened, but that since the descent the defendant himself demised the lands to the plaintiff for term of life.

**Rejoinder**

TO the Replication the defendant may file a Pleading known as a Rejoinder, to which the plaintiff may, in his turn, Demur, or Plead, either by way of a Traverse, or in Confession and Avoidance, in a Surrejoinder.

**Surrejoinder**

THE plaintiff, now pleading for the third time, may answer the defendant’s Rejoinder

191. **Assuming the plaintiff has stated a good cause of action in his Declaration and**

**See. 192**

CLASSIFICATION OF DEFENSES

b—filing what was known as a Surrejoinder, to which the defendant might interpose a Rebutter.

**Rebutter**

UPON this Pleading the defendant may in turn Demur or Plead by Way of Denial or by Way of Confession and Avoidance.

**Surrebutter**

AND the plaintiff might answer with a Pleading by Way of Surrebutter.

It will be observed that these various Pleadings—Plea, Replication, Rejoinder, Surrejoinder, Rebutter and Surrebutter,—in legal theory, proceeded ad infinitum, until at some Stage of the Procedure the Pleadings terminated in either a Demurrer, thus raising an Issue of Law, triable by a Court; in some form of Dilatory Plea, in which instance the settlement of the case on its merits suffered a temporary or permanent delay; or in a Traverse, thus raising an Issue of Fact, triable by the Jury; but if the defendant in his Plea neither Demurs nor Traverses, but Pleads in Confession and Avoidance, the Pleadings remain open and do not terminate in either an Issue of Law or of Fact. Therefore, the plaintiff, at the Next Succeeding Stage of Pleading, the Replication Stage, may either Demur, or Plead by way of Traverse or in Confession and Avoidance, and so on, ad infinitum, until the plaintiff or defendant either Demurs, raising an Issue of Law, or Traverses, raising an Issue of Fact, thus reducing the controversy to a
single clear-cut well-defined Issue of Law, or of Fact, which is the Primary Function of Pleading.

If a party finds the Declaration or other pleading opposed to him to be Sufficient in Substance and Defective in Form, Sufficient in Form and Defective In Substance, or Insufficient in both respects, he has ample ground for Demurrer; but whether he should Demur or Plead is a matter of expediency, or of procedural tactics, which may influence favorably or unfavorably the outcome of the litigation. It may be useful therefore to examine the considerations by which, in view of what has been said about demurrers, the pleader should be governed in making his election to demur or plead.

ELECTION TO DEMUR OR PLEAD—FACTORS ‘TO BE CONSIDERED

192. In many cases, a Party must Demur in order to take advantage of defects, while in others he may, even after Judgment, vaise objections which he might also have taken by Demurrer. In many cases it may not be advisable to Demur, even where a Demurrer would lie.

IF the Declaration or other Pleading which may be involved is sufficient in both Form and Substance, the pleader has no alternative but to plead. If the Pleading is insufficient in either Form or Substance, there is good ground for either a Special or a General Demurrer; but whether the defect should be seized upon or taken advantage of depends upon several factors, If the Pleading be deemed insufficient in Form the pleader must inquire of himself whether it would be worth while to take the objection, in view of the indulgence which the law allows by way of Amendment; the pleader must also bear in mind that if the defect is not taken advantage of at that Stage of the Pleading, it may be Aided by a Subsequent Pleading, or after such Subsequent Pleading, by Verdict of the Jury, or by the Statutes of Jeofails and Amendments, If the pleader elects to Demur, he must take care to Demur Specially, lest, upon General Demurrer, he should be held excluded from the objection.

If, on the other hand, the Pleading in question is Defective in Substance, it must be determined whether the Defect was of such character as an Amendment would remove or not, a further question may arise as to whether it might not be desirable to ignore the objection at the moment and plead. By such tactics a party often gained the advantage of contesting the case with his adversary, in the first instance, by a Trial on the Merits of an Issue of Fact by a Jury; and in the second instance, if he lost on the Trial, by urging the Objection in Law, after Verdict and before Judgment, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment, or after Judgment, by Writ of Error. This maneuver, however, may not always prove successful; for though none but Formal Objections are cured by the Statutes of Jeofails and Amendments, there are some Defects of Substance as well as Form which may be Aided by Pleading Over as well as by the Verdict; and therefore, unless the fault be clearly of a kind nor to be so Aided, a Demurrer is the only Mode of Objection that can be relied upon. The additional delay and expense of a Trial is also sometimes a material reason for proceeding in the regular way by Demurrer, and not waiting to Move in Arrest of Judgment, or to bring a Writ of Error. Another reason for demurring is that Costs are not generally allowed when Judgment is Arrested, nor where it is Reversed upon Writ of Error, but each party pays his own Costs, while on Demurrer the party succeeding obtains his Costs.

It has been contended that Argument on Demurrer is usually futile. Time and effort are spent by Lawyers and Courts in criticizing Pleadings on points far adequate, as the Omission of an Allegation required by the Substantive Law as essential to the Cause of Action or Defense. In the latter case the Defect could easily be cured by an Amendment, hence it may therefore not be worthwhile to Demur.

And whether the Defect was of such character as an Amendment would remove or not, a further question may arise as to whether it might not be desirable to ignore the objection at the moment and plead. By such tactics a party often gained the advantage of contesting the case with his adversary, in the first instance, by a Trial on the Merits of an Issue of Fact by a Jury; and in the second instance, if he lost on the Trial, by urging the Objection in Law, after Verdict and before Judgment, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment, or after Judgment, by Writ of Error. This maneuver, however, may not always prove successful; for though none but Formal Objections are cured by the Statutes of Jeofails and Amendments, there are some Defects of Substance as well as Form which may be Aided by Pleading Over as well as by the Verdict; and therefore, unless the fault be clearly of a kind not to be so Aided, a Demurrer is the only Mode of Objection that can be relied upon. The additional delay and expense of a Trial is also sometimes a material reason for proceeding in the regular way by Demurrer, and not waiting to Move in Arrest of Judgment, or to bring a Writ of Error. Another reason for demurring is that Costs are not generally allowed when Judgment is Arrested, nor where it is Reversed upon Writ of Error, but each party pays his own Costs, while on Demurrer the party succeeding obtains his Costs.

It has been contended that Argument on Demurrer is usually futile. Time and effort are spent by Lawyers and Courts in criticizing Pleadings on points far
merits involved. The Demurring Attorney is engaged in educating his opponent on the Law. The tendency, therefore, is to avoid pointing out important Errors, or pressing them any more than is necessary to raise them on the Record in the Appellate Court. Demurring is seldom more than a waste of time and a means of delay, except (1) where there is some essential element of a Cause of Action or Defense which is not set up, and which cannot be supplied with any chance of proving it; (2) when the Pleading, although Good in Substance, is not as definite and certain as it ought to be, and by a Special Demurrer the Pleader may be required to state his case more in detail, thereby giving better notice, narrowing the issues, and increasing the risk of Variance in the Proof. In some jurisdictions Special Demurrers for Defects in Form have been abolished, but the line between Form and Substance is difficult to draw. To abolish Demurrers entirely, while allowing the same Objections in Point of Law to be raised under another name, is as ludicrous a piece of self-deception as the old Fictions in Ejectment. Some other solution of the abuses must be found.⁵

FORCED ISSUES UNDER THE CODES

193. An early joinder of issue is forced under Codes which do not permit pleading beyond the answer or reply stage.

UNDER Code Systems an early issue is forced by the Limited Series of Pleadings, the altercation being cut short at an arbitrary stage—the Answer in some Codes, the Reply in others. If a material issue has not been already evolved, an Issue of Fact is raised by Operation of Law, and with respect to any material New Matter alleged in the last pleading, the adversary may prove at Trial, in response thereto, any Facts by way...

Sec. 193 CLASSIFICATION OF DEFENSES

of Denial or of Confession and Avoidance, issues, but it was deemed more convenient to This is in line with the Policy of the Courts under the General Issue, when it was found inconvenient to attempt to focus the controversy upon ultimate and decisive Special Is a. romeroy, Code Remedies, c. TV, ~ 475, 47e, code provisions respecting reply, 812—sW (5th ed. Boston, 1929).

Koffler & Pempy Com.Law Pldg. H.B—14

leave a vague complex issue, to be analyzed later at the Trial. The Ancient Theory of Issues still remains, though all Pleadings subsequent to the Answer or Reply have been lopped off, leaving the case to be further developed by Evidence without Pleadings.

Sec.

CHAPTER 20

THE DEMURRER²
Judgment on Demurrer.

Status of the Demurrer—Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

THE NATURE AND OFFICE OF

THE DEMURRER

194 If the Allegations of the Pleading of the Adverse Party are legally insufficient upon their Face to sustain the Cause of Action al

1 In general, on the Demurrer at Common Law, Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, see:


Jeged or to Constitute a Defense, as the ease may be, Objection may be taken by Demurrer. A Demurrer will lie for insufficiency either in Substance or in Form. And since a Demurrer does not Deny the Facts which are alleged in the Pleading to which it is interposed, they

Articles: Abbott, To Demur or Not to Demur, 44 ATh. L.J. 453 (1891); LoomIs, The Effect of a Decision Sustaining a Demurrer to a Complaint, 9 Yale U. 387 (1900); Edgecrot, The Consolidation of Preliminary Motions and Demurrers in Connecticut, 22 Yale Li’. 302 (1913); Millar, Restriction of the Retroactive Operation of the Demurrer, 10 ILL.L.Rev. 417 (1916); Cook, Effect of the Abolition of the Equitable Demurrer, 10 Iowa L.tcv. 193 (1925); smith, Some Problems in Connection with Motions, 25 Col.L.Rev. 752 (1925); Atkinson, Allegations of Time in Pleading, 35 Yale L.J. 487 (1926); Atkinson, Some Procedural Aspects of the Statute of Limitations, 27 Coi.L.Rev. 157 (1027); Atkinson, Pleading the Statute of Limitations, 35 Yale U. 014 (1927); Clark & Tenon, Amendment and Aider of Pleadings, 12 Minn.L.Rev. 97, (1925); Welman, Demurrer to Pairs of Complaint, 17 Thd.L.J. 165 (1931); Arnold, Motions to Make Specific and to Resolve Conclusions, 7 Ind.L.J. 77, (1931); Millar, The Fortunes of the Demurrer, 31 ILL.L.Rev. 429 (19341); Eagleton, Two Fundamentals for Federal Pleading Reform, 3 U. of Chi.L.Rev. 376 (1930); Pike, Objections to Pleadings Under the New Federal Rules of Civil Pro— cedure, 47 Yale L.J. 50 (1937); Botwein, Pleading and Practice Under the New Federal Rules—A Surlyy and Coniparison, S Brooklyn LSev. 188 (1938); Stayton, Scope and Function of the New Federal Rules and Texas Rules, 20 Texas LIter. 16, 24

194.
195.
196.
197.
198.
199.
200.
201.
202.

384
Sec. 194

THE DEMURRER

stand admitted, with the result that the only question remaining is one as to their Sufficiency in Law.

Definition

THE word “Demurrer” is taken from the Latin word demorari and the French word demeur, which, etymologically, primarily signifies a delay or pause, and is, at Common Law, the Formal and General Mode of disputing the sufficiency in Point of Law of the Pleading of an Adversary, either as to Form or Substance.2 More specifically, a Demur-
DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

THE Office of a Demurrer

While, in a certain sense, a Demurrer is not a Pleading, in another sense, it is a pleading; that is, in the sense that if it is interposed to a Declaration, it will prevent the Entry of a Judgment by Default, in substantially the same way as would any Defense on the Merits. Thus, for instance, if A declares in Ejectment, alleging Title, Ouster and Damages, and B fails to Answer, a Judgment by Default will be Entered. Such, however, would not be the case if B interposed a Demurrer. In the sense that such use of a Demurrer will, like a Plea to the Merits, prevent the Entry of a Judgment by default, it may be regarded as a Pleading.

The Office of a Demurrer

THE Office of a Demurrer is to raise an Issue of Law as to whether the Pleading of the Adverse Party, to which the Demurrer is interposed, is sufficient on its Face to sustain the Cause of Action alleged, or to constitute a Defense, as the case may be. If a Demurrer is interposed to a Declaration, it

On the relation of Procedure to Substantive Law, see, article by Clark, The Handmaid of Justice, 23 Wash.L. Quarterly 296 (1931).

3. But while a Demurrer Is not, In this limited sense, a Plea, It is so far a Pleading as to prevent the Entry of a Judgment by Default. Oliphant v. Whitney, 34 Cal. 25, 27 (1867).

2. Martin, Civil Procedure at common Law, c. IX,

Art. II, 236 (St. Paul, 1905).

raises an Issue of Law as to whether, on the Face of the Declaration, assuming the Facts alleged to be true, the plaintiff has stated Facts which, as a Matter of Substantive Law, and the Rules of Pleading, entitle him to the redress which he seeks. If he fails to in-dude an Allegation required by the Substantive Law, this constitutes a Substantive Defect, which, if Apparent upon the Face of the Declaration, may be reached, at the Pleading Stage by Demurrer; after Verdict and before Judgment, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment; and after Judgment, by Writ of Error, and possibly by Motion for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict. At the Trial Stage, the same Defect might possibly be reached by Motion for Judgment on the Pleadings.

If, however, the plaintiff includes in his Declaration all the Allegations required by the Substantive Law to state a good Cause of Action, but states these Allegations in violation of some Rule of Pleading, he is said to be guilty of a Defect in Form, which may be reached at the Next Succeeding Stage of Pleading by a Special Demurrer. Thus, to illustrate, if the plaintiff in Ejectment, by way of stating Title, alleged that he had a “grant deed” of Blackacre, his Declaration would be bad on Special Demurrer, as having stated an Evidentiary Fact, which violates the Rule of Pleading that the plaintiff should have stated the Ultimate Fact of Title, to wit, that he was “seized” of Blackacre. If he had omitted any statement whatsoever as to Title, he would have been guilty of a Substantive Defect, which is
generally available on General Demurrer. Generally speaking, therefore, a Special Demurrer was used to reach Defects in Form; while a General Demurrer was used to reach Defects in Substance; but since a Special Demurrer includes a General Demurrer, a Special Demurrer may also reach Defects in Substance, for reasons which will be explained in connection with the effect of the Statute of Demurrers enacted in 1585.~

The Import of a Demurrer in Pleading

A Demurrer, as we have seen, imports in Pleading that the Party will await the Judgment of the Court as to whether he is bound to answer the Pleading of his Adversary. In short, it advances the legal proposition that the Pleading Demurred to is Insufficient in Law to maintain the case stated by the adverse party. A Demurrer may be entered by either Party and to any Pleading until an Issue is joined; and it may be for insufficiency either in Substance, as that the case shown by the opposite party is wanting in an essential element, as, for example, where a Declaration in Special Assumpsit for Breach of a Contract fails to allege Consideration or a Promise; or in Form, as that the Matter Alleged is substantially sufficient, but is stated in such an artificial manner as to violate a Rule of Pleading. For it is a cardinal principle of Law that every Pleading must contain Matter Sufficient in Point of Substantive Law to constitute a Cause of Action or a Defense, and that such Matter must be deduced and alleged according to the Form required by Law, or without violating any Rule of Pleading as to how Substantive Allegations of any character must be set forth; and, if either of these require-

4. 27 Eliz. c. 5, § 1, 0 statutes at Large 360 (1585).


A Demurrer to a Declaration cannot properly be said to go to the Merits, except in cases where a Judgment on the Demurrer In favor of the defendant would be a Bar to a subsequent Suit on the Same Cause of Action; and this can never be the case where the Declaration is Defective only for the want of some necessary Averment. Quarles v. Waidron, 20 Ala. 217 (1852). And see Hick-ok v. Coats, 2 Wend. (N.Y.) 419, 20 Am.Dec. 632 (1829). Cf. Alabama: Giljasple v. Wesson, 7 Port. (Ala.) 454, 51 Am.Jl)ree. 715 (1888); Arkansas: Auditor v. Woodruff, 2 Ark. 73, 33 Am.Dec. 368 (1839).

6. 1 Coke Litt. Lib. 2. c. 3 § 96 (1st Am.Ed. by Day, Philadelphia, 1812).

Sec. 195

THE DEMURRER

387

ments be wanting, it is cause for Demurrer; General if the Defect is Substantive, Special if it is Formal.

By a Demurrer the party Demurring Tenders an Issue. It is not an Issue in Fact, but an Issue in Law, the question raised being whether the Pleading Demurred to is sufficient, as a Matter of Law, assuming the Facts to be true because not Denied, to require the party Demurring to answer it. As questions of Law are for the determination of the Court, the Demurrer refers the Issue to the Judgment of the Court. A “Speaking Demurrer” is one which Alleges some New Matter, not Declared by the Pleading against which the Demurrer is aimed and not Judicially Known or Presumed to be true.

WHEN a party Demurs to an Adversary’s Pleading, his object is to raise an Issue in Point of Law as to whether the Facts alleged are sufficient to sustain his opponent’s Cause of Action or Defense, as the ease may be. If the Demurrer is successful it eliminates any necessity to answer on the part of the Demurrant. It follows, therefore, that the Demurrant must accept the Facts Alleged in the Pleading Demurred to exactly as stated, and

A Demurrer is but a legal exception to the Sufficiency of a Pleading. Mason v. Cater, 192 Iowa 143, 182 NW. 179 (1921); Wood v. Papendiek, 208 Ill. 385, 109 N.E. 266 (1915).

8. A Pleading which, with all reasonable inferences in favor of the Pleader, shows Facts entitling him to Relief, is not subject to Demurrer, the Office of which is to raise an Issue of Law as to the Substantial Rights of the Parties. Sogn v. Koetzle, 38 S.D. 99, 100 N.W. 520 (1916).

that the Demurrer should be free from any Allegations of Fact additional to those Alleged in the Pleading to which it is interposed. And it should neither Deny the Facts stated, nor expand, reduce, modify or vary in any respect the Facts stated in the Pleading challenged. A Demurrer which Denies any Fact in the Pleading to which it is addressed, or which, in order to sustain itself, requires the suggestion of Additional Facts not Appearing on the Face of the Pleading objected to, or seeks in any way to change or qualify the Statement of Facts presented in the Adverse Pleading, is called a Speaking Demurrer. Such a Demurrer is customarily overruled because, as a Speaking Demurrer, it violates a Rule of Pleading and is out of order. In some cases, however, if such a Demurrer raises a meritorious Point of Law, it may be considered, the fact imperiously suggested being ignored.”


10. As, for example, where a Demurrer suggests that another Suit between the same parties and involving the same Subject-Matter is pending. Arthur v. Richards, 48 Mo. 298 (1871). See, also, Alabama: watts v. Kennamer, 210 Ala. 64, 112 So. 333 (1927); Federal: Card v. Standard Co., 202 Fed. 351 (1912).


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

THE DEMURRER AND OTHER PLEADINGS DISTINGUISHED

196. A Demurrer can never be founded upon Matter Collateral to the Pleading which it Opposes, but must always arise on the Face of the Statement of the Facts itself.

THE distinction between a Demurrer and Other Pleading is that a Demurrer raises an Objection as to the Intrinsic Insufficiency of the Pleading to which it is interposed,” whereas a Plea, Replication, Rejoinder, or Other Pleading containing a Statement of Facts, undertakes to defeat the adversary by the injection into the Case of Matter Collateral to that which has been alleged by the adversary. Because of this distinction, the Common-Law Rule and the Rule under the Statute of Anne (1705)15 was that a Party could not Plead and Demur at the Same Time to the Same Matter. The defendant was not, at Common Law, permitted to Plead and Demur because of the incongruity between the Plea and the Demurrer. This Rule was not
altered by the Statute of Anne (1705), as it merely permitted a defendant to Plead Several Defenses, and a Demurrer, as we have seen, was strictly speaking not a Plea, but rather an Excuse for Not Pleading.\(^7\)

**THE SCOPE OF A DEMURRER**

197. the Demurrer, as a Procedural Weapon, may be used to attack the Adversary’s Pleading as a Whole, or in Part. In so doing


15. 4 Anne, c. 16, § 4, 11 Statutes at Large 150, which provided: “And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That from and after the said first day of Trinity Term it shall and may be Lawful for any defendant or Tenant in any Action or Suit, or for any plaintiff in Replevin, in any Court of Record, with the Leave of the Same Court, to Plead as many Several Matters thereto, as he shall think necessary for his Defense.”


The Demurrant must be careful not to make his Demurrer too large, and not to violate the Rule against Pleading and Demurring at the Same Time to the Same Matter.

The Demurrer may be used as an offensive instrument for an attack upon an Adversary’s Pleading. And such attack may be directed at the whole of the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action or the Defendant’s Defense, as the case may be, or to a Part Only. In making such a use of the Demurrer, a defendant, in Demurring to a Declaration in its Entirety, must be certain that his Demurrer is not too large.\(^7\) Thus, for example, in Cochran v. Scott,\(^8\) the plaintiff Declared as the indorsee of a Promissory Note, payable to the Lawrence Power Company, Alleging an indorsement by the company, without setting forth the names of the members of the firm; he also Declared on several Money Counts; the defendant Demurred to the Whole Declaration, Assigning Special Cause for only One Count, and None for the others; and the Court gave Judgment for the plaintiff. Where a Declaration contains Several Counts or Statements of Causes of Action, some good in both Form and Substance, and some Defective, the defendant should Demur only to the Defective Counts, as Judgment will be given against him on an exception to the whole declaration, separate and divisible parts of it being good.\(^9\) A Demurrer may sometimes be taken to part of a single Count or Plea, where the matters alleged are distinct and divisible in their nature.\(^9\)


THE DEMURRER

389

But a plaintiff’s Demurrer to Several Defenses, some good in Form and Substance and some bad in either Form or Substance, should not be too large, as a defendant needs but one Defense to win. Thus, in Mayor, etc. v. Newark v. Dickerson, et al.,\(^*\) where the plaintiff Declared in Debt against a Surety on a Bond, to which the defendant interposed ten pleas, and the plaintiff filed a single Demurrer to three of the pleas, one of which was good in Substance, whereas the others were bad, the Court, through Dixon, J., said: “If any of the Pleas Demurred to presents a good Defence, the defendant is entitled to Judgment.”

Whether the Demurrer is used as an offensive or Defensive Weapon, the Pleader should be careful not to Plead and Demur at the Same Time to the Same Matter, as such a course of procedure would violate a fundamental Theory of Common-Law Pleading that you cannot create an Issue of Law and an Issue of Fact simultaneously on the Same Matter,
GENERAL AND SPECIAL DEMURRERS AND DEFECTS AVAILABLE THEREUNDER

198. There are two Kinds of Demurrer; they are:
(I) General, and
(2) Special.

A General Demurrer is one which Excepts to the sufficiency of the Opposing Pleading in General Terms, without Specifically disclosing the Nature of the Objection. In general, a General Demurrer reaches Defects in Substance.

A Special Demurrer takes Exception to the sufficiency of the Adverse Pleading by showing Specifically the Particular Defects in Form which are the basis of such Exception. It is necessary where the Objection turns on Matter of Form only. In general, a Special Demurrer reaches Defects in Form which are specified in the Demurrer, and also reaches Defects in Substance.

21. 45 N.J.L. 38 (1883).

FORM OF GENERAL DEMURRER TO THE DECLARATION

(For Matter of Substance)

(In Debt)

IN THE RING’S BENCH

Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

Clyde Dowell

ats.

Arthur Brown

AND the said Clyde Dowell, by William Jones, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and says that the said declaration and the matters therein contained, in manner and form as the same are above stated and set forth, are not sufficient in law for the said Arthur Brown to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, the said Clyde Dowell; and that he, the said Clyde Dowell, is not bound by the law of the land to answer the same. And this he is ready to verify. Wherefore, for want of a sufficient declaration in this behalf, the said Clyde Dowell prays judgment, and that the said Arthur Brown may be barred from having or maintaining his aforesaid action against him, etc.

William Jones

Attorney for Defendant


FORM OF SPECIAL DEMURRER TO THE DECLARATION

(For Matter of Form)

(In Debt)

IN THE KING’S BENCH

Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

Clyde Dowell

ats.

Arthur Brown

AND the said Clyde Dowell, by William Jones, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and says that the said declaration and the matters therein contained, in manner and form as the same are above stated and set forth, are not sufficient in law for
the said Arthur Brown to have or maintain his aforesaid action against the said Clyde Dowell; and that he, the said Clyde Dowell, is not bound by the law of the land to answer the same. And this he is ready to verify. Wherefore, for want of a sufficient declaration in this behalf, the said Clyde Dowell prays judgment, and that the said Arthur Brown may be barred from having or maintaining his aforesaid action against him, etc. And the said Clyde Dowell, according to the form of the statute in such case made and provided, states and shows to the court here the following causes of demurrer to the said declaration; that is to say, that no day or time is alleged in the said declaration at which the said causes of action, or any of them, are supposed to have accrued. And also that the said declaration is in other respects uncertain, in formal and insufficient. 23

William Jones
Attorney for Defendant


FORM OF JOINDER IN DEMURRER in THE KING’S BENCH

Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

Arthur Brown

V.

Clyde Dowell

3. The Italics are the author’s.

24. A Party could not decline a Question on the Legal Sufficiency of his own Pleading without abandoning it. The acceptance was therefore as imperative as in the case of an Issue of Fact, and this end

AND the said Arthur Brown says, that the said declaration and the matters therein contained, in manner and form as the same are above pleaded and set forth, are sufficient in law for him, the said Arthur Brown, to have and maintain his aforesaid action against him, the said Clyde Dowell; and the said Arthur Brown is ready to verify and prove the same as the court here shall direct and

was secured by use of a set Form of Words called the “Joiner in Demurrer.” With respect to Issues in Law Tendered by Demurrer, it was immaterial whether the Issue was Well or ill-tendered, that is, whether the Demurrer was in Proper Form or not. In either case the Opposite Party was equally bound to Join in Demurrer; for it was a Rule that there could be No Demurrer upon a Demurrer; and there was no ground for a Traverse or Pleading in Confession and Avoidance, while the Pleading to which the Demurrer was taken still remained unanswered.

For the Common-Law Rule, see Campbell v. St. John, 1 Salln. 219, 91 Engncp. 194 (1693).

For the Code Rule that no Formal Joiner in Demurrer is required, see Conu.Prac.Ili—102, p. 10 (1934).

Where an Issue in Law was Tendered by Demurrer, the opposing Party was required to join it.


“Supposing the Cause to be At laten, the next proceeding is to make a transcript upon paper of the Whole Pleadings that have been filed or delivered between the Parties. This transcript, when the Issue Joined is an Issue of Law, is called the Demurrer-Book; when an Issue of Fact, it is called, in the Ring’s Bench, in some cases, the Issue, in others the Paper.—Book, and in the Common Pleadings it is called the Issue. It contains not only the Pleadings, but also Entries, according to the Ancient Forms used in Recording, of the Appearance of the Parties, the Continuances, and other Acts supposed to be done in Court up to the Period of Issue Joined, even though such Entries have not formed part of the Pleadings as filed or delivered; and it concludes with an Entry of an Award by the Court of the Mode of Decision Tendered and Accepted by the Pleadings. The making of this transcript upon an Issue in Law is called making up the Demurrer-Book, upon an Issue in Fact, making up the Issue or Paper-Book.” Stephen, A treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c. I, Of the Proceedings in an Action, from its Con庭ecment to Its Termination, 108 (34 Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C. 1892).

Sec. 198

THE DEMURRER
award. Wherefore, inasmuch as the said Clyde Dowell hath not answered the said declaration, nor hitherto in any manner denied the same, the said Arthur Brown prays judgment, and his debt aforesaid, together with his damages by him sustained by reason of the detention thereof, to be adjudged to him.


The General and Special Demurrer Under the Regime of Oral Pleading

PRIOR to the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) cited or described in the books as the Statute of Demurrers, and an important Statute of Jeofails, there were Two Kinds of Demurrer, the General Demurrer and the Special. According to the case, Anonymous, decided in 1704, and in which the opinion rendered was by Chief Justice Holt of the Court of King’s Bench, upon a General Demurrer, a Party might take advantage of all Types of Defects, Formal or Substantive,28

25 Bus. c. 5, 6 Statutes at Large 360.

26. The word “Jeofails” means, I have failed; I am in error- Certain Statutes in English Law are referred to as Statutes of Amendment and Jeofails, because where a Pledger perceives any slip in the Form of his Proceedings, and acknowledges the error (jeofails) he is at liberty by those Statutes to Amend it.

For a complete list of the Statutes, the earliest of which was enacted in 1340, 14 Edw. III, e. 6, 1 Statutes at Large 474, see article by Reppy, The Hilary Rules and Their Effect on Negative and Affirmative Pleas Under Modern Codes and Practice Acts, C.N.Y. tLL, Rev. 95, 100, n. 19 (1929).

For a partial list of these Statutes, see, also, 1 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench, e. XXX, 647-664 (1st Amended., Philadelphia 1807); Clark & Yerion, Aider and Amendment, 12 Minn.L.Rev. 97, 125 (1928).

And, for a discussion of Amendments and Jeofails, see Scott, Fundamentals of Procedure in Actions at Law, e. V. Amendments and Jeofails, 143 (New York 1922).


that of Duplicity only excepted, and without the Assignment of Any Cause for Demurrer. Upon a Special Demurrer, so called because it Assigned a Specific Cause of Demurrer, Ordinary Formal Defects were available as on a General Demurrer. As these Ordinary Formal Defects were reached by a General Demurrer, without the necessity of specifically pointing them out as was required in a Special Demurrer, the Latter Form of Demurrer was never necessary, except in a case involving Duplicity.29 In such case it was not sufficient to say that the Pleading was Double, or contained Two Matters, but the Party Demurring was required to show of what the Duplicity consisted.30 Perhaps the reason for this Exception may be discovered in the peculiarity of this Specific Defect. Technically, Duplicity constituted neither a Formal nor a Substantive Defect, that is, it was not a Substantive Defect, because not too few, but rather too many Facts had been alleged; and it was not a Defect in Form, for what was alleged had been stated without violation of a Rule of Pleading, hence the Only Defect present—the statement of Superfluous Facts—was held to be available only on Special Demurrer.

What the Statute of Elizabeth Provided

WHAT did the Statute of Elizabeth provide and what was the effect of such provision?

29-Ibid.

Duplicity in the Declaration was a common Ground for Special Demurrer at Common Law. Handy v. Chatfield, 23 Wend. (N.Y.) 35 (1840). But for the attitude of the courts of today on Duplicity, see Oklahoma Gas & Electric Co. v. Bates Expanded Steel Truss Co., 11 P.24 415 (19213). And in England, under the influence of the Common Law’s procedure Act, 1552 (15 & 16 Vict. c. 76, § 51), which provided that “No Pleading shall be deemed insufficient for any Defect which could heretofore o. ly be objected to by Special Demurrer,” Duplicity, along with other Formal Defects, ceased to be available on Demurrer. The remedy Is now by Motion.

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

It provided that upon Demurrer Joined and Entered in any Action or Suit in any Court, the Judges should give Judgment “according as the Very Right of the Cause and Matter in Law shall appear unto them” without regard to any Defect in Form whatsoever, “except those only which the Party Demurring shall Specially and Particularly set down and express together with his Demurrer!”

What, in plain English, does this mean? The phrase, “according as the Very Right of the Cause and Matter in Law shall appear unto them” translated into plain English, means that the Judges thereafter shall decide the Cases on the Merits, and in complete disregard of any imperfection, defect or wattle of Form in any Pleading, except those only which the Demurring Party specifically points out and sets down “together with his Demurrer.” What Demurrer? Answer, the General Demurrer. A Special Demurrer therefore, under the Statute, is merely a General Demurrer, to which is added a specification or pointing out of some Defect in Form in an Adversary’s Pleading, as indicated by the italicized part of the Form of a Special Demurrer set out above. In other words, the Statute provides that Defects in Form are aided or waived unless taken advantage of by Special Demurrer at the next Succeeding Stage in Pleading.

Defects in Form, after the Statute, might, however, still prove fatal, but only if specifically objected to by openly pointing out the defect at the next Stage of Pleading. Thus,

31. “This Statute, by making known the Causes of Demurrer, was so far restorative of the common Law; and as a General Demurrer before did confess all Matters Formally Pleaded, so by this Statute, whenever the right sufficiently appeared to the Court, it confessed all Matters, though Pleaded informally.” 8 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench, c. XXX, 649 (1st. Sin. ed., Philadelphia 1807).

See, also, English: Icing v. Botham, Freem. 38, 89 Eng.Bep. 31 (1672); Illinois: Cook v. Scott, 1 Gil-man (Th.) 333 (1844); Gordon v. Bankard, 37 II. 147 (1863); Cover v. Armstrong, 66 Ill. 267 (1872); Mas

in the famous case of Heard v. Baskerville, decided in 1614, or only twenty-nine years after the Enactment of the Statute, the Court concluded, upon finding a Defect in a Pleading to be a Matter of Form, that the Defect could not be taken advantage of upon General Demurrer, as “a General Demurrer doth confess all matters pleaded”, though not pleaded in proper form. A General Demurrer, therefore, automatically waives all Defects in Form, except in the case of a General Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement.

What the Statute of Anne Provided

THE Kinds and Forms of Demurrers after 1705 remained substantially the same, except for a slight alteration in the Scope of the Special Demurrer. The Statute of Anne (1705), was merely a Reenactment of the Statute of Elizabeth (1585), almost word for word, with a proviso that “sufficient Matter appear in the said Pleadings, upon which the Court may give Judgment according to the Very Right of the Cause,” plus an enumeration of Certain Defects, which upon the construction of the Prior Statute, had been held to be Substantial, but which were now to be held Formal, and hence Aided upon General Demurrer, the conservative views of the Judges to the contrary notwithstanding. As Could ~ has so accurately stated, the Statute


32. I-lob, 232, 80 Eng.1cpr. 878 (1614).

33. A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, Pt. III, c. IV, Of Demurrer, 576, 577 (6th ed. by Will,

Albany 1909).
The statute of Elizabeth, 27 elm. e. 5 (1585) and the statute of 4 Anne, c. 16, § 4 (1705) are applicable only in civil actions, being confined
to proceedings in an “Action or Suit.” The former statute is, by express proviso, not extended to criminal proceedings. In indictments,
therefore, formal defects are still available on general demurrer as at common law. A proviso in the statute of Anne

**Defensive Pleadings**

**Ch. 20**

Sec. 198

The plaintiff failed to allege the writing, this was held to be a defect available on demurrer. 43

**Exception to the General Rule as to Defects Available upon a General Demurrer**

While the general rule is that upon a general demurrer only defects in substance are available, there is an exception to the rule where the plaintiff files a general demurrer to a plea in abatement defective in form. 44 In Humphrey v. Whitten, where the plaintiff brought a suit against the defendant in the name of James Humphreys, the defendant pleaded that he was and “always had been known by the name of James Humphrey, and not James Humphreys, as by the plaintiff’s writ supposed, to which plea the plaintiff demurred generally. Since the defendant’s plea contained new matter, in order to be in proper form, it should have concluded with a verification, which it did not contain. There was therefore a question as to whether a defect in form in a plea in abatement could be reached by a general demurrer after the statute of Elizabeth and the statute of Anne. In reviewing the common law, the court concluded that the general demurrer reached the defect in form—the failure to have a verification—in the plea in abatement. Why? Because, at common law, prior to the statute, a general demurrer reached both defects in form and defects in substance in a pleading to which it was interposed, and since the statute of Elizabeth and the statute of Anne only applied to pleas in bar, the original common law as to the scope of a general demurrer to a plea in abatement was not changed, and therefore, as a general demurrer reached a defect in form in a plea in abatement before 1585, it still reached it after 1585, the

43. Anonymous, 2 salk 510, 01 eng.rep. 442 (1701); duppa v. mayo, 1 wms. sauml. 275, 276 note 2, 85 eng.rep. 336, 342 note 2 (1670).

44. flumilirey v. Whitten. 17 Ala. 30 (1949).

Common-law rule not having been disturbed, thus, the exception to the general rule that in order to reach a defect in form in a pleading after the statute of demurrers, you must demur specially. 45

**The General Rule as to Defects Available upon a Special Demurrer after the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705)**

The general rule was that upon a special demurrer any defect in form, as created by a violation of a rule of pleading as to the manner and form in which a substantive allegation should be averred, was available, if the cause of demurrer was specifically assigned. Thus, for example, uncertainty of allegation, improper ending of a plea, joinder of several causes of action in a single count, or any other violation of a rule of pleading, constitutes a defect in form.

In addition, as observed above, as a special demurrer is, under the statute of Elizabeth (1585), merely a general demurrer to which has been added a specification of some defect in form in the adversary’s pleading, defects in substance were also reached by a special demurrer.

**The Defect of Duplicity**

Prior to the statute of Elizabeth (1585), the defect of duplicity (which was neither a formal nor a substantive defect) was, as a

45. Shaw v. Dutcher, 19 Wend. (N.Y.) 216, 222, 228 (1838), in which Co-van, 3., declared: “Testing the plea below by these rules, it is fatally defective. It begins and concludes by praying judgment of the said bill, I incline to think that this was a defect of substance; but if of form only, being in abatement, the defect need not be assigned specially, such is the construction of the English statutes of special demurrers, 27 eliz., c. V, & 4 anne, c. 16, and ours is but an epitome of those acts. 2 Hs. 276, 2d ccl. the English authorities to this point will be found in 1 chitty. pleading, 404; Walden v. Holman, 2 Dallaim. 1015; per bayley, 3., in lloyd v., williams, 2 Maule & Selw. 484, 5. Walden v. Holman, 6. in point.”

---

Page 411 of 735
of Anne (1705) was enacted “partly in explanation and partly in extension of the healing operation of the Former Act—and also expressly specifying a variety of Particular Defects, which, though before deemed Substantial, are, by this latter Act, virtually converted into Matters of Form and thus Aided on General Demurrer. The Statute of Elizabeth, then, requires Demurrers to be Special, for Formal Defects, in general; and that of Anne, after Reenacting the same general provision, extends, or applies it to certain Particular Defects, expressly named in the Act.”

**The General Rules as to Defects Available Upon a General Demurrer After the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705)**

AFTER the Amendment of the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) by the Statute of Anne (1705), the General Rule was that upon a General Demurrer any Substantive Defect was available.

Other Defects available upon General Demurrer include a Misjoinder of Causes of Action in the same Declaration; ~ Misjoinder or Nonjoinder of Parties plaintiff or defendant, if the Defect is Apparent on the Face of the Pleading; a Variance; or

barred its extension to Actions on Penal Statutes, which are Civil Suits, But this proviso, in the year 1731, was repealed by the Statute of 4 Geo. IT, c. 26, § 4.

30. “The Defects specifically enujo, coroje, and cured, by this latter Statute, arc in materia traverses—the omission of profert of Deeds, Sm—or of the words vi ci armis, and contra pacern—or of a verification per recordem—or of a prout patet per records,...

All these Defects are therefore Aided by this Statute, on Demurrer, unless specially assigned for Cause of Demurrer.” Could, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, Pt. III, c. IV, Of Demurrer, 577 (6th ed. by Will, Albany, 1909).


39. Cooke v. Graham’s Adm’r, 3 Craneb (U.S.) 229, 2 L.Ed. 420 (1805).

Allegations in the Disjunctive. Ordinarily the Statute of Limitations is not available on Demurrer, as the General Rule is that it is no part of the plaintiff’s case to show that his Action is not Barred by the Statute of Limitations, Such a showing may be essential where the Period of Limitation is treated as a part of the right created by a Statute. If, in the absence of such a Statute, a Declaration or Complaint discloses on its Face that the Action is Barred by the Statute of Limitations, there is a conflict of opinion, the general tendency of which is against the availability of the Defect on Demurrer.

The situation with respect to whether the Statute of Frauds is available on Demurrer raises substantially the same problem as the Statute of Limitations. At Common Law the Rule was that where an Action was founded upon a Contract which at Common Law was valid without a writing, but which the Statute required to be in writing, it was not necessary for the Declaration to Count upon or take notice of the writing. If, however, a Statute created a right which did not exist at Common Law, and required a writing, and the


For an excellent discussion of the cases on this point specifically and on the Defense of the Statute of Limitations in general, see the articles by Atkinson, Pleading the Statute of Limitations, 00 Yale L.J. 014, 918—029 (1927); Atkinson, Some Procedural Aspects of the Statute of Limitations, 27 Col.L.Rcv. 131 (1927); Atkison, Allegations of Time In Pleading, 35 Yale L.J. 457 (3926).

For a discussion of the problem under the Codes, ~with citation of cases, Sec Clark, Handbook of the Law of Code Pleading, c. 8, ~ 82, 522—523 (24 S. St. Paul 1047).
a Gen?r doth ch no~
ill De~eneral
S after except of the Anne

of the rd for ~fattcr ch thc to thc Imcrac conn held to be
erenal
f the
-
As
tutte

Walden (1704).

5) and pplicarocod=ute is, ii pur~1 Do-as at Anne
42: Whitelsead v. Burgess, 61 N.J.L. 75, 38 At], 802
(1597).

20

matter of Precedent in Pleading, only available upon a Special Demurrer. In fact, the Special Demurrer was seldom
used for any other purpose, as an Ordinary Defect in Form was available on General Demurrer, without any
Assignment of Cause. After the Statute, Duplicity, despite its peculiarity as a fault, was treated as a Formal Defect,
and hence available upon a Special Demurrer.\textsuperscript{47} But in \textit{Oklahoma Gas v- Electric Co. v. Bates Expanded Steel
Truss Co.,} where the defendant Demurred Specially to the First and Second Counts of an Amended Declaration in
Case on the Ground of Duplicity, the Court, regarding the Rules of Pleading as but juridical instrumentalities for the
furtherance of Justice, and taking note of a statutory requirement that pleadings should be framed to promote
“conciseness, brevity and plainness”, overruled the Demurrer, where at Common Law the Demurrer would have
been sustained. And in England, under the influence of the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852, which provided
that “no Pleading shall be deemed insufficient for any Defect which could heretofore only be objected to by Special
Demurrer,” ~ Duplicity, along with other Formal Defects, ceased to be available on Demurrer. The remedy is now
by Motion.M

\textsuperscript{47} Humphry v. Flethily, 2 Vent 222, 36 Eng.Rep.
405 (1690); Seymour v. Mitchel, 2 Root (Cm.) 145 (1794).
11 F.24 415 (1926).

\textsuperscript{5} 15 & 16 Viet. c. 76, § 51, 92 Statutes at Large
297.
395

\textit{Five Exceptions to the General Rule that Every Violation of a Rule of Pleading is a Defect in Form}

THE General Rule is that any Violation of a Rule of Pleading constitutes a Defect in Form. To this General
Rule, however, there were at least Five Exceptions, that is, there were some situations in which a mere Violation of a
Rule of Pleading was held as a Matter of Precedent to constitute a Defect in Substance, and therefore could be taken
advantage of on General Demurrer. This re-’ suited in case of (1) a Departure; (2) a Discontinuance; (3) a Misplesader; (4) a Misconception of the Correct Form of Action; and (5) a Misjoinder of Counts. The first three of
them are Aided by a Verdict; the last two constitute grounds for a Motion in Arrest of Judgment or Writ of Error, but
are not Aided by a Verdict.\textsuperscript{5}

\textit{Motions to Strike Out}

THE usual Method of Objection to parts of a Pleading is now by Motion to Strike Out what is superfluous,
redundant, or immaterial, and thus clear up the Issues by use of the pruning hook.\textsuperscript{55} By filing an Amended

\textbf{Sec. 198}

disSral \textit{erm} ers,

\textbf{TIIIE DEMURRER}

\textit{ibie tutute}
by
the
Al
.if

As-
of
lea,
Ia
Ca
in
ñal
Dth
ich
De
rIg,
5),
ler
sa
223
the
Ye.
of
ing
10(1
ish
'4
use
/os,
1w.

50. In Curtis Funeral Home v. Smith Lumber Co.,
114 Vt. 150, 152, 40 A.2d 531, 332 (1945), Moulton, C.
3., declared: "Duplicity is a Defect of Form and Not of Substance. Johnson v. Hardware Mutual Casualty Co., 109 Vt. 481, 459, 1 A.2d 817.
At Common Law this fault in a Declaration could he reached only by a Special Demurrer. Lewis v. John Crane & Sons, 75 Vt. 210, 220, 62
At]. 60; 1 Chitty, Pleading, 16th Am. ed. 252; Gould, Pleading, 4th ed. 430, 41. But under our Practice Act, which provides, Pj.-, 1578,
flint a Pleading shall not fail for want of Form and that the Sufficiency of all Pleadings In this respect is for the discretionary determination of
the Trial Court, the function of a Demurrer is to test the Sufficiency of a Pleading in Matters of Substance only. Ceburn v. Village of Swanton,
05 Vt. 320, 324, 325, 115 A. 133. The Modern Demurrer resembles the Former Special Demurrer merely in that the Act, FL. 1574, III,
requires it distinctly to specify the reason why the Pleading Demurred to is insufficient. Coates v. Eastern States Farmers Exchange, 99 Vt. 110, ITt 130 A. 709. It follows that, in our
practice, Special Demurrers as known in the Common Law have become implicitly abolished, and therefore Duplicity in Pleading, being, as we
have seen, a Defect In Form, is to be reached by an appropriate Motion under the Provisions of FL. 1578. A similar procedure obtains in other
Jurisdictions where Special De- murrers are no longer recognized."


52. The sufficiency of a Defense must be tested by
Demurrer, and cannot be considered on Motion to
Strike a Paragraph as irrelevant. Bulova -cc B. L.
Pleading after a Demurrer is sustained, or by answering after a Demurrer is overruled, the Party waives any
Exception to the Ruling before the Appellate Court. Therefore, a Motion to Strike Out, rather than a Demurrer,
may be preferable to save the benefit of
the objection.

EFFECT OF DEMURRER—BY WAY OF ADMISSION

199. Upon Demurrer, all Matters of Fact that are well Pleadend stand Admitted, under the Operation of the Rule that whatever Allegations are not Denied are assumed to be True, but only for the purpose of Decision on

Page 414 of 735
the Demurrer. A Demurrer does not admit Matters of Fact which are ill-pleaded, nor does it admit Allegations of Conclusions of Fact or of Law.

A Demurrer can never be founded on Matter collateral to the Pleading which it opposes, but must always be based on the Face of the Pleading to which it is interposed. Thus, a Speak.Ct., 1920), order modified, 193 App.Dir. 161, 183 N. Y.Supp. 495 (1st Dept 1920).

Where questions which should have been raised by Demurrer were raised by Motion to Strike Portion of Answer, the Motion may be treated as a Demurrer, Lyons v. Farm Property Mut. Ins. Assn of Iowa, 158 Iowa 500, 179 NW. 291 (1920).

It is not the Ome of a Demurrer to test liupi’oper Allegations concerning Datneges, the remedy being by Motion to Strike or Objection to Evidence or Special Charges. Western Union Telegraph Co. v. Morrison, 15 AlaApp. 532, 74 8-., 88 (1917), judgment reversed, Ex Parte Wesh v. Union TeU.grupht Co., 200 Ala. 496, 76 So. 438 (TOL).

A Demurrer is not the Proper Way to Test the Salciency of a Notice of Deftnse filed cinder Section 46 of the Illinois Practice Ac-i, but a Motion to Strike from the Files. White v. Ik”, rnp ii., 204 Ill.App. 83, 116 -(1917).

Sc-c. on Dernurrers and Motions to Strike Out, hall v. O’Neil Turpentine Co., 56 Fla. 324, 47 Se. 609, 16 Aun.Cas. 735 11008); State v. Seaboard Air Line fty., hO Fln. 670, 47 So. 086 (1908); Southern Home Ins. Co. v. Putnal, 57 Fia. 100, 49 So. 022 (1900).

-3 Error in sustaining a Dm1111-i er is ~s’aived by Amending or asking leave to Amend or Plead Over. Ikqujett v- Union Ccitt, Life los. Co., 203 ILL. 444, CJ.Iv.E. 971 (1904).

-3 Coxey v. Culicis, 10 N.J.L. 328 (1829).

That the Tunic is the same under the Modern Cases, see Colorado: Downey v. Colorado Fuel & Iron Co., 48 Cob. 27, 408 Pac. 972 (1910); Iowa: Winnelplo State Say. Bank v. Cotton, 143 Iowa 350. 122 NW. 149 (1009); Wisconsin: Chicago & N. IV. fty. Co. v. Allen, 94 Wis. 93, 65 NW. 873 (1896).

55, Coxe y Chuck, 10 N.J.L. 328 (1820).

And under the Code, rite It ule is the same,— that a Dcin urrer —vil not adini t llh-Pleaded Facts. fleaton v. Packer, 131 AmcDiv. 812, 116 N.Y.Supp. 40 (1st Dept. 19099). But these Facts which by fair intendment and implication are admitted. New York: Bhita v. Whitney, 185 N.Y. 232, 77 N.E. 1150 (1906).


And see, the earlier New York case of Spencer v. Sooth-vick, 0 Jhons. (N1.) 314 (1812), in which it was held that an argumentative Plea is good on General Demurrer.

A Demurrer does not Admit the Law, I-laittn v. Lieutenshein, 225 N.Y. 570, 122 KB. 625 (1019); and an Admission by Demurrer is only for the Purpose of Pleading. West v. II. 3. Lewis Oyster so., 99 Cona.

55, 121 Atj. 462 (1923).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 20

ing Demurrer, which, in order to sustain itself, requires Facts net appearing on the Face of the Pleading Objected to, is not permitted.

Two Fundamental Rules Covet-fling Admissions by Demun’er

THERE are Two Rules that Govern Admissions by Demurrer. The first Rule is that a Demurrer will admit any Fact that is Well. Plead. and will not admit any Fact that is JilPleaded; ~ the second Rule is that a Demurrer will not admit any Fact which the Court takes Judicial Notice to be impossible or untrue. And the Technical Objective of these two rules was to test the Legal Effect of the Allegations to which they were addressed and to aid in the Issue-Formulation Process of Separating Questions of Fact from Questions of Law, for ready reference to the Court or Jury, depending on whether the Pleadings terminated in an Issue of Fact or an Issue of Law.

CIt 20

Sec. 199

THE DEMURRER

A Demurrer wiTh Admit any Fact thzzi is Well-Pleaded and will not Admit any Fact that is Ri-Pleaded
IN connection with the first Rule, the question arises as to when is a Fact Well Pleaded or Ill-Pleaded? A Fact is Well-Pleaded when it is required by the Substantive Law as essential to the Statement of a Cause of Action or Defense, and is then Pleaded without Violating any Rule of Pleading. A Fact is Ill-Pleaded when it is not required by the Substantive Law as essential to the Statement of a Cause of Action or Defense, or when, being so required, it is then Pleaded in Violation of one or more Rules of Pleading.

Thus if A sued B in Ejectment and Alleged, by way of Title, that he was Seized of Black-acre, the Allegation of Title was Well-Pleaded, because it was required by the Substantive Law of Real Property as essential to the Statement of a Cause of Action, and because it was Alleged without Violating any Rule of Pleading. If, however, A had Alleged, by way of Title, that he had a Grant Deed of Blackacre, his Allegation of Title would have been Ill-Pleaded, as a Deed is Mere Evidence of Title, and amounts to the Statement of an Evidentiary Fact, a Defect available on Special Demurrer.

Assuming that the Facts are Well-Pleaded, a Demurrer thereto admits, for the Purpose of Argument, that they are true, and the only question for the Court is one of Law as to whether there is any Rule of Substantive Law attaching Legal Effect to the Facts.

It not only thus admits the Facts, but it also admits the consequences of those Facts, provided such consequences may fairly be considered as their legitimate results. Hyde v. Mortar, 26 Vt. 271 (1544); And, see also, Dickerson v. Winslow, 07 Ala. 491, 11 So. 918 (1892).

Stated, The Rule is subject, however, to the qualification that the Matter must be sufficiently Pleaded, that is in the Manner and Form required by Law. If the Facts were not Alleged in Proper Form, they were not admitted by a Demurrer under the Common-Law Rule which prevailed prior to the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705). This Rule was changed by these Statutes, the Law of Demurrers being altered in such a way that thereafter Facts not Alleged according to the Form required by Procedural Law, might be admitted by Demurrer in some instances. This usually results where the Demurrer is General, instead of Special, as this usually amounts to a Confession of the Matter Informally Pleaded, thus qualifying the earlier Common-Law Rule that a Demurrer did not admit an E-Pleaded Fact.

A Demurrer does not admit Conclusions, either of Fact or of Law, which the Adverse Party may have seen fit to draw in his Pleading; Thus, in Milliville Gas Light Company.

It is not the Office of the Demurrer to Allege Facts, but it is concerned with such Facts as are stated in the Pleading Demurred to. Jennings v, Peoria County, 196 Ill.App. 195 (1915).

Allegations of Fact contained in a Demurrer will be disregarded. Ibid.

It is not the Office of the Demurrer to Allego Facts, but it is concerned with such Facts as are stated in the Pleading Demurred to. Jennings v, Peoria County, 196 Ill.App. 195 (1915).

Admis.

The Admis. that is Well/Plet that that a dcli the possible -tive of Effect ere adLulation et from to the ter the .act or

Admis.

The Admis. that is Well/Plet that that a dcli the possible -tive of Effect ere adLulation et from to the ter the .act or

Admis.

The Admis. that is Well/Plet that that a dcli the possible -tive of Effect ere adLulation et from to the ter the .act or
v. Sweeten, &c., et al., C. the plaintiff Alleged that the defendants, under a contract with the city of Miliville, for the construction of a sewage system, dug up certain streets in the city where the plaintiff had laid gas pipes, which it thereupon became the defendants’ duty to support, protect and render safe during the construction of the sewage system, and that in disregard of this duty the pipes were so negligently supported that they became broken, and severed, to the injury of plaintiff. The only information derivable from the plaintiff’s Declaration, with reference to the existence of the defendant’s Duty to plaintiff, was that plaintiff’s pipes were “laid in the said streets by competent and legal authority.” On a Demurrer by the defendant, it was held that the Demurrer did not admit the plaintiff’s Allegation as to its authority to occupy the highway with its pipes; in short, a Demurrer does not admit a Conclusion of Law.

But this is not always so. When the plaintiff, in stating title to real estate alleges that he is seized of Blackacre, he is Alleging a Conclusion of Law, yet if the defendant Demurs, he will lose, as this particular Conclusion of Law is one which, as a Matter of Precedent in Law, is treated as a Statement of Ultimate Fact, and hence the Demurrer admits it. So, when we say that a Demurrer will not admit a Conclusion of Law, which, as a Matter of Precedent, is not treated as a Statement of Ultimate Fact,

“Where the Facts are stated in a Pleading the Pledger may, and often should, state that Conclusion from such Facts upon which he bases his right, but where the Facts upon which the Pledger’s Conclusion is based are not stated his Conclusion from such Undis conclusions, whether stated in the Complaint or not, that a Demurrer Is directed, and to Which It applies the proper test.” Branham v. Mayor, etc. of City of San Jose, 24 Cal. 585, 602 (1864).

62. 74 N.J.L. 24, 04 AU. 950 (1906).

closed Facts goes for nothing, and not being in itself a Relevant Fact is not admitted by a Demurrer.”

Although a Demurrer admits Facts Well-Pleaded, its operation in this respect is only for the purpose of determining their legal sufficiency. It is strictly confined to this purpose, and cannot be made use of as an Instrument of Evidence on an Issue of Fact, or as Evidence of Facts in another Cause; and, as observed, the admission is for the purpose of the argument only.

A Demurrer will not Admit any Fact which 21w Court takes Judicial Notice to be impossible or Untrue

THE second rule as to Admissions by Demurrer Is that a Demurrer will not admit Any Fact which the Court takes Judicial Notice to be impossible or untrue. ~ An ex

64. Id. at 25, 64 Atl. at 960.


An Admission of Facts by a Demurrer in one Cause is not Evidence of those Facts in another Cause, although between the same Parties. Stinson v. Cardiner, 33 Me, 94 (1851).

ample of the operation of this principle is found in the case in which the plaintiff sues in Trespass to Real Estate, the defendant pleads that he has not been served with a Summons, and the plaintiff Demurs. The defendant says, “I win, because, by your Demurrer you admit a lack of Service.” But the plaintiff wins, because a Demurrer does not admit a Fact which the Court by Judicial Notice knows to be untrue. Whether the defendant was served can only be Seen from looking at the Return of the Sheriff, which states that the defendant has been Served. The Return of the Sheriff is a part of the Common-Law Record, the Court Judicially Notices its own Record, hence the Court Judicially knows that the defendant has been Served, that the defendant’s allegation of lack of service is untrue, and what the Court Judicially knows to be untrue is not admitted by Demurrer. This does not apply to facts of which the Court cannot take Judicial Notice, though the Court may have private knowledge that they are untrue. Thus, in the case of Hodges v. Steward, in which the plaintiff brought Assumpsit upon an Inland Bill of Exchange, declaring upon a Special Custom in London for the bearer to bring the Action, and the defendant Demurred, it was held that since the Court only Judicially Noticed the general Law of Merchants, as part of the Law of England, whereas this custom was a local custom of England, the Demurrer admitted the local custom, even in the face of the fact that the Court might have known of its own knowledge that no such local custom existed. Accordingly, Judgment was given for the plaintiff, although the defendant might have had a good Defense if he had Traversed or Denied the local custom, instead of Demurring.

months and ten days, were not valuable, as it was incapable of performing valuable service.


Will a Demurrer Admit the Pleader’s Conclusions as to the Construction of a Statute~

AN interesting aspect of Admission by Demurrer as affected by the Doctrine of Judicial Notice appears in determining whether a Pleader’s Conclusion as to the Construction of a Statute is Admitted by a Demurrer. The Issue was clearly presented in the Illinois Case of Compher v. People.” This was an Action on a Bond executed by the county collector, in which the county collector and his sureties were defendants. One of the Pleas, after referring to various Statutes enacted subsequent to the date of the Bond, alleged that thereby the Liability of the sureties was materially changed; and it was insisted that the plaintiffs, by Demurring to the Plea, admitted to the truth of the Construction of the Statutes as set forth by the defendants. The Court held that the Laws in question were Public Acts, and that the plaintiffs, by Demurring to a Plea construing them, did not admit such construction to be correct.

In considering this problem there are three situations to bear in mind: (1) Where the Action is based upon a Local Statute, and the Pleading sets out the Statute in Substance or Verbatim, the construction of the Pleader is not admitted by Demurrer, as the Court takes Judicial Notice of Local Law; (2) Where a Pleading sets out the Terms of a Foreign Statute, and then places a construction upon it, such construction is not admitted by Demurrer; and (3) where the Pleading states the Substance of a Foreign Statute, it is treated as any other Allegation of Fact, and hence is admitted by Demurrer, as the Court will not take Judicial Notice of a Foreign Statute.'
EFFECT OF DEMURRER—IN OPENING THE RECORD

20. A Demurrer Opens up the Whole Record and the Court will render Judgment against the First Party Guilty of a Substantive Defect; as to Form, a Special Demurrer only reaches Defects in Form in the Pleading Demurred to, but since a Special Demurrer includes a General, it also Opens up the Entire Record as to Substantive Defects. These General Rules as to the Retrospective Effect of a Demurrer are sometimes subject to several exceptions.

Exceptions: A Demurrer will not Open up the Record back to the Declaration so as to cause Judgment to be rendered against the First Party Guilty of a Substantive Defect:

(1) Where the plaintiff Demurs to a Plea in Abatement
(2) Where there has been a Discontinuance along one of several lines of Pleading
(3) Where the defendant interposes more than one Plea, one of which is a Plea of the General Issue, and there is a Demurrer at a later Stage in the Pleadings
(4) Where the plaintiff Demurs to a Plea which has been entered by the defendant after defendant’s Demurrer to the Declaration has been overruled

Although, on Demurrer, the Court will generally consider the Whole Record, and give Judgment for the Party who, on the whole, appears Entitled to it, where, though the Right,

**Articles:** Miliar, Restriction of the Retroactive Operation of Demurrer, 10 ILL Ret 417 (1016); Carlin, Functions of a Demurrer Under the Revised Code, 41 W.Va.L.Q. 313 (1935); Pllcc, Objections to Pleadings Under the New Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, 47 Yale Li. 50 (1937); Tripp, Some Observations on Motion Practice In New York, 2 Syracuse L.Eer. 273 (1951).

On the Whole Record, appears to be with the plaintiff, if he has not put his Action on that Ground, the defendant will prevail.

**The General Rule**

It is a well-established Rule that on Demurrer to a Pleading or portions of it, the Court will consider the Whole Record, and give Judgment for the Party who, on the whole, appears entitled to it, or against the Party whose Pleading contains the First Substantive Defect. What this means in Practice, English: Piggot’s Case, 5 Co. 29a, 77 Eng.Rep. 95 (1598); Elgeway’s Case, 3 Co. 52a, 76 Bng.Rep. 753 (1594); Foster v. Jackson, Rob. 56, SO Eng.Rep. 201 (1615); Tippett v May, 1 Bos. & F.411,126 Eng. Rep. 982 (1822); Bates v. Coit. 2 Barn & C. 474, 107 Eng.LRep. 460 (1824); Davies v. Fenton, 6 Barn & C. 216, 108 Eng.Lrep. 433 (1827); Bishop v. Quintard, 15 Con. 391 (1847); Miller v. Kingsbury, S Fin. 35 (1859); Illinois McFadden v. Fortier, 20 Ill. 509 (1858); Haynes v. Lucas, 50 Ill. 436 (1860); Mount Carbon Coal & it. Co. v. Andrews, 53 Ill. 170 (1870); Illinois Fire Ins. Co. v. Stanton, 57 Ill. 354 (1870); Ft. Dearborn Lodge v. Klein, 113 Ill. 171, 3 N.E. 272, 56 Am.St.Rep. 133 (1885); Dupee v. Blake, 148 Ill. 453, 35 N.E. 807 (1893); Distilling & Cattle Feeding Co. v. People, 150 Ill. 448, 41 N.E. 188; 47 Am.St.Rep. 200 (1895); Hedrick v. People, 221 Ill. 374, 77 N.E. 441, 5 Ann.Cas. 690 (1906); Heinberger v. Elliot Frog & Switch Co., 245 Ill. 448, 92 N.E. 297 (1010); New Hampshire: Leslie v. liarlow, 18 N.H. 518 (1841); Claggett v. Simes, 31 N.H. 22 (1855); New York: The Auburn & Ou’a,eo Canal Co. v. Leitch, 4 leno (N.Y.) 65 (1841) Pennsylvania: Barnett v. Barnett, 16 Serg. & B. (Pa.) 51 (1827); Virginia: Day v. Pickett, 4 Munf. (Va.) 104 (1813); Federal: Gornian v. lino, 3 Peters 680 at 684 (1841); Townsend v. Jenison, 7 flow. (U.S.) 706, 12 Ltd. 880 (1849). And that the Rule is the same under the Code, see Pierce v. Bristol, 130 Misc. 188, 223 N.Y.Supp. 678 (1027); See, also, Baxter v. McDonnell, 154 N.Y. 432, 48 N.E. 816 (1897).

That the situation on Demurrer is the same under the Code, see Schwab v. Furniss, 4 Sandf. (N. 7.) 704, at 704—S (1852) In which Sandlora, 3., declared: . . On a Demurrer to a Pleading, or portions of It, the Rule now is the same as it was before the Code of Procedure, that Judgment shall be given against the Party who committed the first Substantive Fault That is, If the Demurrer be to an Answer, and It appear that the Complaint does—

**CL 20**

**Sec. 200**

**TIIE DEMURRER**
Thus, if the plaintiff declares in Replevin for a Specific Chattel, but fails to allege Title, and the defendant Pleads the Statute of Limitations, to which the plaintiff Demurs, Judgment will go for the defendant, the plaintiff having failed to state Title in his Declaration, thus making himself guilty of the First Substantive Defect. And, on Demurrer to a Replication, if the Court regards the Replication bad, but perceives a Substantive Defect in the Plea, Judgment will be given, not for the defendant, but for the plaintiff, provided the Declaration is good as a Matter of Substantive Law; but if the Declaration is Defective in Point of Substance, then, upon the same principle, Judgment would be given in favor of the defendant. The Demurrer, at whatever Stage of the Pleadings it is interposed; reaches back in its effect, through the Whole Record, and ultimately attaches to the First Substantive Defect in the Pleadings not show a Cause of Action, Judgment shall be given against the plaintiff and the Complaint dismissed, (Code, Sec. 148). If the Demurrer be to the Reply, the plaintiff may show that the Answer is insufficient, and have Judgment in his favor. There is no more reason now than formerly, that a plaintiff should have Judgment on Demurring to an Answer, when it appears upon the Face of the Record that he has No Cause of Action; or that the defendant should succeed on Demurrer to the Reply, when it Is apparent upon his Answer that he has No Defense.”


However, a Demurrer will not open the Record back to the Declaration when the plaintiff, at the Replication Stage of Pleading, Demurs Specially to the defendant’s Plea, which is Substantively Defective, and there is a Defect in Form in the Declaration. This results from the Statute of Elizabeth, which provided for Waiver of all Defects in Form unless objected to at the next Succeeding Stage in Pleading, or to put the Matter in another way, a Special Demurrer only reaches Defects in Form in the Pleading with the on that on De it, the ird, and On the inst the rst Subn Prac

Eng.flep. Rngtep. Eng.nep. 126 Eng. ~aSt 5u2, 5 Barn. v. Cofl Davies . 3 (1S27) jnn. 39–

III. 509 Ylount 111. 176 Ill. ~jst DL 177, jpee r. tiling & 41 N.E. People, (10061; 11! 145, v. liar-31 N.H. seo Ca’enn(Pa.) SI f. (Vs.) Teters a Jenil me Unidf. (N. 3., decading, it Was t shall ~e frst ~bew it does 78. The reason for this Itti” is forcibly stac~1 in the ease of Ordinary v. Bruecy, 1 Brev. (SC) 191. 196 (1802) by Griml~e. J., who declared: “An.l to reason of this Course of Proceeding in the Court is fundamentally right: for should they, i.i the first instance, rectify the Last Fault, they must then hear another Motion to set the preceding one to rights also: by which mole half a dozen questions might be made on the Propriety of Proceedings, only one of wh.ch might he determined at any one Court. This would be the means of lengthening out an Issue to an unreasonable length of time, and to the very great delay of Justice. Whereas, by the Rule laid down above, that the Court will look for the first Fault, and give Judgment accordingly, all

the subsequent Defective Proceedings are at once., and by one single decision, set at naught, and dismissed.”

Page 421 of 735
Demurred to, whereas, as to Substance, it goes all the way back to the Declaration, since, as previously observed, a Special Demurrer includes a General. Thus, to illustrate the point, if A puts in a Declaration Good in Substance, but Bad in Form, B puts in a Plea Good in Form and Bad in Substance, and A Demurs Specially, B will lose for two reasons, one because the Defect in Form in A’s Declaration is not open on A’s Special Demurrer; it was waived by B’s failure to Demur Specially at the Second Stage of Pleading; two, because B was Guilty of the First Substantive Defect, which was available even on A’s Special Demurrer, which included a General, and without regard to the Formal Defect in A’s Declaration.

The Rule that a Demurrer will open up the Record back to the Declaration so as to cause Judgment to be rendered against the First Party guilty of a Substantive Defect, however, may, at Common Law, be subject to at least four Exceptions.

Exceptions to the Qetterai Rule

The first Exception occurs where the plaintiff Demurs to a Plea in Abatement. Thus, for instance, let us suppose that A sues in Ejectment, but fails to allege Title, that B pleads that he was sued in the wrong County, but fails to give the plaintiff a Better Writ. Now, suppose A Demurs Generally to the Plea. Does the Demurrer reach back to the Defect in the plaintiff’s Declaration, that is, his Failure to allege Title, If it were permitted to do so, the defendant would win the case on the Merits, without having taken any chance of losing it on the Merits, as, with one Exception, on a Plea in Abatement the Judgment is never on the Merits. In order to prevent the defendant from winning when, by his Plea in Abatement he took no chance of losing on the Merits, an Exception to the Rule as to the retrospective effect of a Demurrer was created where the Demurrer was interposed to a Plea in Abatement, and where, to permit the Demurrer to search the Whole Record, would sooner or later, as illustrated by the case above, result in a victory for the defendant where he had no chance to lose.

The second Exception arises where there has been a discontinuance along one of several lines of Pleading. An example of this


See, also, on the same point, the following cases:

-- 111.

Page 422 of 735
may be seen in the case of *Tippet v. May*, in which the plaintiff declared in Assumpsit against A, B and C. Two of the defendants, A and B, pleaded a Debt of Record by way of set-off, without taking any notice of the third. The plaintiff Replied *Nul Nulla Record*, and gave a day to produce the Record to the two defendants A and B, but entered no suggestion on the roll respecting the third.

C. To this Replication, there was a General Demurrer. The Court held that the plaintiffs having Replied to a Plea by two of the defendants without taking notice of the third against whom they declared, had made a discontinuance; that the Cause being discontinued, Judgment must be given against the plaintiffs, as they were not in a position to take advantage of the Defect in the defendant’s Plea. To put the matter in another way, the plaintiffs, by neglecting to sign Judgment against the defendant, on Allegations the latter failed to answer, caused a Discontinuance of the Action. The principle involved was that the plaintiff, by omitting to follow up his entire demand against the three defendants, created an interruption in the proceedings, which is technically known as a “Discontinuance,” and which creates an Error on the Record. The commission of this fault places the plaintiff where he is in no position to ask for Judgment; but such an Error is now generally cured by one of the Statutes of Jeofails, after Verdict, as well as after Judgment.

The third Exception may appear where a defendant interposes more than one Plea, one of which is a Plea of the General Issue, and there is a Demurrer at a later Stage in the Pleadings. However, in *The Auburn v. Owe-s-1 Bbs. & Pull. 411, 126 Eng.Rep. 082 (1799)*. See, also, *Flemming v. Mayor, etc. of City of Hoboken, 40 N.J.L. 270 (1875)*.

84. This type of error was touched upon in the Statute of Mispleadings, Jeofails, 32 Ben. VIII, c. 80, 5 Statutes at Large 45 (1540).

85. 4 Denio (N.Y.) 05 (1847).

86. 11 Wend. (N.Y.) 653 (1834). In accord: Baldwin v. City of Aberdeen, 23 S.D. 636, 123 NW. 80 (1909). Other New York cases decided between the Wheeler (1834) and Auburn & Owaseo Canal Co. (1847) cases, include: Dearborn v. Kent, 14 Wend. (N.Y.) 283 (1835); *Russell v. Rogers, 15 Wend. (N.Y.) 831 (1836)*. Cf. Miller v. Maxwell, 16 Wend. (N. V.) 0 (1836).

order to Ig when, 0 chance ption to .ect of a emurrer ent, and arch the as ifltz.svictory chance there

of sevof this

his point ithin the two rca-are chsbn prje Beiple, a Deelara.

ration is *Uate* or truing of Plea in Demar.

8 be Relie gen the Dc., vailable n Cornending.
The earliest mention of this Rule in Illinois was in Brawner v. Lomax, 23 Ill. 496 (1860), which was decided without any reference to the New York decisions. Wear v. Jacksonville & Savaannah & F. Co., 24 Ill. 5413 (1860), was decided against the Retroactive Effect of the Demurrer on the theory that a party could not Plead and Demur at the Same Time to the Same Pleading. Other effect’s followed: Wilson v. Myrick, 26 Ill. 34 (1561); Clayton v. Munger, 511 Ill. 373 (1865).

This was not, however, the rule in England. To the contrary, the Retroactive Operation of Demurrer was consciously permitted by the English Courts in this instance. In an account of certain features of the Common Law Practice, it was authoritatively said in 1830: “The defendant occasionally resorts to the expedient of Pleading in addition to some Plea sufficient in Point of Law, another which he knows to be insufficient, but to contain a True Statement of Facts, He thus sometimes succeeds in compelling the plaintiff to take Issue upon the First Plea, and to Demur to the Second; and, as upon the Argument of the Demurrer, the Court looks to the Whole Record, and decides against the Party First In Fault, the defendant, instead of supporting his Second Plea, attacks the Declaration, and thus, in effect, both Demurs and Plead to the Declaration.” Third Report of Commissioners on the Superior Courts of Common Law, 26 (London, 1830).

well-established Rule that the defendant could not Both Plead and Demur to the same Count. 88

The fourth Exception occurs where the plaintiff Demurs to a Plea which has been entered by the defendant after his Demurrer to the Declaration has been overruled. Some Courts hold, as, for example, in Stearns v.

88 In referring to this specific point, Bronson, C. J., observed: It is quite clear that the defendant cannot both Plead and Demur to the Same Count. And it is equally clear, that at the Common Law, lie could not have Two Pleas to the Same Count. Indeed the two things, though stated in different verbi, are only parts of one Common-Law Rule; to wit, that the defendant cannot make Two Answers to the Same Pleading. The Statute c.f 4 and 5 Anne, e. 16, was made to remedy this inconvenience; and it allowed the defendant, with the leave of the Court, to Plead as many Several Matters as he should think necessary for his defence. With us, leave of the Court is no longer necessary. (2 Hs. 352, ~ 9). The Statute does not say that the defendant may both Plead and Demur; and consequently lie ep.unot make Two Such Answers. But he may Plead Two or More Pleas; sonic of which may terminate in Issues of Fact, to be tried by a Jory; while others may result in Issues of Law, to be determined by the Court. And whenever we come to a Demurrer, whether it be to the Plea, Replication, Rejoinder, or still further onward, tile Rule is to give Judgment against the Party who committed the First Fault in pleading, if the Fault be such as would maine the Pleading bad on General Demurrer. This finle has always prevailed. It was the Rule prior to the Statute of Anne; and to say that the defendant, because he Pleads Two Pleas, one of which results in a Demurrer, cannot go back and attack the Declaration, would he to deprive him of a portion of the privilege which the Legislature intended to confer. lie eannot Plead and Demur at the Same Time, because the Common Law forbids it; and the Statute does not allow it. But he may Plead Two Pleas; and be takes the right with all its legitimate consequences; one of which is, that whenever there comes a Demurrer upon either of the two Lines of Pleading, he may run back upon that line to see which Party committed the First Fault; and against that Party Judgment will be rendered. Aside from the dicta in question, there is not a shadow of authority, either here or in England, for a different Doctrine.” The Auburn & Oswasco Canal Co. v. Leitch, 4 DeMo (N.Y.) 65, 67 (1847).

Cope, that where the defendant has Demurred to the Declaration, his Demurrer has been overruled, and he has Pleaded over, an Exception is created to the General Rule, and the Court having once passed on the sufficiency of the Declaration, it is incompetent for the same tribunal, at a succeeding term to reverse the decision; also, that the defendant having submitted to the first decision, he thereby waived the Defect in the Declaration, if any. But in Cummins v. Gray, 50 the oppo site view was taken.

Where Plaintiff has not put his Action on the Proper Ground

AS has been observed, the Court will generally consider the Whole Record, and give Judgment for the Party who, on the whole, appears entitled to it. But where, though the right, on the Whole Record, appears to be with the plaintiff, if he has not put his Action on that ground, the defendant will prevail. Thus, where, in an Action on a Covenant to perform an Award, and not to prevent the arbitrators from making it, the plaintiff Declared in Covenant, and Assigned, as a Breach, that the defendant
would not pay the sum Awarded, and the defendant Plead a revocation of the authority of the arbitrators by deed, before Award made, to which the plaintiff De murred, the Court held the Plea good as being a sufficient answer to the Breach alleged, and therefore gave Judgment for the defendant, although they were of opinion that the matter stated in the Plea would have entitled the plaintiff to maintain his Action if he had alleged, by way of Breach.

Historically, it may be said that no such Rule was developed by the English cases, and in Illinois, it originated with the ease of Brawner v. Lomax, 23 El. 496 (1860), although the same may have been foreshadowed in McFaddea v Fortier, 20 Ill. 509 (1858). See, also, Bills v. Stanton, 69 Ill. 51 (1873).

The Judgment rendered upon a Demurrer is the Judicial Determination by the Court, without a Jury, of an Issue of Law only. When rendered in favor of the Party Demurring to a Pleading-in-Chief, its effect is that of a Final Determination of the Merits of the Cause, unless, as is now generally allowable, the Pleading is Amended so as to obviate the objection. When rendered against the Party Demurring, it was Final at Common Law, but lies is now permitted to Plead Over. And a Judgment on a Demurrer in Abatement is Final, but a Judgment on a Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement is not Final.

**JUDGMENT ON DEMURRER**

The **General Rule**

THE General Rule is that a Demurrer, either General or Special, follows the Nature
of the Pleading Demurred to; and accordingly the result will be different where the Demurrer is directed to a
Dilatory Plea as opposed to a Plea in Bar.

Where the Demurrer is Directed to a Plea in Abatement

THUS, a Judgment on a Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement, if for the defendant, is that the Writ be Quashed; If
for the plaintiff, it is a Judgment of Respondeat Ouster, or that the defendant Answer Over.\(^9\)

Where the Demurrer is Directed to any Pleadings-in-Chief, such as the Declaration, Plea in Bar, or other
Subsequent Pleading, which goes to the Action, the Judgment is Final, that is, if for the plaintiff, quod recuperet;
if for the defendant, quoci eat sine


die.\(^9\) In other words, on Demurrer to any Pleadings which go to the Action, the Judgment for Either Party will,
at Common Law, be the same as upon an Issue of Fact Joined upon the Same Pleading, and found in favor of the
Same Party.\(^9\) At Common Law, in case of a Judgment in favor of the Party Demurring, it was Final against the
Other Party, and disposed of the Action on the Merits. The latter could not Amend his Pleadings and go on with the
Action. But in time the Rule was relaxed. Under Modern Practice and Statutes, generally the Courts will permit
him to Amend. So, likewise, if the Judgment was against the Party Demurring, it was Final at Common Law.\(^9\) In
Modern Practice, however, and under the Statutes, it is otherwise, and he is very generally allowed to Plead Over
on the Merits.

Elect to Stand on Demurrer—

If, the Demurrer of a Party was overruled, and he was still of the opinion that he was correct on his theory of the
Law, he might, as was said, Elect to “stand on his Demurrer,” or refuse to withdraw it and enter a Plea to the
Merits. In such an event his next move was to seek a Review in the Appellate Court on a Writ of Error.\(^9\)

Sec. 201
THE DEMURRER
Ch. 20

has Delirrer has over, an al Rule, the sufimipotent ng term defensision, he tar at ion, ~e oppo

405
~tion on

sill gentad give whole, though appears not put fendant ~tion on and not making nt, and fendant mi the the au-
before iff De;ood as Breach ent for opinion

would am his Breach,
tule was lirlois, it jmax, 23 ween

RI. 509
1 (1873).

406
DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS
Where the Defendant Demurs in Abatement

A Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement and a Demurrer in Abatement should be clearly distinguished. As previously observed the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705), did not apply to Pleas in Abatement, hence as before the Statutes, so, likewise, after the Statutes, a General Demurrer was sufficient to reach a Defect in Form in a Plea in Abatement.° And, as previously observed, the Judgment on a Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement was not Final. But where a defendant entered a Demurrer, and Assigned as Ground of his Demurrer, Matter which ought to have been Pleadcd in Abatement, the Court gave a Final Judgment.9° Contrary to the case of a Demurrer to a Plea in Abatement, in which case the Judgment is not Final, the Judgment on a Demurrer in Abatement is Final,°° as a Demurrer cannot partake of the character of a Plea in Abatement.'

Effect of Judgment on Demurrer—Res Judicata

In those instances where, as observed, a Final Judgment is Rendered on a Demurrer, it is as Conclusive of the Facts confessed by the Demurrer as a Verdict finding the same Facts would have been, since they are established, in both cases, by Matter of Record. The Judgment in such case operates as an be implied, such as leave to Plead Over. Bennett v. Union Cent. Life Ins. Co., 203 111. 430, 67 N.E. 971 (1903).

On the Effect of an Overruled Demurrer, not wiU’ drawn, as an Admission of the Facts, see Cutler v. Wrigfl, 22 N.Y. 472 (1800).


Estoppel, and Facts thus established can never afterwards be contested between the same Parties, or those in Privity with them, in another Suit.° If, therefore, on a Demurrer to a Declaration, Judgment is Rendered for the defendant, the plaintiff can never afterwards maintain against the same defendant, or those in Privity with him, any similar action upon the same Grounds as were disclosed in the First Declaration, unless such Judgment result from the Omission of an Essential Allegation. In the latter instance the Judgment would be No Bar to a Second Action supplying the Missing Allegation; nor is it a Bar, where the Action is misconceived, to an Action afterwards brought in proper form. The Ground upon which the Estoppel rests, in these instances, is a determination of the Merits of the Action, which, by Reason of the Admitted Facts shown upon the Record, the Unsuccessful Party is precluded from again bringing into question. And the result confirms the view that one of the Fundamental Functions of Pleading is to Preserve a Record of a Controversy once Litigated, in order to serve as a basis of a Plea of Res Judicata, and thus prevent the Relitigation of a Cause once settled.

STATUS OF THE DEMURRER—UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

202. Under the Modern Reformed Procedure, the Demurrer, as a Procedural Device to test

In general, on the Effect of a Judgment oji Dunluerev as lies Judicata, see:

Articles: Loomis, The Effect of a Decision Sustaining a Demurrer to a Complaint, 9 Yale U. 387 (1900); Von Moschzisker, Iles Judicatn, 33 Ink L.J. 299, 318—321 (1029).


See, also, the following cases: Illinois: Vanlanding’ ham v. Ryan, 17 Ill. 23 (1855); Indiana: Wilsou v. Ray, 24 Ind. 150 (1865); FederaL: Bissell v. Spring valley Twp., 124 U.S. 225, 8 S.Ct. 495, 81 LEd. 411 (1888); Cf. Indiana: Stevens v. Dunbar, 1 machf. (md.) 56 (1820); Massachusetts: Wilbur v. Gilmore, 21 Pick. (Mass) 250 (1838).

THE DEMURRER
the Formal and Substantive Qualities of a pleading, has been abolished in some States, and replaced by the Motion, in lieu thereof. It seems doubtful whether the Change has been one other than in the name used to describe the Procedural Device by which an Objecting Party may Assert his Right to Refuse to Answer.

In some States, under Modern Codes, Practice Acts, and Rules of Court, the Demurrer has been abolished, but in lieu thereof the same Defects, formerly available on Demurrer, may generally be reached by Motion.

Thus, in New Jersey, the Rules provided: Rule 26. “Demurrers Are Abolished. Any Pleading may be struck out on Motion on the Ground that it discloses no Cause of Action, Defense or Counterclaim respectively. The Order made upon such Motion is Appealable after Final Judgment. In lieu of a Motion to Strike Out, the same Objection, and any Point of Law (other than a question of Pleading and Practice) may be raised in the Answering Pleadings, and may be disposed of at, or after, the Trial; but the Court, on Motion of either Party, may determine the question so raised before Trial, and if the Decision be decisive of the whole case the Court may give Judgment for the Successful Party or make such order as may be Just.”

Rule 27 provided: “Objections to Pleadings other than those provided for in Rule 26 above, shall be Made by Motion. The Action of the Court thereon is appealable after Final Judgment.”

Rule 28 provided: “Every Motion addressed to a Pleading must present every Cause of Objection then existing.” How effective this Reform was is clearly seen in Savage v. Public Service Ry. Co., in which the plaintiff in a cause for personal injuries alleged that, as a passenger while standing on the rear platform of the car, about to enter the body of the said car, she was suddenly jerked from her feet and thrown to the floor of the car “by the negligent operation thereof.” After the Pleadings were completed, and the case came on for Trial, on the basis of a Reserved Right, the defendant Moved to Strike Out the Complaint on the Ground that the Complaint disclosed no Cause of Action; in that a General Allegation of Negligence was Insufficient. The Motion was sustained. Judgment was entered, whereupon the defendant Appealed. After adverting to the abolition of the Demurrer by the provisions as set out above, the Court then proceeded with the discussion of the Issue as to whether a General Allegation of Negligence was good as against the Motion. Chief Justice Gummere declared: “The question upon which the determination of this Appeal depends is whether the Complaint could have been successfully attacked by a General Demurrer, upon the Ground that it disclosed no Cause of Action; and we think that it must be answered in the can the :hem, iDe Ren can same any were such an tance Icon dLt ion; sconht in fi the letter'hich, upon prestion. I one ing is once of a t the dine, test euiur.

istain J. 387 Ic L.J.
A defendant may be permitted to Answer Over on the Merits after a Motion is denied. Anserge v. Kane, 244 N.Y. 395, 155 N.E. 683 (1927).

In general, on the abolition of the Demurrer, see:


ndingson v. ipring

d. 411 lackf.

Imere.


5. 95 N.J.L. 432, 113 Atl. 252 (1921).

negative. In the case of Central Railroad Co. v. Van Horn, 38 N.J.L. 133, 138, the defendant interposed a Demurrer to the Second Count of a Declaration, which showed merely that the plaintiff was in one of the cars of the defendant company under a duty by it to carry her safely, and while there that she was, ‘through the negligence, carelessness and misdirection of the defendant and its agents and servants, thrown from and under the coaches of the said defendant.’ It was held by the Supreme Court that, although this Averment was so uncertain and insufficient in detail as to afford the defendant little, if any, information as to what the Specific Act of Negligence was, or what agency of the company was responsible for it, it was clearly good on a General Demurrer, the Defect being one of Form and not of Substance. In Breese ‘s’. Trenton Horse Railroad Co., 52 Id. 250, 253, a Count which stated in General Terms that by the careless management of the car in a public street by the agents of the defendant it thereby ran over the body and arm of the plaintiff, was held good on a General Demurrer. In Race v. Easton and Amboy Railroad Co., 62 Id. 536, a Count in a Declaration simply Averring, in effect, that by reason of the negligent and improper running of defendant’s railroad train, and blowing of the whistle on its locomotive, a horse which was being driven on the highway by the plaintiff became frightened and overturned the wagon, and that plaintiff was thereby thrown out

and injured, although not specific enough for a proper Pleading was permitted to stand as against a General Demurrer. Ferguson v. Western Union Telegraph Co., 64 Id. 222, is to the same effect. In Minnuci v. Philadelphia and Reading Railroad Co., 68 Id. 432, it was declared that an Averment in a Declaration which stated that the plaintiff’s Injuries were caused solely by the negligence of the defendant, without more, although it did not fulfill the requirement of the Rule of Pleading that the certainty of the Statement of the Plaintiff’s Case must be such as in a reasonable measure to apprise the Defendant of the case to be made against him, was good on General Demurrer.”

From the foregoing, it would seem clear that in New Jersey the abolition of the Demurrer, in effect, was in name only.6

The Federal Solution of the Problem

THE New Federal System,7 provides for the abolition of the Demurrer, and the Statement of All Defenses in Law or Fact in the Responsive Pleading, where one is required. It also permits certain Defenses to be raised by Motion, which may be heard and determined in advance of Trial, or the Court may order the hearing and determination of the Motion deferred until the Trial.

Additionally, under the Federal Rules,8 where a party contends that the opposing pleading has failed to state a claim upon which relief can be granted, matter outside the pleading may be presented to and considered by the Court, and in such event the Motion will be treated as one for Summary Judgment.
Effect of Reform Summarized

WHAT, one may well ask, has been accomplished in the states by substituting the Motion in lieu of the Demurrer? At first glance, it may appear that this change has been quite sweeping in its effect, whereas, in fact, it is more of a change in Form than in Substance, because in order to determine the Scope of the substituted Motion, it is necessary to understand the Scope of the Demurrer, as it exists and operates at Common Law. Thus, if it be asked, what kind of Motions do we have, the answer is, the

408 DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS


:omthe first has

~sine t is the

om~ind the

Sec. 202

same kind of Motions as we had Demurrers at Common Law, or General Motions reaching Substantive Defects, and Special Motions reaching Defects in Form. If it is asked, what does a Motion Admit, the answer is, it Admits substantially the Same Facts as were formerly Admitted by a Demurrer. If the question is, what Defects in Pleading may be reached by a Motion, the reply is, the Same Defects which, at Common Law, were available upon General or Special Demurrer. If it is inquired, how far does a Motion Open up the Record, the answer is, back to the Declaration or Complaint, just as the Demurrer did; and finally, if it be asked, what Exceptions are there to the General Rule as to the Retrospective Effect of the Motion, the answer is, the Same as at Common Law, in so far as those Exceptions are susceptible of application to a Code System of Pleading which ordinarily does not extend beyond the Replication Stage.

It thus appears that, except for the change in nomenclature, or the substitution of the name “Motion” in place of the name “Demurrer”, and except for the fact that a Motion may come up f or Argument on five days notice, whereas a Demurrer came up for Argument on twenty days notice, there is in general no substantial difference between the Motion and the Demurrer, and it may be questioned whether sufficient gain has been registered to justify the change, with its resultant confusion and litigation.

THE DEMURRER 409

Li. 20

 tatto such

~ the :ainst

clear ?De

~ for tate

~ the Lired.

~ised eternay
CHAPTER 21
PLEAS—DILATORY'

The Nature of Dilatory Pleas.
The Order of Dilatory Pleas.
Pleas to the Jurisdiction.
Pleas in Abatement.
Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties Plaintiff in Contract.
Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties Defendant in Contract.
Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties in Actions Ex Delicto.
Requisites of Pleas in Abatement.
Pleas in Suspension.
Judgment on Dilatory Pleas.
Formal Commencement and Conclusion.
Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

THE NATURE OF DILATORY PLEAS

203. Dilatory Pleas are those which do not Answer the General Right of the plaintiff, either by Denial or in Confession and Avoidance, but assert Matter tending to defeat the Particular Action by resisting the plaintiff’s

1. In general, on the subject of Dilatory Pleas, see:

Treatises:
1 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, c. XXVII, Of Pleas to the Jurisdiction (London, 1824).

Comments: Nul Tiel Corporation, A Plea in Bar, 27 W.Va.L.Q. 355 (1021); Parties—Joinder of Defendants In Tort Actions, 18 Mich.Litv. 708 (1920);

Present Right of Recovery; they may be divided into three classes;
(I) Pleas to the Jurisdiction and Venue;
(II) Pleas in Abatement;
(III) Pleas in Suspension.

IF the defendant does not Demur to the plaintiff’s Declaration, his only alternative is to seek to dispute the alleged liability by some Form of Plea. Pleas are separated into Two Classes: first, Dilatory Pleas, or Pleas which seek to prevent a Final Judgment on the merits; second, Peremptory Pleas, or Pleas more popularly known as Pleas in Bar, which seek to bring about a Final Judgment on the merits.


Annotation: Forts of Pleading Necessary to Raise Issue of Corporate Thâstenee, 55 ALa. 510 (1928).


3. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. VI, Of Pleas to the Jurisdiction, and in Abatement, and the Proceedings Thereon, 441 (13th Am. ed Springfield, 1859).
PLEAS—DILATORY

Dilatory Pleas, with which we are concerned in this Chapter, may be divided into Three Classes: first, Pleas to the Jurisdiction and Venue of the Court; second, Pleas in Suspension of the Action; and third, Pleas in Abatement. Dilatory Pleas have sometimes been referred to by the generic name of Pleas in Abatement, but this term is more properly used to designate one of the classes into which Pleas of a Dilatory Nature are divided.

The general effect of these Dilatory Pleas is to suspend or terminate the particular Suit, but to leave the cause undetermined on its merits. And this was on the basis that there was an objection to the Action grounded on principles of Remedial Law as opposed to Substantive Law. And it was necessary that they be Plead before Pleas in Bar, which dispose of the Action entirely. Objections to the Jurisdiction of the Court, the Service of Process, and the Venue, are more favorably regarded than Pleas in Abatement proper; they do not have to be Verified by Affidavit, nor give the plaintiff a better Writ, and they may be Amended like Pleas in Bar. A mistake in the Formal Prayer for Relief in a Plea in Abatement is fatal to the Plea.

At Common Law, Pleas of every description were required to follow a certain order.


Though a Plea to the Jurisdiction is not properly a Plea in Abatement, like such a Plea, it should state what Court has Jurisdiction. Minch & Eisenbrey Co. v. Cram, 138 Md. 122, 110 A. 204 (1920).

In an Action of Trover the defendant’s Plea to the Jurisdiction on the ground that it was a foreign corporation without a place of business or agent in the state was not within the reason discouraging Dilatory Pleas, or one going merely to a Question of Venue within the State. Bank of Bristol v. Ash-worth, 122 Va. 170, 94 S.E. 469 (1917).


Thus, Dilatory Pleas had to be Plead before Pleas in Bar, and even as between the different Dilatory Pleas, a certain order was required. A Plea to the Jurisdiction of the Person must be taken before the defendant Demurs, Moves, or Offers any other Plea, or he will submit himself to the Jurisdiction of the Court.

TILE ORDER OF DILATORY PLEAS

204. Dilatory Pleas must be Plead before any others. Matters of Defense, which tend only to delay or defeat the particular Suit, without destroying the plaintiff’s Right to Sue, must be presented Before Pleading to the Merits of the Action; the order of Pleading Dilatory Objections is in general as followsl

(I) Pleas to the Jurisdiction;

(II) Pleas in Abatement on Account of the Disability of the Plaintiff;

(III) Pleas in Abatement on Account of the Disability of the Defendant;

(IV) Pleas in Abatement for Defect of Parties;
Pleas in Abatement for Pendency of Another Action.

THE Law has prescribed and settled the Order of Pleading which the defendant should pursue, and although, in some respects, the division has been objected to as more subtle than useful, the arrangement given above is still adhered to? as will be seen from the Chart set forth on page 412:

6. See the opinion of Chief Justice Bolt in Longuville v. Inhabitants of Thistleworth, 2 Ld.Raym. 969, 92 EngRep. 146 (1703); Co.Litt. 303a (Phladelphia, 1853).

This Rule can have no application in Code Pleading, as all defenses are to be covered by the answer, save • the objections specified for the use of a Demurrer.

In Equity Pleading, however, the analogy is plain, and a logical sequence of Pleas and Answers according to their object is, to a certain extent, still maintained.

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

ORDER IN WHICH PLAYS MUST BE PLEADED

DILATORY PLEAS—

1. To the Jurisdiction of the Court
   1 Of Plaintiff.

2. To the Disability of the Person: [2: Of Defendant

3. To the Count or Declaration.

4. To the Writ:
   (1. To the Form of the Writ:

   2. To the Action of the Writ.

   1.

   0

For Matter Apparent

on the Face of it.

For Matter differing the Writ.

PEREMPTORY PLEAS—To the Action itself, b-i Bar thereof.


The Order, as set out in the Chart above, has been said to be the Natural Order, since each Subsequent Plea admits that there is no foundation for the Preceding Plea, and precludes the defendant from afterwards availing himself of the Matter, as will be seen if the Order be inverted. A Plea to the Count or Declaration thus admits the Jurisdiction of the Court, and the ability of the plaintiff to sue mid the defendant to be sued; and, after a Plea in Bar to the Action, the defendant cannot Plead in Abatement, unless for New Matter arising after the Commencement of the Action.'

7. Comy; Dig. “Abatement”, C. 2, 3, 1, 23, 24 (Len-don, 1822); Massachusetts: Carlisle v. Weston, 21 Pick, (Mass.) 537, (1839); New York: Palmer v. Everson, 2 Cow. (N.Y.) 417 (1828); Pennsylvania:
   Potter v. McCoy, 2 Pa. 458 (1856); Federal:
   D’Wolt v. Rabaud, 1 Pet. 476, 7 LEd. 227 (1828);

Plea in Abatement and In Bar cannot be headed together. Putnam Lumber Co. v. Ellis-Young Co., 50 Pta. 251, 80 So. 193 (1905).

PLEAS TO THE JURISDICTION

205. A Plea to the Jurisdiction is one by which the defendant excepts to the Authority and Power of the Court to entertain the Action, either for Lack of Jurisdiction of the Subject-Matter, or for Lack of Jurisdiction of
the Person of the Defendant.

**Definition and Classification**

A Plea to the Jurisdiction asserts, by Way of Denial, that a Specific Court has no Jurisdiction to try the Cause of Action presented by the plaintiff.

In this connection, it is important to keep in mind that Courts are either of General or of Limited Jurisdiction. The first Type of Courts have Cognizance over all Transitory Actions, wherever the Cause of Action may have accrued, as All Actions of that kind generally follow the person of the defendant. The latter have Jurisdiction only over Causes of Action arising within Certain Local Limits. Courts of General Jurisdiction have

8. No fact necessary to confer Jurisdiction upon these Inferior Courts will be presumed, but everything must appear upon the Record. Clark v. Norton, 6 Minn. 412 ((311. 277) (1861). But see, Illinois:

Renney v. Oree, 13111. 432,54 Am.Dec. 439 (1851);

Sec. 205

PLEAS—DILATORY

no authority to try cases of a Local Nature arising in a Foreign Country or in any place where the Process of the Court cannot run.

Pleas to the Jurisdiction of the Court were either one of Two Descriptions: first, that the person of the Party making the Plea was not subject to the Court’s Jurisdiction; second, that the Cause of Action was not subject to the Court’s Jurisdiction. These will now be discussed.

(I) *Plea that the Court Has No Jurisdiction Over the Party Defendant.*—Pleas of this character were limited in number, and frequently consisted in a right of the defendant to be exempted from liability to be sued in the Specific Court, as he was privileged to be exclusively sued in some other Court. The conclusion of such Pleas indicates that they should be Classed with Pleas to the Jurisdiction, but some authorities have Classed them with Pleas in Abatement to the person of the defendant. According to Martin, “Pleas challenging the right of the plaintiff to sue on account of any disability are not properly classed with Pleas to the Jurisdiction but more properly belong to a certain Class of Pleas in Abatement yet to be considered.

(II) *Plea that the Court Has No Jurisdiction Over the Subject-Matter of the Action.*


(1846); Federal: Sheppard v. Graves, 14 How. (U.S.) 505, 14 L.Ed. 518 (1852).


—Pleas of this character were, according to Martin, three in number:

* First, what may be determined privilege of tenure, under which fall Pleas of Ancient Demesne, a species of privileged tenure Cognimbile only in the Court of the Manor of which the land sued for was held. This type of Plea has no application in the United States.

Second, Causes of Action arising out of the Local Limits of the Court’s Jurisdiction, as in Counties Palatine or other Inferior Courts of Local Jurisdiction.

* Third, want of power in the Court to take Jurisdiction over the Subject-Matter of the Action. When the Nature of
the Action is such that the Court is under no circumstances competent to try, the objection may be, but need not necessarily be raised by a Plea to the Jurisdiction. If the Court is totally without power to take Cognizance of the Subject-Matter, the Cause may be dismissed on Motion, or without Motion, ex officio, for the whole proceeding would be coram non judice [in presence of a person not a Judge] and utterly void.

Requirements of Pleas to the Jurisdiction

THE general Common-Law Rule was that Pleas to the Jurisdiction were Pleaded in Person and not by an Attorney. In Mostyn v. Fabrigas, it was held that such a Plea should indicate another Jurisdiction in which the Action could be brought. Only Half Defenses were required, Formal Commencements were omitted, and such Pleas were concluded to the Cognizance of the Court by Praying Judgment, if the Court would take further Cognizance of the Action. Pleas to the Jurisdiction, except such as denied Jurisdiction over the Subject-Matter of the Action under any circumstances, were required to be Pleaded first in order, for if the Pleader raises any other question which the Court must of necessity pass upon, he admits the Jurisdiction, and cannot afterwards be heard to deny it. This does not apply, of course, where the Court has No Jurisdiction of the Subject-Matter. In such a case, it cannot acquire Jurisdiction either by consent or waiver, and the objection of Want of Jurisdiction may be raised at any time. If the Action was brought in a Court of Limited Jurisdiction, every Fact essential to sustain the Jurisdiction had to be stated in the Declaration; it would not be aided by presumptions.

Defensive Pleadings

WHERE the Action was brought in a Court of Limited Jurisdiction, if the Facts necessary to show Jurisdiction, did not appear, such Defect could be reached by Demurrer. But the Rule was to the contrary in Courts of General Jurisdiction. In the latter case, the Jurisdiction was presumed, unless perchance the Declaration showed on its face that the Action arose in some Exclusive Jurisdiction, in which case a Demurrer was available. If, however, no
Fact appeared in the Declaration which operated to rebut the Presumed Jurisdiction, the objection could be raised only by Plea, and such Plea, in order to measure up to the requirements of Good Pleading, was required to Negative Every Fact from which Jurisdiction might be presumed. 24

Defects in the Service of Process, not Apparent on the Face of the Record or the Return of Service, should be raised by a Plea to the Jurisdiction of the Person, as, for example, where the Return of the Service is to be contradicted. 25 If the defendant wishes to object that the Court has not acquired Jurisdiction of his Person, owing to some Defect in the Service of the Summons, he should Appear in Person and not by Attorney. 26

25. Willard v. Zehr, 215 Ill. 148, 74 N.E. 107 (1905); Creer v. Young, 120 Ill. 184, 11 N.E. 167 (1887).

2. A Plea to the Jurisdiction of the person must be
Plead in person and not by Attorney. If Plead by an Attorney, it amounts to a Submission to the Jurisdiction of the Court. Illinois: Mineral Point Co. v. Keep, 22 Ill. 0, 74 Am.Dec. 124 (1859); Nispel v. Western Union II. Co., 64 Ill. 311 (1872); Pratt v. Harris, 295 111. 504, 129 N.E. 277 (1920); Virginia: Culpeper Nat. Bank v. Tidewater Imp. Co., Inc., 119 Va, 73, 89 SE. 118 (1916), held that a Plea to the Jurisdiction of the person by a corporation must be by an Attorney; West Virginia: Davidson v. Watts, 111 Va. 394, 69 8.11. 328 (1910). When we consider the tendency of the times is toward simple, efficient and common sense that the Dilatory Plea is loaded down with technicalities, the reason for which, and the usefulness
Sec. 205

PLEAS—DILATORY

and restrict his Appearance to the sole purpose of raising this objection; otherwise he waives it.

The Distinction Between Pleas to the Jurisdiction and Pleas in Abatement

ACCORDING to Martin, Pleas to the Jurisdiction differed from Pleas in Abatement, in the following respects:

First, in being always Plead in Person;

second, in always requiring Half Defense, while some Pleas in Abatement were said to be good with Full Defense; and

Third, in Fraying Judgment, if the Court will take further Cognizance of the Action.

In other respects, says Martin, in that they abated the Writ or Action, they were essentially the same. 27 Some authorities have classed Pleas to the Jurisdiction with Pleas in Abatement, while others have treated them under both heads.

FORM OF PLEA TO THE JURISDICTION

AND VENUE

George T. Sidwell filed his Plea in person as follows: 28

“State of Illinois, County of Vermilion—ss.;
In the Circuit Court—

Ella Sandusky

v.

George H. Sidwell &
George P. Sidwell,
Gen. No. 11901.
May Term, A.D. 1897.
of which, has long since departed, should we not do well to abolish it altogether and substitute therefor the Preliminary Motion?" Moreland, The Plea to the Jurisdiction, 3 Va.L.Reg. (N.S.) 249, 256 (1917).


~8. See Sandusky v. Sidwell, 73 Ill. App. 491 (1897), aff’d in 173 Ill. 493, 50 N.E. 1003 (1898), in which the Plaintiff Demurred to the Plea in Abatement and

Kaiser & Heppy Corn. Law Pldg. HG—15

"AND the said George T. Sidwell, one of the defendants in the above entitled cause, for the sole purpose of pleading to the Jurisdiction of the said court, comes and says that this court ought not to have or take further cognizance of the said action, because the supposed cause or causes of action, and each and every one of them, arose in the county of Cook, in said state of Illinois, and not within the said county of Vermilion, and that the said action is not a local action, and that both he and his codefendant, George H. Sidwell, at the time said suit was begun, and at all times since, have resided in said county of Cook, and not within the said county of Vermilion; that process was served on the said George H. Sidwell while he was on a public railroad train, passing through the said county of Vermilion, and not within the said county of Cook, where he resides, and was served on this defendant in the said county of Cook, and not within the said county of Vermilion; and this the said defendant is ready to verify.

"Wherefore he prays judgment whether this court can or will take further cognizance of this action. George T. Sidwell,"

"State of Illinois, County of Cook—ss.:

"George T. Sidwell, being first duly sworn, says that the foregoing Plea, by him subscribed, and the statements therein made, are true.

George T. Sidwell

"Subscribed and sworn to before me this 17th day of May, A.D. 1897.

"[Seal.] Robert Jeffrey, Notary Public."


therefore admitted that he did not Commence the Action where the defendant resided. The Court ordered the Writ of Summons quashed and dismissed the Suit. See Sherburne v. Hyde, 185 Ill. 582, 57 N.E. 770 (1900).

416 DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS Cii. 21

PLEAS IN ABATEMENT

206, A Plea in Abatement is one that shows some ground for Abating or Defeating the Particular Action, without destroying the Right of Action itself. Matters in Abatement include:

(I) Wrong Venue or Place of Trial;

(II) The Personal Disability of one of the Parties to sue or be sued;

(iii) That the Action is Prematurely Brought;

(IV) The Pendency of Another Action for the same cause;

(V) Misnomer;

(Vi) Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Parties.

The Situation Which Called for the Use of five Plea in Abatement WHERE a defendant, on examination of the plaintiff’s Declaration, perceives no ground for objecting to the
Jurisdiction of the Court, but finds that matters exist by reason of which, though the Cause of Action is not affected, the present Suit cannot be maintained, he should Plead in Abatement.  

Definition and Effect

PLEAS in Abatement are variously defined, depending upon their respective Classifications, but, broadly speaking, include all such Pleas as seek to defeat a Specific Action, yet merely delay or prevent the enforcement of the Right of Action. By way of contrast, Pleas in Bar seek to bring about a Final Judgment on the merits on the Right of Action.

29. A Plea In Abatement has been defined by Martin as follows: “By a Plea In Abatement the defendant shows Matter to the Court why he should not be Impleaded or Sued; or if Impleaded, not in the manner and form employed by the plaintiff; and praying that the Writ or Plaint may Abate.” Martin, Cis’II Proceedings at Common Law, c. X, Defences by Way of Dilatory Pleas, Art. IV, Pleas in Abatement, 210 (St. Pail, 1905), citing Jacob, Dictionary, Abatement I. (London 2809); Comyn, Dig., “Abatement,” B. 1 (London, 1822).

3. As to the nature and effect of, and the necessity for, Pleas In Abatement, see Piths Sons 1Mg. Co. v. Commercial flat, Bank, 121111, 582, 13 N.E. 156 (1887).

a Final Judgment on the merits on the Right of Action.

If sustained, the effect of a Plea in Abatement is not to dispose of the Right of Action, either entirely, nor even as far as the Particular Court is concerned, as is the case with a Plea to the Jurisdiction; nor, on the other hand, is it merely to temporarily Suspend the Action, as is the case with a Plea in Suspension; but its effect, as observed above, is to defeat entirely that Particular Action, leaving the plaintiff free, however, to assert his Right of Action in Another Suit, and in the Same Court. It is sometimes said that the Plea merely tends to delay the Action, but this is inaccurate. It entirely defeats the Particular Action, but it merely delays the enforcement of the Right of Action, which, thereafter, may again be prosecuted, avoiding the Defect which led to the demise of the Particular Original Action.

Classification of Pleas in Abatement

IN any event the Writ, on which the plaintiff’s Cause of Action was grounded, was Abatable by a Plea formally attacking its sufficiency, or by a Plea to the Person suing or to the Person sued, showing that No Writ should have been issued in favor of the plaintiff or against the defendant. In accordance with this broad view, Picas in Abatement were classified as follows:

First, Pleas relating to the Writ, as to the Form of It and to the Action of It; ~

Second, Pleas relating to the Count or DecJration;

Third, Pleas relating either to the Disability of the Person of the Plaintiff or the Person of the Defendant.

31. 1 Chitty, Oa Pleading, c. VI, Of Pleas to the Jurisdiction, and In Abatement, and the Proceedings Thereon, 450—454 (13th Am. ed., Springfield, 1859);


See. 206

PleaS—DILATORY

If ground for Abating the Action Appears on the Face of the Declaration or Record, a Plea in Abatement is not necessary, for the objection may be raised by Demurrer or Motion to Quash; but if the matter does not so Appear, and Extrinsic Facts are necessary to be shown, a Plea in Abatement is essential.  

(1) Pleas in Abatement to the Original Writ or Ell.—According to Stephen, a Plea in Abatement of the Writ was one which showed some ground for Abating or Quashing the Original Writ, and made a Prayer to that effect. Any Matters of Fact tending to impeach the correctness of the Original Writ, that is, to show that it was improperly framed or sued out, without, at the same time, tending to deny the Right of Action itself, constituted sufficient ground for Abating the Writ. Such a Plea might be as to the Form of the Writ or to the Action of it.
Thus, for example, if there was a Variance between the Charge contained in the Original Writ and the Charge appearing in the Declaration, that discrepancy showed that the Original Writ was not properly adapted to the Action, and it was, therefore, a ground for Abatement.

And where the Writ appeared to have been sued out pending another Action already brought for the Same Cause, if it nam

Thus, any defect in the Writ, its service or return, which is apparent from an Inspection of the Record, may properly be taken advantage of by Motion; but where the Objection is founded upon extrinsic facts, or outside of the record, as that the defendant was exempt from service, the Matter must be Plead in Abatement, so that an Issue may be made thereon, and tried, if desired, by a Jury, like any other Issue of Fact. Creer v. Young, 120 111. 184, 11 N.E. 167 (1857).


The objection that there was a Variance between the Original Writ and the Declaration was conditioned upon obtaining Oyer of the Writ. This Form of Objection, however, came into question when, during the reigns of George II (1727—1760) and George III (1760—1820), the Courts of Common Pleas and King’s Bench adopted a Rule under which Oyer of the Original Writ was denied. The practical effect of this was to abolish Pleas in Abatement grounded on a Variance between the Original Writ and the Declaration. All other Pleas in Abatement, which could not be Verified without benefit of Oyer of the Original Writ, were also necessarily abolished, but this Rule had no application to Actions Commenced by Bill.

After this development, Pleas of this character, according to Chitty, were termed Pleas in Abatement rather from their effect upon the Writ than from any direct attack upon it, as under the early Common Law Rule. Martin points out that where the Declaration, which was presumed to correspond with the Original Writ, was incorrect as to some Extrinsic Matter, it then became possible for the defendant to Plead in Abatement to the Writ through the medium of the Declaration.

As to the Form of the Writ, Pleas in Abatement were grounded principally on Misnom


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

As to the Action of the Writ, the principal grounds for a Plea in Abatement were that the Action had been prematurely brought, that Another Action was pending for the Same Cause, in the same Court, or in any other Superior Court, or that there has been a Misconception of the Cause of Action. ti, however, such Misconception was Apparent on the Face of the Declaration, it might also be taken advantage of by a Demurrer, and if not Apparent
on the Face of the Declaration, under a Plea of the General Issue.45

(U) Pleas in Abatement to the Count or Declaration.—A Plea in Abatement to the Count or Declaration is one which is founded on some Defect applying immediately to the Declaration, and only by indirect consequences affecting the Original Writ. Under the early Common Law, many matters might be Plead in Abatement of the Count or Declaration in Actions begun by an Original Writ. The basis of Pleas of this character was principally some Defect, Informality or Mistake appearing in the Recital of the Writ in the Declaration, which was deemed essential in all cases, or upon a Variance between the Writ as recited and the Count or Declaration, Such Pleas, therefore, although they were primarily directed against the Count or Declaration, and were denominated as Pleas to the Count or Declaration, indirectly referred to the Original Writ as recited therein.41

41. Ibid.
42. Ibid.
43. Ibid.

On a Plea in Abatement on the Ground of a Variance between the summons, which, in our country, took the place of the Original Writ, and the Declaration, see; Illinois: Snell v. Stanley, 63 Ill. 891 (1872); West Virginia: Anderson v. Lewis, 64 W. Va. 297, 61 S.E. 160 (1908).

In 1654 the Court of Common Pleas adopted a Rule of Court, ordering that Declarations in Actions on the Case, and upon General Statutes, except for Debt, should no longer recite the Original Writ, but only the Nature of the Action.42 As a result of this development, Pleas in Abatement founded on what appeared only in the recital in the Writ, were abolished. The objection of a variance between the Writ and the Declaration could not thereafter be taken advantage of except by obtaining Oyer of the Original Writ.43 And when, by later Rule of Court, Oyer of the Original Writ was denied, Pleas in Abatement on the ground of a Variance between the Original Writ and the Count or Declaration, disappeared. But for some time thereafter, it was possible to plead in Abatement to the Writ through the medium of the Declaration.44

(III) Pleas in Abatement to the Disability of the Person of the Plaintiff.—A Plea in Abatement to the Disability of the Person of the plaintiff or defendant was one which showed some personal legal disability in one of the Two Parties to Sue or Be Sued.45 As to the plaintiff, such Pleas originally largely consisted of Pleas denying the existence of the plaintiff as a Person, setting up his Disability to Sue by reason of his being an alien in amity, or in enmity, his outlawry upon Mesne or Final Process, his Attainder for Felony or Treason, his Infancy when appearing otherwise than by Guardian or Next Friend, or his death.46 When a female plaintiff sued otherwise than as a co-plaintiff with her husband, her Coverture was available in Abatement.47

44. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c.
Defences by Way of Dilatory Pleas, Art. IV, Pleas in Abatement, § 252, Pleas in Abatement to the Writ or Bill, 212 (St. Paul, 1905).
45. Id. at 210.
Sec. 206

PLEAS—DILATORY

Friend, or his death.45 When a female plaintiff sued otherwise than as a co-plaintiff with her husband, her Coverture was available in Abatement.47

(IV) Pleas in Abatement to the Disability of the Person of the Defendant.—As to the defendant, Pleas in Abatement included such Pleas as Coverture and Infancy.

The Defense of Coverture did not amount to a Denial of the Liability of the defendant on the Cause of Action involved, which might be opposed by a Plea in Bar; it merely questioned her liability to be Sued without the Joinder
of her husband.\textsuperscript{48}

Anciently, Infancy was Pleadable in Suspension in certain Real Actions. This was also true in Debt, when the infant was Sued as heir on the Specialty or Sealed Obligation of his ancestor, in which case it was held that the Parol might Demur, that is, that the Pleadings might be Stayed until he had attained his full age.\textsuperscript{49} Such right, however, never extended to an infant devisee, and in the year 1830, it was completely abolished by Section 10 of Chapter 47 of the Statute of 1 Wm. W, 70 Statutes at Large 295 (18\textsuperscript{3}0).

Finally, with respect to these Pleas to the Person, it should be observed that they do not fall strictly within the Scope of Pleas in Abatement, for they do not Pray “that the Writ be Quashed,” but Pray Judgment “if


\textsuperscript{47} Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. X, Defences by Way of Dilatory Pleas, Art. iv, Pleas in Abatement, 249 Pleas in Abatement on Account of Disability of the Person of the Plaintiff, 211 (St. Paul, 1905).


\textsuperscript{48} Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. 1t, Defences by Way of Dilatory Pleas, § 250, Pleas In Abatement on Account of the Disability of the Person of the Defendant, 211 (St. Paul, 1905).

the plaintiff ought to be answered.” However, as such Pleas offer an Objection of Form rather than Substance, and do not deny the Right of Action itself, they are considered in the Nature of Pleas of Abatement, and classed among them.

As stated before, the effect of all Pleas in Abatement, if successful, is that the Particular Action is defeated, but the Right of Action itself is not gone; and the plaintiff, on obtaining a Better Form of Writ, may maintain a New Action, if the Objection was Grounded on Matter of Abatement; or, if the Objection were to the Disability of the Person, he may bring a New Action when that disability is removed, according to Stephen.\textsuperscript{50}

\textbf{FORM OF PLEA IN ABATEMENT—ANOTUER ACTION PErqinwG}

\textbf{THE CIRCUIT COURT OF COOK COUNTY The October Term, AD. 1926}

\textbf{AS.}

\textbf{vs.}

\textbf{C.D.}

And the said C.D., defendant in the above-mentioned action, by X.Y., his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and prays Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration, because he says that before the commencement of this action, to wit, on the day of A.D. 19\textsuperscript{-}, the plaintiff impleaded the defendant in the court of county, in

the state of in a certain Plea of Trespass on the Case in Assumpsit for the same promises set forth and declared upon in the Declaration in the present action, as by the record thereof in the court last aforesaid more fully appears. And the defendant further says that the parties in this

\textsuperscript{50} A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading In Civil Actions, e. I, Of the Proceedings In an Action, from its Commencement to its Termination, ST (3d Am. ed., by Tyler, Washington, P. C., 1900).

\textbf{DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS}

and in the said former action are the same, and that the former action is still pending and undetermined in the court last aforesaid. And this he is ready to verify. Wherefore, inasmuch as the said former action is still pending and undetermined, he, the defendant, prays Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration, and that the same may be quashed.
The Grounds of Abatement Under Modern Law

AS the Original Writ has not been adopted as such in the United States, it is not proper to speak of a Plea in Abatement “of the Writ.” It is a Plea in Abatement “of the Action.” A Plea that an Action is brought in the Wrong County or the Wrong District, is generally regarded as Matter of Abatement and does not go to the Jurisdiction of the Court. 51

As we have no Original Writs, the Modern Grounds for Abatement of an Action are much more limited than they were formerly, and they have been further limited in most States by Statute,

The principal Grounds of Abatement under Modern Law are: That the Action is prematurely brought; ~ the Pendency of An-


A Plea in Abatement, claiming the defendant’s privilege not to be Sued Out of the County where she resided or might be found, was held good in the ease of Gemmill r. Smith 274 Dl. 87, 113 N.E. 27 (1916).

And a plea in Abatement setting up the defendant’s right to be Sued in the County of his residence, other than that in which the Action is Pending, should specifically Aver where the Cause of Action accrued. Williams v. Peninsular Grocery Co., 73 Ple. 937, 75 S. 517 (1917). See, Roberts v. American Nat. Assur. Co., 201 Mo.App. 239, 212 S.W. 390 (2919).

42. Archibald v. Argall, 53 Ill. 307 (1870); Palmer v. Gardiner, 77 Ill. 143 (1875); Grand Lodge Brotherhood of Railroad Trainmen v. Randolph, 186 Ill. 89, 57 N.E. 882 (1900), which involves a failure to exhaust the remedies provided In the Contract.

other Action for the Same Cause;” some Disability Incapacitating the Plaintiff from Suing; ~ the fact that the plaintiff or one

That an extension of time has been given after the maturity of a Debt cannot be Plead in Bar, but only in Abatement. Pitts Sons 311g. Co. v. Comniercial Nat. Bank, 121 Ill. 582, 13 N.E. 150 (1887).

That a Debt is not yet due has been held to be a Plea in Bar which should be shown under the General Issue rather than under a Plea is Abatement. Palmer v. Cardiner, 77 111. 143 (1875) Bacon v. Schepflin, 185 Ill. 122, 56 N.E. 1123 (1900).


But the pendency of an Action in another State is not ground for Plea in Abatement. English: Manic v.

Smith v. Lathrop, 44 Pa. 326, 84 Am.Dec. 448 (1863);

The Other Action must have been pending when the Present Action was brought, and this must appear in the Plea, or it will be uncertain. Another Action afterwards Commenced cannot be Plead in Abatement. Illinois: Carriclc v. Chamberlain, 07 Ill. 620 (1881); Consolidated Coal Co. of St. Louis v. Oeltjen, 150 Ill. 85, 59 N.E. 000 (1901); Massachusetts: Newell v. Newton, 10 Pick. (Mass.) 470 (1830); Moore v. Spiegel, 143 Mass. 413, 0 N.E. 827 (1887); New York: Nieholl v. Mason, 21 Wend. (N.Y.) 239 (1839).

A Plea of a prior Action pending must Allegre: (1) Pendency at the time the Present Action was brought; (2) That it is still pending at the time of the Plea; (3) Identity of the Cause of Action and Parties; (4) The Court in which the prior Action is pending (same state); and (5) A reference to the Record of the prior Action. I’olsey v. Wlate Rose
64. Infancy of the plaintiff suing in its own name, and not by guardian or next friend. Massachusetts: Smith v. Carney, 127 Mass. 179 (1879); New York: Schemerhorn v. Jenkins, 7 Johns. (N.Y.) 373 (1811).

PLEAS—DILATORY

of several plaintiffs was a fictitious person, or dead, when the action was brought; or the death of a sole plaintiff, or one of several plaintiffs, since the action was commenced, unless, as is generally the case, it is provided by statute that his personal representatives or heirs, as the case may be, may be substituted as plaintiff; where one of several persons jointly entitled sues alone, instead of jointly with the other parties in interest; or where the plaintiff or defendant is misnamed; or where several per-

But infancy is not a dilatory plea, if it goes to the liability or foundation of the action. Greer v. Wheeler, 1 Seam. (2 Ill.) 554 (1839).

Marriage of a feme sole plaintiff since the commencement of the action, whether she is suing in her own right, or as executrix or administratrix. Swan v. Wilkinson, 14 Mass. 295 (1817).

That the appointment of a guardian suing for an infant was void. Conkey v. Kingman, 24 Pick. (Mass.) 115 (1839).

That the plaintiff is insane and does not sue by his guardian. Chicago & P. I. Co. v. Manger, 78 Ill. 300 (1875); Sec. Isle v. Cranby, 190 Ill. 39, 64 N.E. 1065, 64 L.R.A. 513 (1902).


66. Stoetzoll y. Fullerton, 44 III. 108 (1807); Mills Bland’s Ex’rs, 70 Ill. 381 (1875).


sons should be joined as defendants, and some of them are omitted; or where persons are joined as defendants who should not be joined; or where a married woman is sued as a feme sole, when it is not permitted by statute.66

“Under the head of pleas to the person may also be included coverture, in the plaintiff or defendant; or that the plaintiffs or defendants, suing or being sued as husband and wife, are not married; or any other plea for want of proper parties, as that there is an executor, administrator, or other person, not named, who ought to be made a coplaintiff or co-defendant. We have already seen, that if an action be brought for a tort, by one of several joint tenants or tenants in common, or against one of several partners, upon a joint contract, the defendant must plead in abatement, aild cannot otherwise take advantage of the objection.”62

lint the action—vil 1 it ot he Abat el on fl— is groan 1 if the defendant is clearly identified; and, farther than this, under the present practice the
ADAM W. WELLS, "HISTORY OF NEW HAMPSHIRE," 263, 268.

Adams v. Wiggin, 42 N.H. 553 (1861).


Southard v. Hill, 44 Me. 92, 69 Am.Dec. 85 (1857);

Goodhue v. Luce, 82 Me. 222, 19 A. 440 (1880);


40. Lurton v. Cihhiarn, 1 Seam. (Ill. 3) 577, 33 AnLDee 430 (1839); Shufeldt v. Seymour, 21 Ill. 524 (1859);

Town of Harlem v. Emmert, 41 Ill. 319 (1860); Supreme Lodge A. O. U. W. v. Zahike, 129 Ill. 208, 21 N.E. 789 (1889);


61. Streeter v. Streeter, 43 Ill. 111, 205 (1873).

At Common Law a married woman could Not Sue or Be Sued without her husband being Joined.

AT Common Law there appears to have been some doubt as to the correct method for placing in Issue the Corporate Existence of the Plaintiff. Thus, in the case of Boston Type & Stereotype Foundry v. Spooner, in which the plaintiff brought an Action of Assumpsit, but made no Allegation as to its Incorporation, the defendant Pleaded in Abatement that there never was a person in being called or known by name of Boston Type & Stereotype Foundry, to which the plaintiff interposed a Demurrer, upon which a Judgment of Respondeat Ouster was rendered. The defendant Excepted and the Issue presented was whether the facts set forth in the Plea were the proper subject of a Plea in Abatement.

Before answering this Issue, a few preliminary observations may be helpful. The defendant should not be compelled to answer an Action unless it prosecuted in the name of a person, either Artificial or Natural, against whom he may have a Judgment, and an Execution. But how is he to Plead to bring this end about? As a General Rule, Matter in Bar cannot be Pleaded in Abatement, but to this Rule there are exceptions. Thus, the Nonjoinder of a Party Plaintiff may be Pleaded in Abatement, or taken advantage of under a Plea of the General Issue, which is a Plea in Bar; and certain personal disabilities which entirely defeat the Suit may be Pleaded in Abatement or in Bar, such as Alien Enemy, Attainder, Felony and Outlawry.

So, in the instant ease, it appears that the defendant’s effort to reach a Lack of the Corporate Existence of the plaintiff was a proper subject for either a Plea in Abatement or Bar; that is, the Plea might be directed to the disability of a plaintiff, denying his existence, showing that there was no such person in rerum natura, as that at the Commencement of the Suit he was a Fictitious Person, or he may have Plead the Same Matter in Bar. It follows, therefore, that the position of the Counsel for the plaintiff in the instant case, that the defendant could only avail himself of this Defense by Plea in Bar, is erroneous. And the objection that the defendant could not give a Better Writ is met by the fact that the Rule requiring the defendant to give the plaintiff a Better Writ has no application where a plaintiff, as in this case, cannot have a Better Writ, as there was no such person in existence.

Notwithstanding the above observations, there are two views as to whether the Corporate Existence of a Corporation was in Issue under a Plea of the General Issue. The generally accepted view was that the Existence of
the Corporation was not put in issue by a Plea of the General Issue. This appears to be the better view, as the function of the General Issue was to deny Material Allegations of Fact in the plaintiff’s Declaration. If the Corporate Existence of the plaintiff were put in Issue the General Issue would be placing in Issue a Question of Law, as the Corporate Existence of the plaintiff can only be determined by construing the Charter of Incorporation, and Construction of a written document involves a Question of Law. The General Issue alone, therefore, should operate as an admission of the Corporate Existence of the plaintiff; if it

64. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. fl. Of Pleas to the Jurisdiction, and in Abatement, and the Proceedings Thereon; Doe v. Penfield, 19 Johns. (N.Y.) 308 (1522).


Keohuk & Hamilton Bridge Co. v. Wetzel, 228 III. 253, 81 N.E. 864 (1907), which held that a Plea denying Sec. 207 PLEAS—DILATORY

was desirable to place it in Issue the defendant should Specifically Traverse the Corporate Existence of the plaintiff by use of the Plea of Nul Tie? Corporation.

And the same principles operate where a defendant Pleads the General Issue to an Action brought by an Executor,°° the Authority of the Plaintiff being admitted by the Plea.°°

As we have seen all Matter of a Dilatory Character must be Plead before entering a Plea in Bar, and by a separate Plea limited to the purpose or delaying the Action. Nor was it possible to Plead to the Jurisdiction or in Abatement while Pleading in Bar, or in any manner affecting the Merits of the Cause.°° And, of course, as may be seen from a glance at the chart on the General Order in which Pleas may be Pleaded, it is clear that any Plea, which contains Matter in Bar of the Action, constitutes a Waiver of all Objections to the Jurisdiction of the Court and to the Manner of Framing the Action.°° Thus, a Plea of the General Issue, as we observed in discussing how the Corporate Existence of a Corporation might be placed in Issue, admits the competency of

that the plaintiff is a corporation is a Plea in Bar, but a Plea denying that the defendant is a corporation is a Plea in Abatement.

67. That a Special Plea of Nul Tie? Corporation is necessary to question the Corporate Capacity of the plaintiff, see: 10 Cye. 1355; Inhabitants of Orono v. Wedgewood, 44 Me. 49, 09 Am. Dec. 81 (1857).


60. Ibid. The Objection that the plaintiff is not competent to sue, because not entitled to the character which he asserts, may be raised either by a Plea in Abatement or a Plea in Bar. Nooran v. Bradby, 9 Wall. (U.S.) 304 (1809).

See, also: Massachusetts: Langdon v. Potter, 11 Mass. 312 (1814); New York: Thomas y. Cameron, 10 Wend. (N.Y.) 579 (1837).

70. Florida: Putnam Lumber Co. v. Ellis-Young Co.,

50 Fin. 251, 30 So. 103 (1905); Tennessee: Douglas v. Belcher, 7 Yerg. (Tenn.) 104 (1834).

518 (1852).

the plaintiff to Sue and to Maintain the Action as brought.°°

NONJOINER OR MISJOINER OF PARTY PLAINTIFF IN CONTRACT

207. In Actions Ex Contractu, Misjoinder or Nonjoiner of Plaintiffs may be taken advantage of by Demurrer, Motion in Arrest
of Judgment, or Writ of Error, or, where the Defect is Not Apparent on the Face of the Pleadings, by Plea in Abatement or Motion for a Nonsuit.

THE Rules of the Common Law were strict as to the Persons who should be joined as Parties to the Action. Since the objection for Defect of Parties must sometimes be taken by Plea in Abatement, it is convenient to deal in this chapter with the Rules as to Parties and the consequences of Nonjoinder and Misjoinder, and how the Objection may be raised.

**Nonjoinder of Plaintiffs in Contract**

ALL Joint Contractors, such as Joint Promisees, Covenantants, or Obligees, and all Active Partners, should Join in Suits for Breach of Contract to which they are Parties.  

All Persons who were Partners in a Firm when a Contract was made must be Joined, unless some legal excuse for Not Joining them is alleged, as that a Partner is dead. It is no excuse for Nonjoinder that one of


See, also, Jones & Carson, Nonjoinder and Misjoinder of Parties in Common-Law Actions, 28 w.va.Law Quarterly 197, 266 (1922).

424  

**DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS**

the Partners has sold his interest in a Contract to the others.~

If one of Several Joint Parties die, the character of the interest is still preserved, and the Right of Action must be exercised by the survivors as such, or, if all be dead, by the Personal Representatives of the last survivor, who, though thus excluding the Executors or Administrators of the other deceased Parties from maintaining the Action, is still liable to them in an Equitable Proceeding for the proportionate share belonging to the estate represented by each.

When a person **who ought** to Join as plaintiff is omitted in an Action of Contract, **if** the Defect appears upon the Pleadings, the defendant may Demur, Move in Arrest of Judgment, or bring a Writ of Error. If it does not appear upon the Pleadings, but is disclosed by the evidence, the plaintiff will be Non-suited. It is not necessary to take the Objection by Plea in Abatement, though this may be done.

A Nonjoinder of Joint Contractors as plaintiffs is a fatal error, unless Amended, and may be shown under the General Issue, as well as by Plea in Abatement. But dormant Partners need not be joined.”

**Nonjoinder of Parties Plaintiff on a Joint Bond may be taken advantage of on Appeal**


If a partner be dead, the plaintiff, suing on a firm Contract, must Allege it as an excuse for Not Joining him.

75. Alabama: Murphy’s Admr’s v, Branch Bank at Mobile, 5 Ala. 421 (1843); Massachusetts: Smith v. Franklin, 1 Mass, 480 (1805); Peters v. Davis, 7 Mass. 257 (1811); New York: Bernard v. Wilcox, 2 Johns Cases 874 (1801); Federal: Crocker v. Ecal, 1 Low, 420, Fed.Cas.No.3,396 (1869).


Lasher v. Colton, 225 III. 234, 80 N.E. 222, 8 Ann.
Nonjoinder of Executors or Persons suing in Representative Capacity may be raised only by Plea in Abatement or Special Plea.

Misjoinder of Plaintiffs in Contract

A Misjoinder of Plaintiffs is, unless Amended, fatal, and defendant may take advantage of it at any time. Where plaintiffs sue as Joint Contractors, they must show a Joint Interest. Too few or too many plaintiffs in Contract will be fatal to recovery, and the Objection may be raised either In Abatement or under the General Issue,

Joint Plaintiffs must show a Joint Interest in the Contract.8

NONJOINDER OR MISJOINDER OF PARTIES DEFENDANT IN CONTRACT

208. In actions Lx Contractu, Misjoinder may be open to Demurrer, Motion in Arrest of Judgment, or Writ of Error; or, if Not Apparent on the Face of the Pleadings, by Motion for Nonsuit at the Trial; Nonjoinder only by Plea in Abatement, unless it Appear from the Pleadings of the plaintiff that the Party omitted Jointly Contracted and is still living.

Nonjoinder of Defendants in Contract

ALL persons with whom a Contract is made must be Joined as Defendants in an Action for the Breach. Where Several Persons are Jointly Liable on a Contract, they must all be made defendants. Joint Contractors must be Sued Jointly, except that Jointer may be excused:

(1) Where a co-contractor has died.

(2) Where a co-contractor has become bankrupt.

(3) Where an Action is brought against a firm, and some of the members are nominal or dormant partners.

(4) Where a co-contractor is an infant or a married woman.

(5) Where a co-contractor is Resident Out of the Jurisdiction.

(6) Where a claim is Barred against one or more Joint Debtors, and not Against Others.

The Rule, as laid down by Chitty, is thus stated: “Joint Contractors must all be Sued, although one has become bankrupt, and obtained his certificate, for if Not Sued, the others may Plead in Abatement.”

Nonjoinder of Joint Contractors as Defendants must be Plead in Abatement, unless the Joint Liability appears on the Face of the Plaintiff’s own Pleading.83
It has been held that the fact that plaintiff merely filed the Common Counts with an Affidavit of Claim does not change the Rule requiring a Plea in Abatement, since a Bill of Particulars may be demanded. The General Issue admits that there is no foundation for a Plea of Nonjoinder. 84


Statutes now frequently declare that Contracts in terms Joint shall, in effect, be Joint and Several. Stimson, American Statute Law, 4113 (Boston, 1886-92).

.1 A Nonjoinder of a Joint contractor, as defendant, must be objected to by a Plea in Abatement,

84. It appears that even if the proof shows that the plaintiff loaned the money to A and B jointly, and not Jointly and severally, or to A alone, the Nonjoinder of B ens be taken advantage of only by a Plea In Abatement. Pearce v. Pearce, 67 111. 207 (1873); Ross v. Allen, 67 Ill. 317 (1873); Wilson v. Wilson, 125 Ill.App. 389 (1907).

Where the Declaration shows on its Face a Nonjoinder of Joint Contractors as Defendants, defendant may take advantage of the Nonjoinder by Demurrer, Motion in Arrest, or by Writ of Error, without a Plea in Abatement. There is a presumption that any partner omitted is still living.

A material distinction is to be noted between the case of Nonjoinder of Plaintiffs and Defendants in Actions cx contra cUit, the remedy for Nonjoinder of Defendants being generally restricted to the use of a Plea in Abatement, except in the ease of an express showing by the plaintiff as above indicated, when the defendant may Demur, Move in Arrest of Judgment, or support a Writ of Error. The more liberal rule prevails where the fault is in making too many Parties defendant, though in all cases it is a serious one.

In Actions of Tort, unless the case is one where, in point of Fact and of Law, the Tort could not have been Joint ~ (though even here an Objection would be aided by the plaintiff’s taking a Verdict against one only), the Joinder of More Than are LIABLE constitutes No Objection to a partial recov


86. Whitier, Cases on common-Law Pleading, 00-i; See, Burgess v. Abbott & Ely, 11101 (N.Y.) 476 (1811).


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 21
Misjoinder is open to attack by Demurrer, Motion in Arrest of Judgment, or on Writ of Error, if Apparent on the Face of the Record.\textsuperscript{92}


90. Even if it appear from the Pleadings that the Tort was Jointly committed by the defendant and another person. See Rose v. Oliver, 2 John. (N.Y.) 365 (1807).

91. Weallt v. King, 12 (1810). See Pozzi v, Eng.Rep. 1106 (1538), red to; Connecticut: 194 (1819); Vermont:

\textsuperscript{90} Am.Dec. 538 (1854).

Law Pleading, 613.

01. Illinois: supreme Lodge A. O. U. W. v. Zuhike,

129 Ill. 298, 21 N.E. 789 (1889); Powell Co. v. Finn,

198 Ill. 567, 64 N.E. 1036 (1002); Hamilton v.

\textbf{FORM OF PLEA IN ABATEMENT—NONJOINER OF PARTIES DEFENDANT}

THE CIRCUIT COURT OF COOK COUNTY

The October Term, AD. 1926

A.B.

\textbf{vs.}

C.D.

AND the said C.D., defendant in the above-mentioned action, by \textit{X.Y.}, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and prays Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration, because he says that the said several supposed promises and Undertakings in the said Declaration mentioned, if any such were made, were, and each one of them was, made jointly with one G.M., who is still living, to wit, at \textit{...} and within the jurisdiction of this court, and not by the said defendant alone. And this the defendant is ready to verify. Wherefore, inasmuch as the said G.M. is not named in the said Writ together with the defendant, \textit{he}, the defendant, prays Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration, and that the same may be quashed.

\textit{X.Y.}

[The signature of Counsel]

(Add Affidavit of the truth in substance)

\textsuperscript{01} SHIPMAN, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, c. XVI, Dilatory Pleas, § 232 Forms of Pleas in Abatement, 403 (3d ed. by BallantIne, St. Paul, 1923).

\textbf{NONJOINer 011 MISJOINER OF PARTIES IN ACTIONS LX DELICTO}

209. The Objection of Nonjoiner of Plaintiffs in an Action of Tort can be taken only by Plea in Abatement. In Actions for the recovery of property, Nonjoiner of Parties Plaintiff may be shown under the General


\textsuperscript{05} C. Jones and Leo Carlin, 28 SVVaLQ 266. See Harris v. Worth, 78 W.Va. 76, 79, 88 S.F. 603, 1 A. \textit{LIZ. 356} (1916).

East 452, 104 Eng.Rep. 176

Shipton, S Ad. & Ji. 663, 112

and the decisions there refer\textsuperscript{S}

Walcott v. Canfield, 3 Cons,

Wright v. Geer, 6 Vt. 151, 27

Whittier, Cases on Common
issue. If there is a Misjoinder of Parties plaintiff in Tort, this is a fatal error. Misjoinder of Defendants in Actions Upon a Joint Tort is no ground of Objection in any Mode by those properly made Defendants.

Non joinder of Plaintiffs in Tort Gives Rise to a Plea in Abatement

THE proper plaintiffs in a tort Action for injuries to property are MI the Joint Owners; but where the remedy seeks the recovery of Damages, and not the Specific Thing, the Nonjoinder of one or more of the Joint Owners can only be taken advantage of to defeat the Action by Plea of Abatement.”

If a Plea in Abatement is not interposed to prevent the severance of the Joint Cause of Action in Tort, the plaintiff may recover according to his proportionate interest in the property, and the other Joint Owners Not Joined may afterwards sue and recover their proportion of the whole Damages.⁴

Misjoinder of Plaintiffs in Tort

A Misjoinder of plaintiffs in Tort, as well as in Contract, is ground for Nonsuit on the Trial,⁵ It has been held that married women must sue alone for personal injuries. Hus

93. Illinois: Chicago II. I. & P. R. Co. v. Todd, 91 Ill. 70 (1878); Johnson v. Richardson, 17 Ill. 302, 63 Am.Dec. 809 (1855); Edwards v. 1111, 11 Ill. 22 (1849).


91. See, Johnson v. Richardson, 17 Ill. 302, 63 Am. Dec. 869 (1855). In Ejectment, if one of the plaintiffs has No Title, no recovery can be had by the other plaintiff, even if be have Title. Murphy v. Ocr, 32 Ill. 459 (1863).

⁵ Whittier, Cases on Common Law Pleading, 612;
Illinois: City of Chicago v. Speer, 66 Ill. 154 (1872); Massachusetts: Gerry ‘cc Gerry, 11 Gray (Mass.) 381 (1855), band and wife sue together only when there is a Joint Interest.⁶ But at Common Law a married woman could not sue or be sued without having her husband Joined with her as a Party, and this is still the Rule in Some States.

Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Defendants in Tort

A Nonjoinder or Misjoinder of Joint Tortfeasors as Defendants is no error. “Several persons acting independently, but causing together a single injury, may be Sued either Jointly or Severally) and the injured party may, at his Election, sue any of them Separately, or he may sue All or Any Number of them Jointly. If he sues all, he may, at any time before Judgment, dismiss as to either or any of the defendants, and proceed as to the others”.⁷

The legal nature of a Tort is such that it may generally be treated as either Joint or Several, and all the wrongdoers are liable individually and collectively for the consequences of their acts, and all may be sued Jointly, or Any Number Less Than the Whole, or each may be sued Separately. Each is liable for himself, as the entire Damage sustained was thus occasioned, each sanctioning the acts of the others, so that, by suing one alone, he is not charged beyond his just proportion. It seems, however, that No Joint Action can be maintained for a Joint Slander, though it is difficult to see, upon principle, why one uniting with another in an agreement that the slanderous words should be spoken should not be as much liable as any one of several trespassers where the actual blow was given by one alone. Defendants in Actions cx delicto can generally

⁶ Cooper v. Cooper, 79 Ill. 57 (1875); Cljieago, B. & Q. B. Co. v. Dickson, 67 Ill. 122 (1873).
BEQUISITES OF PLEAS IN ABATEMENT

210. Pleas in Abatement must be certain and must give the plaintiff a Better Writ or ThU. in Pleading a Mistake of Form in Abatement, the defendant must not only Point Out the Plaintiff’s Error, but Must Show Him How it May he Corrected, thus enabling him to avoid the same mistake in Another Suit regarding the Same Cause of Action.

AS Pleas in Abatement do not deny and yet tend to delay the Trial of the Merits of the Action, great accuracy and precision are required in framing them. They should be certain to every intent, and must, in general, give the plaintiff a Better Writ by so correcting the mistake objected to as to enable the plaintiff to avoid a repetition of it in Fornning his New Writ or Bill.’ Thus, if a

Misnomer in the Christian name of the defendant be Pleaded in Abatement, the defendant must in such Plea show what his true Christian name is, This requirement of this Rule has often been made the test by which to distinguish whether a given matter should be Pleaded in Abatement or in Bar, The latter Plea, as impugning the Right of Action altogether, can, of course, give No Better Writ, as its effect is to deny that, under any Form of Writ, the plaintiff should recover in such Action. If, therefore, a Better Writ can be given, it shows that the Plea should be in Abatement, and not in Bar,

matter in Abatement set up in a Plea in Bar can not be considered in Abatement.

In an Action on a Promissory Note the defendant Pleaded in Bar, not denying that he owed the note, but suggesting that it was not yet due. A Demurrer to the Plea was sustained, and, on the defendant’s Election to stand by the Plea, Final Judgment was Entered against him. This was held proper, as the matter was in Abatement, arid could

This Rule is not recognized save at Common Law, unless in Abatement not being used in Code or Equity Pleading.


PLEAS IN SUSPENSION

211. A Plea in Suspension of the Action is one which shows some Ground for Not Proceeding in the Suit at the present time, and Prays that the Pleading may be Stayed until that Ground be Removed.


FORM OF PLEA IN SUSPENSION— PAROL DEMURRER
THE CIRCUIT COURT OF COOK COUNTY The October Term, A.D. 1926

A.B.

vs.

C.D.


430

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

AND the said C. D., defendant in the above-mentioned action, by EL F., who is admitted by the court here as guardian of the said defendant, who is an infant under the age of twenty-one years, to defend for him, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and says that he the said defendant is within the age of twenty-one years, to wit, of the age of years, to wit, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid. And this he is ready to verify. Wherefore he does not conceive that during his minority the said defendant ought to answer the plaintiff in his said Plea. And he prays that the parol may demur until the full age of him, the said defendant.

E.F.

[The signature of the Guardian]

SHIPMAN, Handbook of Common-Law
Pleading, c. XVI, Dilatory Pleas, § 232
Forms of Pleas in Abatement, 402
(3d ed. by Ballantine, St. Paul, 1923).

JUDGMENT ON DILATORY PLEAS

212. If a Demurrer is sustained to a Plea to the Jurisdiction or to a Plea in Abatement, the Judgment is Respondeat Ouster, and the defendant may Plead to the Action, If an Issue of Fact is joined, and the Jury find against the defendant, they assess damages for the plaintiff. If an Issue either of Law or Fact, upon a Plea in Abatement, is found for the defendant, the Judgment is that the Writ be Quashed.

WHERE a Plea to the Jurisdiction or a Plea in Abatement is found in favor of the defendant upon either an Issue of Fact or Law, the Judgment was that the Writ or Bill, as the case might be, should be Abated or Quashed. If the Plaintiff prevailed upon a Demurrer to the Plea, the Judgment was Interlocutory in Character, that is, Respondeat Ouster, or let the defendant answer over. Where an Issue of Fact was joined, and it was found in favor of the plaintiff, that is, that the defendant’s Plea was false, a Final Judgment was immediately awarded in his favor on the merits. The purpose of this Rule, obviously, was to discourage False Dilatory Pleas, and it made it possible for the plaintiff in this single instance to Win on the Merits, without a Trial of the Issues raised in the Declaration. In no other instance may a party Win on the Merits on a Dilatory Plea?

FORMAL COMMENCEMENT AND CONCLUSION

213. Dilatory Pleas must be Framed with Great Strictness and with a Formal Conclusion.

WI-tETHER a Plea is in Abatement or in Bar is to be determined, not from the Subject-Matter of the Plea, but from its Form,— its Conclusion. The Prayer of the Plea—the

8. Upon clotermination, of Iss.,ts or Fact raised by I’leas in Abatement, when found in favor of the plaintiff, Judgment should be Quod flecuperet and defendant will not be given an opportunity to Plead to the Merits. Florida: Bispob v. Camp, 39 Fin. 517, 22 South. 735 (1597); Illinois: Grcer v. Young, 120 III. 184, 100, 11 N.E. 187 (1887); Paterson Oonst, Co. v. First State Bank of Thebes, 133 III.App.
advantage or relief sought—determines its character. “It would be both illogical and absurd, in a Plea in Bar, to Pray, as in a Plea in Abatement to the Count or Declaration, ‘Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration, and that the same may be Quashed’; and, as only the relief asked can be awarded, a mistake in this regard is fatal to the Plea. And hence the Rule that a Plea beginning in Bar and ending in Abatement is in Abatement, and, though beginning in Abatement and ending in Bar, is in Bar; so a Plea beginning and ending in Abatement is in Abatement, though its Subject-Matter be in Bar, and a Plea beginning and ending in Bar is in Bar, though its Subject-Matter is in Abatement. (Comyns’ Digest, title “Abatement”, b. 2.) With respect to all Dilatory Pleas, the Rule requiring them to be framed with the utmost strictness and exactness is founded in wisdom. It says to the defendant: ‘If you will not address yourself to the justness and merits of the plaintiff’s demand, and appeal to the Forms of Law, you shall be judged by the strict Letter of the Law.’ And so it has been held that a Plea in Abatement concluding, ‘wherefore he Prays Judgment if the said plaintiff ought to have or maintain his aforesaid Action against him,’ etc. (a Conclusion in Bar), is bad.”

Plea in Bar do not require the same degree of certainty as a Plea in Abatement, for being addressed to the justness of the plaintiff’s claim, they are favored by the Courts. Certainty to a common intent, therefore, is all that is required. A Plea in Abatement containing a wrong Prayer is bad, but it has been held that the Conclusion or Prayer of a Plea in Bar is not material; that “there is a distinction between a Plea in Bar and a Plea in Abatement,—in the former the Party

may have a right Judgment upon a wrong Prayer, but not in the latter.”

A Plea to the Jurisdiction usually commences without any prayer for judgment.” Its Conclusion is as follows: the said C. D. Prays Judgment if the Court will or ought to have further Cognizance of the Suit; or, in some cases, the defendant Prays Judgment “whether lie ought to be compelled to answer.”

A Plea in Suspension seems also to be in general Pleadted without a Formal Commencement. Its Conclusion, in the case of a Plea of Nonage, is that the Parol shall Demur, or the proceedings be stayed, until the defendant comes of Full Age.

A Plea in Abatement founded on matter extrinsic to the Writ is also usually Plead-

1 ThU. The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, e. XXVII, Of Pleas to the Jurisdiction and Pleas in Abatement, 58&—580 (Philadelphia, 1807), contains a discussion of Judgments on a Plea in Abatement

See t13′s & Waterson v. Hunter Erwin & Co., 20 Ohio 382, 387 (1851), note:’I. The Judgment on a Plea in Abatement is either (1) that the Writ or Declaratio quashed (canet er breve, nOz&to) (2) Respondeat Ouster; and (3) Final (quil, ‘ecupcrant). Judgment is rendered either (1) without Issue taken on the Plea; or (2) With Issue. Isses are either (1) Issues in Law or (2) Issues in Fact.

II. Issues on Pleas in Abatement are either (1) such as must be tried by the Court; or (2-~ such as may be tried either by the Court or Jury. The kind or form of Judgment, rendered on n-, Issue upon a Plea In Abatement, depends upon the question whether the Issue ho found (1) for the plaintiff, and against the Plea; or (2) for the def,.dant, and In Favor of the Pica.”

Sec. 213

PLEAS—DILATORY

431

15. 1 Chitty, On Pleading, e. VI, Of Pleas to the Sn. risdielion, and in Abatement, and the Proceeding Thereon, 484 (Springfield, 1833).


482

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

ed without a Formal Commencement, within the meaning of this Rule.10 The conclusion is thus: In case of Plea to the Writ or Bill.

Prays Judgment of the said Writ and Declaration [or Bill], and that the same may be Quashed” ; “In case of Plea to the Person, .. Prays Judgment if the said LB. ought to be answered to his said Declaration.” ~

STATUS UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

214. In some states Pleas in Abatement have been abolished, and defects formerly available on such a Plea are reached either by a Motion or by an Answer in the Nature of a Plea in Abatement. In England

AT Common Law there was no requirement as to Verification of either Pleas to the Jurisdiction or Pleas in Abatement. But the Statute of 4 Anne, c. 16, § 11, 11 Statutes at Large 157 (1705) provided that “no Dilatory Plea shall be received in any Court of Record, unless the Party offering such Plea, do, by Affidavit,9 prove the truth thereof, or show some probable matter to the Court to induce them to believe that the Fact of such Dilatory Plea is true.” The Affidavit as to Truth required by this Statute might be made by the defendant himself, or by a third person; and as the Statute required only probable cause, there was no necessity for an Affidavit, where the Plea was for Matter Apparent.

And in 1SS3, by the Statute of 3 & 4 Wm. lv, c. 42, § 8, 73 Statutes at Large 275, it was provided that no Plea in Abatement for


12. That a Plea In Abatement must be sworn to, and that a defective affidavit cannot be amended, see Spencer v. Aetna Indemnity Co., 281 Ill. 82, 88 N.E. 102 (1907).

the Nonjoinder of any Person as a Co-defendant should be permitted, unless it appeared from the Plea that such Person Resided Within the Jurisdiction, and that his residence was set out in the Affidavit Verifying the Plea. Section 9, of the Same Statute, allowed a Discharge in Bankruptcy to be Plead in Reply to a Plea of the Nonjoinder of Another Person. And by Section 11 of the Same Statute, Pleas in Abatement for Misnomer were abolished in all Personal Actions. The remedy substituted was by Summons to require the plaintiff to Amend his Declaration by inserting the correct name, supported by an Affidavit.

Pleas in Abatement for the Misjoinder and Nonjoinder could be responded to by amendment under the Common Law Procedure Act of 1852.20

Under Sections 135 to 142 of the Same Statute, the effect of Abatement, as well as the liability to Abate by reason of Bankruptcy, Death and Marriage, were relieved against by provisions under which the Suit might be continued, in all cases in which the Cause of Action survived against or for the benefit of others.
In the Several States of the United States

THE Statute of Anne, c. 16, § 11, 11 Statutes at Large 157 (1705), which required Verification of Dilatory Pleas, was considered as effective in the Several States of the United States. Otherwise, for most part, the law governing such Pleas in this country followed the lines laid down at Common Law. But after the 1848 Code of Procedure in New York, the situation was affected by Statutory Changes. In Some States Pleas in Abatement were completely abolished, and defects formerly available on such a Plea were reached either by a Motion or by an Answer in the Nature of a Plea in Abatement.

CHAPTER 22
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

Sec.
216. The Various Forms of Traverse or Denial.
217. The General Requisites of Traverse.
218. Materiality of the Traverse.
219. Selection of Issuable Proposition.
220. Denial of the Essentials Only.
221. Negatives and Affirmatives Pregnant.
222. The Specific or Common Traverse.
223. The Special Traverse.
226. Giving Color.
227. Pleadings in Estoppel.
228. Admission by Failure to Deny.
229. Protestation.
231. Pleas Amounting to the General Issue.
232. Partial Defenses.
233. A Pleading Bad in Part is Bad Altogether.
234. Several Defenses.
235. Duplicity in Pleas—In General.
237. Duplicity—Matter Ill Plead.
238. Duplicity—Matters Forming a Connected Proposition.
239. Duplicity—Protestation.
240. What Defenses May be Shown Under the General Issue and What May or Must be Pleaded Specially.
242. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trespass.
244. The General Issue in Trespass on the Case.
245. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trespass on the Case.
248. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Trover.
250. The General Issue in Ejectment.
251. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Ejectment.
252. The General Issue in Detinue.
253. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Detinue.
255. The General Issue in Replevin.
256. The Special Traverse in Replevin.
DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Sec.
257. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Replevin.
258. The General Issue in Debt on Simple Contracts and Statutes.
259. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Debt on Simple Contracts and Statutes.
261. The General Issue in Debt on a Specialty.
262. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Debt on a Specialty.
263. The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the General Issue in Debt on a Specialty.
264. The General Issue in Debt on Judgments.
265. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Debt on Judgments.
266. The General Issue in Covenant.
267. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Covenant.
268. The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the General Issue in Covenant.
269. The General Issue in Special Assumpsit.
270. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in Special Assumpsit.
272. The General Issue in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit.
273. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit.
274. The Hilary Rules—Their Effect Upon the Scope of the General Issue in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit.
275. Comparison of Scope of Different General Issues.
277. Plea Puis Darrein Continuance.
278. Recoupment and Set-Off.

THE GENERAL NATURE OF PLEAS IN BAR

215. If the Declaration is sufficient both in Substance and in Form, so that neither a Dilatory Plea nor a Demurrer will lie, the defendant must Plead in Bar, and his Pleading must be either:

(I) By Way of Traverse

(II) By Way of Confession and Avoidance

(III) By Way of Estoppel

Methods of Pleading in Bar

ASSUMING that the plaintiff has stated a good Cause of Action in his Declaration, and the defendant desires neither to avail himself of any of the Dilatory Pleas, nor to Demur, he must interpose a Plea in Bar, which may be any one of Three Forms of Plea:

First, he may meet the plaintiff’s alleged Cause of Action by Traversing or Denying some or all of the Material Allegations of Fact stated in the Declaration; this he might do by Pleading the General Issue, which generally denied all the Material Allegations in the plaintiff’s alleged Cause of Action; he might plead a Common or Specific Traverse, which was a Denial of a Material Fact in the pleader’s own language; or he might plead a Special Traverse, which was an Indirect Denial of a Material Allegation; Second, he may meet the plaintiff’s Declaration by admitting the Truth of the Facts stated therein, and then alleging a new combination of Facts or Events, to which a Rule of Substantive Law attaches the consequence of Non-Liability; such a Plea, known as a Plea in Confession and Avoidance, might be either in Discharge or in Justification and Excuse; Third, the defendant, without either Admitting or Denying the Facts alleged, may set up New Facts which operate to prevent the plaintiff from sustaining the Allegations.

Sec. 216
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

435

contained in the plaintiff’s Declaration. Thus, to summarize, the defendant may meet an Alleged Cause in a Declaration by Pleading One of Three Forms of Traverse; by Pleading in Confession and Avoidance in Justification, in Excuse, or in Discharge; or by Pleading by Way of Estoppel.

Special Pleas—The Different Varieties

PLEAS other than General Issues are ordinarily distinguished from them by the name of Special Pleas; and when resort is had to these a Party is said to Plead Specially, as contrasted with Pleading the General Issue. The Issues produced upon Special Pleas, as being usually more specific and particular than those of Not Guilty, etc., are sometimes described as Special Issues, as contrasted with what were called General Issues; the latter term having been afterward applied, not only to the Issues, but to the Pleas which tendered and produced them. Thus, instead of Pleading the General Issue, the defendant, in certain cases, may effectually answer the Declaration by interposing a Special Plea which creates a Specific Issue. Such an Issue was raised by a Common or Specific Traverse denying some one Material Allegation in the Declaration upon which the Right of Action depends. Many Special Pleas in Bar, however, Admit the Truth of the Plaintiff’s Allegations, but allege New or Affirmative Matter in avoidance of their legal operation. One type of Special Plea, alleging Matter of Estoppel, neither con fesses nor denies the truth of the Declaration, though like other Pleas in Bar, It sets up Matter which defeats the Right of Action. Recoupment and Set-Off assert cross-claims due from the plaintiff to the defendant.

It is generally improper to set up a Defense by a Special Plea which can be shown under the General Issue. But in many cases the defendant may be at liberty to show specially to the Court matters of defense, not merely consisting in a denial, but introductory of new matter, such as coverture or infancy. Although these may be admissible under the General Issue, yet being matter of justification or excuse, it is convenient to set forth the particular facts relied on as a defense in a Special Plea, which will apprise the Court and the adverse party of the circumstances and nature of the defense, and keep the Facts and the Law distinct.

Pleas which set up no new affirmative matter, but which merely set up evidential facts inconsistent with the plaintiff’s prima facie case, are said to be argumentative denials and improper. But there is a peculiar species of plea, known as a Special Traverse, which is an exception to the rule.

THE VARIOUS FORMS OF TRAVERSE OR DENIAL

216. The different Forms of Traverse or Denial may be classified as:

(I) The Specific or Common Traverse (II) The Special Traverse
(III) The General Traverse, including
(A) The General Issue
(B) The Replication De Injuria
A Traverse concludes with a Tender of Issue.

AS previously pointed out, Pleas are of Two General Classes, viz., Dilatory Pleas; and Peremptory Pleas, or Pleas in Bar. Pleas in Bar are said to be either in Denial, that is, by Way of Traverse—or by Way of Confession and Avoidance of the Action—or by Way of Estoppel. It will be seen, however, that under the General Issue, Defenses may sometimes be raised of the sort raised by a Plea in Confession and Avoidance, as well as those raised by a Traverse. And of Traverses there are four sorts: First, the Specific or Common Traverse; Second, the Special Traverse; Third, the General Traverse, which includes the General Issue and the Replication De Injuria. The latter form of the General Traverse will be discussed in the next Chapter.

Where an Allegation is Traversed or Denied, it is evident that a question is at once raised between the Parties; and it is a Question of Fact, namely, whether the facts in the Declaration or other Pleading, as the case may be, which the Traverse denies, are true. A question being thus raised, or in other words, the Parties having arrived at a specific point, where matter was affirmed on one side and denied on the other, the party interposing the Traverse is generally obliged to offer or refer this question to some Mode of Trial, or as it is said, to Tender Issue. This he does by annexing to the Traverse an appropriate formula, as for instance: “And of this he puts himself upon the
country," thus proposing a Trial by the country—that is, by a Jury. If the Tender of Issue be accepted by the other Party, the Parties were at issue on a Question of Fact, and the question itself was called the "Issue." A Tender of an Issue of Fact was and is accepted by what is called a "Joinder in Issue," or "Similiter," which consisted of a Form which read thus: "And the said A, as to the Plea of the said B, above Plead, and whereof he has put himself upon the country, doth the like."

As we have seen, the Tender of an Issue in Law, by Demurrer, is necessarily accepted by the other Party, but this is not true of the Tender of an Issue in Fact. An Issue of Fact need not necessarily be accepted, for the other Party may consider the Traverse itself as insufficient in Law. A Traverse, for instance, may, in denying a part only of the Declaration, be so framed as to involve a part that is immaterial or insufficient to decide the action, or the Traverse may be deemed defective in Point of Form, and the other party may object to its Sufficiency in Law on that ground. He, therefore, has a right to Demur to the Traverse as Insufficient in Law, instead of joining in the Issue Tendered.

Ch. 22

With this general statement in mind, the general rules relating to the Traverse may be considered, and then various Forms of Traverse may be considered in order.

THE GENERAL REQUISITES OF TRAVERSE

217. The following General Rules apply to the Traverse, without regard to whether, in Form, it is Common, General, or Special:

(I) The Traverse should generally deny the Opposing Allegation in the Manner and Form in which it is made (modo et forma; i. e. 9xt Manner and Form as alleged”); thus putting the opposite Party to Proof in Manner and Form, as well as in general effect.

(II) A Traverse may be taken upon a Mixed Allegation of Law and Fact, but not upon Matter of Law alone, nor upon matter not alleged. Upon Matter of Fact it must be where the Fact is either Expressly Alleged, or Necessarily Implied from what is alleged.

(III) The Traverse must not involve an Estoppel against the Party Pleading it.

THE different kinds or Forms of Traverse having been previously explained, we shall here take up certain Rules as to the Manner of Pleading Denials.

Form of Denial

IT is customary in a Traverse to deny the Allegation in the Manner and Form in which it is made, and therefore to put the opposite party to prove it to be true in Manner and Form, as well as in general effect. Accordingly, he is often exposed at the Trial to the danger of a Variance by a slight deviation in his evidence from his Allegation. This doctrine of Variance, says Stephen, is founded on the strict quality of the Traverse here stated.” This strictness is so far modified

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

1. Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading
In Civil Actions, - II, Of the Principal Rules of
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

Sec. 217

that it is, in general, sufficient to prove accurately the substance of the Allegation, and a deviation in point of mere Form or in Matter quite Immaterial will be disregarded. The general principle is that the Traverse brings the fact into question, according to the Manner and Form in which it is alleged, and that the opposite Party must consequently prove that, in Substance at least, the Allegation is accurately true. The existence of this principle is indicated by the wording of a Traverse, which, when in the negative, generally denies the last pleading mode et forma [in Manner and Form as alleged]. This will be found to be the case in almost all Traverses, except the General Issue Non Fist Factum, and the Replication de injuria. These words, however, though usual, are said to be in no case strictly essential, so as to render their omission cause of Demurrer.²
It is naturally a consequence of the principle here mentioned that great accuracy and precision in adapting the Allegation to the true state of the Fact are observed in all well-drawn Pleadings; the vigilance of the pleader being always directed to these qualities, in order to prevent any risk of Variance or Failure of Proof at the Trial in the event of a Traverse by the Opposite Party.

*Traverse Not to be Taken on Matter of Law Alone.*

AGAIN, in respect to all Traverses, it is laid down as a Rule that a Traverse must not be taken upon Matter of Law? A Denial of


~ Comyn, Digest, Pleader, 0. 1 (London 1522); Nevill and Cook’s Case, 2 Leon. 5, 74 Eng.Rep. 310 (1589).


*the Law involved in the precedent Pleading*

is, in other words, an exception to the sufficiency of that Pleading in Point of Law, and is therefore within the scope and proper province of a Demurrer, and not of a Traverse. Thus, where, to an Action of Trespass for fishing in plaintiff’s fishery, the defendant Pleaded that the locus in quo was an arm of the sea, in which every subject of the realm had the liberty and privilege of free fishing, and the plaintiff, in his Replication, Traversed that in the said arm of the sea every subject of the realm had the liberty and privilege of free fishing, this was held to be a Traverse of a mere Inference of Law, and therefore bad. Upon the same principle, if a Matter be Alleged in Pleading, “by reason whereof” [vit’tute cujus] a certain legal inference is drawn, as that the plaintiff “became seised,” etc, or the defendant “became liable,” etc, this vit’tute cujus is not Traversable, because, if it be intended to question the Facts from which the seisin or liability is deduced, the Traverse should be applied to the Facts, and to those Only; and, if the legal inference be doubted, the course is to Demur.

*Traverse May be Taken on Allegation of Law and Fact*

BUT, on the other hand, where an Allegation is Mixed of Law and Fact, it may be Traversed. For Example, in answer to an


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 22

Allegation that a man was “taken out of prison by virtue of a certain Writ of Habeas Corpus,” it may be Traversed that he was “taken out of prison by virtue of that Writ.” So, where it was alleged in a Plea that, in consequence of
certain circumstances therein set forth, it belonged to the wardens and commonalty of a certain body corporate to present to a certain church, being vacant, in their turn, being the second turn, and this was answered by a Special Traverse, without this, that it belonged to the said wardens and commonalty to present to the said church, at the second turn, when the same became vacant, etc., in Manner and Form as alleged, the Court held the Traverse good, as not applying to a mere Matter of Law, but to “Matters of Law; or rather Matter of Right (as is this) resulting from Facts.” So, it is held, upon the same principle, that Traverse may be taken upon an Allegation that a certain person obtained a church by simony.\

Traverse Not to be Taken on Matter Not Alleged

It is also a Rule that a Traverse must not be taken upon Matter not alleged. The meaning of this Rule will be sufficiently explained by the following cases: A woman brought an Action of Debt on a deed, by which the defendant obliged himself to pay her 1 200 on demand if he did not take her to wife, and Alleged in her Declaration that, though she had tendered herself to marry the defendant he refused, and married another woman. The defendant Pleaded that, after making the deed, he offered himself to marry the plaintiff, and she refused; absque hoc, “that he refused to take her for his wife before she had refused to take him for her husband.” The Court was of opinion that this Traverse was bad, because there had been no Allegation in the Declaration, “that the defendant had refused before the plaintiff had refused,” and therefore the Traverse went to deny what the plaintiff had not affirmed. The Plea in this case ought to have been in Confession and Avoidance; stating merely the Affirmative Matter, that before the plaintiff offered the defendant offered, and that the plaintiff had refused him, and omitting the absque hoc. Again, in an Action of Debt on Bond against the defendant, as Executrix of J. S., she Pleaded in Abatement that J. S. died intestate, and that Administration was granted to her. On Demurrer it was objected that she should have gone on to Traverse “that she meddled as Executrix before the Administration granted,” because, if she so meddled, she was properly charged as Executrix, notwithstanding the subsequent grant of Letters of Administration. But the Court held the Plea good in that respect; and I-Jolt, C. J., said that, if the defendant had taken such Traverse, it had made her Plea vicious, for it is enough for her to show that the plaintiff’s Writ ought to Abate, which she has done, in showing that she is chargeable only by another name. Then as to the Traverse, that she did not Administer as Executrix before the Letters of Administration were granted, it would be to Traverse what is not Alleged in the plaintiff’s Declaration, which would be against a Rule of Law, that a man shall never Traverse that which the plaintiff has not Alleged in his Declaration.

II. Crosse v, Bunt, cart. 00, 90 Eng.Ilep. 662 (1688).


Sec 215

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

There is, however, the following Exception to this Rule, viz.: That a Traverse may be taken upon Matter which, though not Expressly Alleged, is Necessarily Implied. Thus, in Replevin for taking cattle the defendant made Cognizance that A was seised of the close in question, and, by his command, the defendant took the cattle damage feasant. The plaintiff Pleaded in Bar that he himself was seised of one-third part, and put in his cattle abs
que hoc, “that the said A was sole seised.” On Demurrer, it was objected that this Traverse was taken on Matter not Alleged, the Allegation being that A was seised, not that A was sole seised. But the Court held that in the Allegation of Seisin that of Sole Seisin was Necessarily Implied, and that whatever is Necessarily Implied is Traversable, as much as if it were expressed. Judgment for plaintiff.” The Court, however, observed that in this case the plaintiff was not obliged to Traverse the Sole Seisin, and that the effect of merely Traversing the seisin Mocto et Forma, as alleged, would have been the same on the Trial as that of Traversing the Sole Seisin.

Traverse Involving Estoppel

A TRAVERSE must not involve an Estoppel against the Party using it. An illustration of this Rule appears in an Action on a Deed. A Party to a deed, who Traverses it, must plead Non Est Factum, and should not Plead that he did not grant, did not demise, etc. This Rule seems to depend on the Doctrine of Estoppel. A man is sometimes precluded, in Law, from Alleging or Denying a Fact in consequence of his own previous act,


16. Robinson v. Corbitt, 1 Let. 662, 125 Fog. Rep. 344 (1699); Taylor v. Needham, 2 Taunt. 278, 127 Eng. Rep. 1084 (1810). allocation, or denial to the contrary, and this preclusion is called an “Estoppel.” It may arise either from Matter of Record, from the Deed of the Party, or from Matter in Pais; that is, Matter of Fact.

It is from this Doctrine of Estoppel, apparently, that the Rule as to the mode of Traversing deeds has resulted, for though a Party against whom the deed is alleged may be allowed, consistently with the Doctrine of Estoppel, to say “Non Est Factum,” viz, that the deed is not his, he is, on the other hand, precluded by that doctrine from denying its effect or operation; because, if allowed to say “Non Concessit” or “Non Demisit,” when the instrument purports to grant or to demise, he would be permitted to contradict his own deed. Accordingly, it will be found that in the case of a person not a Party, but a Stranger, to the deed, the Rule is reversed, and the Form of Traverse in that case is “Non Concessit,” etc.; the reason of which seems to be that Estoppels do not hold with respect to strangers.

MATERIALITY OF THE TRAVERSE

215. A Traverse must not be taken on an Immaterial Allegation. This rule prohibits a Traverse;

(I) On Matter that is Irrelevant or Insufficient in Law;

(II) On Matter that is Prematurely alleged;

(III) On Matter of Aggravation;

(IV) On mere Matter of Inducement

THIS rule prohibits a Pleader from Traversing on Matter that is either Irrelevant or Insufficient in Law.

Thus, in Debt for Rent


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

against a lessee for years, if the defendant Plead that before the rent was due he assigned the term to another, of which the plaintiff had notice, a Traverse of the notice would be bad, as producing an Immaterial Issue; for it is not
mere notice of the assignment that discharges the lessee, but the lessor’s consent to the assignment, or his acceptance of rent from the assignee. So in an Action of Debt on a Bond conditioned for the payment of 10 pounds 10 shillings at a certain day, if the defendant should Plead Payment of 10 pounds, a Traverse of such payment would be bad, for, if the whole sum of 10 pounds 10 shillings were not paid, the bond would be forfeited; and the payment of a less sum is wholly immaterial. The plaintiff in such case should Demur. So, where, to an Action of Trespass for Assault and Battery, the defendant Plead a Judgment was recovered, and Execution issued thereupon against a third person, and that the plaintiff, to rescue that person’s goods from the Execution, assaulted the bailiffs, and that in aid of the Bailiffs, and by their command, the defendant mollitis mantis imposuit upon the plaintiff, to prevent his rescue of the goods, it was holden that a Traverse of the Command of the Bailiffs was bad; for, even without their Command, the defendant might lawfully interfere to prevent a rescue, which is a breach of the peace.

The Rule also prohibits a Pleader from Traversing on Matter which, though not Immaterial to the case, is prematurely alleged.


Thus, If, in Debt on Bond, the plaintiff should declare that, at the time of sealing and delivery, the defendant was of Full Age, the defendant should not Traverse this, because it was not necessary to allege it in the Declaration; though, if in fact he was a minor, this would be a good subject for a Plea of Infancy, to which the plaintiff might then well reply the same matter, viz, that he was Of Age.

Again, this Rule prohibits the taking of a Traverse on Matter of Aggravation; that is, matter which only tends to increase the amount of Damages, and does not concern the Right of Action itself. Thus, in Trespass for Chasing Sheep, per quod the sheep died, the dying of the sheep, being Aggravation only, is not Traversable.

And where Matter of Inducement is sb leged, which is not essential to the substance of the case, but only explanatory of the main Allegations, a Denial would be unriecessary. It is otherwise, however, when such matter is not merely explanatory. If essential, though in the Nature of Inducement, it may still be Traversed.


24. 5 Bacon, New Abridgment, Pleas and Pleading, 11.

5, 586 (Philadelphia, 184a); Spaeth v Hare, 0 Mees. & W. 326, 1~2 Eng.Rep. 138 (1842). Thus, in an Action of Debt against executors, they pleaded a Judgment recovered, and that there were no assets in their hands beyond what was sufficient to satisfy the said Judgment. The plaintiff replied that the Judgment was satisfied, but kept on foot by fraud sari covin. The defendants traversed that the Judgment was satisfied, and this was considered a bad traverse, because to allege that it was satisfied was only Inducement to the Allegation that it was kept on foot by fraud and covin. This was the main point, and this should have been the subject of the traverse. Comyrt, Digest, Pleader, G. 14 (London 1822); The Protector v. Bolt, tlandres 68, 145 Log. Rep. 385 (1856).

25. Rimeraly v. Cooper, Cro.E11z. 168, 78 Lng.Rop. 426 (1589); Carvike v Blagravo, 1 Brod. & 13. 531, 129 Eng.Rep. 827 (1819). Thus, where the plaintiff declared, in Trespass on the Case for slander, that
Sec. 220

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN liAR

SELECTION OF ISSUABLE PROPOSITION

219. Where there are Several Allegations, all of which are Material, the Party may Traverse any one he pleases.

The Principle of this Rule is that where the case of any Party rests upon Several Allegations, each of which is essential to its support, it may be as effectually destroyed by controverting one part as another. Thus, in an Action of Trespass, if the defendant Pleads that A was seised, and demised to him, a Traverse of either the Seisin or the Demise would be sufficient; as in either case, if maintained, it would be effectual to overcome the Defense. Again, in Trespass, if the defendant Pleads that A was Seized, and enfeoffed B, who enfeoffed C, who enfeoffed D, whose estate the defendant bath, the plaintiff may Traverse whichever of the feoffments he pleases. Great care is necessary, however, in the selection of the Allegation to be thus denied, so as to oppose the one most open to objection; for, as we see in another place, those not expressly denied are taken as admitted.

lie was sworn before the Lord Mayor, and that the defendant said he was falsely sworn in that Oath, it was held that the plaintiff’s being sworn before the Lord Mayor, though in the nature of inducement, was a traversable matter, being of the substance of the Action. Kimersly v. Cooper, supra.


DENIAL OF THE ESSENTIALS ONLY

220. A Traverse must not be Too Large, nor, on the other hand, too Narrow.

Qualification—A Material Allegation of Title or Estate may be Traversed as Alleged, though stated with unnecessary particularity.

AS a Traverse must not be taken on an Immaterial Allegation, so, when applied to an Allegation that is Material, it should take in no more and no less of that Allegation than is necessary to raise a Material Issue. If it involves more than some essential proposition of operative fact, it is said to be too large; if less, too narrow.

Traverse Too Large

IN the first place, it must not be too large. It may thus be too large by involving in the Issue circumstances of time, place, quantity, etc., which are Immaterial to the Merits of the particular case, though forming part of the Allegation Traversed. Thus, in an Action of Debt on a Bond, conditioned for the payment of £1,550, the defendant Pleaded that part of the sum mentioned in the condition, to wit, £ 1,500, was won by gaming, con-a. Comyn, Digest, Pledger, C. 15 (London, 1822).

It is a mistake to cover by denial, not only the Material Allegations necessary to support the plaintiff’s Cause of Action, but also some immaterial qualities of the Allegation. English: Lush v. Rue, 5 Exeb. 203, 155 Eng.Rep. 87 (1850); Vermont: Briggs v. Mason, 31 Vt 433 (1859).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Contrary to the statute in such case made and provided, and that the bond was consequently void. The plaintiff Replied that the bond was given for a just debt, and Traversed that the £1,500 was won by gaming in Manner and Form as alleged. On Demurrer it was objected that the Replication was ill, because it made the precise sum parcel of the Issue, and tended to oblige the defendant to prove that the whole sum of £1,500 was won by gaming; whereas the statute avoids the bond if any part of the consideration be on that account. The Court was of opinion that there was No Color to maintain the Replication; for that the Material Part of the Plea was that part of the money for which the bond was given was won by gaming, and that the words, “to wit, £1,500” were only Form, of which the Replication ought not to have taken any notice.” So where the plaintiff Pledged that the Queen, at a Manor Court, held on such a day by L.S., her steward, and by copy of Court Roll, etc., granted certain land to the plaintiff’s lessor, and the defendant Rejoined, Traversing that the Queen, at a Manor Court, held such a day by I.S., her steward, granted the land to the lessor, the Court held that the Traverse was ill, “for the Jury are thereby bound to find a copy on such a day, and by such a steward, which ought not to be.” The Traverse, it seems, ought to have been that the Queen did not grant in Manner and Form as allege&.

Again, a Traverse may be Too Large by being taken in the Conjunctive instead of the Disjunctive, where it is not Material that the Allegation Traversed should be proved Conjunctively. Thus, in an Action of Assumpsit the plaintiff declared on a policy of insurance, and averred “that the ship insured did not arrive in safety, but that the said ship, tackle, apparel, ordnance, munition, artillery, boat, and other furniture were sunk and destroyed in the said voyage.” The defendant Pleaded with a Traverse: “Without this, that the said ship, tackle, apparel, ordnance, munition, artillery, boat, and other furniture were sunk and destroyed in the voyage in Manner and Form as alleged.” Upon Demurrer this Traverse was adjudged to be bad, and it was held that the defendant ought to have Denied Disjunctively that the ship or tackle, etc., was sunk, or destroyed, because in this Action for Damages the plaintiff would be entitled to recover compensation for any part of that which was the subject of insurance and had been lost; whereas (it was said), if Issue had been taken in the Conjunctive Form in which the Plea was Pledged, “and the defendant should prove that only a cable or anchor arrived in safety, he would be acquitted of the whole.”

Traverse Too Large—Qualification of Rule

On the other hand, however, a Party may, in general, Traverse a Material Allegation of title or estate to the extent to which it is alleged, though it need not have been alleged to that extent; and such Traverse will not be considered as Too Large.32 For example, in an Action of Replevin, the defendant Avowed the taking of the cattle as damage feasant, in the place in which, etc.; the same being the freehold of Sir F. L. To this the plaintiff Pledged that he was seised in his denjesne


as of fee of B. close, adjoining to the place in which, etc.; that Sir F. L. was bound to repair the fence between B. close and the place in which, etc.; and that the cattle escaped through a defect of that fence. The defendant Traversed that the plaintiff was seised in his demesne as of fee of B. close, and on Demurrer the Court was of opinion that it was a Good Traverse; for, though a less estate than a seisin in fee would have been sufficient to sustain the plaintiff’s case, yet as the plaintiff, who should best know what estate he had, had Pledged a seisin in fee, his adversary was entitled to Traverse the Title so laid.35 Again, in an Action of Trespass for trespasses committed in a close of pasture containing eight acres in the town of Tollard Royal, the defendant Pledged that W., Earl of Salisbury, was seised in fee and of right of an ancient chase of deer called “Cranborn,” and that the said chase did extend itself as well in and through the said eight acres of pasture as in and through the said town of Tollard Royal, and Justified the trespasses as committed in using the said chase. The plaintiff Traversed that the said chase extended itself as well to the eight acres as to the whole town; and, Issue being taken thereon, it was tried, and found for the plaintiff. It was then Moved, in Arrest of Judgment that this Issue and Verdict were faulty, “because if the chase did extend to the eight acres only, it was enough for the defendant, and therefore the Finding of the Jury, that it did not extend as well to the whole town as to the eight acres, did not conclude against the defendants right in the eight acres, which was only in question. But it was answered by the Court, that there was no fault in the Issue, much less in the Verdict (which was according to the Issue); but the fault was in the defendants Plea that now takes the exception, for he puts in his Plea more than he needed, scil., the whole town, which being to his own disadvantage, and to the advantage of the plaintiff there was no reason for him to Demur upon it, but rather to admit it as he did, and so to put it in Issue. And so Judgment was given for the plaintiff.”36

Traverse Too Narrow

A TRAVERSE must not be Too Narrow.1 Of a Traverse that is Too Narrow, the following is an example: In an Action of Assumpsit brought for a compensation for the plaintiff’s service as a hired servant, the plaintiff alleged that he served from March 21, 1647, to November 1, 1664. The defendant Pledged that the plaintiff continued in the service till December, 1658, and then voluntarily quitted the service, without this, that he served until November 1, 1664. This was a Bad Traverse; for, as the plaintiff in this Action for Damages is entitled to compensation pro tanto for any period of service, it is obviously no answer to say that he did not serve the whole time alleged.37 So a Traverse may be Too Narrow by being applied to Part Only of an Allegation which the Law considers as in its nature indivisible and entire; such as that of a prescription or grant. Thus, in an Action of Trespass for Breaking and Entering the plaintiff’s close, called S.C., and digging stones therein, the defendant Pledged that there are certain wastes lying open to one another—one the close called S.C., and the other called S.G.—and so proceeded to prescribe for the liberty of digging stones in both doses, and Justified the trespasses under that prescription. The Replication traversed the prescriptive right in B.C. only, dropping E.G.; but the Court held that the Traverse could


Sec. 220

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

443
not be so confined, and must be taken on the whole prescription as laid. 

NEGATIVES AND AFFIRMATIVES PREGNANT

221. These are Statements of Fact, either in a Negative or Affirmative Form, which carry within them or imply within them material contrary, Affirmative, or Negative Statements or Inferences in favor of the adverse party. Such a Statement renders the Pleading bad for Ambiguity.

THE doctrine of Negatives and Affirmatives Pregnant appears most properly to arrange itself under the head of ambiguity or evasiveness. The principle underlying the Rule against a Negative Pregnant has not been always dearly and satisfactorily explained in the various treatises. This seems true even though the older cases reveal that the fault was a frequent ground of objection. Thus, as early as the year 1449, in the case which appeared in a Year Book, in an action for negligently keeping a fire, by which plaintiff’s houses were burned, the defendant Pleaded that the plaintiff’s houses were not burned by the defendant’s negligence in keeping his fire; and it was objected that the Traverse was not good, as it had Two Intendments,—one, that the houses were not burned; the other, that they were burned, but not by negligent keeping of the fire; and so it was a Negative Pregnant. The same ground, that is, that of ambiguity, was taken in a case in the early part of the Reign of Edward II (1307—1327). These two cases are believed to be the earliest authorities on the rule itself. And what is found in the later books on the subject tend to support the same view.

A Negative Pregnant, therefore, may be defined as such a form of Negative Expression as may imply, or carry with it, an Affirmative, or to put the matter in another way, it is a Specific Denial which apparently Denies a Material Allegation, but which in fact leaves an Affirmative Allegation standing admitted, whereas an Affirmative Pregnant is an Affirmative Allegation implying a Negative. To illustrate the Negative Pregnant, let us take two cases, one in which the issue is Immaterial and one in which the issue is Material. Suppose, in the first case, that 4 alleges that B went out into the rain without an umbrella, and then B Specifically Traverses or Denies that he went out into the rain without an umbrella. Has he denied that he went out into the rain? He has not. In

In general, on the subject of Negatives and Affirmatives Pregnant at Common Law, and under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, see:


Comments: Rule of Negative Pregnant In Pleading Applies only to Averment of Material Facts, 83 Cent, U. 145 (1916); Pleading—Negative Pregnant, 18 Ky.L3. 394 (1930).

42. Blachmore v. Tidderley, 2 Ld.Raym. 1099, 92 Eng Rep. 228 (1704); Macfadzen v, Olivant, 6 East 387, 102 Eng.Rep. 1335 (1805). “Such a denial is one pregnant with the admission of the Substantial Fact which is apparently controverted; or In other words, one which, although in the Form of a Traverse, really admits the important fact contained In the Allegation

“Denials In the Forut of a Negative Pregnant arise (1) when the Allegation is of a Single Fact, with some qualifying or modifying circumstances, and the Traverse is in ipsis verbis, using exactly the same-language, and no more; (2) when the Allegation is of several distinct and separate facts or occurrences connected by the copulative conjunction, and the-traverse Is in ipsis verbis of the same facts and occurrences also connected by the same conjunction.” Curnow v Phoenix Ins. Co., 46 S-C. 70, 94,24 S.E. 74—77 (1896). Thus, If the defendant Is charged with taking a horse and a mule, a denial that lie took the horse and the mule Is a Negative Pregnant;
Moser v. Jenkins, S Or. 447 (1875).

Sec. 221

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

this instance the Issue is Immaterial. But suppose that A alleges that B struck him over the head with a hickory stick, and then that B Specifically Traverses or Denies that he struck A over the head with a hickory stick, Has B denied that he struck A? The answer is no, and in this case the defendant, by the Form of his Plea, has left Affirmatively Standing a Material Allegation, to wit, the striking."

Such a Mode of Pleading was deemed faulty under the Rule that such an Ambiguous Form of Expression must be strictly construed against the Pleader. Thus, in the early case of Myn v. Cole, in Trespass for Entering A’s house, B, the defendant, Plead ed that the plaintiff’s daughter gave him a License to do so, and that he entered by that License. In the Replication A stated that he did not Enter by her License, This was considered as a Negative Pregnant. It will be observed that this Form of Traverse may imply, or carry within it, that a License was given, though the defendant, B, did not Enter by that License. It is, therefore, in the Language of Pleading, said to be Pregnant with that Admission, that is, that a License was given. At the same time, the License is not expressly admitted; and the effect, therefore, is to leave it in doubt whether the plaintiff means to Deny the License or to Deny that the defendant Entered by virtue of that License. It is this ambiguity which appears to constitute the fault.

44. In Baker v. Bailey, 16 Barb. 54 (1852), under the New York Code of 1848, the administrators of A’s estate alleged that B assaulted A on a certain day at a certain place, and that the assault caused the death of A. The answer, among other things, traversed or denied that 8 assaulted A, the decedent, on the day alleged. At the Trial, B offered evidence to prove that he never assaulted A at all. It was held that this Offer of Proof was inadmissible under the Answer, as the Negative Pregnant admitted that the defendant made the assault alleged, but on a different day.

45. Oro, Jac. 87, 79 Engtep. 75 (1605).

46. Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, a II, Of the Principal Rules of

The following is another example: In Trespass for Assault and Battery, the defendant Justified, for that he, being master of a ship, commanded the plaintiff to do some service in the ship; which he refusing to do, the defendant Moderately Chastised him. The plaintiff Traversed, with an Abs que Hoc, that the defendant Moderately Chastised him; and this Traverse was held to be a Negative Pregnant; for, while it apparently means to put in Issue only the question of Excess (Admitting, by Implication, the Chastisement) it does not necessarily and distinctly make that Admission; and is, therefore, Ambiguous in its Form. If the plaintiff had Replied that the defendant Immoderately Chastised him, the objection would have been avoided; but the proper Form of Traverse would have been de injuria sua propi—la abs que aliqua tall cansa. This, by Traversing the whole “cause alleged,” would have distinctly put in Issue all the Facts in the Plea; and no Ambiguity or doubt as to the extent of the Denial would have arisen.

This Rule against a Negative Pregnant, it is said by Stephen, appears in modern times, at least, to have received no very strict construction. For many cases have occurred in which upon various grounds of distinction from the General Rule, that Form of Expression has been held free from objection. Thus, in Debt on a Bond, conditioned to perform the covenants in a indenture of lease, one of which covenants was that the dePleading, § 5, 335 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler washington, B. C. 1882); Blade v. Drake, Bob. 295, 296, 80 Eng. Rep. 439, 440 (1617), in which the Court declared:

“Therefore the Law refuseth Double Pleading, and Negative Pregnant, though they be true, because they do inveagle, and not settle the Judgment upon one point.”


446

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 22
fendant, the lessee, would not deliver possession to any but the lessor, or such persons as should lawfully evict him, the defendant Pledged, that he did not deliver the possession to any but such as lawfully evicted him. On Demurrer to this Plea, it was Objected that the same was ill, and a Negative Pregnant, and that he ought to have said that such a one lawfully evicted him, to whom lie delivered the possession, or that he did not deliver the possession to any; but the Court held the Plea, as pursuing the words of the covenant, good, being in the Negative, and that the plaintiff ought to have Replied, and Assigned a Breach; and therefore Judgment was given against him.48

A Denial that a person “carelessly and negligently did an act” is not a Denial that he did the act, and a Denial that a person “negligently” failed to look out for danger, is not a Denial that he actually failed to do so.

“Material Facts alleged Conjunctively must be Denied Disjunctively.” ~ The denial must not be in a Form that raises an Issue of the literal truth of the Entire Allegation, without indicating whether it is claimed to be entirely or only partially false.

THE SPECIFIC OR COMMON TRAVERSE

222. The Specific or Common Traverse is an Express Denial of a Particular Allegation in the Opposing Pleading in the Terms of the Allegation, accompanied by a Tender of Issue Qt Formal Offer of the point Denied for Trial. OF the various kinds of Traverses, Specific, Special or General, the most ordinary and the most natural and primitive Travers~ is the so-called “Common or Specific Traverse.” It consists of a Tender of Issue;

48 Pullitt v. Niarl-olias, 1 Ley. S3, 53 Eng.tep, 300 (11662].

Sec. also, Comment: Rule of Negative Pregnant in Pleading Applies only to Averment of Material Facts, 83 Cent.L.J. 143 (1910), that is, of a Denial, accompanied by a Formal Offer of the point Denied for decision; and the Denial which it makes is in the Pleader’s Own Language and is by way of express contradiction in Terms of the Allegation Traversed—a point of considerable importance when we come to point out the danger of using the Specific Traverse. Such a Traverse or Denial, which for this purpose are synonymous terms, controverts a Single Specific and Material Allegation of the Pleading to which it is interposed.—5

The Function of a Specific Traverse

ITS use in a Plea is thus to Deny any Single One of the Allegations of the Declaration, the failure to prove which would destroy the plaintiff’s case, and where such Allegation would not be controverted by the General Issue in the particular action.

Thus, in an Action of Covenant on a lease for not repairing windows, a Specific or Common Traverse, would read as follows:

“And the said B, the defendant, by X, his Attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury when, etc., and says that the said A ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, the said B, because he says that the windows of the said messuage or tenement were not in any part thereof ruinous, in decay, or out of repair, in the Manner and Form as the said A hath above complained against him, the said B. And of this he puts himself upon the country.”

It will be noticed that this Traverse is expressed in the Negative. This, however, is not invariably the case with a Specific or Common Traverse; for if it be opposed to a precedent Negative Allegation, it will, of course, be in the Affirmative. Thus, where

So. But see statement by Martin: “The Plea must consist In the denial or traverse of one or more facts contained in the Declaration, without which the plaintiff would have no Cause of Action.” Civil Procedure at Common Law, e. XI, Defences in Bar by way of Traverse, Article 1, § 257, p. 217 (St. Paul, 1905).

Sec. 223
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

in Special Assumpsit, the defendant Pleads the Statute of Limitations, saying in his Plea “that he, the said B, did not, at any time within six years next before the Commencement of this Suit, Undertake or Promise in the Manner and Form as the said A hath above complained,” etc., the plaintiff’s Replication Traversing the Plea would be in the Affirmative, thus: “And the said A says that, by reason of anything in said Plea alleged, he ought not to be barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action against the said B, because he says that the said B did, within six years next before the Commencement of this Suit, Undertake and Promise,” etc.

The Danger of Using the Specific Traverse

IN Pleading a Specific or Common Traverse, the Pleader was in grave danger of running into either an Argumentative Denial or a Negative Pregnant.

First, as to the Argumentative Denial:

An example is found in the famous case of Gibbons v. Pepper, where the plaintiff brought Trespass for Assault and Battery, to which the defendant Pledged that he rode his horse upon the highway, his horse became frightened and ran away with him, and he couldn’t stop it; that he called to plaintiff to take care, the plaintiff did not get out of the way, and the horse ran over plaintiff against the will of the defendant. The plaintiff demurred to this Plea, and the Court gave judgment for plaintiff. It may not be considered a proper Plea in Confession and Avoidance, as it did not confess a trespass by defendant and then justify it, but rather alleged, his effect, that the wrong was committed by the horse. Thus, it could be considered an Argumentative Plea, as there are two affirmatives, the Allegation by the plaintiff that this Act was done by the horse. And, the General Rule is that Two Affirmatives do not make a good Negative.

Second, as to the Negative Pregnant: A Negative Pregnant is a Plea which apparently traverses a Material Allegation in the Opponent’s Pleading, but which Affirmatively leaves a Material Allegation standing Admitted, under the theory that whatever is not Denied at the next Succeeding Stage of Pleading stands Admitted. Two examples, previously mentioned, will illustrate the point. A alleges that B went out into the rain without an umbrella. B specifically traverses or denies that he went out into the rain without an umbrella. Has he denied that he went out into the rain? Certainly not. But in this instance the Issue is Immaterial. Now, take a case where the Denial is material. A alleges that B struck him over the head with a hickory stick. B specifically Traverses or Denies that he struck A over the head With a hickory stick. Has he Denied the striking? Certainly not, and this time the Admitted Fact is Material, as that is the Fact which counts in an Action of Trespass for Assault and Battery. Thus, the danger of a defendant running into either an Argumentative Denial or a Negative Pregnant, had a tendency to discourage the use of the Specific Traverse—a procedure which it has been the aim of Modern Pleading to restore.

TILE SPECIAL TRAVERSE

223. The design of a Special Traverse, as distinguished from a Specific or Common Traverse, and the General Issue, is to explain or set forth the Grounds of the Denial. The matter set up in the Inducement must be such as amounts to a sufficient answer to the Declaration. The essential parts are:

(a) The Inducement.

(b) The Denial.

(c) The Verification.

I The Inducement in a Special Traverse is that Part which consists of an Affirmative Statement, Introductory to or Explanatory of the Denial; in itself it is an Argumentative or Indirect Denial; it must in itself amount to a sufficient Answer in Substance to the Opposing Pleading; and it must not consist of a Direct Denial, nor be in the Nature of a Confession and Avoidance.
The sufficiency of the Affirmation stated by way of Inducement to constitute a Defense may be tested by Demurrer.

The Inducement cannot be Traversed unless the denial under the “Absque hoc” clause is bad, for it is a Rule that there can be no Traverse upon a Traverse, unless the first one is bad; nor, subject to the same Exception, can it be answered in Confession and Avoidance.

(II) The Denial in a Special Traverse is in the Direct Form pursuing the words of the Allegation Traversed; its Form is by the use of the words “Absque Roe” (without this), that, etc.

(III) The Special Traverse does not Tender Issue, but concludes with a Verification, thus: “And this the said is ready to Verify.”

(IV) Where a Special Traverse is sufficient, the Other Party must Tender Issue, to be accepted by the Party Traversing.

The Essential Requisites of the Special Traverse

THE Special Traverse had to satisfy Three Requirements as to Form; it consisted of:

First, an Inducement containing an Affirmative Statement of New Matter, which constituted an Indirect Denial of some Material Allegation in the Pleading to which it was interposed;

Second, the Absque Hoc clause, constituting a Direct Denial of the Same Material Allegation and in the Same Language in which it is made; and

Third, the Conclusion in which the Party Pleading stated that he was ready to establish the truth of the matters set forth in his Plea, and which went by the name of Averment or Verification.

The foregoing requisites were essential in order for a Special Traverse to be Good as to Form. It was also required that the Indirect Denial contained in the Affirmative Statement by Way of Inducement and the Direct Denial in the Absque Hoc Clause, should relate to the same matter in the Adverse Pleading, according to Gould. It may be observed that it was only a logical conclusion, from the very nature of a Special Traverse, that the Direct Denial of the Absque Hoc Clause was always a Negative Averment, which necessarily required the Party Pleading to it to do so by repeating his Affirmative Averment and Tendering Issue therein.

Distinguished from the Specific Traverse—Effect

The Traverse known more commonly as the Special Traverse differs from the Specific or Common Traverse, in that it is a Denial, preceded by Introductory Affirmative Matter, of Material Opposing Allegations; and, unlike the other Forms of Traverse, it does not Tender Issue, but Concludes with a Verification.

Sec. 223

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

While it was not ordinarily allowed to Plead Argumentatively what amounted to the General Issue, yet if the defendant were desirous of raising a Question of Law, and referring it to the Court rather than to the Jury, he was allowed, by this curious hybrid Plea known as the Special Traverse, to make an Argumentative Denial. The
Inducement to the Traverse discloses the real nature of the Party’s Case and shows the Grounds upon which the Denial proceeds. The Plea Concludes with a Direct Denial under the Absque Hoc Clause and an offer to Verify.

(1) The SpeciaZ Traverse—Normal Form.
—An illustration of how such a Traverse, in its Normal Form, operates will help to make the matter clear. Let us assume that A, the heir of a lessor, L, brought an Action of Debt against B, the lessee, on a covenant to pay rent, the Declaration alleging that the plaintiff’s ancestor, L, was seised in fee of the land; that L demised the land to the defendant B, for a certain term of years; that the defendant, B, covenanted to pay a certain rent; that L, the ancestor of the plaintiff died, that the reversion descended to A, the plaintiff; and that the rent became due from B, the defendant, to A, the plaintiff.

Suppose that B, the defendant, opposes the alleged liability, as set forth in the Declaration, by saying “that, after the making of the said indenture, the said reversion of the said premises did not belong to the said L, the plaintiff A’s ancestor, and his heirs in the Manner and Form as the said A hath in his said Declaration alleged. And of this the said B puts himself upon the country.” This is a Specific or Common Traverse.

Suppose, however, that instead of using a Specific Traverse, the defendant B pleads that the plaintiff, A, ought not to maintain his action “because he says that L, the plaintiff’s ancestor, now deceased, at the time of the making of the said indenture, was seized in his demesne as of a freehold, for the term of his natural life, of and in the said demised premises, and continued so seized thereof until and at the time of his death; and that, after the making of the said indenture, and before the expiration of the said term, to wit, onthe day of , A.D. at aforesaid, the said L died; whereupon the term created by the said indenture wholly ceased and determined; Without this, that after the making of the said indenture, the reversion of the said demised premises belonging to the said L and his heirs in the Manner and Form as the said A hath in his said Declaration alleged. And this the said B is ready to verify. Wherefore he Prays Judgment if the said A ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him.”

The Substance of this Plea is that the plaintiff’s ancestor, L, was seized for life only, and therefore that the term terminated at his death, which involves a Denial of the Allegation in the Declaration that the reversion belonged to the father in fee. The defendant’s course was therefore to Traverse the Declaration. Instead of doing so in the Common Form (by using the Specific or Common Traverse), he has adopted the Special Form (the Special Traverse), first setting out the New Affirmative Matter, that the plaintiff’s ancestor, L, was seized for life, etc., and then annexing to this the Denial that the reversion belonged to him and his heirs by that peculiar formula: “Without this, that,” etc.

The Special Traverse does not, like the Specific or Common Traverse, Tender Issue, but Concluded, prior to the Hilary Rules in 1834, with the words: “And this the said B is ready to Verify, wherefore he Prays Judgment,” etc., which is called a “Verification” and ‘Prayer of Judgment,” and is the constant Conclusion of all Pleadings in which Issue is not Tendered.55 The Affirmative

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Part of the Traverse—that is, the part which sets forth the New Matter—is called its “Inducement”; the Negative Part is called the “Absque Hoc Clause”; those being the Latin words formerly used, and from which the modern expression, “without this,” is translated.56 These different parts and properties are all essential to a Special Traverse, which must always thus consist of an Inducement, a Denial, and a Verification; that is, prior to the Hilary Rules.

The Regular Method of Pleading in answer to a Special Traverse was to Tender Issue upon it, with a repetition
of the Allegation Traversed. Thus, to the Plea heretofore given by way of illustration, the Replication would read:

“And, as to the said Plea by the said B above Pleaded, the said A. says that by reason of anything therein alleged he ought not to be barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action against the said B, because the said A says that after the making of the said indenture the reversion of the said demised premises belonged to the said L and his heirs, in the Manner and Form as the said A hath in his said Declaration above alleged. And this he Prays may be inquired of by the country.”

The effect, therefore, of a Special Traverse, is, as in Replevin where the defendant Pleads an Avowry, to postpone the Issue to One Stage of the Pleading later than would be attained by a Specific or Common Traverse, for if the defendant should Deny in the Common Form without an Inducement, and Conclude to the Country, it would only remain

Way of Traverse, § 286, Conclusion of Special Traverse, 243, 244 (St. Paul, 1905).

- The denial may be introduced by other forms of expression besides abasqite koc. Et non will suffice.
  (1666); Walters v. Hodges, Lut. 1625, 125 Eng.Ilep.
  684 (1692).

for the plaintiff to add the Similiter, and Issue would therefore be Joined, whereas, on a Special Traverse, the Issue is Not Tendered until the Next Pleading.

(II) The Special Traverse—Abnormal Form, — Once established as a recognized part of the Common Law System of Pleading, the Special Traverse grew in favor. As a result of this development it was adopted in cases where the original reasons for such a Form of Pleading were inapplicable, as in cases where the Inducement included No New Explanatory Matter, but consisted in a mere repetition of the Original Declaration.55 Thus, for example, in cases of assault, where the defendant Justified his act under a Warrant of Arrest, the plaintiff was permitted to Reply that the defendant of his own wrong, made the assault, without this,—that he had any Warrant of Arrest to justify his act.

Although this Form of the Special Traverse was Abnormal and a manifest departure from the General Requirements of a Special Traverse as defined by the leading authorities, it nevertheless received the approval of the Courts— As, however, it was used only occasionally, it has in Modern Times been largely superseded by the Specific or Common Traverse.

Form of Declaration and Special Traverse

AS the Special Traverse was and is one

of the most technical Pleas known to the Common Law, its Character and Scope may appear more clearly from a study of its form. Accordingly, a Form of a Declaration, to


58. See Martin, civil Procedure at Common Law, c. x1, Defences In Bar by Way of Traverse, 285, Special traverse—Abnormal Form, 242 (St. Paul, 1905), citing as authority the ease of Stennel v. Hogg, 1 Wms.Saund. 223, 85 Eng.Rep. 240 (1669), Sec. 223

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

gether with a Special Traverse, are included below:

FonM OF DECLARATION

IN THE KING’S BENCH,

Term, in the - year of the reign of King George the Fourth.
C.D. was summoned to answer A.B., son and heir of ES., his late father, deceased, of a plea that he keep with the said AS. the covenant made by the said CD. with the said ER., according to the force, form, and effect of a certain indenture in that behalf made between them. And thereupon the said A.B., by ___, his attorney, complains: For that whereas, the said MB., at the time of making the indenture hereinafter mentioned, was seised in his demesne as of fee of and in the said CD. of the one part and the said AS. of the other part (one part of which said indenture, sealed with the seal of the said C. D., the said AS. now brings into court, the date whereof is the day and year aforesaid), for the considerations therein mentioned, did demise, lease, set, and to farm let, unto the said C.D., his executors, administrators and assigns, a certain messuage, or dwelling house, with the appurtenances, situate at . to have and to hold the same unto the said C.D., his executors, administrators, and assigns, from the day of ____, then last past to the fill end and term of years thence next ensuing, and fully to be complete and ended, yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year, to the said ES., his heirs or assigns, the clear yearly rent or sum of dollars, payable quarterly, at the four most usual feasts or days of payment of rent in the year; that is to say, on the 25th day of March, the 24th day of June, the 29th day of September, and the 25th day of December, in each and every year, in equal portions. And the said CM. did thereby, for himself, his executors, administrators, and assigns, covenant, promise, and agree, to and with the said ES., his heirs and assigns, that he, the said C.D., his executors, administrators, or assigns should and would well and truly pay, or cause to be paid to the said ES., his heirs or assigns, the said yearly rent or sum of Dollars, at the several day and times aforesaid, as by the said indenture, reference being thereunto had, will more fully appear. By virtue of which said demise, the said Lid, afterwards, to wit, on the day of , A.D., in the year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, entered into the said premises, and was thereof possessed for the said term, the reversion thereof belonging to the said E.B. and his heirs. And he, the said C.D., being so possessed, and the said E.B. being so seised of the said reversion in his demesne as of fee, he, the said E.B., afterwards, to wit, on the day of , in the year aforesaid, died so seised of the said reversion; after whose decease the said reversion descended to the said AS., as son and heir of the said E. &; whereby the said AS. was seised of the reversion of the said demised premises in his demesne as of fee. And the said A.E. in fact says that he, the said A.Th, being so seised, and the said C.D. being so possessed as aforesaid, afterwards, and during the said term, to wit, on the day of , A.D., at , in the county of a large sum of money, to wit, the sum of dollars, of the rent aforesaid, for divers, to wit, years of the said term then elapsed, became and was due and owing, and still is in arrear and unpaid, to the said A.B., contrary to the form and effect of the said covenant in that behalf. And so the said AS. in fact saith that the said C.D. (although often requested) hath not kept his said covenant in that behalf, but hath broken the same, and to keep the same hath hitherto wholly refused, and still refuses, to the damage of the said AS. of dollars; and therefore he brings his suit, etc.


The following Plea would be a Special Traverse:

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch, 22

saith that the said C.D. (although often requested) hath not kept his said covenant in that behalf, but hath broken the same, and to keep the same hath hitherto wholly refused, and still refuses, to the damage of the said AS. of dollars; and therefore he brings his suit, etc.


The following Plea would be a Special Traverse:

IN THE KBcG’s BENCH, Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.
And the said CD., by his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc.; and says that the said AS. ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, because he says that the said ES., deceased, at the time of the making of the said indenture, was seised in his demesne as of freehold, for the term of his natural life, of and in the said demised premises, with the appurtenances, and continued so seised thereof until and at the time of his death; and that, after the making of the said indenture and before the expiration of the said term, to wit, on the day of A.D., at aforesaid, the said ES. died; whereupon the term created by the said indenture wholly ceased and determined. Without this, that after the making of the said indenture, the reversion of the said demised premises belonged to the said E.B. and his heirs, in manner and form as the said A.B. hath in his said declaration alleged; and this the said Cii is ready to verify. Wherefore he prays judgment if the said A.B. ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him.


The Use and Object of the Special Traverse

OBSERVING that “it is remarkable that no author should have hitherto offered any explanation of the objects for which it [the Special Traverse] was originally devised, and in a view to which it continues to be, in some cases, adopted,” 50 Stephen declares that the general design of a Special Traverse, as distinguished from a Specific or Common Traverse, is to explain or qualify the Denial, instead of putting it in the Direct Form; and there were several different factual situations, in reference to which the Ancient Pleaders seemed to have thought it necessary to adopt this Form of Pleading. 60

(I) Where the Defendant is Estopped by Some Rule of Law from Making a Direct and Positive Denial,—In some factual situations as presented in a Declaration, a Direct Denial may be regarded as inappropriate by reason of its opposition to some General Rule of Law. Thus, in the example of a Special Traverse above discussed, it was improper to Traverse in the Specific or Common form, viz., “that after the making of the said indenture the reversion of the said demised premises did not belong to the said L and his heirs,” &c., because, by a Rule of Law, a tenant is precluded, or in the Language of Pleading, Estopped from Alleging that his lessor, it, had no title in the premises demised; and a general assertion that the reversion did not belong to him and his heirs would appear to be prohibited by the same Rule. A tenant, however, is not by law

Estopped to say that his lessor had only a particular estate, which has since expired. 61

In a case, therefore, in which the Declaration alleged a seizin in fee in L., the lessor, and the nature of the Defense was that he had a particular estate only, namely, an estate for life, since expired, the Pleader would resort, as in the example, to a Special Traverse, setting forth the lessor’s limited title, by Way of Inducement, and Traversing his seizin of the reversion in fee under the Absque Hoc Clause By such a course the defendant is thus enabled to avoid an objection that might otherwise arise on the ground of Estoppel.

(U) Where the Defendant Desires to Avoid an Issue of Pact as on a Specific or Common Traverse in Favor of Developing and Submitting Some Aspect of the Controversy to the Judgment of the Court as an Issue in Law.—In some factual situations it may be inexpedient to submit the Issue involved as an Issue of Fact as on a Specific Traverse; it may be more propitious to submit to the question involved to the Judgment of the Court as an Issue in law. There may be many reasons why it might be desirable that, without going to Trial, a litigant bring a question before the Court for determination in the first instance, and for that purpose an Issue of Law should be raised. In such a case, therefore, the Pleader would state the circumstances of the transaction in an Inducement, substituting a Special for a Specific Traverse. The facts thus alleged by Way of Inducement are not subject to Traverse, but may be Demurred to as insufficient in Law to contradict the Declaration. This

Page 475 of 735
operates to submit the case to the Court on the Law without the intervention of a Jury.\footnote{Blake v. Foster, 5 T.R. 487, 101 EngRep. 1505 (1800).}

\footnote{Blake v. Foster, 5 T.R. 487, 101 EngRep. 1505 (1800).} If the Indicent Is Insufficient In Law to show
\footnote{Blake v. Foster, 5 T.R. 487, 101 EngRep. 1505 (1800).} Defense, the entire Plea is bad \textit{on a General Do}Thurer. People er rel. Maloney v. Pullman’s Palace \textit{(U) The Abs que Hoc Clause and the Conclusion with a Verification.}—Although these reasons seem to show the purpose of the Inducement, they do not account for the Two Other Distinctive Features of the Special Traverse, viz., the \textit{etbsque hoc} Clause and the Conclusion with a Verification. For it will naturally suggest itself that the Affirmative Matter, in each of the above cases, might have been Pleased \textit{per se}, without the addition of the \textit{Absque Hoc} Clause. So., whether the \textit{Abs que Hoc} were added or not., the Pleading, consistently with any of the above reasons, might have Tendered Issue, like a Specific or Common Traverse, instead of Concluding with a Verification.

These latter Forms were dictated by other principles. The Direct denial, under the \textit{Abs que Hoc} Clause, was made necessary by this consideration: that the Affirmative Matter, taken alone, would constitute only an Indirect, or as it is called in Pleading, an Argumentative Denial of the precedent statement; and under the Rule that Pleadings must be Direct and not Argumentative, all Argumentative Pleading is prohibited. In order, therefore, to avoid the Defect in Form of Argumentativeness, the course adopted was to follow up the Explanatory, Affirmative Statement of Matter by Way of Inducement with a Direct Denial.\footnote{Blake v. Foster, 5 T.R. 487, 101 EngRep. 1505 (1800).}

With respect to the Verification, this Conclusion was adopted in a Special Traverse, \textit{with a} view to Another Rule, to the effect that wherever New Matter is introduced int~ \textit{a Pleading it is} improper to Tender Issue, hence the Conclusion must consequently close with a Verification. The Inducement setting forth new matter makes a Verifica-

\textbf{DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS}  

\textit{The Thiles for Determining the Sufficiency of a Special Ti-averse}

THERE were, according to Martin – Three Well Established Rules for determining the sufficiency of a Special Traverse as heretofore defined and described.

The \textit{first} rule was that the Inducement in a Special Traverse must \textit{be such as in} itself amounts to a sufficient Answer in Substance to the Last Pleading. As we have seen, it is the object of the Inducement to give an explained or qualified Denial; that is, to state such circumstances as tend to show that the Last Pleading is not true, the \textit{Abs que Hoc} being added merely to put that Denial in a Positive Form, which previously had been made in an Indirect Form. Now, an Indirect Denial amounted, in Substance, to an Answer, without the aid of the \textit{Absque Hoc} Clause, and despite the fact \textit{that it was Argumentative in Form}. It follows, therefore, that an Inducement, when properly framed, must always in itself contain, without the aid of the \textit{Abs qua Hoc} Clause, an Answer, in Substance to the Last Pleading.~ Thus, in our example above, the Allegation that \textit{L} was seised for life, and


\footnote{Mactin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. XI, Defences in Bar by Way of Traverse, Art. IV, Special Traverse, § 284, Rules for Determining the Sufficiency Thereof, 241, 242, (St. Paul, 1905).}
that estate is since determined, is in itself and in Substance, a Sufficient Answer, as Denying, by Implication, that the fee descended from L, the lessor, to A, the Plaintiff.

The second Rule, which followed from the same consideration, as to the object and use of a Special Traverse, was that the Answer given by the Inducement could be of no other nature than that of an Indirect Denial; the Inducement was bad if it consisted of a Direct Denial.° Thus, the plaintiff being bound by Recognizance to pay one X £300 in six years, by £50 per annum, at a certain place, alleged that he was ready every day at that place to have paid to X one of the said installments of £50, but that X was not there to receive it. To this the defendant Pledged that X was ready at the place to receive the £50, Abs qua hoc, that the plaintiff was there ready to have paid it. The plaintiff Demurred on the ground that the Inducement alleging X to have been at the place ready to receive contained a Direct Denial of the plaintiff’s precedent allegation that X was not there, and should therefore have Concluded to the Country, without the Abs qua Hoc Clause, and Judgment was given accordingly for the plaintiff. 6

The third rule was that the answer given by the Inducement must not be in the Nature of a Plea in Confession and Avoidance. Thus, if the defendant, B, makes title as the assignee of a term of years of X, and the plaintiff, A, in answer to this, claims under a prior assignment to himself from X of the same term, this is a Confession and Avoidance; for it admits the assignment to the


Sec. 223

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

defendant, B, but seeks to avoid its effect, by showing the prior assignment. Therefore, if the plaintiff, A, Pleads such assignment to himself by Way of Inducement, adding, under an Absque Hoc, a Denial that X assigned to the defendant, this Special Traverse is bad. The plaintiff should Plead the assignment to himself as in Confession and Avoidance; for it admits the assignment to the

Still a fourth Rule may be added, which Martin says was more distinctively a Rule of Practice, resulting from the Nature of an Inducement. The Rule was that with respect to Special Traverses, the Opposite Party has no right to Traverse an Inducement, or, as the Rule is more commonly expressed, there could be no Traverse upon a Traverses’ Thus, in the example given above, if the Replication, instead of reaffirming the matter denied in the Absque Hoc Clause, had Traversed the Inducement either in the Special or Common form, denying that L, the lessor, at the time of making the indenture, was seised in his demesne as of freehold for the term of his natural life, etc., such Replication would have been bad, as containing a Traverse upon a Traverse, The reason for the Rule is both Formal and Technical. By the first Traverse a matter is denied by one of the parties which had been alleged by the other, and which, having


This Rule is, however, open to an important Exception, viz., that there may be a Traverse upon a Traverse when the first is a bad one, or, in other words, if the Denial under the *Absque Hoc* of the first Traverse be Insufficient in Law, it may be passed by, and a new Traverse taken on the Inducement. Thus, in an Action of Prohibition, the plaintiff declared he was elected and admitted as one of the Common Council of the City of London, but that the defendants delivered a Petition to the Court of Common Council, complaining of an undue election, and suggesting that they themselves were chosen; whereas (the plaintiff alleged) the Common Council had No Jurisdiction to examine the validity of such an election, but the same belonged to the Court of the Mayor and Aldermen. The defendants Plead that the Common Council, time out of mind, had authority to determine the election of Common Councilmen; and that the defendants being duly elected the plaintiff intruded himself into the office; whereupon the defendants delivered their Petition to the Common Council, complaining of an undue election; without this, that the Jurisdiction to examine the validity of such election belonged to the Court of Mayor and Aldermen. The plaintiff Replied by Traversing the Inducement; that is, he Plead that the Common Council had not authority to determine the election of Common Councilmen, Concluding to the Country. To this the defendants Demurred, and the Court adjudged that the first Traverse was bad, because the question in this


456 DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Action of Prohibition was not whether the Court of Mayor and Aldermen had Jurisdiction, but whether the Common Council had; and that, the *first* Traverse being Immaterial, the second was well taken.

As the Inducement cannot, when the Denial, under the *Absque Hoc*, is Sufficient in Law, be Traversed, so, for the same reasons, it cannot be answered by a Pleading in Confession and Avoidance. But, on the other hand, if the Denial be insufficient in Law, the Opposite Party has then a right to Plead in Confession and Avoidance of the Inducement, or (according to the nature of the case) to Traverse it; or he may Demur to the whole Traverse for the Insufficiency of the Denial.

As the Inducement of a Special Traverse, when the Denial under the *Absque Hoc* is sufficient, can neither be Traversed nor Confessed and Avoided, it follows that there is, in that case, no Manner of Pleading to the Inducement. The only way, therefore, of answering a good Special Traverse Is to Plead to the *Absque Hoc*, which is done by Tendering Issue on such denial. But, though there can be no Pleading to an Inducement, when the Denial under the *Absque Hoc* is sufficient, yet the Inducement may be open, in that case, to Exception in Point of Law. If it be faulty in any respect, as, for example, in not containing a Sufficient Answer in Substance, or in giving an Answer by Way of Direct Denial, or by way of Confession and Avoidance, the Opposite Party may Demur to the whole Traverse, though the *Absque Hoc* be good, for this insufficiency in the Inducement.

The Use of the Special Traverse at the Present Time

HAVING explained the Form, the Effect, and the Use and Object of a Special Traverse, it remains to show in what cases this Method is or ought to be applied at the present day. First, it is observed by Stephen, that this Form was at no period applicable to every case of Denial, at the pleasure of the Pleader. There are many cases of Denial to which the plea of Special Traverse has never been applied, and which have always been and still are the subjects of Traverse in the Common Form exclusively. These it is not easy to enumerate or define; they are determined by the course of precedent, and in that way become known to the practitioner. On the other hand, in many cases where the Special Traverse used ancienly to occur, it is now no longer practiced. Even when
the formula was most in repute, the use of this species does not appear to have been regarded as matter of necessity; and, in cases which admit or require no Allegation of New Matter, we find the Special and the Common Traverse to have been indifferently used by the Pleaders of those days. But in Modern Times the Special Traverse, without an Inducement of New Matter, has been considered, not only as unnecessary, but as frequently improper. As the taste in Pleading gradually simplified and improved, the prolix and dilatory effect of a Special Traverse brought it into disfavor with the Courts; and they began, not only to enforce the doctrine that the Common Form might allowably be substituted in cases where there was No Inducement of New Matter, but often intimated their preference of that Form to the other.  

There is a tactical disadvantage to the Pleader, in the use of the Special Traverse, that the Inducement tends to open the real nature of the party’s case, by giving notice to his adversary of the precise grounds on which the Denial proceeds, and thus facilitates to the latter the preparation of his Proofs, or enables him to test the Grounds of Defense by Demurrer. And even though the case be such as would admit of an Inducement of New Matter explanatory of the Denial, the usual course is to omit any such Inducement, and to make the Denial in an Absolute Form, with a Tender of Issue; thus substituting the Common for the Special Formula. The latter, however, appears to be still allowable when the case is such as admits of an Inducement of New Matter, except in certain instances to which, by the course of precedent, the Common Form of Traverse has always been exclusively applied. And, where allowable, it should still be occasionally adopted, in a view to the various grounds of necessity or convenience by which it was originally suggested.

Sec. 224

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

such as would admit of an Inducement of New Matter explanatory of the Denial, the usual course is to omit any such Inducement, and to make the Denial in an Absolute Form, with a Tender of Issue; thus substituting the Common for the Special Formula. The latter, however, appears to be still allowable when the case is such as admits of an Inducement of New Matter, except in certain instances to which, by the course of precedent, the Common Form of Traverse has always been exclusively applied. And, where allowable, it should still be occasionally adopted, in a view to the various grounds of necessity or convenience by which it was originally suggested.

TUE GENERAL ISSUE—ITS
NATURE AND USE

224. The General issue is a Denial of the
Legal Conclusion sought to be drawn from the Declaration.

It Denies by a General Form of expression the defendant’s liability, and enables the defendant to contest, without Specific Averments of the Defense to be asserted, most of the Allegations which the plaintiff may be required to prove in order to sustain his action, and in some actions to raise also various Affirmative Defenses. It fails to perform the Functions of Pleading, either in giving Notice or in reducing the case to Specific Issues.

The Nature and Use of the General Issue

WHILE the Specific or Common Traverse is of frequent occurrence, there is another class of Traverse which, from its great importance and use, requires particular study. This form of Traverse is known as the General issue, under which, in most of the Modern Common-Law Actions, there is an appropriate Form of Plea fixed by Ancient Usage, as the proper method of Traversing the Declaration, where the defendant means to deny the defendant’s liability. This Form of Traverse appears to have been so called because the issue that it Tenders is of a more general and comprehensive character than that tendered by the Specific or Common Traverse. The General Issue, which is one of the two General Traverses, the Replication De Injuria being the other, differs from the Specific or Common Traverse in that it Denies by a General Form of expression, such as “Not Guilty,” the defendant’s liability, instead of Denying some Specific Allegation of Fact on which his liability depends. Or, put in a slightly different way, it differs in two respects:

First, in Point of Form, the General Issue Traverses, not by words of Direct Denial, but, as Professor Keigwin says, “by a fixed phrase of compendious negation”, such as Nil Debet in Debt or Non Assumpsit in
Special or General Assumpsit; and

Second, it generally operates to Deny and thus places in Issue, not a Single, Material Allegation, but all the Essential facts which constitute the plaintiff’s cause of action.

As thus developed, the Scope and Effect of the Plea by way of the General Issue assumes great significance, as the Tender of Issue thus made on the Declaration operates to close the Pleadings, and to enable the defendant to escape from the earlier requirement that he must rest his Defense on a Single, Material Allegation, thereby, from the defendant’s point of view, facilitating the progress of the cause. It should be observed, however, that the General Issue was in Form a Specie of “Licensed Duplicity, in that by such a Plea the defendant, into flatu [at one breath] Denies all the Several Facts alleged in the Declaration.” ~ Thus, the General Issue provides a brief and convenient form of Plea in many actions, comprehensive in its nature, and under which the defendant is or was permitted to prove,

6. The Replication De Injuria Is discussed in Chapter 23.
7b. Ibid.

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

without Specific Allegation, almost All Matters in Denial of his liability, as alleged, or to contest in evidence All Allegations requiring Proof on the part of the plaintiff.

In Case, Ejectment, Trespass, in its Three Forms, and Trover, the Plea of the General Issue was, Not Guilty; in Replevin, Won Cepit; in Detinue, Non Detinet; in Debt upon a Simple Contract, Nil Debet; in Debt on a Specialty and in Covenant, it was Non effl Factum; and, in both Special and General Assumpsit, Non Assumpsit, or that the defendant made no such Promise. The effect of these General Issues varied with the different Forms of Action, as to what Defenses could be set up under them, and what must be raised by Specific Denials aimed at Particular Allegations, and what by Pleas in Confession and Avoidance.

To confine the investigation to the points of actual disagreement, and relieve the plaintiff of the burden of proving what the defendant does not really dispute, it is provided in Code Pleading that the plaintiff may Verify his Complaint, and then the Denials of the Answer must be Specific, and must also be made under Oath. This requires the Denials to be truthfully made, and to put in Issue only the points on which the defendant means to rely. Thus, in a suit on a fire insurance policy, there may be no dispute as to the execution of the contract sued on, but the company may expect to avoid liability by showing in Defense some excuse. Accordingly, if the Complaint be Verified, the company cannot Deny the signature or due execution of the policy, of which the Proof might be difficult for the plaintiff to obtain and produce. It is a great imposition to compel the plaintiff to produce, and the Court to hear, evidence in regard to what is not truly disputed. It is burdensome enough to have to establish rights in real controversies. 7c At Common Law; while it is a prin

ple that Pleadings ought to be true, ye there were no means of enforcing the Rule Thus the Common-Law Pleadings often fail ed to reduce the case to the real Issues a dispute.

Report of the Common-Law Commissioners, ot which the Rules of HiIT. 4 Wm. IV were founded by which the Scope of the General Issue was limit ed, it is said: “Special Pleading, considered in its principle, is a valuable forensic invention peculiar to the Common Law of England, by the effect of which the precise point in controversy between the parties is developed, and presented in a shape fit for decision. If that point is found to consist of matter of fact, the parties are thus apprised of the exact nature of the question to be decided by the Jury, and are enabled to prepare t,ier proofs with proportionate precision. If, on the other hand, it turns out to be Matter of Law, they have the means of immediately obtaining the decision of the cause, without the expense and trouble of a Trial, by De-
murrer; that is, by referring the legal question so evolved, to the determination of the Judge. But where, Instead of Special Pleading, the General Issue is used, and under it the defendant is allowed to bring forward matters in Confession and Avoidance, these benefits are lost. Consisting, as that Plea does, of a mere summary denial of the case stated by the plaintiff, and giving no notice of any defensive Allegation on which the defendant means to rely, it sends the whole case on either side to Trial, without distinguishing the fact from the law, and without defining the exact question or questions of fact to be tried. It not infrequently, therefore, happens that the parties are taken by surprise, and find themselves opposed by some unexpected matter of defense or reply, which, from the want of timely notice, they are not In due condition to resist. But nif effect of more common, aid indeed almost invariable, occurrence is the unnecessary ac-
cumulation of proof, and consequently of expense; for as nothing is admitted upon the Pleadings, each party is obliged to prepare
himself, as far as it is practicable, with evidence upon nil the different points which the Nature of the Action can by possibility make it Incumbent upon him to establish, though many of them may turn out to he undisputed, and many of them may be such as his adversary, If compelled to plead specially, would have thought it undesirable to dispute. It may even happen (and that Is not an unfrequent occurrence) that the controversy under this form of Plea turns entirely upon the Matter of Law, there being no fact really in dispute; and In that case the Mode of Decision by Jury is not only defective, but misplaced, and the Trial might have been spared altogether, if the parties had proceeded by way of Special Pleading, and raised the question upon Demurrer."

---

Nothing could be more absurd than the irregular, variable, and arbitrary Scope of the General Issue in the Different Forms of Action. There is no rhyme or reason or policy in it; nothing but a bewilderment of historical eccentricities. The Function of Pleading is to ascertain with precision the Matters on which the Parties differ and the points on which they agree, and thus to arrive at Certain Clear-Cut Issues upon which the case has to be decided. The main Object of Pleadings is to produce such Issues, and thus to narrow the controversy to the real points which have to be contested and proved. The practical utility of Pleadings to accomplish this function or object has been grievously impaired by the unreasonable Scope and Latitude which are allowed to the General Issue in some actions. The apparent Singleness and Simplicity of the General Issue are entirely illusory. It fails to focus the controversy upon the real point. It frequently violates the Rule that a Party must either Plead by Way of Denial or in Confession and Avoidance. In Assumpsit, Case, Debt on Simple Contract, Ejectment, and Trover, the General Issue has an Exceedingly Broad Scope, which cannot be explained by any principle or process of reason. In view of the important character of this Plea in restricting the progress of the Pleadings and extending the privilege of the defendant in establishing his Defense in evidence, it seems proper here to explain in what cases it should be used. To do this, it is necessary to examine the Scope of the Different General Issues in each Particular Action, to ascertain what Defenses must or must not be Plead Specially.

Where a given Defense can be set up under the General Issue, it is improper to attempt to raise that Defense by a Specific Traverse. Where the General Issue can be used as a Denial, it must be used. The reason for, requiring the General Issue seems to have been to close the Pleadings at an early Stage. The Rule, however, does not prohibit a Party from Pleading Affirmatively New Matter which is Admissible under the General Issue, but only such as constitutes a mere Denial.

In view of the important character of this Plea in restricting the progress of the Pleadings and extending the privilege of the defendant in establishing his Defense in evidence, it seems proper here to explain in what cases it should be used. To do this, it is necessary to examine the Scope of the Different General Issues in each Particular Action, to ascertain what Defenses must or must not be Plead Specially.

In One Action a given Defense may be Admissible under the General Issue, while in another the same Defense would require a Specific Traverse or an Affirmative Plea.

---

Demurrers to special pleas was not error. Alabama: People’s Savings Bank v. Jordan, 200 Ala. 500, 76 So. 442 (1917); Shepherd v. Butcher Tool & Hardware Co., 198 Ala. 275, 73 So. 498 (1916); Huntsville Knitting Co. v. Biner, 198 Ala. 528, 73 So. 907 (1916); Virginia: Cox v. Hagan, 123 Va. 656, 100 SE. 666 (1919).

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

225. If, instead of Denying in the Direct Form, the Party wishes to assert a Defense in Justification or Discharge of the Matter alleged, he must Plead by Way of Confession and Avoidance. Pleading in Confession and Avoidance Admits the Truth of Opposing Allegations, and Avoids their Legal Effect by alleging Other Facts. Pleas in Confession and Avoidance are divided, with reference to their subject-matter, into:

(a) Pleas in Justification or Excuse. Such a Plea, while Admitting the Facts alleged by the plaintiff, shows in effect that he had not at any time a Good Cause of Action, either by reason of some legal right of the defendant justifying his conduct in Point of Law, or some act or conduct of the plaintiff excusing him from liability in the particular case.

(b) Pleas in Discharge. Such a Plea Admits that a Cause of Action once existed in the plaintiff, but shows that it has been Discharged by some Matter subsequent, either of Fact or of Law.

Pleadings in Confession and Avoidance tie not Tender Issue, but Conclude with a Verification and Prayer of Judgment.

In General

A PLEADING in Confession and Avoidance, as the terms imply, does not, like the Traverse, deny the Allegations of Fact contained in the Opposing Pleading, but Confesses them, and Avoids their Legal Effect. A Plea in Confession and Avoidance, for instance, Confesses the Truth of the Allegations in the Declaration, either expressly or by implication, and then proceeds to allege New Matter which deprives the Facts admitted of their Ordinary Legal Effect, and avoids them. Thus, in an Action of Trespass for Assault and Battery, a Plea Admitting Facts alleged to have been done by the defendant, but showing that they were done by the plaintiff, is a Plea in Confession and Avoidance.

Affirmative Pleas in Confession and Avoidance are either by Way of Justification and Excuse, showing that, even admitting plaintiff’s prima facie case, he never had a Cause of Action, or by way of Discharge, showing that, although a Cause of Action once existed, yet it has been taken away by some Subsequent Matter. Pleas of Estoppel are another variety of Affirmative Pleas.52

Pleas in Justification or Excuse

A Plea in Justification or Excuse shows that the plaintiff never had at any time a good Cause of Action, either by reason of some legal right of the defendant justifying his conduct in Point of Law, or some act or conduct of the plaintiff Excusing him (the defendant) from liability in the particular case. The Former is a Plea in Justification; the latter, a Plea in Excuse. This distinction is supported by authority, though Pleas of Both Classes are usually treated together, as being of the same general effect. Where the defendant, admitting the facts stated by the plaintiff to be true, alleges in contradiction the exercise of a right founded upon Matter of Title, Interest in or Respecting Land, Authority derived either Mediatly or Immediately from the plaintiff, or the operation of some General Rule of Law applicable to the particular case, the Plea is one of Justification, the Defense being that the doing or omission of the acts complained of was Justified in Point of Law by the existence of such right. Here the facts must be fully set forth, as a Justification must be Specially Plead. But where, still Adæ, Dana v. Bryant, 1 Gil. (Ill.) 104 (1844).

mitting the plaintiff’s Allegations, the defendant Pleads, for instance, that his conduct was purely in Self-Defense, or that the performance by him of a contract obligation was prevented by the plaintiff, the Plea is one of Excuse, the plaintiff’s conduct being relied on as his apology for doing or not doing the act in question; and here, again, the statement must be particular, the reason for all Special Pleadings being to fully apprise the adversary of what he is to be called upon to meet. Pleas in Justification or Excuse generally include all Pleas in Confession and Avoidance which are not in Discharge of the defendant’s liability. The form of Plea in Justification and Excuse is set out below:

**FORM OF PLEA IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE**

(In Justification and Excuse)

IN THE KING’S BENCH

Term, in the year of the reign of King George the Fourth.

Clyde Dowell

aft.

Arthur Brown

THAT at the time of the alleged trespasses the plaintiff made an assault upon John Kane, and was beating him, in breach of the

A Plea In Justification or excuse admits plaintiffs Allegations, but in effect denies plaintiff’s Cause of Action, either because defendant is justified, or is excused from liability through some act or conduct of plaintiff. Florida East Coast Ry. Co. v. Peters, 72 Pae. 311, 73 So. 151 (1916).  

It will be interesting here for the student to compare the Common-Law Method of Pleading in Confession and Avoidance with the statement of “new matter constituting a defense.” prescribed by the codes. See Bliss, Law of Pleading Under the Codes of Civil Procedure Pt. 2, c. 17 (St. Louis, 1887).

All matters In Confession and Avoidance must be Plead ed Specially. Florida East Coast By. Co. v. Peters, 72 Fig. 311, 78 So. 151 (1910). peace, whereupon the defendant gently laid his hand on the plaintiff in order to preserve the peace, and to prevent the plaintiff from further beating the said John Kane, doing no more than was necessary for that purpose, which are the alleged trespasses. And this the said Clyde Dowell is ready to verify.

Wherefore he prays judgment if the said Arthur Brown ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, etc.

3 CHITrY, Treatise on Pleading with Precedents and Forms, 1070—1071 (13th Am. ed., Springfield 1859), contains other forms.

**Pleas in Discharge**

A PLEA in Discharge admits that the plaintiff once had a Right of Action, but shows that it is Discharged or Released by Some Matter Subsequent, either of Fact or Law. The most Common Pleas in Discharge are Payment; Release; Tender; Set-Off; Bankruptcy; the Statute of Limitations.
83. See Note, Statute of Limitations—Permanent or Temporary Injury—Plea of Non-Aeerevit, 11 Ill.L. Rev. 56 (1916).

As to Arbitrament and Award, see, Indiana: Ilborn v. Perry, 14 lad. 32 (1830); Maryland: lingling v. Kohihas, 18 I.ld. 148 (1862).

As to Payment or Accord and Satisfaction, see, English: Goodchild v. Pledge, 1 Mees. & W. 363, 150 Eng.Rep. 474 (1836); Indiana: Nill v. Comparet, 15 md. 243 (1860).


As to the Statute of Limitations, see Earcstaff v. Russe1, 10 Macs. & W. 365, 152 Eng.Rep. 511 (1842).


A Railway Company’s Plea in Action for killing cat tie claiming a Release of liability, but denying negligence, was held bad, as it sought to avoid liabil. ity, but failed to confess negligence. Central of Georgia By. Co. v. Williams, 200 Ala. 73, 75 So. 401 (1917).

462

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Conclusion of Pleading

A PLEADING in Confession and Avoidance does not Tender Issue, and, like all other Pleadings which do not Tender Issue, it Concludes with a Verification and Prayer of Judgment.

GIVING COLOR

226. A Plea in Confession and Avoidance must Give Color; that is, admit the apparent truth of the plaintiff’s Allegations and give him credit for an apparent or prima facie Right of Action, which the New Matter in the Plea destroys. Color may be Express or implied.

Implied Color is the tacit admission of the plaintiff’s prima facie case by failure to deny it.

Express Color is a Fictitious Allegation, not Traversable, to give an appearance of right to the plaintiff, and thus enable the defendant to Plead Specially his own Title, which would otherwise amount to the General Issue. It is a licensed evasion of the rule against Pleading Contradictory Matter Specially.

Giving Color

IT is a rule that Every Pleading by way of Confession and Avoidance must Give Color. “Color”, as a Term of Pleading, signifies an apparent or prima fade right; and the meaning of the Rule that Every Pleading in Confession and Avoidance must Give Color is that it must admit an apparent right in the Opposite Party, and rely, therefore, on some New Matter by which that apparent right is defeated.56

---

Brown v. Archer, 1 11111 (N.Y.) 266 (1841); Van Et~

Thus, in an Action of Covenant on an indenture of lease, for not repairing, suppose the defendant Pleads a Release by Way of Confession and Avoidance, thus: “And the said C. D. by X. Y., his Attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that the said AS, ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action against him, the said CD, because he says that after the said Breach of Covenant, and before the Corn. mencement of this Suit, to wit the said A.B. by his certain deed of release, Sealed with his Seal and now shown to the Court here, did remise, release,” etc., all Damages from said Breach of Covenant, etc. This Plea Gives Color to the Declaration, for it admits an apparent right in the plaintiff, namely, that the defendant did, as alleged in the Declaration, execute the deed, and break the Covenant therein contained, and would, therefore, prima fade be chargeable with Damages on that ground; but it goes on and shows new matter, not before disclosed, by which that apparent right is shown not to exist, namely, that the plaintiff executed a release. Suppose the plaintiff files a Replication to this Plea, saying that at the time of making the said supposed deed of Release, he was unlawfully imprisoned by the defendant, until, by force and duress of that imprisonment, he made the supposed deed of release, etc. Here the plaintiff in his Replication Gives Color to the Plea. He impliedly admits that the defendant has prifila fade a good Defense, namely, that such Re.

ten v. Hurst, 0 11111 (N.Y.) 311 (1544); Conger v. Johnston, 2 Denio (N.Y.) 96 (1846); Ohio: Davis v Mathews, 2 Ohio 257 (1826); Vermont: Merritt v Miller, 13 Vt. 416 (1841); Federal: Dibble v Duncan, 2 McLean, 553, Fcd.CasNo.3,880 (1811).
Pleas in Confession and Avoidance must either expressly or impliedly admit that the Allegations in the Declaration are true, with a statement of matter which destroys their effect, and must confess a prima fade Right of Action in the opposite party, and then state new matter by which that apparent right Is defeated. Bavarian Brewing Ca v. Eetkowski, 1 W.W.Harr, 225, 113 A. 903 (Del.Super.192)

Sec. 226

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

lease was executed as alleged in the Plea, and that the defendant, therefore, is apparently Discharged, but he sets up New Matter by which the effect of the Plea is avoided, namely, that the Release was obtained by duress.

Suppose, on the other hand, the plaintiff, instead of Replying as above stated, should Reply that the Release was executed by him, but to another person, and not to the defendant. This Replication would be bad as a Replication in Confession and Avoidance, for Wanting Color, because, if the Release were not to the defendant, there would not exist even an apparent Defense, requiring the Allegation of New Matter to avoid it; and the Plea might be sufficiently answered by a Traverse, denying that the deed stated in the Plea is the deed of the plaintiff. So, in an Action of Trespass Quare Clausum Fregit, where the Declaration charges the defendants with breaking and entering the plaintiff’s close, a Plea by Way of Confession and Avoidance is bad, as Wanting Color, where it alleges that at the time of the alleged Trespass one of the defendants was seised in tail of the said close, and the other defendant in possession of it, as his lessee for years, since, if this be so, it follows that the plaintiff has not even a colorable right to maintain the Action as for Trespass to his close. In such a case the usual and regular course would be, not to Plead in Confession and Avoidance, but to plead the General Issue, Not Guilty, which puts the plaintiff’s possession of the close in issue, as well as the mere fact of the Trespass.

The tacit admission, by failure to Deny, which we have just been considering, has been called “Implied Color,” to distinguish it from another kind, which is in some instances inserted in the Pleading, and is therefore called “Express
Color.’’ 88

Where the Nature of the Defense is such that it would contradict the plaintiff’s prima fade case, the defendant cannot Plead it

This Plea makes no such confession, and is therefore bad. Instead of saying, as the pleader should have done, that the several Causes of Action mentioned in the Declaration did not accrue within six years, the words are that the several supposed Causes of Action mentioned in the Declaration, ‘‘if any such there were, or still are, did not accrue within six years. The defendants do not admit that but for the statute of Limitations the plaintiff could have sued.’’

And see Margetts v. Bays, 4 Ado. & B. 489, 111 Bug. Rep. 871 (1836); Gould v. Lashury, 1 Cr., M. & lii. 254, 140 Eng.Rep. 1075 (1834), (where, in an Action of Debt on Simple Contract, a Plea that the defendant was discharged under the insolvent debtor’s act from the debts and Causes of Action, “if any,” etc. was held bad).

But see, contra, Wise v. Hodson, 11 Adol. & E. Sib. 113 Engltpe. 024 (1541), where, in an Action of Trespass for assault and battery, a Plea, that ‘‘if any hurt or damage happened or was occasioned’’ to the plaintiff, it was by reason of the defendants acting in self-defense, etc., was sustained.

88. ‘‘The learned Serjeant Williams, whose notes upon Saunders’ Reports are often cited in this work; was a gentleman of very florid complexion, which circumstance gave the irreverent youth of the bar occasion to say that he bad much express color. Tradition Informs us also that the same Serjeant Williams had a country place near London, to which he was wont to resort for the week-end, and that he drove a horse which was given to balking; whereupon it was commented, how strange it was that a horse belonging to s- learned a pleader should demur when he ought to go to the country.’’ Keigwin, Precedents of Pleading at Common Law, 554 (Washington, Ill. C., 1910).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Specially without giving Express Color in order to have something to avoid.

Express Color is defined to be ‘‘a feigned matter pleaded by the defendant in an Action of Trespass, from which the plaintiff seems to have a good cause of action, whereas he has in truth only an Appearance or Color of Cause.’’ 89 It is the setting up of a straw man, in order to have something to knock down. It occurs at present only in Trespass, and is very seldom used even in that action. Its use and nature may be thus explained: The necessity of an Implied Color has evidently the effect of obliging the Pleader to Traverse in many instances in which his case, when fully stated, does not turn on a mere Denial of Fact, but involves some consideration of Law. In the example first above given of Want of Color, this would not be so, for if the deed of Release were executed, not to the defendant, but to a different person, this, of course, amounts to no more than a mere Denial that the deed, as alleged in the Plea, is the deed of the plaintiff, and no Question of Law can be said to arise tinder this Traverse. But, in the second example given above of want of Implied Color, suppose the plaintiff was in the wrongful possession of the close, without any further appearance of title than the possession itself, at the time of the trespass alleged and that the defendants entered in the assertion of their title, They could not, without more, set forth their title in a Plea by Way of Confession and Avoidance, because, as we have seen, it would not Give Color,


See, also, Thaycr, Preliminary Treatise on Evidence at the Common Law, e. V, Law and Fact In Jury TriaIs, 232—234 (Boston, 1598), on Express Color as a method of withdrawing questions from the Jury by Pleading in confession and Avoidance. and they would therefore be driven to Plead the General Issue, Not Guilty. By this Plea an issue is produced, whether or not the defendants are guilty of the Trespass; but upon Trial of the Issue it may be found that the question turns entirely upon Construction of Law. The defendants say they are not guilty of breaking the “close of the plaintiff,” as alleged in the Declaration, and the reason that they are not guilty is that they had the title and right to possession of the close. Their title involves a legal question, and yet this question, under the plea of Not Guilty, would be triable by the Jury under Instructions by the Court. The defendants may wish to avoid this, and to bring the question up for decision by the Court, instead of by the Jury. They can do this if they can set forth their Title Specially in their Plea, for then the plaintiff, if disposed to question the sufficiency of the title, may Demur to
the Plea, and thus refer the legal question to the Court. But such a Plea, as we have seen, if Pleaded simply according to the fact, would be bad for Want of Color. This difficulty was overcome by the practice of giving Express Color to the Plea in lieu of the Implied Color which was wanting. It is done by inserting in the Plea a Fictitious Allegation of some Colorable but Insufficient Title in the plaintiff, which was at the same time avoided by showing the Preferable Title of the defendant. This was called “Giving Color,” and it was held to cure or prevent the objection which would otherwise arise from the want of Implied Color. Such a Plea Contd. teased some apparent title in the plaintiff, as a demise under which he entered and was possessed, and therefore admits that the close was in some sense the close of the plain-tiff, but at the same time it avoids this colorable title by showing that of the defendant, and alleging that the plaintiff’s title under the demise was defective in Point of Law, and that nothing passed under the demise.

Sec. 228

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

When Express Color was thus given, the plaintiff was not allowed, In his Replication, to Traverse the Fictitious Matter suggested by Way of Color; for, its only object being to prevent a difficulty in Form, such Traverse would be wholly foreign to the merits of the cause, and would only serve to frustrate the Fiction which the Law, in such case, allows. The plaintiff would therefore pass over the Color without notice, and would either Traverse the title of the defendant, if he meant to contest its truth in Point of Fact, or Demur to it, if lie meant to contest its sufficiency in Point of Law; and thus the defendant would obtain his object of bringing any legal question raised upon his title under consideration of the Court, and withdrawing it from the Jury.

Express Color must consist of such matter as, if it were effectual, would maintain the nature of the action.~ On the other hand, the right suggested must be colorable only, and must not amount to a real or actual right; for otherwise the plaintiff would be entitled to recover on the defendant’s own showing, and the Plea would be an insufficient answer.61

PLEADINGS IN ESTOPPEL

227. A Plea in Estoppel is one which neither Confesses nor Avoids, but Pleads a previous inconsistent Act, Allegation, or Denial of the Party which precludes him from maintaining his Action or Defense.

A MAN is sometimes precluded in law from alleging or denying a fact in consequence of his own previous Act, Allegation, or Denial of a contrary tenor; and this preclusion is called an Estoppel. An Estoppel may arise either from Matter of Record,— from the deed of the party,—or from Matter in Pais, that is, matter of fact. Thus, any


matter adjudicated in a Court of Record will forever preclude the party from afterwards contesting the same fact in a subsequent suit with his adversary. This is an Estoppel by Matter of Record. As an instance of an Es~ toppel by Deed may be mentioned the case of a bond reciting a certain fact. The party executing the bond will be precluded from afterwards denying, in any action brought upon that instrument, the fact so recited. An example of an Estoppel by Matter in Pais occurs when one man has accepted rent of another. He will be estopped from afterwards denying, in any action with that person, that he was at the time of such acceptance his tenant. The tenant is likewise estopped to deny his landlord’s title.

This doctrine of law gives rise to a Kind of Pleading that is neither by Way of Traverse nor Confession and Avoidance, viz.: a Pleading that, waiving any Question on the Fact, relies merely on the Estoppel; and, after stating the previous Act, Allegation, or Denial on the Opposite Party, Prays Judgment if he shall be received or admitted to aver contrary to what he before did or said.87 This is called a Pleading by Way of Estoppel. It may be interposed instead of a Traverse, without admitting Traversable Averments on the other sideY3

ADMISSION BY FAILURE TO DENY
228. Every Pleading is taken to Confess such Traversable Matters alleged on the other side as it does not Traverse.

It is an important Rule of Pleading that a Pleading admits every Traversable Fact alleged on the other side that it does not Traverse.


(1606). 93 See Dana v. Bryant, 1 Gil. (III.) 104 (1844).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Thus, in an Action of Covenant on an indenture, a Plea of Release, as it does not Traverse the execution of the indenture, is taken to admit it, and a Replication of Duress to such a Plea, since it does not Traverse the Release, admits its execution. So, in an Action of Covenant on an indenture of lease, for failure to repair, a Plea Traversing the want of repair admits the indenture. The effect of such an admission is to Conclude the Party, even though the Jury should improperly go out of the Issue and find the contrary of what is thus Confessed on the Record.

The Rule extends only to such Matters as are Traversable. Matters of Law, therefore, or any other matters which are not fit subjects of Traverse, are not so admitted.


A party is bound by the Allegations of Fact in his own pleading, and when there is no denial of such Allegations they are accepted as true, if material, and that meaning ascribed to the words that is usually intended by their use. Florida East Coast fly. Co. v. Peters, 80 Fla. 382, 86 So. 217 (1916).

An admission In pleading is conclusive against the party making it on the Trial of the Particular Issue to which the admission relates. Where the defendant pleads several pleas, the plaintiff cannot use an admission in one plea to establish a fact denied in another. Starkweather v. Kittle, 17 Wend. (N.Y.) 20 (1817).

An admission In pleading is conclusive against the party making it on the Trial of the Particular Issue to which the admission relates. Where the defendant pleads several pleas, the plaintiff cannot use an admission in one plea to establish a fact denied in another. Starkweather v. Kittle, 17 Wend. (N.Y.) 20 (1817).


PROTESTATION

229. A Traversable Fact in Pleading may be passed over without Traverse, and the right to contest it in another action preserved by a Protestation in the Pleading in the present action. A Protestation has no effect in the existing suit. Now that several Pleas may he used, there is little, if any, need for Protestation.
THE practice of Protestation of Facts not Denied arose where the Pledger, wishing to avail himself of the right to contest in a future action some Traversable Fact in the pending action, passes it by without Traverse, but at the same time makes a declaration collateral or incidental to his main Pleading, importing that the Fact so passed over is untrue. The necessity for this arose from the Rule that Pleadings must not be double, and that Every Pleading is taken to Admit such Matters as it does not Traverse. Such being its only purpose, it is wholly without effect in the action in which it occurs, as, notwithstanding its use, every Traversable Fact not Traversed is taken as Admitted in the existing suit. Now that Several Pleas may be employed, there seems no reason for not denying every Allegation that one does not wish to admit, and no occasion for Protestation.

Suppose, in an Action of Assumpsit for goods sold, the defendant Pleads that he gave the plaintiff certain goods in full satisfaction and Discharge, etc., and that the plaintiff accepted them in full satisfaction and Discharge; and the plaintiff, while Traversing the acceptance, does not wish to admit the delivery of the goods to him, lest the delivery; even though not accepted, might become the subject of dispute in some subsequent action. To accomplish this purpose he takes the delivery by Protestation, and Traverses the acceptance, in his Replication, thus: “And the said A.B. says, that by reason of anything in the said Plea alleged, he ought not to be barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action against the said C.D., because, Protesting that the said O.D. did not give or deliver to him, the said A.B., the said goods as the said C.D. hath above in Pleading alleged, for Replication, nevertheless, in this behalf, the said A.B. says that he, the said A.B., did not accept the said goods in full satisfaction and Discharge of the said Promises and Undertakings, and of all Damages accrued to the said A.B. by reason of the Nonperformance thereof, in Manner and Form as the said C.D. hath above alleged; and this the said A.B. Prays may be inquired of by the country.”

As stated above, the only object and effect of the Protestation is to allow the party to pass by a Fact without Traversing it, and without precluding himself from disputing it in another suit. It is wholly without effect in the action in which it occurs. Under the Rule already laid down, every Traversable Fact not Traversed is, notwithstanding the Protestation, to be taken as admitted in the existing suit. It is also given as a Rule, that if upon the Traverse the Issue is found against the Party Protest ing the Protestation does not avail; and that it is of no use except in the event of the Issue being determined in his favor; with this Exception, however, that if the Matter taken by Protestation be such as the Pledger could not have taken Issue upon, the Protestation in that case shall avail, even though the Issue taken were decided against him.

ARGUMENTATIVE PLEAS

230. As a Pleading is a Statement of the Operative Facts which constitute the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action or the Defendant’s Defense, and not of evidence or argument, it must set forth its Allegations of Fact in a Direct and Positive Form, and not leave them to be collected by Inference and argument only.

IT is a branch of this Rule that Two Affirmatives do not make a Good Negative; nor Two Negatives a Good
Affirmative. The reason for this Rule is that not only must precision be observed in Allegations of Material Facts, but the Adverse Party must be enabled to Traverse such Allegations by a Direct and Distinct Denial.

Thus, for example, if a defendant, instead of Pleading Performance of a Covenant Generally or Specially, as might be proper, alleges simply that he has not broken his covenant, he leaves the Fact of Performance to be inferred from that of the covenants not being broken, so that the Former Fact cannot be directly put in Issue by a Traverse of the Plea; and the Plea is therefore bad.1

In an Action of Trover for ten pieces of money the defendant Pleaded that there was a wager between the plaintiff and one C concerning the quantity of yards of velvet in a cloak, and the plaintiff and C each delivered into the defendant’s hand ten pieces of money, to be delivered to C if there were ten yards of velvet in the cloak, and if not, to the

plaintiff; and proceeded to allege that, upon measuring of the cloak, it was found that there were ten yards of velvet therein, whereupon the defendant delivered the pieces of money to C. Upon Demurrer, Gawdy held the Plea to be good enough, “for the measuring thereof is the fittest way for the trying it: and when it is so found by the measuring, he had good cause to deliver them out of his hands to him who had won the wager. But Fenner and Popham held, that the Plea was not good: for it may be that the measuring was false, and therefore he ought to have Averred in fact, that there were ten yards, and that it was so found upon tile measuring thereof.”2

So, in an Action of Trespass, for taking and carrying away the plaintiff’s goods, the defendant Pleaded that the plaintiff never had any goods. “This is an infallible argument that the defendant is Not Guilty, and yet it is no Plea.”3

Again, in Ejectment, the defendant Pleaded a surrender of a copyhold by the hand of Fosset, then Steward of the Manor. The plaintiff Traversed that Fosset was Steward. All the Court held this to be No Issue, and that the Traverse ought to be that he did not surrender; for if he were not Steward, the surrender is void.4 The reason of this decision appears to be that to Deny that Fosset was Steward could be only so far Material as it tended to show that the surrender was a nullity; and that it was, therefore, an Argumentative Denial of the surrender, which, if intended to be Traversed, ought to be Traversed in a Direct Form.

It is a Branch of this Rule that Two Affirmatives do not make a Good Issue.5 The reason is that the Traverse by the Second Affirmative is Argumentative in its nature. Thus, if it be alleged by the defendant that a Party died seised in fee, and the Plaintiff alleged that he died seised in tail, this is not a Good Issue; because the Latter Allegation amounts to a Denial of a seisin in fee, but denies it by Argument or Inference only. It is this Branch of the Rule against Argumentativeness that gave rise to the Form of a Special Traverse. Where, for any of the reasons mentioned in a preceding part of this work, it became expedient for a Party Traversing to set forth New Affirmative Matter tending to explain or qualify his Denial, he is allowed to do so; but as this, standing alone, will render his Pleading Argumentative, he is required to add to his Affirmative Allegation an Express Denial, which is held to cure or prevent the Argumentativeness.6 Thus, in the example last given, the plaintiff


2. Moses v. Allen, 01 Md. 42, 50, 46 A. 323 (1900), in which the Plea set forth reasons which properly were Matters of Evidence, and hence could not be traversed except by a replication of the same faulty character. The Demurrer, therefore, was properly sustained.

3. Sec. 230

4. The reason of this decision appears to be that to Deny that Fosset was Steward could be only so far Material as it tended to show that the surrender was a nullity; and that it was, therefore, an Argumentative Denial of the surrender, which, if intended to be Traversed, ought to be Traversed in a Direct Form.

5. The reason is that the Traverse by the Second Affirmative is Argumentative in its nature.

6. Thus, in the example last given, the plaintiff

(1827); New Hampshire: Watriss v. Pierce, 36 N. H. 230 (1858); New York: Spencer v. Southwick, 9
Johns. (N.Y.) 314 (1812); Dyett v. Pendleton, S Cow. (N.Y.) 723 (1826); Fidier v. Deiavan, 20 Wend. (N.Y.) 57 (1838); Federal: Fletcher v. Peek, 6 Cranch (U.S.) 87, 3 LEd. 162 (1810).


See, also, the following cases: English: Blackman v. Tidderley, 11 Mod. 3, 88 Eng.Rep. 869 (1704); Id. 2 Salk. 423, 91 Eng.Rep. 869 (1704); Murray v. East India Co., S Earn. & Aid. 215, 106 Eng.Rep. 1167 (1821); Connecticut: Goshen & Sharon Turnpike Co. v. Sears, 7 Conn. 92 (1828); Illinois: Misner v. Granger, 4 Gil. (Ill.) 9 (1847); Spurck v. Fornek, 40 Ill. 438 (1866); Indiana: Clark v. Lineberger, 44 Ill. 223 (1873); Board of Com’ts of Clinton County v. Hill, 122 Ind. 215, 23 N.E. 779 (1890); Massachusetts: Dale v. Flennie, 4 Pkg. (Mass.) 503.

Sec. 231

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

may allege, if he pleases, that the Party died seised in tail; but then he must add, Absque Hoc, that he died seised in fee, and thus resort to the Form of a Special Traverse. The doctrine, however, that Two Affirmatives do not make a Good issue, is not taken so strictly but that the Issue will, in some cases, be good, if there is sufficient Negative and Affirmative in effect, though, in the Form of Words, there be a Double Affirmative. Thus, in Debt on a lease for years, where the defendant Pleaded that the plaintiff had nothing at the time of the lease made, and the plaintiff Replied that he was seised in fee, this was held a Good Issue.

Another Branch of the Rule against Argumentativeness is that Two Negatives do not make a Good Issue. Thus, if the defendant Plead that he requested the plaintiff to deliver an abstract of his title, but that the plaintiff did not, when so requested, deliver such abstract, but neglected so to do, the plaintiff cannot Reply that he did not neglect and refuse to deliver such abstract, but should Allege Affirmatively that he did deliver.

PLEAS AMOUNTING TO THE GENERAL ISSUE

231. Where a Plea amounts to the General Issue, it should be so Pleaded. In other words, where the Matter of Defense may be raised under the General Issue in the Particular Action involved, it must be so Pleaded. This General Rule is subject to the Qualification that where Express Color is given, or where such Implied Color is given, the Plea will not Amount to the General Issue, Where the Dc-tense is in Confession and Avoidance, it may


Martin v. Smith, 6 East 557, 102 Eng.Rep. 1401 be Specially Pleaded, even though the Plea consists of Matter which may be given in evidence under the General Issue.
IT is a well-established Rule of Pleading that, if Facts are alleged Specially which can be given in evidence under the General Issue, such Plea is obnoxious to Special Demurrer. The point has been frequently urged with success that a Special Plea amounted to the General Issue. If the General Issue can be used, then it must be used, and to employ a Specific Denial would be Bad in Form. Thus, even if the defendant wishes to Deny one of Several Material Elements making up the Cause of Action, thereby narrowing the issues of Fact, he is not allowed to do so. The reason or purpose of insisting upon the General Issue seems to have been that of avoiding making of Long Records and of Closing the Pleadings at an Early Stage.

12. Coke, Litueton, 303b (Philadelphia, 1853)

Comyns, Digest, “Pleurer”, E. 14 (New York. 1825). See, also, the following cases: English: Holler v. Bush, Salk, 394, 91 Eng.Rep. 342 (1607); Birch v. Wilson, 2 3lod 74, 86 Eng.Rep. 1068 (1C77); Lywier V. Wood, CroCar. 157, 79 Eng.leip. 737 (1629); Warner v. Wainsford, Rob. 127, 80 Eng.leip. 276 (1603); 11.5. 10 Hen. VI, in; YR 22 Ilen, VI, 37 Illinois;

City of Qncy v. Warfield, 25 III. 276 (1861)

Knoebel v. Kireher, 33 Ill. 308 (1864); Illinois Cent.


“The reason for disallowing Pleas of this kind is not, however, that they tend to inconvenient prolixity, or that they refer matters of fact to the Court—for they are not, like Pleas of the former class, liable to either of those objections); but they lead to innovation and confusion, In the established Modes of

1805.

478 (18W.)


The following cases illustrate the General Rule: In an Action of Trespass for entering the plaintiff’s garden, the defendant Pledged that the plaintiff had no such garden. This was Ruled to be No Plea, as it amounted to nothing more than “Not Guilty”; for, if he had no such garden, then the defendant was Not Guilty. So the defendant withdrew his Plea, and said, “Not Guilty.”

So, in Trespass for Depasturing the plaintiff’s herbage, “Non depascit herbas” is No Plea; it should be “Not Guilty”.

So, in Debt for the price of a horse sold, that the defendant did not buy is No Plea, for it amounts to Nil Debet.

Again, in Trespass for entering the plaintiff’s house and keeping possession thereof for a certain time, the defendant Pledged that J.S. was seised in fee thereof, and, being so seised, gave License to the defendant to
Pleading, and tend, not only to destroy the settled distinctions between the different species of pleas, but also to the introduction of New pleas, unknown to the law.\(^8\) Gould, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading, Pt. III, Div. V, c. 11, 519 (6th ed. by Wijhe, Albany, 1009).

\(^8\) In Vermont, the fact that a Special Plea was joined to the General Issue, did not make it objectionable under the Practice Act. Roberts v. Danforth, 92 Vt. 88, 102 A. 335 (1917).

See, also, Ho den v. Fitchburg H. Co., 70 Vt. 125, 39 A. 771 (1898).

13. Y.B. 10 Hen. VI, 16.


17. Y.B. 22 Edw. IV, 29, enter into and possess the house, till he should give him notice to leave it; that thereupon the defendant entered and kept the house for the time mentioned in the Declaration, and had not any notice to leave it, all the time. The plaintiff Demurred Specially, on the ground that this Plea amounted to the General Issue, “Not Guilty”; and the Court gave Judgment on that ground for the plaintiff.\(^8\)

**So, in an Action of Trover for divers loads**
of corn, the defendant in his Plea entitled himself to them as tithes severed. The plaintiff Demurred Specially, on the ground that the Plea “amounted but to Not Guilty,” and the Court gave Judgment for the plaintiff.\(^1\)

**So, in Trespass for Breaking and Entering**
the Plaintiff’s Close, if the defendant Pleads a demise to him by the plaintiff, by virtue whereof he (the defendant) entered and was possessed, this is bad, as amounting to the General Issue, “Not Guilty.” \(20\)

So, in Debt on a Bond, the defendant, by his Plea, confessed the bond, but said that it was executed to another person, and not to the plaintiff. This was held bad, as amounting to *Non Est Factum.* \(6\)

These examples show that a Special Plea thus improperly substituted for the General Issue may be sometimes in a Negative, sometimes in an Affirmative Form. When in the Negative, its Argumentativeness will often serve as an additional test of its faulty quality. Thus, the Plea in the first example, “that

\(^8\) Saundes’s Case, 12 Mod. 513, 88 Eng.Rop. 1486 (1701),


Where matters set up in a Special Plea in an Action on a Sheriff’s bond were provable under the General Issue, the Plea was properly rejected. Raleigh County Court v. Cottle, 79 W.Va. 661, 92 N.E. 110 (1918).

Sec. 231

**PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR**

the plaintiff had no such garden,” is evidently but an Argumentative Allegation that the defendant did not commit, because he could not have committed, the trespass. This, however, does not universally hold; for in the second and third examples the Allegations that the defendant “did not depasture,” and “did not buy,” seem to be in as Direct a Form of Denial as that of Not Guilty. If the Plea be in the Affirmative, the following considerations will always tend to detect the improper construction: If a Good Plea, it must, as heretofore shown, be taken either as a Traverse or as in Confession and Avoidance. Now, taken as a Traverse, such a Plea is clearly open to the Objection of Argumentativeness; for as we have seen, Two Affirmatives make an Argumentative Issue. Thus, in the fourth example, the Allegations show that the house in question was the house of *J.B.*, and they therefore Deny Argumentatively that it was the house of the plaintiff as stated in the Declaration. On the other hand, if a Plea of this kind be intended by Way of Confession and Avoidance, it is bad for Want of Color, for it admits no apparent right in the plaintiff. Thus, in the same example, if it be true that *J.S.* was seised in fee and gave License to the defendant to enter, who entered accordingly, this excludes all title of possession in the plaintiff, and without such title he has No Color to maintain
an Action of Trespass. So, in the example where the defendant Pleads the plaintiff’s own demise, the same observation applies; for if the plaintiff demised to the defendant, who entered accordingly, the plaintiff would then cease to have any title of possession, and he consequently has No Color to support an Action of Trespass.

The fault of Wanting Color being in this manner connected with that of amounting to The General Issue, it is accordingly held that a Plea will be saved from the latter fault where Express Color is given. Thus, in the example of Express Color given, in a former part of this work, the Plea is cured, by the Fictitious Color of Title there given to the plaintiff, of the objection to which it would otherwise be subject—that it amounts to Not Guilty. So, where sufficient Implied Color is given, a Plea will never be open to this kind of objection. And it is further to be observed that, where sufficient Implied Color is given, the Plea will be equally clear of this objection, even though it consist of matter which might be given in evidence under the General Issue. Defendants are allowed, in certain actions, to prove, under this Issue, matters in the Nature of Confession and Avoidance, as, for example, in Assumpsit, a Release or Payment. In such cases the plaintiff, though allowed, is not obliged, to Plead Non Assumpsit, but may, if he pleases, Plead Specially the Payment or Release; and, if he does, such Plea is not open to the objection that it amounts to the General Issue.

It is said that the Court is not bound to allow this objection, but that it is in its discretion to allow a Special Plea amounting to the General Issue, if it involve such Matter of Law as might be unfit for the decision of a Jury. It is also said that, as the Court has such discretion, the proper method of taking advantage of this fault is not by Demurrer, but by Motion to the Court to set aside the Plea and enter the General Issue instead of it. By the clear weight of authority, however, the objection is also ground for Special Demurrer. The objection may and must be raised either by Motion or Special Demurrer.

As a Plea amounting to the General Issue is usually open also to the objection of being Argumentative, or that of Wanting Color, we sometimes find the Rule in question discussed as if it were founded entirely in a view to those objections. This, however, says Stephen, does not seem to be a sufficiently wide foundation for the Rule; for there are instances of Pleas which are faulty, as amounting to the General Issue, which yet do not seem fairly open to the objection of Argumentativeness, and which, on the other hand, being of the Negative Kind or by way of Traverse, require No Color. Besides, there is Express Authority for holding that the true object of this Rule is to avoid prolixity, for it is laid down that “the reason of pressing a General Issue is not for Insufficiency of the Plea, but not to make Long Records when “there is no cause.”

PARTIAL DEFENSES

232. Every Pleading must be an Answer to the Whole of what it Professes to Answer. Partial Defenses must be
Pleaded as such.


27. In addition to the cases cited above, see, also,


THE effect of this Rule is that a Pleading must fully meet the cause of action stated by answering the Whole of it, or all that is material. If it fails in this, it is bad.

Thus, in Trespass for breaking a close and cutting down 300 trees, if the defendant Pleads some Matter of Justification or title as to all but 200 trees, and says nothing as to the 200, his Plea is bad.

As to the proper course for the plaintiff

to take in such cases there is some doubt, and a conflict in the authorities. It is said by Stephen that there is a distinction in a case where the defendant does not profess to Answer the Whole, and a case where, by the Commencement of his Plea, he does profess to do so, but in fact gives a Defective and Partial Answer, applying to part only. He says that in the former case, that is, where the defendant does not profess to Answer the Whole, the plaintiff is entitled to sign Judgment as by Nii? Dic’it against him in respect of that part of the cause of action not answered, and to demur or Reply to the Plea as to the remainder; and, on the other


Sec. 233

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

hand, if he demurs or Replies to the Plea without signing Judgment for the part not answered, the whole action is said to be discontinued. For the Plea, if taken by the plaintiff as an Answer to the Whole Action, it being in fact a Partial Answer only, is, in contemplation of Law, a mere nullity; and there is consequently an interruption or chasm in the Pleading, which is called in technical phrase a “Discontinuance.” And such Discontinuance will amount to Error on the Record.
Where, however, the defendant does profess to Answer the Whole Declaration, but in fact gives a Defective Answer, applying to a Part only, this amounts merely to Insufficient Pleading, and the plaintiff’s course, therefore, is not to sign Judgment for the Part Defectively Answered, but to demur to the Whole Plea.

20. On a discontinuance by a reply to a partial plea without taking a Judgment for the part not answered to upon nil dicit, see Davis v. Burton, 3
A PLEADING BAD IN PART IS BAD ALTOGETHER

233. A Pleading which is Bad in Part is Bad Altogether. In other words, a Plea is treated as a unit, and hence, if it is deficient in any

of Busch v. McCormack, 08 Ill. 226 (1873); Bonham v. People, to Use of Wilson, 102 Ill. 434 (1882).

A Plea professing to answer the whole Declaration, and which answers but One Count, is bad on Demurrer. People’s Shoe Co. v. Sclally, 196 Ala. 349, 71 So. 719 (1916).

A Plea to the entire Declaration, omitting to answer to a material part, is Demurrable. Florida East Coast Ry. Co. v. Peters, 72 Fla. 311, 73 so. 151, Ann. Cas.1918D, 121 (1918).


An item pleaded by the Answer In reduction of any Judgment recovered by the plaintiff –c’ag pro tanto a defense. Oregon Engineering Co. v. City of West Linn, 94 Or. 254, 185 P. 750 (1919).
Whole of that which last preceded. If it falls in any Material Part, it fails altogether. Thus, if in a Declaration of Assumpsit Two Different Promises be alleged in Two Different Counts, and the defendant Plead in Bar to both counts conjointly the statute of limitations, viz., that he did not Promise within six years, and the Plea be an insufficient answer as to one of the Counts, but a good Bar to the other, the Whole Plea is bad, and Neither Promise is sufficiently answered. So, where to an Action of Trespass for False Imprisonment against two defendants they Plead that one of them, A., having ground to believe that his horse had been stolen by the plaintiff, gave him in charge to the other defendant, a constable, whereupon the constable and A., in his aid and by his command, laid hands on the plaintiff, etc., the Plea was adjudged to be bad as to both defendants, because it showed no reasonable ground of suspicion; for A. could not Justify the Arrest without showing such ground; and though the case might be different as to the constable, whose duty was to act on the


Sev, also, the following cases: English: Wehi, v. Martin, 1 Lev. 48, 85 Eng.Rep. 201 (1661); Duffield v. Scott, 3 T.R. 374, 100 Eng.Rep. 025 (1780); Indiana: Ferrand v. Walker, 5 Blackf. (lad.) 424 (1840); Shearman v. Fellows, 5 Blackf. (md.) 459 (1840); New York: Bradley v. Powers, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 330 (1827); Ten Byck v. Waterbury, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 51 (1827).


This Rule seems to result from that which requires each Pleading to have its proper Formal Commencement and Conclusion; for by those Forms, it will be observed, the Matter which any Pleading contains is offered as an Entire Answer to the Whole of that which last preceded. Thus, in the first example above given, the defendant would allege, in the Commencement of his Plea, that the plaintiff “ought not to have or maintain his action” for the reason therein assigned; and therefore he would Pray Judgment, etc., as to the Whole Action in the Conclusion. If, therefore, the answer be insufficient as to One Count, it cannot avail as to the other; because, if taken as a Plea to the latter only, the Commencement and Conclusion would be wrong. It is to be observed that there is but One Plea, and consequently but One Commencement and Conclusion; but if the defendants should Plead the Statute in Bar to the First Count separately, and then Plead it to the Second Count with a New Commencement and Conclusion, thus making Two pleas instead of One, the invalidity of One of these Pleas could not vitiate the other.


Sec. 234

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR
SEVERAL DEFENSES

234. The respective Pleadings subsequent to the Declaration must not contain Several Distinct Answers to the Opposing Pleading. But—

(I) Several Facts may be Plead, if necessary, to constitute a Single Complete Answer.

(II) A defendant in the Same Plea may Plead separately to Different Matters of Claim.

(III) By Statute, Two or More Distinct

Defenses may be Plead in Separate Pleas to the Same Claim, upon leave of Court first obtained. It is to be noted that:

(A) The Statute only applies to

the Pleas of the defendant.
It does not apply to the Replication or Subsequent Pleadings.

(B) Leave will not be granted so as to extend the Statute to Dilatory Pleas.

(C) Where Several Pleas are thus presented, each is to be considered as Independent, and to operate as if Plead ed Alone.

40. In general, on the subject of several Defenses, see:

Treatises: 1 Tidd, Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, c. XXVIII, Of Pleas in Bar (London, 1824); Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading In Civil Actions, c. II, Of the Principals of Pleading, 3, pp. 262—267 (3d Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, 0. C., 1900); Shipman, Handbook of Common-Law Pleading, c. XVII, General Rules Relating to Pleas, 239 (3d ed. by Ballantine, St. Paul, 1923).

Articles: Simpson, A Possible Solution of the Pleading Problem, 53 Ilarv.L.Rev. 169 (1930); Mc Dowall, Alternative Pleading in the United States, 52 Col. L.Irev, 603, 605—605 (1952).


(IV) Several defendants may Plead Separately.

Singleness of issue

IT was the avowed object of Common-Law Pleading to reduce the controversy of the parties to a Single Material Issue decisive of the case. If a defendant had Several Defenses, the Common Law required him to make his Election between them and rest his

one selected. In Whitaker v. Chief Justice Marshall says:

“The principle in Pleading that a Special Plea must Confess and Avoid the fact charged in the Declaration was introduced at a time when the Rigid Practice of the Courts required that every cause should be placed on a Single Point, and when it was deemed error to Plead Specially Matter which Amounted to the General Issue; it was not allowed to Deny the Fact and also to Justify it. The defendant might select his Point of Defense; but, when selected, he was confined to it.

That a Single Point might be presented to the Jury, he was under the necessity of Confessing everything but that point. The attention of the Jury was not directed to Multifarious Objects, but confined to one on which alone the cause depended.” ~

The Rule is well settled that No Plea or Traverse can be good which embraces Different Matters, which cannot be brought within the scope of One Issue. A Plea or


42. Originally, at Common Law, the plaintiff was allowed to plead only One Plea in Bar, as the great aim of Pleading n-as to reduce the controversy to a Single, Clear-Cut, Well-Defined Issue for the Jury, and thereby simplify the Investigation. By use of the various General Issues, Singleness of the Issue early became a fiction, since the Issue, though apparently single in words, was in reality Complex.


Every Plea must be Simple, Entire, Connected, and Confined to a Single Point, and a Plea sotting up more than one Independent fact or set of facts, either of which ts sufficient answer, Is bad for duplicity, whether the Plea Is in Bar, In Abatement, case on the

Freeman,4’

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Replication, therefore, must contain but One Complete Answer to the last Opposing Pleading, the principle being that, as One such AnSwer, if maintained, is sufficient to defeat the Action or Defense, all others are superfluous. It is not necessary, however, that the Single Ground of Defense or Answer to which each Plea or Replication is thus
limited shall consist of a Single Fact, since several connected or dependent Facts or circumstances may be necessary to constitute a Single or Complete Answer. In such a case the fault of Duplicity cannot exist, as such Facts constitute, in fact, but a Single Answer.

The Rule against Duplicity in the Plea

This does not prevent a defendant from giving Several Distinct Answers to Different Matters of Claim in the Declaration. A defendant may therefore Plead the General Issue to One Part of the Declaration, and Matter in Confession and Avoidance to the residue, or One Matter of Abatement to One Part, and or Both. Florida East Coast Ry. Co. v. Peters, 72 Pla. 311, 73 So. 151 (1918).


A Plea of Abatement on the ground of Wrong Venue, and on the ground of defendant being immune from service of process when and where he was served, is bad for duplicity. Fitzgerald v. Southern Farm Agency, 122 Va. 264, 94 S.E. 761 (1918).


Another to Another Part, or may Plead in Abatement to One Part of the Demand, and in Bar as to Another. To Several Counts, or to distinct parts of the Same Count, he may therefore Plead Several Pleas; that is, one to each.

Thus, in an Action of trespass for three assaults and batteries, the defendant may Plead Not Guilty to the First Count; in Excuse—Self-Defense—to the Second; and the Statute of Limitations to the Third. The reason is that the Different Matters so Plead are not alleged to the Same Point, and therefore do not tend to produce Several Issues as to that point. The Rule applies equally to the Replication and Other Subsequent Pleadings in the series, a severance being always proper when there are Several Subjects of Claim or Complaint. This right, however, of thus Pleading Distinct Matters, appears to be subject to the restriction that neither of the Separate Defenses thus alleged can be such as would alone constitute a sufficient Answer to the Whole of the Opposing Claim, since then one only would be necessary.

It may often happen that the defendant may have Several Distinct Answers to give to the Same Claim or Complaint. Thus, in an Action of Trespass for two assaults and batteries, he may have ground to Deny both the trespasses, and also to allege that neither of them was committed within the period of the Statute of Limitations. Prior, however, to the Statutory Regulation which we shall


Each Plea, of course, must be addressed and limited to a different element of the Cause of Action.
presently notice, it was not competent for him to thus Plead Several Answers to the Same Claim, as that would have been an infringement of the Rule against Duplicity. He was therefore obliged to Elect between his Different Defenses, Where more than one thus happened to present themselves, and to rely on that which, in Point of Law and Fact, he might deem best. But as a mistake in that selection might occasion the loss of the cause, contrary to the real merits of the case, this restriction against the use of Several Pleas to the same matter, after being for ages observed in its original severity, was at length considered as contrary to the true principles of justice.

The Rule was changed by the Statute of 4 Anne, c. 16, § 4, 11 Statutes at Large 156 (1705). That section provides that “it shall and may be lawful for any defendant or tenant In any Action or Suit, or for any plaintiff in Replevin, in any Court of Record, with the leave of the same Court, to Plead as Many Several Matters thereto as he shall think necessary for his Defense.” This statute is old enough to have become a part of our Common Law, but in most states substantially the same provision has been expressly enacted. Since this Act the course has been for the defendant, if he wishes to Plead Several Matters to the same Subject of Demand or Complaint, to apply previously I or a Rule of Court permitting him to do so; and upon this a Rule is accordingly drawn up for That purpose.

When Several Pleas are Plead, either to Different Matters, or, by virtue of the Statute, to the Same Matter, the plaintiff may, according to the nature of his case, either Demur to the Whole, or Demur to One Plea

M. See dictum In Auburn & Onwasco Canal Co. v. Leltch, 4 Denlo (N.Y.) 65 (1847).


and Reply to the Other, or make a Several Replication to each Plea; and in the Two Latter cases the result may be a corresponding Severance in the Subsequent Pleadings, and the Production of Several Issues. But, whether One or More Issues be produced, if the decision, whether in Law or Fact, be in the defendant’s favor, as to any One or More Pleas, he is entitled to Judgment, though he fail as to the remainder; that is, he is entitled to Judgment in respect of that Subject of Demand or Complaint to which the successful Plea relates, and, if it were Plead to the Whole Declaration, to Judgment generally, though the plaintiff should succeed as to all the Other Pleas.

By a relaxation similar to that which has obtained with respect to Several Counts, the use of Several Pleas, though presumably intended by the Statute to be allowed only in a case where there are really Several Grounds of Defense, is, in practice, carried much further. For it was soon found that, when there was a Matter of Defense by Way of Special Plea, it was generally expedient to Plead that Matter in company with the General Issue, whether there were any real ground £ or denying the Declaration or not; because the effect of this is to put the plaintiff to the Proof of his Declaration before it can become necessary for the defendant to establish his Special Plea; and thus the defendant has the chance of succeeding, not only on the strength of his own case, but by the failure of the plaintiff’s Proof. Again, as the plaintiff, in the case of Several Counts, finds it convenient to vary the Mode of Stating the Same Subject of Claim, so, for similar reasons, defendants were led, under Color of Pleading Distinct Matters of Defense, to state variously, in Various Pleas, the Same Defense; and this either by presenting it in an entirely new view, or by omitting in One Plea some circumstances alleged in Another. To


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

this extent, therefore, is the use of Several Pleas now carried.

Some efforts, however, were at one time made to restrain this apparent abuse of the indulgence given by the Statute; for that leave of the Court which the Statute requires was formerly often refused where the proposed Subjects
of Plea appeared to be inconsistent, and on this ground leave has been refused to Plead to the same trespass, “Not Guilty” and “Accord and Satisfaction,” or “Non Est Factum” and “Payment” to the same demand. In modern Practice, however, such Pleas, notwithstanding the apparent repugnancy between them, are permitted, and the only Pleas, perhaps, which


In an Action of Trespass on the Case, since the adoption of Rules 71 and 72 of the Circuit Court in Common-Law Actions, the defendant may file a Plea of Not Guilty with Special Pleas of Confession and Avoidance, to avail himself of certain Matters of Defense must file such special Pleas. Florida East Coast By. Co. v. Peters, 72 Fla. 311, 73 So. 151 (JOIS).

A defendant may plead as many Grounds of Defense as he may have, provided that they are not so repugnant that one be true another must be false. Itawitzcr v. Mutual Benefit Health & Accident Ass’n, 101 NeL’. 210, 102 NW. 037 (1917); Haight v. Onia 190 (1824); Pick.

A defendant is not entitled to Notice of a Special Matter of Defense under the General Issue and also to a Special Plea. Aurora Trust & Savings Bank v Whildin, 208 Ill.App. 527 (1917).

have been uniformly disallowed, on the mere ground of inconsistency, are those of the General Issue and a Tender5 As Tidd states the law:

“But subject to these Exceptions, the defendant may Plead as many different matters as he shall think necessary for his Defence, though they may appear to be contradictory or inconsistent; as Non Assumpsit and the Statute of Limitations, or in Trespass, Not Guilty, a Justification, and Accord and Satisfaction, etc. So he may Plead Non Assumpsit and Infancy, or Not Guilty and Liberum Tenementum; though, as Infancy may be given in evidence upon Non Assumpsit, and Liberum Tenementum upon Not Guilty, the Pleading of these Matters Specially seems to be unnecessary.”


56. Tidd, Practice of the Court of Kings Bench in Personal Actions, c. XXVIII, Of Pleas in Bar and Notice of Set-Off, 610 (1st Am. ed., Philadelphia, 1807),

"Where a defendant plods inconsistent Pleas, the admissions necessarily made in One Plea cannot be used against him upon another; as where the General Issue is pleaded with a Plea in Confession and Avoidance, the admission contained in the latter Plea does not relieve the plaintiff of proving his whole case against the General Issue. Glenn v. Sumner, 232 U.S. 157; Whitaker v. Freeman, 1 Devercu x 270. Among tht:o traditioll s of the Bar is the famous Case of the Kettle, in which plaintiff alleged flint defendant had borrowed plaintiff’s kettle, and had suffered the same while tu defendant’s possession to be~me cracked, for which impairment damages were claimed. Defendant pleaded (1) that he did not borrow the kettle; (2) that the kettle was never cracked; and (3) that the kettle was cracked when he borrowed it. And these Pleas were held on Demurrer to be pleadabe together; but, according to a supplemental tradition, the Demurrer was sustained on the ground that the Pleas amounted only to the General Issue.” Keigwii, Precedents of Pleading at Common Law, 270 (Washington, D. C., 1910).

Sec. 234

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

On the subject of Several Pleas it is to be further observed that the Statute extends to the case of Pleas only, and not to Replications or Subsequent Pleadings. These remain subject to the full operation of the Common Law Rule against Duplicity, so that, though to Each Plea there may, as already stated, be a Separate Replication, yet there cannot be offered to the same Plea more than a Single Replication, nor to the same Replication more than One
Rejoinder; and so to the end of the series. The legislative provision allowing Several Matters of Plea was confined to that case, under the impression, probably, that it was in that Part of the Pleading that the hardship of the Rule Against Duplicity was most seriously and frequently felt, and that the Multiplicity of Issues which would be occasioned by a further extension of the enactment would have been attended with expense and inconvenience more than equivalent to the advantage. The effect, however, of this state of Jaw is somewhat remarkable. For example, it empowers a defendant to Plead to a Declaration in Assumpsit for goods sold and delivered (1) the General Issue; (2) that the cause of action did not accrue within six years; (3) that he was an infant at the time of the contract. On the First Plea the plaintiff has only to Join Issue, but with respect to each of the Two Last he may have Several Answers to give. The case may be such as to afford either of these Replications to the Statute of Limitations, namely, that the cause of action did accrue within six years, or that at the time the cause of action accrued he was beyond sea, and that he commenced his Suit within six years after his return. So, to the Plea of Infancy, he may have ground for Replying, either that the defendant was not an infant, or that the goods for which the action is brought were necessaries suitable to the defendant’s condition in life. Yet, though the defendant had


the advantage of his Three Pleas cumulatively, the plaintiff is obliged to make his Election between these Several Answers, and can Reply but one of them to each Plea.

It is also to be observed that the power of Pleading Several Matters extends to Pleas in Bar only, and not to those of the Dilatory Class, with respect to which the leave of the Court will not be granted.

Again, it is to be remarked that the Statute does not operate as a total abrogation, even with respect to Pleas in Bar, of the Rule against Duplicity. For, first, it is necessary, as we have seen, to obtain the leave of the Court to make use of Several Matters of Defense, the application for leave being addressed to the discretion of the Court, and then the Several Matters are Plead Formally, with the words, “by leave of the Court for this purpose first had and obtained.” The Several Defenses must also each be Plead as a New or Further Plea, with a Formal Commencement and Conclusion as such; so that, notwithstanding the Statute, and the leave of the court obtained in pursuance of it, to Plead Several Matters, it would still be improper to incorporate several matters in One Plea in any case in which the Plea would be thereby rendered Double at Common Law.

As the Several Counts in the Declaration are required, apparently at least, to be distinct and complete Statements of Separate


60. Priest v. Dodsworth, 225 311. 013, 85 N.E. 940 (1908); Keokuk & Hamilton Bridge Co. v. Wctzel, 228 Ill. 258, 81 N.E. 864 (1907); Mix v. People, 02 III. 540, 663 (1879);

See, also, Note: Speeth Denials in Affirmative Dc-tenses, 20 CoLL.Rev. 170 (1920).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS Ch. 22

Causes of Action, and are so considered and treated, so as stated above, each of Several Pleas, when Plead together, must be stated as a New or Further Plea, with Formal Commencement and Conclusion, and must stand and be treated as if Plead alone. One Plea cannot be taken in to help or destroy another, but Every Plea must stand
or fall by itself. Neither can One Plea thus offered have the effect of dispensing with the Proof of what is Denied by another, or, in other words, be used to aid the plaintiff in evidence against the defendant, and thus disprove another.

Several Defendants iWay Plead Separately

WHERE there are several defendants, each may Plead for himself a Single Matter of Defense to the Whole, or Different Matters to Different Parts of the Opposing Pleading, as if he was the only person charged; and, as each defendant may thus use a Separate Plea, all may join in that, if they so desire. This does not apply, however, when several defendants, jointly charged in an action on contract, All Plead the Same Defense to the action; as, for instance, the General Issue, or the Same Matter in Confession and Avoidance, Here they cannot sever, but must join in One and the Same Plea, in presenting the Common Defense. The reason for this is that if they all agree as to the Nature of their Defense, as a joint liability is sought to be enforced against them, all are as safe in thus

---

-3. Coke, Littleton, 303a (London, 1832); Essington v. Bourther, Bob. 245, 80 Bng.Rep. 390 (1618). See, also, English: Cuppledick v. Tervlflit, Bob. 250, 80 Eng.Rep. 396 (1618); New York: Stilweli v. Hasbrouck, I Bill (N.Y.) 561 (1841). pleading Jointly as in presenting their Defenses separately. But the exception does not hold, even in actions on contract, if they choose Different Defenses, and they may then Plead separately. Neither does it hold in an action charging a joint liability in tort, as torts committed by more than one person, though charged as joint, tre several as well.

DUPLICITY IN PLEAS—IN GENERAL

235. A Pleading which Contains Several Answers, whatever their Class or Quality, will be Double. 

THIS Rule rests upon the principle, previously stated, that where One of Two or More Facts would constitute a sufficient ground of Defense, only One such Fact should be stated. If, therefore, a Pleading included Several Matters in Abatement or in Bar, or contained One of each Character, it would be Double, and hence fatal on a Special Demurrer. The same would be true in joining Several Matters in Confession and Avoidance, or Several Answers by Way of Traverse, or a Traverse with a Plea of the former kind—

DUPLICITY—IMMATERIAL MATTER

236. Matter which is wholly Immaterial cannot operate to snake a Pleading Double.

THIS is the result of a General Rule that Surplusage is to be disregarded. Where Matter is Pledged which is wholly foreign to the cause, it is mere Surplusage, and will not therefore render a Pleading objectionable, under the Rule we are considering, even

64. Calhoun v. Wrght, 3 Scam. (III.) 74 (1841); Barross v. Hewitt, 3 Scam. (III.) 224 (1841).
Sec. 237

FLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR
though Plead in connection with what is Material. Such Matter will be rejected as Impertinent and Superfluous, since it requires no answer, and it therefore cannot occasion the fault for which all Double Pleadings are objectionable, that is, a Multiplicity of Issues. 68

Thus, in an Action by the Executors of A on a bond conditioned that the defendant should warrant to A a certain meadow, the defendant Plead that the said meadow was copyhold of a certain Manor, and that there is a Custom within the Manor, that if the customary tenants fall in payment of their rents and services, or commit waste, then the lord for the time being may enter for forfeiture; and that the said A, during his life, peaceably enjoyed the meadow, which descended after his death to one B, his son and heir who, by his own wrong, entered without the admission of the lord, against the Custom of the Manor; and because three shillings of rent were in arrear on such a day, the lord entered into the meadow, as into lands forfeited. On Demurrer, it was objected (among other things) that the Plea was

87. An Impertinent Averment is a statement of matter altogether foreign to the Merits of the Cause, and may, therefore, be struck out in its entirety, without injury to the pleading, and, of course, no proof of such an Allegation can be required; on the other hand, an immaterial Averment must, in many cases, be proved, and is a statement of unnecessary particulars in connection with, and as descriptive of, what Is material. GouM, A Treatise On the Principles of Pleading, Part III, Of Pleading, Div. II, Rules Applicable to Pleadings in General e. II, Mi scellaneous Rules, 317—320 (6th ed. by Will, Albany, 1909).

69. English: Countess of Northumberland’s Case, S Coke 97b, 77 Eng.Brep. 206 (1597); Illinois: Hereford v. Crow, 3 Seam. (Ill.) 423 (1842); Maryland:
Stewardson v. White, 3 Bar, & MeN. (MO.) 455 (1796); Massachusetts: Lord v. Tyler, 14 Pick. (Mass.) 156 (1833); Michigan:

A settle up two defenses, one of them bad, is riot Demurrable for duplicity. Guest Piano Co. v. Bicker, 274 Ill. 448, 113 N.E. 717 (1910).

Double; because in showing the forfeiture to have accrued by the heir’s own wrongful act, Two Several Matters are alleged: Ffrst, that he entered without admission, against the custom; secondly, that three shillings of rent were in arrear. But the Judges held that the only sufficient cause of forfeiture was the nonpayment of rent; that, there being No Custom alleged for forfeiture in respect of entry without admission, the Averment of such Entry was mere Surplusage and could not, therefore, avail to make the Plea Double. 69 It is, however, to be observed that the Plea seems to rely on the nonpayment of the rent as the only ground of forfeiture, for it alleges that “because three shillings of the rent were in arrear, the lord entered,” and the Court noticed this circumstance. The case, therefore, does not explicitly decide that where Two Several Matters are not only Plead, but relied upon, the Immateriality of one of them shall prevent Duplicity, but the manner in which the Judges express themselves seems to show that the doctrine goes to that extent; and there are other authorities who take the same view. 70

DUPLICITY—MATTER ILL PLEADED

237. Material Matter, though Ill Plead, will occasion the Fault of Duplicity.

ALTHOUGH Immaterial Matter is to be disregarded, that which is Material to the cause of Action or Defense, though stated in an insufficient manner, will render the Pleading open to objection as Double, when Plead in connection with other Issuable Facts. Such Matter cannot be treated as Surplusage, and, being Material, is therefore, Issuable though defectively alleged. It can neither be rejected as Superfluous, nor does it render the Plea void. It may, therefore, be stated that any Matter which, if Well Plead,

a Executors of Grenelife, 1 Dyer 42a, 73 Eng.Rep. 01 (1538)


482

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 22

would give rise to Duplicity, will have the same effect when Ill Plead, especially if, in spite of such faulty statement, it would be Aided by a Verdict. 71
Thus, in an Action of Trespass for Assault and Battery where the defendant Plead that he committed the trespasses in the moderate correction of the plaintiff as his servant, and further, Plead that since that time the plaintiff had Discharged and Released to him the said trespasses, without alleging, as he ought to have done, a Release under Seal, the Court held that the Plea was Double, the moderate correction and the Release being each a Matter of Defense; and although the Release was insufficiently Plead, it was, nevertheless, a Matter upon which a Material Issue might have been taken, and hence it was sufficient to make the Plea Double.72

This doctrine, that a Plea may be rendered Double by Matter Ill Plead, but not by Immaterial Matter, quite accords with the object of the Rule against Duplicity, as previously explainad. That object is the avoidance of Several Issues. So, whether a Matter be Well or Ill Plead, yet if it be suffi--ient in Substance, as to make it possible for the opposite party to take Issue upon it, if he chooses to Plead Over, without pressing the Formal Objection, such Matter tends to the Production of a Separate Issue, and is on that ground held to make the Pleading Double. On the other hand, if the matter be Immaterial, no Issue can properly be taken upon it. It does not, therefore, tend to a Separate Issue, nor, consequently, fall within the Rule against Duplicity.

Duplicity—Matters Forming a Connected Proposition

238. No Number of Circumstances, however multifarious, that together constitute but One

72. See Bleeke v. Grove, 1 Sid. 175, 82 Eng.Bep. 1040 (1663).
73. 4 Bacon, Abridgment of the Law, “Pleas” K. 2 (Dublin, 1786); Bleeke v. Grove, 1 Bid. 175, 82 Eng.Rep. 1040 (1063). Connected Proposition or Entire Point, will operate to make a Pleading Double.

THE Rule against Duplicity has been qualified, not only as to Pleadings in Confession and Avoidance, but also as to Traverses; and a Party may therefore Deny, as well as Affirm, any Number of Circumstances that together Form but a Single Point or Proposition.73

Thus, to an Action of Trespass for Assault and Imprisonment, if the defendant Plead that he arrested the plaintiff on suspicion of felony, he may set forth any Number of Circumstances of suspicion, though each circumstance, taken alone, may be sufficient to Justify the arrest; for, all of them, taken together, amount to one connected cause of suspicion.14

And, in an Action of Trespass for breaking the plaintiff’s close and depasturing it with cattle, the defendant Plead a right of common in the close for the said cattle, being his own commonable cattle, levant and couchant upon the premises. The plaintiff, in the Replication, Traversed “that the cattle were the defendant’s own cattle, and that they were levant and couchant upon the premises, and commonable cattle.” On Demurrer to the Replication for Duplicity, it was objected that


Sec. 238

Pleas—Peremptory or in Bar

483
there were Three Distinct Facts put in Issue, any one of which would be sufficient by itself. But the Court held that the point of the Defense was that the cattle in question were entitled to common; that this point was Single, though it involved the Three Several Facts that the cattle were the defendant’s own, that they were levant and couehant, and that they were conimonable cattle; that the Replication Traversing these Facts, in effect, therefore, only Traversed the Single Point whether the cattle were entitled to common, and was consequently not open to the Objection of Duplicity.  

There is some difficulty in the application of this Rule in establishing a test between those cases in which Several Averments make up a Single Point, and may therefore be Alleged or Traversed together, and those in which each constitutes a Separate Point, though insufficient in itself as a Defense without union with the others. The governing principle seems to be that while each Successive Denial or Allegation in Pleading must contain no Superfluous Matter, and must be limited to what is strictly necessary to constitute a Good Defense or Reply to the Pleading it seeks to answer, it may still go as far, and cover as much ground, as may be requisite to attain that object. Therefore Two Distinct Facts cannot ordinarily be Averred or Denied Together, if the Proof or Disproof of one would be sufficient to defeat or maintain the action. A qualification becomes necessary, however, where a Number of Different Facts or Averments relate to one thing, or together make up a Single Proposition; and it seems that the Rule above stated will hold where the Averment of Several Connected Facts is necessary to make a Complete Defense, and that under it, where the Denial of any One of Such Facts would not be a Perfect Answer, a Replication will not be Double.


which meets the Averments by Separate Denials of all, or by a Single General Denial. A Traverse thus made is called a “Cumulative Traverse.” The most frequent instance of its use occurs in the Replication De Injuria, which alleges that the defendant of his own wrong, and “without the cause alleged,” committed the act. This “cause” may consist of Several Connected Circumstances, and the Denial in the Replication is taken as a Traverse of Each of the Facts stated by Denying the cause which they collectively tend to show. There is a restriction upon the use of this Form, however, where the Opposing Allegations include Matter of Title, Authority, etc., and in such case Matter of that Character must be Denied Separately; or, if the plaintiff wishes to disregard these and Deny Other Matters in the Plea, such other Matters must be Separately Traversed.


General Issues as Double Pleas

IN some cases the General Issues appear to partake of the Nature of these Cumulative Traverses; for some of them are so framed as to convey a Denial, not of any Particular Fact, but Generally of the Whole Matter alleged, as Not Guilty in Trespass or Trespass on the Case, and Nil Debet in Debt. And in Assumpsit the defendant is permitted, under the General Issue, in that ac~ tion, to avail himself, with some few Exceptions, of any Matter tending to disprove his liability. The consequence is, that under these General Issues the defendant has the advantage of disputing, and therefore of putting the plaintiff to the Proof of every Averment in the Declaration. Thus, by Pleading Not Guilty, in Trespass quare clausum fregit, he is enabled to Deny, at the Trial, both that the land was the plaintiff’s and that he corn-


76. See Tebbets v. Tilton, 24 N.H. 120 (1851).

454

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Cli. 22

mitted upon it the trespasses in question, and the plaintiff must establish both these points in evidence. Indeed, besides this advantage of Double Denial, the defendant obtains, under the General Issue, in Assumpsit and other Actions of Trespass on the Case, the advantage of Double Pleading in Confession and Avoidance. For he is allowed, in these actions, to bring forward, upon the General Issue, almost Any Matters, though in the Nature of Confession and Avoidance, which tend to disprove his debt or liability; so he is not limited, as he would be in Special Pleading, to a reliance on any Single Matter of this description, but may set up any Number of These Defenses. While such is
the effect of many of the General Issues in mitigating or evading the Rule against Duplicity, the remark does not apply to all. Thus, the general issue of Non Est Factum raises only a Single Question, namely, whether the defendant executed a valid and genuine deed, such as is alleged in the Declaration. The defendant may, under this Plea, insist that the deed was not executed by him, or that it was executed under circumstances which absolutely annul its effect as a deed, but can set up no other kind of Defense.70

The Replication De Injuria is similar to the General Issue in being a General Traverse, which is allowed where an Affirmative Defense is set up by Way of Excuse. Like the General Issue, it is an anomaly and a violation of the Rule against Duplicity, since it permits the Party to set up Numerous Defenses by one Plea.

DUPLICITY—PROTESTATION

239. A Protestation will not render a Pleading Double.

THE nature of this illogical and unnecessary Form in Pleading has been heretofore explained, and from its nature and object, in being only a collateral objection or reservation, without effect in the Action in which it is used, it is manifest that it cannot cause Duplicity. Thus, in the example given on another page, where the defendant Pleads the delivery and acceptance of goods in satisfaction of the plaintiff’s demand, though the plaintiff cannot Reply that the goods were neither delivered nor accepted in satisfaction, for this would be Double, yet he may Protest that they were not delivered, and at the same time Deny the acceptance, without incurring the objection. For a Protestation (as already explained) does not Tend to Issue in the Action, but is made merely to reserve to the party the right of Denying or Alleging the Same Matter in a future suit. It consequently cannot fall within the object of the Rule against Duplicity, which is, to avoid a Plurality of Issues.

WHAT DEFENSES MAY BE SHOWN UNDER THE GENERAL ISSUE AND WHAT MAY OR MUST BE PLEADED SPECIALLY

240. Defenses which may be shown under the General Issue in the various Actions, and those which may or must be Spedally Plead are set out in the following Sections.

In the succeeding sections each of the actions is analyzed with reference to the defenses which may be shown under the general issue and those which may or must be specially pleaded. As will appear, especial attention is given to the effect of the Hilary Rules – on these questions.8

In general, on the Origin, Development and Effect of the Hilary Rules of 1834, see:

Treatises: Price, New Practice of the Courts of Law at Westminster in Personaj Actions (London, 1833— 1835); Petersdorf, Practical Precedents In Pleading, Prepared in Accordance with the Recent Rules and Statutes; with Explanatory and Practical threitions, and Preliminary Remarks Upon the Effect and Application of the Late Rules in Pleading (London, 1835); Charnock, Digest of the various Decisions Since the New Pleading Rules Came into operation, with Explanatory Observations, Distinguishing What Defenses May be Given tinder the General Issue (London, 1837); Kennedy, A Treatise on the New Rules of Picading, &c. (London, 1841);

0. Id. at 253.
81. See note SI 01% page 485.
Sec. 241

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

TIIE GENERAL ISSUE IN TRESPASS

241. “Not Guilty” is the General Issue in Trespass, and it operates as a Denial of the Act of Trespass alleged. It also Denies the

Lutvyhe, An Inquiry into the Principles of Pleading the General Issue Since the Promulgation of the New Rules. With a List of Statutes which Allow the Special Matter to be Given in evidence mider the General Issue, and an appendix. (London, 1842); MeNamara, A Practical Treatise oil the Several Counts and Pleas, Allowed to be Plead Together in Civil Proceedings, under the Statute, 4 Anne, c. 16 (1705); and the New Rules of Hilary’ Term, 4 Wm. IV, and other Rules and Statutes (Lon~ don, 1844); Roscoe, Of Pleading the General Issue Under the New Rules of the courts of Westminster:

and of the Evidence Applicable to Issues Obtained by Pleading Specially Under those Rules (London, 1845).

Articles: Reppy, The Hilary Rules and Their Effect on Negative and Affirmative Pleas Under Modern Codes and Practice Acts, 6
Comment: Actions and Pleadings Affected by the New Rules, 10 Monthly L.Mag. 24 (1841).

In general, on the Origin, History and Development of the General Issue, see:


IN Trespass, whether to person or property, the General Issue is “Not Guilty.” It operates in the first place as a Denial that the defendant committed the Act of Trespass alleged, to wit, the application of force to the plaintiff’s person, the entry on his land, or the taking or damaging of his goods. It also Denies the plaintiff’s Possession, Title, or Right of Possession of the Land or Goods.

Trespass on the Case—Office of “Not Guilty,” 9 Ill.L.Rev. 442 (1910); Effect of the Presence of the General Issue on the Retrospective Operation of a Demurrer, 10 111.L.Rev. 417, 421 (1016); Pleading—Statute of Frauds—Admissible Under General Denial, 64 U.Pa.L.Rev. 754 (1916); Pleading—General Denial—Bills and Notes—Proof of Payment, 1 hlinn L.Rev. 462 (1917); Pleading—Replevin—What Defenses are Provable Under a General Denial, § 2,innl.1, Rev. 563 (1921); Pleading—Proof of Par ment Under a General Denial in Actions of Account, 27 Minn.L.Rev. 31S (1942).
Under it, therefore, the defendant can show such Matters as directly controvert the fact of his having committed the acts complained of. In Trespass for Assault and Battery, if the Defense is that the defendant did not assault or beat the plaintiff, it will be proper to Plead the General Issue; but if his Defense be of any other description the Plea will be inapplicable. So, in Trespass Quare Olausuni Fi-eigit, or Trespass De Bonis Asportatis, if the defendant did not in fact break and enter the close in question, or take the goods, the General Issue, “Not Guilty,” will be proper, and it will also be applicable if he did break and enter the close, but it was not in the possession of the plaintiff, or not lawfully in his possession, as


In case of Trespass to the person the defendant must always Plead his Justification specially when the act is his own. English: Knapp v. Salsbui’y, 2 Camp. 500, 170 Eng.Rep. 1231 (1823); Boss r Litton, 5 Car. & P. 407, 172 Eng.Rep. 1030 (1832).


against the better title of the defendant, or li he did take the goods, but they did riot belong to the plaintiff, for, as the Declaration alleges the Trespass to have been committed on the close or goods of the plaintiff, the Plea of Not Guilty involves a Denial that the defendant broke and entered or took the close or goods of the plaintif, and is therefore a fit Plea, if the defendant means to contend that the plaintiff had no possession of the close, or property in tile goods, sufficient to entitle him to call them his own. If the Defense is of a’iy other kind, the General Issue will not apply; as, for instance, where the defendant intends to show a Justification or Excuse, or a Discharge.

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN TRESPASS

242. In Trespass, all Defenses in Justification and Excuse, or in Discharge, must be


Jim Trespass the defendant may offer as many Titles to the Land as he pleases, and, if they fail him, may resort to and defend upon his possessory right. Mackay v. Reynolds, 2 Bay (S.C.) 474 (1802); Strange v. Durham, 2 Bay (S.C.) 420 (1802). And see Norms v. Keeeler, 6 Johns. (N.Y.) 63 (1810).

The Plea of “Liberuni Tenemnentum,” which states a general freehold title in the defendant without ethenvise describing it, is an instance of a Special Plea in Trespass “Quare Clausum Fregit” which admits both the plaintiff’s possession and the Trespass charged. Illinois: Fort Dearborn Lodge v. Klein, 115 III. 177, 3 N.E. 272, 56 Am.Rep. 133 (1885); Marks v. Madsen, 261 Ill. 51, 103 N.E. 623 (1913); Ward v. Mississippi River Power Co., 265 Ill. 480, 107 N.E. 115 (1914); South Carolina: Caruth v. Allen, 2 MeCord (S.C.) 220 (1822).

86. Alabama: Finch’s Ex’s v. Alston, 2 Stew. & P. (Ala.) 83, 23 Am.Deec. 299 (1532); Illinois: Hahn v. Ritter, 12 Ill. 80 (1850); Chicago Title & Trust Co. v. Core, 223 Ill. 58, 79 N.E. 108 (1006); Massachusetts:
Sec. 242

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

Specially Plead in Confession and Avoidance.

ALL Defenses in Justification and Excuse, and in Discharge, must be specially pleaded in Confession and Avoidance in Trespass, under Self-Defense (Son Assault Demeane), Leave and License, Defense of Property, Entry or Seizure by Virtue of Judicial Process, or Contributory Negligence, and such Matters in Discharge as Release, Statute of Limitations, Arbitration and Award, and Former Recovery.

The Plea of Liberum Tenementum, the “Common Ear,” is that the land was the soil and freehold of the defendant. This Plea admits possession in the plaintiff, such as would enable him to sue a stranger, but asserts a freehold in the defendant and a right

87 Under leave and license: In Trespass, Justification under a license must be specially pleaded, and cannot be shown under the General Issue, notwithstanding the broad provisions of Code 1007, Ala.

5331. Louisville & N. B. Co. v Bartee. 204 Ala.
539, 55 So. 304, 12 A.L.R. 251 (1020); Sturman
-Colon, 48 Ill. 463 (1808) Chicago Title & Trust

Concerning self-defense (son assault demesne) see:
Thomas v. Riley, 114 Ill.App. 520 (1004).

For defense of property, see Illinois Steel Co. v. Novak, 184 U.I. 503., 56 N.E. 066 (1000).

Necessity for landlord to enter to make repairs, see:
Comsteek v. Oderman, IS Ill.App. 320 (1885).

For cases under entry or seizure by virtue of Judicial Process, see: Olsen v. Upsahl, 69 Ill. 273 (1873); McNeill v. Vehon, 22 Ill. 499 (1850); Bryan v. Bates, 15 Ill. 87 (1853); Hg v. Burbank, 50 Ill.App. 291 (1894); Blakek v. Randall, 76 Ill. 224 (1875).

Justification under Legal Authority is not available as defense to Action of Trespass unless specially pleaded, but defendant may show under General Issue in mitigation that he was acting in good faith and under what he considered Legal Authority. Jackson v. Boblin, 16 Ala.ADp. 105, 75 So. 697 (1017).

88 In general on the subject of a Release as a Defense see:


to the immediate possession as against the plaintiff. This admits that the defendant did the act complained of against the possession of the plaintiff, but Justifies IL86 The General Issue disputes both possession and title, but this Plea shows defendant’s Title on the Record, and may compel the plaintiff to make a New Assignment of the locus in quo with more specific description.

FORM OF PLEA OF LERUM TENEMENTUM IN TRESPASS QUARE CIAU5UM FRECHIT
In the Court, Term, C.D.

A.B.

AND for a further plea in this behalf, as to the breaking and entering the said close, in which, etc., in the said declaration mentioned, and with feet in walking, treading down, trampling upon, consuming and spoiling the grass
and herbage then and there growing, the said defendant, by leave of the court here for this purpose first had and obtained, according to the form of the statute in such case made and provided, says that the said plaintiff ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action thereof against him; because he says that the said close in the said declaration mentioned, and in which, etc., now is and at the said several times when, etc., was the close, soil and freehold of him, the said defendant. Wherefore he, the said defendant, at the said several times when, etc., broke and entered the said close, in


In Trespass Quare Clausum Fregit for constructing a said wall along land against objection, the defendant, by pleading Liborum Tenementum, admits that plaintiff was in possession and the doing of the acts charged. Morgan v. City of Vienna, 206 Ill.App. 322 (1917); Boyd v. Kimnel, 161 Ill.App. 206 (1911).

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

which, etc., and with feet in walking, trod down, trampled upon, consumed and spoiled the grass and herbage then and there growing, as he lawfully might for the cause aforesaid, which are the same trespasses in the introductory part of this plea mentioned, and whereof the said plaintiff hath above complained. And this the said defendant is ready to verify. Wherefore he prays judgment if the said plaintiff ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action thereof against him.


THE HILARY RULES—THEIR EFFECT UPON NEGATIVE AND AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSES IN TRESPASS

243. Under the Hilary Rules “Not Guilty” operated in trespass quare clausum fregit only as a denial that the defendant committed the trespass alleged in the place mentioned; and in trespass de bonis asportatis only as a denial of the defendant having committed the trespass alleged by taking or damaging the goods.

The Hilary Rules of 1834 restricted the Scope of the General Issue by providing that, in Trespass Quare Clausurn Fregit, the Plea of Not Guilty shall operate as a Denial that the defendant committed the Trespass alleged in the place mentioned, but not as a Denial of the plaintiff’s Possession or Right of Possession. If this is intended to be Traversed, it must be by a Specific Traverse.

In Trespass De Bonis Asportatis, the Plea of Not Guilty operated under the Hilary Rules as a Denial of the defendant having committed the Trespass alleged, by taking or damaging the goods mentioned, but not of plaintiff’s property therein. To put in Issue the plaintiff’s Right, the Specific Traverse “Not Possessed” was used. Prior to these Rules of Court there was no occasion for a Specific Traverse.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE

244. The Plea of “Not Guilty” is the proper General Issue in an Action of Trespass on the Case, and is a Formal Denial of Liability, admitting almost All Defenses.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN

TRESPASS ON THE CASE

[Trespass on the Case:

Not Guilty]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth.

C. D.
AND the said CD., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that he is not guilty of the premises above laid to his charge in manner and form as the said A.B. hath above complained. And of this tile said CD. puts himself upon the country.

STEPHEN, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, 278 (2d ed. by Andrews, Chicago 1901).

THE General Issue in the Action of Trespass on the Case is “Not Guilty,” and the Scope and Effect of this Plea is much broader than in the Action of Trespass Vi Fit Armis, where it operates as a Mere Denial or Traverse of the Facts alleged. An effect is given it similar to that in the Action of Assumpsit, by which the defendant may contest under it, not only the truth of the Material Facts alleged in the Declaration, but may also give in evidence any Defense which, as Lord Mansfield observed, “would in equity and conscience, under the existing circumstances, preclude the plaintiff from recovering, because the plaintiff must recover upon the justice and conscience of his case, and on

Sec. 244

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

that only.” — The defendant, upon the General Issue of Not Guilty, not only put the plaintiff upon the Proof of the Whole Charge in the Declaration, including Matters of Inducement, as well as Matters constituting the Gist of the Action, but he might also offer evidence of Defenses going to Dispute Liability, more popularly known as Affirmative Defenses. And this included Affirmative Defenses in Discharge of the cause of action, as wail as Defenses in Justification and Excuse. The net effect of this departure from the True Principles of Pleading, was to permit the defendant, under the General Issue, any Matter of Defense in contravention of the Plaintiff’s Right of Action, even though such matters were strictly the proper subjects of a Plea in Confession and Avoidance of the Declaration; although the defendant could, if he chose, bring forward by Way of a Special Plea all Matters in Confession and Avoidance of the Declaration. Thus, in effect, under the General Issue, the defendant’s Defense might be that he did not commit the Wrongful Act complained of, or that

90. Bird v. Randall, 3 Burr. 1353, 07 EngRep. 566 (1762). See, also, the following cases: English:

Birch v. Wilson, 2 Mod. 276, 86 Eng.Rep. 1008 (1617);


In Trespass on the Case the defendant may, with few exceptions, prove under the General Issue matters in Confession and Avoidance. Dnham v. Western Union Telegraph Co., 85 W.Va. 425, 102 SE. 113 (1920).

Evidence of a Defense in Justification Is competent under a Plea of the General Issue, though the commencement and ending of the Declaration describe the Action as Trespass, provided the body of the Declaration describe an Action in the Nature of an Action of Trespass on the Case, George v. Illinois Cent. B. Co., 197 Ill.App. 152 (1015), it was Excusable, or that he was Released from its consequences. 91 This latitude was probably allowed for the same
reason that permitted the extended use of the General Issue in Assumpsit, though it is difficult to see how it is reconcilable with any of the Principles of Pleading.

Thus, if your automobile is damaged and you sue the wrongdoer in Trespass, the Plea of Not Guilty will serve as a Denial of the Facts stated in the Declaration, and no more. Matters of Justification or Excuse, such as the Defenses of Contributory Negligence, or Leave and License, cannot be proved under this Plea. But if you sue in Case, the defendant may, under a Plea of Not Guilty, not only put the plaintiff upon Proof of the whole Charge contained in the Declaration, but may offer any Defense in Justification or Excuse, or he may set up a Former Recovery, or a Release, or Discharge. An Action on the Case is said to be in the Nature of a Bill in Equity, and the defendant may prove, under the General Issue in that action, almost anything, except the Statute of Limitations and Truth in Libel and Slander, which shows that the defendant ought not to recover—an illogical and whimsical reason for slipshod Pleading.

An Action on the Case is said to be in the Nature of a Bill in Equity, and the defendant may prove, under the General Issue in that action, almost anything, except the Statute of Limitations and Truth in Libel and Slander, which shows that the defendant ought not to recover—an illogical and whimsical reason for slipshod Pleading.

92. City of Chicago v. Babcock, 143 Ill. 358, 32 N.E. 271 (1892) (Accord and Satisfaction) Papke v. O.H. Hammond Co., 192 Ill. 631, 61 N.E. 910 (1901) (Release); Cooper v. Lawrence, 204 Ill.App. 261 (1917) (Conditional privilege in defamation cases—such as fair comment on the public acts of a public man).

The exceptions to the General Rule above stated are the Statute of Limitations, a Justification in Slander, and the Retaking of a Prisoner on Fresh Pursuit, which must be specially pleaded.


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE

245. At Common Law, under a Plea of the General Issue in Trespass on the Case, as in Assumpsit, Debt on Simple Contracts, and Trover, most of the Affirmative Defenses may be admitted without being Specially Pledged. The Two Principal Exceptions are the Defenses of the Statute of Limitations and Truth in Libel and Slander.

In general, all matters in Justification and Excuse, or in Discharge of the alleged Right of Action, could be shown under the Gereral Issue in Case rather than Pledged Affirmatively in Confession and Avoidance. There were Two Principal Exceptions to this Rule, which will be considered shortly—the Statute of Limitations and Truth in Slander and Libel Cases.

The Defense of the Statute of Limitations ~ IN the 1690 case, Anonymous, in Debt for rent, upon Nil Debet Pledged, Chief Jus
time of the Plea Plead, the words of which were in the present tense; but in Case on Non Assumpsit, the Statute of Limitations could not be given in evidence, as it spoke of a time past, and related to the time of making the Promise. In 1830, in the case of Chapplo v. Durston, Vaughan, 3., in referring to Chief Justice Holt’s decision in the Anonymous Case of 1690, declared: “It appears to us that this distinction savors more of ingenious refinement than of plain and practical good sense, and we conceive that the same Rule would now be extended as well to Actions of Debt as of Assumpsit, the same reasons for Pleading the


Comments: Pleading—Statute of Limitations—Permanent or Temporary Injury—Plea of Non-Accrevit, 11 Ill.L.Rev. 56 (1916); Limitation of Action—Plead-big—Amendments Restating Cause of Action, 5 Iowa L.Rev. 275 (1919); Representations Reasonably Belied Upon Against Actual Active Concealment in Tolling the Statute of Limitations, 22 Iowa L.Rev. 704 (1037); Raising Statute of Limitations by Motion to Dismiss, 3 Fed.Rules Serv. 071 (1940); Lienitation of Actions: Pleading the Statute of Limitations in California, 29 Calif.L.Rev. 210 (1941); Limitation of Actions—Landlord and Tenant—Installment Bent Payments, 40 Mich.L.Rev. 132 (1941); The Statute of Limitations as a Pleading Problem in Iowa, 29 Iowa L.Rev. 501 (1944); Statute of Limitations as a Defense to Wrongful Death Statute, 42 Ill.L.Rev. 688 (1047); Effect of Failure to Plead the Statute of Limitations as an Affirmative Defense, 1949 Ill.L.Forum 170 (1949); Developments in the Law: Statute of Limitations, 63 Harv. L.Rev. 1177 (1950).

95 1 Salk. 278, 91 Eng.Bop. 243 (1600).
96. Ibid.
Sec. 245

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

Statute applying equally to both. If the Statute is not Plead, the plaintiff is liable to be surprised, and therefore equally unprepared to answer in the one action as in the other. In neither case does the Statute extinguish the debt, but Bars only the Remedy, and it is optional whether the defendant will insist upon the Statute or waive it. If he intends to insist upon it, he should Plead it, to prevent surprise, and if he does not, it should be presumed he intends to waive it. This is the view taken by the late Mr. Serjt. Williams, than whom a sounder lawyer, or more accurate Special Pleader has rarely done honor to his profession; and he states it to be very usual, and the Modern Practice, to Plead to Debt on Simple Contract, that the Cause of Action did not accrue within six years, that the plaintiff may Reply, either that he was within the Exceptions in the Statute, or that he has sued out a Writ within time, as is the common ease in Assumpsit, ~

The real reason, however, why the Statute of Limitations must, in general, be Plead Specially, stems from another cause. Any Allegation which the Pleader is not obliged to Prove as he states is Immaterial. Allegations of this character include the specification of time, which in pleading is ordinarily Immaterial, unless the date of a transaction is, for some other reason, Material as to its validity. Such Immaterial Allegations are not admitted by Demurrer. It follows, therefore, that the Statement of a Right which appears, according to the date laid for it, to be Barred by the Statute of Limitations, is not, for this very reason, held to be bad on Demurrer, as the plaintiff, in Stating his Declaration, is not bound by the Allegation of a Specific Time. Hence, if the defendant desires to take advantage of the Bar of the Statute of Limitations, he can


The Defense of Truth in Trespass on the Case for Libel and Slander

Page 514 of 735
THERE was at least One Exception to the extraordinary latitude of Proof tolerated un


3. In genera, on the subject of Truth as a Defense in Libel and Slander cases, see:

Treatises: Rayner, Digest of the Law Concerning Libels: Containing all the Resolutions in the books on that Subject, and many Manuscript Cases, ilustrated with Occasional Observations; to which, is added a Supplement Containing Considerable Additions (London, 1770); Adair, Discussions of the Law of Libels as at Present Received, in which its Authenticity is Examined, with Incidental Observations on the Legal Effect of Precedents and Authorities (London, 1785); Highmore, Fartia,entary Debates on tho Statute, 32 Cio. III, c. 00, for Removing Doubts Respecting the Functions of Juries in Cases of Libel (London, 1792); Jones, De Libellis Famosis, or the Law of Libels (London, 1512); 1-Joll, On the Law of Libel: in which is Contained a General History of this Law in the Ancient Codes, and of its Introduction and Successive Alterations (London, 1816; New York, 1818). Cuolce, A Treatise on the Law of Defamation, with an Appendix Containing the Recent Statutes Affecting this Portion of the Law, and Precedents of Pleading Under the New Act (London, 1844),

Articles: Veedor, Flistory and Theory of the Law of Defamation, 3 Col.L.Rev., 516 (1003); Bryan, Pub. lication of Record Libel, 5 Ya.L.Bei’. 513 (1918); Flallen, Excessive Publication in Defamation, 10 Ninn.L.11ev, 160 (1932); McCor,nicle, Measure of Damages for Defamation, 12 N.C.L.Rev. 120 (1034).

Incidental Observations: Negligence in the Law of Defamation, 20 Hare-LEc,- 533 (19W); Libel and Slander: Defamatory Acts as Publication: Placing White Person in Colored Ward, 5 Cornell L.Q. 340 (1020); Libel: Publication to a Stenographer; Excess of Pric

492

DELENSIVE PLEADINGS

Ch. 22

under a Plea of the General Issue in an Action of Trespass on the Case in Actions for Defamation. Logically, the Defense of Truth in Case for Libel or Slander, should have been permitted under the General Issue. But the rule has been that Truth in Slander and Libel must be pleaded specially, with specific inllege, 0 Cornell L.Q. 430 10921; I’Abel amid Sla’dtv


Act: Duty of Property Owner to Remove Defamatory Statements from Premises, 40 Cal.L.1tev. 625 f1952); The Law of Commercial Disparagement: Business Defamation’s Inpotemnt Ally, 63 Yale L.J.

65 (1953).

stances of the misconduct charged, with time and place.3

The Common Law Courts felt that to permit the Defense to be shown by the defendant under the General Issue, would result in talcing the plaintiff by surprise. It is reported that this Issue was taken up at a meeting of all the Judges, called to consider a case involving this Issue which arose in the Court of Common Pleas. At that meeting it was determined by a large majority of the Judges that, in the future, evidence of the Defense of Truth of the
Defamatory Matter Charged in the Declaration, should not be admissible under a Plea of the General Issue, but should be Pleadex Specially.6

THE HILARY RULES—THE EFFECT UPON AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE DEFENSES IN TRESPASS ON THE CASE

246. In Trespass on the Case, the General Issue of “Not Guilty” under the Runty Rules operated only as a Denial of the Breach of Duty or Wrongful Act; all other Deenses were required to be Pleadex Specially.

THE Scope of the Plea of the General Issue in Trespass on the Case—Not Guilty—was greatly restricted by the Hilary Rules of 1834, Section IV, which provided that “the Plea of Not Guilty shall operate as a denial only of the breach of the duty or wrongful act alleged to have been committed by the defendant, and not of the facts stated in the Inducement; and no other defense than such denial shall be admissible under that Plea; all other Pleas in denial shall take issue on some particular matter of fact alleged in the Declaration.” The term “Inducement”, as used therein, refers to those Facts and Circumstances which are required to be Stated in an Action of Trespass on the Case, in order to disclose the plaintiff’s Right as it existed.

§ Stoewell v. Beagle, 57 Ill. 97 (1870); Dowic v. Pridcile, 216 111. 553, 75 N.E. 243, 3 Ann.Cas. 526 (1905).


PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR
at the time of the defendant’s Wrongful Act. The Plea of the General Issue, after the Hilary Rules, operated to Deny the Wrongful Act of the defendant, and to admit the Inducement, which disclosed the plaintiff’s Right.

Under Section TV of the Hilary Rules all Matters in Confession and Avoidance were required to be Pleadex Specially, as in Actions of Assumpsit. The Defenses of the Statute of Limitations and Truth in Defamation were required to be so Pleadex even before the Hilary Rules, as we have previously observed.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN TROVER

247. The General Issue in Trover, as in Trespass and Trespass on the Case, is “Not Guilty,” which is a Formal Denial of the Wrongful Conversion. It denies a Legal Conclusion, and so Admits All Defenses, except Release and the Statute of Limitations.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN TROVER
[Trover: Not Guilty]

In the King’s Bench, Term,
William TV
C. D. I
ats.
A.B.

AND the said defendant, by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says, that he is not guilty of the said supposed grievances above laid to his charge, or any or either of them, or any part thereof, in manner
-and form as the said plaintiff hath above thereof complained against him. And of this he the said defendant puts himself upon the -country, etc.


THE scope of the General Issue in the Action of Trover is so broad, because of its relationship to Trespass on the
Any Defense may be shown, whether going to Dispute a Material Allegation in the Plaintiff’s Declaration, or going to Dispute Liability. Thus, such a Defense as the Bankruptcy of the defendant, may be shown, but neither a Release nor the Bar of the Statute of Limitations may be admitted. This latitude is permissive only, however, and the defendant is at liberty to Plead Specially any Defense which admits both the property in the plaintiff and the conversion, but Justifies the latter.

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN TROVER

248. The Defenses of a Release and the Statute of Limitations were required to be Plead Specially.

AS stated above, in Trover under Not Guilty, the only Defenses which could not be shown were a Release and the Statute of Limitations.

THE HILARY RULES—THEIR EFFECT UPON NEGATIVE AND AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSES IN TROVER

249. The Effect of the Hilary Rules in Trover was to restrict the General Issue of “Not Guilty” to a Denial of the Wrongful Conversion only.


As taking the goods for just cause, Kline v. Rusted, 3 Caines (N.Y.) 275 (1805); or disproof of plaintiff’s title by showing title in a stranger, Itotan v. Fletcher, 15 Johns. (N.Y.) 207 (1818); though in the latter case the defendant must also show some title in himself, Duncan v. Spear, 11 Wend. (N.Y.) 54 (1833). And see Illinois: Fisher v. Meek, 38 Ill. 92 (1865); Maine: Fenlason v. Rackliff, 50 Me. 362 (1803).

8. Webb v. For, 7 TB. 391, 101 Eng.Rep. 1037 (1797); But see, Kennedy v. Strong, 10 Johns. (N.Y.) 291 (1815), where the practice of Special Pleading in such cases is condemned. Any Special Plea showing no conversion Is bad on Special Demurrer in Trover. Illinois: Fulton v. Merrill, 23 Ill.App. 599 (1887); Gates v. Thede, 91 Ill.App. 603 (1900).

Sec. 249

493

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

AS Trover was in Form an Action on the Case, it fell within the Scope of Section IV of the Hilary Rules. Under the Reforming Rule, the Plea of the General Issue operated to Deny the Wrongful Act of the defendant, and no longer, as at Common Law, Denied the Right in the plaintiff, even though the Facts of Right might, in some degree, constitute a part of the description of the Wrongful Acts. In the examples which the authors of the Hilary Rules gave under Section IV, in Paragraph 3, with respect to the Operation of the Rule as to the General Issue in Trover, it was said that “in an action for converting the plaintiff’s goods, the conversion only, and not the plaintiff’s title to the goods,” were in issue under the Plea.

According to Chitty 10 and Greenleaf,” only the Conversion in Fact, was in issue, irrespective of its character. Martin, however, states that the decisions have receded from this view, and that the term “Converskm/ as used in the Rules, means a Wrongful Conversion, in the same sense as it did Prior to the Rules, and that there can be no such thing as a Justifiable Conversion. After the Hilary Rules, under a Plea of the General Issue in Trover, a defendant was permitted to prove any Defense tending to show that the Act complained of was not Wrongful, and hence not a Conversion, and, of course,
such Plea admitted the plaintiff’s title, which constituted the sole Inducement


in the action, to be true.” Evidence of a lien cannot be shown under this Plea,” as it questions the plaintiff’s possession or right of possession, which stands admitted by the Plea: ·· if this Allegation is to be placed in Issue, in England, after 1834, it must be done by a Specific Traverse. After the Hilary Rules, in England, the Scope of the General Issue was greatly restricted, being limited to a Denial of the Wrongful Act of Conversion, hence most Defenses had thereafter to be Plead Specially. 56 If the plaintiff’s title was to be put in Issue, the defendant was required to interpose a Specific Traverse of “Not Possessed.”

In general, it has usually been said, that in the Several States of the United States, the Rules as they existed in England prior to 1834, or at Common Law, are followed.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN EJECTMENT

250. The General Issue in Ejectment is “Not Guilty,” which permits all Defenses, Affirmative as well as Negative, to be shown. Equitable Defenses are still not allowed in some jurisdictions.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN EJECTMENT

In the King’s Bench, Term, William IV C. D. 

ANTS) the said C. D. by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the force


15. 2 Selwyn, Nisl Prius, 1380 (Edited by Fish, Philadelphia, 1857).


Sec. 251

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

and injury, when, etc. and says, that he is not guilty of the said supposed trespass and ejectment above laid to his charge, or of any part thereof, in manner and form as the said A. B. hath above thereof complained against him; and of this he the said C. D. puts himself upon the country, &c.

IN view of the fact that Ejectment originated as a Personal Action in which the lessee sued for Damages for Ouster from his Term, the Plea of the General Issue constituted a General Traverse as in other forms of Trespass Actions, It thus operated to place in Issue all the Material Allegations stated in the Declaration, that is, the Right to Let, the Entry, the Actual Lease, and the Ouster. But in time the Scope of “Not Guilty” was restricted by the Common Consent Rule, under which the Actual Tenant, as a condition of being substituted in place of the Casual Ejector, was compelled to admit the Entry, the Lease and the Ouster, leaving in Issue only Title.

As a result of the development of the Action, the General Issue in Ejectment—"Not Guilty"—operates as follows: (1) As a Denial of the Unlawfulness of the withholding, that is, of the Plaintiff’s Title and Right to Possession; (2) All Defenses in Excuse or Discharge, including the Statute of Limitations, are available. ¹³

Specific Traverse

THE defendant, under the General Issue, cannot be heard to dispute that he held

  190 (1757); Alabama: Bush v. Thomas, 172 Ala. 77,
  55 So. 622 (1911); Illinois: Roosevelt v. Hungate,
  110 Ill. 595 (1854); Federal: Hogan v. Kurtz, 94 U.
  S. 773, 24 LEd. 817 (1876).

In general, as to Defenses admissible tinder the General Issue or General Denial in Ejectment, see Note. L.R.A.1918F, 247 (1918).

possession. In Illinois, the defendant would Deny by a Special Plea, Verified by Affidavit, that he was in possession or claims any interest or title in the premises, or that any demand of possession was made.¹⁵

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN EJECTMENT

251. In Ejectment, as Affirmative Defenses are admissible under the General Issue, it is not proper to Plead them Specially. Equitable Defenses are not allowed in Ejectment.

AFFIRMATIVE Defenses are wholly improper in Ejectment, as these Matters are available under the General Issue,¹⁶ nor are Equitable Defenses permitted in Ejectment. It constitutes no Defense in Ejectment that the deed of the plaintiff was secured by fraud going to the consideration, as contrast


Edwardsville B. Ce- v. Sawyer. 02 III. 377 (1870).

20. In general, on the subject of Equitable Defenses, see:


Articles: Ames, Specialty Contracts and Equitable Defenses, 9 I-Iarv.L.Hev. 49 (1895); Clinton, Equitable Defenses under Modern Codes, 18 Mich.L.itev, 717 (1920); Cook, Equitable Defenses, 32 Yale L.J.
  645 (1923); Lutchins, Equitable Ejectment, 26 CoIL.
  Rev. 436 (1926); Mehlaine, Equitable Defenses to Actions at Law in the Federal Ceui-ts, 17 Calif.L.
  Rev. 591 (1920) : Crawford, EqnitaI' Def. to Actions at Law Under the Missouri Cnde, 25 Wash.
  U.L.Q. 60 (1939); Moreland, EquitaI' Def. to Law Actions, 25 Coll.Uev. 630 (1925); Pleading: Equities Affecting Legal Causes of Action as Defenses or Counterclaims:
ed to fraud in the execution, although a Court of Equity might rescind the conveyance.  

At Common Law, it took a Legal Title to maintain or defeat an Action of Ejectment. It follows, therefore, that an Equitable Defense constituted no Bar to a recovery. Thus, it is no Defense in Ejectment to show that a deed was procured by the plaintiff’s fraud, even though a Court of Equity, on the same showing, might rescind the conveyance. Yz Possession of land under a verbal contract, payment of the price, and the making of valuable improvements thereon, will operate to take the case out of the Statute of Frauds in Equity, but not in a Court of Law, and such facts constitute no Defense to an Action of Ejectment. The defendant, for relief, must have recourse to a separate proceeding in Equity.  

In Illinois, when the distinction between the Common Law and Chancery Courts was being maintained, it was not permissible, in an Action of Ejectment, to attack a deed upon the ground that the grantor was mentally incompetent to execute the deed, as the remedy in such case is in a Court of Equity.  

In those states, in which the distinction between Common Law and Equity Jurisdiction is not so strictly maintained, the Defense of Incompetency can be raised in an Action of Ejectment. In an Ejectment Action, the Court cannot adjust the equities, if any, be-

---


Estoppel in Pais is available in Equity only.


23. Fleming v. Carter, 70 111. 286 (1873); Herrell v. Sizeland, 81 Ill. 457 (1876).


In general, on Mental Incompetence as a Defense, see article by Wilkinson, Mental Incompetency as a Defense to Tort Liability, 17 Iowa Mt. L. Rev. 38 (1944).

The Hilary Rules had no application to Ejectment.
AND the said C. IL, by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, &c., and saith, that he does not detain the said goods and chattels in the said Declaration specified, or any part thereof, in manner and form as the said AS. hath above thereof complained against him, and of this he the said C.D. puts himself upon the country, &c.

MARTIN, Civil Procedure at Common Law, Appendix, Form (53) (St. Paul 1905).

**Scope of five General Issue in Detinue**

In Detinue, the Declaration states that the defendant detains certain goods or chattels of


**PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR**

Sec. 255

the plaintiff, and the General Issue—”Non Detinet”—alleges that “he does not detain the said goods and chattels in the said Declaration specified,” etc. The Plea is proper, not only where the Denial is of the actual detention of the goods mentioned, but also where it is that the goods so detained are the property of the plaintiff, as it places Both Facts in Issue. Any Proof necessary to controvert these Facts, therefore, is admissible, as showing that there has been no detention.26

**PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOID.**

**ANCE IN DETINUE**

253. In Detinue, matters in Excuse or Discharge should be Plead specially.

EVIDENCE strictly in Justification, as that the goods are pledged to the defendant,25 or as establishing a lien upon them in his favor,24 are not admissible under the General Issue, as the detention would be thereby admitted. These are Special Defenses, which tend to show that the detention was rightful. Matters in Excuse or in Discharge should be specially Plead.

**THE HILARY RULES—TJIEIR EFFECT UPON NEGATIVE AND AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSES IN DETINUE**

254. “Non Detinet”, after the Riliary Rules, operated as a Denial of the Detention of the Goods by the defendant, but not of the Plaintiff’s Property therein; and no defense other


When the detention is excused or justified, the defendant must plead his defense.


In Detinue, under the General Issue of “Non Detinet,” at Common Law the del end-ant might offer evidence of his property in the goods, or that the plaintiff had made a gift of them to him, as that proved that he did not detain
the plaintiff’s goods. But by the Hilary Rules it was provided that “the Plea of Non Detinet shall operate as a denial of the detention of the goods by the defendant, but not of the plaintiff’s property therein; and no other defense than such denial, shall be admissible under that Plea.” The detention contemplated by the Rules, however, is an adverse and wrongful one. In this action, the defendant must, under the above Rule, Specifically Deny the plaintiff’s property in the goods, when necessary for his Defense.”

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN REPLEVIN

255. “Non Cepit” is the General Issue in Replevin, and is a Formal Denial of the Fact and the Place of the alleged taking. It Denies the Taking only, and not the Plaintiff’s Right of Possession,

Where Replevin may be and is brought for goods Lawfully Obtained, but Unlawfully Detained, the General Issue is “Non Detinet,” which is a Denial of the detention only, and not of the Plaintiff’s Right of Possession.

FORMS OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN REPLEVIN

(For a Taking—Non Cepit)

State of ______
The ___________ Court for the County of C.D.

ats.

A.B.

AND the said defendant, by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the

wrong and injury, when, etc., and says, that he did not take the said goods and chattels (describing them), in the said declaration mentioned, or any or either of them, or any part thereof in manner and form as the said plaintiff hath above thereof complained against him, and of this the said defendant puts himself upon the country, etc.

Encyclopedia of Forms. Form No. 17,759.

(For a Detention—Non Detinet)

State of ______
The ___________ Court for the County of

C.D.

ats.

A.R

AND the said defendant, by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says, that he does not detain the said goods and chattels (describing them) in the said declaration mentioned, or any or either of them, or any part thereof, in manner and form as the said plaintiff hath above thereof complained against him, and of this the said defendant puts himself upon the country, etc.

Encyclopedia of Forms. Form No. 17760.

THE General Issue in Replevin—“Non Ce-pit Mocio Et Forma”—operates to Deny the taking of the goods or chattels in the place mentioned. As it denies only the taking, the property in the goods, and possession of the goods
by the plaintiff at the time of the

31. “The flea of Non Cepit Modo Et Forma, as used in this Action, has been classed with Pleas of General Traverse, raising the General Issue. But it is a Plea of such limited Scope that its classification with General Traverses may well be questioned.” Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. XI, Defences in Bar by Way of Traverse. Art. 11, General Traverse, 229 (St. Paul, 2905).

seizure, are admitted, and hence under this Plea the defendant cannot have a return of the goods. This Plea applies to the case where the defendant did not in fact take the goods or chattels alleged, and where he did not take or have them at the place mentioned in the Declaration. Thus, the Sole Issue raised is whether the defendant seized the goods at all, or at the place stated. It follows, therefore, that the Traverse is clearly


‘The distinction between the effect of “Non Copit” in Replevin and “Non Detinet” in Detinue and “Not Guilty” in Trover is here noticeable. See Wndman v. North, 2 Let. 92, 83 Eng.Rep. 465 (1613), In which the opinion reali:

“Beplevin, the defendant justified and Pleaded in Bar, that the beasts belonged to a stranger, absque hoe that they were the beasts of the plaintiff. Upon this the plaintiff demurred, because this is only Matter in Abatement, and not in Bar and also it amounts to the General Issue. Cjria. In Trespass this would amount to the General Issue, but not in Replevin, and may be pleaded either in Abatement or in Bar. And there needs no Avowry Pro Rejoinjo ifabeulo in this ease, for the goods being not the plaintiff’s, the Avowant must have a return of them, 2 Cro. Sakud against Shelton; and Judgment was given for the defendant.

See, also, the following cases: Illinois: Galusha v. Butterneld, 2 Scam. (Ill.) 227 (1840); Dole v. Kennedy, 38 Ill. 282 (1865); Dyer v. Brown, 71 Ill.App, 317 (1897); Indiana: Trotter v. Taylor, 5 Blackt (lad.) 431 (1840); Mnl.,: Vickery v. Sherburne, 20 31e. 34 (1841); Pennsylvania: Williams v. Smith, 10 Serg. & K. (Pa.) 202 (1823).


Where the Declaration is for the unlawful detention only, the Plea in Denial should be “Non Detinet” or “Non Detinuit;” and that would seem on principle to be the Proper Plea at the present time, unless in case of an actual wrongful taking, since the gist of the Action is now the Wrongful Detention. Bourk v, Riggs, 38 III. 321 (1865); Chandler -cc Lincoln, 52 Ill. 14 (1869).

Sec. 256

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

499

in the Nature of a Specific Traverse, and hence should be so classified.

The Effect of the Statutory Merger of Detnug and RepleuIn Upon the General Is-sue in Replevin

WHEN the Wrongful Act of the defendant consists only of a Wrongful Detention, after a Lawful Taking, and Replevin is allowed by Statute, “Non Detinet” becomes the General Issue as in Detinue; but the effect of this Plea is no greater than that of “Non Cepit,” and, therefore, if the defendant wishes to Deny the Plaintiff’s Property, he must allege an Adverse Title in himself, or some one under whom he claims. The Pleas of “Non Cepit” and “Non Detinet” thus both concede the Right of Possession to be in the Plaintiff, and only put in Issue the Taking and the Detention, as the case may be.

By Statute, in Some States, a Plea of “Not Guilty” or other General Issue, is allowed to put in Issue, not only the Wrongful Taking and Detention, but also the Right of the Plaintiff to the Possession of the property claimed, and even Matters in Excuse may be admissible under it.

THE SPECIAL TRAVERSE IN REPLEVIN

256. The Denial of the Right or Title of the Plaintiff is commonly made by a Peculiar Argumentative Species of
Denial, known as a Special Traverse.


37. Florida: flolliday v. EcKinne, 22 Fla. 153 (1886); Mississippi: Bennett v. Holoway, 35 Miss. 211 (1877).

The General Denial in Replevin under the Codes has a peculiar comprehensiveness and permits almost all Defenses, Affirmative as well as Negative. Note: Pleading—Bep)evin———.Wbat Defenses are Provable Under a General Denial, S Minn.L.Rev. 563 (1021); Squire, General Denial in Replevin, 24 Case & Cornmonl 21 (1017).

A SPECIAL Traverse is the proper Form of Denial of the Right or Title of the Plaintiff in an Action of Replevin. It consists of two parts: (1) An Affirmative Statement by Way of Inducement, setting up the facts and circumstances inconsistent with the Right or Title of the Plaintiff, such as Title in the Defendant or in a Third Person; (2) An Absque Hoc Cause follows this Argumentative Denial with a Direct Denial of the Plaintiff’s Right. Thus, to illustrate, suppose the plaintiff in Replevin alleges that the defendant Wrongfully took his cattle. The defendant, Pleading an Affirmative Statement by Way of Inducement, would allege “that the cattle were the cattle of X, a stranger.” But Two Affirmatives do not create an Issue. If, therefore, the defendant ended his Plea at this point, it would be subject to a Special Demurrer as an Argumentative Denial. To avoid this, the defendant adds his Absque Hoc Clause—and not the cattle of the plaintiff—which turns the Argumentative Denial into a Negative Plea Denying Title.

Under a Plea by Way of Special Traverse, the plaintiff had the burden of Proof, and the defendant, if he succeeds, is entitled to a return of the goods, without the necessity of making an Avowry or Cognizance, because the plaintiff must recover on the strength of his own title and right to immediate possession.

38. Chandler v. Lincoln, 52 111. 74 (1869); Reynolds v. McCormick, 62 Ill. 412 (1872); Va[l]i Naniec v. Bradley, 69 Ill. 299 (1878); Atkins v. Byrnes, 71 XII. 326 (1874); Lamping v. Payne, 53 111. 403 (1876); Pease v. Ditto, 189 Ill. 456, 59 N.E. 083 (1001).


The Plea of property in a third person in Replcri,i is matter of Inducement to a Formal Traverse of the right of property in the plaintiff, which must he proved by the plaintiff. Delaware: Beatty v. Parsons, 2 Boyce (Del.) 134, 78 A. 302 (1910), involving a denial of property in the plaintiff; Illinois: Kee & 500

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

FLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN REPLEVIN

237. Affirmative Defenses must be Specially Plead. An Avowry or Cognizance is a Plea somewhat in the nature of a Cross-Action by the defendant.

MATTER in Justification and Excuse for the taking, such as Levy on Execution or Attachment, or on Distress, or Seizure for Taxes, must be Specially Plead, as also the Statute of Limitations, Satisfaction or Release, and Estoppel to claim the goods.

Where the defendant desired to Justify his taking as landlord, or on behalf of someone else from whom he derived his right to distrain, he Pleaded what was known as an Avowry, which justified the taking of the goods in his own right, or Cognizance, under which he claimed the goods or chattels in the right or on behalf of another. The
usual grounds were the taking on Distress Warrant for rent in arrear, or taking under Legal Process, Such Fleas avowed or acknowledged the seizure of the goods or chattels in question, and set forth the facts of a tenancy and of arrearage in rent, and Concluded by demanding a return of the seized property. The Avowry or Cognizance thus admits that the plaintiff is the owner of the goods, and alleges a right to take or detain them as security for the rent alleged to be due. Such a Plea was in the rALure of a Cross-Declaration, and hence the

Chiapell Daity Co. v. Pennsylvania Ce., 291 II], 248, 120 N.E. 179 (1920).


42. Anderson v. Takoi, I Oil. (III) 365 (1844); Slmincus v. Jenkins, 76 Ill. 470 (1875).

43. Leeper v. fleraman, 58 111. 218 (1871); Colwell v Brower, 75 111. 510 (1874); Mann v. Oberne, 15 Ill, App. 35 (1884).

44. James v. Dunlap, 2 Seam. (III.) 481 (1840); Dayton v. Fry, 29 III. 525 (1563); Krause v. Curtis, 73 Ill. 450 (1874-). plaintiff’s Next Plea was not a Replication but a Plea in Bar, after which followed the Replication, Rejoinder, etc., the ordinary name of each Stage of Pleading being thus postponed one step further than in an ordinary action. In Pleading thereto, the plaintiff invoked the Plea of Rien.s en Arrere (nothing in arrear), which was recognized as the General Traverse for rent due on a demise.43 ‘l’his Plea, entered at what was usually the Replication Stage of Pleading, and in Form more like a Specific than a General Traverse, was restricted in Scope, admitting the defendant’s title as stated in the Avowry, and operating only to Deny that any rent was in arrear.40

The Hilary Rules in no way changed the Scope of the So-called General Issue in Replevin, as in Form it was already in the Nature of a Specific Traverse. As has been observed, “Non Cepit,” the General Issue, operated only to Deny the taking in the place mentioned; it did not operate to put in issue title, and hence the development of the Special Traverse, discussed in a preceding section, to accomplish that end when desired.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON SIMPLE CONTRACTS AND STATUTES

258. The proper General Issue in Debt on Simple Contracts or on Statutes is “Nil Debet,” which is a Formal denial of the Debt. It Not only Denies the existence of any contract, but under it Defenses in Excuse or in Discharge may also be shown.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT

[Debt on Simple Contract:

In the King’s Bench, Nil Debet

Term, in the Year of the Reign of King George

the Fourth.


Sec. 258

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

C. 31

ats.

A.B.

AND the said C. D., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, &c., and says that he does not owe the said sum of money, above demanded, or any part thereof, in manner and form as the said A. B. hath above thereof complained against him, and of this he, the said C. D., puts himself upon the country, &c.
FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT

UNDER THE HILARY RULES

[Debt on Simple Contract: Nunquam Indebitatus]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the Year of the Reign of King William the Fourth.

CD.

ats.

A. B.

AND the said Defendant, by William Johnson, his attorney, says, that he never was indebted in the manner and form as in the declaration alleged. And of this he puts himself upon the country.

WHERE the Action of Debt is not founded on a Record or a Specialty, the General Form of Traverse is “Nil Debet,” meaning that the defendant owes nothing; and it applies without regard to whether the debt arises by the operation of a Statute or by Simple Contract. As “Nil Debet” denied a present existing debt, the Courts gave a very broad construction to it, permitting Defenses which went to show the non-existence of the debt. Thus, for example, where the Declaration in Debt on Simple Contract alleged that the defendant is indebted to the plaintiff for goods sold and delivered, to which the defendant pleaded “Nil Debet”, that is, that “he does not owe the money alleged to be due,” the Issue on the Pleadings, framed in the present tense, is: Is the defendant presently indebted to the plaintiff? Were the Allegation merely “that the goods were not sold and delivered,” it would, of course, be applicable to no case but one where the defendant intends to deny the sale and delivery; but, as the Allegation is that he does not owe, it is evident that the Plea is adapted to any kind of Defense that tends to deny an existing debt, and, therefore, not merely, in the case supposed, to a Defense consisting of a Denial of the sale and delivery, but also to the Defenses of Arbitrament, Satisfaction, Release, and a multitude of others, to which a Traverse of a narrower kind would be inapplicable. It has been said that the Defenses of Bankruptcy, the Statute of Limitations and Tender are the only ones which could not be proved under the Plea of Nil Debet. However this may be, it appears that there is hardly any Matter of Defense to an Action of Debt to which the Plea of “Nil Debet” is not applicable, because almost all Defenses resolve themselves into a Denial of the Debt.  

47 In general, on the subject of Payment as a DC-tease, see:


Annotation: May Payment be Proved Under the General Issue or General Denial, or Must it be Specially Plead? 100 A.L.R. 264 (1936).


502 DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Plea is almost the same as the General Issue of “Non Assumpsit” in Indebitatus Assumpsit.
In Debt on a Penal Statute, the more appropriate Traverse is that of “Nil Debet,” as it accords with the Form of the Action. However, the Plea of “Not Guilty” may be interposed, because the action is to enforce the penalty for an offense.70

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN DEBT ON SIMPLE CONTRACTS AND STATUTES

259. With the possible Exception of Bankruptcy, the Statute of Limitations and Tender, which it may be necessary to Plead Specially, most Defenses in Debt might be shown under “Nil Delict,” whether going to the Denial of a Material Allegation or to Dispute Liability.

AS previously observed, it was said that the Scope of “Nil Debet” was so broad, that the only Defenses which had to be Pledged Affirmatively were Bankruptcy, the Statute of Limitations and Tender.71


Tennessee: McGavock v. Pui'ear, 0 Cold. (Ten.,) 34 0868; Federal: Lino v. Gardner, 1 Cranch (V.a.) 343. 2 LEd. 130 (1803).


260. The Hilary Rules changed the General Issue in Debt from “Nil Delict” [I do not owe] to “Nunquam Indebitatus” [never did owe], in Actions of Debt on Simple Contracts other than Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes, and hence, as in Incebitatus Assumpsit after the Hilary Rules, all Matters in Confession and Avoidance are to be Specially Pleaded.

The Hilary Rules abolished the Flea of “Nil Debet.” s The Plea “Nunquam Indebitatus” was substituted in lieu thereof in all Actions on Simple Contracts, other than Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes. The same effect was given to this New Form of Flea as to the Plea of “Non Assumpsit” in Indebitatus Assumpsit under the Hilary Rules, and all Matters in Confession and Avoidance were to be Specially Pleaded as in the Action of Assumpsit.

In other Actions of Debt in which the General Issue of “Nil Debet” had been used, in-eluding those on Bills of Exchange and

as of Assumpsit, the same reason to,’ Pleading the Statute applyi: g equally to both. If the Statute is not pleaded, the plaintiff is liable to be surprised, and therefore equally unprepared to answer in the One Action as jo the Other. In neither case does the Statute extinguish the Debt, but Bars only the I ti’nedv, and it is optional whether the defendant will insist upon the Statute or waive it. I- he intends to insist upon it, he should plead it to prevent surprise, and if he does not, it should be presu med lie intends to waive it. Phi is is the view taken by the late Mr. Serjt. Williams, than whom a sounder Lawyer, or more accurate pleader has rarely (lone honor te his profession ; and he states It to be very usual, and the modern practice, to plead to debt on Simple Contract, that the Cause of Action did not accrue within six years, that the plaintiff may reply, either that be was within any of the exceptions in the Statute, or that he has sued out a Writ within time, as is the Common Case in Assumpsit.”

Promissory Notes, the defendant was required to Specifically Traverse some particular Matter of Fact, or enter a Plea in Confession and Avoidance.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY

261. The General Issue in Debt on a Specialty is “Non Est Factum,” which is a Formal Denial that the Deed mentioned in the Declaration is the Deed of the defendant; but it is only proper when the Deed is the foundation of the Action. It Denies the Execution and Validity of the Deed.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY

[Debt upon Specialty: Non Est Factum]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the ______ Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth.

C. D.

ats.

A. B.

AND the said C. D., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that the said supposed writing obligatory [or “indenture” or “articles of agreement,” according to the subject of the action] is not his deed. And of this he puts himself upon the country.


AS the foundation of this action is the Sealed Instrument evidencing the legal debt, and as the defendant cannot Deny the Liability if he Executed the Instrument, and it is valid, the General Issue of “Nil Debet” would be improper. Under “Non Est Factum,” the defendant may show either that he Never Executed the Deed in Point of Fact, or that it is absolutely Void in Law, but not Matters which show that it was merely Voidable.

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY

262. Unlike Matters which operated as a Denial of the Execution of the Deed in Point of Fact Only, or which showed that the Deed was absolutely Void in Law, Defenses going to show that the Deed was merely Voidable were required to be Specially Plead.

ALL Defenses which went to show that the Deed sued on in Debt upon a Specialty was merely Voidable had to be Specially Plead. Thus, the Defenses that the Deed was executed by a married woman alone, or by a lunatic, or that there had been an erasure by an obligee, could be shown under “Non Est Factum”, as they went to dispute the Deed in

In a Declaration hi Debt on Speci,ity, where the defendant pleaded: (1) that he never was indebted as alleged; and (2) that he did not promuse as alleged

—such Pleas were held improper. 2[er.-yninn v. Wheeler, 130 Md. 506, 101 A. 551 (1917).

That the defendant did not sign or sign the ‘vri ing sued on is a Defense which may be properly put in Issue in an Action of Debt on a Sealed lisl i-u-nent, either by a Plea of “Nil Debet,” accompanied by the defendant’s affidavit denying his signature to the writing, or by a Plea of “Non Est Factum.” Adams v. Adams, 79 W.Va. 540, 92 SE. 463 (1917).


At Common Law, the Plea of ‘‘Non Est Fnetuni’ to a Declaration in Debt on a Bond, were placed in Issue the Execution of the Bond. Beggs v. Chicago Bonding & Surety Co., 207 Ill.App. 621 (1917).


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

504

Point of Law; but the Defenses of Duress, Fraud, or Infancy had to be Affirmatively pleaded, as they rendered the Deed Voidable only.

THE HILARY RULES—THEIR EFFECT UPON THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON A SPECIALTY

263. Under the Hiliary Rules “Non Est Factum” was restricted to a Denial of the Execution of the Deed in Point of Fact Only; all other Defenses were required to be Specially Pleaded, including matters which made the Deed Absolutely Void, as well as those which made it Voidable.

The Hilary Rules expressly provided that the Plea of “Non Est Factum” was restricted to a Denial of the Execution of the Deed in Point of Fact Only; all other Defenses, including those which made the Deed Absolutely Void, as well as those which made it Voidable, were thereafter to be Specially Pleaded. In this action, therefore, the defendant must still Plead, as prior to the above Rule, Payment at or after the day, Performance of the Condition of the Bond, or any Matter in Excuse of Performance, such as Non Damnificatus [not injured] to a bond of indemnity, and no award to an arbitration bond. The defendant must also Plead Specially, a Tender or Set-Off.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON JUDGMENTS

264. The proper General Issue in Debt on Judgments is “Nul Tie! Record,” which Denies the Existence of the Record alleged.

56. In general, on the Defense of Infancy, see:


08. 1 Tlld, The Practice of the Courts of Icing’s Bench hi Personal Actions, e. XXVIII, Of Pleas In Bar, and Notice of Set-Off, 586 (Philadelphia, 1807).

“All Nul Tie! Record” sets up: (1) The Defense either that there is No Record at all in existence; or (2) one different from that which the plaintiff has declared on; or (3) that the Judgment is Void on the Face of the Record.

All other defenses must be Specially Pleaded.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN DEBT ON JUDGMENTS

[Debt upon Judgments: Nul Tie! Record] In the King’s Bench, Term, in the Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth.

C. D.
AND the said C. V., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that there is not any record of the said supposed recovery in the said declaration mentioned, remaining in the said court of, in manner and form as the said plaintiff hath above in his said declaration alleged, and this the said defendant is ready to verify. Wherefore he prays judgment if the said plaintiff ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action thereof against the said defendant, etc.

3 CHITTY, Treatise on Pleading with Free..

THE Plea of “Nul Tiel Record” (no such record) attacks the existence of the obligation alleged; and under it, it may be shown that no such Record exists as is alleged, which is generally done by establishing its invalidity as a Judgment, or operation may be taken of a Variance in stating it. As it


PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR
is a Maxim of Law that there can be no Averment in Pleading against the Validity of a Record, though there may be against its operation, no Matter of Defense can be Pleaded which existed anterior to the recovery of the Judgment; and, as this Plea merely puts in Issue the existence of the Record as stated, any Matter of Discharge, such, for example, as a Release, must be specially Pleaded.

“Nul Tiel Record” sets up the Defense either: (1) that there is no such Record at all in existence, or (2) a Variance, the Record being Different from that Declared on by the Plaintiff, or (3) that the Judgment is Void on the Face of the Record. All other Defenses

must be specially Pleaded. 65.

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN DEBT ON JUDGMENTS

265. Matters in Discharge, such as Satisfaction of the Judgment, Release, and Statute of Limitations, must also be Affirmatively Pleaded.

ALL defenses, other than set forth above as available under “Nul Tiel Record,” must be specially Pleaded. If extrinsic evidence is necessary to show that the Judgment is Void, as that it was fraudulently obtained, or that the Court had No Jurisdiction of the Person or Subject Matter, the Defense must be


61. Forsyth v. Barnes, 228 Ill. 326, 81 N.E. 1028, 10 Ann.Cas. 710 (1907); Id. 131 Ill.App. 467 (1907); Waterbury Nat Bank v. Reed, 231 Ill. 246, 83 N.E. 185 (1907), involving a Writ of Scire Faecias. Pleaded Specially. Matters in Discharge, such as Satisfaction of Judgment, Release, and the Statute of Limitations, must be Affirmatively Pleaded.

The Illinois Rules contained no provision concerning the General Issue in Debt on Judgments.

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN COVENANT

266. The General Issue in Covenant is “Non Est Factum,” which is a Formal Denial that the Deed is the Deed of the defendant. It places in Issue the Execution and Validity of the Deed.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN COVENANT

[Covenant: Non Est Factum]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth.

C. D. ats.

A. E.

AND the said C. D., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that the said supposed writing obligatory [or “indenture” or “articles of agreement,” according to the subject of the action] is not his deed. And of this he puts himself upon the country.

STEPHEN, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions 276, 277 (2d ed. by Andrews, Chicago, 1901).

THE Plea of “Non Est Factum” in Covenant only puts the execution and validity of the deed in Issue in the same manner as in Debt on Specialty, and admits the same Proof only; such a Plea is not a true General Issue, as it only puts the deed in Issue, and not the Breach of the Covenant. Most Defenses in Covenant must, therefore, be by Specific Traverse, or a Special Plea, when statutes do not provide otherwise. In this action, however, the defendant could give in evidence, under a Plea of “Non Est Factum,” that the deed declared on was delivered as an escrow, on a condition not performed; or that it was Void at Common Law ab initio, as being made by a married woman, or lunatic, and the like; or that it afterwards became Void by alteration, cancellation or erasure.

Where, therefore, the defendant Pleads “Non Est Factum” to a Declaration, only the deed is placed in Issue, and
all other Facts stand admitted by the defendant’s failure to Deny them by an appropriate Plea.\textsuperscript{55}

The Plea of “Non Est Factum” in Covenant, as developed at Common Law, is restricted in Scope when compared with the General Issue in Assumpsit, Case or Debt on Simple Contract, confining the Issue to

\textsuperscript{84} The Rules as to Pleas in Debt on Specialty are applicable also to Covenant. Illinois: City of Chicago v. English, 180 Ill. 476, 54 NE. 609 (1899); Goldstein v. Reynolds, 190 IR. 124, 60 NE. 65 (1901); Badaishii v. Ahlsvede, 185 Ill.App. 513 (1914); New York: McNeish v. Stewart, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 474 (1827); Cooper v. Watson, 10 Wend. (N.Y.) 205 (1833); Norman v. Vells, 17 Vend. (N.Y.) 136 (1537); Kane v. Sanger, 14 Johns. (N.Y.) 50 (1817).

\textsuperscript{60} Marine Ins. Co. v. Hodgson, C. Crancli (U.S.) 200, 3 LEd. 200 (1510).

the Existence of the Deed in Fact and in Law, All Other Defenses being required to be Specially Plead thống,\textsuperscript{66} Saunders 67 and Chitty - felt that the Plea lacked the requisites of a General Traverse, as it is so narrow in Scope. The reason for this characteristic of the Plea—its narrowness—may be traced to the fact that in ancient times there was no Defense to a Sealed Contract outside of its conditions, except such as had a logical tendency to show that it had not been executed, or that the cause had been released under seal. Thus, in the early period of the action, Fraud, Want of Consideration, and Release, unless under Seal, constituted No Defense. No Defense in Pais outside of Non-Performance of conditions, except Duress, would be entertained.\textsuperscript{69}

In an Action on a Sealed Contract of Lease, if you sue in Covenant for the rent, the defendant must Plead to some Particular Allegation. The Defendant may plead Non Est Factum, yet that only puts the Execution or Validity of the deed in Issue, and not the Breach of the Covenant. If, however, you sue in Debt on the Lease, though it be Sealed, the defendant can Plead the General Issue of Nil Debet, as the Specialty is considered as but the Inducement to the action. In Actions of Debt on the Specialty itself, the General Issue is Non Est Factum, as in Covenant. Under Nil Debet, the defendant may not only put the plaintiff to the necessity of showing the existence of a legal contract, but he may give in evidence the Performance of it, or Matter in Excuse of Performance, or a Re

\textsuperscript{66} Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. XI, Defences In Bar by Way of Traverse, Art. II, General Traverse, § 261, Covenant, 221 (St. Paul, 1905).

\textsuperscript{67} 1 Saunders, Law of Pleading and Evidence in Civil Actions, with Forms and the Pleading and Evidence, 393 (3rd Am. ed. Philadelphia, 1837).

\textsuperscript{63} 1 Chitty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions with Precedents and Forms, c. VII, Of Pleas in Bar, 486 (12th Am. ed. springfield, 1855).

\textsuperscript{69} Ames, Farol Contracts Prior to Assulpsit, S larv.L.Rev. 252 (1894).

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

lease, or Other Matter in Discharge. But, if plaintiff sues in Covenant, the defendant may be compelled to Plead his grounds of Defense Specially.\textsuperscript{78}

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN COVENANT

267. Matters showing that the Deed was merely Voidable, Not Void, such as Duress, Fraud in the Inducement, Gaming, Infancy and Usury, were required to be Plead Specially.

IT was an Inflexible Rule that in actions on deeds, Special Matters showing that the instrument was merely Voidable, Not Void, such as Duress, Fraud in the Inducement, Gaming, Infancy and Usury, were required to be Plead Specially,\textsuperscript{1} when, in the course of time, they came to be recognized as Valid Defenses at Law.\textsuperscript{72}

In referring to the late recognition of some Defenses, as Legal Defenses, Martin declares:

“It may be proper to mention in this connection that under the Common Law, as prevailing down to very recent times, Fraud was no Defense at Law to an Action on a Sealed Instrument\textsuperscript{W} The same is true of the Defense

\textsuperscript{70} 1 Chitty, Treatise on Parties to Actions, Forms of Actions, and Pleading, 510, 517, 522 (6th Am. ed., Springfield, 1833).

\textsuperscript{71} A Special Plea common to Cov Dise, at is: “Non Infrig Conventionem”, covenant not broken, which denies the Breach, but not the Deed. It, therefore, is Dot the General Issue, but a Plea in Bar. New York: Roosevelt v. Pulton’s Heirs, 7 Cow. (N.Y.) 71 (1821); Vermont: Phelps v. Sawyer, 1 Aikens (Vt.) 150 (1826). “Covenants Performed” is proper if the Covenants sued on are in the Affirmatis-e. This cannot be
supported by evidence showing excuse.


-1. English: Wright v. Campbell, 2 F. & F. 393, 175 Eng.Rep. 1111 (1501); Missouri: Montgomery v. Tipton, 1 Mc. 446 (1824); Federal: George v. Tate, 102 U.S. 561, 26 LEO. 232 (1881); Ames, Parol Contracts Prior to Assumpsit, S Ilarv.L.Rev. 252 (1894)- of a Want or Failure of Consideration.74 Illegality, unless apparent on the face of the instrument, was likewise no Defense at Law prior to 176775 Neither was Payment, unaccompanied with Release under Seal, a Valid Defense in England until it was made so by Statute in 17Q5-° To the General Rule of the Common Law prohibiting the Avoidance of Sealed Instruments by Defenses in País, there was an Exception in the Case of Duress, which was always, and still remains, a Valid Defense at Law; but which must be Affirmatively Plead; and is not admissible under the General Issue?

THERALRY RULES—THEIR EFFECT UPON THE GENERAL ISSUE
IN COVENANT

265. Under “Non Eat Factum” after the ilily Rules, only the Deed in Point of Fact was in Issue; all other Defenses were required to he Specially Plead.

ALTHOUGH the Plea of “Non Est Factum” in Covenant was originally of Limited Scope, as compared with the General Issue in some of the other Common Law Actions, such, for example, as Assumpsit or Case, the effect of the Hilary Rules was to further restrict its effect. Thereafter, it operated as a Denial of the Execution of the Deed in Point of Fact Only,76 all other Defenses being required to be Specially Plead, including Matters which went to make the deed Absolutely Void, as well as those which made it Voidable,


4 Anne, c. 16, 12, 11 Statutes at Large 157 (1705).


DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

269. “Non Assumpsit” is the General Issue in Special Assumpsit, and is, in effect, a Formal Denial of Liability on the Promise or Contract alleged. It Denies not only the Inducement or Statement of the Plaintiff’s Eight, but also the Ereach, and allows Any Defense tending to show that there was No Debt or Cause of Action at the time of Commencing Suit.

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT
[Special Assumpsit: Non-Assumpsit]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth, CD.
ats.
A.B.
AND the said CD., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury when, etc., and says that he did not undertake or promise in manner and form as the said A.R. hath above complained. And of this the said C.D. puts himself upon the country.

STEPHEN, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, 277 (2nd ed. by Andrews, Chicago 1901).

Scope of the General issue in Special Assumpsit

WHERE the action is in Special Assumpsit, the General Issue of “Non Assumpsit” is a Denial of the Contract as alleged, covering all that is covered by what is termed the “Inducement” or “Statement” of the Plaintiff’s Right. Under it, any Proof is proper showing that no such Contract as is stated was in fact made; or that the Statement of the Contract

79. Id. at 223; English: Lyall v. Higgins, 4 Q.B. 525, 114 Eng.Rep. 997 (1848); Bilad v. Dale, 2 M. & W. 775, 150 Eng.Rep. 970 (1837); Smith v. Parsons, 8 Or. & P. 199, 173 Eng.Rep. 459 (1837); Alabama: Hunt v. Test, S Ala. 713, 42 Am.Dec. 659 (1845); is wrong in terms, or omits a Material Part; or that the Subject-Matter of the Contract is misdescribed; or that there has been a Failure of Consideration or a Different Consideration from that stated; or that the Promise of the defendant is not the Agreement Pledged; or that he made No Promise at all. 80.

In the case of Renes v. Rankers Life ma Co., 82 the Rhinois Supreme Court states the Scope of the General Issue in Assumpsit as follows: “It is well settled that nearly every Defense is Admissible, under the General Issue or Plea of Non Assumpsit, which shows that there was not a subsisting cause of action in the plaintiff at the time the suit was brought. A bankrupt or insolvent’s Discharge and the Statute of Limitations are among the very few Exceptions to this Rule. Under such General Issue, the defendant may put in Issue the plaintiff’s Capacity to Sue, the Execution of the Contract, and the Release and Satisfaction and Payment of the debt, if made previous to the Commencement of the Suit, 2 R.CL. § 28, p. 770. Whatever Matter of Defense was contained in the Special Plea, which plaintiff was bound to prove under the General Issue, renders that Plea subject to the objection that it Amounted to the General Issue and was therefore proper-


ly held Demurrable by the Court. Wadhams v. Swan, 109 Ill. 46.”

Tidd states the Scope of the General Issue in Assumpsit as follows; “In Assumpsit, we have seen, the General Issue, or Common Plea in Denial, is Non Assumpsit: and this Plea was formerly holden to be proper, when there was either no contract between the parties, or not such a contract as the plaintiff had declared on; and the defendant might have given in evidence under it, that the contract was Void in Law, by Coverture (James v. Fowkes, 12 Mod. 101), Gaming (Hussey v- Jacob, 1 Ld- Raym. 87), Usury (Ld. Bernard v. Saul, 1 Strange, 498), etc., or Voidable by Infancy (Darby v. Boucher, 1 Salk. 279; Madox v. Eden, 1 Bos. & P.481, {a] ), Duress, etc.; or, if good in Point of Law, that it had been Performed (Brown v. Cornish, 1 Ld. Baym. 217; Paramore v. Johnson, 1 Ld. Raym. 566, 12 Mod. 376; Sea v. Taylor, 1 In England prior to the Hilary Ilules of 1333, coverture, like many other affirmatiVe defenses, was admissible under the General Issue. Culver v. Johnson, 90 ill. 91 (1878).


Salk. 394), or that there was sonic Legal Excuse for its Non-Performance, as a Release, or Discharge before Breach, or Non-Performance by the Plaintiff of a Condition Precedent, etc. This sort of evidence was calculated to show that the plaintiff never had a cause of action: but if he had, the defendant might have given in evidence under the General Issue, that it was Discharged by an Accord and Satisfaction (Paraniore v. Johnson, 1 Ld. Raym, 586, 12 Mod. 376; Martin v. Thornton, 4 Esp. Rep. 151, per Ld. Alvanley, C. 3.; but see Adderley v. Evans, 1 Ken. 250; Roades v. Barnes, 1 Ken. 391, 1 Burr. 9, 1 Blac.Rep. 85. S.C. 65; and see Rolt v. Watson, 12 Moore, 82, 4 Bing. 273. S.C.; Siboni v. Kirkman, 1 Meeson. & W. 418, 1 Tyr. & C. 777. S.C.), Arbitrament, Release, Foreign Attachment, or Former Recovery for the Same Cause, etc.; In short, the question in Assumpsit, upon the General Issue, was whether there was a subsisting debt or cause of action, at the time of Commencing the Suit. But Matter of Defence arising after action brought could not have been Plead in Bar of the action generally; – and therefore was not admissible in evidence under the General Issue; and Matters of Law in Avoidance of the Contract, or Discharge of the Action, were usual’y Plead. It was also necessary to Plead a Tender, or the Statute of Limitations, etc., and to Plead or give a Notice of Set-off. Anciently, Matters in Discharge of the Action must have been Plead Specially. Afterwards, a distinction was made between Ex

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR


On Illegality, see, Pollak v. Electric Ass’n, 125 U.S. 446, 9 Snp.Ct. 119, 82 L.Ed. 474 (Ala.Law); McCrea v. Parsons, 112 Fed. 917, 50 C.C.A. 612 (Ill.Law).


On Coverture see, Streeter v. Streeter, 43 111. 155 (1867).

a8. Matter of Defense arising after Action brought cannot be Plead In Bar of the Action generally, and therefore Is not
plead, but not in the latter. At length, about the time of Lord Holt, they were universally allowed to be given in evidence under the General Issue.”

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

270. Matters of Defense arising after the Commencement of the Action were required to be Plead Specially; and Matters of Law in Avoidance of the Contract, or in Discharge of the Action, were usually Specially Pleaded. It was necessary to Plead Bankruptcy, Tender, the Statute of Limitations, and Set-Off.

As we have seen, the General Rule in Special Assumpsit was that any Defense which went to show there was no subsisting cause of action at the time of the Commencement of the Action, could be shown under the General Issue. But Defenses arising after the action had Commenced were not Pleadable in Bar of the action generally, and hence were not admissible in evidence under the General Issue. Matters of Law in Avoidance of the Contract, or in Discharge of the Action, were usually pleaded.5 It was necessary to Plead Bankruptcy, the Statute of Frauds, the Statute of Limitations, Tender and Set-Off; and in suits on Negotiable Bonds and Promissory Notes, Want of Consideration, Total and Partial Failure of Consideration, and Fraud either in the Execution or in the Consideration, were required to be Plead Specially. Former recovery might be shown under the General Issue.6

Some doubt has been raised as to whether the Defense of the Statute of Frauds could be availed of under the General Issue. The General Rule, if a party would avail himself of the Statute of Frauds as a Defense, is that he must Plead it. The reason for the Rule at Common Law appears obvious, for a Contract is not Absolutely Void, but merely Voidable at the Election of the Party against whom it is to be enforced. When, therefore, such a Contract is declared upon, if a Party fails to Plead the Statute of Frauds, he will be deemed to have waived it.1

THE RILLAyi RULES—THEIR EFFECT ON THE SCOPE OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT

271. The Illitory Rules restricted the General Issue in Special Assumpsit to a Denial in Fact of the Promise or Contract Alleged.

Anciently, as we have seen, Matters in Discharge of the Action were required to be Specially Pleaded. Afterward, a distinction was made between Express and Implied Assumpsit; in the former, or in Special Assumpsit, they were still required to be Pleaded, but not in the latter—General or Indebitatus Assumpsit. At length, about the time of Lord Holt there was a general relaxation of the earlier view, and they were

---

5 1 Tidd, Practice of the Courts of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, e. XXVIII, of Pleas in Bar and Notice of Set-Off, 593 (Philadelphia, 1807).

6 1 Tidd, Practice of the Courts of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, e. XXVIII, of Pleas in Bar and Notice of Set-Off, 593 (Philadelphia, 1807).
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

This page contains a discussion of the General Issue in the context of civil actions. The text explains that the General Issue is universally allowed to be given in evidence under the General Issue in either Form of Action. The pleadings in this context are distinguished from others, such as the Non-Assumpsit plea, which is restricted under the Hilary Rules. The text references case law and legal treatises to support its arguments.

---

88. Ibid.
89. Ibid.
91. Beard v. Converse, 84 111. 512 (1877).
Sec. 272

Pleas—Peremptory or in Bar

Universally allowed to be given in evidence under the General Issue in either Form of Action.

Thereafter, declared that “in all Actions of Assumpsit, except on Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes, the Plea of Non-Assumpsit shall operate only as a denial in fact of the express contract or promise alleged, or of the matters of fact from which the contract or promise alleged may be implied in law.” Thus, if the defendant be charged with an Express Promise, and his case be that, after making such Promise, it was Released, this plainly Confesses and Avoids the Declaration. To permit the defendant, therefore, to give this in evidence under the General Issue, which is a Plea by Way of Traverse, is to lose sight of the distinction between the Two Kinds of Pleading.

Under the Hilary Rules, this misapplication and abuse of the General Issue was corrected. It restricted “Non Assumpsit” to a Denial of the Contract alleged. It did not Deny the Breach, nor Performance by the plaintiff of a Condition Precedent to his Right to sue, nor Performance by him of a Bilateral contract. These were, under the Hilary Rules, properly the subject of a Common or Specific Traverse.

In Actions on Bills of Exchange and Promissory Notes, under the Hilary Rules, the General Issue was not permitted. What was required was a Specific Traverse of some Matter of Fact alleged in the Declaration, such as making, drawing, indorsing, accepting, presenting or giving notice.°


Matter In Confession and Avoidance, including Matter in Discharge, was required to be Specially Plead under the Florida Circuit Court Rule 66. Mizell v. Watson, 57 Fla. 111, 49 So. 149 (1909).

93. 1 flrtty, Treatise on Pleading and Parties to Actions, with Precedents and Notes, c. VII, of Pleas In Bar, 502 (16th Am, ed. by Perkins, Springfield, 1885).

FORM OF THE GENERAL ISSUE IN GENERAL

[General Assumpsit: Non-Assumpsit]

In the King’s Bench, Term, in the ___ Year of the Reign of King George the Fourth.

C. D.
ats.
A.a

AND the said C.D., by William Johnson, his attorney, comes and defends the wrong and injury, when, etc., and says that he did not undertake or promise in manner and form as the said AR hath above complained. And of this the said C.D. puts himself upon the country.

STEPHEN, Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, Pleading, 277 (2d ed. by Andrews, Chicago 1901).

The Scope of the Genera? issue in Gnural or Indebitatus Assumpsit

THE General Issue in the Action of General Assumpsit is “Non-Assumpsit”. This Plea operates similarly to the General Issue in Special Assumpsit and in Debt on Simple Contract, but with certain peculiarities. It is, in the first place, a Denial of the indebtedness and of all the Matters of Fact from which the Debt and the Promise alleged may
be Implied by Law, such as the bargain, sale and delivery, the performance of work, or the receipt of money to
the use of the plaintiff. Defenses in Excuse and in Discharge may, for the most part, be shown under the General Issue. Many matters in Discharge need

THE GENERAL ISSUE IN GENERAL
OR INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT

272. The General Issue in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit

the Hilary Rules of 1834
debitatus Assumpsit—"Non-Assumpsit"—oper-ates as a Denial of the

defendant, but a Discharge in Bankruptcy, the Statute of Limitations, and a few other

Defenses, must be Specially Plead-ed.

Kollier & Reppy ComLaw Pug HB.—18

512

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

not be Specially Plead-ed. All Defenses, which show the transaction to be Void or Voidable, including Illegality,

Fraud, Duress, and Incapacity, may be shown under the General Issue.

PLEAS IN CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE IN GENERAL OR INDEBITATUS
ASSUMPSIT

273. While many Matters in Discharge may

be shown under the General Issue in General or

Indebitatus Assumpsit, some Defenses, such as

Discharge in Bankruptcy, and the Statute of

Limitations, must be Specially Plead-ed.

MANY matters in Discharge, such as Payment, Novation, Accord and Satisfaction, Conditions Subsequent, may

be shown under the General Issue, with some exceptions, among which are the following: (1) Discharge in

Bankruptcy; (2) Failure and Lack of Consideration of Negotiable Notes, if copy is filed with the Common Counts;

(3) Infancy (query); (4) Set-Off; (5) Statute of Limitations; and (6) Usury.

TIIE HILARY RULES—TIEIR EFFECT
UPON THE SCOPE OF THE GENERAL
ISSUE IN GENERAL OR INDEBITATUS
ASSUMPSIT

274. Under the Hilary Rules “Non Assumpsit”, in General or Indebitatus Assumpsit, oper-ated as a Denial of the
Matters of Fact from which the Contract or Promise alleged may be Implied by Law.

BY the Hilary Rules of 1834, it was provided that “Non Assumpsit”, in General Assumpsit, shall operate only as
Denial of the Matters of Fact from which the Contract or Promise alleged may be Implied in Law.

96. Wilson v. Icing, 88 RI. 232, 238 (1876); Columbia Heating Co. v. O’Halloran, 144 Ill App. 74 (1908).

it the Common Counts alone are used, the defendant has no notice describing the instrument relied upon for a recovery, and accordingly, it is

held that the defendant cannot be required to set up Defenses such as the Statute of Frauds specially.


And in compliance with this Rule, it was declared that in General Assumpsit for goods sold and delivered, or for

money had and received, “Non Assumpsit” was to operate only as a Denial of the sale and delivery, or of the receipt

of the money to the plaintiff’s use.

In consequence of the Hilary Rules, in General Assumpsit, as in Special Assumpsit, all Matters in Confession and
Avoidance, not only those in Discharge, but those which show the transaction to be either Void or Voidable in Point

Page 538 of 735
COMPARISON OF SCOPE OF DIFFERENT GENERAL ISSUES

275. The General Issue has a wide Scope in Case, Trover, Assumpsit, Debt on Simple Contract, and Ejectment. It has the effect of a General Denial only in Trespass and Detinue. In other Actions, the General Issue is more in the nature of a Specific Denial than a General Denial.

It has been observed that, at Common Law, by the General Issue in Assumpsit, in Debt on Simple Contract, in Trover, in Case, and in Ejectment, the defendant puts the plaintiff to the Proof of almost all the elements of his cause of action, and at the same time he may prove in his own Defense almost all Matters in Justification and Excuse, and most of the matters in Discharge. In Trespass and Detinue, however, the General Issue is only a Summary Denial of the Material Allegations of the Declaration, and matters in Confession and Avoidance must be Specially Plead, and cannot be admitted under the General Issue.

In the Actions of Covenant, Debt on Specialty, Debt on Judgment, and Replevin, the General Issue does not perform the function of a General Denial, but rather has the effect of denying only some of the Material Allegations in the Declaration, therefore, in truth, partaking of the characteristics of a Specific Traverse, rather than a General Traverse;

Sec. 277

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

and, in these instances, matters in Confession and Avoidance must be Specially Plead, and cannot be admitted under the General Issue.

By the FRIary Rules of 1834, promulgated in England under Stat. 3 and 4 Wm. IV, c. 42, the Scope of the General Issue, as it existed at Common Law, in admitting almost every possible Defense in certain actions, was limited. The particular object of these Rules was to generally limit, in England, the operation or Scope of the General Issue in actions upon Contracts, to a Direct Denial of the Contract, and in Actions for Wrongs, to a Denial only of the Breach of Duty or Wrongful Act of the defendant, making the defendant Specifically Traverse or Deny any other Material Fact stated in the Declaration, and Plead Affirmatively all Matters in Confession and Avoidance.

NOTICE OF DEFENSES UNDER THE GENERAL ISSUE

276. Statutes sometimes have permitted the setting up of matter in Confession and Avoidance without a Special Plea at the option of the Pleader, by giving Notice in Writing under the General Issue of the Special Matters intended to be relied on for Defense at the Trial.

INSTEAD of developing the Rules of Pleading in the direction of substituting Specific Pleas for General Traverses, as was done in England under the FRIary Rules of 1834, the Common-Law Procedure Act of 1852, and later Acts, some American states have gone in the opposite direction. Statutes sometimes have permitted the setting up of matter in Confession and Avoidance without a Special Plea at the option of the Pleader, by giving Notice in Writing under the General Issue of the Special Matters intended to be relied on for Defense at the Trial.97

No Issue of Fact or of Law can be raised on a Notice of Special Matter of Defense filed with the General Issue98 This Rule was criticized as follows by the Illinois Supreme Court in the case of Hunt v. Weir.99 “Treating the Notice as a Plea, and open to Demurrer, these consequences would be avoided. If a Demurrer be sustained to the Notice, the defendant can Amend it as he can a Defective Special Plea, and he is in no danger of being caught in a trap, which, though he may have set himself by his Defective Notice, need not, to advance justice, be suddenly sprung upon him on the Trial of the cause. The quality of the notice is a preliminary matter, and should be determined before the Trial. Like objections to Depositions, they are heard and disposed of before the Trial, and cannot be started for the first time on the Trial.”

PLEA PUIS DARREIN CONTINUANCE

277. A Plea Puis Darrein Continuance is a Plea by the defendant of Matter of Defense which has arisen since the last
Continuance of the cause.

Such a Plea waives and supersedes all former Pleas.

UNDER the Ancient Law, there were Continuances or Adjournments of the proceedings for certain purposes from One Day or one Term to another; and in such cases there was an Entry made on the Record expressing the ground of the Adjournment, and appointing a day for the parties to reappear. In the intervals between such Continuances and the Day appointed, the Parties were out of Court, and therefore not in a situation to Plead. But it sometimes happened that after a Plea had been Plead, and while the Parties were out of court, in consequence of such a Continuance, a New Matter of Defense arose,


99. 29 Ill. SB (1862).

1. Id. at 86.


Thus, payment of a debt sued for or a Release or Compromise, or another Judgment for the same cause, etc., since the suit was commenced, cannot be Plead Generally In Bar. If the Defense has arisen since the Plea or Issue joined, it must be set up by a Plea of Pals Darrein Continuance. Illinois: Mount v. Scholes, 120 IL 111. 394, II NE. 401 (1887); Missouri: Wade v. Emerson, 17 Mo. 267 (1852); New Jersey: litchinson v. Hendrickson, 20 Tc.3.L. 180 (1861); New York: Bowne v. Joy, 9 Johns. (N.Y.) 221 (1812); Ohio: Long-worth v. Flagg, 10 Ohio 301 (1891); Rhode Island: Smith v. Carroll, 13 ILL 125, 21 A. 343, 12 LILA. 301 (1891); Federal: Leggett v. Rumphreys, 21 How. (U.S.) 66, 16 LED. 50 (1858).

"The General Rule upon this subject at Common Law
Is, that any Matter of Defense arising after the Commencement of the Suit, cannot be Plead in Ear of the Action generally. If such matter arise on the Case an Exception to this Rule exists, and such Defenses as a Release Executed after Suit Begun and Issue Joined may be shown under the General Issue, and it is not necessary that they be Plead Puis Darrein Continuance. 5

The Plea Puis Darrein Continuance may be either in Abatement or in Bar, like other Pleas, according to the Matter. It must be certain and definite in every particular, the greatest degree of strictness being required. 6

A Plea Puis Darrein Continuance is a waiver of and substitute for the first Plea, and of the latter no advantage can be taken afterwards. When filed, the Plea, by operation of Law, supersedes all other Defenses in the cause, and the Parties proceed to settle after the Commencement of the Suit and Before Plea, it must be pleaded to the further maintenance of the Action. But if it arise After Plea, and Before Replication, or After Issue joined, whether of Law or Fact, then it must be pleaded Puis Dan-elm Cost innonce. A Plea of this kind involves great legal consequences that do not attach to an Ordinary Plea. It only questions the plaintiff’s right to the Suit. When filed, it, In’ Operation of Law, supersedes all other Pleas and Defenses in the Cause, and the parties proceed to settle the Pleading de novo, just as though no Plea or Pleas had theretofore been filed in the ease. By reason of Pleas of this kind having a tendency to delay, great strictness is required in framing them. In this respect they are viewed much like Pleas in Abatement, and, for the same reason, they must, like those Pleas, he verified by Affidavit.” Mount v. Scholes, 120 Ill. 304, 399, 11 N.E. 401. 402 (1887).

And see the following cases: Illinois: Van Norman v. Young, 228 Ill. 425, 81 N.E. 1060 (1907); Oklahoma: Ham v. Security Nat. Bank of Oklahoma City, 74 Ok. 184, 177 P. 508 (1018).


514
Ch. 22
PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

the Pleadings de novo, just as if no Plea had theretofore been filed in the case.—

RECOUPMENT AND SET-OFF

278. fly Statute the defendant is generally permitted in Contract Actions to set up a Counter Ikmand, if liquidated, as a Set-Off to defeat plaintiff’s recovery in Whole or in Part. In some states an Affirmative Judgment for the defendant is permitted.

Recoupment is generally a Cross-Demand for Damages sustained by defendant in the same transaction, allowed in Reduction of Damages.

The Doctrine of Recoupment

AT Common Law, if A owed B a thousand dollars and B owed A a thousand dollars, A


“It is laid down in Baeoa’s Abridgment (0 Bae.Abr. [by Gwillim] 377) that if, after a Plea in Bar, the defendant pleads a Plea Puis Darrein Continuance, this is a Waiver of his Bar; and no advantage shall be taken of anything in the Bar. And it is added that it seems dangerous to plead any Matter Puis Darrein Continuance unless you he well advised; because, if that matter be determined against you, it is a

Page 541 of 735
conference of the matter in issue. This rule was adopted in Kinball v. Huntington, 10 Wend. (N.Y.) 679, 25 Am. Dec. 590. The Court says the plea Puis Darrein Continuance waived all previous pleas, and on the record the cause of action was admitted to the extent as if no other defense had been urged than contained in this plea.” Wallace v. McConnell, 13 Pet. (U.S.) 136, 10 L.Ed. 95 (1839).

8. In general, ou Recontoupment, Set-Off and Counterclaim, see:

Treatises: Montagu, A Summary of the Law of Set-Off, with an Appendix of Cases Argued and Determined in the Courts of Law and Equity upon that Subject (New York, 1806); Babington, A Treatise on the Law of Set-Off and Mutual Credit, with an Appendix of Precedents (London, 1827); Babour, A Treatise on the Law of Set-Off, with an Appendix

was required to sue and recover from B in a separate action, and likewise B was required


Comments: Set-Off and Counterclaim—Chose in Action Assigned before Maturity Subject to Set-Off for Claim Against Assignor Acquired Before Notice of Assignment, 31 Yale L.J. 569 (1922); Set-Off and Counterclaim—Right to Plead Set-Off and Counterclaim in a Reply, 5 Minn.L.Rev. 487 (1021); Recoupment—Set-Off and Counterclaim, 28 W.Va.L.Q. 139 (1922); Pleading: Equity Affecting Legal Causes of Action as Defenses or Counterclaims: Mode of Trial of Such Issues, 11 Cornell L.Q. 396 (1920); Counterclaims in Courts of Limited Jurisdiction, 44 Harv.L.Rev. 273 (1930); Pleading—Counterclaim—Mutual Libels as Arising out of the Same Transaction, 1 Mo.L.Rev. 201 (1936); Counterclaim in Iowa, 24 Iowa L.Rev. 310 (1039); Pleading—Complaint—Common Counts in Assumpsit Followed by Allegation of Promise to Pay, 21 Minn.L.Rev. 756 (1939); Set-Off, Counterclaim and Recoupment—Limitation of Actions—Claim Not Barred by Expiration of Limitation Period, 28 Va.L.Rev. 557 (1042); Counterclaim: Effect of Statute of Limitations, 31 Calif. L.Rev. 210 (1943); Counterclaim for Malicious Prosecution in the Action Alleged to be Malicious, 58 Yale L.J. 140 (1949); Governmental Immunity from Counterclaims, 50 Col.L.Ect 505 (1050).

An annotations: Set-Off, Counterclaim, and Recoupment. in Replevin or other Action for Possession of Personal Property, 151 A.L.R. 519 (1944); Claim Barred by Limitation as Subject of Set-Off, Counterclaim. Recoupment, Cross Bill or Cross Action, 1 A.L.R. 630 (1948); Cause of Action in Tort as Counterclaim In Tort Action, 10 A.L.R.2d 1167 (1950); Failure to Assert Matter as Counterclaim as Precluding Assertion Thereof in Subsequent Action, nader Federal Rules or Similar State Rules or Statutes, 22 A.L.B.2d 621 (1952).

Sec. 278
515

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS
Ch. 2

to sue and recover from A in a separate action. This was so because the early Common Law doctrine was that the only remedy where Cross-Demands existed was for each party to sue separately.

The absurdity of this situation became crystal clear in a situation where A sold a thousand bushels of Grade A wheat to B, but on delivery it turned out to be Grade B wheat, whereupon B refused to pay. When, therefore, A sued B for the purchase price, and B desired to cut down the amount of A’s recovery by asserting his claim for Damages for Breach of Warranty, it was necessary for him to bring a separate action.

However, through a long series of judicial decisions, the Common-Law Doctrine of Recoupment was developed. At first, Recoupment could be used solely as a Defense to diminish the plaintiff’s recovery. Furthermore, it was confined to Contract Actions, and to Cross-Demands arising from the very contract sued upon by plaintiff. As it evolved, however, Recoupment came to lie for Matters arising from the same transaction, as well as the same contract.

The defendant may generally Recoup for Damages caused by plaintiff’s Breach without Notice under the General
9. Pomeroy, Remedies and Remedial Rights by the Civil Action, 789 (Boston, 1894).

10. Id. at 792.

11. Illinois: Higgins v. Lee, 16 Ill. 93 (1835); Babcock v. Trice, 18 Ill. 420, 68 Am.Deck. 560 (1857); Streeter v. Streeter, 43 Ill. 155, 160 (1867); Murray v. Carlin, 67 Ill. 286 (1873); Waterman v. Clark, 76 Ill. 428, 431 (1575) (note, Special Plea); Cooke v. ProNe, SO III. 381 (1875); Baker v. Fawcett, 69 Ill. App. 300 (1886); Peiree v. Sholtey, 100 Ill.App. 341 (1914); Maryland: Sullivan v. Boswoll, 122 Md. 539, 89 Atl. 040 (1914); New York: Barber v. Rose, 5 Till. (N.Y2) 76 (1843).


It is not necessary that the Claim by wa) of Recoupment be a liquidated debt. It Stow v. Yarwood, the Court speaks of Recoupment as follows: “This Doctrine of Recoupment tends to promote justice, and U prevent needless litigation. It avoids circuity of action, and multiplicity of suits. It adjusts by one action adverse claims growing out of the same subject-matter. Such claims can generally be much better settled in one proceeding, than in several. It is not necessary that the opposing claims should be of the same character. • • A claim originating in contract, may be set up against one founded in tort. It is sufficient that the counter claims arise out of the same subject-matter, and that they are susceptible of adjustment in one action.”

The Doctrine of Set-Off

AT Common Law, where Cross-Demands existed, the defendant, until Recoupment was recognized, could not Pray for any Relief in his Pleadings. If he had a claim against the plaintiff, he could only set it up in another suit of his own. Although the Doctrine of Set-Off of Mutual Claims had early been recognized in Equity, it had not found its way into the Common Law. But in 1729 the doctrine was incorporated into the Common Law by means of the Statute of 2 George II, c. 22, § 13, 16 Statutes at Large 53 (1729).

By this Statute a defendant was allowed in an Action upon a Debt to set up a liquidated demand of his own to counter-balance that of the plaintiff, either in whole or in part. The Statute of 2 Ceo, II, c. 22, i 13, 16 StatuteS at Large 59 (1729), was re-enacted and amended in 1733, by the Statute of S Gee. II, c. 24, 5, 16 Stat-

PLEAS—PEREMPTORY OR IN BAR

And, as Set-Off developed, it was necessary that it be for a liquidated demand, whereas Recoupment could be for an unliquidated demand. Also, the defendant could recover a balance in Set-Off, but not in Recoupment. Set-Off answered very nearly to the

utes at Large 535, and, as amended, read in part as follows: “Mutual Debts may he set against each other, either by being Pleaded in Bar, or given in evideacee on the General Issue —nd in case the plaintiff shall recover in any such Action or Suit, Judgment shall be entered for no more than shall appear to be truly and justly due to the plaintiff, after one debt being set against the other as aforesaid.”

15. Pomeroy, Remedies and Remedial Rights by the Civil Action, 792 (Boston, 1894). compensatio of the Civil Law, where Mutual Debts compensate each other, and operate as payment, to extinguish so much of the reciprocal demand. But in English Law this Right of Set-Off only arises in the course of an action as

Page 543 of 735
a Plea. A debt is not extinguished *pro tanto*, by mere operation of law, when the debtor acquires a claim against the creditor.\(^1\)


Sec. 278
517'

Sec.

CHAPTER 23

THE REPLICATION

279. The Various Kinds of Replication.
280. The Replication De Injuria—Definition, Scope and Availability.
281. Forms of Plea and Replication De injuria Thereto.
282. Formal Parts of Replication.
285. The Kinds of Departures and the Stage of Pleading at Which They May Occur,
280. The Mode of Taking Advantage of a Departure.
287. Status of Departure Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

THE VARIOUS KINDS OF REPLICATION

279. A replication must either traverse a plea, or confess and avoid the matter pleaded by the defendant, or present matter of estoppel to the plea. A fourth sort of replication is a new assignment.

1. In general, on the subject of lilepilations, see:


WHERE a defendant pleads in Confession and Avoidance, at the Replication stage of Pleading the plaintiff may Demur or Plead. If he does not Demur, he may deny or traverse the truth of the matter alleged in the Plea, either in Whole or in Part, or he may confess and Avoid the Plea.\(^2\) If he decides upon the latter, he must be careful to avoid a Departure, which, in the case of the plaintiff, is an abandonment at a later Stage of Pleading of the ground on which the plaintiff placed his Cause of Action. In-i case of an Evasive Plea it may be permissible for plaintiff to enter a New Assignment, and, in some cases, he may Reply by showing Matter in Estoppel.

To a large degree, the Requisites of a Replication resemble those of a Plea, and are, first, that it must Answer so much of the Plea as it professes to Answer; second, that it must not Depart from the Cause of Action


863 (1893).
288.
289.
290.
291.

518
set up in the Declaration; third, that, like a Plea, it should be Certain, Direct and Positive, and not Argumentative; and fourth, that it must be Single.

THE REPLICATION DE INJURIA—DEFINITION, SCOPE, AVAILABILITY

280. In certain Actions, where the defendant Pleads Matter of Excuse, the plaintiff, instead of Traversing Specially, is permitted to Reply by a Denial in General and Summary Terms. This Traverse is used only to Deny Matter of Excuse, and occurs only in the Replication. Such a Pleading is Known as the Replication De Injuria.

A REPLICATION DE INJURIA is a compendious Form of Denial which, broadly speaking, does for the plaintiff at the Replication Stage of Pleading, what a Plea of the General Issue does for the defendant at the Plea Stage of Pleading, that is, it denies all the Material Allegations in the Plea. But in what situation is this most technical procedural device used? If we suppose that the defendant’s Plea sets out several Distinct Matters which are essential to constitute his Defense, the General Rule has been, according to the principles so far observed, that the plaintiff, in framing his Reply to such a Plea, was required to select one of the several Facts or Matters alleged and Traverse or Confess and Avoid that Particular Fact or Matter, and, as an incident thereof, admit by implication all the other matters. Thus, for example, in Trespass De Bonis Asportatis for taking goods, conceivably the defendant might Plead that the goods in question consisted of a number of cases of alcoholic liquor, that the plaintiff was unlawfully in possession of them, having no License to keep such goods and having them for illegal sale, that the defendant was an officer having the authority to seize liquors unlawfully kept, and that he did seize them for the reason stated, and delivered them to the officer appointed by the Law to receive goods so seized. Assuming that the goods were not contraband, that the plaintiff had lawful possession of them, that the defendant was not an officer, that he had no authority to seize any goods, and that he used the goods for his own consumption, the plaintiff, at the Replication Stage of Pleading might Reply by Traversing any one of the facts relied upon by the defendant. If, however, he undertook to Traverse more than one, or all of these facts, he would be guilty of violating the Rule of Pleading against Duplicity, unless the Common-Law Rule as to Singleness of Fact Denied be changed in such a situation. The Common-Law, under such circumstances, did permit the plaintiff to Traverse a Plurality of Matters or Facts contained in the defendant’s Plea, by Replying that the defendant committed the trespasses stated it the Declaration, of his own wrong and without such cause as in the plea alleged, De Injuria Sua Prora Abs que Tali Ca-usa. Such a Form of Replication, known as a Replication De Injuria, operates as a Compendious Denial of Every Material Fact set out in the Plea, thus creating an Issue of Fact, just as the General Issue enabled a defendant to Traverse, at the Plea Stage of the Pleading, all the Material Allegations in the plaintiff’s Declaration. The Replication De Injuria differed from a Common Ti-averse, which was a Denial of a Material Allegation of Fact in the Plead’s Own Language, in that the Replication De Injuria was not a Denial in Direct and Categorical Terms, but rather by a Fixed Form in the Nature of a Blanket Negation and in that it operated to put in Issue Not One, but All the Material Facts constituting the defendant’s composite Defense.

The General Rule as to When the Replication De Injuria May be Interposed to a Plea

THE Common-Law Rule was that a Replication could not be Double or contain Two or More Replies to the Same Plea. And it

Where a Plea sets up a series or group of circumstances which together constitute the Defense, the strict Theory of Pleading requires the plaintiff to select some one of such Several Matters and take Issue upon that Single Specific Allegation alone. The Replication De Injuria, like the General Issue, is an instance of Licensed Duplicity, to permit a Denial of Several Matters in one Compendious Form. Before the enactment of Modern Statutes permitting the filing of more than One Replication, the use of the Replication De Injuria was of great advantage to the plaintiff as it put the defendant to the Proof of all the Material Allegations in his Plea, instead of leaving the plaintiff to stand or fall by the Denial of a Single Allegation, the others being admitted by failure to Deny them.  

As the General Issue was used by a defendant, so a Replication De Injuria was available to the plaintiff at the Replication Stage of Pleading. It was said to be a Uniform

4. 4 Anne, c. 16, ~ 4, 11 Statutes at Large 135 (1705). Since the Statute, which permitted the defenent to Plead more than One Defense or Plea to a Single Count, did not give plaintiffs a similar privilege of making more than One Replication to One Plea, the Proeethiral Device of the Replication De Injuria, which was a Comprehensive Traverse, was created to cover the need, and become of great importance. But under the Modern Procedure Reforms, the great mass of technical learning on the subject has become largely obsolete. Ames, cases on Pleading, 104, note (24 ed., Cambridge 1905).

5. I Cilitty, On Pleading, e. VIII, Of Replications § 2, Forms and Parts of Replications, 600 (10th Am. ed., Springfield 1867); Keigwin, Precedents of Pleading at common Law, 464-474 (washington, 110., 1910) Poe, Pleading, c. XXVI, Replication and Subsequent Rule that such a Replication would be used only when the defendant set up Matter merely in Excuse of the wrong alleged in the Tort Actions of Trespass and Case, and the Contract Actions of Assumpsit, Covenant and Debt, and where such Plea was untrue. It was said not to be admissible where the Facts Pleaded amounted to a Justification. It was not, however, an easy matter to distinguish between Matter of Excuse and Matter of Justification. Accordingly, it is not surprising to learn that De Injaria has frequently been used in Replying to Pleas which were in Justification and not in Excuse, As a result the distinction came to be largely disregarded in both England and the United States.

The Effect of the Replication De Injuria

THE Complete Form of this Traverse is De Injuria Sua Propria Absque Tali Causa (that the defendant, of his own wrong, and without any such cause as his Plea alleged), committed the injury complained of. It is preceded by a general Inducement or Introduction, and Denies, in General and Summary Terms, and


7. In New York, the Courts followed this distinction until common-Law pleading was abolished by the Code of Procedure in 1848, The same Doctrine applied in Illinois in the case of Allen v. Scott, 13 Ill. 50 (1851), and in New Jersey in the case of Taverna v. Ohm-chill, 77 N.J.L. 430, 72 A. 43 (1909). In Delaware the Replication De Injuria remained restricted to cases in which the defendant’s Pica contai,s Matter of Excuse. Murden v. Russell, S Boyce (Del.) 362, 93 A. 379 (1915). But, in the Federal Courts, no such distinction was observed. Erskine v. Hohabach, 14 Wall. 624, 20 L.Ed, 745 (1871).


Pleadings, 1 678 (Baltimore 1906).

c. Crogate’s Case, S Coke 66, 77 Eng.flep 574 (1608)-
Sec. 281

THE NEPLICATION

not in the Words of the Allegation Traversed, all that is last before alleged; but neither the Form of the Denial nor the Inducement De Injuria, etc. alleges New Matter; it simply reaffirms in General Terms the wrongs complained of in the Declaration, and the Traverse Abs que Tali Causa is an Abridged Denial of the Special Justification in the Plea.
The effect of the Traverse is to Deny all the Material Allegations in the Pica, as it goes to the Whole Plea, but only where such Allegations show Matter of Excuse for the Tort or injury committed. It can never be used when the Matter set forth in the Plea is insisted on as conferring a positive right.” Its import is to insist that the defendant committed the act in question from a different motive than that assigned in the Plea.

FORMS OF PLEA AND REPLICA TION DE INJURIA THERETO

281. This section illustrates Form of Plea In Confession and Avoidance and Replication de Injuria.

SUPPOSE that in trespass for assault and battery the defendant pleads self-defense (son assault demesne) in Confession and Avoidance, as follows:

And for a further Plea in this behalf, as to the said assaulting, beating, wounding, and ill-treating, in the said Declaration mentioned, the defendant, by leave of the Court here for this purpose first had and obtained, according to the form of the Statute in such


Where the Defense Is an Excuse for the Nonperformance of a Promise which the defendant made, however many the parts or facts of that Excuse may be, the Replication Be Injuria denies them all.


u. For limitations upon the use of the Replication de Injuria, see Keigwia, Cases In Common-Law Pleading, c. VIII, The Replication Be Injuria, 130, 620 (2d cd., Rochester 1934).

ease made and provided, says that the plaintiff ought not to have or maintain his aforesaid action thereof against him, because, he says, that the plaintiff, just before the said time, When, etc., to wit, on the day and year aforesaid, at aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, with force and arms, made an assault upon him, the said defendant, and would then and there have beaten and ill-treated him, the said defendant, if he had not immediately defended himself against the plaintiff; wherefore the said defendant did then and there defend himself against the plaintiff as he lawfully might, for the cause aforesaid, and in so doing did necessarily and unavoidably a little beat, wound, and ill-treat the plaintiff, doing no unnecessary damage to the plaintiff on the occasion aforesaid; and so the defendant saith, that if any hurt or damage then and there happened to the plaintiff, the same was occasioned by the said assault so made by the plaintiff on him, the said defendant, and in the necessary defense of himself, the said defendant, against the said plaintiff, which are the supposed trespasses in the introductory part of this Plea mentioned, and whereof the said plaintiff hath above complained. And this the defendant is ready to Verify. Wherefore he Prays Judgment if the plaintiff ought to have or maintain his aforesaid action thereof against him.

In such a case a Replication De Injuria would be as follows:

And as to the said Plea by the said defend-, ant last above Pleased in Bar to the said several Trespasses in the Introductory Part of that Plea mentioned, the said plaintiff says that, by reason of anything therein alleged, he ought not to be Barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action thereof against the defendant, because, he says, that the defendant, at the said time when, &c., of his own wrong, and without the cause in the said last-mentioned Plea alleged, committed the said several trespasses in the Introductory

522

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

Cli. 23

tory Part of that Plea mentioned, in Manner and Form as the plaintiff hath above complained. And this he Prays may be Inquired of by the Country.

VFORMAL PARTS OF REPLICATION

282. Properly Commencing and Concluding a Replication requires considerable skill in Pleading, hence some suggestions as to the Formal Parts of a Replication are discussed below.
A REPLICATION was usually Entitled in the Court and of the Term at which it was Plead; and the names of the plaintiff and of the defendant were stated in the margin—thus, “AD. v. C.D.”

When the Body of the Replication only contained an Answer to a Part of the Plea, the Commencement should then specify the Part intended to be Answered, for if the Commencement professed to Answer the Whole, but the Body contained an answer to Part only, the whole Replication was insufficient.

Every Replication must Conclude either to the Country or with a Verification and Prayer for Judgment.

A Replication to a Plea in Bar has this Commencement: “... Says that by reason of anything in the said Plea alleged he ought not to be barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action against him, the said C.D., because, he says,” etc. This Formula is commonly called “Precludi Non.” The Conclusion is thus: In Debt, “Wherefore he Prays Judgment, and his debt aforesaid, together with his Damages by him sustained by reason of the detention thereof, to be adjudged to him;” in Covenant, “Wherefore he Prays Judgment, and his Damages by him sustained by reason of the said Breach of Covenant, to be adjudged to him;” in Trespass, “Wherefore he Prays Judgment, and his Damages by him sustained by reason of the committing of the said several grievances, to be adjudged to him.”

And so, in all other actions, the Replication Concludes with a Prayer of Judgment for Damages, or other appropriate redress, according to the nature of the action.

With respect to Pleadings Subsequent to the Replication, it will be sufficient to observe, in general, that those on the part of the defendant follow the same form of Commencement and Conclusion as the Plea; those on the part of the plaintiff, the same as the Replication.

STATUS OF THE INJURIA UNDER PRACTICE ACTS

UNTIL somewhat more than a century ago, the Replication De Injuria was limited to Trespass and Trespass on the Case; in 1832, as a result of Selby v. Bardons, it was extended to Replevin. Two years later, the situation was complicated by the promulgation of the Hilary Rules, which sought to restrict the Scope of the General Issues in the Various Forms of Action. As one of the consequences the institution of Special Pleading was given an additional impetus, thus causing great difficulty when it came to framing Replications in Contract Actions. It is, therefore, not surprising to find that the English courts began, in the year 1836 in the case of Issac v. Farrar, to hold that the Replication De Injuria was applicable to an Action of Trespass on the Case for a Breach of Promise.

In the United States, where, in theory at least, the Hilary Rules had not been adopted, it was natural that the...
English decisions, as influenced by those Rules, should not be adopted. Thus, we find Gould stating that the Traverse De Injuria, ccc., Abs que Tall Causa, though of frequent occurrence, is confined to actions Ex Delicto, and used only in Replications.10

But this view did not prevail, as shown by the Statement of Scudder, J., in the New Jersey case of Ruckman v. The Ridgefield Park Railroad Company, in which it was urged that the Replication De Injuria was inapplicable in Actions Ex Contractu. The Judge declared: “Formerly the General Traverse, De injuria, was confined in practice to Actions of Trespass, Replevin, and cases for injuries. But when, under the New Rules [the Hilary Rules], Special Pleas in Excuse became frequent in Actions of Assumpsit and Debt on Simple Contracts, it became reasonable that the plaintiff should be allowed to take Issue by a General Traverse of the Whole Matter of Excuse alleged, and such Pleading was sustained by the Courts. There was no occasion to use this Replication when the usual Plea in Assumpsit was the General Issue. But, as more Special Defenses by Pleading are being favored in the modern practice of our Courts and by Legislation, the Replication De Injuria becomes applicable as a General Traverse of the Excuse and all the Material Allegations in the Special Plea. It is only allowed where the Plea is in Excuse, and not in Denial of the Cause of Action. It is bad when the

Prior to the Ruckman Case, however, in England in 1852, under the first Common-Law Procedure Act,9 it was provided that either Party might Plead, in Answer to the Plea or Subsequent Pleading of his adversary, the General Issue, using the following form: “The plaintiff Joins Issue on the defendant’s [1st plea], or “the defendant Joins Issue upon the plaintiff’s Replication’ to the first plea.” This Form of Replication, in Clover v. Dickson,20 was said, by Pollock, C.B., to be “in the nature of a General Replication De Injuria,”21 and the effect of such a Joinder was to place in Issue all the Material Allegations of the Pleading to which it was interposed. In Maryland, in 1856, or just four years after the English Act,22 the Replication De Injuria was abolished by Statute and a Joinder of Issue was substituted in lieu thereof. And in the District of Columbia, as early as the year 1879, this Form of Joinder was authorized by a Rule of Court, the effect of which was to put in Issue the Substance of the Plea.23 In most American Jurisdictions, following the example of Maryland, a similar Joinder of Issue has been authorized in most actions and at any Stage of the Pleading, such Form of Pleading being broadly the equivalent of the Replication De Injuria, having the effect of a Compendi


17. -38 N.J.L. 95 (1875).


19. 15 & 16 Vict. c. 70, 92 Statutes at Large 285, 301 (1852).

20. 9 Exch. 158, 156 Eng.Rep. 08 (1853).


22. 15 & 10 Vtht. c. 76, 92 Statutes at Large 285, 201 (1852).


524

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

otis Denial. Keigwin suggests that the practical effect is that in any action a Party may “not only Reply, but Rejoin or Surrejoin De Injuria” 21 He wrote that “some Lawyers who shudder at the imaginary intricacies of Pleading would be shocked to learn that they have all their lives been using the archaic and mysterious Replication De Injuria in disguise, and to an extent vastly beyond the

- Contemplation of the Common-Law, very much as the bourgeois in Moliere’s comedy was startled to discover...
that he had always spoken prose without knowing that it was prose.”

Two Delaware cases testify as to the con\Unued existence and application of the Replication De Injuria in its virgin form where the Code is not adopted. In the first case, \textit{Murden v. Russell},\textsuperscript{26} decided in 1915, the plaintiff brought an Action of Trespass by Assault, and for the removal of the plaintiff’s houseboat from a beach. The defendant Plead in Justification, that the title to the beach was in a Town, and that as the Agent of the Town, he removed the boat, as he lawfully might do. The plaintiff filed a Replication IDe Injuria to each of the two Pleas as set forth above, whereupon the defendant filed a Special Demurrer, on the ground, \textit{first}, that such a Replication is proper only in Reply to a Plea in Excuse; and \textit{second}, that such a Replication Is improper when the defendant, in his own right, or as a servant to another, claims an Interest or Title in Land, citing as authority the famous English \textit{Crc gate’s Case},\textsuperscript{27} New Jersey Case of \textit{Taverna v. Churchill},\textsuperscript{28} and the New York Case of \textit{Plumb v. M’Crea}.\textsuperscript{29}


\textsuperscript{27} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{28} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{29} Ibid.


\textsuperscript{32} 77 N.J.L. 430, 72 A. 43 (1103).

The plaintiff did not dispute the principles urged in support of the Demurrer, and left the question of their application to the Court, which sustained the Demurrer and gave Judgment for the defendant, Boyce, 3., in accordance with the Rule at Common-Law, declaring: “The Replication De Injuria is proper when Matters in Excuse are pleaded; but when Justification, or a claim of Title or Interest in Land, is pleaded the Replication must be by way of a Special Traverse.”

In the second case, \textit{Empire Box Corporation v. Jefferson island Salt Mining Co.},\textsuperscript{31} decided in 1941, the plaintiff filed a Declaration containing Four Counts, Three Special Counts, and One on a Common Count. To the eleventh and twelfth Pleas, the plaintiff filed a Replication De Injuria, whereupon the defendant entered a Special Demurrer, on the grounds \textit{first}, that a Replication De Injuria is not available in Actions \textit{Ex Contractu}; and \textit{second}, that a Replication IDe Injuria is not permitted where a Plea sets forth Matters of Discharge. The Special Demurrer to the Replication IDe Injuria was sustained on the ground that such Form of Replication was not a Proper Form of Traverse in an Action of Assumpsit. While this is not correct as the Replication De Injuria finally developed, the position of the Court is made clear by Chief Justice Layton, who declared: “The System of Pleading in force in this State, and strictly adhered to, is that System which prevailed in England at the time of our Independence except as changed or modified by Constitutional or Statutory Enactment. In Assumpsit, the General Issue of Non-Assumpsit puts the whole Declaration in issue, and almost everything may be given in evidence which shows that the plaintiff at the time of Commencing Suit had no Cause of Action. Reading’s Heirs v. State, 1 Han. 190. By the Rules adopted by the Judges of the Superior Courts of Common

\textsuperscript{30} %f, wdon y, Ituasell, 5 Boyeo (Del.) 202, 304, 03 4.
379, 380 (1915).
\textit{t 12 Jobs. (N.Y.) 401 (1815)}.
\textit{31 2 Terry (Del.) 409, 413, 24 A.2d 322, 324 (1941)}.
\textit{Sec. 284}

\textbf{THE REPLICATION} 525

Law at Westminster at Hilary Term, 1834, it was provided that ‘\textit{in every Species of Assumpsit, all matters of Confession and Avoidance, including not only those by way of Discharge, but those which show the transaction to be either void or voidable in point of Law, on the ground of fraud or otherwise, shall be Specially Plead}’\textsuperscript{31} \textit{These Rules are not in force in this State. Wooley, Del. Pr. § 340, 1463. The Replication De Injuria is a Species of Traverse varying from the Common Form of General Denial. At the Common Law it was confined to Actions of Tort where the Plea consisted of Matter of Excuse. Chitty, Pleading (4th Am. from 3d. London Ed.1825) 593; Gould, Pleading, 539; Stephen, Pleading (3d Am. from 2nd. London Ed.) 180; Coffin v. Bassett, 2 Pick., Mass., 357; Tubbs v. Caswell, 8 Wend., N.Y.,
There is, perhaps, no direct decision in this State which so limits the use of this Form of Traverse, but the limitation is necessarily inferred from the System of Pleading itself in force with us, and from whatever decisional authority there may be. Thomas v. Black, S Houst. 507, 18 A. 771; Murden v. Russell, 5 Boyce 362, 93 A. 379; Woolley, Del.Pr. § 475. In England, after the adoption of the Hilary Rules by which the Scope of the General Issue in Assumpsit was greatly narrowed, the use of this Form of Traverse seems to have been permitted in Actions Ex Contractu; and the decision in Ridgefield Park R. R. Co. v. Ruckman, 38 N.J.L. 98, is apparently based on the System of Pleading obtaining in the State of New Jersey in which Special Pleas in Excuse of alleged Breach of Contract were allowed to be Plead." 

DEPARTURE DEFINED AND THE REASON FOR THE RULE AGAINST DEPARTURE

284. A Departure is an Abandonment at a Later Stage of Pleading of the Ground on which the Plaintiff has placed his Cause of Action, or the Defendant his Defense. Such a Fault in Pleading is not permitted as the Record would by such means be extended to an indefinite length, and the Formulation of a Specific Issue unnecessarily delayed.

Departure Defined

THE Common-Law Rule was that in Pleading there must be no Departure. A Departure occurs where, in any Pleading, a Party Abandons the Ground taken in his last Antecedent Pleading, and Resorts to Another, distinct from and not fortifying the first. From this definition it becomes clear that this Fault in Pleading can never arise until the Replication, but it may arise in that or any Subsequent Stage of Pleading. It is, therefore, a Settled Rule that the Replication or Rejoinder must not Depart from the Allegations of the Declaration or Plea in any material matter. Its most frequent point of occurrence is in the Rejoinder by the defendant, and the Fault may be either in the Substance of the Defense, or the Law on which it is founded, and this also applies where plaintiff Departs in his Replication from the Ground on which he placed his Action in the Declaration. The Pleader must not Abandon a Previous Ground in his Pleading and assume a New One, For

example, he must not Rely on the Effect of the Common Law in his Declaration or Plea, and on a Custom or Statute in his Replication or Rejoinder? But Time, Place, or other Immaterial Matter, in the Allegation of which in the Replication or Rejoinder there is a Variance from the Declaration or Plea, is not a Departure? Thus, in Special Assumpsit, if the Declaration, in a case where the Time is not Material, state a Promise to have been made ten years ago, and the defendant Plead that he did not Promise within six years, the plaintiff may Reply that the defendant did
Promised within six years without a Departure, because the Time laid in the Declaration was immaterial.\(^35\)


In a divorce suit, where the Petition relied on irapoteney, additional grounds cannot be set up in the Reply, for a Reply cannot be used to aid the Petition by setting up a New Cause of Action or to in-graft thereon an Omitted Alegation. Smith v. Smith, 206 Mo.App. 646, 220 SW. 398 (1021).

A Replication setting up a Different Cause of Action from that alleged in the Declaration is a departure.


A Replication in Estoppel is No Departure or abandonment of the ease stated in the Declaration.

The Reason for the Rule Against Departure

THE Rule against Departure was evidently necessary to prevent the retardation in the development of the Issue. For, while the Parties, in Pleading are respectively confined to the grounds they have first taken in their Declaration or Plea, the Process of Pleading, after a few Alterations of Statement, will exhaust all the Facts involved in the cause, and thereby develop the Issue in dispute. But if at any Stage of the Available Series of Pleadings, a New State of Facts be introduced, the Termination of the Pleadings in a Single, Clear-Cut, Well-Defined Issue of Fact, is in consequence postponed. Besides, if One Departure were permitted, the Parties might, on the same principle, shift their ground, either in Point of Fact or in Point of Law, as often as they pleased; and an almost indefinite, if not intolerable length of altercation might, in many cases, be the consequence.

THE KINDS OF DEPARTURES AND THE STAGE OF PLEADING AT WHICH THEY MAY OCCUR

285. Departures were of Two hinds, being either in Point of Fact, or in Point of Law. The earliest Stage of Pleading at which a plaintiff may Depart is in the Replication; the earliest Stage of Pleading at which a defendant may Depart is in the Rejoinder.

Departure in the Replication

THE Replication is the earliest Stage of Pleading at which the plaintiff may be guilty of the Fault of Departure. And such a Departure may be in Point of Fact or in Point of Law.

(I) In Point of Fact—Thus, for example, where, ha Special Assumpsit, the plaintiffs, as Executors, declared on several Promises alleged to have been made to the testator in his lifetime, the defendant Plead that she did not Promise within six years before the obtaining of the Original Writ of the plaintiffs, to which the plaintiffs Replied

\(^35\) Lee v. Rogers, 1 I Let 110, 83 Eng.Rep. 322 (1663);


that, within six years before the obtaining of the Original Writ, the Letters Testamentary were granted to them, whereby the action accrued to them, the said plaintiffs, within six years, the Court held that there was a Departure,
as in the Declaration they had laid Promises to the Testator, whereas in the Replication they had alleged a Right of Action as accruing to themselves as Executors.36 If they meant to put their action on this ground, in the Declaration they ought to have laid Promises to themselves, as Executors.

(II) In Point of Law:—Thus, for example, in Mole v. Wallis,37 where the plaintiff declared in Covenant on an Indenture of Apprenticeship, by which the defendant was to serve him for seven years, and Assigned, as Breach of Covenant, that the defendant left his service within the seven years, the defendant Pledged Infancy, to which the plaintiff Replied that, by the Custom of London, infants may bind themselves as apprentices, the Court held there was a Departure in Point of Law between the Declaration and the Replication, as that which is Pledged Generally as the Common Law cannot be maintained by a Custom.

Departure in the Rejoinder

The Rejoinder is the earliest Stage of Pleading at which the defendant may be guilty of the Fault of Departure, and it occurs more frequently at this point than in the Replication. And such a Departure may be in Point of Fact or in Point of Law.

(I) In Point of Fact.—Thus, for example, in Debt on a Bond conditioned to perform an Award, so that the same was delivered to the defendant by a certain time, the defendant Pledged that the Arbitrators did not make any Award, to which the plaintiff replied that the Arbitrators did make an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was

Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was Tendered by the proper time, to which Replication the defendant Rejoined that the Award was not so Tendered, to which Rejoinder the plaintiff Replied that the Arbitrators had made an Award to such an effect, and that the same was

And so where the plaintiffs declared in Debt on a Bond conditioned to keep the plaintiffs harmless and indemnified from all suits of one Cook, the defendants Pledged that they had kept the plaintiffs harmless, to which the plaintiffs Replied that Cook had sued them, so that the defendants had not kept them harmless, to which the defendants Rejoined that they had not had any notice of the Damnification. The Court held first, that the Matter of the Rejoinder was bad, as the plaintiffs were not legally bound to give notice; and second, that the Rejoinder was a Departure from the Plea in Bar, as in the Plea in Bar the defendants Pledged that they had saved harmless the plaintiffs, whereas in the Rejoinder they confessed that they had not saved the plaintiffs harmless, and said that they had not had Notice of the Damnification; which was a plain Departure?39


528

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

And where, in Debt on a Bond conditioned to perform the covenants in an indenture of lease, one of which was that the lessee, at every felling of wood, would make a fence, the defendant Pledged that he had not felled any wood, to which the plaintiff Replied that he felled two acres of wood, but make no fence, to which the defendant Rejoined that he did make a fence, the Court held there was a Departure.40

528

528

(II) In Point of Law.—The cases discussed above were cases in which the defendant, at the Rejoinder Stage of Pleading, deserted the ground, in Point of Fact, that he had first taken in his Plea. It is, however, also a Departure, where he puts the Same Facts on a new ground in Point of Law, as where he relies on the effect of the Common Law
in his Plea, and on a Statute in his Rejoinder.

Thus, where, in Trespass, the defendant made Title to the premises, Pleading a demise for fifty years made by a certain college, to which the plaintiff Replied that there was another lease of the same premises, which had been assigned to the defendant, and which was unexpired at the time of the making of the said lease for fifty years, and alleged a proviso in the Act of 31 Hen. VIII. c. 13, 4 Statutes at Large 455 (1539), avoiding all leases, by the colleges to which that Act related, made under such circumstances as the lease last mentioned, to which the defendant, by way of Rejoinder, Plead another Proviso in the Statute, which allowed such leases to be good for twenty-one years, if made to the same person, and that by virtue thereof, the devise stated in his Plea was available for twenty-one years at least, the Judges held the Rejoinder to be a IDE-


A party to a Suit, In the coarse of litigation, cannot assert and maintain radically inconsistent positions. Lindsey v. Mitchell & McCauley, 174 NC. 458, 93 S. E. 955 (1917).

parture from the Plea; “for in the Bar Pleads a lease for 50 years, and in the F joinder he concludes upon a lease for years.” And they observed that “the ci fendant might have shown the statute a’ the whole matter at first.”

THE MODE OF TAKING ADVANTAGE OF A DEPARTURE

286. The Method of Taking Advantage
the Fault of Departure is by a General Th murrer; it involves, however, an Exception i the General Rule that a violation of a Rule Pleading constitutes a Defect in Form.

AT Common Law any violation of a Rule of Pleading was said to create a Defect in Form; any violation of a Rule of Substantivi Law a Defect in Substance. As a Departure involved a violation of the Rule of Pleading that there must be No Departure, it would appear, on analysis, that such a Fault constituted a Defect in Form and should, therefore, have been available on Special Demurrer. But this was not the Law; the Rule was that the Mode of taking Advantage of a Departure was by General Demurrer; the Fault being an Active Abandonment of the ground on which the plaintiff had placed his Cause of Action or the defendant his Defense, and hence it was treated as a Fault in Substance. A Verdict in favor of him who makes the Departure will cure the Fault, however, if the Matter Plead in by way of Departure is a sufficient Answer, in Substance, to what is before Plead by the adverse party; that is, if it would have been

41. Pulmerton v, Steward, Flow. 102, 73 Engitep160 (1554).

42. The availability of the Fault of Departure on a
General Demurrer, results from the fact that the
Defect of Departure is one of the Five Exceptions to
the General Rule that a Violation of a Rule o’
Pleading constitutes a Defect in Form.

43. Massachusetts: Itay cc Goodwin, 16 Mass. 1
(1819); New Hampshire: Tarleton v. Wells, 2 N.H.
306 (1520); New York: Sterns i. Patterson, 14
Johns. (N.Y.) 132 (1817); Andrus v. Waring, 211
Johns. (N.Y.) 160 (1822).
sufficient provided he had Plead it in the first instance.

STATUS OF DEPARTURE UNDER MODERN
CODES, I-RACTICE ACTS AND RULES
OF COURT

287. In general, under Modern Codes and
Practice Acts, the Common-Law Doctrine as to Departure still prevails.

THE rule as to Departure under Modern Codes and Practice Acts is generally the same as at Common Law, that is, that the plaintiff in his Replication, and the defendant in his Rejoinder, may not Depart from the Cause of Action set forth in the Declaration or the Defense set forth in the Plea.
Under the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, where there is no counterclaim or cross claim in the Answer, a Reply is permitted under Rule 7(a) only upon order of the Court. It has been contended that a rigid enforcement of the Rule against Departure would be Inconsistent with the Spirit of the Federal Rules, particularly as it is said that the Pleadings are no longer of the same importance in the Formulation of Issues, the Pre-Trial Conference and Discovery having presumably taken over much of this task.

NEW ASSIGNMENT—DEFINITION, NECESSITY AND APPLICATION

288. A New Assignment is a restatement in the Replication of the plaintiff’s Cause of Action. Where the Declaration in an Action is ambiguous and the defendant Pleads Facts which literally are an Answer to it, but not to the Real Claim set up by the plaintiff, the plaintiff’s course is to Reply by Way of New Assignment, that is, to allege that he brought his Action, not for the cause supposed by the defendant, but for some Other Cause, to which the Plea had no application.

THE necessity for this Form of Procedural Device arose from the very General Mode of Statement sometimes permitted in the Declaration, as in Trespass to land. This made it possible for the defendant to Plead an evasive Plea, which, in turn, rendered it necessary for the plaintiff in his Replication to restate the Cause of Action intended, with greater precision and particularity.

Thus, for example, in an action of Trespass for Assault and Battery, a case may occur in which the plaintiff has been twice assaulted by the defendant; and one of these assaults may have been Justifiable, being committed in Self-Defense, while the other may have been committed without Legal Excuse. Supposing the plaintiff to bring his action for the latter, it will be found, by referring to the Form of Declaration for Assault and Battery, that the statement is so General as not to indicate to which of the two assaults the plaintiff means to refer. The defendant may therefore suppose, or affect to suppose, that the first is the assault intended, and will Plead Son Assult Dene. This Plea the plaintiff cannot safely Traverse, because, as an Assault was in fact committed by the defendant, under the circumstances of Excuse here alleged, the defendant would have a Right, under the Issue Joined upon such Traverse, to prove those circumstances, and to presume that such Assault, and no other, is the Cause of Action. And it is evidently reasonable that he should have this Right; for if the plaintiff were, at the Trial of the Issue, to be allowed to set up a different Assault, the defendant might suffer, by a mistake.


THE REPLICATION

DEFENSIVE PLEADINGS

into which he had been led by the Generality of the Plaintiff’s Declaration. The plaintiff, therefore, in the case supposed, not being able to safely Traverse, and having no ground either for Demurrer or for Pleading in Confession and Avoidance, has no course, but by a New Pleading to correct the mistake occasioned by the Generality of the Declaration, and to declare that he brought his action, not for the first, but for the second, assault; and this is called “New Assignment”. The mistake being thus set right by the New Assignment, it remains for the defendant to plead such Matter as he may have in Answer to the Assault last mentioned, the first being now out of the question.45 There
are other situations where similar considerations make necessary a New Assignment of the plaintiff’s Real Cause of Action, which was left uncertain by reason of having been Generally Alleged in the Declaration.

FORM OF NEW ASSIGNMENT

289. A New Assignment appears in the Replication; it is not, however, a true Replication, as it does not attempt, by either Pleading by Way of Traverse or in Confession and Avoidance, to meet the Defendant’s Plea.

THE Form of the Replication which appears below is a New Assignment in a case where the defendant, in Trespass for Assault and Battery, has Plead in Confession and Avoidance of Trespasses other than those intended to be declared upon by the plaintiff:

FORM OF NEW ASSIGNMENT

AND as to the said Plea of the said CD. by him secondly above pleaded, as to the said several trespasses in the introductory part of that Plea mentioned and therein attempted to be justified, the said LB. says that, by reason of anything in that Plea alleged, he ought not to be barred from having and maintaining his aforesaid action thereof against the said C.D., because he says that he brought his said action, not for the Trespasses in the said second Plea acknowledged to have been done, but for that the said CD. heretofore, to wit, on the day of ___ AD. 19__, with force and arms, at

aforesaid, in the county aforesaid, upon another and different occasion, and for another and different purpose, than in the said second Plea mentioned, made another and different assault upon the said AR than the assault in the said second Plea mentioned, and then and there beat, wounded, and ill-treated him, in manner and form as the said A,B. bath above thereof complained; which said trespasses, above Newly Assigned, are other and different trespasses than the said trespasses in the said second Plea acknowledged to have been done. And this the said A.B. is ready to verify. Wherefore, inasmuch as the said C.D. hath not answered the said trespasses above Newly Assigned, he, the said A.R. Prays Judgment and his Damages by him sustained by reason of the committing thereof to be adjudged to him, etc.

NEW ASSIGNMENT AS IN THE NATURE OF A NEW DECLARATION

290. It has been said that a New Assignment is in the Nature of a New Declaration, meaning that it is not a true Replication, as it does not profess to Reply to anything in the defendant’s Plea; rather it seeks to state afresh, and with greater detail, the circumstances of the plaintiff’s case originally Generally Laid in the Declaration.

A NEW ASSIGNMENT is said to be in the Nature of a New Declaration, although in reality it was a Form of Common-Law Amendment, which contrary to the Ordinary Amendment could be exercised as a Matter of Right rather than in the Discretion of the Court. It may, however, more properly be considered as a repetition of the Declaration, differing only in this: that it distinguishes the true ground of complaint as being

\[\text{Sec. 291}\]

THE REPLICATION

531
different from that which is covered by the Plea. Being in the Nature of a New and Repeated Declaration, it is consequently to be framed with as much certainty or specification of circumstances as the Declaration itself. In some cases, indeed, it should be even more particular, so as to avoid the necessity of another New Assignment. Thus, if the plaintiff declares in Trespass Quare Clausum Fregit without naming the close, and the defendant pleads the Common Bar— a Plea of Libe rum Tenementum—, which oblige the plaintiff to New-Assign, he must, in his New Assignment, either give his close its name, or otherwise sufficiently describe it, even though such name or description was not required in the Declaration.

STATUS OF NEW ASSIGNMENT UNDER MODERN CODES. PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

291. The need for New Assignment under the Codes is minimized by virtue of the more complete statement of the claim in the Complaint and the liberal rules with respect to amendment, but its use has been permitted under some
SINCE the facts are fully set forth in plaintiff’s Complaint under the Codes, there

However, in some Code States, the plaintiff is permitted to interpose a reply in the nature of New Assignment, where this becomes necessary in order to show that the plaintiff’s action is grounded on matter other than that to which the Answer speaks. But the need for the use of such procedure is minimized by the fact that the same result can be accomplished by amendment of the Complaint.

Clark points out that the simplified pleading of the Federal Rules gives little or no occasion for the use of New Assignment, and concludes that it does not appear to be a matter of great importance in modern procedure, perhaps hardly justifying attempts which have been made to limit, if not prohibit, anything savoring of New Assignment.


CHAPTER 24
THE PRODUCTION, TENDER, AND JOINDER OF ISSUE

PRODUCTION OF ISSUE

292. An Issue in Pleading is a Specific proposition or point of controversy. Affirmed on the One Side and Denied on the Other. The reduction of the controversy to Issues is the great Object of Pleading.

We have already seen that the defendant, in opposing the Allegations of the Declaration, must either Demur or Plead, and that, in the course of the Pleadings, they must finally reach a point where there is some question or point presented, Affirmed on One Side and Denied on the Other. The reduction of the controversy to some specific question is the Object of all Pleading, and when reached, it is called the “Issue”; and the Cause, when at Issue, is ready for Trial or for the decision of the Issue raised. A Demurrer, either by the defendant to the Declaration or Other Pleading of the plaintiff, or by the plaintiff to a Plea or Other Pleading of the defendant, being a Denial of the legal sufficiency of the Opposing Pleading, raises at once a Question of Law which it is always the peculiar Province of the Court to determine, without the aid of a Jury. This question must be decided before further proceedings are had, and it is therefore said that the Demurrer always Tenders an Issue in Law. Again, if the Declaration or Other Pleading is sufficient on its face, and no Demurrer is interposed, the Pleadings, whether of the defendant or the plaintiff, stating Matters of Fact, must at length reach a point where the Opposing Party will simply Traverse or Deny what is alleged, and this Traverse must always Tender an Issue, which is One of Fact, and which the formal words of the Traverse refer to a Trial by Jury, by concluding “to the Country.”

The decision on an Issue of Law may not necessarily end the Pleadings, except for the time being, since if the Demurrer be overruled, the Party offering it is now generally allowed to Plead Over, as it is termed—that is, to offer the Pleading he would have made if he had considered the Pleading Demurred to sufficient; but the Tender and
Acceptance of an Issue of Fact closes all Pleading in the Action, as there is then nothing left but a Trial, which must dispose of the Action on its Merits.

TENDER OF ISSUE

293. Upon a traverse, Issue must be Tendered- AU Pleadings which Form the Issue by an Affirmative and Negative must Conclude to the Country But where New Matter is introduced, the Pleading should always Conclude with a Verification.

WE have before seen that it is the Object of All Pleadings to bring the Parties, in the course of their mutual alterations, to an Issue that is a single entire point, Affirmed on the One Side and Denied on the Other; and it is to effect this Object that the above Rule was established. There can be no arrival at this point until one or the other

532

See. 293

PRODUCTION, TENDER, AND JOINDER OF ISSUE

533

of the Parties, by the Conclusion of his Pleading, offers an Issue for the acceptance of his opponent, and this offer is called the “Tender of Issue.” The Formulae of Tendering the Issue vary according to the Mode of Trial proposed. Upon a disputed Question of Fact the Issue is Tendered by a Conclusion to the Country—referring the question to a Trial by a Jury—usually in the following form: “And this the said A.B. Prays may be inquired of by the Country”—if by the plaintiff; or, “And of this the said CD. puts himself upon the Country”—if by the defendant.\(^1\) Wherever, therefore, a Denial or Contradiction of Fact occurs in Pleading, Issue ought at the same time to be Tendered on the Fact Denied, by Concluding the Pleading in One of the above Forms, The Form of Tendering Issue to be tried by Matter of Record is as follows: The Party setting up the Matter of Record (in the Plea, for instance) says: “And this the said CD. is ready to Verify by the said Record.” The other Party, after denying the existence of the Record (in the Replication, for instance), says: “And this he, the said A.B., is ready to Verify when, where, and in such manner as the Court here shall order, direct, or appoint.”

The reason is that, as it sufficiently appears what is the Issue or Matter in dispute, it is time the Pleadings should close and the method of deciding the Issue be adjusted; and the Conclusion in the above Form always refers the decision to a Trial by Jury. The Pleadings which should thus conclude “to the Country” embrace all Forms of the

\(^1\) Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleaffing in Civil Actions, \textasciitilde; I, Of the Proceedings in an Action, from its Commencement to Its Termination, 48, 60 (Williston ed., Cambridge, Mass., 185).

It is held, however, that there is no material difference between these two Modes of Expression and that if “ponit se’ be substituted for “petit quod inquiratur,” or vice versa, the mistake Is unimportant. Weltale v. Glover, 10 Mod. 166, 88 Eng.Rep. 677 (1713).

Traverse except the Special Form, and also Replications, Rejoinders, etc., which do not contain New Matter, but present an Affirmative or Denial in a direct and positive form.

Conciw~ion by Verification

When the Answering Pleading contains New Matter, introducing Statements of Fact not previously mentioned by the other side, the latter has the right to be heard in answer if the accompanying Denial is immaterial, and a Tender of Issue by the Party Pleading such matter would therefore be premature.\(^2\) In such case, unless the New Matter is a Negative, the Pleading concludes with a “Verification,” as it is termed, generally in the following words: “And this the said A.B. is ready to Verify.”

To this exception belongs the case formerly noticed, of Special Traverses. These, as already explained, never Tender Issue, but always Conclude with a Verification; and the reason seems to be, that in such of them as contain New Matter in the Inducement, the introduction of that New Matter will give the Opposite Party a right to be heard in answer to it if the absque hoc be immaterial, and consequently makes a Tender of Issue premature. And, on the other hand, with respect to such Special Traverses as contain no New Matter in the Inducement, they seem in this respect to follow the analogy of those first mentioned, though they are not within the same reason.

Not only in the case of Special Traverses, but in other instances also, to which that Form does not apply, a Traverse may sometimes involve the Allegation of New Matter;
and in all such instances, as well as upon a Special Traverse, and for a similar reason, the Conclusion must be with a Verification, and not to the Country. An illustration of this is afforded by a case of very ordinary occurrence, viz., where the Action is in Debt on a Bond Conditioned for Performance of Covenants. If the defendant Pleads Generally Performance of the Covenants, and the plaintiff, in his Replication, relies on a Breach of them, he must show Specially in what that Breach consists; for to Reply Generally that the defendant did not Perform them would be too vague and uncertain. His Replication, therefore, setting forth, as it necessarily does, the circumstances of the Breach, discloses New Matter; and consequently, though it is a Direct Denial or Traverse of the Plea, it must not Tender Issue, but must Conclude with a Verification. 4 So, in another common case, in an Action of Debt on Bond conditioned to indemnify the plaintiff against the consequences of a certain act, if the defendant Pleads Non Damnificatus, and the plaintiff Replies, Alleging a Damnification, he must, on the principle just explained, set forth the circumstances, and the New Matter thus introduced will make a Verification necessary 5 To these it may be useful to add another example. The plaintiff declared in Debt on a Bond Conditioned for the Performance of certain Covenants by the defendant, in his capacity of Clerk to the plaintiff; one of which Covenants was to account for all the money that he should receive. The defendant Pleaded performance. The plaintiff Replied, that on such a day such a sum came to his hands, which he had not accounted for. The defendant Rejoined, that he did account, and in the following manner: that thieves broke into

the counting-house and stole the money, and that he acquainted the plaintiff of the fact; and he Concluded with a Verification. The Court held that, though there was an express affirmative that he did account, in contradiction to the Statement in the Replication that he did not account, yet the Conclusion with a Verification was right; for New Matter being alleged in the Rejoinder, the plaintiff ought to have liberty to come in with a Sur rejoinder, and Answer it by Traversing the robbery. 6

The application, however, to particular cases, of this exception, as to the introduction of New Matter, is occasionally nice and doubtful; and it becomes difficult sometimes to say whether there is any such introduction of New Matter as to make the Tender of Issue improper. Thus, in Debt on a Bond conditioned to render a full account to the plaintiff of all such sums of money and goods as were belonging to W. N. at the time of his death, the defendant Pleaded that no goods or sums of money came to his hands. The plaintiff Replied, that a silver bowl, which belonged to said W. N. at the time of his death, came to the hands of the defendant, viz, on such a day and year; “and this he is ready to Verify,” etc. On Demurrer, it was contended that the Replication ought to have Concluded to the Country, there being a complete Negative and Affirmative; but the Court thought it well concluded, as New Matter was introduced. However, the learned Judge who reports the case thinks it clear that the Replication was bad; and Mr. Sergeant Williams expresses the same opinion, holding that there was no introduction of New Matter such as to render a Verification proper. 7

291. Issue, when well Tendered, must be accepted. The Rule applies both to Issues—
(I) In Fact; and (II) In Law

If issue be well Tendered both in Point of Substance and in Point of Form, nothing remains for the Opposite Party but to accept or Join in It; and he can neither Demur, Traverse, nor Plead in Confession and Avoidance.5

The Form of accepting or Joining in the Tender of an Issue in Fact is by the use of the words “And the said A.B. doth the like.” This is called the “Similiter.” It is only required when the Conclusion of the Adverse Pleading Tenders a Trial by Jury, but is then essential. If omitted by the Party, it may be added for him to complete the Record, as, when the Issue is well Tendered, he has no option but to accept it.6 An Issue need never be accepted unless it is well Tendered. If

S. Stepffen, A Treatise on the Principles of pleading in Civil Actions, c. IT, Of the Principal Rules of Pleading, 233 (3rd Am. ed. by Tyler, Washington, D. C., 1900).


The Opposite Party thinks the Traverse is Bad in Substance or in Form, or objects to the Mode of Trial proposed, in neither case is he obliged to add the Similiter; but he may Demur, and if it has been added for him he may strike it out and Demur. As now used, the Similiter serves to mark both the acceptance of the question itself and the Manner of Trial proposed. As the resort to a Jury could in ancient times only be had by consent of both the Parties, it appears to have been formerly used only to indicate an expression of such consent. A Form of the Joinder in Issue in Fact is set out below, and a Form of Joinder in Demurrer is heretofore set out in section 198 of Chapter 20, the Demurrer.

FORM OF JOINER IN ISSUE, OR SIMILITER

In The King’s Bench.

Term, in the year of the reign of Queen Victoria.

A.a

v.

C. D,

AND the said A.B., plaintiff in the above-mentioned action, as to the plea of the defendant pleaded therein, and whereof he hath put himself upon the country, doth the like.


See.

295. Trial by Court.
296. Trial by Jury.

TRIAL BY COURT

295. The decision of the Issue in Fact is called the Trial.

Issues of Law are always decided by the Court without a Jury, after Argument by Counsel for the respective Parties. The decision of an Issue of Fact in an Action at Law is by Trial, which is generally

1. II general, on the History and Development of
Trial by Jury, see:


536

a Trial by the Court and a Jury. The parties, however, may waive a Jury Trial, and submit an Issue of Fact to the Court. in Equity, Cases are tried by the Court.

Where there was no right of Trial by Jury, or where the Parties waived it, the Trial might be by the Court. In such a case, before a Final decision, the Parties might request a

Law of England (London 1811)z Worthington. An Inqui’y into the lower of Juries to Dec-ide Incidentally on Questions of Law (Londona 1825);
Kennedy, A Treatise on the Law and Practice of Juries, as Amended by the Statute of 6 Geo. IV, c. 50 (London 1826); Cary, Practical Treatise on the Law of Juries and Jurors, as founded on the Act 6 Geo. IV (London 1826); Repp, A Historian’s Treatise on Trial by Jury, Wager of Law and Other Onoordinate Forensic Institutions Formerly in Use in Scandinavia and Iceland (Edinburgh 1832); Steele, On the Powers and Duties of Juries on Criminal Trials in Scotland (Edinburgh 1833); Smith, Charges and Addresses from Grand Juries, with their Answers at Length (Dublin 1834); Adams, A Prac& tical Treatise and Observations on Trial by Jury in Clvii Causes, (Edinburgh 1830); McFarlane, The Practice of the Court of Session in Jury Court Civil Causes (Edinburgh 1837); Eest, Exposition of the Practice Related to the Power of the Judge to Direct A Verdict, 24 Col.L.ltev. 111 (1924); Smith, Forme

PART FIVE

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

CHAPTER 25

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY’

Sec. 295

Finding of the Facts and a Statement of the

Conclusions of Law thereon.

Trial by Jury (London, 1852); Bigelow, History of procedure in England, e. IX, The Trial Term, 301 (Boston 1880); Thayer, A Preliminary Treatise on Evidence at the Common Law, cc. II—TV, 47—182 (Boston 1898); Brickwood’s Sacclct Instructions to Juries (3d ed., Chicago 10083); Bigelow, Papers on the Legal History of Go—ez’tment, c. IV, The Old Jury, 152 (Boston 1020); Scott, Fundamentals of Procedure in Actions at Common Law, e. III, Trial by Jury, 70 (New York 1922); Green, Judge and Jury (Kansas City 1930); von Moschzisker, Trial by Jury (2d ed., Philadelphia 2030); Abbott, A Brief for the Trial of Civil Issues Before a Jury (5th ed. by Viesselhan, Rochester 1935); Goldstein, Trial Technique (Chicago 2035); Wigmore, A Treatise on the Anglo-American System of Evidence ii Trials at Common Law-, c. 1, Introduction, 8, General Survey of the Historical Development of the Rules of Evidence, 234 (3d ed, Boston 1940); Busch, Law and Tactics in Jury Trials (Indianapolis 2010); Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court in Historical Perspective (New York 1952); Bclli, Modern Trials, 3 vols. (Indianapolis 1054).

Articles: Thayer, The Jury and Its Development, S Harv.-L.Rev. 24- 295, 357 (1892); Clark, The Supreme Court of North Carolina, 4 Green Bag 457, 472 (1892); Dennis, Jury Trial and the Federal Constitution, 6 Col.L.Rev. 423 (1906); Schofield,

. New Trials and the Seventh Amendment, S Ill. L.Rev. 257 (1013); Thordike, Trial by Jury in the United States Courts, 26 Harv.L.Rev. 732 (1013); Wells, Early Opposition to the Petty Jury in Criminal Cases, 30 L.Q.ltev. 07 (1014); Thayer, Judicial Adrninitr’tation, 63 IL’d.Lltcr. 585 (1915); Sunderland, The Inefficiency of the American Jury, 13 MieL.Rev. 302 (1913); Scott, Trial by Jury and the l-eoi-uu of Civil l’rocedu re 31 L.-jurv.L.ltev. GCO (1018) ; Smith, The Power of the Judge to Direct A Verdict, 24 Col.L.Rev. 111 (1924); Smith, F orne

Page 561 of 735
THE decision of an Issue of Law is exclusively vested now, as it always has been, in

Argument Upon Demurrer


Comments: Trial by Jury in Suits to Enjoin Nuisances, 25 Col.L.Rev. 641 (1925); Jury Trial Under Federal Declaratory Judgments Act, 3-5 Ill.L.Rev. 339 (1940); Right to Jury Trial as to Fact Essential to Action or Defense but not Involving MCI-its Thereof, 170 A.L.R. 383 (1947); Right to Jury Trial in Declaratory Judgment Actions: A Narrowing Interpretation, 59 Yale L.J. 168 (1949); Illng Juries— Admonitions Urging Agreement and Directions as to Methods of Deliberation, 20 Ind.L.J. 86 (1950); The Right to Jury Trial Under Merged Procedure, 65 Harv.L.Rev. 453 (1052); Psychological Tests and

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Ch. 25

the judges of the Court. In this connection, however, it should be kept in mind that sometimes the Court decides certain Issues of Fact, as when the Action is founded upon a Record and the defendant has pleaded Nut Tiel Record, as in an Action on a Domestic Judgment, or where a Jury Trial is waived.

Where, therefore, upon a Demurrer, the Issue in Law has been Entered on Record, the next step at Common Law is to Move for a Conciliuhi, that is, to move to have a day appointed on which the Court will hear the Counsel of the Parties argue the Demurrer. In this country this development is described as placing the Demurrer on the argument list or “Law and Motion Calendar,” according to the practice which prevails. And on the day entered for argument, or as soon thereafter as the business of the Court will permit, the Demurrer is argued vivavoco in Court by the respective counsel of both parties, after which the Judge or Judges announce their decision,

Trial Without a Jury—Findings of Fact and Conclusions of Law

In some instances, at Common Law, a case might be tried by a Court without a Jury. This might occur where there was no right to a Jury Trial or where the parties had waived the right. In such Trials, the ordinary incidents of a Jury Trial, such as the Selection of Jurors, Requests to the Court to Charge the Jury, Exceptions to the Charge, various Motions, and Verdict, are absent. The Opening Statements be-

Standards of Competence for Selecting Jurors, 65 Yale L.J. 531 (1056).

Annotations: Province of Court and Jury Respectively as to Construction of Written Conract Where Extrinsic Evidence as to Intention has been Introduced, 85 A.L.I. 648 (1930); Right to Jury Trial of Issues as to Personal Judgment for Deficiency in Suit to Foreclose Mortgage, 112 A.L.I. 1402 (1938); Nature and Effect of Jury’s Verdict in Equity, 156 A.L.R. 1147 (1945); Disregard or Correction by Court of Apportionment of Verdict Among Joint Tortfeasors, 8 A.L.R.2d 862 (1949); Jury Trial in Action for Declaratory Relief, 15 A.L.R.2d 777 (1950).

come informal outlines of the principal contents of the contending Counsel. Evidence may be admitted more
freely than in a Trial by Jury, but for the most part the Requirements of Proof are the same. Before final submission of the case to the Court for Judgment each Party has an opportunity to Request a Finding of Facts and a Statement of the Conclusions of Law thereon, to serve as a basis of the Final Judgment, and, if it becomes necessary, to make an Appeal. Under Section 4213 of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, the decision of the Court may be Oral or in Writing, and must state the Facts which it deems essential.

Under Rule 52 of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, in Trials by the Court upon the facts without a Jury or with an Advisory Jury, the Court is obligated to Find the Facts Specially and then state separately its Conclusions of Law thereon, after which it directs that the appropriate Judgment be entered. For purposes of Review, Requests for such Findings are not essential. Such Findings of Fact, however, shall not be set aside except where clearly erroneous. And, of course, the Trial Court must have had full opportunity to consider the credibility of the Witnesses. And if an opinion or memorandum of decision is filed, it will be deemed sufficient if the Findings of Fact and Conclusions of Law appear therein.4

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

296. At Common Law Trials by Jury were either at Bar or Nisi Prius, The latter type of Trial was a product of the Statute of Westminster II (1285), which permitted actions, except those of great importance, to be tried out on the Nisi Prius Circuits, thus eliminating the inconvenience to the Parties, Jurors and Witnesses of Attending the Trial at Westminster, when they lived in a distant County and the means of transportation were inadequate.

TRIAL BY JURY

4 Ibid.
Sec. 296

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

539

Trial at Bar or at Nisi Prius

TRIALS by the Jury are either at Bar, or Nisi Prius. Prior to the Statute of Westminster II (1285)– civil causes were tried at the Bar, before all the Judges of the Court, in Term-Time; or, when of no great moment, before the Justices in Eyre. All causes ancienly commenced in the Superior Common-Law Courts were tried at the Bar of the Specific Court in which they were commenced, wherever the Court might be sitting. The Jury was, therefore, necessarily brought before the Court from the County in which the Venue was laid by a Writ of Venire Facias Juratores. Only actions of great importance were brought in the Superior Courts, suits of less significance being disposed of in the Court Baron, the Hundred and County Courts. In time, however, by reason of the superior quality of justice administered in the Superior Courts, cases of a trifling amount and nature were brought to these Courts for Trial, and it imposed an intolerable burden upon the Parties, Jurors and Witnesses to compel them to attend the Trial at Westminster when they lived in a distant County and the means of transportation were scarce and difficult. Accordingly, at a very early date, the practice developed of continuing the cause from Term to Term in the Court above, provided the Justices in Eyre did not come into the County where the cause of action arose; and if it appeared that they arrived there during the continuance, the whole cause was removed from the Jurisdiction of the Superior Court to that of the Justices in Eyre.5

5. 13 Edw. 1, c. 30, 1 Statutes at Large 203 (1285).
8. 2 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personall Actions, c. XXX–li, Of Trials by the Country, and their Incidents, 706 (Philadelphia, 1807).

But when the Court of Common Pleas became fixed at Westminster Hall by virtue of Magna Charta in 1215, the practice of conducting Trials before the Bar of one of the Superior Courts, in cases which could not be properly removed therefrom, was fraught with great hardship to the Parties, Witnesses, and Jurors, whose attendance was required. Once it was recognized that the Fact-Finding Process could be separated from the Law and from the rest of the legal procedure involved, the way was opened to relieve the hardship to the Parties, Jurors and Witnesses occasioned by the necessity of traveling to Westminster in London.
This relief came in 1285 in the Form of the Statute of Westminster II, 13 Edw. I, c. 30, 1 Statutes at Large 203. Under this Statute power was conferred upon the Justices of Assize, who had superseded the Justices in Eyre, to try Common Issues in Trespass, and other less important actions, with instructions to return them, when tried, into the Superior Courts above, where alone Judgment could be Rendered and Enrolled.  

Since, under the Statute, only the Trial, and not the determination in the entire case, was now to be conducted in the Lower Court, the Nisi Prius Clause was omitted from the Conditional Continuances. Instead, the Statute directed that there should be inserted in the Writs of Venire Facias the following language, “that the Sheriff should cause the Jurors to come to Westminster (or wherever the King’s Courts should be held) on such a day in Easter and Michaelmas terms (Nisi Prius), unless before that day the Justices assigned to take Assizes shall come into his said County.” As the Justices in Assize were al


8. 2 TiUd, The Practice of the Court of iCing’s Bench in Personal Actions, e. XXXvII, Of Trials by the Country, and their Incidents, 766, 777 (Philadel. phia, 1807).

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Ch. 25

most certain to appear in the County before the Return Day of the Writ in the Superior Court in question, the Sheriff, by virtue of the Statute, Summoned the Jurors to Appear in the Court of the Judges of Assize, and there the Trial was carried on during the Vacation of the Upper Court. This Statute was commonly known and designated as the Statute of Nisi Prius (1285), and, in consequence, the same name was given to the Trial conducted in pursuance of its authority before the Justices of Assize.  

The practice under the Statute of Nisi Prius (1285) developed an inconvenience. It arose out of the fact that the Sheriff made no Return of the Jury to the Superior Court. Thus, the parties to the action remained in ignorance as to the Names of the Jurors until they were actually called at the Trial. The Counsel of the Parties, therefore, found themselves unprepared to make Challenges or take Exceptions. This difficulty was corrected by the Statute of 42 Edw. III, c. 11, 2 Statutes at Large 183, enacted in 1368. Under this Statute, the Method of Trial at Nisi Prius was changed. It was provided that no Inquest, except of Assize and Gaol Delivery, should be taken by Writ of Nisi Prius until after the Sheriff had made a Return of the Names of the Jurors to the Superior Court.

Selection of the Jury—Summoning, ImpanelLing and Examining

(I) Summoning the Jury.—When the parties have put themselves upon the Country, which is the technical way of referring the issue between them to the Jury, one of the Entries upon the Roll is the Award of the Mode of Decision, which, in the case of Trial by Jury, directs the issuance of a Writ of Venire Patios commanding the Sheriff of the County where the facts stated in the pleading are alleged to have occurred, to Summon a Jury to try the issue.

(II) impanelling the Jury.—When the Jurors appear in Court, the first step and one of the most important in Trial by Jury, is the process of Drawing and Selecting the Jurors from what is known as the “Panel.” It is a list of the prospective Jurors summoned by the Sheriff to serve on the Juries which may be needed during a Particular Term, or for the Trial of a Particular Action. The Names of these Jurors are written on ballots or tickets and placed in a box, and from the larger number of prospective Jurors in the Panel, names are drawn by lot and called to be sworn as Jurors upon the Jury, unless challenged or excused. If the Original Panel be exhausted by Challenges or Excuses, a further supply, known as “Tales-men,” or may be summoned.

(III) Challenges to the Jury.—Tidd says that Challenges are of two kinds, first, to the Array; and second, to the Polls.  

Challenges to the Array took the form of an Exception to the Whole Panel, in which the Jury are Arrayed, or set
in order by the Sheriff on his Return. Such objections to the Jury may be based upon some charge of partiality, or upon some default in the Sheriff, or his Deputy who Arrayed the Panel. Also, if there be no personal objection against the Sheriff, yet if he Arrays the Panel at the nomination, or under the direction of either

10. By the Balloting Act, 3 Geo. II. c. 25, § 11, 16 Statutes at Large 167 (1730), the process of selecting Jurors by baflot was carefully restricted.

11. “The qualification of a Tales man, in point of estate, is only five pounds per annum. And, by the 7 & 8 Wm. III. e. 32, § 3 [9 Statutes at Large 492 (1690)], the Sheriff is directed to return such persons, to serve upon the Tales, as shall be returned upon some other Panel, and then attending the Court.” 2 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench in Personal Actions, c. XXXVII Of Trials by the Country, and their Incidents, 784 (Philadelphia, 1807).

12. Id. at 779. Sec. 296

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

party, it is good cause of Challenge to the Array.

Challenges to the Polls, in capita, are exceptions to Particular Jurors. Accordthg to Sir Edward Coke, Challenges of this description are of four kinds:

First, Propter Honoris Respectum, as if a Lord of Parliament be empanelled on a Jury, in which case he was permitted to challenge himself, or be. challenged by either party.

Second, Propter Defectum, as if a Jury-man be an alien born, or a slave or bondsman, or if he is not a resident of the County, or lacks the necessary qualification of estate.

Third, Propter Affectum, as where a Juror is of kin to either party, within the ninth degree; that he has been arbitrator, or declared his opinion on either side; that he has an interest in the cause; that he has accepted money for his Verdict, or even food and drink at either party’s expense; that he has formerly been a Juror in the same cause; or that he is the party’s master, servant, tenant, counsellor, steward, attorney, or of the same society or corporation with him. Besides these, there are Challenges to the Favour, where the party objects only on account of some probable rounds of suspicion, as aequathtance, and the like.

Fourth, Propter Delictum, as where a Juror was challenged for a conviction of Treason, Felony, Perjury, or Conspiracy; or if, for some Infamous Offence, he has received Judgment of the Pillory, Tumbrel, or the like, or to be branded, whipped or stigmatized; or if he be outlawed or excommunicated, or has been attainted of False Verdict, Praemunire, or Forgery.

(IV) The Examination of the Jurors.—Great latitude is permitted in the examination of Jurors on the Voir Dire, with regard to the various causes of Challenge, in order that there may be a full and thorough test of their qualifications. The extent of the Examination should fit the importance of the case, being searching and thorough in a momentous case, but brief in a minor one, and perhaps addressed to the whole twelve, rather than to the individuals separately. It is advantageous, if possible, to show confidence in the Jury.

The Juror knows best his own condition of mind and may be examined fully, though not to his infamy or disgrace. Examples of the kinds of questions which may be put are as to his membership in secret organizations, under oath and obligation to assist fellow members; whether he has formed a partial opinion from rumors he has heard, or from the newspapers (facts not in themselves disqualifying, though, if taken with others, they might show bias, so further Examination is necessary to make a prima fade case for exclusion); whether he has any personal knowledge of the facts of the case, or has formed any opinion about it, which he would favor if the testimony were equally balanced; whether he has an opinion which it would require evidence to remove; whether his attention has been called directly or indirectly to any litigation of the same kind in such a way as to influence his Judgment (as if he were a plaintiff himself against an Insurance company); whether he has any prejudice against corporations, as grasping and oppressive; whether he would take the Law from the Court, and be guided and controlled by its
Instructions, or whether he disagrees with some rule involved; whether he has conscientious scruples against the infliction of death penalty; in short, he may be Examined generally in regard to his occupation, nationality, religion, social bonds, his sympathy and intellect, and evidence may be introduced by other witnesses as to his relations or expressions of opinion on the merits of the case. The grounds of objection should be specifically stated, in order to assign Errors

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

in Law in ruling on the Challenges upon Motion for a New Trial.\(^3\)

The Burden of Proof

It may be said that in general the Burden of Proof will rest on the plaintiff for some specific propositions, but on the defendant for others,\(^4\) depending upon which side has the Affirmative or Negative of the points at issue. This turns on what facts in dispute are essential to the case, or \textit{prima facie} Cause of Action, and what to the Defence, respectively; he who asserts must prove. The plaintiff must make out a \textit{prima facie} Cause of Action, while the defendant must satisfy the Court of the truth and adequacy of any Defences of New Matter pleaded in Confession and Avoidance. As to these, the plaintiff need only repel the attack and keep them balanced or doubtful, that is, below the required degree of persuasion.

(I) \textit{Prima Facie} Case.—The first task of the plaintiff at the Trial is to make out a \textit{prima facie} case by presenting proof of the facts or points essential to his recovery, if these be denied, in order to move the tribunal to decide in his favor. What facts and propositions are sufficient \textit{prima facie} for a decision in the plaintiff’s favor are, in general, determined by the Rules of Substantive Law applicable to the particular case, as to what facts must be proved to make out a good cause of action; and, these in turn may be affected by the Rules of Pleading as to the Manner and Form required in the Statement of the Cause of Action, which marshal and apportion the respective grounds of Claim and Defence. But the Apportionment is not accomplished by the Pleading alone, but is further determined by the Specific Rules as to the Burden of Proof in various cases. Thus, there is no general test as to what con-\(^13\)


14. lii. at 3t

stitutes a \textit{prima facie} showing, as this depends upon a combination of factors, such as the Substantive Law, the Rules of Pleading, and the Rules of Evidence, which in turn are affected by a sense of Fair Play and Public Policy.

Under the irregularity of pleading which characterized the various Common-Law Forms of Action, and under the limited Series of Pleadings under the Codes, which ordinarily do not extend beyond the Replication Stage of Pleading, the Pleadings do not fully indicate by whom proof must be made or clearly Apportion to Each Party the propositions which are essential to his case, and which fall to him as the case progresses.

Under an ideal System of Pleading, the turns and logical Stages of the Proof Process would be indicated by the Series of Pleadings, viz., the Declaration, Plea, Replication, Rejoinder, Surrejoinder, Rebutter and Surrebutter. But, as we have seen in the Chapter on Pleas, Peremptory or in Bar, the General Issue, at Common Law, did not always mean that the defendant’s Defences were Negative; in many instances Affirmative Defences were hidden thereunder; in consequence, the Pleadings sometimes failed to disclose who had the Burden of Proof.

(II) The Burden of Rebuttal.—When the plaintiff makes out his \textit{prima facie} case by reasonable and credible evidence, the Burden of Proof is said to shift to the defendant, but this use of the phrase is very inaccurate and confusing. The plaintiff must at all times keep the proof of his contentions at the required height. This Ultimate Burden of making out a \textit{prima facie} case and keeping it good cannot shift; but the Burden of going for

15. Professor James Bradley Thayer was the first to demonstrate clearly the inaccuracy of the expression that the Burden of Proof “shifts,” and to elaborate on the distinction between the Burden of Proof, in the sense of the “duty to establish,” which never shifts, and what is awkwardly termed “the duty of going forward with the evidence,” which does have the characteristic referred to as ‘shift
ward with the evidence may shift from time to time. Perhaps an illustration would help to make the matter clear.

Suppose A brings Trespass for Assault and Battery against B, who pleads Self Defense, whereupon A Traverses the Plea, thus creating an Issue of Fact as to whether the defendant B did strike in Self Defense. At the Trial, as B’s Plea admits the striking, A has, at the outset, a prima facie case; but suppose B goes forward with the evidence by offering sufficient Proof of Self Defense, then the Burden of Rebuttal, or the need to go forward with the evidence and repel the Proof of B, shifts to A, who as tile asserter of the cause of action, or the proponent, must establish a Preponderance of Proof in favor of his cause of action. If he succeeds in this, the Burden of going forward with the evidence will again shift to B. Thus, in the course of the Trial, the Burden of going forward with the evidence may shift from the plaintiff to the defendant, and vice versa. When, however, the case finally goes to the Jury, the Burden is always on the Affirmative to keep a Preponderance of Proof in his favor, while the Negative is safe with an even balance or equilibrium.

(III) Respective Functions of Judge and Jury.—Each Party must first pass the gauntlet of the Judge with his evidence in order to get to the Jury on the Issue. Unless the plaintiff makes a prima facie case and satisfies the Judge that he has sufficient evidence to be considered by the Jury, and to form a reasonable basis for the Verdict, a Motion for a Nonsuit should be granted by the Judge. This Motion may be made by defendant at the close of plaintiff’s case, when it is incumbent upon the plaintiff to establish an alleged fact, and there is insufficient evidence on the point, or the only testimony contradicts it.


A Motion to Direct a Verdict for insufficiency of the opponent’s evidence to go to the Jury may be made by either Party at the close of defendant’s case. The case should be taken from the Jury: (1) Where there is no evidence to support the Burden of Proof on some essential fact; (2) where there is no conflict in evidence, as where by the testimony of the plaintiff he put his head out of the window in the train, which is contributory negligence, and precludes recovery as a Matter of Law; (3) where the evidence is somewhat conflicting, but so certain and convincing that no reasonable man could decide otherwise. Directing a Verdict saves the need of a Motion for a New Trial; but the result of Setting Aside a Verdict is different, in that it results in a New Trial, while Directing a Verdict results in Final Judgment. The test for the Two Motions is not necessarily identical, though very similar. The Judge thus has supervisory control over the Proof and the Jury may be prevented from rendering a Verdict against reason which would later have to be set aside as against the evidence.

By a Demurrer to the Evidence, interposed at the close of the plaintiff’s evidence, the Court may be asked to pronounce the Law upon the case, admitting all facts which the evidence tends to establish and all reasonable inferences therefrom. Where the evidence fails to prove a prima facie case, the Demurrer will be sustained. In theory the Functions of Court and Jury are sharply divided. It is for the Court to decide Questions of Law and for the Jury to pass on Questions of Fact. In practice the Court has important functions in passing on the evidence and controlling the work of the Jury, and the Jury applies the Law to the facts under the Instructions of the Court.

(iv) The Order of Proof.—When the plaintiff has the Burden of Proof on any one
of the Issues, he has the right to open the evidence and prove the facts on which he relies to establish his case. The defendant may then present evidence to contradict the plaintiff, and also to support his own propositions in defense, to relieve himself from the consequences of the plaintiff’s prima facie case, and by way of Cross-Action. Finally, the plaintiff may disprove in Rebuttal the affirmative portion of his opponent’s evidence. Affirmative Evidence cannot, in strictness, be given by the plaintiff in Rebuttal. He should not reserve his real or main attack until after he has drawn out the testimony of the other party, and until the defendant has closed his case. He should offer all his evidence in chief on the points upon which proof is essential to his recovery. In Rebuttal he is confined to Rebutting evidence only, unless the Court, for good reason, permits him to offer evidence on his original case. If the plaintiff be allowed to give Affirmative Evidence in Rebuttal, the defendant should be allowed to contradict it, by Surrebuttal, so where the credibility of defendant’s witnesses is assailed. Each side must in turn exhaust his case, and neither may give evidence by piecemeal, but must in the first instance produce all his evidence in chief, on which he relies to establish his case, and is confined in Rebuttal to the contradiction of affirmative facts brought out by his adversary’s evidence. But it is no objection to Rebuttal that it incidentally tends to corroborate the party’s case in chief.

The plaintiff should not anticipate defenses, or attempt to disprove facts which have not yet been asserted, and upon which there may finally be no controversy. In an action for the price of goods sold, the plaintiff should prove sale, delivery, and acceptance of the goods, and then rest. He need not prove freedom from defects. If the defendant produces this, the plaintiff may rebut or refute it.

The departure from the regular order of proof may be allowed in the sound exercise of discretion by the Court. While ordinarily the affirmative must exhaust his evidence before the other party begins, yet the Court may be requested to reopen the case at various stages of the trial, and admit evidence which has been overlooked or newly discovered, even after one or both have “Rested”; i.e., formally announced that his evidence is closed, and even after motion for nonsuit or submission of the case to the Court. Particularly in the course of the trial the order of proof is discretionary, and the plaintiff may be permitted to strengthen his original case by the introduction of cumulative evidence in rebuttal, after the defendant has rested, if opportunity is given to the defendant to reply. But he must ask the Court to reopen the case for the purpose, or it may be excluded as part of the original case which should not have been withheld.

The Right to Open or Close

(I) The Objective Sought in the Exercise of the Right.—Generally speaking, at Common Law, the advantage of the Opening and Closing Speech to the Jury, as well as the Right to Open and Close the Evidence, belongs to the plaintiff, if he has anything to prove essential to his prima facie right of action; but it belongs to the defendant if there be no issue on the Allegations of the Declaration.8

In Criminal Cases, the prosecution always has the Opening and Closing Argument, and it may be given to the plaintiff in all Civil Actions by a Mere Rule of Practice, irrespective of his true position with respect to the Burden of Proof. This right to have the last word, after the opponent has been heard, with

8. If the defendant admits all the material facts alleged in the Declaration, he may assume the entire affirmative and have the Right of Opening and Closing the Case, as where he admits the due execution of a contract, but sets up the Affirmative Ietense of Discharge by Release; or by Operation of Law. Gardner v. Meeker, 109 Ill. 40, 48 N.E. 307 (1897); Nagle v. Schnadt, 239 Ill. 595, 58 N.E. 178 (1900); Gibson v. Reiselt, 123 Ill. App. 52 (1905).

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

See 296

no opportunity thereafter to explain, expose fallacies, or remove the spell of an emotional appeal, is regarded as giving a very distinct advantage to the side which acquires it.

(II) The Opening Statement—Its Scope and Content.—As a preliminary to the introduction of the evidence, the plaintiff’s counsel, or that side which has the Affirmative of the Issue, and from whom Proof is first required, has the right to make an Opening Statement. He briefly sets forth the issues of the case as presented in the Pleadings,
states what is admitted and what is disputed thereunder, gives an outline of the main points he expects to prove in support of his case, and attempts to show what bearing the evidence will have on the points he intends to establish. After this prologue, he then proceeds to call his Witnesses and to introduce his Documentary Evidence.

The defendant may reserve his Opening Statement until after the close of the plaintiff’s evidence, or it may be made immediately after the Opening Statement by the plaintiff, in order to place the issues before the Jury at the outset.

The Evidence

(I) Methods of Production of Evidence.—The mode of offering testimony is generally by Witnesses who are present in Court and testify Orally before the Jury, though in all the states there are provisions under which, in certain circumstances, the evidence of Material Witnesses may be taken before the Trial, reduced to writing and certified by a proper Officer, and thus used at the Trial without the appearance of the Witnesses themselves, Where Witnesses testify Orally, they are first questioned by the Counsel for the Party producing them, which is called the “Direct Examination” or “Examination-in-Chief”, and then by the Opposing Counsel, which is called the “Cross-Examination,” and perhaps again by the former, which is known as the “Re-Direct Examination,” and by the latter, which is known as “Re-Cross Examination,”

(II) The Examination of Witnesses: (A) The Oath of Witness.—When a Witness is called, before he takes his seat in the witness stand, the Clerk of the Court Administers the Oath that “the evidence that you shall give to the Court and Jury, touching the matters in question, shall be the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth. So help you God!”

(B) The Direct Examination.—The witness, having asserted to the Oath, the Counsel producing the Witness then proceeds with what is called the Direct Examination. He usually begins by asking the Witness his name, residence, business, and other preliminary matters, and then he proceeds to extract the desired information. He may do this either by plying the Witness with successive questions, or instead of requiring answers to specific questions, by permitting the Witness to tell his own story uninterrupted and unguided by questions from Counsel. The advantage of the second method is that it gives the opposition less opportunity to know beforehand what evidence is to be offered, and hence lessens the likelihood of the Examination being interrupted by captious objections, designed to weaken the impact of the evidence upon the minds of the Jurors.19

It is the duty of the Court to exercise a reasonable control over the Mode of Examination and the Scope of the Evidence offered. Leading Questions, or questions so framed as to suggest to the Witness the desired answer, may elicit answers based on Counsel’s suggestion, rather than on the Witness’ own knowledge. Questions which obviously instruct the Witness as to the tenor of his reply, are, on this ground, generally objectionable. However, in dealing with a hostile Witness, as on Cross-Examination, the bias and reluctance of the Witness removes much of the danger of suggestion from Leading Questions. It is proper for the Court or Jurors to put additional questions to elicit the facts upon which they desire fuller knowledge.

(C) The Cross-Examination.—Each Witness is not only subject to Direct Examination by the side which produced him; he is also subject to Cross-Examination by the opposite party, for the purpose of extracting his whole knowledge and to test its credit and significance before he leaves the stand. According to Dean Wigmore, a most distinguished authority in Evidence, “the belief that no safeguard for testing the value of human statements is comparable to that furnished by cross-examination, and the conviction that no statement (unless by special exception) should be used as testimony until it has been probed and sublimated by that test, has found increasing strength in lengthening experience. Not even the abuses, the mishandlings, and the puerilities which are so often found associated with Cross-Examination have availed to nullify its value. It may be that in more than one sense it takes the place in our system which torture occupied in the mediaeval system of the civilians. Nevertheless, it is beyond any doubt the greatest legal engine ever invented for the discovery of truth.”20

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY
(D) The Advantages and Danger of Cross-Examination.—Cross-Examination is effective, because it exposes falsehood and inaccuracies, and beats out the truth, by disclosing the ability and willingness of the Witness to declare the truth, his opportunity to ascertain the facts, his powers of observation and memory, his situation and motives, and by fixing the Witness as to all the minute details of time and place. It is very difficult to make a fabricated story agree with all the circumstances. Truth alone will match all around.

But Cross-Examination often is a two-edged sword, for it may extract the most unfavorable and damaging facts, confirming the opponent’s case, demonstrating the Witness’ credibility, or supplying fatal gaps which the opponent had left in his Proof.

Methods of Withdrawing the Case from the Jury

At Common Law, in the course of a Trial by Jury, the respective functions of the Judge and Jury were apportioned, the General Rule being that the Court decided the Law and the Jury the Facts, although this is not invariably true. From this practice, it follows logically that where the plaintiff failed to produce legally relevant evidence at the Trial, the matter might be withdrawn from the Jury. And the classic Common-Law procedural device for securing this end was the Demurrer to the Evidence.

(I) The Demurrer to the Evidence:"

(A) In General—A Demurrer to the Evidence is analogous to a Demurrer in Pleading, and it operates to withdraw a case from the Jury. It questions the sufficiency of the Evidence in Point of Law, and calls for the opinion of the Court upon the legal effect of the facts shown in evidence. And, for this purpose, it admits all the facts presented in the

21. In general, on the Origin, Histoty and Development of the Demurrer to the Evidence, see:


20.5 Wigmore, Evidence, § 1307 (3d ed. Boston 1940) Sec. 296

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

547

evidence or which it conduces to prove.22 If the plaintiff’s evidence does not make a prima facie case, the defendant may Demur. But if he wishes to contradict it, he must resort to the Jury.

This step is taken only in cases in which it is very clear that the evidence has no tendency to prove the case; and naturally it is not often resorted to, for it is generally unsafe for a party to rest his case solely upon the test of what the evidence tends to prove—a matter often difficult to determine. The Party Demurring must obviously be the one holding the Negative of the Issue, as the result of the case must, as a General Rule, be in his favor, unless the Affirmative is proved against him. The effect of the proceeding is to determine the question whether the plaintiff’s evidence shows a prima facie case or right of action.3

The Demurrer to the Evidence withdraws from the Jury the Application of the Law to the Facts, as in the case of a Special Verdict. On a Demurrer to the Evidence or Motion for Nonsuit, no Objection can be made to the Pleadings.4

(B) In the Several States.—In many States, the practice of Demurring to the Evidence

A Demurrer to plaintiff’s Evidence raises a Question of Law whether the Evidence in favor of the plaintiff, if considered to be true, together with the inferences which may fairly be drawn therefrom, tends to support the Cause of Action of the plaintiff. Libby, McNeill & Libby v. Cook, 222 Ill. 206, 78 N.E. 599 (1906); Brophy v. Illinois Steel Co., 242 Ill. 55, 80 N.E. 684 (1900); Kee & Chapell Dairy Co. v. Pennsylvania Co., 201 Ill. 248, 126 N.E. 179 (1920).


dence has become obsolete.” It is superseded by a Motion for a Nonsuit or by a Motion to Direct a Verdict for the Defendant.°

On the Federal level the Supreme Court of the United States, in 1808 in the case of Pawling v. United States,2, originally approved the rule as to admissions by Demurrer applied in the English case of Cocksedge v. Fanshaw,° for the effect that “by the Demurrer, the defendant admits every fact which the Jury could have found upon the evidence.” 29 But some five years later, in 1813, in the case of Young v. Black,30 the Supreme Court, speaking through Mr. Justice Story shifted to the rule as enunciated in Gibson v. Hunter. In that case, decided in 1793, the Court held that where the testimony was oral and loose and indeterminate, or circumstantial, the plaintiff was not required to join in the Demurrer except where there was a specific admission in the Demurrer of every fact which the evidence conduced to prove. Thereafter, unless the plaintiff voluntarily joined in the Demurrer, the issue as to whether the Jury could have found the facts was no longer the subject of the inquiry; if the evidence at all conduced to prove the facts, those facts had to be admitted on the Record. This ruling was, in the words of Professor Thayer,32 a


27. 8 U.S. 219 (1808).


30.ii U.S. 505 (1813).


32. Thayer, Preliminary Treatise on Evidence at the

Common Law, 235 (Boston, 1898).

548

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Ch. 2~

“Death blow” to the Demurrer to Evidence in England. In consequence of this division of view as to the Demurrer to the Evidence in the United States Supreme Court, some States followed the more liberal rule of the Cocksedge Case, while others followed the stricter rule of the Gibson Case. Virginia developed an unorthodox view which included deferring the Demurrer until both Parties had completed their evidence. This practice was adopted in West Virginia,34 where it was further distorted by allowing the Court, in certain situations, to determine the sufficiency of the Demurrer on the preponderance of the evidence.35 As thus modified, in Virginia and West Virginia, the Demurrer to the Evidence still flourished. In England, the place of its origin, by way of contrast, it has long since fallen into disuse.
(II) Nonsuit. —Another method of withdrawing a case from the consideration of a

33. Patteson v. Ford, 43 Va. 18, 28 (1845).


35. See article by Carlin, Anomalous Features of Demurrers to the Evidence in West Virginia, 27 W.Va. L.Q. 236, 245 (1921).

36. In general, on the Origin and Development of the Nonsuit, see:

Treatises: Scott, Fundamentals of Procedure in Actions at Law, c. III, Trial by Jury, 7, Compulsory Nonsuit, 100 (New York 1922); Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court In Historical Perspective, c. XIX, Trial by Jury, § 2, Withdrawing the Case from the Jury, 303—305 (New York 1952).

Articles: Demarest, Non-Suits, New and Old, 65 Albany Li 363 (1903); Head, The History and Development of Nonsuit, 27 W.Va.L.Q. 20 (1920); Heitz, Voluntary and Involuntary Nonsuits in Missouri, 5 Mo.L.Rev. 131 (1940).


Annotation: Right of Plaintiff to Take a Nonsuit
When the Defendant has Interposed a Counterclaim Entitling Him to Affirmative Relief, Where Right to Such Dismissal is Not Defined or Denied by Statute, 15 L.I.L.A.(N.S.) 341 (1008).

Jury was by use of the procedural device known as a Nonsuit. At Common Law, a Nonsuit was not granted without the plaintiff’s consent, and the Court had no power to order a Nonsuit where the plaintiff insisted on a submission of a case to the Jury. But now, in many jurisdictions, a Court may grant a Motion for a Nonsuit where the plaintiff’s evidence fails to make out a probable case.

Broadly speaking, a Nonsuit is a Judgment given against the plaintiff when he is unable to prove his case, or when he neglects or refuses to proceed to Trial. And Nonsuits are of two descriptions: 1. The Voluntary Non-suit, which is an abandonment of his cause by the plaintiff either before the Trial is commenced, or during the presentation of his case; and 2. The Involuntary Nonsuit, which is a Judgment ordered by the Court where the plaintiff fails to appear, or where he has given no evidence on which a Verdict in his favor can be rendered.

( ~ ) The Directed Verdict. —By far the most important method of withdrawing a

St In general, on the History and Development of the Directed Verdict, see:

Treatises: Scott, Fundamentals of Procedure in Actions at Law, c. III, Trial by Jury, § 6, Direction of Verdict, 98 (New York, 1922); Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court In Historical Perspective, c. XIX, Trial by Jury, 2, Withdrawing the Case From the Jury, 305—309 (New York 1952).


Comments: Criminal Procedure—Variance, 03 U.Pa. L.Rev. 804 (1915); The Right of a Jury in a Criminal Case to Render a Verdict Against the Law and the Evidence, 19 Mich.L.Rev. 325 (1920); Practice— Directed Verdicts in Criminal Cases—Judge and

TRIAL BY COURT OR BY JURY

Sec. 296

case from the Jury isthe Directed Verdict, which is, in effect, the Modern Substitute for the Old Demurrer to the Evidence. The reason for this situation was that the Demurrer to the Evidence was highly technical and difficult to draft, as it was required to contain a full written statement of all the facts shown in evidence by the opposition Party, together with every reasonable inference favorable to the Party who presented the evidence. Moreover, the use of the Demurrer was “an absolute, final and irrevocable withdrawal of the case from the Jury, which resulted necessarily in a Final Judgment on the merits for one party or the other.” ~ In consequence, one who had a meritorious Defense was reluctant to risk his whole case on one fling—the Demurrer to the Evidence.
The substituted motion for a Directed Verdict avoided the defects above set forth. Presented orally at the Trial, and grounded on the evidence as preserved by the Court

51~

Stenographer and in the memory of the Judge, such Motion, if sustained, results in a Verdict being directed by the Court, upon which is entered a Judgment on the merits; if overruled, the moving Party may still go on with the Trial, and seek a Verdict from the Jury.56

The Charge of the Court

(I) Instructions—Charging the Jury— The Jury, in finding a General Verdict for Plaintiff or Defendant, must necessarily apply the Law to the Facts found; e.g., to decide whether or not they show a legal liability. Accordingly, after the Arguments, the Judge Orally Charges the Jury, and lays down the Rules of Law which they are to apply to the Facts proved in rendering their Verdict for one or the other Party. The Judge will ordinarily state the Nature of the Action and Defense, the Points in Issue, what the plaintiff must prove to recover, and what rules will apply to the different states of fact which may possibly be established in the Opinion of the Jury.

(II) Restrictions on the Charge.—At Common Law the Judge was under slight restraint in guiding the Jury. He could sum up the evidence, observing where the main issue lay, stating what evidence had been given to support it, and giving them his opinion on the credibility of the Witnesses and the weight and effect of the evidence—e.g., that the defendant’s case was a very “thin” one; but under our practice in the United States such comment, even if correct, would be regarded as an invasion of the Province of the Jury, and as such Reversible Error. The Judge cannot single out and disparage a Particular Witness, or express his belief or disbelief of certain testimony, or even make a comparison between direct and circumstantial evidence. It is almost universally provided that Judges may not Charge Juries with respect to Matters of Fact, but may sum up the testimony and Declare the Law. The Judge is not to state abstract principles of Law, but should state the Law concretely as applied to different conceivable theories of the case, and instruct the Jury to find for the plaintiff or defendant according to one hypothesis or another. He may lay down the Rules by which the credibility of the Witnesses in general is to be judged, and where there is no Evidence or where a fact is admitted he may so state; but he cannot indicate his opinion as to what the Evidence proves, and the Jury is thus deprived of the benefit of his training and experience.


Sundorland, Directing a verdict for the Party Having the Burden of Proof, 11 Mich.L.flev. 198 (1912). 1895

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

(III) Requests to Charge—It is the duty of the Judge to Instruct the Jury, upon proper request, as to the correct decision, assuming any reasonable hypothesis in relation to the Facts in Evidence, and it is error for the Court to refuse any instruction which correctly Declares the Law, framed on a theory pertinent to the case. These requests
may be presented to the Judge before or during Argument, but should be made in such time as will give the Judge opportunity to examine and pass upon them without delaying the Trial. There seems to be no limitation on the number or length of the instructions which may be requested. Very few Lawyers are competent to write an elaborate Set of Instructions without committing errors which might conceivably mislead the Jury, and in the hurry of a Trial the ablest Judge may mistake the Law and misdirect the Jury; yet a Verdict for the plaintiff, obtained upon erroneous instructions, is practically worthless. This is one of the most serious abuses connected with Jury Trials. Exceptions for errors in giving, refusing, or modifying instructions should be taken before the retirement of the Jury, and should specifically point out the ones objected to. In some States exceptions may be entered at any time before Entry of Final Judgment.

The Deliberations of the Jury

THE Jury, after the Charge, unless the case be very clear, withdraws from the Ear to deliberate upon their Verdict. After the case was finally submitted to them, they could not separate, but were kept in charge of a Bailiff or Officer of the Court, duly sworn to attend them, but this is not always the case in Modern Practice. By the old English Practice they were to be kept without meat, drink, fire, or candle, unless by permission of the Judge, till they were unanimously agreed, a method of accelerating unanimity which is now given up. Formerly, if they did not agree in their Verdict before the Judges left town, they might be carried around the Circuit from town to town in a cart. Now, if it appears to the Court that they cannot agree, they are Discharged, and the case must be retried. The Court is not permitted to coerce the Jury into finding a Verdict, and should refrain from anything savoring of a threat as to how long the Jury will be kept together unless a Verdict is rendered. 42

The Verdict

(I) The General Verdict—Its Form and Tenor.—The Verdict, regardless of its character, must be responsive to the Issue submitted for Trial. At the Pleading Stage, in connection with the Development of the Common-Law Forms of Action, two inflexible rules of pleading grew up, one, that the Charge in the Declaration must correspond with the Charge in the Original Writ; two, that the Charge proved at the Trial must correspond with the Charge in the Declaration. It follows, therefore, that the Rule that the Issue found by the Verdict must correspond with the Issue submitted for Trial, is merely a continuation, at the Trial Stage, of the effort of the Common-Law Courts to maintain unity in their procedure. And, of course, the Judgment must correspond with the Issue as found by the Verdict. By these devices the procedure at Common Law, both in the Pleading and Trial Stages, was able to secure what, in English Composition, in relation to writing a paragraph, we refer to as unity and coherence.

The General Verdict is in general terms, that is, merely “for the plaintiff” or “for the defendant.” If it is returned for the plaintiff, it contains a Finding as to the Amount of Damages to which the Jury thinks him entitled, where Damages are claimed in the action.

At Common Law, the Rule of Unanimity, made it essential that the Jurors must be in complete agreement as to the Verdict. After the Verdict was rendered, it was Entered on the back of the Nisi Prius Record) and was called the Postea (afterwards), from the name in Latin with which the recital began.

(II) The Special Verdict—Its Form and Tenor. 42 —In a Special Verdict, permission

42 In general, on the History and Development of the Special Verdict, see:


Articles: Sunderland, Verdicts, General and Special, 29 Yale Law J. 253 (1919); Morgan, A Brief History of Special Verdicts and Special Interrogatories, 32 Yale L.J. 575 (1922); Coleman, Advantages of Special Verdict, 13 J.Am.Jud.Soc. 122 (1929); Staton, The Special
for which was given by Chapter 30 of the Statute of Westminster II (1285), the Jury states the Naked Facts as they find them, concluding, conditionally, that if upon the whole matter the Court should be of the opinion that the plaintiff has a cause of action, they then find for the plaintiff; if otherwise, then for the defendant. Such Special Verdict, rendered in lieu of a General Verdict, leaves it to the Court to Apply the Law to the Facts, and largely obviates the necessity for Instructions, whereas, under a General Verdict, the Jury is required to Apply the Law to Questions of Fact under the Instructions of the Court.

At Common Law, it was entirely optional with the Jury to find Generally or Specially. If they returned a Special Verdict, setting forth their Findings of Fact, it concluded as follows: “that they (the Jury) are ignorant in Point of Law on which side they ought upon these Facts to find the Issue; that, if upon the whole matter the Court shall be of the opinion that the issue is proved for the plaintiff, they find for the plaintiff accordingly, and Assess the Damages at (a stated sum); but if the Court is of an opposite opinion, then vice versa.” Such Special Findings,

Jury Verdicts upon Special Questions in Civil Cases, 2 FED. 176 (1943).


Annotations: Effect of Failure of Special Verdict or Special Finding to Include Findings of All Ultimate Facts or Issues, 76 ALE. 1137 (1032); Failure of One or More Jurors to Join in Answer to Special Interrogatory or Special Verdict as Affecting Verdict, 155 ALE. –SG (1945)

43 Stat. of Westminster II, 13 114w. i, i statutes at large, 205 (1285).

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

called a Special Verdict, held the Jury to the line of duty, require orderly thought, and facilitate the granting of New Trials or adequate Appellate Review on separate and specific points. The situation in respect to the Special Verdict is like that when the Trial is by the Court, in which case the Judge is not permitted to make a General Finding of Fact and Law, as in a General Verdict, without separate findings on the particular issues raised.

Under Modern Statutory Provisions, however, Special Questions, stating Each Point Separately, may be framed and submitted by the Court on request of Counsel, which the Jury must answer before their discharge, so that the true legal significance of Ascertained Facts may be declared by the Court. It is thus possible to see how the Facts are determined, whether the Law is properly applied, and how the Special Findings harmonize with the General Conclusion.

(111) The Effect of a Variance Between the Charge and the Proof.—As observed above, the Verdict must be responsive to the Issue as made by the Pleadings and as submitted for Trial. It was, therefore, essential for the Party upon whom rested the Burden of Proof to establish by Adequate Proof the Substance of the Issue in his favor. Of course, if there was a Total Failure of Proof, it became the duty of the Jury to Find the Issue in favor of the opposite party. When, however, there was a discrepancy between what the plaintiff alleged in his Declaration and what he proved at the Trial, the discrepancy was called a Variance. Thus, if A alleged that B took his black horse, to which B pleaded Not Guilty, and at the Trial A offered evidence that B took his white horse, with a black front forefoot, B could Move for a Nonsuit on the ground of a Variance. Such a Variance at Common Law was as fatal to the party bearing the Burden of Proof as if there were a Total Failure of Evidence, as the Jury is bound to find against him upon such discrepancy between the Issue and the Proof.
(W) *The Rule Nisi.*—After a Verdict at the Nisi Prius Trial, the Party against whom the Verdict has been rendered, may obtain a “Rule Nisi,” as, for example, to set aside the Verdict and Enter a Nonsuit, which, in effect, is an Order by the Court to the Adverse Party to show cause why such relief should not be granted. Upon Motion and Argument of the question, if the Court grants the relief requested, it makes (as it is said) the Rule Absolute. If, however, the Court denies the Motion, it (as it is said) Discharges the Rule, which means that the party who obtained the Rule Nisi should obtain nothing.

(V) *A Special Case, or Reservation of a Point*—Whether a Jury shall return a General or Special Verdict is a matter entirely in its own option. The party objecting in Point of Law cannot therefore insist on a Special Verdict, hence he may be compelled to Demur to the Evidence, if he desires to make the objection a Matter of Record, without which no Review may be had on Writ of Error. If, however, his object be merely to obtain a decision in the Court *in bane* at Westminster, he need neither Demur to the Evidence, nor take a Special Verdict, but merely take a General Verdict, subject, as it is said, to a Special Case.

A Special Case is a written statement of all the Facts proved at the Trial, drawn up for the opinion of the Court *in bane*. It is usually drawn up by the Counsel and Attorneys on either side, under the direction of the Judge at *nisi prius*. The Party for whom the General Verdict is given, is not entitled to Judgment until the Court *in bane* has decided the Special Case. According to the result of that decision, the Verdict is ultimately entered for him or his adversary.

Sec. 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302.

**CHAPTER 26**

**AIDER AND AMENDMENT**

**PLEADING OVER WITHOUT DEMURRER**

A party may in many Cases Plead Over Without Demurring, and, Notwithstanding such Pleading, afterwards avail himself of an insufficiency in the Pleading of his Adversary. Rut there are certain exceptions to this rule.

---

1. In general, on the Origin, History and Development of the subjects of Aider, Amenduent and the Statutes of Jeofails, see:


**EXCEPTIONS:** When faults in Pleading are
(I) Pleading Over.

(I) Pleading Over.

(II) Verdict.

(III) The curative effect of Statutes as to Matters of Form.

WHILE, as we have seen, it is the effect of a Demurrer to admit the truth of all Matters

Articles: Clark & tenon, Amendment and Aider of Pleadings, 12 Minn.L.Ecv. 97 (1028); Scott, The Progress of the Law, 1018—1919, Civil Procedure—Amendment of Pleadings, 33 Harv.L.Rev. 212 (1919).

Comments: Statute of Limitations—Amendment of Declaration, 11 Harv.L.Rev. 345 (1898); Statute of Limitations—Amendment of Declaration After Statutory Period, 15 Harv.L.Rev. 587 (1902); Civil Procedure and Football—Defeating a Valid Claim by Pleading and then Demurring. While the Statute of Limitations Runs, 4 Ill.L.Rev. 344 (1909); Pleading—Amendment After Limitation Period. 23 Han’ L.Rev. 570 (1910); Pleading—Amendment of Declaration After Statute has Run—Whether an Amendment from Common Law Action to Statutory Action on the Same Facts Is Permissible, 30 Harv. L.Rev. 294 (1916); Pleading—Federal Employers’ Liability Act—Limitations—Defenses, 31 Ilnn.L.Rev. 59 (1918); Limitation of Action—Pleading—Amendments Restating Cause of Action, 5 Iowa L.Bull. 275 (1920); Pleading—Limitatioa of Action—Amendments Stating New Cause of Action, 29 Yale L.J. 685 (1920); Amendment of Plaintiff’s Pleading to Assert Claim Against Third-Party Defendant, 3 Fed.Rules Serv. 811 (1942); Pleading—Amendments Changing the Cause of Action—Limitations of Action—New Statute Proposed, 25 N.C.L.ev. 7~ (1940); Process—Misnomer In Summons—Aide or Aiders, 48 Mich.L.Rev. 719 (1950).

Amendments.

Status of Aider and Amendment—Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts

553

554

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Ch. 26

of Fact sufficiently Plead on the other side, it cannot be said, e converso, that it is the effect of a Pleading to admit the sufficiency in Law of the Facts adversely alleged. On the contrary, it has been seen that, upon a Demurrer arising at a later Stage of the Pleading, the Court will retrospectively consider the sufficiency in Law of Matters to which an answer in Fact has been given. And it has also been shown that, even after an Issue of Fact and Verdict thereon, the Court is bound to give Judgment on the whole record, based upon an examination of the legal sufficiency of all Allegations, throughout the whole series of the Pleadings. It follows, therefore, that advantage may be often taken by either party of a legal insufficiency in the Pleading of the other side, either by Motion in Arrest of Judgment, Motion for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto, or Writ of Error, according to the circumstances of the Case, although he has answered instead of Demurring, provided the Case is not one within the exceptions above noted, and which will now be explained; that is, provided the fault is not cured by the subsequent Pleading, or cured or Aided by Verdict, or by a Statute requiring the objection to be raised at a particular Stage of the Proceeding.

AIDER BY PLEADING OVER:

WITHOUT VERDICT

298. If the party wishes to Plead, instead of Demurring, and still preserve his right of objection to a defective adverse Pleading, he must so frame his own Pleading as to avoid waiver of such defects by the formation of a complete issue. A defect in Pleading is Aided if the adverse party Plead Over to or answer the defective Pleading in such a manner that an informality or omission therein is supplied or rendered formal or intelligible. A defect of this character may be thus supplied either:

(I) Expressly, or

(II) By Implication.

Aider Defined

ASSUMING that a Pleading is either formally or substantially defective, any subsequent Act in the course of the litigation which supplies, waives or otherwise rectifies the error in the Pleading, whether it be one of Commission or omission, is an Aider. Thus, for example, to maintain an Action of Trover the plaintiff must allege Possession or Right to Immediate Possession, Wrongful Act of Conversion and Damages. Suppose, however, he omits the Allegation as to Possession or Right to Immediate Possession. If, at the next succeeding Stage of Pleading, the defendant, by his Plea, supplies the missing Allegation of Possession or Right to Immediate
Possession, the defect in the plaintiff’s Declaration is said to be Aided or cured.

The Modes of Aider were five in number, three of which operated in advance of any Verdict and independent thereof, whereas two came into play after Verdict and only by reason of the Verdict. For purpose of discussion, therefore, we may say that we have two types of Aider, to wit, Aider without Verdict and Aider by Verdict.

**Aider Without Verdict—By Subsequent Pleading**

PRIOR to a Verdict and independent of a Verdict, defects in a Pleading may be cured in one or more of three possible ways, the Mode of Aider being dependent upon the character of the defect.

(I) **By Pleading Over**—As we have seen, after the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705), all Defects in Form not made the subject of a Special Demurrer were Aided. If the Adverse Party failed to Demur at all or entered a General Demurrer, or Pleaded over Matter of Fact, he automatically waived the Formal Defect in the Pleading and thereafter could not take advantage of such insufficiency upon any Demurrer at any Subsequent Stage of the Pleadings, and obviously not after Verdict. In the *Anon ymzsus* case, Holt, Chief Justice, in referring to Objections in Form, said that “if a man Pleads Over, he shall never take advantage of any slip committed in the Pleading of the other side, which he could not take advantage of upon a General Demurrer.”

(II) **By Express Averment**.—Where a Substantive Allegation of Fact is Omitted from a Declaration or Other Pleading, and in the Next Succeeding Stage in Pleading is supplied by the Adverse Party, such subsequent statement operates to cure the Defect in the Original Pleading. Thus, in the famous case of *Brooke v. Brooke*, A brought Trespass for taking a hook, but failed to allege possession. B Pleaded that while going over A’s land, over which he had a right of way, he met A and took the hook out of his hands. On Motion in Arrest of Judgment, the Court held that the defendant by his Special Plea had cured the Declaration by supplying the Missing Allegation of Possession. And so, in *La-

* See, also, Bauman v. Bean, 57 Mich. 1, 23 NW. 451 (1885).

And that Defects not subject to General Demurrer are cured by Pleading Over, see 31 Cyc, 7Th, a 75.


6. 1 SM. 154, 82 Eng.Eep. 1044 (1064). See, also,

   English: Fletcher v. Pogson, 3 Barn. & 0. 192, 107 *Bng.Rep. 705* (1524); Illinois; Wallace y, Curtiss, 36 Ill. 156 (1884).

Pleading the General Issue waives Defects in the Writ or a Variance between the Writ and Declaration. Mississippi: Barrow v. Burbridge, 41 Miss. 622 (1568); North Carolina: Mills v. carpenter, 32 N.e. 298 (1849); Federal: M’Kenna v. Fisk, 1 flow. 241, 11 LE4. 117 (1845).

But although waiving Averments otherwise necessary, it does not dispense with Proof of Material Allegations. Ohio & M. B. B. Co. v. Brown, 23 In. 93 (1859).

*fayette Jn$. Go. v. French*, a Declaration which failed to affirmatively show the Jurisdiction of the Court, was cured by a Replication which contained the necessary Averments. Likewise, a Defective Plea may be cured by the required Allegation in the Replication.
(III) By implied admission, An Answering Pleading may actually supply a defect or omission by express allegation of the fact which should have been stated, or it may contain an implied admission, correcting the informality by waiving it. Thus, where the plaintiff sues as a corporation, alleging due incorporation according to the laws of the state wherein it was organized, and the defendant pleads to the merits without raising any question as to the authority of the plaintiff to sue, the defendant’s plea implies that the plaintiff is entitled to sue in the capacity of a corporation, and any imperfection in the plaintiff’s authority will, in some states at least, be deemed to be waived. And likewise where a plaintiff purports to sue as a personal representative, that is, as an administrator or executor. And a general allegation of a “good and valuable consideration” in the contract field, or that the plaintiff was injured “by the negligent operation of the defendant’s engine,” in the tort field, may be waived by a general demurrer, or taken advantage of upon a special demurrer; but if the adverse party fails to demur for insufficiency, or to take issue upon an ill-pleaded allegation, and pleads to other facts stated in the pleading, the ill-pleaded fact will stand admitted by implication as a result of ignoring it and taking issue upon a collateral matter. But no such implied admission flows.

United States v. Morris, 10 Wheat. 246, 286, 6 L.Ed. 314. 323 (1825).

A ground of general demurrer can be waived by pleading to the merits, but not suet, substantial defects as would render it insufficient to sustain a judgment. Chicago & A. B. Co. v. Clause, 173 Ill. 100, 50 N.E. 680 (1898).

Aider by verdict

At common law, and independent of any statutory provision, after verdict, it shall

299. Illinois: Cross v. City of Chicago, 195 Ill. App. 86, 89 (1915); New Hampshire: Roberts v. Dame, 11 N.H. 226 (1840); New York: White v. Dehavan, 21 Wend. (N.Y.) 26 (1839). An express denial of a material fact, omitted from the declaration or other pleading, will by the weight of authority cure such omission. Illinois: Wallace v. Curtiss, 36 Ill. 156 (1864); Tennessee: Bruce v. Beall, 100 Tenn. 573, 47 S.W. 204 (1898); 31 Cyc. 714—716.


be intended that Due Proof was made at the Trial of any Fact which, though Ill-pleaded, was so far a part of the Issue as made by the Pleadings that the Verdict rendered could not have been found without such Evidence of the Facts Insufficiently Alleged as is necessary to establish completely the validity of their existence; and by virtue of the presumption thus raised, the Verdict operates to cure or Aid the Defective Allegation so that any Deficiency therein cannot be seized upon to Arrest the Judgment.

A VERDICT is rendered by a Jury, Impaneled and sworn for the Trial of a Cause, upon which Evidence is presented by Both Parties, and it is reported to the Court, upon Issues duly submitted to the Jury upon the Trial. As a result of the Trial, on the basis of Evidence presented, the ease as presented by the Pleadings may be supplemented. Thus, the Evidence may supply matters not previously disclosed, make clear Facts which were left in doubt by the Allegations in the Pleadings, and clarify other Issues not clearly presented in the Pre-Trial Proceedings. Under such circumstances certain Deficiencies in the Pleadings may be Aided by a Verdict, operating by either one of Two Methods, which are diverse in character. In one situation the remedial effect of the Verdict is the result of the Common Law Principle of Intendment After Verdict; in the other the Aider by Verdict flows directly from the effect of a Series of Statutes, known as the Statutes of Jeofails. Aider by the Common Law Principle of Intendment after Verdict, and Aider by virtue of the Statutes of Jeofails, constitute the Fourth and Fifth Modes of Aider, which will now be considered in their respective order,

**Aider by the Common Law Principle of Intendment After Verdict**

WHERE, iii setting forth a Cause of Action or a Defense, as the case may be, a Pleader fails to allege a Fact sufficiently or to adequately state a right, no presumption arises to validate his Fact or to complete his right.

Sec. 299

**AIDER AND AMENDMENT**

557

In fact, as the Pleader is presumed to tell his side of the controversy in the light most favorable to himself, the presumption is that any failure to sufficiently state what is essential to make out his case is to be attributed to the circumstance that the Omitted Facts did not exist. However, in the case of Hitchin v. Stevens,\(^\text{15}\) where the purchaser of a reversion brought an Action of Debt for rent, but alleged no attornment, the defendant pleaded *Nil Debet*, and there was a Verdict for the plaintiff, whereupon the defendant Moved in Arrest of Judgment on the ground that the plaintiff had insufficiently set forth his title to the rent, having failed to allege an attornment, the Court held that in any case where anything is Omitted in a Declaration, even though it be Matter of Substance,\(^\text{16}\) if it be such as, without proving it at the Trial, the Court could not have had a Verdict, and there be a Verdict for the plaintiff, such Omission shall not Arrest the Judgment. Accordingly, Judgment was Entered for the plaintiff. The Verdict thus placed the case in a different light; the Fact of Title having been imperfectly alleged, because of

\(^{15}\) 2 Show.K.B. 233, 89 Eng.Rop. 909 (1682).

\(^{16}\) But compare Da costa v. Clarke, 2 B. & P. 257,

126 Eng.Rep. 1265 (1500), where the court held that an imperfect Averment of a Material Fact was not Aided by Verdict in favor of the pleader in such a case, before the Rule can operate, there must be a sufficient Averment to serve as a peg to hang the omitted matter on, [See opinion of Buluer, J., in Spiers v. Parker, 1 T.R. 141, 99 Eng.Rep. 1019 (1786)]\(^\text{1}\), or, stated otherwise, there must be at least a partial statement of a substantive fact before any presumption will arise that the circumstances requisite to a complete statement were in reality proved at the Trial.


And for an exhaustive discussion of this topic, with citation of many authorities, see State v. Freeman, 63 Vt. 496, 22 AU. 621 (1891).

failure to show attornment, was nevertheless put in Issue so that its truth had to be tried, and on the basis of the evidence as presented at the Trial, the Fact of Title was found in favor of the plaintiff. From this flowed a presumption that at the Trial the plaintiff Proved the Allegations, though not correctly stated, which were essential to make out the Ultimate Fact of Title.

To the Common Law Principle of Intendment After Verdict there were two limitations:

(I) Where There is no Peg to Hang the Omitted Matter On,—Where the Defective Pleading sought to be
Aided by Verdict under the Principle of Intendment contains no Averment at all, imperfect or otherwise, of the Ultimate Fact required to establish the Pleader’s Case, no presumption can arise that the Fact was proved, and it follows logically that the Verdict cannot Aid the Complete Omission. The same idea has frequently been expressed in the statement that a Verdict will cure a Defective Statement of a Good Title, but not the Statement of a Defective Title; in other words, as Professor Keigwin observed: “The Verdict will supplement an Incomplete Pleading, but will not supply a Total Want of Averment.” Although one who alleges an imperfect case is entitled to a Verdict if he proves the Facts as alleged, obtaining a Verdict affords no presumption that he has proved what he has failed to allege at least by implication, or to some extent by suggestion. Thus, in the case of Buxendin v. Sharp where the plaintiff alleged that the defendant kept a bull that ran at and injured the plaintiff, but failed to allege that the plaintiff had knowledge of the bull’s dangerous propensities, the Defect was held not Aided after Verdict, as the Action would not lie unless the master knew of this quality, and there could be no Intendment that it was Proved at the Trial, as the plaintiff was under no obligation to prove more than he alleged. (I)

(I) Where There is a Peg to Hang Omitted Matter on, but the Matter Inadequately Alleged is not Plead in such a way as to Become a Part of the Issue.—Where the Ill-pleaded Fact is not Traversed, or otherwise Plead in such a way as to become a part of the Issue actually produced by the Pleadings, such Fact, not being in Issue, need not be Proved at the Trial. Under such circumstances the Verdict raises no presumption that the Ill-pleaded Fact was made effective by the evidence produced at the Trial. For example, if in a Declaration in Special Assumpsit, the Consideration is Defectively Alleged, and the defendant Plead the Statute of Limitations, since No Issue is taken on the Fact of Consideration, no Proof is required, and hence a Verdict for the plaintiff does not Aid the Defective Statement of the Consideration on the theory that the evidence at the Trial supplied any Omitted Element. Cases of this character therefore do not fall within the scope of the Common Law Principle of Intendment after Verdict. It may be, however, that such cases may fall within the purview of that series of Remedial Enactments known as the Statutes of Jeofails.

THE STATUTES OF JEOFAILS

300. As a result of the English Statutes of Jeofails, beginning in 1340 and extending down to Modern Times, there has been a gradual liberalization of the earlier strict policy against permitting Free Amendments of Pleadings, A. R. Co. v. Clausen, 173 Ill. 100, 50 N.E. 680 (1898).


fter the appearance of Written Pleadings, and after the proceedings in any given case were Entered on Record, at Common Law, or prior to the grant of Statutory Authority, the Courts would permit no further Amendments. This resulted in many litigants losing their cases when they were clearly entitled to win as a matter of substance. They were accordingly left without remedy. To meet this situation Parliament gradually began to provide a piecemeal remedy in a series of Enactments now known as the Statutes of Jeofails. Most of the ensuing Statutes, enacted between the years 1340 and 1705, applied to Errors which called for correction after Trial, but two of them, the Statute of Elizabeth (1585) and the Statute of Anne (1705), applied to the Record before Verdict.

According to Plucknett, efforts to improve the System of Special Pleading, which tended to become more rigid as time went on, by the Enactment of Statutes of Jeofails, began in the early Fourteenth Century. And Professor Samuel Tyler, in his Preface to Ste— phen, stated: “No less than Tsvelve Statutes, beginning in the Reign of Edward III [1327-4377], and coming down to that of George I [1714—1727], had been passed by Parliament before
we separated from England, to remedy technical inconveniences.”

AMENDMENTS

30L A party will generally be allowed to correct inaccuracies or supply omissions in his pleadings by amendment at any time before the jury have retired, if he has not been guilty of ladies in applying for leave to amend, and if the amendment does not change the form of action, or introduce a new cause of action or ground of defense, or prejudice the adverse party.


THE court will generally allow an amendment to correct mistakes in the names of the parties, or to strike out parties improperly joined, or in parties improperly omitted, or who have become necessary parties since commencement of the suit, or to correct the pleading as to the capacity in which a party sues or is sued. And an amendment is frequently allowed in order to conform the pleadings to the proof that has been offered, so as to avoid a variance, where no prejudice to the opposite party can result.

It is always safer to apply for leave to amend before issue joined, or at least before the trial has commenced, for the court may refuse to allow an amendment after that time. A party cannot insist upon a right to amend if he has been guilty of laches. The court may, however, in the exercise of its discretion, allow amendments at any time before the jury have retired, if it properly protects the other party, and some amendments, as amendments to conform to proof, may be allowed after verdict, and even after judgment.

24. Alabama: Steed v. McIntyre, 68 Ala. 407 (1880);
25. Georgia: Nine v. Rutherford, 67 Ga. 606 (1881);
26. Michigan: Barker v. Justice, 41 Miss. 240 (1866);
   Wisconsin: Hill v. Chipman, 59 Wis. 211, 18 N.W. 160 (1884).
27. Massachusetts: Dawes v. Gooch, 8 Mass. 488 (1812);
   New York: Suetkett v. Thompson, 2 Johns. (N.Y.) 206 (1807);
   Ohio: Fowlie v. Rayberg, 4 Ohio 45 (1829);

Amendments to Civil-ge the Form of Action UNDER the common law a plaintiff was not permitted to amend his declaration if it operated to change the form of the action, as from assumpsit to covenant, or from case to trespass. There was a sensible reason for such a holding. The rule was that the charge in the declaration had to conform to the charge in the original writ as issued out of chancery. If there was a variance between the two, it was ground for a plea in abatement. Thus, if a sued out an original writ in debt, his declaration was but an amplification of the charge of debt as stated in the original writ. Nor could such a defect be waived by agreement of the parties. Even where an amendment would otherwise be permissible, it should not be allowed if it would result in prejudice to the ad-


In some states the rule is changed by statute, or is not recognized. See Redstrake v. Cumberland Slut. Fire Ins. Co., 44 Nl. 294 (1882), where an amendment was allowed, changing the form of action from assumpsit to covenant: Connecticut: North v. Nichols, 39 Conn. 355 (1872); Delaware: Philadelphia, B. & W. R. Co. v. Gatta, 4 Boyce (Dcl.) 38, 85 A. 721 (1916); New ianipsl−ire: Morse v. Whitcher, 64 N1. 591, 15 A. 207 (1888).
An Amendment changing the legal theory or basis of the claim is sometimes held to set up a New Cause of Action. Allen v. Tuscarora Val. It. Co., 229 Pa. 97, 78 A. 34 (1910).

On the effect of a Departure from Law to Law, see Article by Scott, The Progress of the Law, 1918— 1019, Civil Procedure. Ajuel/dlent of l’kadings, 33 Harv.L.Rev. 236, at 23 (1910); Notes: Pleading—Amendment—Federal Employers’ Liability Act—Limitations—Defenses, 3 Minn.L.Rev. 59 (1918); Pleading—Amendment—Departure from Law to Law, a Minn.L.Rev. 132 (1919).


See. 301

AIDER AND AMENDMENT

559

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Verse Party. And always, when it is allowed, the Court may and should impose such terms as will fully protect the Adverse Party, such as payment of Costs of the Application, and, in some cases, Costs of the Whole Suit up to the time of the Amendment.

The Situation Under Modern Law as to Amendment Changing the Form of Action—

IN England, as earlier observed, as long as the Original Writ operated, an Amendment changing the Form of Action was fatal. But with the abolition of the Original Writ in 1833, Amendments were permitted in the discretion of the Court. In New Hampshire, in the case of Stebbins v. Lancashire Ins. Co., the Court followed this liberal English view, but in the Several States of the United States, despite the fact that Original Writs were not used, Amendments changing the Form of Action have been frequently disallowed.

With the abolition of the Forms of Action after 1848, all reasons for observing the Rule prohibiting Amendments changing the Form of Action ceased to exist, and it would seem that the Code States might have followed the liberal view in permitting amendments. But according to Professor Scott, “this rule was replaced by one which is even worse.” It was held that an Amendment could not be allowed if it changed the Cause of Action. “This is in many ways a more sweeping limitation upon the power of the Court than the Common-Law Rule.” Fortunately, this departure from the ways of Good Pleading was met by Statutory Repudiation in Several States. In some States, under a liberal policy of Amendment, Amendments were permitted by which an Action at Law could be changed into a Suit in Equity, or a Suit in Equity into an Action at Law. This was provided for in Wisconsin under its Code. As Winslow, J. said, in Jilek v. Zahi? in referring to the purpose of the Wisconsin Statute: “The beneficent effect of this provision can hardly be overestimated. It means that it will no longer be necessary to kick the plaintiff out the back door of the Courtroom (with Costs) in order that he may re-enter by the front door in a different garb.”

Amendment and the Statute of Limitations IF an Amendment introduces into the Declaration a New and Different Cause of Action from the One Originally Stated, it is subject to a Plea of the Statute of Limitations, if the Statutory Period had run against the claim. And this is true although the Statute had not run at the time the Original Action began. But obviously Amendments should be allowed which do not introduce a New Cause of Action, but
where the Allegations merely amplify or vary the claim set up in the Original Count, and this is true even where Essential Elements are added.\footnote{10}

The question of the running of the Statute of Limitations and the right to Amend the Declaration thereafter should never turn upon the question whether the Declaration states a Good Cause of Action. The correct test should be whether the Commencement of the Action constituted fair notice of the assertion of that particular claim.

37. See N. J. Laws, 1912, c. 231; Wis. Stats. § 283Gb (Laws 1915, c. 219, ~ 2).
38. Wis. Stats. 283Gb (Laws 1915, c. 219, ~ 2).
39. 162 Wig. 157, 101, 155 N.W. 808, 810 (1916).
40. Carlin v. City of Chicago, 262 Ill. 564, 104 N.E. 905 (1915); Foster v. St. Luke’s Hospital, 191 Ill. 94, 60 N.E. 803 (1901).

AIDER AND AMENDMENT

561

But the Law in Illinois has been otherwise. The Statute of Limitations continued to run in spite of a Defective Declaration. In the case of Walters v. City of Ottawa,\footnote{41} an Action was brought against the City for personal injuries due to a defective sidewalk, in which the Declaration failed to state that Formal Notice had been given as required by Statute. The City Pleaded the General Issue, but later withdrew this Plea and filed a Demurrer, which was sustained. Thereupon the plaintiff Amended her Declaration by adding to each Count Averments showing the giving of the Notice in due season. Now, the City again Pleaded the General Issue and added a Plea of the One-Year Statute of Limitations. A Verdict of $1,000 was rendered against the City, but on Review by the Supreme Court, the Judgment which had been Entered was Reversed, the Court holding that an Amendment to the Declaration supplying such Essential Averments more than a year after the injury was open to a Plea of the Statute of Limitations.\footnote{42}

By the weight of authority, to supply one of the Essential Elements of a Cause of Action, does not constitute a New and Separate Cause of Action. And Amendment after the Limitation Period is permissible, although the Declaration was Demurrable, where it perfects the Same Cause of Action Originally Pleased. That is the only sort of Amendment that is really important.\footnote{43}

STATUS OF AIDER AND AMENDMENT— UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

302. Aider and Amendment, in both the State and Federal Courts, is now largely a matter of statutory regulation. In General, the Statutes provide for Amendments Without the Leave of the Court, or as a Matter of Course, and for Amendments With the Leave of the Court.

UNDER Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court, Aider and Amendment, in both the State and Federal
Courts, is now largely a matter of Statutory Regulation. The Statutes, in general, provide for Amend-

43. Neubecic v. Lynch, 37 App.D.C. 576 (1911). See, also, cases collected in 33 L.R.A.(N.S.) 196 (1911);

And, see further, Notes: Pleading—Amendment of Declaration After Statute Has Been—Whether al Amendment from Common Law Action to Statutory Action on the Same Facts is Permissible, 30 I. Harv. L.Rev. 294 (1917); Pleading—Limitation of Actions—Amendments Stating New Cause of Action, 29 Yale L.J. 685 (1920); Limitation of Action—Pleading—Amendments Ile-Stating Cause of Action, 5 Iowa Law Bull. 275 (1920).


562 LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Amendments With or Without Leave of the Court

UNDER the Code Provisions, as exemplified by Rule 3025(a) of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, a Pleading, without Leave of the Court, may once be Amended by the Party as “of course,” within the time fixed in the Rule. But, under a number of Codes, if it appears that the Amendment was for the purpose of delay and that the Adverse Party will be prejudiced, the Amended Pleadings may be stricken out, on such Terms as the Court may deem just. And Some State Statutes have provided in effect that the Court may permit Amendment of Any Pleading by adding or striking out the irmin of Any Party, or by correcting a Mistake in any other respect; or, provided the Amendment does not substantially change the Claim or Defense, by Conforming the Pleading to the Facts proved.

Federal Rule 15(b) provides that when Issues not raised by the Pleadings are tried by express or imputed consent of the Parties, they shall be treated in all respects as if they had been raised in the Pleadings. Moreover, even After Judgment, a Party may upon Motion Amend his Pleadings to Conform to the Evidence, and failure to so Amend does not affect the result of the Trial of these Issues. And where there is an Offer of Evidence which is objected to at trial on the ground that it is not within the Scope of the Issues as Made by the Pleadings, the Court may allow the Pleadings to be Amended where the Merits of the Action will be subserved and the Objecting Party fails to satisfy the Court that the admission of such evidence would prejudice him.

Certain States attempted to Regulate the Form of Amendments. Oregon, for example required an Amended Pleading to be complete in itself, aside from the Original Pleading; some States required Motions to be in writing and to specifically set forth the words sought to be inserted or stricken out; and in at least one State Amendment was not permitted to be made by erasure or interlinear action, a separate paper being required to be filed, and when so filed, to constitute with the Original but a Single Pleading. In the absence of statutory requirement, the Form of an Amendment lies within the discretion of the Court. In Some States it was required that the Application for Amendment be accompanied by Affidavit stating the reasons therefor.
Amendments Changing the Cause of Action

As we have seen in the earlier discussion of this subject as it stood at Common Law, with the abolition of the Original Writ in England in 1833 and the Forms of Action in New York in 1843, the reasons for not permitting an Amendment changing the Form of Action ceased to operate.

In the Code States where the Statute Regulating Amendment does not in specific terms restrict the power, it would appear that such unrestricted power should extend far enough to permit an Amendment changing the Cause of Action. The situation is, however, more restrictive where under the Statute a Court has power to Conform the Plead-

---


49. Oregon Comp.Laws Ann., 1940, 1—b00.


-7. Ark.Pig.Stat., Pope, § 1463 (193V, Is an example

---

of such a Statute.

ings to the Proof only “when the Amendment does not change substantially the Claim or Defense.”

In the Federal Courts, first, a liberal view as to Amendments was taken.52 Second, due to the case of Union P. 1?, Co. v. ~yTer;~ in which an employee of a railroad was not permitted to shift his claim for Damages from the Common Law to a Kansas Statute, a stricter view was assumed, the Court indicating that a “Departure from Law to Law” was not permissible. Third, in the more recent case of Missouri, K. c~ T.

H. Co. v. Wulf,~ the trend again turned in the direction of liberality, where a Claim Under a Kansas Statute was, as a result of Amendment, converted to a Suit under the Federal Employers’ Liability Act. Instead of finding a New Cause of Action, the Court said the change was merely in Form and Not in Substance. In the process of development, the Federal Courts made clear that they had abandoned the restrictive “Law to Law” rule, and when the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure were adopted, they contained no such restriction.~ It may be said, therefore, that the earlier policy of restricting the Power of Amendment has lost favor, with the Courts generally accepting the broader concept of the Cause of Action as

 consisting of a Group of Operative Facts. The “Law to Law” test was abandoned in New York as early as 1872,~ and Other States have followed her leadership.57 New York

52. Chapman v. Barney, 129 U.S. 677, 9 S.Ct. 428,

32 L.Ed. 800 (1889).


54. 226 U.S. 570, 33 S.Ct. 135, 57 LEd. 855 (1013).

55. Clark, Handbook of the Law of Code Pleading,

 e. 12, Amendment and Aider of l’leadings, § 110,

Amendments Changing the Cause of Action, 715,


57 Ohio St. 271, 48 N.E. 1093 (1897) Oregon: Vol.

lock v. Lumbermaas Nat. Bank of Portland, 86 Or.

563

also led in establishing a liberal rule as to Amendments by a defendant, the Court in Bowman v. DePeyster, referring to the greater liberality afforded to Amendments by a defendant at Common Law, declaring:

“The reason for this distinction was, that the plaintiff, if he had Another Cause of Action, could sue upon it afterward; while a defendant had to avail himself of his Defense in the Action brought against him, or he might lose
the benefit of it.”

**Arwindments and the Statute of Limitations**

**SOME** of the State Courts take the view that where an Amendment to the Complaint sets up a New Cause of Action, and in the meantime the Statute of Limitations has run against such Action, the Action is Barred as the Amendment does not relate back. Other State Courts take the view that such an Amendment is merely an Amplification of the Same Action, provided it refers to the same Group of Operative Facts, broad enough in scope to support the New Cause of Action. Changes in legal theory should be ignored in determining the Issue. Under the Federal Rules, unless there has been a material change in the Operative Facts, an Amendment should be allowed.


58. 2 Daly (N.Y.) 203, 208 (1807).


60. Federal Rule of Civil Procedure 15(c), Title 28, U.S.C.A., reads in part as follows: ‘Whenever the claim or defense asserted In the amended pleading arose out of the conduct, transaction, or occurrence set forth or attempted to be set forth in the original plouding, the amendment relates back to the date of the original pleading.’

61. For a detailed statement comic-era lug Ap.end.nouts and the Statute of Limitations, see Clark, iLiad-

Sec. 302 AIDER ANd AMENDMENT

Ch. 26

:e would

Ilate the ?xample, be corn U Plead to be in te words ~ and ~/as tot r interJired to tte with In the e Form cretion ?quired be ac~eason~

Action

ussion 1 Law, Irit in ion in t perForm

Reguterms

that dfar Oging how-Stat-leadhandnendPro

564

LITIGATING Tilt CONTROVERSY

Ch.

2

6

Aider

THE Codes have not made great changes in the Common-Law Doctrine of Aider in its Various Forms, as previously discussed. Thus, the principle enunciated in *Birooke v. Broolce*, the famous hook Case, that a Defect in the Plaintiff’s Declaration may be cured or supplied by a Subsequent Plea, applied under the Codes,~ although it has been qualified in Some States by the Rule that a Defect cannot be supplied by a Mere Denial.~
When we come to Aider by Verdict, it may be said that for most part the Common-Law Rules still prevail. Thus, the famous, but not very enlightening Rule that a Defectively Alleged Cause of Action may be cured by Aider, but not the Statement of a Defective Cause of Action, still prevails. In general, however, mere Defects in Form are waived by a failure to Move or Demur. Defects of a more serious character may be waived if not raised until after Verdict or Judgment. But, as Judge Clark observes, “if a System of Written Pleadings is to be enforced, there will necessarily remain a Class of Cases where the Court will feel that the Pleadings have not served their purpose of bringing out the Cause of Action even in a general fashion.”


Variance

The situation where there is a Variance between the Allegations in the Complaint and the Proof at the Trial, is now covered in the Codes by a Statutory Provision, of which an example is Rule 3025(c) of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, which provides: “The Court may permit Pleadings to be Amended before or after Judgment to Conform them to the Evidence, upon such terms as may be just including the granting of costs and continuances.”

Defective Pleadings Aided by Statute

The related Section 2001 of the New York Civil Practice Law and Rules, covering Mistakes, Omissions, Defects and Irregularities in Pleading, provides: “At Any Stage of an Action, the Court may permit a Mistake, Omission, Defect or Irregularity to be corrected, upon such terms as may be just, or, if a substantial right of a party is not prejudiced, the Mistake, Omission, Defect or Irregularity shall be disregarded.”

Supplemental Pleadings

SUPPLEMENTAL Pleadings, as provided for in Statutory Provisions, are usually restricted to a Statement of Facts which occurred after the Filing of the Original Pleading by the Party. In this sense such Pleadings, strictly speaking, are not Amendments. But they may well fall within this class under those Code Provisions which permit Supplemental Pleadings to set forth Facts which existed, but of which the Pleader had no knowledge, when the Original Pleading was Filed. In any event, the Allowing of such Pleadings, like Amendments, is largely a matter for the discretion of the Court, and the measure of their allowance ought to be whether they result in general in the Furtherance of Justice.  


63. Seofield v. Whitlegge, 49 N.Y. 250 (1872); Tooker v. Arnoux, 76 N.Y. 397 (1879).


Sec.

CHAPTER 27

RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS

The Form, Tenor and Effect of the Verdict.
Matter of Record Versus Matter of Exception.
The Motion for a New Trial.
The Motion for Venire Facias De Novo.
The Motion in Arrest of Judgment.
The Motion for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict.
The Motion for Repleader.

Status of Retrospective Motions Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

THE FORM, TENOR AND EFFECT
OF THE VERDICT

303. As the Retrospective Motions for a New Trial, for Venire Facias De Novo, for Arrest of Judgment, for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict, and for a Repleader, come after Verdict and before Judgment, it is essential to understand that Judgment does not immediately follow Rendition of a Verdict. It is suspended for a short period of time to permit the Losing Party at the Nisi Prius Trial to examine the Pleadings in order to determine whether the Matters Alleged by the Prevailing Party are sufficient to sustain a Judgment on the Verdict, and to examine the Conduct of the Trial with reference to rulings of the Court and other conduct which might invalidate the Verdict.

1. in general, or the subject of the Retrospective Motions, see:


“WHEN it is said, as it must be said concerning four of the five Retrospective Motions, that the Motion goes only upon the Record, what is meant is that in the consideration of that Motion the Court can look only at the Common Law Record, the Pleadings, the Process and the Verdict, all entered upon the Roll; and matters occurring at the Trial are not to be taken into account in Judgment upon that Motion.”—Keigwin, Cases in Common Law Pleading, Bk. II, The Rules of Pleading, XVIII, Retrospective Motions, 768 (2d ed., Rochester 1934).

Where the Pleadings have terminated in a single, clear-cut, well-defined, material Issue of Fact and the Jury has Returned a

St. Paul 1923); Keigwin, Cases in Common Law
Pleading, c. XVIT, Retrospective Motions, 767—775
(2d ed., Rochester 1934); Millar, civil Procedure of
the Trial Court in Historical Perspective, c. XIX,
Trial by Jury, c. V, The Motion in Arrest and Its
Congeners, 323 (New York 1902).

Articles: Carlin, Remittiturs and Additurs, 40 W.Va. L.Q. 1 (1942); Riddell, New trials in recent Practice, 27 Yale L.J. 353 (1918).

Note: Judicial Administration: Power of the
Trial Court to Reduce Excessive Damages, 15 Iowa L.Rev. 404 (1933);

Comments: Practice and Procedure—Power of the
Courts to Increase Inadequate verdicts, 32 Mich.L.
Rev. 538 (1934); Correction of Damage Verdicts by
Remittitur and Additur, 44 Yale L.J. 318 (1934).

303.
804.
305.
306.
807.
808
309.
aio.

565
566

Page 589 of 735
LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Verdict on that Issue, it would seem that a Judgment according to the Verdict should ordinarily be Entered.\(^2\) Frequently, however, an Error by Either One or Both Parties, prevents a presentation of the Issue on the Pleadings in such a manner so as to make possible a decision of the controversy, or it may be that an Error on the Part of the Court may result in a failure to correctly determine the Issue as made by the Pleadings. Thus, for example, if \(A\) sues \(B\) in Case for Slander, alleging that \(B\) spoke of and concerning \(A\), stating that \(A\) is a liar, \(A\) is not entitled to recovery, even though a Jury finds the Facts as \(A\) alleged, if the alleged statement is derogatory language which, as a Matter of Substantive Law, is not actionable even if proven. And if, by Way of Defense, \(B\) alleges that he was merely repeating what someone else said, this Fact, if true, constitutes No Defeure as a Matter of Substantive Law. In either case a Verdict by the Jury would not constitute a sufficient basis to war-

\(^2\) Mr. read was not the case, as Tidd explains, lie declared:

‘After a Genera I Vera et, or upon a IV St of Inquiry, oith Or o, Poorn a ->or or .1 algni ant by Do fi. ru I, it is incumbent on the prevailing party to enten- a Rule for Judgment Nisi si Cause, en the J’osfeu or Inq,i,silation, with the clerk of flue Rules, This hub expires in four dare cretin cc nlf ox- it is cuter. 1: trial Rot. 

or any other in y eu ---hieh the Court solth not sit is u ot reclm[n]ed one of the four days, unites I-he this to entered on the mist day of the loijui. 01’ w I lnmmi- 1:.ii. nriter, diu-11. = vim-li four days, it is the practice to enter these rules, as of tire last (lay cc the torro nail at Ill V expiration of four days exclusive nun or enforcing such rule, if no sufficient t ans-p he shown to the eon) `a',v,plg— merit n.ry he en I ered. Tile flu ic for .Tiidg,ment ought not to be entered before the day in bank: and it is not necessary if the plaintiff he nonsuited, for in that ease Judgment may be entered immediately after the day in hauls.

“VII lila the time limited ly he Rule, the nnsuct-ot-stul party may move the Court for a New Trial, or Inquiry; or in Arrest of Judgment; or for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto, a Repleader, or Venire Rae-las de Novo, or any other

\textbf{rant a Judgment.} As a Verdict is therefor not necessarily decisive of the Cause, th Court, in considering an appropriate Motion should thoroughly examine the Pleadings for:

- the purpose of ascertaining whether the Fact:

alleged by the victorious Party will sustain Judgment in his favor. And in some caset the conduct of the Trial may have to be considered, particularly with reference to th Rulings of the Court on offers and rejections of evidence, some of which may operate to invalidate a Verdict. To meet these even- tualities and to give an opportunity for the losing party to examine the Record and the Trial, at Common Law the Entry of the Judgment was delayed. This resulted in English Practice from the circumstance that Nisi Prius Trials were usually held out on the Circuit away from Westminster, during a Vacation of the Court, and therefore the Record Roll, with the Entry of the Verdict, could not be presented to the Full Court for Judgment, until after the Commencement of the Next Term. Within four days after the Court met En Bane at Westminster, the Losing Party at the Nisi Prius Trial was permitted any Motion seeking to avoid the Judgment which in the normal course of affairs would logically follow upon a Verdict.\(^3\) A similar Rule has usually been followed in the American Courts, except where changed by Rule of Court or Statute.\(^4\) The effort to avert the Entry of Judgment on the Verdict took the Form of One or More Motions, which, as Professor Keigwin observes, “because they look backward over the course of the proceeding, may be called Retrospective Motions,” \(\sim\) which were Five in


\(^4\) TrueR v. Legg, 32 Md. 147 (1870); Hutchinson r. Brown, 8 AppD.C. 157 (1896).

With the exception of the First Motion, all proceed upon the theory of taking advantage of some Defect Apparent Upon the Face of the Common Law Record. The Motion for a New Trial seeks to reach Errors

Page 590 of 735
which lie Outside that Record, and which can be shown
without reference to the Roll.

MATTER OF RECORD VERSUS
MATTER OF EXCEPTION

304. Four out of five of the Retrospective Motions are addressed to Errors Apparent Upon the Face of the
Common-Law Record. The
• Common-Law Record consists of the Process, the Pleadings, the Verdict and the Judgment. After Judgment, such
Errors were Reviewable
by Writ of Error. Errors which occurred at the Trial were not part of the Common-Law Record, and could be
Reviewed by a Motion for a New Trial, after Verdict and before Judgment; by Statute, such Errors could be
Reviewed after judgment by incorporating them into the Record by means of a Bill of Exceptions. It was
therefore essential to keep clearly in mind the distinction between Matter of Record and Matter of Exception.

UNDER the ancient practice, the Proceedings in a litigated case were Entered upon
the Parchment Roll, and when this was
completed, the end product became known as

the Common-Law Record. It consisted of Four Parts, the Process, which included the
Original Writ and the Return of the Sheriff, by which the Court acquired Jurisdiction over
the defendant; the Pleadings, presented by the Parties in the prescribed order to develop an Issue of Law or of Fact,
and which included the Declaration and all subsequent Pleadings, together with the Demurrers, if any; the
Verdict; and the Judgment. These Four Elements formed the Common-Law Record, but it should be
observed that at the point where the Retrospective Motions come into

play, the Record has not been developed beyond the Stage of Entering the Verdict upon the Roll.

At this point it should also be recalled that between the time when the Pleadings Terminated in an Issue, which
Joinder in Issue was duly Recorded on the Parchment Roll, and the time when an Entry of the Verdict was made,
nothing was Recorded on the Parchment Roll. The reason for this was that between the Joinder of Issue and the
Rendition
of the Verdict, the Trial takes place, and
what occurs during this Trial does not Appear upon the Face of the Common-Law Record. Thus, Offers and
Rejection of Evidence, the Court’s Instruction of the Jury, or its Refusal to Instruct as requested by Counsel, or any
Misconduct Connected with the Trial, such as Prejudicial Remarks on the Part of the Court, and the like—that is—
any Error that occurs at the Trial—cannot be corrected by resort to the Common-Law Record because not Apparent
Upon its Face. Such Errors were preserved only in the notes made by the Presiding Judge, or in his memory, and
were review-able, after Verdict and before Final Judgment, by a Motion for New Trial made before the Court En
Bane at Westminster, within four days after the Commencement of the Next Term following the Rendition of the
Verdict. As each of the Judges of the Court had Motions of a similar character coming up for decision from the
Trials over which they had presided, the natural inclination of each Judge was to support the Rulings of his brother
Jurists, and thus Overrule the Motion for a New Trial. Furthermore, Errors that occurred at the Trial were not
Reviewable after Judgment on Writ of Error, because Not Apparent on any one of the Four Parts of the Common-
Law Record. To remedy this Defect, Parliament enacted Chapter 31 of the Statute of Westminster II in 1285,6 which
provided for Review of such Errors through

Sec. 304
Ch. 27

RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS

therefore tuse, the Motion dings for the Facts iustain a
tie cases
be con? to the ejections iterate to se even-for the and the of the
LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Ch. 27

the use of is-hat came to be known as a Bill of Exceptions.~

Thus, it appears that in four out of five Retrospective Motions, the Court is permitted to consider only Defects Apparent Upon the Face of Part of the Common-Law Record—the Process, the Pleadings, and the Verdict—and Errors Occurring at the Trial were regarded as extraneous and not to be considered in rendering Judgment upon the Motions. Matters extraneous to or outside of the Record could be tested after Verdict and before Judgment only by a Motion for a New Trial. A distinction is made between Matter of Record and Matter of Exception, Matter of Record referring to those Errors Apparent upon the Face of the Common-Law Record and hence Reviewable after Final Judgment upon a Writ of Error, and Matter of Exception referring to those Errors which Occurred at the Trial, and were Not Apparent on the Face of the Common-Law Record, hence Reviewable after Final Judgment only by incorporating such Errors into the Record by means of a Bill of Exceptions, as authorized by Chapter 31 of the Statute of Westminster II in 1285.~

TIE MOTION FOR A NEW TRIAL

305. A Motion for a New Trial calls for a re-examination by the Court of the occurrences at the Trial to determine whether any errors had been made upon the Trial, or whether any irregularities had occurred in connection with the Trial. A Motion for a New Trial does not reach defects in the Pleadings.

New Trial^9

AT Common Law, Proceedings leading to a decision might be corrected or Reviewed after

7. The Bill of Exceptions Is discussed in Chapter

30.

S. 15 Edw. I., c. 31, 1 Statutes at Large 206 (2255).

9. In general, on the subject of New Trials, see:

Articles: Illdell, New Trials In Present Practice, 27 Yale L.J. 353 (1918); Sipith, The Power to Direct a Verdict, 24 Col.L.Rev. 112 (1924).

Verdict and before Judgment by a Motion for a New Trial; and alter Judgment, by Writ of Error, if the Error was Apparent Upon the Face of the Common-Law Record, or, after 1285, by Bill of Exceptions, if the Error Occurred at the Trial. In the first instance, there-examination of the case afresh took place—in the same Court; in the second, the re-examination occurred by reason of the Removal of the Record to a Higher Court by Writ of Error. When the Review was by a Motion for New Trial, which occurred before Judgmct, the Entry of Judgment was necessarily sus— pended pending a Ruling on the Motion,

The Motion for a New Trial was not the procedure to Review Defects on the Face of
the Pleadings, but was and is a Remedy for-any Misconduct, Error or Slip occurring in the progress of the Trial itself which might endanger its fairness, and which indicates the probability of a different result. Its purpose was to have the Court set aside the Verdict and order a New Trial on the ground that some Error had occurred at the Trial, consisting of some alleged Misconduct of the Parties, the Counsel, the Jurors or the Judge. Prior to 1655, the Law Courts, it was said, held themselves incompetent to set aside Verdicts, hence the only Remedy available for a Party who had been prejudiced by an improper Verdict was either by the then impractical Proceeding to Attaint the Jury, or by an Appeal to a Court of Equity, which, under some-conditions, might procure New Trials. The first case in which it was said a New Trial was granted at Law, In order to meet the inadequacy of the Courts in refusing to set Verdicts aside, was Wood v. Ounston, decided in 1655. But Lord Mansfield was of the opinion that New Trials were granted at Law at an earlier time?

Note: New Trial—Exclusiveness Grounds, 5 Minn.Lavel. 564 (1921).

a Style 466, 82 Eng.Rep. 867(1655).


97 Eng.Rep. 385-

Sec. 305

As heretofore indicated, at Common Law, after a Nisi Prius Trial, the Losing Party could Move for a New Trial before the Court, En Banc, at Westminster, the Judge who presided at the Trial being one of the members of this Court. As the procedure evolved in the American Courts, the Motion for a New Trial became one which was generally ad-dressed directly to the Judge who conducted the Trial, and sought to persuade him that he had committed some Error in one or more of his Various Rulings during the Trial, or that for some other reason Justice was not done. it is altogether proper that this Motion should be heard by the very Judge who tried the Case, as he is personally acquainted with the Facts involved, and able to judge as to their bearing upon the merits of the controversy, as well as give them their proper evaluation. And it was for this very reason that it became the established Rule that a Judge in passing upon a Motion for a New Trial exercised his own discretion, which, in general, was not reviewable in an Anpeilate Court, as the Grant or Refusal of a New Trial could not be Assigned as Error in Another Court,

While the discretion exercised by the Trial Court in passing upon a Motion for a New Trial was not ordinarily subject to Appellate Review, it should be observed that some of the Errors urged in support of such a Motion may be and frequently are made the subject of Exceptions, and are thus incorporated into the Record by means of a Bill of Exceptions. In this way the same Errors which are urged below on Motion for a New Trial may be Reviewed by Writ of Error, which brings the Bill of Exceptions to the Appellate Court, or by Statutory Appeal.

if the BiU of Exceptions reveals that the Trial Court committed Errors, as in improperly A&’ning or Excluding Evidence, or in failing to correctly Instruct the Jury, the Appellate Court may, on the ground of such Errors, Reverse the Judgment and grant a New Trial. Such a Course of Procedure involves no revision of the decision ol’ the Trial Court on the Motion for New Trial; that which is revised is the Erroneous Ruling which occurred at the Trial. And the New Trial which is granted, is granted not because the Trial Judge Erred in refusing it, but on the ground that he had previously Erred in his hearing of the case and with respect to a Matter which Impaired the Validity of the Judgment.2

Grounds for New Trial

AT Common Law there was a wide discretion in the Judge as to the Causes for granting a New Trial, and the Statutory Grounds laid down in our Modern Codes and Practice Acts are not exclusive of all others.13
The Grounds for the Motion generally include such Errors and Irregularities in the Conduct of the Trial as Errors in Impaneling the Jury, Bribes and Private Communications of the Prevailing Party to the Jury, which may have influenced their Verdict, or Misbehavior of the Jury in their deliberations, as by intoxication, separation, private investigations, casting lots or drawing straws for the Verdict, or of the Jury bringing in a Verdict contrary to the weight of the evidence, so that the Judge is reasonably dissatisfied therewith, or if the Jury has given Excessive Damages indicating passion and prejudice, or if the Judge has erroneously Excluded or Admitted Evidence, or Misdirected the Jury on the Law controlling the case, so that in consequence they may have found an Unjustifiable Verdict; for these and any other reasons, which may amount for Error at the Trial, it is the duty of the Court to award a Retrial if


15. See Note, New Trial—Exehisiveness of Statutory Grounds—Loss of Reporter’s Notes, 5 Minn.L.Rev. 564 (1921). See, also, the ease of Valerius v. Richard, 57 Mimi. 443, 59 N.W. 584 (1894), per Canty J., die so n tin g.

RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS

Ch. 27

Lion for ’y Writ pon the r, after ror Ocice, the k placer-exemoval
Writ of Jon for gmgnt, Lly sus— ot the?ace of 3dy for-ring in might.
. tes the ~surpuseVerdict Ld that tl, con-of the Judge. s said, le Vere for a. nprop
-actical
an Ap
r some-

The

ial was madeericts.

i1655.

n that
earlier

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

a fair hearing had not been had iii the Original Trial.

All such Grounds for a New Trial, it should be noted, fall Outside the Common Law Record, as there was no place on the Roll for the Entry of such Errors, being known to the Judge only by memory, or by representations made to him by the Parties and incorporated into Sworn Affidavits submitted to the Trial Court.

And, of course, the Motion for a New Trial, should be clearly differentiated from the Motion for Veniyc l’acian Dc Novo.

Another Matter for which New Trials are sometimes granted is surprise, where a Party using all diligence and care is placed in a situation injurious to his interests without his own default. One may regularly Subpoena a Witness, and he may be actually in attendance, but absent himself at the time when needed, without the knowledge or consent of the Party or his Attorney. But to avail himself of this Ground for a New Trial, the surprise must be such that there was no opportunity to Move for a Continuance of the Cause. If he liad the opportunity and neglected it, he cannot take the chance of a Verdict in his favor, and afterward claim the benefit of a Rehearthgi

14. In order to bring the question of the sufficiency of the Evidence to sustain the Verdict before the Appellate Court for Review, it is necessary
for the losing pasty to snake in Motion for a New Trial, and to include the Motion, the order overruling it, and the Exceptions in a Bill of Exceptions. Yarber v. Chicago & A. R. Co., 23-5 Ill. 589, 85 N.E. 928 (1908).


16. Ituggles v. Hall, 14 Julius. (N.Y.) 112 (1810); See.
also, State v. Morgan, 80 Iowa 413, 43 NW. 1070 (1880); Solomon v. Norton, 2 Ariz. 100, 11 P. 108 (1886); Albert v. Seller, 31 Mo.App. 241 (1888).

17. McClure v. King, 15 LaAnn. 220 ~1560) Grant
v. Popejoy, 15 Did. 311 (1860); Klein v. Gibson
(Ky.) 2 SW. 60 (1880).

THE MOTION FOR VENIRE FACIAS DE NOVO

306. The Motion for Venire Facias De Nova was, unlike the Motion for New Trial, designed to Vacate the Verdict and obtain a Retrial on the basis of Defects Appearing on the Record; and if granted when it should not be, it was Error, and the Award of it could be reversed, whereas a Motion for a New Trial was commonly granted after a General Verdict for some Cause not Apparent on the Record, and was not Assignable for Error.

THE Motion for Venire Facias De Novo was an Ancient Proceeding of the Common Law, in use long before the Motion for a New Trial.

IS. In referring to the distinction between a Motion
for Ve, Cre Fa.eis De. Ner o and a Motion for a New
Trial, in the ease of Witham v. Lewis, 1 Wils. KB.
48, 55, 05 Eng. llep. 485, 489 (2744), Chief Justice
Willes declared:

"The Counsel at the Bar endeavored to confound a Ve. Pa. Be Ner o and a Motion for a Xe-v, Trial, but they are very different things; they agree in some things, but differ in many; the very cc in this, that a Ve. Pa. De Nero must be awarded in both, and that the Court may or may not grant either of them; but they differ first in this, that

\[ \text{Fe. Fri. Be 2-o-o is tile ancient proceeding of the Common Law, a New Trial is only a new invention; the first is as Ancient as the Law, wile's attaints were in use, but Motions for New Trials were introduced in this manner; the Judgment in Attaint was very severe, and the punishment excessively hard, and therefore to avoid that severity it was thought better to proceed in a milder way, and so Motions for New Trials were introduced. They likewise differ in this respect, that New Trials are generally granted where a General Verdict is found, a Fe. Fe. De Nero upon a Special Verdict.} \]

"But the most material difference between them is this, that a Fe. Fe. Be Nero must be granted upon Matter appearing upon the Record, but a New Trial may be granted upon things out of it; if the Record be 'lever so right; if the Verdict appear to be contrary to the Evidence given at the Trial, or if it appear that the Judge has given wrong directions, a New Trial will be granted; but it is otherwise as to a Ve, Fa.- Us. De Novo, which can only be granted in one or other of these two cases, as 1st., if it appear upon the Face of the Verdict, that the Verdict is so imperfect that no Judgment can be given upon it; 2db", where it appears that the Jury ought to have found other facts differently, and it cannot be granted in any other case."

570
Cla. 27

Its ObjeCt, of course, was to obtain a New Trial; and it was commonly employed after a Special Verdict imperfectly found, but always for some Cause Upon the Record. It differed from the Motion for New Trial, which was based on Matters Extraneous to the Record. If granted when it should not be, it was Error, and the Award of it could be reversed, whereas a Motion for a New Trial was commonly granted after a General Verdict and was not assignable for Error. The Motion for Venire Fat-ia-s De Nova was granted where a Verdict was so imperfect that Judgment could not properly be grounded upon it. This might occur where the Verdict was not responsive to the Issue, or where some irregularity in the Impaneling of the Jury was involved, provided such insufficiency or irregularity was Apparent on the Roll. If the Motion to Set Aside the Verdict and to Award a Venis’e Facias Do No-vo was granted, a Writ was then issued requiring the Sheriff to Summon a New Jury to try the Cause."

THE MOTION IN ARREST OF JUDGMENT
The Court will generally, on Motion, refuse to Enter Judgment upon a Verdict, Default, or Demurrer to Evidence, when substantial Defects exist in the Pleadings or the Verdict. And the Defect must be at least one which would have been fatal on a General Demurrer, and not one which a Verdict would cure; and it must be Apparent on the Face of the Record. If a Declaration shows No Cause of Action whatever, or a Plea is utterly Wanting in Stating a Defense, the Entry of a Judgment clearly cannot be allowed to represent what has not been established. And, of course, a Motion in Arrest of Judgment must be made After Verdict and Before Rendition of the Judgment. It operates, with significant differences, as a kind of Delayed Demurrer.

Butcher v. Metts, 1 Miles (D.C.Phila.) 233 (1830).


Definition

IN Legal Proceedings, a “Motion” is an application, either written or made viva voce, by a Party to an Action or a Suit for some kind of Relief.22 And a Motion in Arrest of Judgment is a procedural device, entered upon the Record, and is designed to Stay Judgment, or prevent its Entry, pending a determination of whether the Record will support the Judgment. Such a Motion usually occurs after an Issue of Fact has been tried and a Verdict Found, but the Motion is also available after a Default, in which case it is treated exactly as if it had been a Demurrer to the Declaration, and not like a Motion made after Verdict.24

The Principle Underlying the Motion

The Theory of the Motion in Arrest of Judgment is that the Judgment of the Court is a Conclusion of Law from all the Facts ascertained and spread upon the Record, and as such Conclusion must rest upon and be collected from the Whole Record, the Party who does not, upon the Entire Record, appear entitled to Judgment, cannot have it. Thus, a Substantive Defect is available at the Pleading Stage, by Demurrer; After Verdict and Before Judgment, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment; and After Judgment, by Writ of Error. And this principle holds true even though a Verdict has been found, a Default suffered, or a Demurrer to Evidence determined in favor of the Party, who, upon the Whole Record, appears not to be entitled to Judgment. For even in the face of such Verdict, Default or Final Ruling on a Demurrer to Evidence, the Record, as viewed as a whole, may disclose No Right of Action, or no Legal


Defense, in his favor, as the Case may be. And, therefore, if a Verdict is found for the plaintiff, upon a Declaration substantively defective—as in Ejectment in which there is a failure to allege title—or for the defendant, on a Plea in Bar totally void, Judgment must in either case be Arrested. The Motion in Arrest of Judgment, of course, must be made Before Judgment and it operates, with significant differences, as a kind of Belated Demurrer.

The Question on a Motion in Arrest of Judgment is One of Lay.

THE Motion in Arrest of Judgment raises a Question of Law; it in effect asserts that there is some Error Apparent on the Face of the Record which in Point of Law vitiated the proceedings culminating in the Verdict; that is, Judgments were Arrested only for intrinsic causes. And after the Statutes of Amendments and Jeofails, the Error Manifest upon the Face of the Record was required to be One of Substance and Not One in Form.

Defects Available Upon Motion in Arrest of Judgment.

UNDER the Ancient Common Law a Motion in Arrest of Judgment could reach mere Defects in Form in the Pleadings. After the Enactment of the English Statutes of Amendments and Jeofails, this Practice of using the Motion in Arrest to reach Formal Faults in


And the errors must be apparent on the Face of the Record. Jordan v. State, 22 Pla. 528 (1880).

But the Evidence is no part of the Record. Bond v. Dustln, 112 11.5. 604, 5 S.Ct. 290, 28 Led. 835 (1884). the Pleadings, was corrected. In consequence of these Statutes, Judgments are now largely protected against Arrest for Defects in Form, as well as for Various other Defects, which had once been treated as Substantive, but which, by the combined impact of the Statute of Elizabeth in 1585 and the Statute of Anne in 1705, have been specifically enumerated and expressly cured.

At Common Law, and aside from any Statutory Provisions, there are Many Defects in Pleading which formerly have been treated as Substantive, and which would be regarded as fatal, except for their being Aided by Verdict. If a
Defect is Cured by Verdict, a Motion in-Arrest of Judgment will not be sustained.

With respect to such imperfections as are Aided by Verdict at Common Law, it was early observed, “that where there is Any Defect, Imperfection, or Omission in Any Pleading, whether in Substance or Form, which would have been a Fatal Objection upon Demurrer; yet if the Issue Joined be such as necessarily required on the Trial Proof of the Facts so Defectively or Imperfectly Stated or Omitted, and without which it is not to be presumed that either the Judge would Direct the Jury to give, or the Jury would have given the Verdict, such Defect, Imperfection, or Omission, is Cured by the Verdict by the Common Law.” ~ And this Rule has subsequently been followed.

29. 27 Eliz. c. 3, § 1, 6 Statutes at Large 360 (1585).
30. 4 Anne, c. 16, § 1, 11 Statutes at Large 155 (1705).
31. The Motion In Arrest of Judgment Is succinctly discussed In Huger a Cunningham, 126 Ga. 684, 58 S.E. 64 (1906).

Sec. 307

Since after the Statute of Demurrers, in 1585, Supplemented and Amended by the Statute of Anne in 1705, — Formal Defects in the Record were Waived except on Special Demurrer, it followed that thereafter Judgment could not be Arrested for any other than a Substantive Defect. Such a fault may be found either in the Pleadings or in the Verdict if one has been rendered. Thus, where the plaintiff has been Awarded a Verdict on a Declaration Totally Defective in Substance—as where in Trover he fails to allege a Conversion—or varies totally from the Original Writ—as where the Writ sued out was in Special Assumpsit for Breach of a Contract and the Verdict was in Case for a Tort—Judgment may be Arrested on the defendant’s Motion. But if the Declaration was Substantively Valid, and the Plea in Bar on which the defendant obtained a Verdict is Substantively Defective—as where the defendant Pleaded Not Guilty to a Declaration in Assumpsit—the Judgment may in turn be Arrested on the Motion of the Plaintiff. In each instance the Defect at which the Motion Struck was in the Pleading.

The Defect may, however, be in the Verdict. Thus, where the Pleadings terminate in a Perfect Issue, but the Jury finds a Verdict Materially at Variance with the Issue—as where the Issue is whether the defendant owns Blackacre and the Jury by its Verdict finds that the defendant owns Greenacre—Judgment will be Arrested for the insufficiency of the Verdict The Court cannot tell from such a Verdict for which Party the Judgment should be given. And, in general, it is a universal Rule in Arresting Judgment, that any Defect in the Record which would render erroneous a Judgment entered in pursuance of a Verdict, constitutes a valid ground for Arresting the Judgment. “For,”

34. 27 Eliz. c. 5, 6 Statutes at Large 360 (1585).
35. 4 Anne, c. 16, 11 Statutes at Large 155 (1705).
Defects in the Pleadings

It has been an invariable Rule that No Defect in the Pleadings which would not have been fatal to them on a General Demurrer can be available for Arresting a Judgment. Formal Defects being Cured by Statute or open only to Special Demurrer. The Converse of the Rule, however—that all Substantial Defects will support this Motion—is not universally true, as they may consist of the omission of particular Facts or circumstances which, in accordance with a Rule we have heretofore considered, the Court will presume, after a Verdict, to have been duly proved. This distinction furnishes the true criterion as to what Defects in a Declaration or Plea are Grounds for Arresting Judgment. If they come within the Rule of Aider by Verdict, the Motion cannot be sustained.

As Smith declares: “A Motion in Arrest of Judgment is the exact reverse of that for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto. The applicant in the one case insists that the plain-

says Gould, “no Court should do so nugatory an act, as to render a Judgment, which—when Rendered, must be erroneous.” -

Defects in the Pleadings

It has been an invariable Rule that No Defect in the Pleadings which would not have been fatal to them on a General Demurrer can be available for Arresting a Judgment. Formal Defects being Cured by Statute or open only to Special Demurrer. The Converse of the Rule, however—that all Substantial Defects will support this Motion—is not universally true, as they may consist of the omission of particular Facts or circumstances which, in accordance with a Rule we have heretofore considered, the Court will presume, after a Verdict, to have been duly proved. This distinction furnishes the true criterion as to what Defects in a Declaration or Plea are Grounds for Arresting Judgment. If they come within the Rule of Aider by Verdict, the Motion cannot be sustained.

As Smith declares: “A Motion in Arrest of Judgment is the exact reverse of that for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto. The applicant in the one case insists that the plain-

37. Gould, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading,


A Misjoinder of Causes of Action or of parties is ground for Arrest of Judgment. Bull v Mathews,
20 RI. 100, 37 A. 536 (1897); Gilmip v Carter, 58 Ill. 296 (1871); Cf. Chicago & A. H. Co. v Murphy,
198 Ill. 462, 64 N.E. 1011 (1902).

39. Lane v Maine Mut. Fire Ins. Co., 12 Me. 44 (1835); Avery v Inhabitants of Tyringham, 3 Mass, 160 (1807); Bead v. Inhabitants of Cheimsford, 16 Pick. (Mass.) 128 (1834).

40. Chicago & A. B. Co. v Clausen, 173 Ill. 100, 50 N.E. 680 (1898).

A Verdict will not mend the defect, where an essential element of the case is not alleged in the Declaration, but it will cure an ambiguity or generality of statement. Thus, In a Contract Action, Judgment will be arrested for failure to allege performance of conditions precedent. Rushton v Aspiaall, 2 Doug. 679, 99 Engiiep. 430 (1781).

RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS

Ch. 27

[In conses are now r Defects r Defects, bstantive, et of the e Statute :ally enuany Stat)efects in reated as ~arded as 'Verdict.
4otion in ned.

Is as are : it was Any Dety Plead-1, which illon De-such as of of the flated or o be pre|ect the ye given tion, or he Corn2quently

Pleading,

60 (1585).

55 (1705).

succinctly Ga. 684,

8 note 1,

136 Eng.

364. 137 *orster v ass.) 541
tiff is entitled to the Judgment of the Court, although a Verdict has been found against him. In the other case, that he
is not entitled to the Judgment of the Court, although a Verdict has been delivered in his favor. Like the Motion for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto, that in Arrest of Judgment must always be grounded
upon something Apparent on the Face of the Pleadings; for instance, if, in an Action against the indorser of a Bill of
Exchange, the plaintiff were to omit to allege in his Declaration that the defendant had notice of dishonor, Judgment
would be Arrested even after a Verdict in the plaintiff’s favor.

“The power to make these respective Motions, coupled with the inability to Demur and Plead at the Same Time,
led to a practice of passing over Objections to the Pleadings until After the Trial, when it was too late to Amend, and
the successful litigant was often deprived of the fruits of a Verdict according to the merits by a slip in the Pleadings,
which might have been remedied if brought to his notice by Demurrer.”

An utter failure to keep in view the proper Functions of Pleading is strikingly shown when a Fair Trial on the
merits of a case is set at naught by a Motion in Arrest of Judgment, by Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict, or
even on Writ of Error, because of a lack of some Allegation in the Declaration. And some have regarded such an
outcome a perversion of Justice by the Rules of Procedure, resulting from the blind and mechanical application of
Rules for their own sake. Of course, all too often, astute practitioners, instead of giving gratuitous instructions to
their opponents, permit them to go through the Trial on Defective Pleadings, and then wipe out all the results of the
Trial if it goes against them, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment, or a Similar Motion.

1813). See, also, Kelly v. Chicago City R. Co., 283
111. 640, 119 N.E. 622 (1018i.

In referring to this type of practice, in the Illinois case of Oilman v. Chicago Railway Co., 42 Craig, J., in
dissenting, declared: “The defendant, if not sufficiently informed of the Statement of Claim, had the right to demand
a more Specific Statement, but instead of that it filed an Affidavit of Merits, in which it reserved the right to object to
any insufficiency of plaintiff’s claim, went to Trial, and had a Fair Trial on the Merits, and, having been unsuccessful in
the Trial, now asks that the Judgment be Reversed because the Statement of Claim did not set out a
Complete Cause of Action.” ~ The majority of the Court failed to appreciate that the main Function of Pleading is to
clear the ground preparatory to the Trial. The need of a formal “basis for the Judgment” is not a sufficient reason
for permitting such Objections to Pleadings to be raised and be availed of after a Trial on the Merits, unless it is shown
that the defendant was actually prevented from having a Fair Trial by reason of the Defect.

In some States, a defendant, when a Demurrer has been erroneously overruled, may not Move in Arrest of
Judgment; yet he may Move for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto, or he may secure a Reversal of the Judgment
on Writ of Error~ But it has been well said that “a Court, by Ruling Wrongly on a Demurrer, does not preclude
itself from afterwards Ruling Rightly upon a Motion in Arrest of Judgment.” ~
Defects in the Verdict

FROM the logical nature of the Rules governing all Common-Law Pleading, it is apparent that, if a Verdict is to be effective as a finding upon the Issues presented, it must conform to and include all matters of Substance covered by such Issues. Judgment will consequently be Arrested when a General Verdict, awarding Entire Damages, is given on a Declaration containing Several Counts, some of which are bad, but not when it is silent as to matters which, though submitted, can have no effect upon the merits of the controversy. 46

Relation of Motion in Arrest of Judgment and Aider by Verdict

AS we have seen, 7 it is well settled that Faults in Pleading may in some cases be Aided or Cured by Verdict. Thus, where the plaintiff, in alleging a grant which must have been by deed, fails to expressly State in the Declaration that it was by deed, and the defendant, instead of Demurring, as he would be entitled to do, and in case of which the Declaration would be held bad, Pleads Over, and Issue is taken upon the grant, and a Verdict rendered for the plaintiff, the Verdict Cures the Defect in the Declaration, and no objection can be taken on that ground by motion in Arrest of Judgment, or by Writ of Error. 8 The doctrine of Aider by Verdict is

46. Leach vs Thomas, 2 Id. & W. 427, 150 Eng.Bep. 824 (1837); Posnett vs Marble, 62 Vt. 481, 20 A. 813 (1890).

In most States if there is One Good Count by which a General Verdict can be supported, Judgment will not be arrested because some of the counts are defective. Langan vs Enos Fire Escape Co., 233 Ill. 308, 84 N.E. 267 (1908); Klofski vs Railroad Supply Co., 235 Ill. 146, 85 N.E. 274 (1008); yarn vs Pelot, 55 Fla. 357, 45 So. 1015 (1908). See, also, White vs Bailey, 14 Conn. 272 (1841), absence of finding on immaterial issues; Patterson vs United States, 2 Wheat 221, 4 L.Ed. 224 (1817).

47. See Alder and Amendment, c. 26, § 299.

48. Lightfoot vs Brightman, Hut 54, 123 Eng.Bep. 1096 (1622); And see, Arkansas: Knight vs Sharp, 24 Ark. 602 (1867); Illinois: Beeves vs Forman, 26 founded on the Common Law, and is entirely independent of any Statutory Enactment. The expressions “Cured” or “Aider by Verdict” signify that the Court will, after Verdict, presume or intend that the particular thing which appears to be Defectively or Imperfectly Stated, or Omitted, was duly proved at the Trial so as to support the Verdict. But, if the Declaration fails to allege any Substantive Fact which is essential to the Statement of a Cause of Action, and which is not implied in, or inferable from the finding on those which are alleged, a Verdict rendered for the plaintiff does not Cure the Defect. Thus, for example, if in Ejectment the plaintiff Omits the Allegation of Ouster, and the Jury nevertheless finds a Verdict for the plaintiff, the Judgment must be Arrested.

The extent and principle of this doctrine has been succinctly stated in the famous English case of Jackson vs Peskaed, 9 in which

III. 31.3 (1861); Commercial Ins. Co. vs Treasurer Bank, 61 Ill. 482 14 Am.Bep. 73 (1871); Compton vs People, 86 Ill. 176 (1877); Barnes vs Brookman, 107 XLI. 317 (1883); Maryland: Merrick vs Trustees of Bank of Metropolis, 8 Gill. (Md.) 50 (1849); Massachusetts: Colt vs Itoot, 17 Mass. 229 (18211; New Hampshire: White vs Concord 33 Co., 30 N.H. 188 (1855); New York: Addington vs Allen, 31 Wend. (N.Y.) 375 (1833); Vermont: Harrill vs v. ‘aigie, 8 Vt. 501 (1836).

For a failure to alter full performance by plaintiff in an Action on a Contract, see Warren vs Harris, 2 Gill. (Ill.) 307 (1845) ; for a defective statement in an action for rent against a tenant holding oiter, see Clinton Wire’Cloth Co. vs Gardner, 99 Ill. 151 (1881); for failure to count on the Statute under which the action was brought, see Pearce vs Foot, 113 Ill. 228 (1885); for want of Venue, see Toledo, P. & W. By. Co. vs
Webster, 55 Ill. 338 (1870); Roberts v. Corby, 86 Ill. 182 (1877); for want of a sum in the Ad Damnum clause where the body of the Declaration shows a claim of Damages, see Burst v. Wayne, 13 Ill. 599 (1852); for want of formal Joinder in Issue, see Strohm v. Hayes, 70 Ill. 41 (1873); Imperial Fire Ins. Co. v. Shimer, 96 Ill. 580 (1881). See, also, note, Aider by Verdict, 6 Va.L.Rev. 285 (1020).

1 Id. & S. 234, 105 Eng.Rcp. 88 (1813). See also, South v. Eastern B. B., 85 N.H. 303 (1857); Flanders v. Town of Stewartstown, 47 N.H. 549 (1867); Wallace v. Curtiss, 36 Ill. 156 (1864); Helman v.

RETRIBUTIVE MOTIONS 575

Ch. 27

~tice, in the Railway ar ed: “The med of the to demand instead of s, in which my insuffiTrial, and ml, having v asks that cause the

ut a Commajority of t the main lground need of a is not a ich Objebe availed nless it is azally preby reason

a Demur1, may not t he may Veredicto, Judgment been well ngly on a from af t\'lotin in

271 Ill. 404,

161, 23 N.
Jlausen, 173
Harris, 230 People a

108 Penn.
it. Badger
200 (1914).
Kottlar & Roppy Com.Law Pldg. ‘1B—b

576

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

Lord Ellenborough, J., declared: “Where a matter is so essentially necessary to be proved that, had it not been given in evidence, the Jury could not have given such a Verdict, there the want of Stating that Matter in Express Terms in the Declaration, provided it contains Terms Sufficiently General to comprehend it in Fair and Reasonable Intendment, will be Cured by a Verdict; and where a General Allegation must, in fair construction, so far require to be restricted that No Judge and No Jury could have properly treated it in an unrestrained sense, it may be reasonably presumed, after Verdict, that it was so restrained at the Trial.” And, the principle was well stated, as previously observed, that “where there is any Defect, Imperfection, or Omission in Any Pleading, whether in Substance or Form, which would have been a Fatal Objection upon Demurrer; yet if the Issue Joined be such as necessarily required on the Trial Proof of the Facts so Defectively or Imperfectly Stated or Omitted, and without which it is not to be presumed that either the Judge would Direct the Jury to give, or the Jury would have given the Verdict, such Defect, Imperfection, or Omission, is Cured by the Verdict by the Common Law.” 50

It is only where a “Fair and Reasonable Intendment” can be implied that a Verdict will cure the objection. The Intendment must arise not from the Verdict alone, but from the combined effect of the Verdict, and the Issue upon which the Verdict was given, as shown by the Record. It is essential that ‘the particular thing that is to be presumed to have been proven shall be such as can reasonably be implied from the Allegations on the Record. The criterion by which to distinguish between Defects in a Declaration

Schroeder, 74 Ill. 158 (1874); Ladd v. Piggott, 114
III. 647, 2 N.E. 503 (1885).

which are, and such as are not, Cured by Verdict, was laid down in the year 1781, by Lord Mansfield, in the case of Rushton v. Aspinall,51 to the following effect: Where the statement of the plaintiff’s Cause of Action, or Title, is Defective or inaccurate, the Defect is Cured by a General Verdict in his favor; because, to entitle him to recover, all circumstances necessary, in Form or Substante, to complete the Title so Imperfectly Stated, must be proved at the Trial, and it is therefore a fair presumption that they were so proved. But, where no Title or Cause of Action is shown, the Omission is Not Cured; for if a necessary Allegation is altogether Omitted from the Pleading, or if the latter contains Matter Adverse to the Right


The Verdict must be for the Party in whose favor the implication is to be made, for it is in consequence of the Verdict, and to Support it, that the Court is induced to put a Liberal Construction upon the Allegations on the Record.52

THE MOTION FOR JUDGMENT NOTWITHSTANDING THE VERDICT

308. When a Plea is Good in Form, but shows no valid Answer to the Merits of the Action, the Court will order Judgment for the plaintiff, Notwithstanding a Verdict in favor of the defendant. The Motion will now be Granted in favor of a defendant, where the plaintiff’s Pleadings are not sufficient to support a Judgment upon a Verdict in his favor.

IN a certain class of cases, where the Party who has secured a Verdict, is not entitled to a Judgment upon it, the Court may not only Arrest the Judgment in pursuance of the Verdict, but may give Judgment in Chief, Non Obstante
VereditCo; that is, in favor of the Party against whom the Verdict was found. But such a course of procedure was taken only in clear cases where there was no doubt that the Party, against whom the Issue was found, was entitled to Judgment upon the Whole Record. This was, in effect, a Motion for Judgment on the Pleadings, and was granted, for example, where a Plea in Bar confessed a good Declaration, but the matter Alleged in Avoidance constituted no Legal Defense. In such

$2$. Easton a Pratehett, 4 Tyr. 472 (1834); Kelle- her. Chicago City H. Co., 256 Ill. 454, 100 N.E. 145 (1912).


(1591); Claflin v. Alawes, 8 Mass. 201 (1811); Lough a. Thornton, 17 Minn. 253 (1871).

a situation, as the right of the plaintiff to recover had been confessed by the Defective Plea, it would amount to a denial of Justice to withhold from the plaintiff a Judgment-Chief.

It should be observed that in such a case the Judgment is in reality grounded upon the Confession made in the Plea, without regard to the Verdict, as the Verdict decides nothing however it may go.M

Formerly, the Motion for Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto, was granted only where it Appeared upon the Record that the plaintiff was entitled to Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict for the defendant; and the defendant was limited to a Motion in Arrest of Judgment, and could not obtain a Judgment after a Verdict for the plaintiff upon a Bad Declaration. But, under Modern Law, the Motion was also held available by some American Courts in favor of a defendant, where the plaintiff’s Pleadings were not sufficient to support a Judgment in his favor.M

It has been urged that this difference is unsubstantial, since a Judgment for the defendant without regard to the Verdict is in fact an Arrest of Judgment. But according to IKeigwin,- the difference is not altogether unsubstantial, as an Arrest of Judgment is by no means equivalent to the Entry of Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto. He ob


(1852); Shutes a. Eno Cotton Mills, 151 NC, 290,

60 S.E. 141 (1909); Cruikshank a. St. Paul Fire & Marine Ins. Co., 75 Minn. 266, 77 NW. 958 (1899).

57. Keigwin, Cases In Common Law Pleading, c.

serves that upon an Arrest of Judgment, no Entry of Judgment is made for Either Party, except where the plaintiff desires a Judgment to be Entered for the defendant to serve as the basis of an Appeal, thus enabling him to have a Final Adjudication of the alleged Cause of Action. In the absence of such an Entry, the action stops at the Arrest of Judgment, with the rights of Neither Party prejudiced, and with the plaintiff free to renew the litigation in some other form and at some other time when success is more apt to attend his efforts. By contrast, a Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto is as conclusive as is any other Judgment.

And there is also a distinction between a Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto and a Repleader; the first being given when a Plea is Good in Form, but Bad in showing a Defense without merit upon which Issue is Joined and found for the Party Pleading; while the latter is Awarded when the Defect lies rather in the Manner of Statement than the Matter Plead, upon which a‘i Immaterial Issue is Joined. A Judgment Non Obstante Veredicto is always upon the Merits of the Action; a Repleader is upon the Form and Manner of Pleading. If a Plea is Defective, and the defendant succeeds at the Trial, the question is whether the Plea Confesses the Cause of Action. If it does, and the Matter Plead in Avoidance is insufficient, the plaintiff will be entitled to Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict. If not, there should be a Repleader.

309. When the Court, from the Whole Record, is unable to determine for whom the Judgment should be given, by reason of the Issue as developed by the Pleadings having been an Immaterial One, it may order the Parties to Plead De Novo.

WHEN the Parties to an Action have Joined Issue and the Jury has rendered a Verdict upon a point which in its nature is not calculated to determine the controversy on its merits, the Court, not having the proper material upon which to render a Final Judgment in Bar for One Party or the Other, will direct the Parties to Replead the case from the point where there was a Departure from correct Allegation. Such a direction is only ordered after Verdict, for the obvious reason that until then the question for whom the Judgment should be rendered cannot well arise. Beginning with the first Defective Allegation, without regard to the side on which it appears, the New Pleading continues until each Faulty Pleading is replaced with a correct one, and there is a Joiner on a Material Issue, Which will make it possible to determine the case on the merits.

The usual case for Awarding a Repleader occurs when the defendant, Not Confessing the Plaintiff’s Cause of Action, sets forth some Fact which is immaterial and hence not calculated to decide the controversy on the merits, whereupon the plaintiff inadvertently traverses the Immaterial Allegation, upon which a Verdict is rendered. The Fact found by the Verdict, not being adapted to determine the litigation, and the Court, not able to render a Judgment on the merits, should order a Repleader for the purpose of producing a Material Issue. Thus, for example, where A brought Assumpsit against

an Administrator, and alleged a Promise by the decedent to pay money, and B, the defendant, Denied that he so Promised, the Plea neither Admits nor Denies the Promise of the decedent. The fact that B set up, to wit, that he had made No Promise, whether true or untrue, was irrelevant, and not responsive to A’s Allegation that the decedent had promised to pay the money. To this Plea, the plaintiff should Demur, but if he should mistakenly Traverse it, the Issue created would be an immaterial one, and a Verdict would not, therefore, be decisive as to the merits of the case. Accordingly, the Court should Award a Repleader to establish an Issue of Fact upon which a Judgment on the merits might be rendered for one Party or the other.62

The famous case of Staple v. Heydon affords another example of a situation which called for a Repleader. A brought Trespass against B, alleging that .8 had wrongfully entered upon a certain wharf in the Thames river. This wharf was held by A under a lease from C and adjoined a lot on the bank which was held by B under a lease from the same C. B Pleaded that he had a right of way over the wharf, derived from C; but the Plea was Defective in Form because in tracing title it showed that C himself was a lessee, and it did not show from what seisin in fee his term was derived. For this reason his Plea was held Demurrable in Form although it was Valid in Substance. In order to bolster his Defence, B in his Plea further alleged that he had no other way of egress from his lot to the river than by crossing the wharf, which Plea of a right of way by necessity was not supported by the Facts stated in relation to his title. To this part of the Plea A Replied that B had “another convenienter way to the river.” The Issue thus taken upon the Replication of A was

clearly Immaterial, and upon a Verdict for the defendant at the Trial, the Court held that the case was one in which a Repleader was proper. So, where, as in the instant case, a defendant interposes a Defense which in itself is valid, but then adds an Allegation of an Immaterial Fact, and the plaintiff mistakenly takes Issue upon that Fact, after which a Verdict is rendered, no Material Issue arises upon which the Court can determine the case upon its merits, and the Verdict, whether for One Party or the Other, fails to guide the Court as to who is entitled to Judgment.

In the example above, the Plea does not Confess the plaintiff’s Cause of Action by admitting his title, but Denies his right, although placing the Defense upon an untenable ground. As the defendant has not admitted a prima facie
right in the plaintiff, which he has not sufficiently avoided, but on the contrary has disputed the plaintiff’s right, but for reasons which are invalid, the plaintiff is not in a position to demand a Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict. The Verdict upon the Issue as to whether the defendant had a convenient egress from his lot to the river other than by crossing the wharf, was not determinative of the Issue as to whether the defendant had trespassed upon the plaintiff’s wharf. It follows, therefore, that the distinction between a case for Judgment *Non Obstante Veredicto* and one for Repleader turns on whether or not the defendant has by his Plea Confessed the plaintiff’s Cause of Action.” As Iceigwin observes: “If the Plea admits the Tort or the Breach of Contract alleged and undertakes to Justify or Discharge it by matter not sufficient for that purpose, a Verdict for the defendant merely proves the insufficient Avoidance and leaves the Admission still effective. But, if the Plea contains No *CON-fession* and only some Immaterial Matter

64. Lanthert v Taylor, 4 Barn. & C. 138, 107 Eng.Rep

Sec. 309 RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS Ch. 27

Die Rec Judge Issue

ig been Parties

n have lered a nature contro having ender a r or the ead the s a DeSuch a .ict, for Le quesbe ren, ith the gard to Plead- ding is ?re is a 11 make on the

pleader tfessrng s forth hence ?rsy on Θ madAllegaL The ~adapted Court, merits, )urpose us, for against

e). Cornl on the ~w York Ma. 195 580

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

of Avoidance (or evasion), there is no gi-oung for Judgment *Non Obstante*, and the Parties should be required to Plead to an Issue appropriate to determine the dispute.” 65

**STATUS OF RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS**

UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE

ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

310. In general, it may be said that the Retrospective Motions, as they existed at Common Law, were adopted in the Early Period of American Procedural Development. Subsequently, due to the lack of a Centralized Court System, under which the Trial Judges sat En Eanc, as in England, certain Modifications *in* the Procedures Regulating these Motions were made. But in substance these Procedures followed and still follow the Pattern developed by the Common Law Practice.

*Motions for New Trials*

WITH certain Modifications it may be said that the English Common-Law Practice as to Granting New Trials was adopted by the American Courts, being used to Review Errors that occurred at the Trial and which were not Apparent on the Face of the Common-Law Record. And the Grounds for Granting New Trials, as developed in England, have become the recognized Grounds for New Trials in both Common-Law and Code Jurisdictions. 68 The Four
Day Period after the Entry of the Verdict, during which, at Common Law, the Motion is normally made, has ranged from Two Days in the State of Washington to Sixty Days in Wisconsin. Rule 59(b) of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure provides that the Motion may be made as late as Ten Days after Judgment.


According to Millar, our Courts have followed the Common-Law Practice in allowing more time where the Motion for New Trial is based upon Newly Discovered Evidence. A Motion on this Ground may be made within a reasonable time, Not More than One Year from the Date of Judgment, under Rule 60(b) of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure.

The Motion for New Trial, as at Common Law, is still addressed to the Court’s discretion. While there is a distinction between a Motion Raising a Question of Law, and one incorrectly characterized as an “Error in Fact,” as, for example, where it is asserted that the Verdict is against the weight of evidence, it seems clear that in most Jurisdictions Errors of Law not productive of manifest injustice will not warrant the granting of a New Trial. Unfortunately, some American Courts have followed the 1835 English Court of Exchequer Rule, under which, in the matter of evidence, “an Error of Ruling created per se for the excepting and defeated party a right to a New Trial.”

The Common-Law Rule, under which a New Trial was not in order, even though mistakes may have occurred, if it appeared upon the whole that substantial Justice had been done, now seems the proper solution. Within forty years after it was adopted, the “Exchequer Rule” was abolished in England under the Judicature Acts, with the Rules of 1875, which provided that a New Trial on the ground of an improper Instruction by the Court or an improper Admission or Rejection of Evidence, was not to be granted unless “some substantial wrong or mis-

70. Id. at 338.

Sec. 310

RETROSPECTIVE MOTIONS

carriage has been thereby occasioned in the Trial of the Action.”

The Motion for a New Trial in America is generally no longer passed upon by the Court En Banc, but by the Trial Judge. This change in the Common-Law Practice resulted from a decentralization of the Trial Courts, and the development of Review of Error’s by separate Appellate Courts.

At Common Law a Verdict was indivisible, hence a New Trial involved a Retrial of All Issues, and this was true although the Motivating Error was not applicable to All Issues, and the Same Parties were also involved in the New Trial. One of the earliest recognitions of the Doctrine of Severability of Issues and Parties came in Massachusetts in 1831 in the case of Winat v. Columbian Insurance Co., and since then has come to prevail in Other States.

Related to this problem is that of whether a Court may condition its refusal of a New Trial on the plaintiff’s remission of an appropriate amount for that of the Verdict. In Wood v. Gunstone—decided in 1655, a New Trial was granted because the Damages were Excessive, and this practice has continued. Nor does the Court’s Action in this respect violate the Constitutional Right to Trial by Jury. A more difficult question arose when the Amount of Damages given in the Verdict appeared Inadequate, and there has been some doubt expressed as to the Constitutionality of Statutes in Some States prohibiting

72. For the details of this development, see Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court In Historical Perspective, c. XIX, Trial by Jury, § 7, The Motion for New Trial, 339 (New York, 1952).
New Trials because of the Smallness of the Damages Awarded.” The narrow English doctrine as to the Severability of Issues received a check in the decision of Chief Justice Doe of New Hampshire in the case of Lisbon v. Lyman, in which he took the position that a Party had a right to have a Prejudicial Error in a Trial corrected, but not a right to a New Trial if the error could be otherwise corrected, and that in making such correction it was necessary to destroy only what was erroneous when the latter could be severed from the former. This Ruling was followed in Other States, New Jersey making it the subject of a Provision of the New Jersey Practice Act of 1912. And in Dimick v. Schiedt, the problem dealt with the Issue in a negative manner, the Supreme Court holding that, regardless of Earlier Rulings, the Common Law at the time of the adoption of the Constitution “forbade the Courts to increase the Amount of Damages awarded by a Jury in Actions such as that here under consideration,”—that the practice of Increasing Damages, where the Damages given by the Verdict were Inadequate, was no part of recognized practice—and hence was to be regarded as in violation of the Seventh Amendment. Mr. Justice Stone, in a dissenting opinion, viewed this conclusion as untenable, and it has been urged that there appears to be no convincing reason why the Additur should not be governed by the same considerations as the Remittitur.

Ilughey v. Sullivan, 80 F. 72 (1897), 49 N.H. 553 (1870).

The Motion in Arrest of Judgment was used in the Early Period of American Procedure, and is still in effect in our Common Law Jurisdictions. In Some States, as, for example, Massachusetts and Rhode Island, its use was limited to cases involving a Lack of Jurisdiction of the Court, whereas in Maine, the Motion was abolished entirely in Civil Cases. No mention of the Motion was included in the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, but it has received Statutory Recognition in a Few States having Unitary Procedures, such as Arizona, Georgia, Indiana, North

LITIGATING THE CONTROVERSY

The Motion in Arrest of Judgment

THE Motion in Arrest of Judgment was used in the Early Period of American Procedure, and is still in effect in our Common Law Jurisdictions. In Some States, as, for example, Massachusetts and Rhode Island, its use was limited to cases involving a Lack of Jurisdiction of the Court, whereas in Maine, the Motion was abolished entirely in Civil Cases. No mention of the Motion was included in the New York Code of Procedure in 1848, but it has received Statutory Recognition in a Few States having Unitary Procedures, such as Arizona, Georgia, Indiana, North
Carolina and Texas, in a few other states such as Colorado and South Carolina, it has been used without such statutory recognition. In still other states, as in Kentucky, the motion in arrest and the motion for judgment *Non Obstante* were fused by statutory enactment, and this practice has been adopted in a number of other states. This latter motion, which is in effect a motion for judgment on the pleadings, is not restricted to a motion after verdict, and it had the combined effect of a demurrer and the relevant common-law motions. In New York the recognition of the judicial equivalent of the common-law motions was given statutory effect in 1908 when the legislature provided that where either party was entitled to judgment on the pleadings, the court might give judgment at any time after issue joined, and provision was carried forward in the civil practice act.

Under the federal rules of civil procedure the motion in arrest of judgment is not recognized, but the same work to some extent is done by the motion for judgment on the pleadings, which may be made in advance of the trial. And under the amendments of 1946, and the rule currently in effect, it is provided that if matters outside the pleadings are considered on the motion, such motion is to be treated as one for summary judgment.

The *Motion for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict.*

The motion for judgment *Non Obstante Veredicto* operated on the theory that the defendant’s plea had expressly admitted the cause of action stated in the declaration.

Under the federal rules of civil procedure the motion in arrest of judgment is not recognized, but the same work to some extent is done by the motion for judgment on the pleadings, which may be made in advance of the trial. And under the amendments of 1946, and the rule currently in effect, it is provided that if matters outside the pleadings are considered on the motion, such motion is to be treated as one for summary judgment.

**Sec. 310**

**Retrospective Motions**

84. 15 & 16 Vic. c. 76, l. 143, 144.
86. Rule 12(c).
88. 15 & 16 Vic. c. 76, l. 143, 144.
90. N.Y.Laws, c. 166 (1908).
91. Ibid.
92. Ibid.
Defense has appeared in the evidence, as the applicable principle now is, according to Lord Atkin in *Bell v. Lever Bros., Ltd.*,94 that “if the Issue of Fact can be fairly determined upon the existing evidence, they (the Parties) may of course Amend.”

The Motion for Judgment Notwithstanding the Verdict, of Common Law Origin and

it on

rite
dethe ion,


H 11932i AC. 161, 218. Development, must not be confused with the Motion for Judgment on the Evidence Notwithstanding the Verdict, as the former is governed by the State of the Pleadings, while the latter is influenced by the State of the Evidence.95

*The Motion for Re pleader*

THE Motion for Repleader, granted upon the Immateriality of the Issue as made by the Pleadings, has survived in most Common Law Jurisdictions 96 and in some other places.97 Where not present in its Common-Law Procedural Form, the same result may generally be accomplished by obtaining an Order for an Amendment of the Pleadings and the Award of a New Trial.85

90 For a full discussion of this new procedural de~ vice, see, Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court in Historical Perspective, c. XIX, Trial by Jury, 6, The Motion for Judgment on the Evidence Not~vitstanding the Verdict, 330435 (New York 1052).


97. 49 C.J. 580, § 812.

98. 1sf Millar, Civil Procedure of the Trial Court in Historical Perspective, c. XIX, Trial by Jury, 5, The Motion in Arrest an~ its Co~lgeuer~, 329 (New York 1952).

Repletion
Law upon ~ard the .s to here subEng~t of hose gest lich, was ;estn of been ated ~tice

Pro

t iS

ad-end
i efside
:ion, um

Sec.

PART SIX

JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW
CHAPTER 28
THE JUDGMENT

The Definition and Nature of a Judgment.
The Judgment the Object of an Action.
The Judgment at Law and Decree in Equity Compared and Distinguished.
The Classification and Scope of Judgments.
Revival of Judgments.
Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.
THE DEFINITION AND NATURE OF A JUDGMENT

311. A Judgment is the Award of Relief pronounced by a Court, upon the Facts Found.

At Common Law, on the expiration of the Rule for Judgment, if there were no previous Motion for a New Trial, or in Arrest of Judgment, and if the prevailing Party had had the Postea stamped and marked by the Clerk of the Postea, he might proceed to sign Final Judgment.

According to Blackstone, in Ancient Times a Judgment was represented as the determination and Sentence of the Law and not the determination or sentence of the Judge pronouncing it.1 The theory was that it would better command the obedience of the suitors and the support of the community if it was regarded as the Act of the Law, binding on all, as opposed to being treated as the Act of the Judges, who were not infallible. This distinction found expression in the Style and Form of the Judgment, which were said to be


"the Sentence of the Law, pronounced by the Court upon the Matter Contained in the Record." 2 Thus, the Ancient Judgment made no mention of the Judges,3 but read: "It is considered by the Court" (considetur est per curiam) that the plaintiff do recover his Damages, his Debt, his Possession, and the like; which implies that the Judgment is none of their own, but the Act of Law, pronounced and declared by the Court.4

THE JUDGMENT THE OBJECT OF AN ACTION

312. An Action or Suit is a Proceeding, the object of which is to secure a Judgment.

Under the Modern View, it may be said that the Final Judgment or Decree is the Award of the Relief provided by Law for the redress of injuries or the enforcement of

2 Id. at 305.


4 Ibid.

311.
312.
313.
314.
315.
316.

584
Sec. 313

THE JUDGMENT

585

rights, as that the plaintiff do recover his Damages, his Debt, his Possession and the like, and the entire Action or Suit is merely the vehicle or means of pursuing and making application for this Award. An Action or Suit may be defined as a Proceeding to obtain a Judgment (which term we may use to include the Decrees of Courts of Equity), which is the great end and object of all contentious proceedings. The Final Judgment is the Conclusion of Law officially declared and pronounced by the Court upon the Facts Found, after due deliberation and inquiry, declaring that the plaintiff has either shown himself entitled, or has not, to recover the redress he sues for. In Jurisdictions which have abolished the distinctions between Law and Equity as far as Procedure is concerned, the final determinations of any Action or Suit is called a Judgment.5

The natural right to relief for Breaches of Contracts would seem to be performance in Kind, to be enforced by an Order of the Court directing the defendant to perform under threat of punishment by imprisonment or fine. So, in the case of Tort, it would seem that the plaintiff should have a right to specific reparation, by a decree compelling the Tort-Feasor to restore the state of things that would have existed but for his wrong. Likewise, in the case of a claim
to property, the natural relief would seem to be a decree requiring the detainer to deliver possession of the property and make restitution of the very thing itself.

As a General Rule, however, Money Damages are the panacea of the Common Law; Specific Relief is regarded as exceptional and extraordinary, and generally attainable only in Equity, except in the case of recovery of Debts and of Possession of Real and Personal Property.


TEE JUDGMENT AT LAW AND DECREE IN EQUITY COMPARED AND DISTINGUISHED

313. A Judgment at Law merely determines the Matter of Right between the Parties, whereas a Decree in Equity not only determines the Matter of Right between the Parties, but orders the defendant to obey the Decree on Peril of Contempt for failure so to do.

THE Judgment of a Common-Law Court did not order the wrongdoers to do anything; it did not directly seek to compel them to repair their wrongs. It merely determined the Matter of Right between the Parties. Thus, the Judgment was simply that the plaintiff do recover the Damages, Debt or Possession, as the case may be. If the moral persuasion of the Judgment was not sufficient to move the wrongdoer, then the Law intervened in aid of the Judgment. It sought by the exertion of physical force through the Sheriff and the seizure of the defendant’s property on Execution to give the plaintiff the Redress Awarded, The Sheriff was invested with legal authority, under Writs of Execution, to seize, sell and transfer Title to the defendant’s property subject to debts, and by such seizure and sale to pay the Money Judgment out of the proceeds. But in no ease was it adjudged at Common Law that the defendant be compelled to act or aid the plaintiff or Sheriff to do Justice or Satisfy the Judgment. All that the defendant was required to do was to submit to the authorized acts of the Sheriff. The defendant could not be called before the Court and punished for a contempt because he did not actively exert himself in surrendering his property or disclosing its whereabouts to the Sheriff, so that he might carry out and Satisfy the Judgment. As Professor Langdell remarked: “The defendant may know where the property is, having purposely removed it or concealed it from the Sheriff; still he can-not be ordered to deliver it to the plaintiff. So, if a defendant has refused to Perform a Contract, a Court of Common Law can only give the plaintiff Damages, no matter how important to the latter actual performance may be.” Neither did the Common-Law Courts successfully accomplish a division or partition of real estate among the several coowners, nor compel the rendering of an account, though this was formerly attempted.

A Decree in Equity, as contrasted to a Judgment at Common Law, not only determined the Matter of Right between the parties; it ordered the defendant to do something about it, on peril of being jailed for Contempt if he failed so to do. This was done in the theory that in refusing obedience to the Decree, the defendant was guilty of a Contempt, not to the Chancellor, but to the King, and hence when he proceeded to punish him for Contempt, he used a Procedure unknown to the Common Law, the defendant being treated as if he were a rebel and contemner of the King’s Sovereignty.

THE CLASSIFICATION AND SCOPE OF’ JUDGMENTS

314. Judgments are either Interlocutory or Final. The former is one which defines the rights of the parties at an intermediate stage of the action, whereas the latter is one which ends the particular Action. The Scope of a Judgment is determined by its Form and Object.

Interlocutory Judgments

INTERLOCUTORY Judgments define the rights of the parties at an intermediate stage of the action, but they do not
Terminate the Suit. Probably the best instances of Interlocutory Judgments are those entered by Default in Actions of Assumpsit, Case, Covenant and Trespass, where the Sole Object of the Action is the Recovery of Damages, by which at Common Law only the Right to recover is determined, leaving the Amount to be ascertained by a Writ of Inquiry or other proceedings.


7. Id. at 1 38, p. 30.

The Judgment

587

Judgment which is followed by an Inquiry to assess Damages and then a Final Judgment; or, Interlocutory Judgments at Common Law may be such as settle an Issue in the course of the Action, but only to clear the way for another Issue to be raised in the same case, such as where the Judgment on an Issue of Law on a Dilatory Plea is in favor of the plaintiff, in which case the Judgment is, Let the Defendant Answer Over to the Action, called a Judgment Respondeat Ouster.10

Final Judgments

587

Final Judgments are instanced by the Judgments rendered where an Issue of Fact has been tried by a Jury, who also Assess the Damages. Also, at Common Law, a Judgment for plaintiff on a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief, where the damages are liquidated, and a Judgment for defendant on a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief, are Final Judgments. In these cases, there is nothing left to be done, and the Judgment, therefore, necessarily ends that Particular Action, as distinguished from an Interlocutory Judgment, which leaves something remaining to be done and does not Terminate the Action. Thus, a Judgment for plaintiff at Common Law on a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief where the damages are unliquidated, may initially be classified as Interlocutory, but it is followed, after assessment of damages, by a Final Judgment.” Final Judgments may be in different forms. If, for example, there is a Judgment for defendant on a Dilatory Plea, either on an Issue of Fact or Law, the Judgment is generally that the Writ be quashed, or the Action Dismissed. Though such a Judgment is not conclusive on the Merits of the Case, it

10. Stephen, A Treatise on the Principles of Pleading in Civil Actions, c. I. Of the Proceedings in an


nevertheless disposes of the particular Suit, and has been classified as a Final Judgment. 12

Under Modern Practice and Statutes, a ruling on a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief usually does not result in a Final Judgment, as where a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief is sustained, the Party whose Pleading is found defective is generally permitted to Amend his Pleading; and where a Demurrer to a Pleading-in-Chief is overruled, the Party who interposed the Demurrer is generally permitted to Plead Over.

REVIVAL OF JUDGMENTS

315. If no execution was had upon a judgment in a real action for a year, it was necessary to obtain a Scire Facias in order to execute. The same procedure was made available, by Statute, in cases where a Judgment had been obtained in a personal action.

A Scire Facias was also necessary where a new person was to receive the benefit of or to be charged by the execution.

WHEN, in a real action, Judgment was obtained at Common Law for a particular parcel of land, it was required that any execution thereunder be entered on the Roll. If no such entry appeared on the Roll for a year, execution could thereafter be had only by resort to a Writ of Scire Facias, which issued to show cause why execution should not be awarded under the Judgment.

The reason the plaintiff was required to resort to Scire Facias after the lapse of a year was because it was presumed, in view of his long delay in executing upon the Judgment, that the execution was released. The defendant would not be disturbed in his possession without having the opportunity to plead release in Court, or showing cause why the execution should not be had.

12. Id. at 319. 320.


588 JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

Ch. 28

However, with respect to personal actions, the Common Law rule was otherwise. Where a plaintiff had taken no process of execution for a year, he could not then resort to Scire Facias, but was required to commence an action upon the Judgment, and the defendant was obliged to show how the debt, which was evidenced by the Judgment, had been discharged.

This situation with respect to Judgments which had been obtained in personal actions was changed by Statute in 1285, and the plaintiff in a personal action was given recourse to a Scire Facias to revive his Judgment, thereby conforming the procedure available to him with that which prevailed with respect to judgments in real actions. However, due to the wording of the Statute some question arose as to whether this was true in the case of a Judgment obtained in an action of Ejectment, which was considered a personal action, or whether the Statute had failed to give the right to one holding a Judgment in Ejectment. In practice, however, the remedy was granted in such cases, which in fact appeared proper under a reasonable interpretation of the statutory language.

A Scire Facias was also necessary in cases where a new person was to receive the benefit of or to be charged by the execution, because of the rule that executions must correspond with the Judgments upon which issued.

14 lii. at 1000, 1001.

316. The Codes often define the Judgment so as to include both the Common Law Judgment and the Decree in Equity. Nevertheless, a Judgment on a claim essentially legal in nature retains the attributes of the Common Law Judgment, while a Judgment on a claim essentially equitable in nature retains the attributes of a Decree in Equity.

Under the Codes a Judgment is generally defined as the final determination of the rights of the parties in an action or a proceeding. And where the Codes have purported to abolish the distinction between actions at law and suits in equity, the final determination of the controversy, be it at law or equity, is termed a Judgment. Thus, the decree in equity has, from the standpoint of nomenclature, been replaced by the Judgment.

To consider this change as being of substantive import, however, would obviously be in error. At Common Law, as indicated in the above discussion, the Judgment at Law was limited to a determination of the matter of right between the parties, while the Decree in Equity not only determined the Matter of Right between the parties, but also ordered the defendant to do something about it, on peril of being jailed for contempt if he failed to do so. The fact that under the Codes the term Judgment now is generally used to embrace both situations does not change the fact that a Judgment on a claim essentially legal in nature will still have the attributes of the Common Law Judgment, while a Judgment on a claim essentially equitable in nature will retain the attributes of a Decree in Equity.

17. Wood v. City of Salamanca, 289 N.Y. 279, 45 N. E.2d 443 (1942); Bell Grocery Co. v. Booth, 250 Ky. 2101 S.W.2d 379 (1933).
19. Discussed supra at Section 313.

Sec. 317. WRITS OF EXECUTION

317. A Writ of Execution is an authorization to an Executive Officer, Issued from a Court in which a Final Judgment has been rendered, for the purpose of carrying such Judgment into Force and Effect.

1. In general, on the subject of Enforcement of Judgments by Execution, see:

Treatises:
- Carter, The Law of Executions (London 1706);
- Gilbert, The Law of Executions, &c. (London 1763);
- Burgham, The Law and Practice of Judgments and Executions Including Extent at the Suit of the crown (London 1815);
- Theobald, The Law for Abolishing Imprisonment for Debt on Mesne Process, Extending the Remedies of Judgment Creditors, &c. (London 1838);
- Berman, A Treatise on the Law of Executions (New York 1878);
- Freeman, A Treatise on the Law of Executions in Civil Cases and of Proceedings in Aid and Restraint Thereof (San Francisco, 1876).

Articles:
- Loyd, Execution at Common Law, 62 U.Pa. L.Rev. 354 (1913);
- Riddell, Why Pickwick was Gaoed, 17 ILL. L.Rev. 14 (1923);
- ‘Fieri Facias Lands’ in Upper Canada, 7 Canada Bar Rev. 448 (1929);
- Finley, Arrest of Defendant in civil Cases, 20 I.Cy.L.J. 478 (1932);
- Lunn, Modernized
There were a variety of Writs of Execution at Common Law against person and property, all of which must be sued out within a year after Final Judgment.

The Definition and Nature of Execution

AFTER Final Judgment, which in theory is the end of an Action, the plaintiff may, at any time within a year, sue out a Writ of Execution against the body, lands, or goods of the defendant, provided there be no Writ of Error pending, or agreement to the contrary.7

An Execution may be defined as a Judicial Writ grounded on the Judgment of the Court from which it issues,3 and is supposed to be Issued by the Court at the request of the party entitled thereto, to give him Satisfaction on the Judgment standing in his favor.4

The mere Judicial Declaration of the right to redress, the award of relief, can produce no practical benefit or result, unless the defendant, under its moral persuasion, voluntarily submits to its determination of the Matter of Right between the parties, and satisfies the plaintiff’s demand, If such voluntary action is not forthcoming, then the plaintiff must resort to some Form of Execution, the compulsory process for satisfying the plaintiff’s demand and putting the relief awarded by Judgment into Legal Effect by the exercise of Executive Force.

Execution, therefore, is in the nature of an Executive Remedy, supplementary to the Judicial Remedy, and may consist:

1. In placing the plaintiff in possession of his land or property by force, the actual restitution of the thing taken or detained;

7 Tidd, The Practice of the Court of King’s Bench

4. Id. at 324, 825.
   (2) In taking from the defendant what belongs to him and turning it over to the plaintiff, or selling it at public auction, transferring Title against the owner’s will, and applying the proceeds to satisfy the Judgment for money;

   (3) In seizing the goods or land of the defendant, and holding them as security until the defendant complies with the Judgment;

   (4) In seizing the person of the debtor himself and imprisoning him until he pays the debt or performs the commands of the Court.

At Common Law, the Execution following the Judgment, is either for the plaintiff or the defendant. If for the plaintiff, the Execution upon a Judgment in Assumpsit, Case, Covenant, Replevin or Trespass, was for the damages and costs; in Debt, for the debt damages and costs recovered; in Detinue, the Execution is for the goods or their value, with damages and costs. If for the defendant, upon a Judgment in Replevin at Common Law, the Execution is for a return of the goods. And, in the other Actions, upon a Judgment of Non-pros, Non-suit or Verdict, it is for the costs only. 5

An Execution must be sued out of the Court which issued the Judgment. And while supposedly awarded by the Judge or Judges in Court, in reality and in practice no such award is in general actually made. The party who secured the Judgment, and who has a Right to a Writ of Execution, usually sued it out of the proper office in the Form adopted under the Law to the Form of Action and Nature of the Judgment to be carried into effect. According to Martin,6 Executions fall properly into two general classes, each class turning upon the nature of the


S. Martin, Civil Procedure at Common-Law, c. XIV, Trial, Verdict, Judgment and Execution, Art IV, Execution § 381, Defined, 325 (St. Paul 1905).

Sec. 317

THE EXECUTION

Judgment to be enforced. These two types of Execution will now be considered, with attention being directed first to executions where the judgment awards possession of property, and second, where the judgment is for the recovery of money only, as a debt or damages.

Restitution of Possession

In the case of a Judgment awarding possession of land, a Writ of Possession to the Sheriff, commanding him to give actual possession to the plaintiff of the land so recovered, is an efficient means to put the sentence of the Law into Force. To accomplish the delivery, the Sheriff may take with him the Posse Coni–tatus, or power of the county, calling to his assistance private citizens, and may justify breaking open doors, if the possession be not quietly delivered. But in the Action of Detinue for recovery of personal chattels, if the wrongdoer were very perverse, he could not be compelled to make restitution of the identical thing taken or retained; but he had his election to deliver the goods or their value, an imperfection in the Law, which resulted from the Nature of the Judgment and the methods of Execution employed. 7

Execution Against Goods or Profits of Land THE only Judgments given by the Common-Law Courts were those for the delivery of possession, or for the recovery of a debt or damages. By the Common Law a man could procure satisfaction for his money judgment from the goods and chattels of his debtor, or the present profits of his debtor’s land, by the Writs of then Facias and Levants Facias. The Writ of Fieri Facias

THE Writ of Fieri Facias is a Common-Law Writ of Execution, directed to the Sher

7. For an enumeration and discussion of the various forms of executions In actions for the recovery of specific real or personal property, see Martin, Civil Procedure at Common Law, c. XIV, Trial, Verdict, Judgment and Execution, Art. IV, 382, pages 325—327 (St. Paul 1905).
iff of the County where the Action is laid, commanding him that of the goods and chattels of the defendant, in his bailiwick, he cause to be made or levied, the sum of damages, or the debt recovered, and have it before the King at Westminster on the return day.8

This Writ was issuable against privileged persons, peers and the like, as against other common persons; and against executors and administrators, in which latter case, the Sheriff was commanded to make the damages or debt out of the goods of the deceased.9 By this Writ, the Sheriff has authority to seize and sell all tangible goods and chattels of the defendant, to satisfy the Judgment.”

The Writ of Levani Facias

AT Common Law, because of the high esteem in which real property was held, such property was not actually subject to Execution for the payment of the plaintiff’s debts. Therefore, when the Writ of Levani Facias issued, commanding the Sheriff to levy the plaintiff’s debt on the lands and goods of the defendant, the Sheriff in executing the Writ, levied only on the goods of the debtor, and the rents and profits of the land, but not on the land itself.” The Sheriff was authorized to continue collection of the rents and profits of the land until the satisfaction of the Judgment had been secured.

According to Martin, the Writ of Lerari Facias, was substantially superseded by the Writ of Elegit, which will be considered next -12


10. Ibid.

12. Ibid.

JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

Ch. 29

The Writ of Elegit

The Writ of Elegit was authorized by the Statute of Westminster II (1285), Chapter 18. By reason of this Writ, the Sheriff seized the goods and chattels of the defendant, empannelled a Jury, who appraised the goods and chattels so seized, and, except for oxen and beasts of the plough, thereafter delivered them to the plaintiff at the price placed upon them in part satisfaction of the debt. If the goods and chattels proved insufficient to satisfy the Judgment, then one-half of his freehold lands were also delivered to the plaintiff, to be held until he had satisfied his Judgment or the debt out of the rents and profits thereof, or until the interest of the defendant in the land had expired. While holding the land for this purpose, the plaintiff was called a Tenant by Elegit.13

This Execution, or seizing of land under an Elegit, is of such high nature that after its issuance the body of the defendant could not be taken upon an? Other Writ; but where the Elegit could not be executed by delivery of lands for the reason that the defendant owned none, and where it appeared that any chattels and goods levied upon were not sufficient to satisfy the plaintiffs Judgment, the plaintiff might then sue out a Writ of Capias Ad Satisfaciendum.14

The Writ of Extendi Facias, OR Extent

THE Writ of Extendi Facias, or Extent, at Common Law, lay, first, for the debts owed to the Crown; second, on a Statute Merchant or Statute-Staple, or Recognizance in the Nature of a Statute-Staple; and third, on a

Execution, 383, Executions In Actions for the Recovery of Money, 325 (St. Paul 1005).


The debts owed to the King are either of Record, or Not of Record, but in both cases the Execution for them is a
Writ of Extent, which is either an immediate extent, or one in aid of the King’s Debtor. As to debts Not of Record,
the Remedy for recovery of them was governed by the Statute of 33 Hen. VIII, c. 39, 5 Statutes at Large 115 (1541),
which provided that all obligations and specialties made for any cause touching the King or his heirs, were to be of
the same effect as writings obligatory acknowledged according to the Statute of the Staple at Westminster.

The Execution of this Writ was directed against the body, lands and goods of the Crown debtor. And the Sheriff
was commanded to inquire by a Jury what goods and lands the defendant was seized of, to appraise and extend
them, and to take and seize the same into the King’s hands.

In the court of Exchequer, under a practice recognized and controlled by Statutes, a debtor of the Crown might
invoke in his behalf, the Writ of Extendi Facias, for the purpose of collecting a debt of equal amount due him
from any subject, the theory being that without the aid of such Writ the Crown might be unable to collect its claim
against its debtor. Such a Writ could also be invoked by a surety of a debtor to the Crown who had paid the debt
of the Crown Debtor. As so used the writ was called a Writ of Extendi Facias in Aid, as opposed to a Writ of Extendi
Facias in Chief, where it was employed only to collect debts directly due to the Crown.

The Writ of Capias Ad Satisfaciendum
The ordinary Common-Law Method of enforcing a Judgment where money only is recovered, as damages or a
debt and not any specific chattel, is now, as it anciently was,

THE EXECUTION

by seizure and sale of the property of the defendant. Execution against the person was, however, at an early date
extended from criminal procedure, so that the body of the debtor was or might be imprisoned until satisfaction was
made for the debt, costs or damages.

This species of Execution was by a Writ of Capias Ad Satisfaciendum, and was assumed by the Courts to be
available wherever the defendant was liable to be taken upon a writ of Capias Ad Respondendum, to compel appear-
ance at the beginning of the suit, or as a provisional remedy and security for the Judgment. At first this Writ was
available to imprison the body of the defendant in Trespass Vi Et Armis only. It was then extended to the Actions of Debt and Detinue by the Statute of 25 Edw. III, c. 17, 2 Statutes at Large 59 (1350), and
to the Action on the Case in 1503.” The original exemption from arrest at Common Law was probably due to feudal
reasons, rather than to a regard for personal liberty.

Where a defendant is at large when the Writ issues, it commands the Sheriff to take body of the defendant, to
keep him safely, so that he may have his body in Court on the return-
day to satisfy the plaintiff of the debt or

If he

And the fact that the Writ, among other things, took a man’s liberty, led to great hardship and injustice, as is well
portrayed in the writings of Dickens. In the Eighteenth Century, by Rules of the King’s Bench Prison, by Rules of
court, and by Statute, steps were taken to reduce the hardships of poor debtors confined in prison on Civil Process.
Thus, if a prisoner tendered sufficient security, he was permitted his freedom within certain limits outside the jail
walls. By the Statute of 32 Geo. II, c. 28, § 13, 22 Statutes at Large 495 (1759), known as “The Lord’s Act,” if a defendant charged in Execution for a debt not exceeding £1,000, which was later extended to £300 by 33 Geo. I, c. 5, 39 Statutes at Large 24 (1793), surrendered his assets to his creditors, except wearing apparel, bedding and tools of trade, not in excess of £10, and made oath to comply with the Statute, he might be discharged, unless the creditor otherwise insisted, in which case he was compelled to pay the prisoner a certain amount per week. Thereafter, in England, imprisonment for debt was abolished, except in the case of fraudulent debtors, by the Debtors Act, 32 & 33 Vict. c. 62, 109 Statutes at Large 201 (1869), and its amendments.

19. Manby v. Scott, 1 Mod. 124, 182, 86 Eng.Rep. 781, 780 (1059). In which Hyde, 3., said: “If a man be taken in Execution and lie in prison for debt, neither the plaintiff at whose suit he is arrested, nor the Sheriff who took him, is bound to find him meat, drink, or clothes (a); but he must live on his own, or on the charity of others: and if no one will relieve him, let him die In the Name of Cod, says the Law (b); and so say I.”

20. See article by Tiddell, Why Pickwick was Gaoled,

17 Ill.L.Rev. 14, 21 (1022).


22. Id. at 962—969 for a discussion of this Statute.

594

JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

THE LIEN OF EXECUTIONS

Ch. 29

318. A General Lien of an Execution binds property after the Writ has come into the hands of the Sheriff and while the Writ remains unsatisfied.

Where goods taken in Execution were permitted to remain in the custody of the debtor, at Common Law such goods might be seized at the suit of another creditor.

At Common Law and in England, the Writ of Fieri Facias bound the defendant’s goods from the time of its teste, so that a sale of the goods made thereafter by the defendant, though bona fide, might have been avoided.23 This was changed by Section 16 of the Statute of Frauds, under which the Writ was to bind the property from the time such Writ was delivered to the Sheriff to be executed, who was to endorse on the back thereof when he received the same. But even so, the property in the goods is not altered until the Writ is actually executed.

If the party dies after the teste, but before the delivery of the Writ to the Sheriff, the goods are bound in the hands of his executors or administrators. As to this situation, the Law is as it was before the Statute, as this involved no change of property by sale and for a valuable consideration.

And under the Statute of Frauds, it has been held that a party who bought goods at a sale under an Execution, which had been delivered to the Sheriff subsequent to the delivery of a prior Execution, was protected from the prior Execution, although, as to any other party, the goods were bound by the prior

23- This common-Law Rule prevailed in Tennessee:
coffee v. Wray, S Yerg. (Penn.) 464 (1835); cecil v. carson, 80 Tenn. 139, 5 S.W. 532 (1887); in North carolina: Palmer v. clarke, 1st L.C. (2 Dev.L.) 354 (1830), where it has been changed under the code, welsenfield v. McLean, 96 N.c. 248, 2 SE. 56 (1587).

24 29 Car. II, c. 3, 8 Statutes at Large 408 (1676).

delivery of the first Writ, under which the Sheriff ought to have taken and sold them

In Rogers v. Dickey, an Illinois Court, in commenting on the priority of Execution, declared: “First, that where two or more Writs of Fieri Facias are delivered at different times, either to the same or different officers, and no sale is actually made of the defendant’s goods, the Execution first delivered must have the priority, though the first seizure may have been made on a subsequent Execution. Second, but where the goods are actually sold by virtue of a
levy made under a Junior Execution, the sale will be good, and the property can not afterwards be taken from the purchaser by the Senior Execution. The only remedy of the party injured is against the officer.25

Where goods were taken in Execution and suffered to remain in the custody of the debtor, at Common Law, such goods might be seized at the suit of another creditor.26

Finally, a General Lien of an Execution binds property acquired after the Writ has come into the hands of the Sheriff and while the Writ remains unsatisfied.27

STATUS OF EXECUTION UNDER MODERN CODES, PRACTICE ACTS AND RULES OF COURT

319. The early Common Law Rule exempting lands from sale on Executions has been abolished by statutory enactments, and while under such Statutes resort must usually first

27. III. 495 (1844).
be bad to personality, the general rule now is that the Judgment creates a lien on Real Property.

Certain of the Common Law Writs continue in use, especially that of Fieri Facias, although they may be designated by other names.

AS among the Common Law Writs, Fieri Facias still flourishes, “frequently, it is true, in a code disguise.” 31 The Writ of Elegit was too feeble a Remedy to survive, although it was long used in Virginia.32


One of the surviving Common-Law Writs of Execution, the Writ of Fieri Facias, is employed in some States under its original name, whereas in others it is used under the Code designation of a Writ of Execution. The early Common-Law Rule exempting lands from sale on Executions has been abolished by Statutes, and while under such Statutes resort must usually first be had to personality, the general rule now is that the Judgment creates a lien on the Real Property.

See. 319

THE EXECUTION
CHAPTER 30
APPELLATE REVIEW

The Writ of Prohibition.
The Writ of Certiorari.
The Writ of Error.
Bills of Exceptions.
Status Under Modern Codes, Practice Acts and Rules of Court.

THE WRIT OF PROHIBITION

320. In general the Writ of Prohibition lies
to restrain judicial acts affecting either private or public rights; more specifically it is an Extraordinary Writ under which a
Superior Court

1. In general, on the subject of Appellate Review, see:


Articles: Kingsbury, Writs of Error and Appeals from the Territorial Courts, 16 Yale Li. 417 (1907); Sunderlad, The Problems of Appellate Review, 5 Tex.L.Rev. 126 (1926); Currim and Sunderland, Organization and Operation of Courts of Review, 3 Mich.Jud.Coun.Rep. 51 (1933); Crick, The Final Judgment as a Basis for Appeal, 41 Yale U. 539 (1932); Clark, Power of the Supreme Court to Make Rules of Appellate Procedure, 49 Harv.L.Rev. 1303 (1930); Iisen & Hone, Federal Appellate Practice as Affected by the New Rules of Civil Procedure, 24 Minn.L.Rev. 1 (1930); Sunderianrl, Improvement of Appellate Procedure, 26 Iowa iHey. 3 (1940); Brown, Fact and Law in Judicial Review, 56 Bar. A.L.Rev. 899 (1943); Pound, Appeal and Error—New Evidence in the Appellate Court, 56 Harv.LRev. 1313 (1043); Longdorf, Record on Appeal in Civil Cases In Federal Courts, 26 J.Am.Jud.Soc. 179 (1943); Bennett, Evidence Clear and Convincing Proof: Appellate Review, 32 Calif.L.Rev. 74 (1944); Nims, Shortening Records on Appeal, 4 F.R.D. 153 (1946); Yankwich, Release on Bond by Trial and Appellate Courts, 7 F.R.D. 271 (1948); O’Halloran, Right of Review and Appeal In Civil Cases Before the Judicature Acts 1875, 27 Can.B.Rev. 46 (1949); Buehsbaum, Appeal as of Right to the New York Court of Appeals on Constitutional Grounds, 24
THE Writ of Prohibition lies to restrain a judicial act; and judicial acts include all acts based upon a decision, judicial in its nature and affecting either a public or private right. Thus for example, it may be used to prevent a Judge or Court from proceeding in Execution of a Judgment after an Appeal has been taken; and it lies to prevent a Court of Criminal Jurisdiction from extending its Jurisdiction beyond the proper limits. It does not lie to restrain the institution of a threatened suit, but only one already commenced. If, however, the act is judicial, and can be performed without the existence of an action, Prohibition will lie. It will not lie to restrain an act which can be disposed of upon an Appeal or other ordinary Method of Review. It may be invoked to restrain an Inferior Court or other tribunal from doing an illegal act beyond its Jurisdiction, where it appears that there is no remedy by Certiorari or other adequate proceeding; and it may be used to restrain an unauthorized act, even where the Court has Jurisdiction. It operates only to prevent the doing of an act, not as a remedy for acts already done.

THE WRIT OF CERTIORARI

321. In general a Writ of Certiorari is an Order by a Superior Court directing an Inferior Court to send up the Record of some Pending Proceeding for Review; or it may serve to bring up the Record of a Case already terminated be-

Notes:

low, in Cases where the Proceedings are Not According to the Course of the Common Law, and there is no other Method of Review.

THE established method by which the Court of King’s Bench from the earliest times exercised superintendence over the due observance of their limitations by Inferior Courts, checked the usurpation of Jurisdiction, and maintained the Supremey of the Royal Courts, was by the Writs of Cetierari and Prohibition. A Writ of Cetierari (cause to be certified) is a Special Proceeding by which a Superior Court Orders some Inferior Tribunal, Board, or Judicial Officer to trails-mit the Record of its Proceedings for Review, for Excess of Jurisdiction. It is similar to a Writ of Error, in that it is a Proceeding -in a Higher Court to Supervise and Review Judicial Acts, but it was available only in cases Not Reviewable by Writ of Error or otherwise. It does not Review Proceedings within the Jurisdiction of the Lower Court, but inquires into the Jurisdiction and Regularity of the Proceedings. Ordinarily, the Writ did not lie after Judgment. But in some instances, as in certain cases of summary proceedings before an Inferior Court, where the proceedings were not according to the Course of Common Law,” and there was no other method of review, Certierari was permitted even after Final Judgment.” But Errors in rulings which occurred at the Trial could only be reviewed by Motion for New Trial, Bill of Exceptions, or under Modern Procedure, by Appeal. Certiorari does not lie to Review Executive, Ministerial, or Legislative action of other Departments of Government, but merely corrects encroachments of Jurisdiction, where some Judicial Officer has exceeded his authority, and there is no other remedy for Review by Writ of Error or Appeal.¹³


It is granted by the Court at its discretion upon Motion or Petition.” The Writ is gen erally granted only upon security given for it due prosecution, and is first used to bring \( \text{i.e.} \) the Record and Proceedings in the Court below. When returned to the Higher Court, th Party Respondent is notified to Appear by Notice Similar to a Summons, and the Cour proceeds to act according to Law and Justic in the decision of the case.¹⁵ The Return it conclusive as to the Facts, and is general3 the only thing to be considered by the Highei Court, though in some states the Proceedini is a Trial of the whole matter de novo. ThE Writ is also a Mode of Review of the Action of Administrative Tribunals and newly createc Municipal Boards or Officers whose Proceedings are of a Quasi-Judicial Character, atn not in the Manner of a Common-Law Court.’

visors, 8 Cal. 58 (1857); Illinois: Bourland v. Sny der, 224 Ill. 478, 79 N.E. 568 (1900); Iowa: DayS County v. Horn, 4 Greene (Iowa) 94 (1853); Michi gan: In re Robinson’s Estate, 6 Mieh. 137 (1858) New Hampslure: Logue v. Clark, 62 NFl. 1& (1882).


14. Farrell v. Taylor, 12 Mih. 113 (1863); Adam:

v. Abram, 38 Mich. 302 (1878); People v. Cunimings 88 Micli. 249, 50 NW. 310 (1801).

11. “It was at one time abused by suing out the Writ and not producing it until the plaintiff’s evidencm had been given in the Low-er Court thus easiust expense and enabling a defendant to hear his Adversar’s witnesses in advance. This was remedied by a Statute of 1601 [43 Eliz. e. 5] and another of 1624 [21 James I, e. 23, 24], the first allowing thE Court Below to proceed unless the Writ —vas pr- dued before the Jury appeared and one wa- sworn, and the other requiring the Writ to be produced before Issue or Deemurrer w-as Joined. Another Statute [21 James I, e- 23, § 4 (1624)] provided that causes other than those involving freehold or inheritance or title of land, lease or rent’ should not be
THE WRIT OF ERROR

322. At Common Law a Writ of Error was

-an Original Writ, issuing out of Chancery, at the instance of a Party aggrieved by any Error in the Foundation, Proceeding, Judgment

-or Execution of a Suit, in a Court of Record; and was in the Nature of a Commission to the Judges of the same or a Superior Court, by which they were authorized to examine the Record, upon which Judgment was given, and on such examination to Affirm or Reverse the same.

The Writ of Error: in General

AT Common Law, a Substantive Defect Apparent Upon the Face of the Record, was

-available at the Pleading Stage, on Demurrer; After Verdict and Before Judgment, by Motion in Arrest of Judgment; and After Final Judgment, by Writ of Error, which, if

-obtained and allowed before Execution, operated as a suspension of the Latter Proceeding till the Former was determined.

A Writ of Error was an Original Writ issuing out of Chancery, at the instance of the Party who was aggrieved by any Error in the Foundation, Proceeding, Judgment, or Execution of a Suit, in a Court of Record,10 and


was the nature of a Commission to the Judges of the Same or a Superior Court, by which they were authorized to examine the Record upon which Judgment was given. In other words the Writ of Error was an Order, directed to the Judges of the Court in which the Judgment had been given, commanding them, in some cases themselves, to review the Record; in others, to send it to another Court of Appellate Jurisdiction to be examined in order that some alleged Error in the Proceedings might be corrected. The first Form of Writ was called a Writ of Error Coram Nobis, or Corain Vobis, and was designed to reach the situation where the Error consists of Matter of Fact; the second, called a Writ of Error generally, was directed at an Error in Law Apparent Upon the Face of the Common-Law Record. The Writ was grantable ex debito justitiae [from or as a debt of justice, or as a matter of right] in all cases except Treasons and Felony.20

The strict Common-Law Record consisted of four parts: (1) The Process, which included the Original Writ and the Return of the Sheriff; (2) The Declaration and All Subsequent Pleadings, including Demurrers, if any; (3) The Verdict, and (4) The Judgment. After the Judgment has been entered on the Record, by removing this Record to the Appellate Court and Assigning Errors upon it, the unsuccessful Party in the Trial Court could secure a Review of any Error of Law Apparent upon the Face of Any Portion of the Common-Law Record, the objective being to
reverse or modify the Judgment for some Error of Law supposed to exist in the Proceedings as recorded. And in Ruling on such Writ, Errors Not Apparent on the Common-Law Record constituted no ground of Error. If the alleged Error was Not One Apparent upon the Face of the Record, but consisted of an Error that occurred at the Trial, such as the Improper Admission or Re-


600

JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

The Writ of Error is usually brought by the Party or Parties against whom the Judgment was given; but it may be brought by a plaintiff to Reverse his own Judgment, if erroneous, in order to enable him to bring another action.21 But the defendant was not permitted to bring it contrary to his own agreement or that of his Attorney.22

In general, a Writ of Error was available for any Error or Defect in Substance that had not been Aided, Amended or Cured at Common Law, or by the effect of one or more of the Statutes of Amendments and Jeofails.23 Thus, the Entry of a Judgment in a Form inappropriate to the Specific Form of Action, constituted an Error of Law. And if the plaintiff brings an Action of Ejectment and omits the Allegation of Ouster, alleging only Title and Damages, such omission of a Substantive Allegation will be available on Writ of Error after Final Judgment.

And in this connection, it should be observed that there was some doubt as to whether a Judgment on Demurrer could be Reviewed as a part of the Common-Law Record, without taking an Exception. Speaking to this very point in Hamlin v. Reynolds 24


23. See Chapter 20, Aider and Amendment


Walker, 3, declared: “It is believed that no reported case can be found, either in Great Britain or this country, in which it has been held that it is necessary to Except to the Judgment on a Demurrer, to enable the Party to have the decision Reviewed in an Appellate Court. By the Ancient Practice it was the Final Judgment in the case, on the Count or Plea to which the Demurrer was interposed, and Leave to Amend or Plead Over was rarely if ever given. And the Judgment on Demurrer, by the Modern Practice, is Final, unless the Court in the exercise of its discretion permits an Amendment, or grants Leave to Plead Over. The Judgment on the Demurrer is as much a Part of the Record as any other Judgment that is rendered by the Court in the Cause. The Office of a Bill of Exceptions is to preserve that of Record, which otherwise would not Appear of Record. By the Practice of Courts of Common-Law Jurisdiction, the Evidence in a Cause, the Decisions of the Court in Admitting or Rejecting Evidence, Affidavits on Motions, and the Reasons Upon which Motions are Made, the Giving and Refusing Instructions, and Various Other Matters, do not Appear of Record, and are no part of it, unless embodied in a Bill of Exceptions, and by that means are made a part of the Record in the case. In the decision of all such questions, the Judgment of the Court is not usually spread upon the Roll of its Proceedings. While Judgments by Default, on Demurrer, in cases of Nonsuit, Final Judgment on Verdict, etc., have by the practice at all periods, been so Entered and regarded as a Part of the Record. It would be improper practice, to embody a Judgment on a Demurrer in a Bill of Exceptions, as it would uselessly incumber the Record and unnecessarily add to the expense of litigation. The position that the Judgment on the Demurrer to the Second and Third Pleas in this case, was not Excepted to in the Court Below is-wholly untenable,” Sec. 323

APPELLATE REVIEW

The Writ of Error: Coram Nobis
WHERE a Judgment was Erroneous in Point of Fact only, and Not in Point of Law, it could be reversed by the
same Court, by Writ of Error Coram Nobis, or Quae Corant Nobis Resident, so called from its being founded on the
Record and Process, which were
-stated in the Writ to remain in the Court of the Lord the King, before the King himself; as where the defendant,
being under age, appeared by Attorney, or the plaintiff or defendant was a married woman, at the Commencement of
the Suit, or died before Verdict, or Interlocutory Judgment; for Error in Fact was not the Error of the Judges, hence
reversing it was not reversing their own Judgment.

BILLS OF EXCEPTIONS

323. A Bill of Exceptions is a Statement of Objections or Exceptions taken by a Party to
the Rulings of the Court on Points of Law, Signed by the Judge who made the Decision, and Sealed with the Seal of the Court.

AS observed in the discusElon of the Writ
-of Error, Errors Apparent Upon the Face of the Common-Law Record, after Final Judgment, were Reviewable by
Writ of Error. If the alleged Error was One Not Apparent Upon the Face of the Record, but consisted of an Error that
occurred At the Trial, such

The Origin of the Bill of Exceptions

THE Method devised had its origin in that Great Remedial Statute of the Common Law, the Statute of
Westminster II, 13 Edw. I, c. 31, 1 Statutes at Large 206 (1285), under which it was provided, in Substance, that
where an Error occurred At the Trial, such as the Improper Admission or Rejection of Evidence, the
Aggrieved Party could allege an Exception; if the Exception was not allowed, he could reduce the Exception to Writing, have it Signed
and Sealed by the Judge, and Attach it to the Record. This operation incorporated the alleged Errors into the Record
and when the Writ of Error issued, not only those Errors Apparent Upon the Face of the Common-Law Record, but if any, but also those Errors which occurred At the Trial. Obviously, a New Method was needed by which such Errors could be incorporated into the Record.

26.The time for reducing the exception to writing was not prescribed by the statute, but it was held in the case of Wright v. Sharp, 1 Salk. 288, 250, 91 Eng. Rep. 255, 258 (1705), that reason required the substance of the exception be reduced to writing when taken and disallowed.

JUDGMENT, EXECUTION AND APPELLATE REVIEW

Ch. 30

of the force and effect of Chapter 31 of the Statute of Westminster U, also went up to the Appellate Court for
Review. And thus the explanation of the distinction between Matters on the Record, and Matters in the Record, or,
as sometimes otherwise expressed, between Matter of Record and Matter of Exception, Matter of Record consisting
of Errors Apparent Upon the Face of the Strict Common-Law Record; Matter of Exception referring to those Errors
placed in the Record by the Bill of Exceptions.
324. Review is now generally by Appeal, which is a Statutory Proceeding. Where the Action is Legal in Nature, the Appeal is generally limited to a Review of Questions of Law. Where the Action is Equitable in Nature, Questions of both Law and Fact are Reviewed on Appeal, as was traditionally the case in Equity.

In 1848 the New York Code of Civil Procedure made an Appeal the only Form of Review in that State. Other States abolished the Writ of Error, but created a System of Review which included a Review of Legal Causes by Proceedings in Error, and for Equitable Causes Review on the lines of the Appeal in Chancery. In New York was at that time regarded as a New Action. In those States which did not adopt the New York Statutory Appeal, an Appeal in the Nature of a Writ of Error was adopted, including Alabama in 1853, Connecticut in 1882 and 1889, and Pennsylvania in 1889. The Method of Appeal in New York, being entirely Statutory, it was available only in the situations specifically provided for by the Code. In States where there was a Concurrency of Review by a Writ of Error and an Appeal in the Nature of Error, the term “Appeal” began to be regarded as covering both Types of Review. This gradual merger of the two principal Modes of Review was a byproduct flowing from the introduction of Equitable Defenses and Equitable Relief in Actions at Law.

In the States today, Review on Appeal is generally a Statutory Proceeding, with more of the characteristics of the Common-Law Writ of Error, rather than the Appeal in Equity, by which the whole cause was removed from a lower to an Appellate Court, and there tried the novo without reference to the conclusions of the Inferior Court. The Modern Appeal is more in the nature of a Writ of Error, in that the Appellate Court does not try the cause afresh or hear evidence. It is regarded as a continuation of the Original Litigation.

In an attempt to modernize and simplify Appellate Review in the Federal Courts, even before the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure were adopted, Congress, in 1928, abolished the Writ of Error in all cases, Civil and Criminal, except in cases coming from State Courts, and substituted the Modern Appeal as the Vehicle for Ordinary Appellate Review. The effect of this Legislation was to make Uniform the Procedure for Review in both Law and Equity, since prior to 1928 the Appeal, and not the Writ of Error, was the Method of Review from a Decree in Equity.

However, this Legislation did not remove the differences that had theretofore existed with respect to the Scope of Review for Actions at Law and in Equity. Perhaps the most significant difference was that Appeals from Judgments of Law Courts continued to be limited to Review of Questions of Law only, whereas an Appeal from an Equitable Decree permitted Review of the Facts as well as the Law.

Today, the basic Federal Judicial Structure is composed of District Courts, Courts of Appeals, and the Supreme Court. The District Courts “are the Trial Courts of the System” and exist in each of the numerous Judicial Districts
established by Statute. 36 Decisions of the District Court are Appeal

35 Marker, Federal Appellate Jurisdiction and ProCeture, 272—270 (Chicago 3935).

33. Sections 81—132, 3331—1359, Title 28 U.S.C.A.

34. Sections 41—48, 1201—12.94, Title 28 U.S.C.A.

36. Sections 1—40, 1251—3257, Title 28 U.S.C.A.. There arc, of course, other Federal Courts such as, for example, the Court of Claims (Sections 171—175, Title 28 T.J.S.C.A.), the Court of Customs and Patent Appeals (Sections 211—216, Title 28 U.S.C.A.), the Customs Court (Sections 251—255, Title 28 U.S.C.A.). The “Tax Court of the United States” is strictly speaking, not a Court but rather “an independent agency in the Executive Branch of the Government”, Bunn, Jurisdiction and Practice of the Courts of the United States, 31 (St. Paul, 1949).

36. Bunn, Jurisdiction and Practice of the Courts of the United States, 31 (St. Paul, 1949); See Sections 81—131, Title 28 U.S.C.A., for enumeration and location of these Judicial Districts.

able as of Right to the Court of Appeals, “except where a Direct Review may be had in the Supreme Court.” 37 The distinction between Appeals in Actions which are Legal in Nature, and those which are Equitable in Nature, is maintained, with the Appellate Court reviewing Questions of Law as to the Former and both Law and Fact as to the Latter, except that the Appellate Court also reviews Questions of both Law and Fact in Actions which are Legal in Nature when the Action is tried by a Court without a Jury. 38 In Actions which are Equitable in Nature, and those which are Legal in Nature and tried by a Court without a Jury, the Findings of Fact of the Trial Court may, however, be set aside by the Appellate Court only when they are clearly erroneous, and provided due regard is given to the opportunity of the Trial Court to judge the credibility of witnesses. 39

37 Section 1291, Title 28 U.S.C.A. This section by its terms refers only to “final” decisions of the District court; however, the following section, 1292, permits Appeals also from certain interlocutory decisions.


39 Federal Rule of Civil Procedure 52(a), Title 28 U.S.C.A.

40 Ibid.

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Abbott v. Kimball, 201
Abe Lincoln Mut. Life & Accident
Aber v. Bratton, 267
Abereromic v. parkburst, 268
Abington v. Lipscombe, 222
Abrahams v. Sones, 576
Acerro v. Pctrone, 113
Ackerson v. Eric Ri’. Co., 104
Acme Food Co. v. Older, 345
Acton v. Simonds, 355
Acton v. Symon, 320
Adair v. Loft, 233
Adair’s Adm’r v. Rogers’ Admfr, 361
Adam v. Arnold, 304
Adams v. Abram, 598
Adams v. Adams, 503
Adams v. Barry, 129
Adams v. Clark, 221
Adams v. Columbian Steamboat Co., 357
Adams v. Crosby, 342
Adams v. Cross, 117
Adams v. Filer, 515
Adams v. Freeman, 168
Adams v. Gardner, 129
Adams v. Bemmenway, 154, 166, 176, 177
Adams v. Munter, 578
Adams v. O’Connor, 161, 830
Adams v. Richardson, 201
Adams v. Wiggin, 421
Adams v. Wood, 268
Adamson v. Jarvis, 189
Addams v. Tutton, 305
Addington v. Allen, 575
Addison v. Overend, 421
Adler v. Prestwood, 246
Admiralty Com’rs v. The America, 165
Aetna Ins. Co. v. Phelps, 331
Aetna Life Ins. Co. v. Hoppin, 242
Ahitbol v. Benneditto, 113, 114
Ainslie v. Martin, 413
Ainsworth v. Partillo, 219
Aireton v. Davis, 201
Akerley v. Halnes, 161, 165, 192
Alabama Consol. Coal & Iron Co. v. Heald, 561
Alabama Fuel & Iron Co. v. Bush, 94
Albert v. Seiler, 570
Allan v. Talbot, 98
Alderman v. Way, 159
Alderson v. Ennor, 352
A Mine Mfg. Co. v. Barnard, 343, 358
Aleberry v. Walby, 333
Alex v. Shalala, 239
Alexander v. Capital Paint Co., 340
Alexander v. Shalala, 230
Alexander v. Vane, 351
Algeo v. Algeo, 341, 359
Allen v. Colliery Engineer Co., 525
Allen v. Crary, 280
Allen v. Ford, 358
Anderson v. Martinlake, 423
Anderson v. Talcott, 500
Anderson v. Todesco, 208
Andrew v. Deshler, 200
A Soc. v. Miller, 348
Allen v. Gray, 108
Allen v. Hartfield, 330
Allen v. Luckett, 425
Allen v. McBee, 342, 359
Allen v. Oppenheimer, 200
Allen v. Patterson, 12, 22, 90, 299, 300
Allen v. Scott, 7, 520, 521
Allen v. Smith, 213, 285
Allen v. Taylor, 113
Allen v. Player, 160
Allen v. Watt, 420
Allen Clark Co. v. Praneovich, 94
Allied Amusement v. Glover, 309
Allis-Chalmers Mfg. Co. v. City of Chicago, 561
Almada v. Vandecar, 263
Almond v. Bonnell, 118, 238
Almy v. Rarris, 201, 297
Alsop v. Sytwell, 137
Altes v. thomkeller, 208
Ambler v. Whipple, 505
Ambrose v. Roe, 364
American Ins. Co. v. haggard, 428
American Trading & Storage Co. v. Gottstein, 399
Amburst v. Sky,mer, 146
Amory v. Flyn, 209
Amos v. Cosby, 308
Anderson v. Boneman, 267
Anderson v. Courtrigbt, 235
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages
606

Andrews v. Allen, 312
Andrews v. C-allenth’r, 320
Andrews v. Hoeslich, 267
Andrew’s v. Ives, 321
Andrews v. Montgomery, 361
Andrew’s v. Morris, 125
Andrew’s v. Thayer, 108
Andrews v. Whitielend, 111, 132, 136, 327
Andrews v. Williams, 126
Andrews v. Childors, 376
Co. v. Iron Cap Copper
Baltimore & O. & C. B. Co. v. flUsols CenC~ K Co., 490
Bane v. Detrick, 221
Banik v. Bishop-Stoddard Cafeteria Co., 336
Bank of Bristol v. Ashworth, 411
Bank of Buffalo v. Crouch, 264
Bank of Columbia v. Hagner, 330, 340
Bank of New Brunswick v. Arrowsmith, 72
Bank of New South Wales v. O’Connor, 251
Bank of Orange County v. Brown, 188
Bank of United States v. Smith, 541
Banks v. Whetstone, 247
Bannister v. Read, 341, 342
Bannister v. Victoria Coal & Coke Co., 324, 364
Banorgee v. Hovey, 320, 321
Banyer v. Empie, 235
Barber v. Chester County, 276
Barber v. Rose, 516
Barber v. Summers, 145
Barber v. Vincent, 397
Barbour v. Breckenridge, 505
Barbour's Adm'r v. Areher- 126
'Barclay v. Howell, 238
Barkeloo v. Randall, 168
Barker v. Braharn, 168
Barker v. Chase, 161
Barker v. Justice, 559
Barker v. Lade, 126, 127
Bark-er v. Miller, 213
Barkhamsted, Town of v. Parsons, 297
Barley v. Roosa, 115
Barlow v. Garrow, 576
Barnard v. Duthy, 332
Barnard v. Poor, 180
Barnes v. Bartlett, 265
Barnes v. Brookman, 575, 576
Barnes v. Cole & Fitzhugh, 178
Barnes v. ford, 165, 193
Barnes r. Jcenyon, 105
Barnes v. Northern Trust Co., 144
Barnett v. Barnett, 400
Barnett v. Phelps, 198
Barney v. Dewey, 189
Barnitz v. Casey, 235
Barnum v. Landon, 311, 312, 316
Barnum v. Martin, 187
Barum v. Stone, 209, 219
Barr v. Craig, 352
Barrett v. Carden, 294, 295
Barrett v. Douglas Park Bldg. Ass'n, 285
Barrett v. McAllister, 510
Barrons v. Ball, 199
Barrow v. Burbridge, 555
Barry v. Peterson, 154, 166, 176, 177
Bartholomew v. Jackson, 319
Bartlett v. Perkins, 159, 190
Bartlett v. Prescott, 480
Barton v. Dunning, 212
Barton v. Webb, 134
Barwicck v. Barwick, 213
Bascom v. Dempsey, 157
Basset v. Maynard, 210
Bateman v. Allen, 122

**TABLE OF CASES**

References are to Pages

Bates v. Campbell, 233
Bates v. Conkling, 221
Bates v. Cort, 400
Batterten v. Yoakum, 233
Batit v. Bigelow, 239
Jnttrel v. Ohio RiVer By. Co., 130
Baum v. Tonkin, 282
Bauman v. Bean, 555
BaVarian Brewing Co. v. Retkowski, 462
Baxter v. Jackson, 332

Baxter v. McDonnell, 400
Bayard v. Inglis, 239
Bayard v. Malcolm, 150, 572
Bay County v. Bradley, 232
Bayley v. Bryant, 222
Baylies v. Fettyplace, 340, 508
Baylis v. Cronkite, 220
Baynes v. Brewster, 91
B.
B. B. Ford & Co. v. Atlantic Compress Co., 322
Beach v. Beach, 234
Beach v. Hotelkiss, 311, 312
Beach v. Ranney, 129
Beal v. Simpson, 437, 438
Beau v. Folmar, 03
Bean v. Atwater, 320
Bean v. Ayres, 128
Bearcamp River Co. v. Woodman, 201
Beard v. Converse, 510
Beaty v. Parons, 499
Beaty v. Perkins, 169
Beauchamp v. Bosworth, 364
Becker v. German Met. Fire

Ins. Co. of North
Chicago, 113, 145
Becker v. Smith, 157
Beekwith v. Shordike, 167, 179
Bedell v. Stevens, 572
Beee v. Knapp, 150, 189, 212, 218
Beers v. Shannon, 115
Beggs v. Chicago Bonding & Surety Co., 503
Bch v. Gerson, 250
Belc v. Dunlap, 284
Belalleek v. People, 295
Belasyse v. Hester, 402
Belden v. Laing, 263
Belford v. Woodward, 284, 360
Belle v. Broadbent, 125
Bell v. Lever Bros., Ltd., 583
Boll v. Wood, 188
Bell Grocery Co. v. Booth, 588
Bellant v. Brown, 163, 180
Bellows v. Shannon, 577
Belton v. Fisher, 325
Bemis v. Charles, 357
Bcrns v. Faron, 101, 108
Benden V. Manning, 326, 327
Bender v. Manning, 332
Bender v. Sampson, 294, 295
Bencs v. Bankers’ Life Ins., Co., 471, 508
Benjamin v. Bank of England, 214
Kaiser & Reppy CornLaw Plug 5—2
Benjamin v. Stromple, 220

Bennet v. Flikins, 437, 450
Bennet v. Pixley’s Ex’rs, 329
Bennett v. Appleton, 170
Bennett v. Connelly, 351
Bennett v. Holloway, 499
Bennett v. Kupfer Bros. Co., 510
Bennett v. Morley & Griffith, 504
Bennett v. Union Gent. Life Ins. Co., 396, 400
Bentley v. Smith, 115
Benton v. Brown, 103
Bequette v. Lasselle, 143
Bernard v. Wilcox, 424
Berry v. Harper, 326
Berry v. Stinson, 297
Bertie v. Beaumont, 157, 159
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Blake v. Foster, 122, 123, 448, 453
Blake v. Foster, 122, 123, 448, 453
Blake v. Foster, 122, 123, 448, 453
Blankenship v. Berry, 223
Bledsoe v. Frost, 298
Bledsoe v. Frost, 298
Bleeke v. Grove, 480, 482
Blatch v. Johnson, 113
Blick v. Brigg, 325
Bun v. Campbell, 178, 181
Bliss v. Arnold, 576
Biome v. Wabl-Henius Institute of Fermentology, 149
Blood v. Wilson, 341
Bloomfield v. Hancock, 284
Bliss v. Holman, 158, 214
Bloxam v. Sanders, 212, 214
Blum v. Whitney, 396
Blunt v. McCormick, 163, 180
Board of Comrs of Clinton County v. Hill, 468

- Bertie v. Pickering, 111, 112, 131
- Bertwhistle v. Goodrich, 268
- Betha v. Jeffres, 208
- Betha v. McLennoa, 247
- Bethlehem Borough v. Perseverance
- Beverley v. Holmes, 326
- Biddle v. Wilkins, 299
- Bieri v. Fonger, 159
- Bigaouette v. Paulet, 182
- Bigelow v. Cambridge, etc., Bigelow v. Stearns, 168
- Bilderback v. Pouner, 307
- Billings v. Lafferty, 200
- Bills v. Stanton, 404
- Bimelcr v. Dawson, 75
- Bingham v. Dickie, 114
- Bins v. Tyler, 128
- Birch v. Bellamy, 138
- Birch v. King, 402
- Birch v. Wilson, 469, 471, 489
- Bird v. Hempstead, 157
- Bird v. Holman, 438
- Bird v. Randall, 489
- Birmingham v. Andrews, 578
- Birmingham fly., Light & Power
- Birmingham By., Light & Power
- Birney v. Halm, 126
- Bishop v. Baker, 97
- Bishop v. Camp, 430
- Bishop v. Montague, 210, 218, 255
- Bishop v. Quintard, 400
- Bishop v. Salisbury’s Case, 137
- Bishop v. Travis, 531
- Bishop v. Young, 283, 290
- Bissell v. Spring Valley Twp., 406
- Bize v. Dickason, 352
- Black-borough v. Davis, 120
- Blackburn v. Baker, 296
- Blackmore v. Tiddlerley, 444, 468
- Black’s Bx’r v. Black’s Ext’s, 413
- Black’s Lessee v. Hepburne, 231, 232
- Blackstone Nat. Bank v. Lane, 103
- Blackweli v. Irvin’s Adm’rs, 825
- Blades v. Anindale, 213
- Blair v. Chicago & A. fly. Co., 576

References are to Pages

Blake v. Foster, 122, 123, 448, 453
Blakeslee v. foil, 341
Blakey v. Douglas, 222
Blalock v. Randall, 154, 169, 487
Blankenship v. Berry, 223
Bjattner v. Frost, 298
Bledsoe’s Ex’t v. Wadsworth, 308
Bledsoe’s Ex’t v. Wadsworth, 308
Bleeke v. Grove, 480, 482
Bletch v. Johnson, 113
Blick v. Brigg, 325
Bun v. Campbell, 178, 181
Bliss v. Arnold, 576
Biome v. Wabl-Henius Institute of Fermentology, 149
Blood v. Wilson, 341
Bloomfield v. Hancock, 284
Bliss v. Holman, 158, 214
Bloxam v. Sanders, 212, 214
Blum v. Whitney, 396
Blunt v. McCormick, 163, 180
Board of Comrs of Clinton County v. Hill, 468
Board of Highway Com’rs v. City of Bloomington, 319, 352
Board of Sup’rs of Sangamon County v. City of Springfield, 362
Boatman’s Savings Inst. v. Holland, 467
Bocock v. Leet, 13
Bodley v. Hoop, 97, 149
Bogardus v. Trinity Church, 139
Eoileau v. Itutlin, 466
Boles v. Pinkerton, 170
Bolton v. Cannon, 149
Bomeisler v. Dobson, 340
Bond v. Dustin, 572
Bond v. Mitchell, 263
Bond v. Ward, 221
Bonham v. People, to Use of Wilson, 473
Boone v. Eyre, 329, 467
Booth v. Farmers’ & Rochester, 324, 335, 336, Boraston v. Green, 208
Border v. Benge, 594
Bos v. Litton, 486
Bostick v. Brittain, 264
Boston India Rubber Factory v. Hol – 298, 361
Boston Type & Stereotype Foundry v. Spooner, 422
Boston & W. R. B. v. County Com’rs of Middlesex Co., 92
Bouchaud v. Dias, 405
Bourk v. Riggs, 498
Bourland v. Snyder, 598
Bovey v. Castelman, 279
Bowen v. Bell, 357
Bowlin v. Nye, 219, 220
Bowman v. DePeyster, 563
Bowman v. People, 576
Bowyer v. Cook, 431
Boyce v. Whittaker, 139

TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages
Brockley v. Slater, 120
Brolaskey v. MeClain, 234
Bronson v. Earl, 108
Brooke v. Brooke, 555, 564
Brooke County Court v. Guaranty Co., 126
Brooks v. Gibbons, 387

Fire Co., 358
Turnpike Corp., 296
Brooks v. Olmstead, 166
Brooks v. Scott’s Ex’rs, 840, 365
Brooks v. Stuart, 461
Brophy v. Illinois Steel Co., 547
Broughton v. Whallon, 165, 193
Brown v. Artelier, 462—464, 486
Brown v. Baltimore & Ohio B. Co., 489
Brown v. Barnes, 325
Brown v. Brown, 497
Brown v. Bussey, 283
Brown v. Cook, 120, 222
Brown v. Caldwell, 257
Brown v. Dixon, 97
Brown v. Edglington, 188
Brown v. Elliston, 247
Brown v. Gordon, 428
Brown v. Harmon, 291
Brown v. Hearn, 308
Brown v. Holbrook, 358
Brown v. Jones, 185, 390, 405
Brown v. Leigh, 563
Brown v. Perry, 461
Brown v. Bands, 133
Brown v. St. Charles, 209
Brown v. School Dist. No. 9 of Rutland, 351
Brown v. Sheedy, 263
Browa v. Smith, 285
Brown v. Stackhouse, 164
Brown v. Thurlow, 131
Brown v. Wallis, 207, 257
Brown v. Waterman, 220
Brown v. White fleer Tp., 201
Brown v. Knill, 331
Brownell v. Manchester, 213
Browning v. Bancroft, 266
Browning v. Cover, 220
Brubaker v. Pouge, 115
Bruce v. Beall, 556
Brueckshaw v. Hopkine, 101
Brudnell v. Roberts, 448
Brumback v. Flower, 189
Brumley v. Cronan, 13
Bruner v. Dyball, 212, 221
Brunswick Land Corp. v. Perkinson, 233
Bryan v. Bates, 487
Bryan v. Spurgin, 330
Bryant v. Herbert, 245
Bryant v. Sparrow, 162
Bryce v. Brooks, 221
Buchanan v. Buckner, 361

United States Fidelity &

Boyd v. Kimmel, 487
Boyd v. Weeks, 472
Boyd v. Fitchburg R. Co., 470
Boyer v. Bullard, 358
Boylan v. Meeker, 253
Boynton v. Reynolds, 503

609

Page 638 of 735
Braban v. Bacon, 133, 134
Bradlmc v. McLaren, 208
Bradhurn v. Celinerdale, 443
Bradford v. Ball, 106, 178
Bradford v. City of Chicago, 351
Bradford v. Stewart, 284
Bradley v. Chicago-Virden Coal Co., 561
Bradley v. Jenkins, 101
Bradley v. Powers, 474
Bradley v. Wyndham, 489
Bradner v. Demick, 476
Bradshaw v. Ashley, 234
Bradshaw's Case, 136
Brady v. Brady, 105
Brady v. Richardson, 414
Brady v. Spurck, 97, 305
Bragg v. City of Chicago, 119
Brainard v. Stulphln, 114
Branch & Co., Lx parte, 69
Brand v. Henderson, 340
Branham v. Mayor, etc., of City of San Jose, 398
Branwell v. Pennick, 168
Braswell v. McDaniel, 559
Bratton v. Seymour, 113
Bright v. Bynon, 568
Brind v. Dale, 508
Brisbane v. Pennsylvania B. Co., 104, 105
Bristol v. Burt, 219
Bristol v. Guise, 123
Bristow v. Wright, 124, 143, 323
British South Africa Co. v. Companhia de Mocambique, 105
Britton v. Bishop, 508
Britton v. Cole, 125
Brodbent v. Ledward, 245
Brook v. Headen, 250

Buckeye Cotton Oil Co. v. Sloan, 466
Bueki v. Cone, 119, 157, 183
Buckland v. Otley, 556
Buckles v. Harlan, 420
Buckley v. Dolbeare, 157
Buckley v. Duff, 57th
Buckley v. Thomas, 135
Buckmaster v. Grundy, 351
Fuekataff v. Russell & Co., 331
Buddington v. Shearer, 143
Buell v. Irwin, 234
Buffum v. Chadwick, 115
Buhler v. Wentworth, 478
Bulkley v. Dolbeare, 158, 160
Bulkley v. Londont, 327
Bulkley v. Norwich & Westerly Ry. Co., 393
Bulkley v. Storer, 188
Bull v. Mathews, 573
Ballard v. Bell, 291
Ballard v. Young, 219
BubIs v. Giddens, 502, 504
Bulloythorpe v. Turner, 473
Bulova v. H. L. Barnett, Inc., 895
Bulstrode v. Gilburn, 306
Bunker v. Shed, 101
Buntin v. City of Danville, 550
Burbank v. Crooker, 220
Burdick v. Green, 101
Burdick v. Kenyon, 526, 529
Burdick v. Tum-A-Lum Lumber Co., 257
Burgess v. Abbott & Ely, 393, 425
Burgess v. Sonther, 298
‘Burgwin v. Babcock, 513
Burk v. Webb, 213
Burke v. Daley, 165, 177
Burke v. Savage, 161
Burkee v. Great Northern Ry. Co., 267
Burnap v. Wight, 143
Burnett v. Lynch, 188, 190
Burnhain v. New York Co., 577
Burnham v. Webster, 502
Burnley v. Lambert, 250
Burns v. Curran, 238, 234
Burns v. Dockray, 189
Burns v. Morrison, 250, 251
Burns Bros. v. Cook Coal Co., 603
Burrass v. Hewitt, 147, 480
Burst v. Wayne, 575
Burton v. Hansford, 231
Burton v. McClellan, 180
Bush v. Nester, 265
Bush v. Bender, 263
Bush v. Hush, 263
Bush v. Dunham, 146
Bush v. Clover, 288
Bush v. Lyon, 214
Bush v. Thomas, 495
Burns v. Strickland, 166, 179
Dussey v. Barnett, 501

TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages

Butcher v. Metts, 571
Butcher v. Steuart, 247
Butler v. Borroum, 233
Butler v. Frontier Telephone Co., 231, 232
Butler v. Miller, 320, 321
Butler v. Tucker, 325
Butterfield v. Seligman, 365
Butterworth v. Soper, 486
Buttrick v. Allen, 361
Butts v. Collins, 101
Butt’s Case, 145
Buxendin v. Sharp, 201, 557
Byard v. Holmes, 194
Byers v. Ferguson, 268
Bynum v. Ewart, 145
Byrd v. Knighton, 805
Byrne v. McNulty, 307

Caddell v. Allico, 26
Cadman v. Markle, 843
Cadwell v. Farrell, 188
Cadwell v. Pray, 268
Cairnes v. Bleecker, 220
Cairo & St. L. B. Co. v. Woosley, 160,183
Calbeck v. Simanton, 322
Caldwell v. Cowan, 212, 215
Caldwell v. Eaton, 213

Page 640 of 735
Castleberry v. Pennell, 115
Castor v. McShaffery, 21.2
Cates v. West, 600
Catholic Bishop of Chicago v. Bauer, 341, 342
Catlin v. Birchard, 351
Caulfield v. Sanders, 441
Cave v. Mountain, 168
Cearnes v. Ining, 316
Cecil v. Carson, 594
Central of Georgia By. Co. v. Williams, 461
Central Pac. It. Co. v. Board of Equalization of
Placer County, 598
Central Transp. Co. v. Pullman’s Palace Car Co., 547
Cernahan v. Chrisler, 228
Challe v. Belshaw, 138
Chamberlain v. Greenfield, 112, 137, 138, 153
Chamberlain v. Hazewood, 165, 177, 179, 182, 191, 192
Chamberlain v. Porter, 334
Chamberlain v. Shaw, 221
Chambers v. Donaldson, 162
Chambers v. Handley’s Heirs, 232
Chambers v. Hunt, 499
Chambers v. Union Nat Bank, 352
Chance v. Carter, 233
Chancy v. Win, 520
Chandler v. Colcord, 268
Chandler v. Lincoln, 498, 409
Chandler v. Roberts, 408, 533
Chandler v. Spear, 427
Chandler v. State, 364
Channon v. Lusk, 220
Chaplin v. Jenkins, 268
Chapman v. Barney, 563
Chapman v. Pickersgill, 142
Chapple v. Durston, 490, 491, 502
Charles v. Elliott, 250
Charles H. Thompson Co. v. Burns, 128
Chanley v. Winstanley, 333
Chatteris v. Cowper, 162
Chatterton v. Saul, 257
Cheasloy v. Barnes, 125, 162
Cheda v. Bodkin, 93
Cheeham v. Lewis, 108
Cheevers v. Merrick, 466
Chemung Canal Bank v. Lowery, 491
Cheney v. Cheney, 234
Cheney v. Ricks, 311, 316
Cheney v. Straube, 308
Chesapeake & O. Canal Co. v. Knapp, 340
Chester v. Willton, 126, 127
Cheuning v. Wilkinson, 507
Chicago Bldg. & Mfg. Co. v. Tallbottun Creamery &
Mfg. Co., 125
Chicago, B. & Q. It. Co. v. Dickson, 427
Chicago, City of v. Babcock, 489, 514
Chicago, City of v. English, 506
Chicago, City of v. McDonough, 183
Chicago, City of v. McLean, 187
Chicago, City of v. Selz, Schwab & Co., 184, 185
Chicago, City of v. Speer, 427
Chicago City fly. Co. v. Jennings, 185
Chicago City fly. Co. v. Leach, 489
Chicago City By. Co. v. Shreve, 185
Chicago, U. & St F. U. Co. v. Hoyt, 308
Chicago, B. I. & P. It. Co. v. Todd, 421,427
Chicago Terminal Transfer B. Co. v. Young, 145
Chicago Title & Trust Co. v. Core, 154, 486, 487
Chicago, W. D. By, Co. v. Ingraham, 97, 147, 148
Chicago & A. B. Co. v. Clause, 555, 558, 573, 574
Chicago & A. B. Co. v. Murphy, 573
Chicago & A. B. Co. v. O'Brien, 384
Chicago & H. I. B. Ca v. Hines, 574
Chicago & N. W. v. Peacock, 193
Chicago & N. W. By Co., v. Alien, 396
Chicago & P. B. Co. v. Munger, 421, 428
Chieliering v. Raymond, 209, 212, 214, 218, 219
Childes v. Wescot, 122
Childress v. Emory, 277, 344
Chiles v. Davis, 234
Chihra v. Russell, 263
Chirac v. Reinicker, 240
Ohitty v. flame, 418
Choctaw Coal & Mining Co. v. tilllich, 198
Christensen v. Hanna, 257

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages 612

Clair v. Guan, 221
Clinton v. Morton, 477
Clinton Wire-Cloth Co. v. Gardner, 575
Clough v. Penney, 179
Cloves v. Williams, 283
Coates v. Hewitt, 284
Cobb v. Lucas, 114
Cobb v. Miller, 402
Coburn v. Hopkins, 521
Cochran v. Tatum, 340

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages 612

Christo v. Nicola, 431
Christopher v. Detroit, L & N. It. Co., 23
Christy v. Farlin, 304
Church v. Brownswick, 134
Church v. Gilman, 91
Church v. --unford, 97, 187
Churcher v. Stringer, 354
Churchill v. Churchill, 169
Citizen's Bank of Baltimore v. Grafflau, 352
Citizens Gaslight & Heating Co. v. Granger, 342
City Council of Charleston v. King, 113, 114
City of. See under name of city.
Claffin v. Boston, etc, B. Co., 219
Claffin v. Godfrey, 353
Claffin v. Hawes, 577
Claffin v. Wilcox, 154, 166, 167, 176, 178, 182
Claggett v. Simes, 400
Clare v. State, 139
Clark v. Chamberlain, 223
Clark v. Clark, 238
Clark v. Draper, 214
Clark v. Parley, 576
Clark v. Hale, 222
Clark v. Bolt, 480
Clark v. Land Co., 387
Clark v. Lewis, 268
Clark v. Lineberger, 408
Clark v. Maloney, 213
Clark v. Moore, 357
Clark v. Norton, 412
Clark v. Reed, 3(34
Clark v. Smith, 159
Clark v. Van Cleef, 319
Clark v. Weis, 380
Clark v. Zcigler, 308
Clarke v. Crandall, 330
Clarke v. Webb, 360
Clarkson v. Gifford, 105
Clay v. City of St. Albans, 116
Clay Fire & Marine Ins. Co. v. Wusterhausen, 390
Clayton v. Lemen, 510
Clayton v. Munger, 403
Clearwater v. Meredith, 482
Cleaves v. Herbert, 117, 264, 265
Clement v. Boone, 218
Clementi v. Goulding, 180
Clements v. Flight, 497
Cleveland v. Rodgers, 294
Clifford v. Cony, 402
Cocksedge v. Fansliaw, 547
Codner v. Jenkins, 320
Codner v. Dalby, 133
Coffee v. Wray, 504
Coffin v. Anderson, 213
Coffin v. Basset, 520
Coffin v. Coffin, 131, 132
Coffin v. Hall, 384
Cobens v. Virginia, 69
Cohoon v. Simmons, 100
Colborne v. Stockdale, 441 442
Cole v. Driskell, 208
Cole v. Fisher, 168
Cole v. Hawkins, 526
Cole v. Hindson, 169
Cole v. Maunder, 399
Cole v. Terry, 220
Colebrook, Town of v. Merrill, 216, 576
Colegrove v. New York & New Haven B. B. Company, 547
Coles v. Carter, 486
Cole’s Case, 169
Collet v. Finn, 463, 469
Collet v. Lord Keith, 124, 225
Collett v. Thompson, 374
Collier v. Jencks, 577
Collins v. Blantern, 503, 507
Collins v. Evans, 263
Collins v. Gibbs, 329, 331, 398, 571
Collins v. Lynch, 160
Collins v. Modisett, 361
Collins v. Montemy, 509
Collins v. Sanitary Dist. of Chicago, 144
Collins v. Trotter, 309
Colt v. How, 333
Colt v. Boot, 331, 575
Colt Co. v. Kyzer, 563
Colt & Glover v. Bishop of Coventry & Lichfield, 387
Columbia Heating Co. v. O’Halloran, 512
Colwell v. Brower, 500
Colwill v. Reeves, 162
Combs v. Steele, 340
Commercial Ins. Co. v. Treasury Bank, 575
Commissioner v. Green, 298
Commissioner v. Perkins, fl3
Commissioner v. Shearman, 113
Commissioners of Treasury v. Brevard, 143
Commonwealth v. Hart, 145
Compher v. People, 397, 399
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Compton v. People</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comstock v. McEvoy</td>
<td>481</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comstock v. Oderman</td>
<td>486</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conyns v. Boyer</td>
<td>464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conant v. Barnard</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conaway v. Pepper</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Concord Apartment House Co. v. O’Brien</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Condict v. Erie B. Co.</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conffrey v. Stark</td>
<td>296</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conger v. Johnston</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conffrey v. Stark</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Courtney v. Phelps</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Covell v. Carpenter</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cover v. Armstrong</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Covington v. Lide’s Exrs</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coy v. Cooper</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox v. Hagan</td>
<td>92, 459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coxe v. Galiek</td>
<td>396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coxe v. RobbinsE</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coyle v. Coyle</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coon v. Missouri</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crom v. Ilutehnmonso</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane v. Grassman</td>
<td>350, 363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conkey v. Kingman</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conklin v. Bush</td>
<td>312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Connati v. Bale</td>
<td>164, 221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Connolly v. Pierce</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Connoss v. Neir</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conservation Co. v. Stimpson</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consolidated Coal Co. of St. Louis v. Oelt3en</td>
<td>420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental Life Ins. Co. v. itogers</td>
<td>128, 329—331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continuso v. Ensley Co.</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conwell v. Clifford</td>
<td>293</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Cook</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Coy</td>
<td>146, 147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Dade</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Hopper</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Howard</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook v. Scott</td>
<td>15, 392, 472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook &amp; Songate’s Case</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooke v. England</td>
<td>834</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooke v. Graham’s Adm’r</td>
<td>393, 555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooke v. Preble</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooke v. Simms</td>
<td>324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooley v. Penfield</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomait v. Stanley</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Bissell</td>
<td>98, 149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Cooper</td>
<td>214, 352, 427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Beermanlace</td>
<td>476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Landon</td>
<td>324, 364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Lawrence</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Monke</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Newman</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper v. Watson</td>
<td>246, 506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooperwood v. loiton</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copeland v. Flowers</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copeland v. Hugo</td>
<td>562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coppin v. Humard</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corbett v. Paelclington</td>
<td>188, 304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corbitt v. Brong</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corey v. Bath</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corley v. Pentz</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cornwalliss v. Sas-ery</td>
<td>184, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corwin v. Wallace</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Cory v. Board of Chosen Freeholders of Somerset County, 352, 862
Coryton v. Lithbye, 134
Costar v. DaVies, 514
Cotteral v. Cummins, 154, 170
Coterill v. Cuff, 323, 324
Coterill v. Starkey, 486
Couch v. Ingersoll, 324, 329
Coughlin v. Blumenthal, 132
Count Joannes v. Burt, 129
Countess of Northumberland's Case, 481
Countess of Salop v. Crompton, 100
County v. Pacific Coast Borax Co., 74
County Com'rs of Hartford County v. Wise, 103
County Court of Brooke County v. United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co., 369, 375
Crary v. Goodman, 239
Crease v. Barrett, 580
Crecey v. Jay, 94
Cree v. Kirkham, 351, 358
Creel v. Michigan Cent. B. Co., 148
Creigh v. Shatto, 233
Crenshaw v. Moore, 97
Cresson v. Stout, 257
Crisfield v. State, to Use of Hand, 351
Crispin v. Williamson, 112
Critenden v. French, 126
Crocker v. Atwood, 214
Croeler v. Beal, 424
Crockett v. Lashbrook, 118
Crockett v. Moore, 284
Croft v. Rains, 91
Crogate's Case, 520, 524
Cromelien v. Brink, 257
Crook v. Pitcher, 105
Crooker v. Huteman, 188
Crooker v. Willard, 97
Cross v. Barber, 222
Cross v. Cheshire, 351
Cross v. City of Chicago, 556
Cross v. Moore, 364
Cross v. United States, 295, 297
Crosse v. Hunt, 433, 455
Croston v. McVieker, 239
Crouch v. Fowlo, 305
Crousillat v. McCall, 312
Crow v. Mark, 312
Cruikshank v. Brown, 98
Cruikshank v. Comyns, 114
Crum v. Eliston, 262
Crump v. Mims, 6, 22
Cryps v. Baynton, 112, 134
Cubbins v. Mississippi River Comm'n, 283, 848
Cudlip v. Bundle, 124
Cuilen v. O'Hara, 272
Culver v. Avery, 189
Culver v. Johnson, 509
Cumberland Valley B. Co. v. McLeanhan, 235
Cummings v. Gray, 404
Cummings v. Smith, 514
Commins v. Holmes, 205
Cunningham v. Dean, 234
Coupledike v. Coupledike, 246
Curtis v. Cane, 22/1

614
Cunningham v. Macon & B. B. B. Co., 226
Cunningham v. Morrell, 329
Cuppledle v. Terwhit, 480
Curl v. Lowell, 163
Curley v. Dean, 325, 326
Curnow v. Phoenix Ins. Co., 444
Curry v. People, 126
Curtis v. Curtis, 50
Curtis v. Martin, 472
Curtis Funeral Home v. Smith
Cushing v. Dill, 296
Cushnian v. Hayes, 469, 472
Cuthbertson v. Irving, 119, 124
Cutler v. Southern, 133, 525, 527, 556
Cutler v. Wright, 406
Cutter v. Powell, 288, 339, 341

Da Costa v. Clarke, 557
Daggett v. Davis, 209, 218, 222
Dahill v. Booker, 223
Dahlberg v. P15-se, 314
Dal v. Lloyd, 352
Dale v. Phillipson, 111, 112
Dallam v. Filer, 158
Dally v. King, 150
Dalson v. Bradberry, 98
Dalton v. Favour, 167, 178, 181
Dalton v. Rhode Island Co., 202
Dame v. Dame, 207, 244, 247, 248, 250, 251, 266
Dana v. Bryant, 460, 465, 406
Daniel v. Holland, 157
Daniels v. Ball, 214
Daniels v. Clegg, 166, 167
Daniels v. Foster & Kleber, 221, 358
Daniels v. Pond, 159, 160, 164, 208
Dancr v. Mailonee, 364
Danziger v. Boyd, 239
Darling v. Simpson, 423
Darrah v. Baird, 208
Dartmull v. Howard, 324, 326
David v. David's Adm'r, 132
David flutter & Co. v. McAulhlin, 425
Davidson v. Waldron, 212
Davidson v. Watts, 414
Davies v. Peuton, 400
Davis v. Ayres, 842
Davis v. Burgess, 515
Davis v. Burtin, 473
Davis v. Clancy, 150, 160
Davis v. Duncan, 221
Davis v. Easley, 257
Davis v. Green, 445
Davis v. Hurt, 220
Davis v. Jones, 208
Davis v. Judge, 238
Davis v. Mathews, 462
Davis v. Ransom, 535
Davis v. Shoemake, 277

TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages
Davis v. Smith, 339
Davis v. Taylor, 208
Davis v. Wood, 160
Davis County v. Horn, 508
Davis v. Gill, 169
Dills v. Stobie, 466, 467
Dills v. Kinney, 113
DiMarco v. Builders' Iron Foundry, 202
Dimick v. Schiedt, 581
Dinet v. Pflrslting, 515
Distilling & Cattle Feeding Ca. v. People, 400
Ditebam v. Bond, 161, 165, 182
Diviviier v. French, 397
Dixon v. Swenson, 375—877
Dob v. Halsey, 423
Dobbias v. Delaware, L. & W. B. Go., 127
Dobby v. Edmunds, 131
Dobb v. Gullidge, 160
Documenque v. Daveaunt, 406
Dodge v. Adams, 327
Dodge v. Coddington, 329
Dodge v. Colby, 104
Dodge v. Irvington Co., 284
Doe v. Dyeball, M. & Ivi., 283
Doe v. Penfield, 421, 422
Doe v. Wright, 118, 465
Doe ex dam. Alabama State Land Co. v. McCullough, 243
Doe ex dam. Brachshaw v. Plowman, 111
Doe ex dem. Campbell v. Fletcher, 233
Doe ex dem. Da Costa v. Wharton, 234
Doe er dem. Harding v. Cooke, 233
Doe ex den. Moore v. Hill, 283
Doe ex den. Shewen v. Wroot, 234
Doe ex den. Townsend v. Roe, 243
Doe ex den. Whatley v. Telling, 235
Tjoebler v. Fisher, 340
Dole v. Kennedy, 263, 498
Dole v. Weeks, 324
Dolpb v. Ferris, 164
Doming Regina v. Pary, 599
Donaboe v. Emery, SOS
Donlin v. McQuadc, 221
Donnelly v. Foote, 100
Doody v. Collins, 263
Doolittic v. Selectmen of Branford, 398
Doose v. Doole, 94
Doremus v. Selden, 351
Dornan v. Kane, 220
Dome v. Cashford, 143
Don v. Dudderar, 257
Dorsey v. Eagle, 159, 162
Dorsey v. Lawrence, 284
Doswell v. Impcy, 168
Doty v. Martin, 321
Douglas v. Beasley, 558
Douglas v. Bekhor, 423
Douglass v. Johnnessey, 255, 304
Douglass v. libbey, 233
Douglass v. Satterlee, 388
Doulsom v. Matthews, 104, 105
Devastoa—Payne, 117, 131, 182, 346
Dover v. Bawlings, 498
Dow v. Epping, 478
Do—vd v. Wadsworth, 223
Don’ic v. Priddie, 402
Dowland v. Slade, 150
Downer v. Garland, 108
Downey v. Colorado Fuel & Iron Co., 396
Doyle v Wilkinson, 276
Dozier v. Joyce, 497
Drake v. Drake, 481
Drake v. Leighton, 590
Drew v. Snauldin, 160, 169, 218
Drew v. Lainson, 438
Dubois v. Delaware & H. Canal
Dii Bois v. Seymour, 361
Dubois’ Ezra v. Van Orden, 141
Duchess of Norfolk’s Case, 373
Dudlow v. Waterman, 525
Dufield v. Scott, 474
Dugan v. Nichols, 266
Dugan v. Hammond, 238
Dugger v. Oglesby, 307
Duke of Newcastle v. Wright, 12.3
Dukes v. Gostins, 143
Dutont v. Lockwood, 107
Dumsday v. Hughes, 120
Duncan v. Journey, 239
Duncan v. Markley, 334
Duncan v. Spear, 213, 214, 493
Dundass v. Lord Weymouth, 143
Dunham v. Western Union Telegraph Co., 489
Dunham v. Wyck-off, 264
Dunlevy v. Fenton, 402
Dunstall v. Dunstall, 131
Dupee v. Blake, 400
Duppa v. Mayo, 138, 804
Durden v. Barnett, 180, 201
Duviivier v. French, 199
Duyckinek v. Clinton Mutual Ins. Co., 66, 103
Dwell v. Moron, 222
Dwight Ilg. Co. v. Holmes, 94
D’Wolf v. Rabaud, 412, 414
Dye v. Leatherdale, 526
Dyer v. Brown, 498
Dyer v. Day, 234, 490
Dyer v. Pearson, 251
Dyett v. Peadleton, 468

**TABLE OF CASES**

References are to Pages

East v. Cain, 428
East India Co. v. Glover, 398
Eastnure v. Laws, 405
Easton v. Pratchett, 577
East St. Louis, City of v. Flannigan, 465
East St. Louis Connecting fly. v. Wabash, St. L. & I.

By. Co., 155

**F**

Eames v. Salem & L. B. Co., 177
Earl of Palmolth v. George, 277
Earl of Kerry v. Baxter, 147, 869
Earl of Manchester v. Vale. Ill, 472, 473
Earle v. Bickford, 353
Ifason v. Newman, 210
East v. Cain, 428
East India Co. v. Glover, 398
Eastnure v. Laws, 405
Easton v. Pratchett, 577
East St. Louis, City of v. Flannigan, 465
East St. Louis Connecting fly. v. Wabash, St. L. & I.

By. Co., 155

Eaton v. Lynde, 213, 214
Eaton v. Soutbby, 91
Eaton v. Winnie, 154, 176, 179
Eavestaff v. Russell, 461
Ebersol v. Trainor, 486
Bocleston v. Clipsham, 423
Hoker v. Bohn, 138
Eddy v. Chace, 807
Edgoomb v. Dec, 275
Edgerly v. Emerson, 216
Edgoerly v. Whalan, 218
Edson v. Weston, 508
Edwards v. Edwards, 157
Edwards v. Frank, 219
Edwards v. Hammond, 143
Edwards v. Hill, 421, 427
Edwards v. Hooper, 221, 222
Edwards v. Nichols, 350, 368
Edwardsville R. Co. v. Sawyer, 495
Edward Thompson Co. v. Collmeyer, 339
Egleston’s Lessee v. Bradford, 234
Egler v. Marsden, 217
Eibel v. Von Fell, 194
Eieholz v. Bannister, 353
Elmer v. Richards, 298
Eisendrath v. Knaer, 212, 214
Bisener v. Maxwell, 203, 204
Elherson v. Richards, 113
Elder v. Hood, 357
Elder’s Ex’rs w. Harris, 559
Elgin, City of v. Joslyn, 342
Elgin, City of V. Thompson, 576
Ellenwood v. Marietta Chair Co., 63, 104, 106
Elliot v. Stuart, 536
Elliot v. Hardy, 135
Ellis v. Cary, 343
Ellis v. Ellis, 402
Ellis v. Waldron, 186
Elsee v. Gatward, 189, 324
Elting v Vanderlyn, 121
Ehves cc Maw, 208
Emerson v. Nash, 146
Emeroos cc Andrews, 340
Emery v. Fell, 276, 284
Emigh cc Pittsburg, Ft. W. & C. B. Co., 188
Emmett v. Lyne, 165
Empire Box Corp. v. Jefferson Island Salt Mm. Co., 524
Enherg v. City of Chicago, 561, 574
Enfield v. Stewart, 266
Engel v. Scott & Holston Lumber Co., 214
England cx Oem. Syhurn v. Slade, 234
English v. Arizona en rd. Griffith, 466
Ensley By. Co. v. Chewning, 184
Enterprise Oil & Gas Co. v. National Transit Co., 312
Entsminger v. Jackson, 264
Erbes v. Wehmeyer, 164
Ernst v. Eartle, 320
Erskine v. Davls, 113
Erskine v. Iohnabach, 520
Erwin v. Clark, 219
Escheriek v. Traver, 496
Essington v. Bourcher, 480
Esson v. Tarbell, 264
Etter v. Bailey, 212
Evans v. Elliott, 259
Evans v. Howell, 342
Evans v. Miller, 343, 358
Evans v. Prosser, 514
Evans v. Stevens, 428
Eveleth v. Blossom, 266
Everett v. Gray, 340
Everett v. Salus, 213
Everton’s Ex’rs v. Miles, 189
Evert v. Coffin, 219
Ewbanks v. President, etc. of Town of Ashley, 295, 362
Espanded Metal Fireproollaig Co. cc Boyce, 330, 342
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

F

Faget v. Brayton, 268
Fairboue v. Phelps, 213, 215
Fairfax v. Lewis, 579
Falconcr v. Smith, 508
Falmouth v. Penrose, 277
Parley v. Crystal Coal & Coke Co., 428
Parley v. Lincoln, 221, 266, 208
Farmers’ Nat. Bank v. Fonda, 319
Farmers’ State Guaranty Bank v. Pierson, 217
Farmington v. Pillsbury, 412, 414
Farham v. Hny, 97, 288
Farr v. Smith, 220
Farrand ct Hurlburt, 219
Farrar v. Roliins, 222
Farrell v. Taylor, 598
Farrington ct Payne, 16, 218
Farrington v. Sinclair, 594
Parrington & Smith v. Payne, 16
Farwell v. Hanchett, 268
Farwell v. Myers, 352

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Florida Life Ins. Co. v. Dillon, 92
Floyd v. Day, 351
Flynn v. Staples, 96
Folger v. Fields, 100
Follett v. Edwards, 219
Fonda v. Van Horse, 267
Fontaine v. Aresta, 283, 284
Forbes v. Ft. Lauderdale Mercantile Co., 92
Ford v. Logan, 486
Ford v. Schliessman, 159
Foreman v. Sawyer, 187
Poster v. Lumbermen’s Mm. Co., 214
Foster v. Pennington, 113
Fester v. St. Lake’s Hospital, 560
Foster v. Woodward, SOS
Pealde v. Willoughby, 63, 164, 218
Foulds v. Watson, 329
Fowle v. Itsryberg, 559
Fowie v. Alexandrinll, 547
Fowl v. Kirkland, 311
Fowler v. Arnold, 428
Fowler v. Clark, 434
Fowler v. Commissioner, Fowler v. Down, 158
Fox v. Holeonib, 102
Fox River Hllg. Co. v. Reeves, 283, 284
Fexsvist v. Tremaine, 432
flancy v. True, 149
Frankenthal v. Camp, 154, 176, 178
Franklin v. Talmadgge, 113
Franklin v. T. H. Lilly Lumber Co., 516
Franklin Fire Ins. Co. v. Jenkins, 42–
Frankum v. Earl of Falmouth, 494
Fraser v. Gregg, 359
Fredericks v. Tracy, 254
Freeman v. Smith, 169
French v. Merrill, 215

TABLE OF CASES

617

References are to Pages

Flessher v. Carstens Packing Co., 188
Fletcher v. Jarrellier, 464
Fleteiner v. Peck, 468
Fletcher v. Pegion, 555
Fletcher v. Wilkins, 259
Flexner v. Farson, 76
Flint & Walling Mfg. Co. v. Beelcett, 188
Florida Cent. & P. B. Co. v. Ashmore, 145
Florida East Coast fly. Co. v. Peters, 461, 466, 472, 473, 476, 478
Faulkner v. Alderson, 162
Faulkner v. Brown, 212, 214
Faulkner v. First Nat. Bank of Santa Barbara, 251
Favor v. Philbrick, 323
Fay v. Goulding, 325
Fay v. Taft, 55
Eberstadt v. State, 549
Feasler v. Schriefer, 428
Felb v. Taylor, 357
Felton cc Dickinson, 340
Fenlason v. Raecliff, 493
Fenton v. Clark, 341
Ferguson v. Cappean, 331
Ferguson v. Carrington, 189, 212
Ferguson v. National Shoemakers, 148
Ferguson v. Tucker, 323
Pernald v. Garvin, 149
Ferrnd v. Walker, 474
Ferry v. Williams, 331
Fetter cc Real, 334
Fidler v. Delevan, 91, 468
Film v. Stratton, 332
Final v. Backus, 208
Finch v. Brian, 157
Finch v. Coeken, 113
Finch v. Conrade’s Ex’r, 547
Finch v. Galigher, 402
Finch’s Ex’rs cc Alston, 486
Firm v. Modern Brotherhood, 529
Finney v. Guy, 399
Finney v. McMahon, 358
Finney v. Studebaker Corp. of America, 358
Fiquet cc Allison, 220
First Congregational Meetinghouse Society v. Town of Rochester, 304
First Nat. Bank v. Kreuzberg, 263
First Nat. Bank of Mammouth v. Donbar, 220
First Nat. Bank of Sutton v. Grosshans, 94
First Nat. Bank of Wellsburg v. Kimberrlands, 509
Fish v. Brananom, 160
Fish v. Dodge, 128
Fisher v. Cobb, 161
Fisher v. Kyle, 220
tithe V. Meek, 493
Fisher v. Morris, 118
Fisher ‘cc Pinbley, 526
Fitch v. Beise, 100
Fitter v. Shotwell, 157, 158
Fitzgerald v. Southern Farm Agency, 476
Fitpatrick cc Fitzpatrick, 514
Fitzpatrick v. Robinson, 133
Flanders cc Atkinson, 413
Flanders v. Cobb, 559
Flanders v. Stewartstown, 114, 575
Fleming v. Bailey, 295
Fleming v. Carter, 496
Fleming v. Mayor, etc. of City of Hobolcen, 405, 473
Forman v. Jacobs, 113
For,recstell v. Wend, 509
Forsdick v. Collins, 221
Forsyth v. Barnes, 505
Forsythe v. Wells, 208
Forsythe v. Washtenaw, 593
Fort Dearborli Lodge v. Klein, 118, 150, 400, 480, 7
Forth v. Pursley, 215, 218
Foshny v. fiche, 437
Foss v. Stewart, 109

Foster v.
Foster v.
Aflanson 312
Elliott, 146
Jackson, 400

Foshny v. fiche, 437

German to Use of Taylor, 466

French v. 11 obb, 231
Freidlander - llapley, 92
Freidman cc Denhalter Bottling Co., 94
Friar v. Grey, 134
Frick v. Miller, 265
Friend v. Dunks, 201, 362
Frink v. Pratt, 212, 214
Frost v. Raymond, 305
Fry v. Baxter, 217
Fuller v. Milmer, 264
Fuller v. Brown, 841, 359
Fuller v. Fuller, 93
Fuller v. Rouneville, 486

French v. 11 obb, 231
Freidlander - llapley, 92
Freidman cc Denhalter Bottling Co., 94
Friar v. Grey, 134
Frick v. Miller, 265
Friend v. Dunks, 201, 362
Frink v. Pratt, 212, 214
Frost v. Raymond, 305
Fry v. Baxter, 217
Fuller v. Milmer, 264
Fuller v. Brown, 841, 359
Fuller v. Fuller, 93
Fuller v. Rouneville, 486

G

Gaff v. Harding, 267
Gaffney v. Colvill, 482
Gaffney v. Hayden, 342, 343
Gaffney v. Illingsworth 581
Gaile v. Betts, 147
Gainsford v. Griffith, 534
Gale v. Nixon, 304
Gale v. O'Bryan, 284
Gale v. Reed, 1313
Galloway v. Holmes, 358
Gaile v. Chicago & N. W. H. Cc., 154
Galusha v. Butterfield, 498
Calvin v. Galvin Brass & Iron Works, 222
Gambling v. Prince, 486
Gardiner v. Corson, 307
Gardiner v. Croasdale, 334
Gardner v. Armstrong, 332
Gardner v. Clark, 406
Gardner v. Dutch, 265
Gardner v. Humphrey, 268
Gardner v. Linde, 576
Gardner v. Meeker, 544
Gardner v. Thomas, 105
Gargan v. School That., 503
Garland v. Tucker, 504
Garney v. Pike, 235
Garrett v. Beaumont, 577
Garrett v. Hitchcock, 332
Garlick v. Chamberlain, 420
Garth v. Draper Coal & Coke Co., 96
Garlan v. C. A. Hooper & Co., 98
Garvey v. Metropolitan West Side Elevated B. Co., 187
### TABLE OF CASES

**References are to Pages**

- Gates v. McCoy, 200
- Gates v. Caldwali, 505, 507
- Gates v. Lounsbury, 486, 520
- Gates v. Miles, 167

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gastinean v. McCoy</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates v. Caldwali</td>
<td>505, 507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates v. Lounsbury</td>
<td>486, 520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates v. Miles</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates v. Neal</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates v. Thede</td>
<td>4–13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gatton v. Dmmitt</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gauche v. Mayer</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gay v. Lloyd</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geary v. Barecroft</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gedney v. Inhabitants of Tewksbury</td>
<td>296</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geiges r. Greiner</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gemmill v. Smith</td>
<td>148, 414, 420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geneva, Town of v. Cole</td>
<td>296</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George cc English</td>
<td>115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George v. Fisk &amp; Norcross</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George v. Illinois Cent. H. Co.</td>
<td>154, 489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George v. Tate</td>
<td>507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georgia Home Ins. Co. v. Warten</td>
<td>491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>German Fire Ins. Co. of Peoria v. Grunert</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>German Nat. Bank of Chicago v. Meadowcroft</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gerrish v. Train</td>
<td>455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gerry v. Gerry</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbons v. Farwell</td>
<td>218, 219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbons v. Pepper</td>
<td>447, 486</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbs v. Bryant</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbs v. Chase</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbs v. Guild</td>
<td>802</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibbs v. Jones</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibson v. Bourland</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibson v. Hunter</td>
<td>547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibson v. Kirk</td>
<td>354, 856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibson v. Reiselt</td>
<td>544</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibson v. Wells</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gifford v. Perkins</td>
<td>470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gift v. Hall</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilbert v. Dickerson</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilbert v. Kennedy</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilbert v. Parker</td>
<td>439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilbert v. Williams</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gildas v. Crosby</td>
<td>267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillaspie v. Wesson</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillespie v. Dew</td>
<td>160, 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giles v. Edwards</td>
<td>353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillet v. Adm'r of Clemens</td>
<td>365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillett v. Ball</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillett v. Treganza</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilfillan v. Farrugten</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillijan v. Chicago fly. Co.</td>
<td>184, 574</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilman v. Hill</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilmore v. Christ Hospital &amp; DickJson</td>
<td>393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilmore v. Newton</td>
<td>221, 222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilmore v. Wilbur</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gilsen v. S--cewart</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Girard cc Taggart</td>
<td>340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Given v. Driggs</td>
<td>115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gladwell cc Steggall</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glanser v. Shepard</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glass v. Basin &amp; Bay State Mlii. Co.</td>
<td>201’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glaze cc McMillion</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glazer v. 01ff t</td>
<td>460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gledstane v. Hewitt</td>
<td>245, 526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glenn v. Garrison</td>
<td>217, 218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glover v. Dlxon</td>
<td>523</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Gould v. Lasbury, 4611, 462, 463
Gould v. Ray, 149
Gould v. Smith, 428
Goulet v. Asseler, 26, 67, 170, 100, 224
Gourley v. Fletcher, 131

**TABLE OF CASES**

References are to Pages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Grannlis v. Clark</td>
<td>108, 805, 307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grannis v. Hooker</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grant v. Easton</td>
<td>861</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grant v. Ring</td>
<td>2143, 219, 221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grant v. Popejoy</td>
<td>570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gratu v. Phillips</td>
<td>312, 316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves v. McKeon</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves v. Ticknor</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray v. Gray</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray v. Griffith</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray v. Johnson</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray v. Pingry</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray v. Sharp</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greasley v. Codling</td>
<td>180, 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greathouse v. Smith</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greco v. S. S. Kresge Co.</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greeley v. Stilson</td>
<td>207, 208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Ashland Mm Co.</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Belitz</td>
<td>166, 177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Biddle</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. CeVillaud</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Dana</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Dunn</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Fry</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Gilbert</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Goddard</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. James</td>
<td>525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Morse</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Ovington</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green v. Russell</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greene v. Cole</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greene v. Fish Furniture Co.</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greene v. Haley</td>
<td>841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenhow v. Isley</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenwalt v. Homer</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenwood v. Curtis</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greer v. Wheeler</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greer v. <em>Young</em></td>
<td>414, 437, 430</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregoir v. Leonard</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Gregory v. Bewly</em></td>
<td>282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory v. Piper</td>
<td>154, 165, 166, 176, 178, 193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Gregory v. Thompson</em></td>
<td>283, 290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greinke v. Chicago City By. Co.</td>
<td>94, 185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orenellife, Executors of, <em>481</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gresham v. Walker</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greer v. Bardett</td>
<td>115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gridley v. City of Bloomington</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffin v. Long Island By. Co.</td>
<td>271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffin v. Rising</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffin v. Reynolds</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Griffith v. Willins</em></td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Griffith v. Eyles</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Grills v. Mannell</em></td>
<td>437, 480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grimstead v. Marlowe</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Grimstock v. Barret</em></td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grisneil v. Phillips</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grieuald v. Plumb</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griswold v. Sedgwick</td>
<td>168, 169</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Grist v. Hodges, 128
Clover v. Tuck, 328
Gloyd v. Hotel La Salle Co., 351
Goetehins cc Sanbonn, 157
Goff v. Gott, 250
Goldberg v. Barney, 431
Geldey cc Morning News of New Haven, 76
Gc.Idsby v. Ilbertson, 327
Goldsehmidt v. Berry, 263, 268
Goldstein cc Reynolds, 506
Good cc Board of Pollee Com'rs of City of Balti-
more, 257
Goodehild v. Pledge, 461
Goodhue v. Luce, 421, 424, 428
Goodman v. Walker, 187
Goodrich m. Jones, 208
Goodrich v. Lafflin, 342, 357
Goodrich v. Leland, 304, 320
Goodrich v. Reynolds, 472
Goodtitle v. Baldwin, 233
Goodtitle cc Tombs, 243
Goodtitle cc dem. Miller v. Wilson, 238
000dtitle ex dem. Wright v. Otway, 111
Goodwin v. Gilbert, 357
Goodwin v. Griffis, 343, 358
Goodwin v. Lynn, 307, 320
Geram v. Sn'eeting, 441, 442
Gordon v. Bankard, 392
Gordon v. Jenney, 264
Gordon v. Kennedy, 128
Gordon v. Peirce, 478
Gore v. Condon, 148
Gorman v. Lenox, 400
Geshen & Sharon Turnpike Co. v. Sears, 140, 468
Gossett v. Morrow, 245
Gould v. Coal & Coke B. Co., 131
Gould v. Jacobson, 264
Gove v. Lawrence, 425
Governor, to Use of Thomas v. Lagow, 459, 469
Govett v. fladnidge, 426
Cower v. Qunlan, 235
Graffenreid v. Kundert, 853
Graham v. Peat, 161, 162
Graham v. Spence, 387
Grand Island Banking Co. v. First Nat. Bank of
Grand Island, 251
Grand Lodge, Brotherhood of Railroad Trainmen v.
Randolph, 420, 429
Graner v. Jones, 239
620

Grobart v. Society For stabli~ing Useful Mallufacturos, 20
Groenvelt cc Burnc'IL, 91
Groerrelt s'. Burwell, 598
Crosetti v. Swayne, 94
Grosvenor v. Phillips, 264
Grove v. Wise, 213, 221
Guerrard v. Jenkins, 238
Guermot cc Gomhett, 341
Guernsey v. Carver, 16
Guest Piano Co. v. Bicker, 481
Guille xc Swan, 164, 166
Guinnip v. Carter, 98, 573
Gully v. Bishop of Exeter & Dowiliag, 478
Gunsolus v. Lormer, 157, 162
Günter v. Dale County, 297
Gunzburger v. Rosenthal, 213
Guptill v. Richardson, 168, 169
Guttmann v. Pacific Steam Whaling Co., 214
Gutsch v. Melihargey, 267

H

Ilaasn, an c’. Pacific Alaska Air Express, 186
Hackett v. Walters, 377
Baddim- v Einstman, 219
Hagar v. Randall, 222
Hahn v. Hitter, 486
flaight v. Omaha & C. B. St. Ry. Co., 478
Hail v. heed, 250
Eniton v. Jeffrey’s, 390
Bake v. Buell, 221
Hale v. Dennie, 468
Hale v. Lawrence, 105, 405
Haley v. McPherson, 525
Haley v. Iowan, 251
Ball v. Boston & W. B. Co., 219
Hall v. Bumstead, 297
Hall v. Chaffee, 162
Ball cc Corcoran, 220
Hall v. Daggett, 214
Ball v. Durham, 262
Ball v. Fearnley, 480
Ball v. Gittings’ Lessee, 233
Hall v. Ligon, 205
Ball v. Odher, 361
Hall v. O’Neil Turpentine Co., 396
Ball v. Piekard, 157, 158, 183, 214, 215
Ball v. Rodgers, 283
Ball v. Rupley, 341
flail v. White, 267

Ballenbake v. Fish, 222
Hajlet cc Byrt, 462, 470
Hallett v. Fowler, 263
Halllock v. Powell, 97, 189
Halsey v. Carpenter, 108, 133
’Halsey v. Simmons, 265
Jiamby v. Trott, 207
Hamilton v. century Mfg. Cc., 426
hamilton v. Hart, 320
jplainhitO3l v. Lusk, 308
hamilton v. Plainwell Water-Power Co., 179
J-iannya v. Reynolds, 600
1-annya v. Wilsey, 161
Hammond v. Hopping, 320, 321
flammond v. Plimpton, 158
flance v. Tittabawassee Boom Co., 212
flaneocke v. Vrowd, 111
Hand v. Winton, 200
j-lantly cc Chartfield, 391
Haney v. Townsead, 179
j’Innna v. Lichtenstein, 396, 399
Hanneu v. Edes. 170
Ilapgood v. hloughton, 535
Hardin v. Jordan, 232
Harding v. Craig, 3243, 327, 575
Harding v. Larkin, 305
Hard’s Case, 279
Hard v. Catheart, 108
Barker v. Brink, 482
Harlem, Town of v. Ennnert, 421
Harley v. Parry, 320
Harlow v. Thomas, 305
Harmon v. O. vden, 333
Ham v. Security Nat. Bank
Harper v. Charlesworth, 102
Harper v. Scott, 207
Harpham v. Haynes, 473
Ifnret v. Kinney, 234
Harrington v. Deane, 311
Harriingten cc Macmerris, 353
Harrison v. Christian, 359
Harris v. Coeoanut Grove Development Co., 85
Harris v. de flervoir, 313
Harlow v. Jaffray, 128, 334
Harris v. Mantle, 332
Harris v. Smith, 203, 2434, 265
Harris v. Worth, 426
Harris Photographic Supply
Harrison v. McCormick, 423
Harrison v. Mathews, 291
Harwood v. Smethurst, 247, 256, 270
Hasell v. Inhabitants of Woolwieh, 107
Hastings v. Cunningham, 590
Hastrop v. Hastings, 402
Hatch v. Spofford, 420
Hatton v. Morse, 462
Havens v. Hartford & N, H. B.
Havercstick v. Fergus, 265
Hawkins v. Helcles, 117
Hawkins v. Johnson, 249
Hawn v. Norris, 238
Haworth v. Spraggs, 428
Hayden v. Nott, 426
Hayes v. Livingston, 234
Hayes v. Massachusetts Mat, Life

References are to Pages
of Oklahoma City, 514
Co. v. Flcher, 138
Harvey v. Parkersburg Ins. Cc., 132
Harvey v. Stokes, 113
Harwood v. Smethurst, 247, 256, 270
Hasell v. Inhabitants of Woolwieh, 107
Hastings v. Cunningham, 590
Hastrop v. Hastings, 402
Hatch v. Spofford, 420
Hatton v. Morse, 462
Havens v. Hartford & N, H. B.
Haverstick v. Fergus, 265
Hawkins v. Helcles, 117
Hawkins v. Johnson, 249
Hawn v. Norris, 238
Haworth v. Spraggs, 428
Hayden v. Nott, 426
Hayes v. Livingston, 234
Hayes v. Massachusetts Mat, Life

TABLE OF CASES

Hayes v. Shattuck, 79
Hayes v. Warren, 327
Hawley v. Gerrard, 533, 534, 535
Hayes v. Crutchfield, 1112, 249
Hayes v. Lucas, 275, 282, 400
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Haythorn cc Rushforth</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hayward v. Leonard</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hazard v. Franklin Mat. Fire Ins. Co.</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hazen v. Essex Co.</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hazleton v. Locke</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Head v. Baldrey</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Headley v. Shaw</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heard v. Baskerville</td>
<td>120, 333, 392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heath v. White</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heaton v. Packer</td>
<td>396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hedges v. Chapman</td>
<td>474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hedrick v. People</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heffner xc Beta</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heffron v. Rochester German</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heidemeyer v. Hecht</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heidenreich v. Bremner</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heilbronn xc Herzog</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heilbut v. Buckleton</td>
<td>322</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heiman v. Schroeder</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinmiller v. Elliot Frogl</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heineman cc Steiger</td>
<td>212, 218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heiman v. Felder</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinmiller v. Hatheway</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helier cc Whytler</td>
<td>454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hellen v. Hellen</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jeljer cc Hufsmith</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Belmiek v. Carter</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eemmins v. Gasson</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henderson v. Lauck</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henderson cc Strifger</td>
<td>397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henderson v. Withy</td>
<td>533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hendrick cc Seely</td>
<td>576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hendricks v. Decker</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hendrickson v. Walker</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heady v. Stephenson</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TABLE OF CASES</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>References are to Pages</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henkel v. Beyman</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hennles cc Vogel</td>
<td>421, 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henniker cc Contoocook VaL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry v. Allen</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry v. Gamble</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry v. Beldmaler</td>
<td>482</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry cc Ohio V. Co., 37 - 518</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry v. Porter</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry xc Sowles</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry v. Spitler</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Glass &amp; Co. v. Mlsrochi</td>
<td>03, 288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry mv. Co. cc Seraonian</td>
<td>6, 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henshall v. Roberts</td>
<td>115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hensley v. Orendorff</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benwood v. Cheeseman</td>
<td>105, 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hereford v. Crow</td>
<td>481</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bert v. Shulze</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herlakenden’s Case</td>
<td>472, 473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herne s. Benhovc</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berrell v. Sizelend</td>
<td>496</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horreshoff v. Trlpp</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herrick v. Manly</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herrick v. Swomley</td>
<td>489, 509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berries v. Jamieson</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herring v. Bhaeklow</td>
<td>453, 403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hersey v. Northern Assurance</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hesketh v. Lee</td>
<td>112, 257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hess v. Griggs</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heydon v. Thompson</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Heydon & Smith’s Case, 161, 162
Heymnan v. Covell, 428
Hibbert cc Courthope, 350, 363, 364
Hickey v. Binsdale, 267
Hiekingbottom, v. Lehman, 257
Hickman cc Walker, 525, 527.
Hickok v. Coates, 386, 473
Hicks v. Cram, 425
Hicks v. Lyle, 209, 219
Ricks v. Rogers, 232
Higgins cc Began, 307
Higgins v. Farnsworth, 118
Higgins v. Halligan, 115
Higgins v. Highfield, 240, 241
Higgins v. Lee, 516
Higgins v. Sargent, 353
Higgins Carpet Co. v. Latimer, 150
Higgon v. Mortimer, 208
Highland Foundry Co.
  550
Hulareth v. Becker, 132
Hildrith v. Harvey, 115
Hill v. Belasco, 222
Bill v. Brennan, 215
Bill v. Chipman, 559
Bill v. Green, 342
Bill v. Bill, 232
Bill v. Mendenhall, 506
Bill v. Montague, 134
Bill sc Nelson, 104, 105
Bill v. Bobeson, 109

B. B. Co., 201, 297
Co., 165, 192, 308
  223
Ins. Co., 209, 221,
Ins. Cc., 283, 348
Co., 145, 287, 288, 839


Swtich Co., 4.00

622

Hill v. Tucker, 423
Hill v. Wright, 500
Hillborn v. Artus, 283
Billy v. Eggers, 257
Hilton v. Burley, 508
Hilton v. Guyor, 505
Flimes v. Barnitz, 461
Hinckley v. Baxter, 208
Hindman v. Hoffman, 352
Hines, Er parte, 401
Hines v. McMillan, 401
Hines v. Rutherford, 550
Hinks v. Minks, 165, 177
Hinton v. Husbands, 473
Hitchcock v. Aiken, 361
Hitchcock v. Covill
Hitchcock v. Haight, 572
Hitchcock v. Munger, 100
Hitchin v. Stevens, 557
Hoagland v. Moore, 341
Hobbs v. Clay, 169
Hobbs v. Smith, 322
Bobson v. McArthur, 397
Hobson v. Middleton, 437
Hodges v. Steward, 399
Hodgson v. Barrett, 330
Hodgson v. East India Co., 147, 467
Hoey v. Furman, 233
Hofherman v. Simmons, 271
Hoffman v. Bircher, 428
Hoffman v. Harrington, 162
Hogan v. Curtz, 495
Holt v. Molony, 128
Holbrook v. Brenner, 233
Holden v. Rutland & B. U. Co., 177
Holder v. Aultman, 107
Holdipp v. Otway, 467
Holland v. Kibbe, 482
Holler v. Bush, 402, 400, 471
Holler v. Coleson, 263
Holliday v. Camsef, 220
Holliday v. McKinne, 499
Holman v. Criscen, 365
Holmes v. Barclay, 104
Holmes v. Bell, 321
Holmes v. Newlands, 110
Holmes v. Peck, 187
Hoonroyd v. Brcare, 169
Bolt v. City of Moline, 04
Bolt v. Howard, 510
Bolt v. Rees, 238
Home v. Semple, 283
Homer v. Ashford, 307
Homer v. Thwing, 220
Honk v. Robinson, 353
Booker v. Smith, 168
Hooper’s Case, 321
Hopkins v. Burney, 499
Hopkins v. Logan, 360

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Hopkins v. McArthur, 397
Hopkins v. Nashville, C & St. n. U. B., 547
Hopkins v. Ward, 234
Hopkins v. Ward, 234
Hopkins v. Woodward, 304
Hopkins v. Young, 304
Hopkinson v. Sears, 75
Bore v. Chapman, 131
Horn v. Chapman, 131
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case Details</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Home v. Lewin, 456, 471</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horrel v. McAlexander, 333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horsefield v. Cost, 221, 222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horton v. Auchnoody, 168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horton v. Hensley, 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hosier v. Eliason, 461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hosley v. Black, 126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hotchkiss v. McVicar, 212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hothen v. East India Co., 140, 141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rough v. Rowson, 328, 330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Houghton &amp; Co. v. Alpha Process Co., 516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoccy v. Smith, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howard v. Bankes, 179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howard v. Tyler, 178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howe v. Newmarch, 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howell v. Biehards, 126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howell v. Young, 187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewitt v. Estelle, 221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rowlan v. Davis, 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howton v. Mathias, 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoy v. Roy, 282, 283, 284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoyt v. Geston, 158, 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoyt v. Wilkinson, 860, 364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. S. Benjamin Wagon &amp; Exeh. Bank, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hubbard v. Davis, 299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hubbard v. Lymnn, 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hubbell v. Comlrey, 301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hubbell v. Wheeler, 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huddleston v. Garrott, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Budon v. Jones, 460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hudspeth v. Gray, 284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebschmann v. McFienry, 257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huff v. Campbell, 308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huftalin v. Misner, 421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huger v. Cunningham, 572</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huggins v. Wiseman, 134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughes v. Frum, 572</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughes v. Gaston, 563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughes v. Phillips, 454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughes v. Smith, 112, 134, 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughes v. Woosley, 316, 317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hughey v. Sulhiran, 581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull v. Blaisdel, 168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull v. Southworth, 207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hulme v. Reuwlek, 326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumbert v. Trinity Church, 491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humiston v. Smith, 188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humphrey v. Whitten, 394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humphreys v. Bethily, 147, 149, 895, 405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunnemann v. Inhabitants of Grafton, 340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt v. Bolton, 221</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**TABLE OF CASES**

References are to Pages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case Details</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Anderson, 209, 219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Baker, 99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Bohilo, 472, 487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Bud, 231—233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Givin, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Loomis, 241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Pesked, 183, 191, 558, 575, 576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Randall, 240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Sisson, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Stetson, 478, 479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Tribhlo, 238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson v. Waddell, 304, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson and Sharp Co. v. fly, 187</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Jackson en 6cm. Clowes v. Rakes, 235
Jackson en 4cm. Duane v. Harder, 233
Jackson cx dem. Haines v. Woods, 426
Jackson en 4cm. Hardenberg xc Il. L.

Hunt xc Strew, 203
Hunt v. Test, 508
Hunt v. Weir, 513
Hunt’s Case, 283, 284
Hunter v. Bilyeu, 402
Hunter v. (ochran, 233
Hunter v. Neck, 413
Hunter v. Stewart, 129
Hunter v. Wilkinson, 95
Huntington x’. Attrill. 105
Huntsville Knitting Co. v. Butner, 459
Hurst v. Wickersham, 241
Hutchinson xc Brock, 429, 431
Hunter v. Brown, 566
Hunter v. Dubois, 266
Hunter v. Granger, 129
Hunter v. Hendrickson, 514
Hunter v. Johnson, 594
Huston v. Arnett, 214
Hoyck xc Andrews, 308
Hyatt v. Wood, 163, 486
Hyde v. Mon at, 397
Hyde v. Noble, 221
Hyde v. Stone, 220
Hyde’s Ferry Turnpike Ce. v. Yates, 574

I

Iaques’ Case, 470
Iasigi v. Shea, 217
1. H. Pitts & Son Co. v. Bank of Shuloh, 223
Illderton xc Illderton, 103, 107
Des v. Heidenreich, 414
hg v. Burbank, 487
Illinois Cent. By. Co. v. Aland, 185
Illinois Cent. B. Co. v. Ratter, 118, 487
Illinois Cent. B. Ce. xc Johnson, 469
Illinois Cent. H. Co. v. Leidig, 473
Illinois Cent. B. Co. xc Parks, 210
Illinois Cent. It. Co. r. Reedy, 193
Illinois Cent. H. Co. v. Rudy, 193
Illinois Cent. H. Co. v. Rudy, 193
Illinois Fire Ins. Co. v. Stanton, 400
Illinois Land & Loan Co. xc Bonner, 305
Illinois State Hospital for Insane xc Higgins, 284
Illinois Steel Co. v. Novak, 487
Illinois Steel Co. xc Ostrowski, 92
Illinois & St. L. Railroad & Coal Co. v. Cobb, 161
ils atv. Stubbs, 266, 428, 431
v. flesin, 420
Imperial Fire Ins. Co. cc Shinier, 575
Independent Order of Hut. Aid v. Paine, 329
Indianapolis & St. L. B. Co. v. Herndon, 219
Ingersoll v. Barnes, 208
Ingersoll v. Van Bokkelin, 214
Ingraham v. Martin, 264
Inhabitants of Barnstable cc Thatcher, 162
Inhabitants of Bath v. Inhabitants of Freeport, 362
Inhabitants of First Parish In Sudbury v. Stearns, 209
Inhabitants of Milford cc Bangor Ry. & Electric Co., 322
Inhabitants of Milford v. Commissioner, 362
Inhabitants of Omono v. Wedgewood, 422, 423
Innis v. Crawford, 232
Innkeeper's Case, The, 175
Inquirer Printing & Publishing Co. v. like, 578
International Harvester Co. v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 76
International Hotel Co. v. Flynn, 424
International & O. ic. H, Co. v. Pape, 110
Iron Clad Dryer Co. v. Chicago Trust & Savings Bank, 521
Irvine v. Hanlin, 311
Irving v. Veitch, 360
Isaac v. Farrar, 520, 523
Isaac v. Clark, 247, 250
Isaacs v. Wiley, 113
Isaacs v. Craney, 421
Israel v. President, etc. of Town of Jacksonville, 296
Italian Swiss Agricultural Colony v. Pease, 430
Ivey v. New York Telephone Co., 377

J

Jackson v. Prevoist, 114
Jackson v. Saxton v. May, 232
Jackson v. Simms v. Chase, 234
Jacksonville Electric Co. v. Batchis, 120
Jacs v. Colgate, 104
Jacobs v. Humphrey, 201
Jacobia v. Ramey, 94
Jacobs v. Colgate, 104
Jacques v. Cesar, 599
James v. Adams, 328
James v. Caldwell, 168
James v. Dunlap, 500
James v. Henry, 361
January v. Goodman, 320
January v. Henry, 284
Jarrett Lumber Co. v. Reese, 516
Jefferson v. Duneombe, 105
Jell v. Douglas, 325
Jencks v. Phelps, 108
Jenkins v. Edwards, 478
Jenkins v. Pepoon, 428, 431
Jenkins v. Thompson, 342
Jones v. Green, 250
Jones v. Hill, 190
Jones v. Hoar, 352, 358, 365
Jones v. Johnson, 320
Jones v. Jones, 442

TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages
Jordan v. State, 572
Jordan v. Wyatt, 166, 168, 177, 180
Joy v. Berdell, 233
Joyce v. McAvoy, 429
Judd v. Leonard, 231
Judge of Probate v. Merrill, 125, 126, 368
Julian v. Burgott, 332
Kemp v. McCormick, 113, 114
Kemp v. Merrill, 316
Kempton Hotel Co. v. Bicketts, 402, 428
Kenege cc Elliot, 232
Kenloct cc Hogan, 437
Kennard v. Burton, 166, 167
Kennard v. Secor, 512

Page 665 of 735
James & Mitchell v. Adams, 327
Janieson v. Board of Education, 283, 334
Jameson v. Isaacs, 114
J’Anson v. Stuart, 134
Jones v. Judd, 341, 342
Jones v. Kitchln, 520
Jones v. McNeil, 161
Jones v. Monson, 146
Jones v. Owen, 325
Jones v. Park, 163, 180
Jones v. Robinson, 116
Jones v. Smith, 268
Jones v. TcVis, 179
Jones v. Warner, 305
Jones v. Welling, 559
Jones' Estate, In re, 113, 114
Jones, Executor of Brockaw v. Decker’s Executor, 423
Jennings v. Lyons, 342
Jennings v. Newman, 149
Jennings v. Peoria County, 387, 397
Jericho v. Town of Underhill, 430
Jerm v. Jenny, 91
Jerome v. Orman, 304
Jerome v. Whitney, 143, 326
Jewell v. Blandford, 342
Jewell v. SchroeppeL, 340
Jilek v. Zahl, 560
Jockish v. Hardike, 509
Joel v. Morrison, 193
John v. Whitloy, 119
Johnson v. Castelman, 185, 193
Johnson v. Clark, 324
Johnson v. Coulllard, 222
Johnson v. Elliot, 55
Johnson v. Jebb, 600
Johnson v. Johnson, 420
Johnson cc Long, III
Johnson cc May, 356
Johnson v. Neale, 263
Johnson v. Picket, 109
Johnson v. Prussing, 266
Johnson cc Richardson, 421, 427
Johnson v. Trinity Church Soc., 341
Johnson v. Von Kettler, 169
Johnson v. Weedman, 219
Johnson v. Wollyer, 498
Johnson’s Ex’rs v. Jennings’ Adm’r, 352, 353
Johnston v. Ewing Female University, 469
Johnston v. Jackson, 233
Johnston v. Sallsbury, 305, 351, 358
Johnston v. Whittemore, 219
John W. Waldeck Co. cc Emmart, 307
Jones v. Ashburnham, 326
Jones v. Lien, 297
Jones v. Brinley, 351
Jones xc Dowle, 251
Jones v. Dugan, 218
Jones v. Fort, 221

K

Kane v. Hood, 328, 329
Kane v. Sanger, 506
Kankakee & S. B. Co. v. Horan, 159
Kankakee & S. W. B. Co. xc Fitzgerald, 177 188
Kansas City, St. J. & C. B. B. Co., 358
Kapischki v. Koch, 154, 487, 489
Karthaus v. Owings, 332
Katin v. Crispel, 300
Kauffelt v. Leber, 358
Kean v. Mitchell, 92, 327
Keay v. Goodwin, 525, 528
Rca & Chapel! Dairy Co. v. Pennsylvania Co., 500, 547
Reefer v. Zimmerman, 320
Keegan v. Kinnares, 516
Keene v. Meade, 113, 339
Keith v. Howard, 201
Keith v. Tilford, 162
Kelleher v. Chicago City B. Co., 577
Keller v. Stevens, 572
Relke v. Foster, 340
Kellogg v. Holly, 223
Kellogg v. Terpje, 189
Kelly v. Chicago City B. Co., 574
Kelly v. Foster, 359
Kelly v. Kelly, 311
Kelly v. Strouse & Bros., 547
Kelly v. Town of Bradford, 341
Kelshon v. Elgin, Aurora & S. Traction Co., 145
Kelso v. Tournren, 257
Kemp v. Fender, 351

Lath v. Billings, 265
Ladd v. Piggott, 576
Lady of Shandois, The v. Simson, 109
Lafayette Ins. Co. v. French, 555
Laflin v. Howe, 353
Laing cc Pidgeon, 326
Laing v. Nelson, 161, 162
Lakeman v. Pollard, 341
Lake Shore & M. S. Ry. Co.
Lake Shore & M. S. By. Co.
Lake Shore & M. S. By. Co.
Lamb v. Mills, 124
Lambert v. Cook, 454
Lambert v. Ensign Mfg. Co., 491
Lambert v. Hoke, 163, 180
Lambert v. Stroother, 162
Lambert v. Taylor, 578, 579
Lambkin v. Nance, 361
Lammers v. Chicago C. W. it. Co., Ml
Lammers v. Moyer, 500

TABLE OF CASES

625

References are to Pages

Kinney v. McNabb, 339
Kinney v. Turner, 148, 416
Kipp v. Bell, 149, 478
Kipp v. Massin, 341
Kirkland v. Filcher, 246--248
Kirkpatrick v. Clark, 234, 496
Kirkpatrick v. Monroe, 393
Klein v. Gibson, 570
Kline v. Husted, 493
iClotieri v. railrond Supply Co., 575
Knapp v. Salsbury, 486
Knapp v. Winchester, 213, 222
Knepper v. Karta, 305
Knickerbocker Life Ins. Co. v. Barker, 298, 505
Knight v. Keech, 333
Knight v. New England Worsted Co., 340, 357
Knight v. Sharp, 575
Knight v. Symma, 111, 113
Knoebel v. Kircher, 143, 469
Knot v. Clements, 402
Knotts v. Clark Const. Co., 428
Knowles v. Harris, 312
Knowles v. Inhabitants of Eastham, 282
Knowles v. Michel, 364
Knowlton v. Johnson, 207
Knox v. Rhinehart, 301
Korbly v. Loomis, 330
Kraft v. Porter, 169
Kramer v. Mathews, 264
Kran v. Case, 352
Krause v. Curtis, 500
Kribs v. Downing, 235
Kyle v. Gray, 221
Kyle v. Sworn, 250

L
Kennedy v. Fury, 235
Kennedy v. Stahvorth, 98
Kennedy v. Strong, 493
Kennon v. Robinson, 221
Kenney v. Greet., 412
Kert v. Welch, 305
Kert and Ball, 439, 440
Kenyon v. Semen, 113, 114
Kenyon v. Sutherland, 514
Keokuk & Hamilton Bridge Co. cc Wetsel, 422, 471
Kerby v. Quinn, 215
Kerr v. Sharp, 170
Kerr v. Willets, 420
Kerr, Evans & Co. v. Cooperative Improvement Co., 307
Kershaw's Ex'rs v. Boykin, 251
Kerwin v. Elkhatechett, 216
Kettle v. Eromsall, 245, 250
Keyes v. Dearborn, 126
Keyser v. Shafer, 350, 362
Kidd v. Beeckley, 294
Kidder v. Bacon, 109
Kidgill v. Moor, 572
Kierbow v. Young, 267
Kiewort v. rndslopof, 352
Kii lle v. Ege, 560
Kimball v. Cunningham, 212
Kimball v. Huntingdon, 515
Kimball v. Sumner, 190
Kimersly v. Cooper, 440, 441
Kinston v. Moore, 210
Kincaid xc Howe, 114
Kindy v. Green, 265
King v. Baker, 240
King cc Bishop of Chester, Pierce and Cook, 466
King v. Bishop of Worcester, 455
King v. Eereton, 146, 147
King v. Fraser, 277, 357
King v. Grove, 373
King v. Bollond, 108
King v. Inhabitants of Seton, 598
King v. Mason, 352
King v. Mayor & Burgesses of Lyme Regis, 132, 139
King v. Botham, 392
King v. Stephens, 356
King v. Watson, 160
King v. Welcome, 359
King v. Wilmington & N. C. Electric By. Co., 185
King, The v. Collector and Comptroller of the Customs at Liverpool, 424
King, The v. Mayor & Burgesses of Lyme Regis 132
Kingdom v. Nettle, 149
Kingman & Co. cc Reinerner, 257
Kingsbury v. Buchanan, 263
Kingsbury v. Smith, 228
Kingsley cc Bill, 364
Kinlyslde cc Thornton, 44, 189, 506
Kinney cc Barrett, 235
v. Enright, 561
v. Hessions, 96
v. Ward, 144
Lainphee v. Buckingham, 87, 397
Lainping v. Payne, 499

Lamplough v. Brathwait, 327
Lamplough v. Shortridge, 391
Landt v. McCullough, 503
Lane v. Adams, 340

Leffingwell xc White, 331 Lefkovitz v. City of Chicago, 93

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages
Lewis v. Mobley, 212
Lewis v. Preston, 133
Lewis v. Robinson, 352
Lewis v. Shortledge, 209
Lewis cc Wolk, 186
Leyfield’s Case, 464
Libby, McNeill & Libby v. Cook, 547
Libby, McNeill & Libby v. Seherman, 202
Lienow v. Ritchie, 157, 159
Liford’s Case, 162
Lightfoot v. Brightman, 575
Lincoln v. Thrall, 515
Lindeman v. Lindsey, 163, 180, 188
Linder v. Monroe’s Ex’rs, 285
Lindley v. Downing, 219
Linde v. Gardner, 502
Lindsey v. Mitchell & McCauley, 528
Lindsey v. Perry, 247
Leggett cc Humphreys, 514
Lehman xc Kellenan, 257
Lehr v. Taylor, 208
Leinhart v. Kirkwood, 312
Leman v. Best, 207, 222
Lenrefet v. Rivet, 133
Lent v. Padelford, 126, 294, 307, 824
Leonard v. Diamond, 234
Leonard v. Dyer, 341
Leonard v. Leonard, 311
Leoncini v. Post, 223
Leprnt v. Todd, 233, 234
LeRoy v. East Saginaw City B. Co., 268
Lesher v. United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co., 285
Leslie v. Barlow, 400
Lester v. Jewett, 32a, 320
Lester v. McDowell, 263
Lester v. People, 126
Leverson v. Kirk, 210
Levy & Ripple Motor Co. v. City Motor Cab Co., 342
Lewis v. Alcoek, 494
Lewis v. Culbertson, 350, 363, 364
Lewis v. Hoover, 247
Lane v. Alexander, 441, 442
Lane v. Maine Mut. Fire Ins. Co., 573
Lane v. Thompson, 157
Logan v. Houlditeh, 222
Logue v. Clark, 598
Lower v. Meeker, 547
Long v. Fitaaimmons, 311
Longueville v. Inhabitants
Lengworth v. Flagg, 514
Loomis v. Jackson, 94
Loomis v. O’Neal, 351, 252
Loose v. LOose, 283
Lord v. Tyler, 481
McAdams cc Bailey, 543
McAllister v. Hammond? 166, 178
McAllister v. Kuhn, 91
McAllister v. I reab, 461

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Of Thistleworth, 411
Lord Arlington v. Merricke, 134, 146, 369
Lord Electric Co. v. Barber Asphalt Paving Co., 322
Loring v. Gurney, 340, 357
Loring v. Mulelay, 218
Lormaill v. Benson, 162
Lotan v. Cross, 157, 183
Lothrop v. Arnold, 169, 427
Loubz v. Bather, 168
Lough v. Thornton, 577
Louis xc Smith-McCormick Const. Co., 94
Louisville, B. & St. L. B. Ce. v. Harlan, 334
Louisville & N. H. Co. v. Bartec, 169, 487
Lovell v. Martin, 221
Loveland v. Cheveley, 374
Low v. Galena & C. U. K. Co., 598
Lowell, City of v. Morse, 114
Lower v. Winters, 325
Lowery v. Manhattan R. Co., 178
Lowry v. Houston, 251
Lowry v. Kinsey, 420, 500
Lwathrop v. Smith, 220
Lubbock v. Inglis, 219
Lucas v. Godwin, 341
Lucas cc Nockells, 437
Lucas xc Trumbull, 220
Ludden v. Leavitt, 214
Lumby xc Allday, 547
Lumnis v. Stratton, 194
Lundy v. Lundy, 235
Lunn v. Payne, 332
Lunt v. Brown, 157, 158
Lunt xc Wrenn, 353
Lurtom v. Giliam, 421
Lush v. Russell, 444
Lusk v. Cassell, 284
Lux & Talbott Stone Co. v. Donaldson, 564
Lyall v. Higgins, 508
Lynch cc Beecher, 268
Lynch v. Commonwealth, to Use of Barton, 188
Lynch v. Johnson, 509
Lynner v. Wood, 469-472
Lyons v. Farm Property Mut. Ins. Ass’n of Iowa, 396
Lyons v. Stickney, 238

M

McAmlews v. Chicago, L. S. & B. B. Ca, 94
McArthur v. Moffet, 26
McArthur v. Oliver, 206
McAuliffe v. Mann, 257
McBryan v. Morrison, 267
McCann v. Ruthbone, 2315
McCaughhey v. Schuette, 90
MacClellon v. Howard, 478
McClure, By parte, 342
McClure v. King, 570
McClure’s Ex’rs v. Miller, 179
McConnel v. Kibbe, 525
McConnell v. Maxwell, 214
McConnell v. Stettinius, 480
McCord v. Mechanics’ Nat, Bank of Chicago, 459, 469
McCormick v. Conouly, 343
McCormick v. Muse, 486
McCoy v. Hill, 308
McCoy v. McKowen, 165
McCrary v. Brown, 350, 363
McCrea v. Parsons, 509
McCrea v. Purmort, 352
McCullough v. How, 320, 821
McCullough v. McCullough, 358
McCune v. Norwich City Gas Co., 576
McCurd a v. Levisvistown Journal Co., 393
McDaniel v. Tercull, 170
McDaniels v. Reed, 235
McDonald v. Brown, 352
McDonald v. Hall, 137
McDonald v. Mabee, 76
McDuff v. Portland & K. K. B., 105
McEwen v. Joy, 277
McEwen v. Morey, 3150, 363
McFadden v. Crawford, 248
McFadden v. Deck, 128
McFadden v. Fortier, 400, 404
McGavock v. Olivant, 165, 444
McFall v. Kirkpatrick, 234
McFarland v. Irwin, 505
McFarlane v. Derbis, 361
McGavock v. Ramsey, 7
McGanahan v. East St. Louis & C. By. Co., 186
McGavock v. Puryear, 502
McGavock v. Whitfield, 525
McGehee v. Childress, 333
McKee v. Hill, 329
McGinnis v. Fernandes, 348
McGinnity v. Laguerenne, 98, 149, 275, 292, 324
McGlory v. Jackson, 187
McGregor v. Balch, 421, 425
McIntyre v. Western Packing & Provision Co., 202
McIntyre v. Clark, 329
McIntyre v. Wing, 235
Mackay v. Reynolds, 486
McKay v. Speak, 113
McKenna v. Fisk, 104, 555
628

McKee v. Whitney, 277
Mackey v. Northern Mill Co., 184
McKim v. Odom, 361
Mackin v. O’Brien, 360
McKinney v. Jones, 559
McKinzie v. Lane, 284
McKinney v. Meston, 257
McKyring v. Bull, 300, 801, 502
M'Lanahan v. Universal Ins. Co., 569
MacLaughlin v. Fisher, 198
McLaughlin v. Salley, 220
McLaughlin v. Waite, 213
McLean v. Walker, 221
McLean's Ex'r's v. Wade, 311
McLeod v. Powe & Smith, 362
McI-Ianus v. Crickett, 165, 193
McMillan v. Mafoy, 341
McMorris v. Simpson, 220
McMullin v. Church, 98
McMurray v. Rawson, 316
McNail v. Ziegler, 263
McNall v. Velegon, 487
McNear v. Atwood, 215
McNeish v. Stewart, 506
McPherson v. Daniels, 462
McPherson v. McPherson, 312
Meltac v. Mattoon, 361
Macuda v. Lewistown Journal Co., 147
McCoy v. Wheeler, 304
McWhorter v. Sayre, 128
Maenncr v. Carroll, 184
Magee v. Fisher, 125
Magee v. Siggerson, 262
Maggs v. Ames, 471, 510
Mahaffey v. J. L. Eumburger Lumber Co., 91
Mahan v. Smitherman, 559
Maher v. Ashmead, 168
Mahurin v. Bickford, 861
Mahurin v. Harding, 189
Mair v. Rio Crank Rubber Estates, Ltd., 93
Malcolm v. Spoon, 169
Mall v. Lord, 193
Mallard Lumber Co. v. Carolina Portland Cement Co., 563
Mlanby v. Scott, 593
Manguire v. Town of Xenia, 285
Mann v. Obeme, 500
Manser's Case, 146, 148
Manton v. Gammon, 340
Margetis v. Bays, 462, 463
Marine Ins. Co. v. Hodgson, 503, 506
Marriott v. Tucker Cook Co. v. Ehrlich, 877
Marks v. Madsen, 486, 487
Marquette, H. & O. B. Co. v. Atkinson, 257
Marriott v. Lister, 291
Marsh v. Bulteel, 141, 142, 400, 405
Marshall v. Davis, 221, 286, 267
Marshall v. Lewark, 360
Marshall v. Riggs, 131
Marshall v. Stalnaker, 233
Marshalsea, Case of, 168
Martin v. Bartow Iron Works, 405
Martin v. Hamilu, 320
Martin v. Kesterton, 418
Martin v. Murphy, 320
Martin v. Payne, 179
Martin v. Smith, 460
Martini v. Coles, 213
Mull v. Knowiliys, 220
Mason v. Buckmaster, 125
Mason v. Cater, 387
Mason v. Cheney, 74
Mason v. Dixon, 235
Mason v. Keeling, 164, 167, 179, 180, 201
Mason v. Payntcr, 200
Mason v. Waite, 351
Mason v. Warner, 105
Mason v. Welland, 356
Massachusetts Mat. Life
Massachusetts Mat. Life
Massengill v. Boyles, 233
Mast v. Goodson, 188
Masters v. Stratton, 187
Masterson v. Cheek, 233
Mother v. Ministers of Trinity
Mathews cc Cary, 125
Mathews v. Speier, 109
Matthews v. Tower, 397
Muntingly v. Darwin, 129, 223
Maule v. Murray, 420
Monvey v. Weaver, 304
Maury v. Olive, 364
Idaxherman Co. v. Alper, 366, 367
Maxia xc Oklahoma Portland Cement Co., 406
Maxon v. Ferrott, 268
May v. Harvey, 222
May v. Western Union Tel. Co., 427
Mayeystone v. Lord Palmerston, 14, 14, 113
Mayer v. Lawrence, 98, 149
Mayer v. Mayor, etc. of City of New York, 352
Maylard cc Kister, 289
Maynard v. Talcott, 108
Mayor v. Clarke, 277
Mayor, etc. of Newark cc Dickerson, 389
Mayor & Burgesses of Stafford v. Bolton, 114, 422
Maysville, City of v. Truer, 564
Mead v. Hews, 169
Mead cc Kilday, 264
Mead v. Thompson, 219
Meader v. Stone, 163
Medbury v. Watrous, 342, 343
Medway Cotton Manufactory cc Adams, 114, 421
Mehroff Bros. Brick l'flg. Co. v. Delaware, L, & SS'--
B. Co., 103
Mellon v. Western B. Corp., 201
Mellin v. Horlick, 361
Mellor cc Barber, 108
Melville v. Brown, 169
Melvin v. Fisher, 169
Menifee v. Higgins, 325

References are to Pages
Ins. Co. v. Kellogg, 329
Mennie v. Blake, 247, 254—256 270
Merecron v. Dowson, 130
Meriton v. Briggs, 439
Merrick v. Trustees of Bank of Metropolis, 575
Merrill v. Perkins, 560
Merrill v. Sheffield Co., 145
Merrit xc Warmouth, 251
Merritt v. Miller, 462
Merry v. Gay, 478
Merryman v. Wheeler, 301, 320, 503
Mcrscreau v. Norton, 220
Mertens xc Adcock, 251
Mets v. Albrecht, 328, 330
Metzen v. Bolton, 508
Meyer v. Haworth, 525
Meyers v. Schemp, 340
Middlecot rook v. Corwin, 208
Middlet'rook v. Graveley, 440
Middleton v. Price, 125
Midvale Steel Works v. Hallgarten & Co., 264
Miles v. Allen, 250

TABLE OF CASES

Ins. Co. cc Green, 350, 363
Church, 159, 208
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TABLE OF CASES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>References are to Pages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miles V. Caldwell, 239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miles v. Moodie, 340, 859</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miles v. Oldfield, 07, 576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miles v. Sheward, 324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miles v. Weston, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I‘ilikin v. Jones, 479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Millard v. Baldwin, 397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Adsit, 265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Ambrose, 320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Drake, 325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Eldridge, 343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Prick's Adm'r, 265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Gable, 572</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Grice, 109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jillier v. Kingsbury, 4--</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Kresge Co., 557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Ord, 352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Poislock, 559</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Roessler, 139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Stanley, 478</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Warden, 264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Wesson, 257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller v. Wittier, 330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller's Case, 175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milligan v. Keyser, 128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milligan v. Thorn, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milliken cc Brown, 168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milliken v. Meyer, 76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mills v. Ball, 222, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mills v. Carpenter, 555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mills v. Graham, 207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mills v. Scott, 296</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mills Bland’s Es’trs, 421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Millville Gas Light Co. v. Sweeten, 397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milward v. Ingram, 864</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minard cc Lawler, 509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mine. &amp; Eisenbrcy Co. v. Cram, 411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mineral Point It. Co. v. Keep, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mink v. Shaffer, 299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minnicks v. Williams, 275, 284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minor v. Mechanics’ Bank of Alexandria, 576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minter v. Mower, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Misner v. Granger, 468</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Missouri, K. &amp; T. Co. v. Wulf, 503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nissouri, K. &amp; T. Trust (Jo. v. Norris, 75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitchell v. McLean, 461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitchell v. McNabb, 03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitchell v. Roberts, 207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitchell v. Sellman, 472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitchell v. Williams, 222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mithinson v. Hewson, 326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mitsakos v. Murrill, 321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mix v. Nettleton, 277, 282, 284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mit v. People, 479, 503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mizell cc Watson, 511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moale v. Rollins, 320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mogart v. Smouse, 510</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mole v. Wallis, 520, 527</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Molinc Plow Co. v. Anderson, 576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Montesano Lumber Co. v. Poorand Iron Works, 104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Montgomery v. Ivers, 304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Montgomery v. Brush, 215</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Montgomery v. Tipton, 501
Montgomery Co. v. New Parley Nat. Bank, 840
Moody v. Amazon Iris. Co., 331
Mooers v. Wait, 208
Moon v. Avery, 157
Moor v. Fudsey, 441
Moore v. Earl of Plymouth, 126, 127, 325
Moore v. Hitchcock, 214
Moore v. Jones, 294, 307
Moore v. Moore, 159, 162, 208
Moore v. Spiegel, 417, 420, 428
Moore v. Vail, 304, 395
Moreheend v. Seofield, 218
Moran v. Dawes, 161, 170, 182, 102
Moravia v. Sloper, 125
Morehead v. Grisham, 361
Morehouse sc Fowier, 132
Moreton v. Hardern, 165, 178, 193
Morewood v. Wood, 443, 444
Morford v. Mastin, 329
Morgan v. Adams, 312
Morgan v. City of Vienna, 487
Morgan v. Jones, 353
Morgantown Bank v. Foster, 471
Moriarty v. Stofferan, 265
Morris v. Pugh, 222
Morris Canal & Banking Co. v.
Morrison v. Berry, 208
Morrison v. Lumbard, 268
Morse v. Aldrich, 304
Morse v. James, 125
Morse v. Sherman, 324

Van Voorst, 284, 295

Morse v. Whitcher, 559
Morton v. Frick Co., 223
Morton v. Lamb, 325, 330
Morton v. McClure, 128, 334
Morton v. Preston, 209
Moseley v. Jones, 326
Moser v. Jenkins, 444
Moses v. Allen, 467
Moses v. Maeferlan, 351
Moses v. Norris, 219, 220
Moses v. Stevens, 342
Noss v. Flint, 421
Mostyn v. Fabrigas, 104—106, 413
Moulton v. Tasc, 311
Mount v. Scholes, 514, 515
Mount Carbon Coal & H. Co.
Mountford v. Horton, 825
Moxley’s Adm’trs v. Moxley, 332
Muggridge v. Eveleth, 158
Muldrow v. Tappan, 364
Mulford v. Tunis, 234
Mulgrave v. Ogden, 03, 219
Mullaly v. Holden, 138
Mullan v. Belbin, 178
Mumford v. Fitzhugh, 388
Mumford v. McKay, 220
Munday v. Mundy, 55
Munre v. Alaire, 525
Munroe v. Perkins, 342
Munson v. Munson, 237

Page 676 of 735
TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages

Neiler v. Kelley, 200
Neilsen v. Hyland, 207
Nelson v. Burt, 208
Nelson v. Chicago, B. & Q. R. Co., 76
Nelson v. Dubois, 325
Nelson v. Ford, 284
Nelson cc Swan, 348, 357
Nerot v. Wallace, 576
Neubeck v. Lynch, 561
Nevil cc Soper, 145
Nevil and Cook’s Case, 437
Nevins v. Pullman Palace Car Co., 188
Nevins v. Keeler, 472, 456
Nevins v. Peerla, 179, 180
Newark Twentieth Century
v. Andrews, 400, 405, 498, 408
Taxicab Ass’n v. Lerner, Newby v. Mason, 00
Newcomb v. Irwin, 162
Newell v. Newton, 420
New Havill Steamboat & Transp. Co. v. Vanderbilt, 167
New Holland Turnpike Co. v. Lancaster, 304, 305
New Market Iron Foundry v. Harvey, 326
New Orleans v. Gaines, 241
Newport News, City of v. Potter, 364
Newsome v. Graham, 353
Newsum v. Newsum, 221
New Staunton Coal Co. v. Fromm, 94
Newton v. Cresswick, 480
Newton v. Marshall, 162
Newton Rubber Works v. Graham, 330
New York, City of v. Fink, 366
New York Corp. cc Dawson, 105
New York, L. B. & W. R. Co. v. New Jersey Electric
By Co., 183
Nicholl v. Mason, 420
Nichols v. Caldwell, 234, 496
Nichols v. Dewey, 257
Nichols v. Ely Beet Sugar Factory, 170
Nichols v. Lewis, 231, 232
Nichols v. Michael, 267
Nicholson v. Chapman, 219
Nicholson v. Simpson, 406
Niekeren v. Thneher, 162
Nickerson v. Wheeler, 351
Nicoll v. Glennie, 222, 426
Nielsen v. Rebard, 267
Nightingale v. Devisme, 353
Nill v. Comparet, 401
Nirdlinger v. American Dist. Tel. Co., 177
Nispel v. Laparle, 397
Nispel v. Western Union Co., 414
Noble v. Adams, 212
Nobel’s Adm’r v. Latley, 149
Noeting v. Wright, 145
Noonan v. Bradley, 423
Nordhaus v. Varidalia R. Co., 427, 555
Murphy’s Adm’ts cc Branch Bank at Mobile, 424
Murray v. East India Co., 468
Murray v. Carlin, 516
Moser v. Robertson, 22, 90
Mutual Ace. Ass’n of the Northwest cc Tuggle, 324
Myers & Waterson - Hunter Erwin & Co., 430
Myrick v. Bishop, 102

N

Nehtrieb v. Stoner, 157
Naftzger v. Gregg, 329
Nagle v. Schmidt, 544
Nash v. Nash, 294, 358
National Council of Knights & Ladies of Security v. Hibernian Banking Ass’n, 309
National Lancers v. Lovering, 109
National Parlor Furniture Co. v. Strauss, 132
National Surety Co. v. Nazzaro, 298
National Surety Co. v. United States, 214
Nations v. Hawkins’ Adm’ts, 215
v. Rogers, 327, 441,
v. Skinner, 330
v. Brilstow, 117
Hitchcock, 578

Overdeor v. Lewis, 103
Overt On v. Williston, 208
Owen v. Reynolds, 526
Owens v. Starr, 169
Owens v. Weedman, 212
Owings v. Prier, 250
Owings v. Hull, 130
Owncby v. Morgan, 74
Owsten v. Ogle, 313
Oystead v. Shed, 132
Pacific Mail S. S. Co. v. Joliffe, 362
Packard v. Getman, 219
Paddock v. Higgins, 126
Padgett v. Lawrence, 114
Page v. Crosby, 206
Page v. DePuy, 169
Page v. Jones, 265
Paige v. SInclair, 420
Pain, fix parte, 147
l’aïnter s’. Baker, 154, IOS, 176
Palmer v. Arthur, 576
Palmer v. Clarke, 304
Palier v. Eldns, 441, 448
Palmer v. Everson, 412
Palmer v. Gardiner, 420
Palmer r. 000dcn, 482
Pangbnrn v. Patridge, 247, 255, 206
Panton v. Holland, 481
Papke v. Cl. H. Hammond Co., 489, 514
Pareell v. McCombcr, 363
Parish v. Stanton, 439
l’ark v. McGowen, 312
Parker v. Crane, 327
Parker v. Elliott, 179
l’arker v. Hall, 169
Parker v. Lee, 358
Parker v. McComb, 341, 360, 303, 365, 366
Parker v. Parker, 97, 113, 148
Parker v. Parme, 320, 507
Parker v. Steed, 341
Parmly v. Farrar, 342
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

631

P

Norman v. Beckman, 238
Noran v. W'ells, 501J
Norris v. School Dist. No. 1 ia \Windsor, 282, 283, 320, 341, 360, 363
North v. Kizer, 125, 324
North v. Nichols, 559
North v. Turner, 158
Northern Pac. H. Co. v Paine, 212
Northern Trans Co. of Ohio v. Sellick, 221
Northwestern Ben. & Mut. Aid Ass’n of Illinois v.
Wanner, 304
Nottingham v. Aekiss, 294
NowleJi v. Colt, 220
Nugent v. Teachout, 340, 343, 348, 357

0

Oakman - Small, 413
Oates v. Clendenard, 421
Ontman v. Fowler, 150
Obermyer v. Nichols, 329
O’Brien v. Cavanaugh, 160, 102
O’Brien v. Saxon, 483, 520
OBrien v. Young, 360
O’Connor v. Gidday, 267
Ogden v. Stock, 257
Ogle v. Barnes, 178
Oglethorpe v. Hyde, 147
Ohio & M. II. B. Co. v. Brown, 555
Ohio & If. fly. Co. v. Noe, 268
Ohio & II. fly. Co. v. People cx rd. Van Gilder, 15, 144, 387
Okeson v. Patterson, 163, 150
Oklahoma Gas & Electric Co. v. Bates Expanded Steel
Truss Co., 391, 395
Ohipliant v. Whitney, 385
Olsn v. Upsahl, 488, 487
Olsen v. Kelly Coal Co., 96
Omea v. Cardiff Coal Co. 478
Onion v. Clark, 140
Onondaga County Bank v. Bates, 283
Onslow v. Smith, 431
Opdycke v. Easton & A. U. Co., 108
Ordinary v. Braeey, 401
Oregon Rulijleering Co. v. City of West Linn, 473
Ortman v. Sovereign, 257
Orton v. Butler, 200
Osborne v. Butcher, 180
Osborne v. Fulton, 284
Osborne
Osgood
Osway
Otis v.
Otis v.
Ot V. Schroepel, 450
Ottawa Gaslight & Coke Co. v. Thompson, 163, 180
Outlaw v. Davis, 169
Outtoun v. Dulin, 304
Paterson Coast. Co. v. First State Bank of Thebes, 480
Patrick v. Bucker, 98, 285, 295
Patrickson cc Barton, 462
Patten v. Hicks, 343
Patterson v. Jones, 332

632

patterson v. United States, 575
Patteson v. Ford, 5-IS
Pattison v. Adams, 263
Paul v. GraVes, 84
pawling v. United States, 541
Pawling v. Willson, 361
Payne v. Drewe, 594
Payne v. Smith, 166,178
Payne v. Treadwell, 03
Payson v. Whitcomb, 576
Peabody v. Bayt, 297, 362
Peacock v. Harris, 364
Peacock v. Peacock, 106
Pearce, Ex parte, 578
Pearce v. Foot, 575
Pearce v. Pearce, 425
Pearey v. Walter, 480
Pearpoint v. Henry, 217
Pearson v. Roberts, 250
Pearsons v. Lee, 125
Pease v. Burt, 170
Pease v. Ditto, 158, 214, 263, 265, 499
Pease v. Howard, 301
Pease v. Phelps, 398
Peasley v. Eoatsvright, 324
Peek v. Brewer., 189
Peck v. Carmichael, 233
Peck v. Houghtaling, 305
Pedan v. Hopkins, 342
Pedrick v. Kuemniell, 254, 267
Peere v. Hill, 250
Pekin, City of v. Brereton, 163, 166, 179, 180
Pell v. Lovett, 98
Peltier v. Sewall, 340, 305
Penley v. Whitney, 297
Pennington v. Gibson, 299
Pennington’s Ex’rs v. Yell, 187
Pennoyer v. Neff, 72, 73, 75—78
Penny v. Purter, 325
Penobsoet fi. Co. v. Mayo, 352
People v. American Life Ins. Co., 555
People v. Central Union Tel, Co., 455
People v. Chicago Rys. Co., 515
People v. Cummings, 598
People v. Bummer, 276, 296
People v. Dunlap, 130
People v. El Dorado County Supervisors, 598
People v. Boltcn, 386, 387
People v. Mauran, 232
People v. Powell, 574
People ex rd. Attorney General v. River Raisin & I--.
E. B. Co., 470
People ex tel. Chicago & I. B. Co. v. Atlas, 329
People ex rd. Maloney v. Pullman’s Palace Car Co.,
448. 453
People, to Use of Christian County v. Davis, 296
People, to Use of Foster v. Gray, 466
People’s Bank v. Niekerson, 95
People’s Ins. Co. v. Spencer, 28.3
People’s Nat. Bank v. Niekerson, 148
People’s Savings Bank of Tallassee v. Jordan, 450
People’s Shoe Co. v. Skally, 473
Pepper v. Haight, 329
Percival v. Rhekey, 167, 178, 182
Perham v. Coney, 220
Perkins v. Hart, 340—342
Perkins v. Moore, 405
Perkins v. Proctor, 168
Perkins v. Reeds, 307
Perley v. Foster, 264
Perlus v. Market Investment Co., 520
Perry r. Marsh, 143
Perry v. Skinner, 180
Peters v. Ballister, 212
Peters v. Davis, 424
Peters v. Ulmer, 475
Peterson v. Pusey, 342
Perrie v. Duke, 259
Pettigru v. Sanders 221
Pfistner v. Bird, 159
Pfohrzheimer v. Selkirk, 104
Pharr v. Bachelor, 108, 149
Phelps v. Sawyer, 507
Phelps v. Sill, 131
Philadelphia, W. & B. H. Co. v. Constable, 1S8
Philippi Planing Mill Co. v. Cross, 516
Philips v. Beriek, 16
Philips v. Robinson, 222, 497
Phillips v. Covert, 160
Phillips v. Cummings, 427
Phillips v. Fielding, 143
Phillips & C. Const. Co. v. Seymour, 304
Pickering v. Dc 1toehement, 423
Pierce v. Benjamin, 215, 221
Pierce v. Bristol, 400
Pierce v. Carey, 148
Pierce v. Crafts, 200
Pierce v. Pickens, 109
Pierce v. Seheneak, 219
Pierce v. Sholtey, 478, 516
Pierce v. Woodward, 128, 334
Pierson v. Spaulding, 340
Pierson v. Wallace, 397
Pigot’s Case, 400, 401
Pigot’s Case, 503
Pike v. Brown, 357
Pike v. Zadig, 362
Phineas v. Swedish Evangelical Lutheran Church, 34t
Pinhorn v. Tuckington, 354
Pinkham v. Gear, 208
Pinkin v. Yaw, 235
Pitt v. Russell, 123
Pitt v. Skew, 208

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

People
People
People
People

v. Ryder, 92
v. Strawn, 455
v. Wayne Circuit Court, 597
v. Wood, 352
People, to Use of Busch v. McCormack, 473
Pittsburgh, C., C. & St. L. B. Co. v City of Chicago, 573
Pittsburgh, C., C. & St. L. By. Co. v Nichols, 94
Planebe v Colburn, 342
Planters’ Bank v Galloway, 283
Platt v Hill, 139
flats v. McKeans Town, 103
Homer v Ross, 133
Plowman v. Foster, 489
Plumb v McCrea, 521, 524
Hummer v. Deanett, 169
Plumuler v. Woodburne, 4435
Plunkett v. Detroit Electric By. Co., 577
Pollak v. Electric Ass’n, 500
Pollard v. Lock, 115
Pollard v. Lyon, 80, 180, 187
Pollock v. Lumberman’s Nat. Bank of Portland, 563
Polsey v. White Rose P11g. Co., 420
Pomeroy v. Trimmer, 262
Pond v. Ennis, 421
Poole v. Symonds, 212, 213
Poole v. Vahanes, 353
Pooler v. Southwick, 431
Pope v. Foster, 108
Pope v. Tillman, 111, 122
Porter v. Cooper, 360
Porter v. Drennan, 06
Porter v. Gray, 121
Porter v. Hildebrand, 559
Portland Dry Deck & Ins. Co. v. Trustees of Portland, 296
Portuguese-American Bank v. Welles, 286
Possett v. Marble, 575
Pest v. Munn, 166
Post v. Neal ie, 298
Potomac Laundry Co. v. Miller, 364
Potter v. Bacon, 308
Potter v. Brown, 18?
Potter v. Earnest, 326, 480
Potter v. Gronbeek, 283, 348
Potter v. John Hutchison Pit g. Co., 72
Potter v. McCoy, 412, 425
Potter v. North, 260, 498
Potter v. Tecumh, 476, 482
Potter v. Washburn, 161
Potts v. Clarke, 183, 191
Potts v. Point Pleasant Land Co., 526
Powdick v. Lyon, 388
Powell v. Bradlee, 204
Powell v. Salisbury, 177
Powell v. Smith, 257
Powell Co. v. Finn, 421, 426
Power Equipment Co. v. Gale Installation Co., 340
Powers v. Cook, 431, 438
Powers v. Rutland It. Co., 513
Powers v. Ware, 120
Powrmatic v. Ferrand, 339, 351
royser v. Minors, 8
Pozzi v. Shipton, 188, 426
Pratt v. Allen, 602
Pratt v. Harris, 414
Pratt v. Parkman, 264
Presbyterian Congregation v. Johnston, 235
Prescott v. Wright, 218
President, etc., of Bank of Auburn v. Weed, 469
President, etc., of City of Natchez v. Minor, 146
President, etc., of Commercial Bank v. French, 114, 126

Page 682 of 735
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>References are to Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>It</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>References are to Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>It</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Rand v. Band, 365
Randall v. Eigby, 291
Randel v. President, etc. of Chesapeake & P. Canal, 808
Randol v. Rogers, 308
Raney v. Boyd, 353
Ranklin v. Darnell, 342
Rannell v. Moore, 324, 340
Rann v. Hughes, 326
Rathbun v. Payne, 178
Rawitzer v. Mutual Benefit Health & Accident Ass’n, 478
Rawson v. Taylor, 118
Ray v. nelsen, 184
Bay v. Haines, 342
Raymond v. Andrews, 55
Raymond v. Blanegrass, 588
Raymond v. People, 145
Raymond v. Sturges, 482
Raymond v. Toledo, St. L. & K. C. R. Co., 563
Read v. Brookman, 13, 307
Read v. Brown, 87
Read v. Inhabitants of Chelmsford, 573
Read v. Smith, 328
Read v. Walker, 103, 105
Read’s Case, 441
Read v. Lord, 114
Reavely v. flank, 179
Reay v. Harriss, 574
Rebe v. San Gabriel Valley Land & Water Co., 343
Bedding v. City of v. Shasta County, 327
Red Men’s Fraternal Ace. &ss’n v. Rippey, 331
Reeb v. Bronson, 345
Reed v. Davis, 296
Reed v. Guissford, 177
Reed v. Shepley, 233
Reed v. Taylor, 235
Ree v. Palmer, 251, 252
Reeves v. Forman, 575
Regents of the University of Michigan v. Detroit Young Men’s Soc., 126
Reichenbach v. McKean, 264
Reid v. Lord, 421
Remington v. Taylor, 108
Renfrow v. Reifsnyder, 325
Reubens v. Joel, 26
flex v. Dalton, 455
Rex v. Faweet, 52
Rex v. Rome, 132
Rex v. Jones & Palmer, 260
Rex v. Kilderby, 438, 439
Rex v. Knollys, 140
Rex v. Larwood, 526
Rex v. Lyme, 461
Rex v. Malland, 295
Rex v. Shakespeare, 431
Rex v. Stevens, 146
Roxroth v. Coon, 212
Reynel v. Langeastle, 277
Reynolds v. Blackburn, 149
Reynolds v. Clarke, 63, 176, 170
Reynolds v. Clerk, 154, 168
Reynolds v. Hurst, 284, 295
Reynolds v. McCormick, 490
Reynolds v. Shuler, 219
Rible v. Lawrence, 212
Rice v. Clark, 219
Rich v. Rider, 264
Rich v. Woolley, 124
Richards v. Frankum, 497
Richards v. Hodges, 529, 534
Richards v. Killam, 320
Richards v. Peake, 443
Richardson v. Atkinson, 219
Richardson v. Farmer, 576
Richardson v. Mayor & Commonalty of Orford, 437, 455
Richardson v. Murrill, 162
Richardson v. Reed, 267
Richardson v. Rice, 221
Richardson v. Smith, 442
Richardson v. York, 257
Riehey v. Hathaway, 364
Richter v. Chicago & E. B. Co., 202
Riciotto v. Clement, 267
Bicker v. Freeman, 154, 164, 167, 176, 178, 179
Ricketts v. Loftus, 440
Riddle v. Driver, 208
Rider v. Bobbins, 262
Rider v. Smith, 122, 136
Ridgeley v. Crandall, 340
Ridgway v. Homer, 79
Riford v. Montgomery, 221
Rigeway’s Case, 400
Riggs v. Ballingham, 137
Riggs v. Dennisten, 472, 473
Right ex dem. Lewis v. Beard, 235
Rightmyer v. Raymond, 219
Riley v. Boston Water Power Co., 208, 221
Riley v. Yost, 126, 369
Rinfeld & Arruda v. Plorrlsey, 230
Ring v. Roxbrough, 108, 110, 325
Ripka v. Sergeant, 157
Ripley v. Case, 353
Ripley v. Davis, 221
Ripley v. Dolbier, 219
Ripley v. Yale, 159
Risher v. Wheeling Roofing & Cornice Co., 473
Ritchie v. Van Colder, 550
flex v. Inhabitants of Mellor, 233
Rex v. Johnson, 462
Ritzwoller v. Lurie, 131
River v. Griffiths, 113
Robach v. Damron, 105
Robb v. Cherry, 251
Robb v. Montgomery, 329
Bobbins v. Baltimore & Ohio R. Co., 94
Robert v. Harnage, 106
Roberts v. Curby, 375
Roberts v. Dame, 556
Roberts v. Danforth, 470
Roberts v. Dauphin Deposit Bank, 257
Roberts cc McLean, 421
Roberts v. Mariett, 525, 527
Roberts v. Moon, 428
Roberts v. Wyatt, 214
Robertson v. Hooton, 217
Robinson v. Austin, 220
Robinson v. Corbett, 439
Robinson v. Hagtridge, 222
Robinson v. Peterson, 244, 247, 497
Robinson v. Prescott, 361
Robinson v. Riley, 6, 456, 476, 482, 483
Robinson v. Roberts, 232
Robinson v. St. Johnsbury & L. C. R. Co., 476
Robinson v. Smith, 119
Robinson v. Woodford, 249
Robinson’s Estate, 598

Page 685 of 735
Bobson v. Godfrey, 340
Rochester City Bank & Lester v. Suydam, 12
Rocker v. Perkins, 104
Rockfo.,”d Ins. Co. v. Nelson, 140, 331
Rockford, R. l. & St. L. B. Co. v. Beckemeler, 304
Rockhill v. Contress Hotel Co., 547
Rock Spring Coal Co. v. Salt Lake Sanitarium Ass’n, 445
Rodgers v. Brittalr, 221
Rodman Imp. Co. v Krabo, 562
Roebuck v. Duprey, 305
Boella v. Follow, 198
Rogers v. Brooks, 295, 297
Rogers v. Burk, 440, 441
Rogers v. Dickey, 594
Rogers v. Imbleton, 178
Rogers v. Jenkins, 100, Wi
Rogers v. Windoes, 215
Rolte v. Sharp, 325
Bomani v. Shoal Creek Coal Co., 184
Rooke v. Rooke, 364
Roosevelt v. Fulton’s Helrs, 507
Roosevelt v. Cardinier, 113
Roosevelt v. Hungate, 495
Root v. Woodruff, 262
Booth v. Wilson, 162, 165, 177, 213
Roper v. Clay, 576
Rose v. Bowler, 140
Rose v. Lewis, 209
Rose v. Miles, 163, 180
635

Rose v. Oliver, 426
Roseboom v. Mosher, 238
Rosenbury v. Angell, 513
Itoss v. Allen, 425
Ross v. Johnson, 220
Ross v. Nesbit, 514
Rotan v. Fletcher, 493
Roteli v. Hawes, 188, 220
Roth v. Wells, 594
Rountree v. Little, 234
Rousin v. Benton, 159
Routh v. Weddell, 402
Rowell v. Hayden, 514
Rowland v. Veale, 125
Rowles v. Lusty, 431
Roworth v. Wilkes, 180

Ryalton, Town of cc Ryalton & W. Turnpike Co., 132
Royce cc Oakes, 209, 217
Bribery v. Stevens, 112
Rubin v. Hahn, 218
Racker v. Halnhilton, 251, 252
Bucker v. McNeely, 159
Ruckman v. Ridgefield Park B. Co., 523
Ruckman -cc The Ridgefield Park Railroad Co., 523
Rudder v. Price, 282—284, 319, 343
Rugg v. Minuet, 215
Ruggles v. Fey, 220
Ruggles v. Hall, 570
Buggies v. Leslie, 486
Buggles v. Sands, 160
Rumbarger -cc Stiver, 148
Rupert v. Mark, 233
Rushton v. Aspinall, 573, 576
Eushworth v. Taylor, 222
Russell v. Bell, 342, 358
Russell v. City of Chicago, 285
Russell v. Clark’s Ex’rs, 189
Russell v. Hamilton, 503
Russell v. Irwin’s Adm’r, 233
Russell v. Rogers, 143, 403, 482
Russell v. Scott, 158
Russell v. Slade, 328
Russell v. Tomlinson, 425
Russell’s Case, 437
Russo v. D’merstein, 179
Rutter & Co. cc McLaughlin, 421
Ryan v. Brant, 212, 221
Ryan v. Clark, 118
Ryan v. Gallatin County, 296
Ryan v. Vanlaadingham, 469
Ryder cc Flanders, 234
Rynders cc Coxie, 284
Sabourln y. Marshall, 200
Sackett v. Thompson, 550
Sadler v. Robin, 261
Safford cc Barso, 160
Safford v. Miller, 98

References are to Pages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Scidmore v. Smith</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scilly v. Dally</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seafield v. Whitelegg</td>
<td>564</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Colson</td>
<td>238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Conover</td>
<td>284, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Curd</td>
<td>294</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Godwin</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Hull</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Leiber</td>
<td>294, 307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Parlen &amp; Orendorf Co.</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Shepherd</td>
<td>154, 164, 170, 179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott v. Whippie</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scovill v. Seeicy</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scudder v. Anderson</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scudder v. Worster</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seurfield v. Gowland</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seare v. Prentice</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Searing v. Butler</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Searlv. Bunion</td>
<td>117, 119, 120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seckel v. Scott</td>
<td>345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Secor v. Sturgis</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seeley v. Dunlop</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seeley v. Howard</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seipel v. International Life</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selby v. Bardons</td>
<td>520, 522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selby v. Hutchinson</td>
<td>97, 341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selton v. Bruce</td>
<td>326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Senecal v. Labadie</td>
<td>486</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seretto v. Rockland, S. T. &amp;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serjeant v. Fairfax</td>
<td>439, 440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serra v. Wright</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Severin v. Keppel</td>
<td>220, 222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sewall v. Lancaster Bank</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sexton v. Holmes</td>
<td>324, 364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sexton v. McDowd</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sexton v. Miles</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seymour v. Maddox</td>
<td>184, 437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seymour v. Mitchei</td>
<td>149, 395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shadwell v. Hutebinson</td>
<td>163, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shafer v. Security Trust Co.</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

References are to Pages

636
St. John v. St. John, 140, 141, 342
St John cc Standrlng, 220
St Louis A. & C. R. Co. v. Dalby, 193
St Louis, A. & T. H. R. Ce. v. Miller, 298
St Louis A. & T. fly, Co. v. Whitley, 105
St. Louis, Vandalia & T. B. B. R. Co. v. The Town of Summit, 171
Salinas v. Wright, 307, 324
Salmon v. Jenkins, 329
Salt Springs Nat. Bank v. Wheeler, 224
Sampson v. Henry, 163, 486, 520
Samuel v. Jadin, 189
Samuel v. Morriss, 218
Sanboeuf v. Murphy Const. Co., 94
Sanders v. Hussey, 117, 118
Sanderson v. Baker, 169
Sanderson v. Haverstick, 208
Sanderson’s Ex’rs v. Marks, 262
Sandford v. Halsey, 307
Sandford v. Milliken, 265
Sandier v. Heard, 107
Sands v. St. John, 140
Sands v. Trevilian, 286, 289
Sandusky cc Sidwell, 415
Sandusky v. West Fork Oil & Natural Gas Ce., 423
Sandwich hUg. Co. v. Bogie, 317
Sanger v. City of Chicago, 341
Sarch v. Blackburn, 180, 201
Sargent v. Gile, 222
Sargent Co. v. Baublis, 184
Saunders v. Crawley, 149
Saunders’ Case, 470—472
Savacool v. Boughton, 169
Sawteile v. Rollins, 266
Sawyer v. Boston, 572
Saxton cc Bacon– 165, 177
Sane v. Mims, 133, 535
Scarborough v. Lucas, 204
SeaVage v. HawkIns, 119
Schaetzsl v. Germantown Farmers’ Mut. Ins. Co., 441
Schaufer v. Jackson, 233
Schee v. Hassinger, 313
Schemerhorn v. Jenkins, 420
Sehemerhorn v. Mitchell, 500
Schillinger Bros. Co. v. Smith, 202
Schlossburg v. Wilingham, 217
Schmidt v. Glade, 304
Schnabl v. Koehler, 157
School District in Medfield cc Boston, H. & F. R. Co., 188
SehoonoVer v. Vachon, 343
Schroeder v. Merchants’ & Mechanics’ Ins. Co., 74
Schueler v. Mueller, 94
Schuer v. Veeder, 166, 178
Schultz v. Short, 199
Schumway v. Stillman, 361
Schwab v. Furniss, 400
Schwlndt v. Lane-Poter Lumber Co., 148
Schwinger v. Hickok, 353

Inz. & Trust Co., 343

0. H. By. Co., 276, 283
Shafer v. Smith, 180
Sbandois v. Simson, 291
Shane v. Smith, 343
Sharp v. State for Use of Brown, 92
Shattuck v. Gragg, 190
Shaver v. McGraw, 235
Shaver v. White, 105
Shaw v. Chambers, 232
Shaw v. Dutcher, 394, 402
Shaw v. Lewistown & K. Turnpike Co., 380
Shaw v. Lord Alvanley, 478
Shaw v. Redmond, 327, 364
Shaw v. Woodcock, 352
Shawneetown, City of v. Baker, 320
Shearer v. Jewett, 340, 357
Shearman v. Fellows, 474
Sheets v. Brooks, 141
Sheffield Nat Bank v. Corinth Bank & Trust Co., 93
Sheldon v. Hopkins, 299

**TABLE OF CASES**

References are to Pages

Sloeum v. New York Life Ins. Co., 547
Smallcomb v. Cross, 594
Smallley v. Briste–, 140
Smart v. Hyde, 460
Smith v. Arey, 278
Smith v. Archer, 208
Smith v. Benson, 208
Smith v. Biesiada, 572
Smith v. Boston, C. &
Smith v. Bull, 105
Smith v. Butler, 105
Smith v. Carney, 420
Smith v. Carroll, 514
Smith v. Chance, 357
Smith v. Clark, 105
Smith v. Curry, 576
Smith v. Dixon, 442
Smith v. Doe cx deni. Walker 235
Smith v. Drew, 206
Smith v. Eastern B. B., 575
Smith v. Faelstein, 486
Smith v. Fowk’ & Dunham, 83
Smith v. Franklin, 424
Smith v. Gates, 169
Smith v. Goodwin, 97
Smith v. Jacksonville Oil Mill Co., 13
Smith v. James, 213, 215
Smith v. Keating, 572
Smith v. Lathrop, 420
Smith v. Lewis, 330
Smith cc Lorillard, 233
Smith v. McCann, 234, 235
Smith v. Moore, 297
Smith v. Parsons, 508, 511
Smith v. Philadelphia B. & W. B. Co., 96
Smith v. Plomer, 158
Smith v Proprietors of First
house in Lowell, 07, 270
Smith v. Rutherford, 154
Smithy, Ryan, 234
Smith v. Scott, 124
Smith cc Segar, 283
Smith v. Smith, 526
Smith v. Snyder, 498
Smith v. Stokes, 220
Smith v. Townes’ Adm’r, 497
Smith v. United States, 297
Smith v. Webb, 128, 324
Smith v. Webster, 154, 323, 825
Smith v. Wenderlich, 240
Smith v. White, 189
Smith v. Wiggln, 91
Smith v. Williamson, 263
Smith v. Wolseley, 368
Smith v. Wooding, 343
Smith v. Woodmau, 296
Smith v. Young, 222
Smith’s Adm’r v. Lloyd’s Ex’r, 330

N. B. B., 112, 134, 323, 325
Shelling v. Farmer, 104
Shepard v Palmer, 325
Shepheard’s Case, 140
Shepherd v Butcher Tool & Hardware Co., 459
Sheppard v. Furniss, 98
Sheppard v. Graves, 413, 423
Sheppard v. Peabody Ins. Co., 131
Sherburne v. Hyde, 415
Shelton v. Heathon, 131
Sherwood v. Chase, 557
Shipled v. Field, 143, 188
Shipley v. Shpley, 77
Shives v. Enos Cotton Mills, 577
Shedley v. Fischer, 421
Shoemaker v. Nesbit, 168
Short v. Wilson, 189
Shortland v. Govett, 125
Shoup v. Shields, 162
Shreeve v. Adams, 188
Shrewsbury’s Case, 191
Shriver v. Nimiclc, 511
Shufeldt v. Seymour, 421
Shultz v. Barker, 215
Shum v. Farrington, 112
Shunway v. Phillips, 233
Sibley v. Brown, 145, 525
Sick v. Michigan Aid Ass’n, 559
Sill v. Rood, 508
Siltzell v. Michael, 257
Sliver v. Rhodes, 405
Simkirty v. Rogers, 208
Simmons v. Jenkins, 266, 500
Simonton v. Winter, 304
Simpson v. Alexander, 223
Simpson v. Band, 167
Simpson v. McFarland, 266, 498
Simpson v. Wren, 263
Sims v. Sims, 174, 157, 193
Sinclair v. JierVey, 472
Sinclair v. Jackson ex dem. Field, 235
Sinclair v. Piercy, 284
Singer Sewing Mach. Co. cc Burger, 472
Sluott v Feick, 267, 270
Sir Francis Leke's Case, 143, 442, 443
Sir Ralph Bevy's Case, 141, 440
Six Carpenters' Case, 165, 169
S. J. & W. N. Bayard v. Smith, 184
Skevil v. Avery, 117, 120
Skinner v. Gunton, 557
Skinner v. McDowell, 160
Slack v. Bowsal, 355
Slack cc Lyon, 550, 564
Slade v. Dowland, 150
Slade v. Drake, 445
Slade's Case, 279, ~ 356
Slade v. Post, 103
Slater v. Pehlberg, 101, 559
Sleeper v. World’s Pair Banquet Hall Co., 96
Sloeum v. Clark, 146
Congregational Meeting-
638

Smith's Heirs ~c Christmas, 329
Smithwick v. Ward, 514
Snelder v. I. Seliwenk, Inc., 239
Snell v. DeLani, 424
Snell v. Kirby, 284
SncIl v. Stanley, 418
Snow v. Boy, 267
Snyder v. Gaither, 473
Snyder v. Vaugx, 257
Society for Ill-e Propagation
Pawlet, 423
Sogn v. Koetzle, 387
Solomon v. Norton, 570
Solomon v. Vi.isOn, 6, 22
Somerville v. Grim, 350, 363
Soper v. Sunner, 158
Southard v. Hill, 421
Southern Cotton Oil Co. v. Woods, 94
Southern Express Co. v. McVeigh, 188
Southern Hardware & Supply Co. v. Lester, 244
Southern Home Ins. Co. v. Putnal, 396
Southern Railway Co. xc Covenia, 398
Sowter v. Seekonk Lace Co., 99
Spaeth v. Hare, 4-40
Spangler v. Pugh, 145
Spann v. Baltacll, 330
Sparghawk xc Bagg, 159, 160
Sparks v. Garrigues, 276, 283
Speake v. Richards, 276
Spear v. Cummins, 201
Speelman v. Chaffee, 594
Spencer v. Aetna Indemnity Co., 411, 432
Spencer v. Court of Honor, 79
Spencer v. Southwick, 132, 390, 468
Spencer v. Trafford, 109
Spicer v. Desjardins, 138
Spieres v. Parker, 139
Spieres v. Parker, 557
Spiker v. Eehrer, 130
Spooner v. Warner, 299
Sprague v. Morgan, 305

Page 691 of 735
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Starke v. Cheeseman, 324
Starkweather v. Kittle, 466, 480
Starr v. Jackson, 159, 190, 191
Starr v. Trustees of Village of Rochester, 698
Starratt v. Gault, 424
State v. Beasom, 466
State v. Chandler, 425
State v. Folsom, 298
State v. Freeman, 557
State v. Headly, 238
State v. Judge of Fifth District Court, 597
State v. Morgan, 570
State v. Peck, 405
State v. Seaboard Air Line fly., 396
State v. Wittum, 114
State v. Warner Valley Stock Co., 571
State v. Whitaker, 597
State ex rd. Anderson v. Leonard, 91
State ex rd. Ballard v. Greene, 131
State of Louisiana v. Mayor, etc., of City of New Orleans, 360, 361
State, to Use of Kelley v. Wilson, 369
Staton v. Pittman, 250
Stearnes v. Barrett, 323
Stearnes v. Raymond, 257
Stearns v. Cope, 404
Stearns v. Dillingham, 352
Stebbins v. Lancashire Ins. Co., 500
Steckel v. Steckel, 351
Steed v. McIntyre, 559

Middlesex Canal, 201

Stiles v. Basley, 352
Stiles v. Stewart, 209
Stillman v. Squier, 268
Stilwell v. Carpenter, 115

Stilson v. Tohey, 502
Stilwell v. Uashrouck, 480
Stinchfield v. Twaddle, 216
Stinson v. Edgemoor Iron Works, 301, 302
Stinson v. Gardiner, 398
Stirling v. Carrito, 223
Stirling v. Vaughan, 213
Stockdale v. Buckingham, 79
Stotetzell v. Fullerton, 421
Stoeber v. Stoever, 327

Stone v. Bliss, 133
Stone v. Codman, 223
Stone v. Knowlton, 325
Stone v. Perry, 268
Stone v. White, 328, 367
Stonegap Colliery Co. v. Hamilton, 92
Stonehouse v. Sodvil, 291
Storm v. Livingston, 229
Story v. Atkins, 364
Stout v. Keyes, 157, 387
Stout v. Bessel, 109
Stovall’s Ex’t v. Woodson, 288
Stow v. Yarwood, 516
Stocvel v. Lord Zoueh, 141
Stowell v. Beagle, 492
Stocwell v. Lord Zouch, 140
Stoyel v. Westcott, 97, 188
Strain v. Strain, 186
Strange v. Durham, 486
Strange v. Powell, 206
Stratton v. Hill, 283
Street v. Nelsen, 212
Streeter v. Streeter, 108, 421, 509, 516
Strickler v. Todd, 180, 188
Stringer v. Mitchell, 237
Strohl v. Levan, 165, 166, 178
Strohm v. Hayes, 575
Strong cc Adams, 157
Strong v. Smith, 476
Strother’s Adm’r v. Butler, 358
Stroud cc Lady Gerrard, 126, 127, 324
Stuart v. Dutton, 233
Stuart v. Sears, 352
Stuart v. Wilkins, 189
Stubbs v. Lainson, 441, 442
Stultz cc Dickey, 102
Stumps v. JCell, 180, 201, 535
Sturges v. Bush, 310
Sturges v. Keith, 220, 222
Sturman v. Colon, 487
Stuyvesant v. Tompkins, 159
Suffern v. Townsend, 160
Sullivan cc Boswell, 516
Sullivan v. Jones, 168
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sullivan v. Waterman</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summers v. McKlin</td>
<td>359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TABLE OF CASES</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>References are to Pages</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sumner v. Flenean</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sundberg v. Oor</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Supreme Lodge A. 0. U.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swain &amp; Son v. Chicago</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swan cc Wilkinson</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sweet v. Hulbert</td>
<td>507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swift v. Crocker</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swift v. Moseley</td>
<td>212, 215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swift Co. v. Gaylord</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swift &amp; C. &amp; a Co. v.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sykes cc Walls</td>
<td>210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Symeck v. Payn</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taft v. Brewster</td>
<td>365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talbea v. Cason</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talmadge v. Scudder</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tandrup v. Sampsell</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tanner v. Allison</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tappan cc Campbell</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tappscott v. Gibbs</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarleton v. Wells</td>
<td>525, 528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tate v. Wellington</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tate v. Perient</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W. v. Zuhlke</td>
<td>421, 426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. &amp; O. B. Co.</td>
<td>89, 120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>United States</td>
<td>852</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tatrn v. Louisville &amp; N. U. Co.</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taverna v. Churchill</td>
<td>520, 524</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Eastwood</td>
<td>116, 482</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Gladwin</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Hanlon</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Higgins</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Horde</td>
<td>495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Jones</td>
<td>160, 169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Laird</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Morgan</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Needham</td>
<td>147, 439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. New Jersey Title Guarantee &amp; Trust Co.</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Pope</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Robinson</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Russell</td>
<td>233, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Summers Bros. Match Co.</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Wells</td>
<td>1,11, 249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Williams</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor v. Wilson</td>
<td>304, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tebbets cc Titon</td>
<td>148, 476, 483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ten Eyck v. Waterbury</td>
<td>474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pennant’s Ex’r v. Gray</td>
<td>128, 334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry cc Munger</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thatcher v. Lyman</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thayer cc Brewer</td>
<td>462, 489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thayer v. Hutchinson</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thayer v. Rogers</td>
<td>478</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theis v. Sveboda</td>
<td>539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas v. Black</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas v. Brady</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas cc Cameron</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
References are to Pages

Thomas v. Mott, 339
Thomas v. Riley, 487
Thomas v. Roosa, 143, 333
Thomas v. Spofford, 262, 263
Koffler & Reppy Com.Law Pldg. H.B.—22

TABLE OF CASES

Publishing Ass’n, 198

640

Thomas v. Van Ness, 330
Thomas Mfg. Co. v. Watson, 340
Thomason v. Agnew, 201
Thome cc Haley, 308
Thompson v. Adams, 234
Thompson v. Bell, 101

Torrence v. Irwin, 159
Torrey v. Field, 482
Touchard v. Keyes, 232
Towle cc Lovet, 215
Town of. See under name of town, Townsend cc Crowdy, 352
Townsend cc Jemison, 400
Tracy v. Warren, 263
Trammell v. Lee County, 340
Trapnell v. Merrick, 277
Trauger v. Sassaman, 163
Taylory v. Horrall, 212
Treat v. Barber, 128
Treusch v. Kamka, 89
Trever cc Roberts, 356
Tribble v. Frame, 118
Tribble v. Oldham, 304
Triggs v. Sun Printing &
Trinkle v. Reeves, 353
Trigg v. Grouner, 219
Trollop’s Case, 431
Trotter v. Taylor, 498
Troville v. Tiford, 213
Troy Laundry Machinery Co., 256
Trudo v. Anderson, 268
Trueman v. Hurst, 364
Truett v. Legg, 566
Trunibuli v. Campbell, 351
Trussel’s Case, 577
Trustees of Dartmouth College v.
Tubbs v. Casweil, 476, 555
Tucker v. Ladd, 482
Tullidge v. Wade, 165, 179, 191
Tunnison v. Field, 340
Turner cc Eyles, 143
Turner v. li’elgate, 125
Turner v. Hawkins, 165, 166, 178
Turner v. Reynolds, 232
Turner cc Waldo, 216, 219
Turney cc Sturges, 122
Tuttle cc Atlantic City B. Co., 173
Tuttle v. Campbell, 358
Tuttle v. Gilbert Mfg. Co., 188
Tuttle v. Robinson, 268
Tweedyl v. Jarvis, 113, 114
Tyler v. Balley, 353
Tyler v. Freeman, 264
Tyler v. Hand, 406
Ultrameres Corp. cc Touche, 73
Underhill v. Ellicombe, 295, 296
Underwood v. Campbell, 489
Underwood v. Parks, 489, 492
Union Brewing Co. cc Meter, 234, 496
Thompson v. Fellows, 439, 441
Thompson v. French, 275, 276, 282
Thompson v. Heward, 352
Thompson v. Jacoway, 564
Thompson v. Lee, 113
Thompson v. Lyon, 234
Thompson v. Moore, 201
Thompson v. Rose, 221
Thomson v. Locke, 105
Thorn v. Shering, 454, 455
Thorne v. Fox, 509
Thomne & Thome v. Deas, 288, 334
Thornton v. Adams, 146
Thornton v. Smith, 850, 363
Thornton v. Village of Sturgis, 319
Thorup v. Hurling, 157, 215
Thorpe & Uxer v. Booth, 329
Thorwarth v. Blanchard, 103
Thouron v. Paul, 310
Thrale v. Bishop of London, 455
Thrall v. Wright, 509
Throop v. Sherwood, 340, 360
Thurber v. Conners, 55
Thuman v. Wild, 441
Thuman v. Willingham, 413
Thursdy v. Plant, 143
Thurston v. Blanchard, 212, 221
Thurston v. Mills, 358
Thurston v. Percival, 342
Tienney v. Corbett, 247, 248
Tillotsan v. Stipp, 97
Tilson v. Town of Warwick Gaslight Co., 295
Tilton v. Beecher, 374
Tinney v. Ashley, 330
Tippet v. May, 400, 403, 473
Tobey v. Berly, 330
Tobey v. Webster, 157, 159
Tolan v. Hodgeboom, 220
Toland v. Sprague, 441
Toledo, P. & W. By. Co. v. Webster, 575
Toledo, W. & W. U. Co. v. Chew, 342, 357, 358
Toledo, W. & W. B. Co. v. Harmon, 193
Toolph v. Wells, 525
Tomkins v. Ashby, Moody & It, 398
Tomlin v. Durlace, 469
Tomlinson v. Darnall, 460
Tomlinson v. Day, 857
Tompkins v. Baile, 221
Tucker v. Arnoux, 564, 577
Topping v. Evans, 157
Clough, 50k

Union Cotton Manufactory v. Lobdell, 95, 97
Union Pacific R. Co. v. Wyler, 568
Union Petroleum Co. v. Bliven Petroleum Co., 163, 180

University of Vermont v. Joslyn, 100
Upton v. Craig, 169
Upton v. Vail, 189, 194
Vaughan v. Thompson, 295, 298
‘Tausse v. Russell, 257
Vaux v. Malnawing, 343
Vavasour v. Ormrod, 331
Vere v. Smith, 526, 534
TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Vernon v. Gatacrc, 528

Verschures Creameries, Ltd. v. Hull S. Co., 352

Union Stockyard & Transit Co. v. Mallory Son & Zinnterinan Co., 221

United Copper Mining & Smelting Co. v. Franks, 157

United States v. Brown, 804, 305

United States v. Colt, 282

United States v. Cruikbank, 15

United States v. Forbes, 387

United States v. Gurney, 476

United States v. Hoffman, 597

United States v. Morris, 555, 564

United States v. Peters, 597

United States v. Schumz, 523

United States v. Willard, 468

United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co. v. District Grand Lodge No. 27 of Grand United Order of Odd Fellows, 294

United States Printing & Lithograph Co. v. Powers, 641

& Netherlands S.

Vicary v. Moore, 514


Vickery v. Sherburne, 4.93

Victors v. Davies, 350, 362, 363


Vincent v. Cornell, 221, 222

Vining v. Baker, 213

Vivian v. Jenkin, 470

Voqrin v. American Steel & Wire Co., 184

Vroeman v. Lawyer, 201

Vrooman v. McCaig, 352

Vynior’s Case, 141, 142

W

Wabash H. Co. v. Billings, 144

Wabash, St. L. & P. By. Co. v. McCasland, 188

Wabash Western By. Co. v. Friedman, 144

Waddell v. Phillips, 339

Wade v. Emerson, 514

Wadham v. Swan, 441, 459, 469

Wadlefl v. Janvin, 208, 218

Wadieiglj v. Katahdin Pulp & Paper Co., 184, 319

Wadleigh v. Town of Sutton, 341, 303

Wadsworth v. Gay, 357

Wadsworth v. Woodford, 428

Wageelt v. Travelers’ Ins., Co., 472

Waid v. Dixon, 324, 364

Wailing v. Toll, 508

Waistel v. Holman, 298

Wait v. Baldwin, 257

Walcott v. Canfield, 426

Walden v. Feller, 257

Walden v. Holman, 392, 397, 406

Wales v. Bogue, 235

Walker v. Conant, 351, 352, 387

Walker v. Duncan, 343, 358

Walker v. Penner, 250, 251

Walker v. Goodwin, 187

Walker v. President, etc., of Michigan State Bank, 141

Walker v. Richards, 325

Walker v. Sargent, 572

Walker v. Shackelford, 343
Walker v. Walker, 278, 585
Walker v. Wizrn, 509
Walker v. Witter, 361
Wall, En parte, 445
Wail v. Chesapeake & O. II. Co., 148
Wallace v. Curtiss, 555, 556, 575
Wallace v. Dixon, 109
Wallace v. Holly, 387
Wallace v. McConnell, 515
Wallace v. Bowing, 223
Waller v. Village of River Forest, 128
Wallis v. Doe ex dem. Smith's Heirs, 235
Wallis v. Fra2ier, 325
Walpole v. Smith, 203, 264
Vail v. Lewis, 168, 169
Valentine v. Northrop, 235
Valerli v. Breakwater Co., 94
Valerlus v. Richard, 569
Van Baalen v. Dean, 265
Van Brunt v. Schenelr, 157, 160, 169
Van Buren Light & Power Co. v. Inhabitants of Van
Buren, 305, 220
VanDerkarr v. Vandemkarr, 305
Van fleusen v. Bluin, 276, 343
Van Doren v. Everitt, 162
Vandrink v. Archer, 210
Van Etten v. Hurst, 462
Van Horn v. Freeman, 179
Vanlandingham v. Ryan, 406
Van Namee v. Bradley, 285, 498, 499
Van Ness v. Forrest, 469
Van Ness v. Hamilton, 454
Van Norman v. Young, 514
Van Ommert v. Hageman, 104
Vann Rensselaer's Efrs v. Platner's Ex'rs, 128, 334
Van Santwood v. Sanford, 294
Van Vaeter v. McKillip, 179
Van Valkenburgh v. Rouk, 503
Van Vleet v. Blackwood, 235
Vamo v. Pelot, 575
Varnes v. Seaboard Air Line Railway Co., 137
Vasse v. Smith, 188, 508
Vaughan v. Everts, 480
Walsingham's Case, 140, 141
Walter v. Laughton, 86
Walters v. City of Ottawa, 202, 561
Walters v. Hodges, 450
Walters v. Sheffield, 231, 232
Walton v. Clarke, 160
Walton v. Follansbec, 233
Walton v. Malcolm, 234, 496
Wunn v. McNulty, 320
Wapello State Savings Bank v. Colton, 306
Ward v. Athens Mm. Co., 509
Ward v. Bell, 99
Ward v. Blunt, 493
Ward v. Harris, 327, 328
Ward v. fluff, 4, 66, 67
Ward v. Macauley, 154, 157, 158, 176, 179
Ward v. Mississippi River Power Co., 486, 487
Ward v. Warner, 319
Ward v. Wiman, 189
Ward and Blunt’s Case, 472
Wardell v. Fosdick, 189
Warden & Commonalty of the Mystery of Grocers v. Arehbi-isbop of Canterbury, 437, 438
Ware v. Dudley, 146
Waring v. Griffiths, 116
Waring v. Yates, 108
Warn cc Bickford, 332
Warner v. Bacon, 128, 334
Warner v. Canton, 263
Warner cc Dunucan, 188
Warner v. Wainsford, 459, 469, 472
Warren v. Badger Lead & Zinc Co., 574
Warren v. Caryl, 360, 364
Warren v. Consett, 503
Warren v. Hall, 26
Warren cc Dwyer, 212
Warren v. Flagg, 504
Warren v. Harris, 575
Warren v. Leland, 264, 265
Warren cc McCarthy, 298
Warren v. Webb, 104, -105
Washburn v. Mosely, 132
Washington Ice Co. v. Webster, 268
Waterbury Nat. Bank v. Reed, 505
Waterhouse cc Sterehi Bros. Furniture Co., 369
Waterman cc Clark, 516
Waterman v. Hall, 181
Waterman cc Robinson, 263, 264
Waters v. Lilley, 486
Watkins v. Ford, 360
Watkins v. Wake, 283
Watriss v. Pierce, 91, 468, 476, 479
Wats v. King, 473
Watson v. Inhabitants of Cambridge, 862
Watson v. Jones, 194
Watson v. King, 209

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Watson v. M’Nairy, 277
Watson v. Rushmore, 563
Watson v. Iwoolverton, 351
Wattles v. flu Bs, 205
Watton v. Brinhb, 288, 334
Watts v. Konnum, 387
Watts v. Lehman, 208
Watts v. Thomas, 105
Waugh cc Russell, 127
Wcall v. King, 426
\Wcar cc Jacksonville & Savannah H. H. Co., 403
WeaVer v. Bush, 164
Weaver v. Lawrence, 266
Webb v. Fox, 216, 403
Webb v. Mann, 220
Webb v. MartIn, 474
Webb v. Ross, 442
Webb v. Sturtevant, 162
Webber cc DaVis, 210
Webber v. Tivill, 350
Webster v. Hall, 233
Webster v. Holmes, 198, 199
Weed v. Hall, 263
Weeding v. Aldrich, 140
Weedon v. Timbrell, 165, 179
Weeks v. Peach, 473
Weeton v. Woodcock, 208
Wegersioffe v. ICrcnc, 324
Weidensaul v. Reynolds, 213
Weigley’s Adm’rs v. Weir, 333
Weller v. Kershauer, 358
Weiscnfield v. Macan, 594
Weiss v. Binnian, 405
Weiss cc Mauch Chunk Iron Co., 2~
Welch v. Jenks, 161, 162
Welch V. Sykes, 505
Weld cc Hubbard, 201
Weld v. Oliver, 220
Weldon v. Lytle, 208
Welker’s Lessee v. Coulter, 233
Weller v. Weyand, 201
Weller & Co. v. Camp, 132
Wellington cc Milliken, 108, 110
Wells v. Howell, 164, 180
Wells v. Iggulden, 130, 297
Wells cc ICanawba & I. By. Co., 97
Wells v. Knight, 178
Welsh v. Seaborn, 353
Weltale v. Clover, 533
Weltenhall v. Sherwin, 131
West cc H. 3. Lewis Oyster Co., 396
West v. Hughes, 240 West v. Ratledge, 68
West v. Tcude, 160, 191
West v. Troles, 100
West Chicago St. II. Co v. Levy. 129
West Chicago St. H. Co. cc Morrison, Adams & Mica Co., 480
Western Union Tel. Co., Er Porte, 306
Western Union Tel. Co. v. Bowen, 322
Western Union Tel. Co. v. Longwill, 576
Western Union Tel. Co. v. Morrison, 396
Weston cc Mason, 576
Westropp v. Solomon, 353
Westwood v Cowne, 129
Wetherell v. Spencer, 265
Wetmore v. Baker, 350, 363
Wetzel v. Hancock County, 79
W. F. Parker & Son ‘v, Clemons, 360
Wheeler v. Curtis, 403, 469
Wheeler v. Hotchkiss, 160
Wheeler v. McCorristen, 500
Wheeler v. Train, 215, 263
Wheeler v. Wilson, 364
Wheeler & Wilson Mfg. Co. v. Hell, 221
Wheeling Mold & Foundry Co. v. Wheeling Steel & Iron Co., 324
Wheelock v. Wheelwright, 220
Whelan v. Massachusetts Bonding & Ins. Co., 330
Whelpdale’s Case, 504
Whidden v. Seelye, 208
Whipple v. Fuller, 97
Whipple v. Gilpatrick, 210
Whipple v. McGinn, 238
Whipple v. Parker, 343
Whitacre v. City of Charlotte, 396
Wiltaker v. Freeman, 475, 480
Whitall cc Morse, 330
Whitbeck v. Whitbeck, 357
White v. Bailey, 575
White v. Bourguin, 396
White v. Brantley, 157
White v. Concord B. Co., 575, 576
White v. Delavan, 556
White cc Demary, 222
White v. East Side Mill Co., 446
White v. Hapeman, 235

Page 700 of 735
White v. Oliver, 841
White v. Romans, 131
White v. Sanborn, 105
White v. Street, 308
White v. Teale, 404
White v. Thomas, 294
White v. White, 232
White v. Wilson, 327, 828
White Co. v. Union Transfer Co., 265
Wifitecraft v. Vanderver, 296, 297
Whitehead v. Burgess, 121, 393
Whitehead v. Harrison, 246, 249
 Whitfield v. Whitfield, 247
Whitford v. Drexel, 235
Whitley v. Bramble, 235
Whitmaker v. Fitcairn, 186
Whitman v. Merrill, 267
Whitmore v. Green, 494
Whitney v. Spencer, 294
Whitney v. Wright, 233
Whittlescy v. Wolcott, 472
Whittington v. Christian, 240
Whitwell v. Wells, 478
Wiard v. Semken, 246, 526
Watt v. Essington, 111, 131
Wickham v. Freeman, 159, 160
Wickiff v. Hill, 327
Wiggins Ferry Co. v. Blakeman, 489
Wilbur v. Gilmore, 406
Wilby v. Bower, 183
Wilcox v. Cohn, 332
Wilcox v. Kiazic, 160, 448
Wilcox v. Servant of Skipwith, 466
Wilde v. Cantillon, 163
Wilder v. Bandy, 131
Willey v. Fractional School Dist. No. I of Paw Paw and Antiwerp, 342
Wildman v. North, 498
Wildman v. Wildman, 87
Wilkerson v. McDougal, 247
Wilkes v. Broadbent, 578
Wilkin v. Wilkin, 313
Wilkins v. Wingate, 277, 356
Wilkinson v. Connell, 157
Wilkinson v. Hall, 280
Wilkinson v. Verity, 243, 250, 251
Willard v. Missani, 100
Willard v. Zehr, 414
Willey v. Carpenter, 392
Willey v. Paul, 129
Williams v. Allen, 425
Williams v. Bernis, 343
Williams v. East India Co., 142
Williams v. Cease, 220
Williams v. Holland, 160, 178, 1-
Williams v. Jones, 361
Williams v. Lewis, 157
Williams v. Morland, 163, 180
Williams v. Ogle, 113
Williams v. Peninsula Grocery Co., 93, 420
Williams v. Preston, 208
Williams v. Sherman, 340
Williams v. Smith, 329, 498
Williams v. Staton, 333
Williams v. Wilcox, 91
Williamson v. Allison, 189
Williamson v. Columbia Gas & Electric Corp., 203, 302
Willington v. Inhabitants of West Boylston, 341
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TABLE OF CASES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>References are to Pages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cc Breehemin, 304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Ellis, 109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Gilbert, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Guyan[jott Timber Co., 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cc Hick-son, 284, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Hobday, 142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Kemp, 535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. King, 512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Martin, 158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Myrick, 403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. Nevers, 425, 428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. City of Salamanca, 588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Darndill, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Fletcher, 113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Cunston, 508, 581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willis v. Noyes, 265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willmarth v. Crawford, 283, 290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willis v. Barrister, 267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wills cc Clatlin, 557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilison v. Force, 243, 357, 358, 365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilison v. Wilison, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilmington &amp; Raleigh U. U. Co. v. Itobeson, 331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson v. Alexander, 353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson v. Bibb, 118</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

644
TABLE OF CASES
References are to Pages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wise v. Hodsoll</td>
<td>460, 463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wisner v. Wilhelm</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Witbeck v. Waine</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William v. Lewis</td>
<td>570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Witherell v. Clerkson</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Withers v. Greene</td>
<td>-131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Withers v. Knox</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Witherspoon v. Clegg</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Witt v. St. Paul &amp; N. P. fly.</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolf v. Bearcl</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolf v. Binder</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolfe v. Howes</td>
<td>143, 341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolkau v. Wolkau</td>
<td>312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wonssettler v. Lee</td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Budden</td>
<td>442, 443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Butts</td>
<td>468</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Morton</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Papendick</td>
<td>387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood v. Weimar</td>
<td>264, 265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodcock v. Cole</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wooderman v. Baldoek</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodgate v. Knatchibull</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodruff v. Zabson &amp; Son</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woods v. Ayres</td>
<td>338, 362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woods v. Haukshead</td>
<td>526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woods v. Lane</td>
<td>233, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woods v. Nixon</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woods v. Pettis</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodstock v. Town of Hancock</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodward v. Grand Trunk Ry. Co.</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodward v. Walton</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodward v. Walton</td>
<td>182, 191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodworth v. Kiassain</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodworth v. Woodhurn</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woolaston v. Webb</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wooster v. Butler</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worley v. Rarrou</td>
<td>438</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worley v. Johnson</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worley v. Johnson</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wormouth v. Cramer</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worsley v. Wood</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worster v. Proprietors of Canal Bridge</td>
<td>572</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worth v. Butler</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Armstrong</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Atlantic Coast Line B. Co.</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Campbell</td>
<td>507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Carter</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Dickinson</td>
<td>351, 353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Freeman</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Freeman</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Guy</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Haskell</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Johnson</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Raniseot</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Sharp</td>
<td>601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Tuttle</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Watts</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Weisinger</td>
<td>504</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright v. Wilcox</td>
<td>165, 193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wynnt v. Crousso</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wyat v. Aland</td>
<td>143, 145, 146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wyld v. Pickford</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wyman v. Brown</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Y

Yale v. Saunders, 222, 223
Yarber v. Chicago & A. H. Co., 570
Yates v. Boeu, 503
Yates v. Carlisle, 143
Yates v. Joyce, 190
Yeager v. Wallace, 221
Yeatmari v. Collen, 526
Teasel v. Rarber Bros., 149
Yelverton v. Conant, 420
teyr v. Warren, 165
Yerrington v. Greene, 341
Tingling v. Collier, 461
Yocum v. Zaltis, 7
Yong Den v. Hitchcock, 365
York v. Marshall, 257
York v. Texas, 79
Young v. Black, 508, 547
Young v. Cooper, 298, 494
Young v. Dresser, 529
Young v. Edwards, 245
Young v. Fentress, 473
Young v. Hawkins, 276, 284
Young v. Hcrdic, 257
Young v. Kimball, 264

TABLE OF CASES

References are to Pages

Young v. Rudd, 441, 466
Young v. Huddle, 441
Young v. Rummell, 510
Young v. Scott, 284
Young v. Stevens, 309
Young & Ashburnham’s Case, 283
Younglove v. Knox, 268
Yundt v. Hartranft, 182
Zeidler v. Johnson, 147
Zell v. Junkle, 322
Zerger v. Sailer, 329

INDEX

References are to Pages

ABATEMENT
See Dilatory Pleas.
ADMISSION

Demurrer, 396—390.
Failure to deny, 465—466.
Ill-pleaded facts, 397—305.
Oath, 21.
Protestation to prevent, 466-461.
Well-pleaded facts, 307—398.

AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSE
See Confession and Avoidance.

AFFIRMATIVE PREGNANT
ature and effect, 444.

AGGRAVATION
Particularity, 156—138.
Purpose, 187—138.

ALTERNATIVE PLEADING
Nature and effect, 146—147.
Special demurrer to, 147.

AIDER
Defective pleadings, by statute, 504.
Definition, 554.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 5431, 564.
Pleading over without verdict, In general, 554—556.
Express averment, 555.
Implied admissions, 555—556.
Supplemental pleadings, statutory provisions, 564. Verdict, in general, 550—558.
Intendment after verdict, 556—551.
Relation to motion for arrest of judgment, 575—577.

**ABSCUE HOC**
See also Traverse.
Clause in special traverse, 447-457.

**ACCOUNT**
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 313—314. Declaration, essential allegations,
In general, 315.
Damages, 816.
Pacts showing right, 815—316.
Refusal or breach, 316.
Declarations (Form), 314—315.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 310—317.
Scope and nature, 310—313.

**ACTIONS**
See also Mixed Actions: Personal Actions; Real Actions.
Appearance,
  Default, 80.
  General, 78—SO.
  Special, 78—SO.
Classification, 45—48, 55—SC.
Commencement,
  Generally, CS—Si.
  Modern practice, 72.
Original writ, 72.
Procure, 72.
Judgment,
  Classification and scope, 586—587.
  Relation to, 584—585.
Local and transitory, 103—107.
Proceedings to obtain judgments, 58—1-585.
Right to be heard, 72.

**ADJECTIVE LAW**
Position In Anglo-American Law, b—u.

**AMS IOU IT?**
Meaning and effect, 1443, 444-446.

**AMENDMENT**
Change of cause of action,
Modern codes, rules, etc., 562—563.
Modern law, 560.
Defective pleadings, statutory provisions, 564.
Leave of court, modern rules, 502.
Status under modern codes, 561—503.
Statute of limitations,
  In general, 560—562.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 503.
Statutes of Jeofails,
  History, 558.
  Purpose and effect, 558.
Variance, modern codes, rules, etc., 564. Where permitted, 558—561.

**ANOTHER ACTION pgNu/jpJG**
See Dilatory Pleas.

**ANTICIPATING DEFENSES**

Fixeptionu, estoppel, dUatory pleas, 132, 140.
Not required, 140—141.

**APPEARANCE**

See Actions.

**APPELLATE REVIEW**

Bill of exceptions, 601—602.
OrigIn, 601—602.
Statute of Westminster II (1285), 801—602.
Certiorari, writ to review record, 597—308.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 602—603.
Prohibition, writ, excess of jurisdiction, 590—507.
Writ of error, 509—000.
Coram Nobis, 599, 601.
Coram Vobis, SPa.
Matter of right, 590.

**ARGUMENTATIVENESS**

improper pleading, 407.
Nature of, 467—460.
Two affirmatives rule, 467—489.
Two negatives rule, 467—469.

**ARREST**

Ball, special and common, 73.
Capias Ad Respondernlum, 73.
Capias Ad Satisfaciendum, 502—593.
Imprisonment for debt, 503.

**ARREST OF JUDGMENT, MOTION**

Alder by verdict, relation, 573—577.
Defects in pleadings, 572—574.
Defects in verdict, 575.
Definition, 571.
Misjoinder or nonjoinder, 424, 426.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 582.
Nature and function, 571—577.
Non obstante vercdicto, compared, 573, 574.
Question of law raised, 572.
Theory underlying, 571—572.

**ASSAULT AND BATTERY**

See Trespass.

**ASSUMPSIT**

See Indobitatus Assumpsit; Special Assumpsit.

**ATTACHMENT**

See Courts; Process; Writ of Attachment

**AUTHORITY**

Cognizance in replevin, 125.
Justification, 124—125.
Particularity in showing, 124—125.

**AVOWRY**

See Iteplevin.

**BENTHAM, JEREMY**

Influence on procedural reform, 3.

**BILL OF EXCEPTIONS**


Origin, 601—602.
Statute of Westminster II (1285), 601—602.

BILL OF PARTICULARS
Modern codes, rules, etc., 375—377.
Origin, 372—373.
Scope, 373—375.

BLACKSTONE, WILLIAM
Classification of common law actions, 47.

BOND
Breach, condition of, 133.
Debt on a specialty for, 292—293.
Performance, condition of, 183.

BREACH
See specific actions for alleged breach.

BURDEN OF PROOF
Affirmative of issue has, 542.
Burden of rebuttal, 542—543.
Function of judge and jury, 348—344.
Indicated by pleadings, 15—20, 542.
Prima facie case, 542.

CASE
See Trespass on the Case.

CAUSA DEBENDI
See also Debt.
Debt obligation, 275, 278, 280, 287, 204, 206.

CAUSE OF ACTION
Analysis of, 12.
Defined, 85.
Form of action distinguished, 59—60.
Joinder, 06—08.
Pleading, 85, 88—89.
Prima facie, 92.
Statement of, 85, 80-90.

CERTAINTY
Degrees of,
To certain intent,
Every particular, 132—133.
In general, 132.
To common intent, 132.
General rules in pleading, 131.
In pleading,
Authority, 124—125.
Names of persons, 113—114.
Performance of condition, 133.
Place, 107.
Quality, 111—113.
Quantity, 111—113.
Time, 108—110.
Title, 115—116.
Value, 111—113.
Subordinate rules limiting degree of, 134—135.

CERTIORARI
See Writ of Certiorari.

CIVIL ACTION
See also Cause of Action; Forms of Action. Form of, under codes, 66-CT.

CIVIL LAW PROCEDURE
States adopting, 26.

CODE PLEADING
Common law actions and, 26.
Common law and equity suits, 26,
Complaint under, 23,
Forced Issue In, 382—383.
Nature of, 21—23.
Objections of judges to, 26—27.
Principles applicable to, 25.
Relation to common-law pleading, 21—23.
Restatement of common law, 22.

INDEX
References are to Pages

COGNIZANCE
See Repievin.

COMMENCEMENT AND CONCLUSION
Conclusion of plea,
Confession and avoidance, 462, 532—Sat Traverse, 436, 532—534.
Of a,
Plea in abatement, 431-432.
Plea in suspension, 431.
Plea to jurisdiction, 431
Replication, 522.
Subsequent pleading, 522

COMMENCEMENT OF ACTION
See Process.

COMMON BAR, PLEA OF
Liberum Tenementum, 487.

COMMON BREACH
Alleged with common counts, 344, 347.
In declaration (Form), 347.

COMMON COUNTS
See also Indebitatus Assumpsit.
Classification, 349.
Field, David Dudley, on, 93.
Indebitatus count in debt, 292.

COMMON LAW ACTIONS
Mixed actions, 28, 46—47, 48, 53. Personal,
In general, 46—47, 56—58.
Modern, —58.
Iteal,
In general, 46—56.
Ancient, 28, 47—51.
Modern, 53—56.

COMMON LAW PLEADING
Characteristics of, 25.
Civil law compared, 21.
Evolutionary development, 27.
Functions of, 13—17.
Importance of, 10—12.
Methodology, 1—8.
Modern procedure, relation to, 27—29.
Real and mixed actions under, 28.
Reform of, 3’-6.
Relation to,
Code pleading, 21—23.
Equity pleading, 19—21.
Other systems, 19—24. Status under codes, 24—27.

COMMON TRAVERSE
See Traverse.

CONCLUSIONS OF LAW
Insufficiency in pleading, 92-04.
Ultimate or operative facts, 90—94.

CONDITIONS
Averment of performance,
   Certainty In pleading, 133,
   In covenant, 307.
   In special assumpsit, 328—332.

INDEX

References are to Pages

CONFESSION AND AVOIDANCE
See also Pleas In Ear.
Admission, adversary’s allegations, 460—465.
Classification of pleas, 434—435.
Conclusion of, 462.
Color,
   Express, 462, 463—465.
   Implied, 462, 463.
Discharge, 460, 461.
Justification or excuse, 370—380, 400—461.
Nature, 460—482.
Plea (Form), 461.
Plea in,
   judgment, 505.
   simple contract, 502.
   speciality, 503—504.
   statute, 502.
   Covenant,
   Debt on a
   Debt on a
   Debt on a
   Retinue, 4.97.
Ejectment, 405—496.
Indebitatus assumpsit, 512.
Replevin, 500.
Special assumpsit, 510.
Trespass, 486—488.
Trespass on the ease, 490—192.
Trove, 493.
Replication de injuria, relation, 521—522.
Statute of limitations, defense, 490—491.
Trespass, liberum tenemematum (Form), 487—188.

CONSIMILI CASU
See also Trespass on the Case; Westminster II (1285), Statute of.
Trespass on the ease, history, 44—4.5, 175.

CONSTRUCTION OF PLEADINGS
   Generally, 146—147, 444—446.

CONTINUANCE

CONVERSION
CONVEYANCE
Manner of pleading, 120—122, 126—128.
Release, 127.

CORAM NOBIS
See Appellate Review.

CORAM VOWS
See Appellate Review.

COUNTS
See Declaration; Duplicity.

COURT AND JURY
See Courts; Jury Trial.

COURTS
Action on a record, facts triable by, 538.
Different kinds, 69—70.
Effect of procedure on judicial organization, 19.
England, development of,
  Common pleas, 33.
  Exchequer, 33.
  King’s Bench, 33.
Findings of fact and conclusions of law,
  Federal rules, 538.
  New York CPLR, 538.
  Trial without jury, 538.
Issues tried by courts of equity, 536.
Judicial notice, 88.
Jurisdiction,
  Appearance, 78—SO.
  Appellate, 70.
  Constitutions as source of, 70, 71.
  Constructive service, 76—78.
  Corporations doing business, 76.
  England, 70—71.
  Federal system, 71.
  General, 69—70.
  In rem, 76.
  Legal and equitable, 71.
  Non-residents, 76.
  Original, 70.
  Parties, 70.
  Personal service, 75.
  Quasi in rem, 70—78.
  Residuary In equity, 71.
  Special, 60—70.
  Subject-matter, 70.
  Substituted service, 75—70.
  Supreme Court, 71.
  Trial, 70.
  United States, 70—71.
Not of record, 70.
Of record, 70.
Personal judgments, 75.
Trial,
  Argument on demurrer, 537—538. Issue of law, 536—538, Without jury, 538.

COVENANT
Certainty in pleading performance, 133.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 305—306.
Confession and avoidance, 507.
Contract and, 44.
Debt, distinguished, 279.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 306.
Breach, 307—308.
Damages, 308.
Execution of covenant, 306.
Performance, conditions precedent, 307.
Promise, 307.

**COVENANT—Cont’d**
Declarations (Form), 306.
Facts in knowledge of adversary, 136.
General issue, 505—507. Form, 505-500.
Horary Rules, effect on defenses, 507.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 308—a®.
Scope and nature, 303—305.
Writ of, 36.

**DAMAGES**
Account, 310.
Covenant, 308.
Debt, 275, 278—279, 282—286.
Defamation, 198—199.
Detinue, 244—247, 251.
Ejectment, 238—239.
General and special, 89, 128-129.
Gist of action, when, 80.
Indebitatus assumpsit, 365.
Mesne profits, 241, 243.
Mixed actions, 129.
Personal actions, 129.
Recoupment, cross-demand for, 515—516.
Reduction by recoupment, 515—516.
Replevin, 268—209.
Set-off, defeat of recovery, 516—517.
Special assumpsit, 333—334.
Trespass, 170.
Trespass for mesne profits, 241.
Trespass on the case, 186—187.
Trover, 206—207, 223.

**DE BONIS ASPORTATIS**
See Trespass.

**DE INJURIA**
See Replication.

**DEBT**
Breach, 284—285.
Causa Debellit, 275, 278, 286, 287, 294, 296.
Collateral promise, 289—201.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 278—279.
Covenant, compared, 279.
Damages, 285, 286.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 282—285.
Detinett, chattels, 276—278.
Executory contracts, 288—289.
Indebitatus assumpsit, compared, 279.
Indebitatus count, 292, 359.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 290—302.
On a judgment,
Confession and avoidance, 505.
Declaration (Form), 281—282.
Essential allegations, 297—298.
General issue, 504—505. Form, 504.
Horary Rules, no effect, 505.
Mode of declaring, 298—299.
On a simple contract,
Confession and avoidance, 502.
INDEX

References are to Pages 651

DEBT—Cont’d
On a specialty,
  Confession and avoidance, 503—504.

Declaration (Form), 280.
  Essential allegations, 292—295.
  General issue, 503—504. Form, 503. Rovary Rules, effect on defenses, 504.
  Mode of declaring, 294—295.
On a statute,
  Confession and avoidance, 502.
  Declaration (Form), 280—281.
  Essential allegations, 295—297.
  Mode of declaring, 297.
  Profert of bond, 126.
  Promise, 278, 286.
  Quantum meruit count, 292, 859.
  Quantum valebant count, 292, 359.
  Quod pro quo, 11, 278, 279, 286, 287, 289, 291.
  Recognition, 298.
  Scope and nature, 274—278.
  Sealed instrument.
    Future obligation, 203—294.
    Present obligation, 292—293.
  Special assumpsit, compared, 278—279, 287—288.
  Statute of frauds, 291.
  Title, as basis of action, 275—276.
  Writ of, 36.

DECLARATION
See also for essential allegations in each action:
  Accout; Covenant; Debt; Detinue; Ejectment; Indebtatus Assumpsit; Replevin;
  Assumpsit; Trespass; Trespass for Mesne Prof its; Trespass on the Case; Trover. For other matters, see specific topics.
Conformance to process, 100—101. Form, 83.
Formal parts of,
  Body, 82—83, 85.
  Commencement, 82—83, 85.
  Conclusion, 52—83, 85—86.
  Production of suit, 86.
  Title of court and term, 82—84.
  Venue, 82—83, 84-85.
  General form of, 82—88.
Joiner of counts,
  Different causes of action, 96—98.
  Different versions of same action, 98—100.
  Several, 94—06.
Statement of cause of action,
  Consequent damages, 89.
  Facts only alleged, 90—94.
  Exceptions, 93—94.
  Prima fade case, 152, 274.
    Contract, 274.
    Tort, 152.
  Right of plaintiff, 88—89.
  Wrongful act of defendant, 89.

DECREE
Contempt for failure to obey, 585—586.
Included in judgment, by modern codes, 588.
Judgment at law compared, 585-586.
DEEDS
Oyer, 126.
Profert, 125—126.

DEFAMATION
See also Trespass on the Case.
Colloquium, 107—195.
Damages, 198—199.
Essential allegations, 197—199.
Gravamen, 107.
Inducement, 197.
Innuendo, 198.
Libel and slander, modern practice, 200.
Publication, 198.
Slander, declaration (Form), 196—207.
Strictness of pleading, 195—196.
Truth as defense, 491—492.
Words, verbatim statement, 199.

DEFENSE
See also Confession and Avoidance; Demurrer; Dilatory Pleas; General Issue; Pleas; Pleas In Bar; Traverse.
Anticipated matter, not required, 140—141.
Confession and avoidance, 379—350.
Demurrer, 384—409.
Denial by traverse, 379.
Election to demur or plead, 378, 381—382.
Forced Issues under code, 382—383.
General issue, notice, 513.
General issue and specially pleaded, 434—435, 484—513.
Partial, 472—473.
Several, pleas in bar, 475—480.
DEMAND
Allegation in declaration In,
Detinue, 250—251.
Replevin, 268.
Trover, 221—222.

DEMAND OF OVER
See Oyer.

DEMURRER
Admission, -
In general, 396—399.
Ill-pleaded facts, 397—398.
Well pleaded facts, 307—305.
Defects available,
General, 389—305.
Special, 389—395.
Election to demur or plead, 378, 381—382. Expediency of, 381—382.
For,
Alternative pleading, 147.
Departure, 528—529.
Duplicity, 148, 149, 394—395.
Misjoinder, 140.
General (Form), 380.
General and special, history, 301—395.
Issues of law, raised by, 378.
Jeinder in, 390, 395—Form, 300—391.
Judgment on,
In general, 405—406.
Demurrer to plea in abatement, 405.
Demurrer to pleading in bar, 405.
Election to stand on, 405.
Res judicata, 400.
DEMURRER—Cont’d
Judicial notice and, 308—309.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 406—409.
Motions to strike out and, 305—396.
Nature and function, 384—387.
Opening record,
Discontinuance, 400, 402—403.
Effect, 400—402.
Exceptions, 400, 402—404.
General issue, 400, 403—404.
Plaintiff’s demurrer, later stage, 400, 404.
Plea in abatement, 400, 402.
Proper ground for action, 404—405.
Other pleadings, distinguished, 388.
Plea treated as a unit, 473—474.
Pleading over without, 553—554.
Scope, 388—389.
Speaking demurrer, 387.
Special (Form), 380—390.
Tendered issue accepted, 390, 535.
Statute of Anne (1705), 392—393.
Statute of Elizabeth (1585), 391—392.
Violation of rule of pleading, 305.

**DEMMURER TO EVIDENCE**
In general, 543, 546—548.
In several states, 547—548.

**DENIAL**
See General Issue; Pleas; Pleas in Ear; Traverse.

**DEPARTURE**
Classification,
In point of fact, 526—528.
In point of law, 520—525.
In rejoinder, 527—528.
In replication, 526—527.
Mode of objection, demurrer, 528—529.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 520.
Rule against, reason, 526.

**DESCRIPTION**
Chattels described by,
Quality, 111—113.
Quantity, 111—113.
Value, 111—113.
Premises described, ejectment, 237. Proof, as alleged, 144—145.
Property described, declaration in,
Detaine, 249.
Incumbent, 262.
Trespass, 156, 163, 531.
Trove, 216—217.
Variance for non-proof, 144—145.

**DETIINUE**
Chattel recovery, 244—247.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 247—248.
Confession and avoidance, 497.
- - Declaration, essential allegations,
  In general, 249.
  Damages, 251.
  Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 240—250.
Wrongful detention of chattel, 250—251.
Declaration (Form), 248.
Demand and refusal, 250—251.
General Issue, 496—497. Form, 496.
On statutory merger, 499.

**DETIINUE—Cont’d**
Litiary Rules, effect on defenses, 497.
Judgment (Form), 248—249.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 251—252.
Property, description, 240.
Scope and nature, 244—247.
DILATORY PLEAS
Classification, 411.
Commencement and conclusion, 430—432.
Judgment on, 430.
Jurisdiction and venue, 411.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 432.
Order of pleading, 411—412.
Plea in abatement,
   Another action pending, 416—417.
Letter writ for plaintiff, 428.
Certainty, 428—429.
Classification, 416—420.
Contract,
   Defendant nonjoinder, misjoinder, 424—425.
   Plaintiff aoajoinder, misjoinder, 423—424.
Corporate existence, 422.
Count or declaration, 418.
Defendant nonjoinder (Form), 426.
Definition, 416.
Demurrer to, 400, 402.
Disability of defendant, 419.
   Disability of plaintiff, 418—410.
Effect, 416.
Form, 410—420.
Function, 416.
Misnomer, 416, 421.
Modern law, 420—423.
Order of pleading, 411—412.
Original writ, 417—418.
Requisites, 428—429.
Tort,
   Defendant nonjoinder, misjoinder, 427.
   Plaintiff nonjoinder, misjoinder, 426—427.
Wrong venue, 416, 419.
Plea in suspension, Form, 429—430.
Nature and scope, 420—430.
J'arol demurrer, 420—430.
Plea to jurisdiction,
   Abatement, distinguished, 415.
   Classes, 413.
   Courts of general jurisdiction, 414—415.
   Courts of limited jurisdiction, 414—415.
   Defined, 412—413.
   Form, 415.
   Locality, 413.
   Person, 413.
   Requisites, 413—414.
   Subject matter, 413.

DIRECTED VERDICT, MOTION FOR
Jury trial, 548—549.

DISCONTINUANCE
Neglect to enter judgment, 403.
Replying to partial pleas, 472—473.

DOWER
Classification, 48.
Development, 53—55.
Writ, unde nihil habet, 53,

INDEX
References are to Pages

DUPLICITY
Defect in form, special demurrer, 14E—140, 304495.
Duplicity in,
   Declaration, 04—100.
   General issue, 483—484.
Inducement, 148.
   Pleas, 476—484.
   Replication, 482—483.
   Several counts, 96, 05, 100.
   Several grounds of action, 96—147—148.
Ill-pleaded matter, 481—482.
Immaterial matter, 480—481.
Matters forming connected proposition, 482—484.
Protestation, 484.
Several pleas allowed, 476—480.
Singleness of issue, 475—470, 480—481.

EJgCTMENT
Common consent (Form), 237.
Common Consent Rule, 220—280.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 236.
Confession and avoidance, 495-496.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 237.
   Damages, 238—239.
   Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 238.
   Wrongful ouster, 238.
   Declaration (Form), 236—237.
   Description of premises, 237.
   Extension to freeholders, 227—230.
   Fiction In, three stages, 227—230.
   Fictitious proceeding, chart, 230.
General issue, 494—405. Form, 404—405.
Judgment, 239.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 241—248.
Origin in trespass, 226—227.
Parties in, 235—236.
Premises, description, 237.
Quare ejectione firmae, 227—230.
Real property, recovery of, 231-232.
Scope and nature, 225—236.
Title to support, 232—233.
Trespass for mesne profits, 239—241, 243.
Trespass to try title, 54—55.

ELECTION
To demur or plead, 378, 381—382.

EQUITY PLEADING
Affirmative pleadings, 21.
Answer, 21.
Bill, 21.
Charge, 21.
Commonlaw pleading, compared, 19-21.
Decree,
   Contempt, 585—586.
   Specific relief, 585—586.
Influence of civil law, 20.
Interrogative, 21.
Narrative, 21.
Nature of, 19—21.
Replication, 21.

ESTOPPEL
Nature, 46—.
Precluding party’s action or defense, 465.
Previous Inconsistent acts, 465.
Special traverse, avoidance by, 452—453.
Title, estoppel of adverse party, 124, 439.
Traverse and, 439.

EVIDENCE
See also Jury Trial,
Demurrer to, 543, 546-548.
Not pleaded, 90—92.
Order of proof, 543—544.

EX DELICTO

See also Detinue; Ejectment; Replevin; Trespass; Trespass on the Case; Torts; Trover.

Classification of actions, 56—57.

EXCEPTIONS

See Appellate Review.

EXCUSE

See Confession and Avoidance.

EXECUTION

Capias ad satisfaciendum, writ, 592—594
Debtors and creditors, 594.
Definition and nature, 589—593.
Elegit, writ, 592.
Extendi facias, writ, 592.
Fieri facias, writ, 501.
Goods, 591.
Imprisonment for debt, 592—593.
Levari facias, writ, 591.
Lien, 594.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 594—595.
Profits of land, 591.
Restitution of possession, 591.
Secre fades, 587—588.

EXHIBITS

Pleading not done by, 128.

EXTRAORDINARY WRITS

Certiorari, 597—598.
Prohibition, 596—597.

FACTS

Aggravation, manner of pleading, 136—137.
Allegation in declaration, 90—91.
Capable of proof, 149—150.
Certainty in pleading, 131—133.
Defined, 89.
Evidentiary, 90.
In knowledge of adversary, 136.
Indecent, 136—137.
Judicially noticed, 139.
Operative, 90—94.
Statements,
Affirmative pregnant, 444—446.
Negative pregnant, 444—446.
Ultimate, 89—94.

FEDERAL RULES OF CIVIL PROCEDURE

Flexibility, 24.
Formulation, 28—24.

INDEX

References are to Pages
653
654

INDEX

References are to Pages

FORMAL DEFECTS

Cured by statute, 558.

GENERAL ISSUE—Cont’d

In debt on a simple contract—Cont’d
Hilary Rules, effect, 502—503.
Scope, 500—502, 502—503.
Under 1-Hilary Rules (Form), 501. In debt on a specialty,
Form, 503.
1-Hilary Rules, effect, 504.
Scope, 503, 504. In debt on a statute,

Form, 496.
Hilary Rules, effect, 497.
Scope, 496—497.
In ejectment, Form, 494—495. Hilary Rules, not applicable, 496.
Scope, 494—495. In Indebitatus assumpsit, Form, 511.
Hilary Rules, effect, 512. Scope, 511—512. In replevin,
Form, 497—498. Hilary Rules, not applicable, 500.
Scope, 497—499, 500. Under statutory merger, 497—499. In special assumpsit,
Form, 508. Hilary Rules, effect, 510—511. Scope, 508—510, 510—511, In trespass,
Form, 488. Hilary Rules, effect, 492—493. Scope, 488—489, 492—493. In trover,
Notice of defenses, 513. Pleas amounting to,

GENERAL PLEDGING
Inducement, 136—138.
Title in adversary, 136. When allowed, 93—94, 234,238.

GRAVA MEN

FEDERAL RULES OF CIVIL PROCEDURE—Cont’d
Nature, 137.

Fusion of common law and equity, 23. Power of United States Supreme Court, 23.
Relation to other systems, 23—24.

FIELD, DAVID DUDLEY

FORCIBLE ENTRY AND DETAINER
See Real Actions.

FOREIGN JUDGMENTS
See also Debt; Indebitatus Assumpsit. Debt on, alleging jurisdiction, 299.

FORMS
See specific topics for forms.

FORMS OF ACTION
See also Original Writ Cause of action distinguished, 66. Change by amendment, 559—560. Common law,
Classification, 46—47. Development, 31—67. Defined, 65—CC.
Personal actions, 46, 47, 56—58.
Pleading and, 63, 66.
Procedure and, 65, 66.
Real actions, 46—56.
Register of writs, 35, 59.
Substantive law, relation to, it.

FRAUDS, STATUTE OF
Necessity to allege writing, 121—122, 138—139.

FUNCTIONS OF PLEADING
Functions enumerated, 13—17.
Issue raising, 13—14, 17.
Notice to adversary, 13—15, 17.

GENERAL ASSUMPSIT
See Indebitatus Assumpsit.

GENERAL ISSUE
Comparison of general Issues, 512—513.
Defects of, 459.
Duplicity, 483—484.
Essential facts, denial, 457.
In covenant,
Form, 505—SOC.
Hilary Rules, effect, 507.
Scope, 505—SO?. In debt on a judgment,
Form, 504.
Hilary Rules, not applicable, 505-. Scope, 504—505.
In debt on a simple contract,
Form, 500-501.

HILARY RULES
Affirmative defenses, effect upon, 57—58, 484, 488, 4S7—494, 490, 497, 500, 502—505, 507, 510—511, 512.
Failure to appear, under, 78—79.

HILARY RULES—Cont’d
Venue, under, 103.

HYPOTHETICAL PLEADING

IMPARLANGE

IMPRISONMENT FOR DEBT
History, 593.

INCONSISTENCY
Between defenses, 475—480.

INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT
Common breach (Form), 347. Common counts,
Account stated. 360, 304.
Form, 346—347.
Board and lodging, 357.
Classification, 349.
Declaration (Forms), 344—347.
Goods bargained and sold, 358—350.
Indebitatos counts, 350-360.
Land sold and conveyed, 357.
Money counts, 350—354.
Money had and received (Form), 346.
Money lent (Form), 345.
Money paid (Form), 345—346.
Use and occupation of land, 854—357.
Value counts, 359—360.
Varieties, 348—360.
Work, labor and services, 350.
Work and labor (Form), 845.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 348—344.
Confession and avoidance, 512.
Contracts of record, relation, 360—362.
Debt distinguished, 279.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 862.
Breach, 364—385.
Damages, 365.
Executed consideration, 302—884.
Promise, 364.
Express contracts,
Additional work done on request, 343.
Applicability, 338—M3.
Benefit received by defendant, 341.
Facts equivalent to contract duty, 339—340.
Fully executed or performed, 340.
Performance prevented by defendant, 341-342.
Where contract is void, 342. General Issue, 511—512.
Form, 511.
Hilary Rules, effect on defenses, 512.
Implied contracts, 338.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 365—367.
INDEBITATUS ASSUMPSIT—Cont'd
On a judgment, 360—361.
Quasi contracts, 279.
Scope and nature, 337—338.
Statutory liabilities, relation, 360—362.

INDUCEMENT
Definition and function, 137.
Duplicity, 148.
In declaration (Form), 83.
Manner of allegation, 136—137.
Nature of, 137.

INSTRUCTIONS
See Jury Trial.

INTANGIBLE PROPERTY
Trespass on the case, 163, 180—181.

ISSUES
See also Issues of Fact; Issues of Law.
Equity, extracted from pleadings, 21.
Framed by parties, 21.
Functions of pleading to produce, 12, 13—17.

ISSUES OF FACT
Action on a record, judge’s role, 538. Conclusion,
By verification, 533—534.
Similiter, 436, 533.

Production of, 12, 13—17, 378, 532—535.
Tender, traverse, 436, 532—534.
Trial by jury, waiver, 536—538.

ISSUES OF LAW
Production of, 12, 13—17, 378, 532. Tender,
Joinder in demurrer (Form), 390—391. Triable by court, 10—21. 536—537.

JOINDER
See Amendment.

Causes of action, 06—98. Issues of,
Fact, 436, 535.

**JUDGMENT**
Action of debt on, 297—290.
Classification and scope, 586—587.
Decree, modern codes, rules, etc., 585.
Decree in equity,
  Compared, 585—586.
  Contempt, 585—586.
  Specific relief, 585—556. Definition, 584, 585.
Demurrer,
  Basis of, 405—406.
  In abatement, 406.
  Iles judicata, 406.
  To plea in abatement, 405.
  To pleading in chief, 405.

INDEX
References are to Pages

**JUDGMENT—Cont’d**
Dilatory pleas as basis of, 430.
Ejectment, 230.
Execution,
Final, 1387.
Indebito assumpsit on, 360—361.
Interlocutory, 586—587.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 588.
Money damages, 585.
Motion for,
  Non obstante voreidcto, 577—578.
  Notwithstanding verdict, 577—578. Modern codes, 582—533.
Nature, 584, 585.
Nil thctit, 472-473.
Nonsuit, 548.
Object of action, 584—585.
Pleading as basis, 16, 17.
Pleading judgments, 125.
Replevin, 299.
Revival, scire facias, 587—588.

**JUDICIAL NOTICE**
Demurrer and, 308—309.
Pleading, not necessary, 139—140.
Scope, 139—140.

**JURISDICTION**
See Actions; Courts; Dilatory pleas; Process.

**JURY TRIAL**
At bar, 538-540.
Burden of proof,
  In general, 542—544.
  Prima facie case, 542.
  Bebuital, 542—543.

Challenges,
  In capita, 541.
  Propert affectum, 541.
  Propert defectum, 541.
  Propert delictum, 541.
  Propert bonoris respectum, 541.
  To the array, 540—541.
  To the polls, 540—541.
Charge,
  Instructions, 540.
  Request to, 550.
  Restrictions, 540—550. Demurrer to evidence,
    In general, 543, 546—548.
    In several states, 547—548.
  Directed verdict, 543, 548—549.
  Equity, discretion of chancellor, 20.
Jury Trial—Cont’d Right to open and close, Objective, 544—545.

Opening statement, 545.
Traverse and, 436.

Variance between charge and proof, 552.
Ventre facias, writ, 530—540.

Verdict,
General, 550—551.
Rule nisi, 552.
Special, 551—552.
Special case, 552.
Voir dire, 541—542.

Westminster II (1285), Statute of, 538—540.

Withdrawaing a case, methods, 546—549.

Witnesses,
Cross examination, 546.

Direct examination, 545—546.

Leading questions, 545—546.

Oath, 545.

JUSTIFICATION
See Authority; Confession and Avoidance.

LEGAL EFFECT
Pleading according to, 120—128.
Specific words, libel and slander, 199.

LIBEL AND SLANDER
See Defamation; Trespass on the Case.

LIMITATIONS, STATUTE OF
Amendments, 560—561, 563.
Confession and avoidance, 490-491.

LIVINGSTON, EDWARD
Code of Practice of Louisiana (1805), a

Proposed Penal Code (1824) for Louisiana, a

MALICIOUS PROSECUTION
Allegations in action, 194—195.
Declaration (Form), 195.

MATERIALITY
Traverse denies material allegations, 430—446.

MESNE PROFITS
Ejectment In early form, 243.
Recovery under statutes, 243.
Trespass for, essential allegations, 239—241.

MISJOINDER
See Demurrer; Dilatory Pleas.

MIXED ACTIONS
Classification, 46—48.
Decline In England, 28, 53.
Definition and scope, 46—47.
Recovery of,
  Damages, 48, 129.
  Land, 48.

MONEY HAD AND RECEIVED
See Indebitatus Assumpsit.

MONEY LENT
Sec Indebitatus Assumpsit.

MOTIONS
Arrest of judgment, 571—574.
Bill of particulars, 872—875.

INDEX
References are to Pages

INDEX
References are to Pages

MGION S.-Cont’d
Directed verdict, 548—549.
Judgment non obstante veredieto, 573—574.
Judgment notwithstanding verdict, 573—574.
New trial, 568—570.
Nonsuit, 548.
Repleader, 578—580.
Retrospective, 585—583.
  Under modern codes, 580—583.
To strike out, 395—396.
Veniire facias de nova, 570—571.

NAMES
Description of,
  Corporations, 1Th.
  Parties, 114—115.
  Partners, 115.
  Persons other than parties, 113—114.

NEGATIVE PREGNANT
Nature and effect, 444—447.

NEW ASSIGNMENT
Application, 529—530.
Form, 530.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 531.
Nature, 520—531.
Purpose, 529.

NEW TRIAL, MOTION FOR
Grounds (or motion, 569—570.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 580—581.
Nature, 568—570.
Veniire judas de novo, compared, 570—571.

NEW YORK CODE OF PROCEDURE (164—
Field, David Dudley, and, 24.
Forms of action under, 24—25, 170—171.
Fusion of law and equity under, 28.
Influence in other states, 25, 28.

NIL DEBET
General issue,
  Debt on a simple contract, 500—503. Debt on a statute, 500—503.

NIL DICIT
Judgment of, 472—473.

**NISI FRILL**
Trials, 538—540.
Venire facias, writ, 539.
Westminster II (1285), Statute of, 538—540.

**NON ASSUMPSIT**
General Issue,
Indebitatus assumptisit, 511—512. Special assumpsit, 508—511.

**NON CEPT**
General issue In replevin, 497—499, 500.

**NON DETINET**
General issue,
Detine, 496—497.
Replevin, under statutory merger, 497—499.

**NON FI SR ACTUM**
General Issue,
Covenant, 505-SOT.
Debt on a specialty, 503, 504.

**NON OBSTANTE VEREDICTO, MOTION JUDGMENT**
Modern codes, rules, etc., 582—583.
Repleader motion, distinguished, 578, 579.
Scope, 577—578.

**NONSUIT, MOTION FOR**
Purpose and effect, 543, 548.

**NOT GUILTY**
General Issue,

**NOTWITHSTANDING VERDICT, MOTION FOR JUDGMENT**
See Non Obstante Veredicto, Motion for Judgment.

**NUL TIEL RECDRD**
General issue, debt on a judgment, 504—505.

**NUNQUAM INDEBITATUS**

**OPENING RECORD**
See Demurrer.

**ORAL PLEADING**
Development, 80—81.

**ORIGINAL WIT**
See also Forms of Action.

Conformance of declaration to, 100—101.
Debt (Form), 37.
Plea In abatement to, 417—418.
Praecipe in cpitc, (Form), 37.
Purposes, 37—38.
Relation to,
Cause or action, 39.
Form of action, 30.
Beplevin, 258—259.
Form, 260.
Selecting correct form, 39.

Source of law, 40—41.
Writ of error, 590—601.

OVER
Deed, inspection, 126, 368—370.
Demand, 368—370.
Form, 370.

Modern codes, rules, etc., 375.
Profert, relation to, 125—126, 369.

PAROL DEMURRER
Form, 429-430.

Plea In suspension for nonage, 429.

PEREMPTORY PLEAS
Boo Confession and Avoidance; General Issue; Pleas; Picas in Bar; Traverse.
577—579.

INDEX are to Pages

PROCESS
Abuse and misuse, 169.
Arrest, 73.
Notice, 72.
Original writ, 72.
Praeipe, 72.
Service,
   Constructive, 75—78. Personal, 75.
Summons,
   Commencement of action, 72, 73, Conformity with complaint, 100—101.
   Constructive service, 76—78.
   Notice by publication, 76.
   Notice to non-residenta, 70.
   Personal service, 75.
Service by publication after Substituted servIce, 75—76.
Writ of attachment, 73—74.

PRODUCTION OF ISSUES See Issues of Fact; Issues of Law.

PRDFERT
Nature of, 125-128,
Oyer, relation to, 120, 368—369.
Production of deed, 123—126, 368—309.

PROHIBITION
See Writ of Prohibition.

PROTESTATION
Duplicity, 484.
Nature and function, 466—467.

PROVISIONS OF OXFORD (1256)
Chancellor’s power effected, 43—44.
Writs of course under, 42, 43—44.
PUIS DARREIN CONTINUANCE See Pleas.

QUANTITY, QUALITY, VALUE
Necessity for alleging, 111—113.

QUANTUM MERUIT
See Debt; Indebitatus Assumpsit.

QUANTUM VALEBANT
See Debt; Indebitatus Assumpsit.

QUARE CLAUSUM FREGIT
See Trespass.

QUASI CONTRACTS
See Debt; Indebitatus Assumpsit

QUID PRO QUO See Debt.

REAL ACTIONS
Aid prayer by tenant 370,373.
Classification, 46–48.
Damages need not be alleged, 128–130.
Decline in England, 28, 53.
Definition and scope, 47.
Ejectment, 53–54.
Pondal origin of, 417.
Forcible entry and detainer, 49–50, 52, 56.
Freehold, 47.
Ownership, 50–51.
Possession, 46–47.

658

PERSONAL ACTIONS
See also Account; Covenant; Debt; Detinue; Ejectment; Indebitatus Assumpsit; Replevin; Special Assumpsit; Trespass; Trespass on the Case; Prover. Breach of contract, 56, 57. Classification, 46—47, 56—57. Damage to, Personal property, 56, 57.
Real property, 56, 57.
Damages, allegation, 123–129.
Decline in England, 57—58.
Ex contracto, 56, 57.
Ex delicto, 56, 57.
Injury to, Person, 56, 57.
Relative rights, 56, 57.
Recovery of,
Damages, 50–57.
Debt, 56, 57.
Personal property, 56, 57.
Real property, 56, 57. Scire facias, 588.

PLEADINGS
Declaration, 82.
Dilatory pleas, 410–411.
Factious and objects of 13–17.
Names, manner and order of, 80.
Plea in bar, 434–438.
Replication and subsequent pleadings, 380–381.

PLEAS
See also Confession and Avoidance; Dilatory Pleas; General Issue; Picas in Bar; Traverse.
Admission by failure to deny, 465—466.
Amounting to general issue, 469–472.
Argumentative, 467–469.
Confession and avoidance, 460–465.
Dilatory.
   Abatement, 410—429.
   Jurisdiction and venue, 412—415.
   Suspension of action, 429—430.
In bar, 434—436.
In estoppel, 465.
Issues of fact, raised by, 378.
Partial defenses, 472—473.
   Waiver of former pleas, 513—515.
Several defenses, 475—480.

PLEAS IN BAR
See also Confession and Avoidance; General issue; Pleas; Traverse.
Classification, 434—436.
Method of pleading, 434—435.
Several defendants, separate pleading, 480.
Several defenses, 475—480.
Treated as a unit, 473—474.

POSSESSORY ASSIZES
See Real Actions.

PRAECIPE
See Actions; Process.

INDEX
References are to Pages
REJOINDER
Definition, 380.
Departure, 527—528.

RELEASE
Conveyance, 127.
Pleading, 127, 462—403.

REPLEADER, MOTION FOR
Circumstances for awarding, 578—580.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 583.
Non obstante vinculatio, compared, 578, 579.

REPLEVIN
A v owry,
  Pleading, 117, XIS, 500.
  Special traverse, relation to, 409.
Cognizance,
  Pleading, 125, 500.
  Special traverse, relation to, 409.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 251—258. Confession and avoidance, 500.

REPLEVIN—Cont’d
Declaration, essent in) allegations, In general, 262.
  Damages, 268—269.
  Plaintiff’s right, title, eta, 262—263.
  Wrongful act, taking and detention, 266—268.
Declaration (Form), 201—262.
Demand and refusal, 268.
Detinue and detinue, 239—260.
Detinue and, 254, 257—268.
Judgment, 269.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 270—272.
Original writ, 258—259. Form, 260.
Plaint (Form), 261.
Property, description, 262.
Property recoverable by, 256—257.
Provisional remedy, 254.
Scope and nature, 233—257.
Special traverse, 490.
Statutory merger, dei-innoc. general
Unlawful taking, distress, 254—255.

REPLICA ON DE INJURIA
Classification, 518—519. Do injuria,
  Confession null avoidance, relation, 521—522.
  Effect, 520—521.
  Form, 521-522.
  Modern codes, rules, etc., 322—525.
Nature and scope, 510—520.
When used, 510—520.
Definition, 350.

Departure, 526—527.
Formal pans, 522.
New assignment (Form), 30.

REPLICATION DE INJURIA
See fleplication.

REPUGNANCY
See inconsistency.

RES JUDICATA
Judgment on demurrer, effect, 406.
Pleadings as foundation for, 16-17.

RULE NISI
Order to show cause, 552.
RULES OF COURT PROCEDURE
Advantages of, 26.

RULES OF PLEADING
See also specific topics.
Bad in part, bad altogether, 473—474, Certainty it, pleading.
Certainty of place, 107.
Certainty of time, 108—111.
General requirement, 131—133.
Show authority, 124—225.
Show title, 115—116.
Specify names of persons, 112—114.
Specify quantity, quality, value, Ill—Irri Conform to precedent, 150.
Demurrer Or plead, 318—319.

RULES OF PLEADING—Cont’d
Departure objections, 525—526.
Dilatory pleas, when pleaded, 411—412.
Evidence and ultimate facts, 90—92.
Facts only alleged, 90—92.
General mode, when proper, 134—135.
Issue accepted, 389, 535.
Legal conclusions, 92—94.
Legal effect, pleading by, 92—94.
Materiality in pleading, Denial of essentials, 441—446,
Traverse, 439—440.
Not to be,
Alternative, 146—147.
Ambiguous or doubtful, 146.
Argumentative, 407—409.
Double, 147—149.
Inconsistent or repugnant, 145—146. Omitted may be matters,
Implied, 141—142.
In anticipation, 140—141.
Judicially noticed, 139—140.
Presumed, 142. Operative or ultimate facts, 91—92. Particularity, extent required,
Generally, 135—436.
Acts regulated by statute, 138—139.
Facts known to adversary, 136.
Inducement or aggravation, 136—438.
Positive, not recital, 130—131.
Production of issue, 378—383.
Simplicity or unity, 147—149.
Surplusage to be avoided, 142—144.
Traverse tenders issue, 532—533.

SCIRE FACIAS
Allegation of damages unnecessary, 128—129. Revival of Judgments,
Personal actions, 588.
Real actions, 587—588.

SEALED INSTRUMENT
See Covenant, Debt.

SEISIN
See Real Actions.

SET-OFF
Nature, 516—517.
Statutory origin, 516—517.

SIMILITER
See Issues of Fact.

SINGLENESS OF ISSUE
See also Duplicity.
Pleadings not to be double, 147—148, 475—480.
Qualifications of requirement, 148, 476—478, 480—481.
Requirement of, 475—480.
SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT
Concurrent, case for tortious conduct, 321.
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 321—322.
Condition subsequent, 331—332.
Confession and avoidance, 510.
Debt—compared, 278—279, 288—288.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 323.
Breach, 332—333.
SPECIAL ASSUMPSIT—Cont’d
Consideration, 325—328.
Contract and promise, 325—325.
Damages, 383—334.
Performance, conditions precedent, 328—333.
Declaration (Form), 322—323.
Er delicto, and, 319.
Executed consideration, 327.
Executed contracts, 286—287.
Executory coasideration, 327—323.
Executory contracts, 288—289.
Explanatory inducement, 323—324.
General Issue, 508—511. Form, 508.
Hilary Rules, effect on defenses, 510—511.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 334—336.
Promise, 288—289.
Scope and nature, 318—321.
SPECIAL TRAVERSE
See Traverse.

SPECIALITY
See Covenant; Debt.

SPECIFIC TRAVERSE
See Traverse.

SUMMONS
See Process.

SUPREME COURT OF JUDICATURE ACT (1873)
Forms of action, effect, 29.
Law and equity, effect, 58.

SURRENDER
Definition, 380—381.

SURREJOINDER
Definition, 380—381.

SUSPENSION, PLEAS IN
See Dilatory Pleas.

TENDER OF ISSUE
See also Issues of Fact; Issues of Law. Form of tender, 533.
Nature and purpose, 532—534.

TIME
Continuing acts, 110—111.
Not truly stated, 109—110.
Plea follows declaration, 110.
Traversable facts, 108.

TITLE
Adversary’s title alleged, 122, 123.
Allegation of general freehold title, lit.
Allegation of title of possession, Not fully stated, 116—118.
Sufficient to show liability, 122—123. Alleging derivation of title,
By conveyance or alienation, 120.
By Inheritance, 120.
Fee simple, 118—110.
Particular estates, 119—120.
Estoppel of adverse party, 124.
Pleading conveyance, manner of, 120—122.
Proof, 123-124.
When fully stated, 117—118.

INDEX

References are to Pages

Specific,
  Argumentative denial, 447.
  Classification, 435.
  Express denial, 446-447.
  Function, 446-447.
  General Issue, distinguished, 457.
  Negative pregnant, 447.
  Special, distinguished, 448-450.
  Too large, allegations, 441-443.
  Too narrow, allegations, 443-444.
  Variance and, 436-437.
  Various forms of, 435-436.

REFERENCES are to Pages

TRAVERSE—Cont’d

TORTS
  See also Detinuc; Ejectment; Iteplevin; Trespass; Trespass on the Case; Trover.
Classification of actions, 56-57.
Plea In abatement, parties,
  Misjoinder, 426-428.
    Nonjoinder, 426-428.
Trespass and case as source, 174—175, Westminster II (1285), Statute,
  Consimill casu, 44—45, 175.
  Effect, 44—45, 175.

TRANSITORY ACTIONS
  See also Actions; Venue.
Contrasted with local, 103—105.

TRAVERSE
  See also General Issue; Picas; Pleas in Bar.
Aggravation, matter of, 439—440.
Common, see Specific Traverse.
Defense of denial, 379.
Denial of essentials only, 441—444.
Estoppel and, 439.
Form of denial, 436—437.
General, classification, 435.
General issue,
  Classification, 435.
  Compendious negation, 457.
  Essential facts, denial, 457.
  Liability, denial, 457—458.
  Nature and use, 457—459.
  Specific traverse, distinguished, 457.
General requisites, 436—439.
Immaterial allegations, 439—440.
Inducement, matter of, 439—440.
Insufficient In law matter, 439—440.
Irrelevant allegations, 439-440.
Issuable proposition, selection, 441.
Issues of fact, 436.
Law, matter of, 437.
Law and fact, matter of, 437—438.
Materiality, 439—440.
Matter not alleged, 438—439.
Modo et forma, 437, 439.
Necessarily implied matter, 439.
Negative and affirmative pregnant, 444 418.
Prematurely alleged matter, 439—440.
Replication de injuria,
  Classification, 485, 457.
Modo et forma, 437.
Nature and scope, 519—521. Several allegations, election, 441.
Special,
Abnormal form, 450.
Absque hoc clause, 447—457.
Classification, 435.
Conclusion with verification, 448-449, 453—454.
Form, 452.
FunctIon, 452—453.
Inducement, 447—449, 455—457.
Modem use, 456—457.
Normal form, 449—450.
Requisites, 447—448.
Specific, distinguished, 448-450.
Sufficiency rules, 454—456.
TRESPASS
Ab-initio, 269—170.
Assault and battery (Form), 154—155.
Ballee, 158, 161—182.
Confession and avoidance, 486—488.
Do bonis asportatis, 36. Form, 155.
Declaration, essential allegations,
In general, 156,
Damages, 170.
Defendant’s wrongful act, 164—170.
Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 156—164.
Direct injury, 152, 154, 165—168.
Ejection and, 226—230.
Election, remedy, trespass on the case, 181—182.
Force, 164—165, 178—177.
Force Implied, 164—165, 177.
Filiary Rules, effect on defenses, 488.
History, 36, 44, 153.
Immediate injury, 152, 154, 165—168.
Landlord, 159—162.
Liberum tenenptum plea, 487. Form, 487—488.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 170—172.
Negligence, 181—182.
Nonfeasance, 165, 177.
Personal injury, 156—157, 165—187.
Personal property, 157—158, 162—163.
Possession, 157—163.
Process, abuse, 169.
Property, description, 156, 163, 531.
Quare clausum fregit, 36, 157—164. Form, 155.
Quare ejectioe firmae, 227—230.
Real property, 36, 157—164.
Scope and nature, 152—154.
Servant, 158.
Tenant, 159—162.
Tenant at will, 159—162.
Trover compared, 209—210.
VI et armis, 154.
Violence as element, 153, 154.
Writ of, 36, 153.
Wrongful prosecution, 168.
TRESPASS FOR MESNE PROFITS
See also Mesne Profits.
Declaration, essential allegations,
In general, 239—240.

662
INDEX
Declaration, essential allegations—Cont’d
  Damages, 241.
  Ouster or ejectment, 241.
  Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 240.
TRESPASS ON THE CASE
Adaptability to new situations, 203.
Alienation of affection, 193.
Animals, 201.
Anticipating defenses, 202.
Bailor, 183.
Confession and avoidance, 490—492.
Consequential injury, 154, 166, 177—180.
Consimil easu, 44—45, 175.
Contract, tort in connection with, 187—100.
Deceit, 194.
Declaration, essential allegations, In general, 183.
  Damages, 186—187.
  Defendant’s wrongful act, 184—186.
  Duty of defendant, 188—184.
  Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 182.
Direct injury, 166, 177—180.
Election, remedies, trespass, 181—182.
Expansionistic character of, 203.
Freehold, injury by tenant at will, 191.
El. iliary Rules, effect on defenses, 492—493.
History and development, 44—45, 175—176, 203.
indirect injury, 154, 166, 177—180.
Intangible property, 163, 180—181.
Lien, 190.
Malicious prosecution, 104—195. Form, 195.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 203—205.
Negligence, 181—182.
Nonfeasance, 177.
Official duty, neglect, 200—201.
Personal injury declaration (Form), 152—183.
Residuary common law remedy, 187—201.
Reversionary interest, 157—159, 183, 190—191.
Scope and nature, 173—176.
Seduction, 191—192.
Slander, declaration (Fon-u), 190—197.
Statutory liability, 201.
Super Be assumpsit, 11.
Tort remedy, 44, 56—57, 152—153, 174—175.
Trespass distinguished, 152—154, 105—168, 110—181.
Vicarious liability, 192—193.
Westminster II (1285), Statute, effect, 44—43, 175.

TRIAL
See Jury Trial.

TROVER
Concurrent, other actions, distinguished, 209—210.
Confession and avoidance, 493.
Constructive possession, 214—216.
Conversion,
  Nature of, 217—218.
  Property converted, 207—209.
  Wrongful detention, 221—222.
  Wrongful taking, 218.
  Wrongful user, 218—220.
are to Pages
  TROVER—Cont’d
Declarations, essential allegations,
  In general, 211.
Damages, 223.
Plaintiff’s right, title, etc., 212—217.
Wrongful act of conversion, 217—222. Declaration (Form), 211.
Demand and refusal, 221—222.
General issue, 493—494.
Form, 493.
Hilary Rules, effect on defenses, 493—494.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 223—224.
Possession, 212—214.
Property description, 216—217.
Right to possession, 214—216.
Scope and nature, 206—207.
Title, 212—214.
Third party, 216.

VALUE
Necessity for alleging, 111—113.

VARIANCE
Between process and declaration, 100—101.
Danger of, 324, 436.
Descriptive averments, proof, 144—145.
Modern codes, rules, etc., 564.
Plea in abatement for, 101.
Strict proof required, 109, 113—114, 123—124, 127, 324, 325, 436.
Traverse. inodio et forma, 436—437.
Unnecessary allegations, proof, 144.
Videlicet, allegations under, 144.

VENIRE FACIAS DE NOVO, MOTION FOR
Motion for new trial distinguished, 570, 371.
Nature, 570—571.
Object, 571

VENUE
Consequences of error, 107—108.
Declaration, stating, 82—83, 84-85, 103-107.
How laid, 102—107.
Local actions, stating, 103—105.
Local facts, stating, 107.
Pleadings subsequent to declaration, 107.
Transitory actions, stating, 105—107.

VERDICT
Aider by, 556—558.
Arrest of judgment for defects, 571—572.
Conformance to issues, 575.
General, 550—551.
Rule nisi, 552.
Special, 551—552.
Special ease and, 552.
Special verdict in alternative, 551.

VIDELICET
Variance, effect, 144.

VOIR DIRE

WAI VER
Of defects by failure to demur, 554—566.
Of objections to process, 79, 414—415.

WESTMINSTER 11(1285), STATUTE OF
Bill of exceptions, 601—602.
Consimill casu, 44—45, 175.

WESTMINSTER II (1285), STATUTE OF—Cont’d
New writs under, 28, 44—45, 175.
Nisi prius trials, 538—540.
Trespass on the case and, 44—45, 175.

WITNESSES
See Jury Trial.
WORK AND LABOR
See Debt; Indebitatus Assumpsit.

WRIT OF ATTACHMENT
Commencement of action by, 73—74.
Dissolution, by bond, 74.
Execution, distinguished, 74.
Nature, 73—74.

WRIT OF CERTIORARI
Nature of, 597—598.
When available, 598.

WRIT OF DISTRINGAS
Purpose and effect, 79—80.

WRIT OF ERROR
Common law record, 599—500,
Coram nobis, 599, 601,
Coram vobis, 599.
Granted as matter of right, 590.
WRIT OF ERROR—Cont’d
Mode’in codes, rules, etc., 602—608.
Original wr’t, 599.
Questions of law, 20, 599—600.

WRIT OF PROHIBITION
Nature of, 596—597.
When available, 596—597.

WRIT OF SCIRE FACIAS
See Scire Facias.

WRITS
See also Forms of Action Original Writ; and writs by their specific names.
Mag’sterial, 59.
Register of writs, 35, 59.
Writs of course, 59.

WRITS OF ENTRY
See Real Actions.

WRITS OF EXECUTION
See Execution.

WRITS OF RIGHT
See Real Actions,

References are to Pages